

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

HISTORICAL RECORDS
OF
NEW SOUTH WALES.

PHILLIP.

1783--1792.

HISTORICAL RECORDS

OF

NEW SOUTH WALES.

VOL. I, PART 2.—PHILLIP.

1783—1792.



By Authority.

SYDNEY: CHARLES POTTER, GOVERNMENT PRINTER.

1892.

[REGISTERED UNDER THE COPYRIGHT ACT, 1879.]

DU

150

H56

v.1

pt. 2

653073

8. 3. 57

PREFACE.

THE "HISTORICAL RECORDS" of New South Wales are published with the object of affording the fullest information obtainable concerning the foundation, progress, and government of the mother colony of Australia. It was with a similar purpose that the publication was commenced, more than two years ago, of the "History of New South Wales, from the Records." All the material that the Government could command was placed at the disposal of the writer, and in the volume issued from the Government Printing Office in June, 1889, this reservoir of information was largely drawn upon. But when Vol. II of the History was in preparation it was considered desirable to make a change in the plan. It was determined that while the publication of the History should go on, the records themselves, with the exception of those that are trivial or formal, should be printed in full, in separate volumes, so that the public might have, on the one hand, a historical work founded on official documents, and on the other, the material upon which the narrative is based.

The adoption of this course serves a double purpose. In the first place, it enhances the value of the History, for it enables the reader to turn at any point from the narrative of the writer to the fuller information which the reports and despatches supply. The advantage gained by this treatment of the official papers is obvious. No matter how faithfully a writer of history may perform his task, he cannot cover all the ground; no matter

how acutely he may criticise the actors who take part in the scenes he describes, he cannot exhibit them in so clear a light as they are shown in their own writings. Thus the publication of the Records may be regarded as desirable from the historical point of view.

In the second place, the printing of the Records gives immediate and lasting public value to State papers which would otherwise be of service to the few—only those, in fact, who have leisure to search the bulky manuscripts which have been collected by the Government. In the absence of printed records, the inquirer who endeavours to learn in what manner New South Wales was founded—how the settlement was governed in the early days—by what steps it grew—how difficulties were encountered and overcome—what mistakes were made, and how they were corrected—by whom injustice was perpetrated, and in what way retribution fell upon the oppressor—can command no better sources of information than tradition, and the accounts of writers who had to make history from insufficient material. He is in the position that a jury would occupy if it were required to give a verdict upon hearsay evidence. The publication of the Records will change all that. With the printed Records in the public libraries and on the book-shelves of all who care to purchase them, the student of history will have the best possible material at his disposal. He will be able to read for himself, and draw his own conclusions from direct testimony.

It is not entirely a new departure that has been taken. The importance of preserving and reproducing national records is recognised in most civilised countries, and especially so in Great Britain. In earlier times, when Ministers of the Crown treated official despatches as their private property, and on quitting office carried to their own houses manuscripts which belonged to the nation, little care was taken of the records, and such a thing as giving information to the public concerning them does not appear to have had any place in the minds of those in authority. This indifference no longer exists. All public documents are carefully preserved ; inventories of them are taken, and they are accurately described in printed calendars. With a few exceptions, the State

papers are gathered together in one place, the Public Record Office, London, and are kept in the custody of the Master of the Rolls, who by the Public Records Act (1 and 2 Vict., c. 94) is constituted Keeper of the Archives.* These stores of information are not simply hoarded up—they are treated in such a way as to be of use to the people, and to bring within easy reach of the historian the documentary evidence that he requires. Large volumes, entitled “Calendars of State Papers,” consisting of condensations of the documents in the Public Record Office and elsewhere from the days of Henry VIII to the Eighteenth Century, are in course of publication, while some of the earlier records are printed in full.

Under the direction of the Master of the Rolls, and by the authority of Her Majesty’s Treasury, the publication was commenced thirty-four years ago of “The Chronicles and Memorials of Great Britain and Ireland during the Middle Ages.” The first volume (published December, 1857) contained an official statement, which has been repeated in subsequent volumes, to the effect that on the 26th January of that year the Master of the Rolls submitted to the Treasury a proposal for the publication of materials for the history of Great Britain, from the invasion of the Romans to the reign of Henry VIII. The Lords of the Treasury adopted the suggestion, and the work, conducted by a staff of editors, has gone on without interruption to the present time. Up to 1891 over 200 volumes had been published. The care and elaboration with which the work is done may be seen from the copies of the books in the Free Public Library, Sydney.

More than half a century before the publication of the “Chronicles and Memorials” was commenced, that is to say in the year 1800, a Select Committee of the House of Commons had recommended that the public records should be printed. This recommendation is referred to by the Honorable Board of Commissioners on the Public Records in its report to the King-in-Council of 7th February, 1837. The Commissioners express

* With the exception of certain manuscripts in the British Museum and a few public libraries, most of the public muniments of the realm are now placed in one repository, and under the supervision of the Master of the Rolls.—*Encyclopædia Britannica*, ninth edition, vol. xx, p. 313.

their approval of the proposition in the following words:—"In this opinion [the opinion of the Select Committee that the Records should be printed] we have entirely coincided. We regard the press as at once the only perfectly secure preservative of the information which the National Archives contain, and the only means by which that information can be diffused beyond a very narrow circle of inquirers." The publication of the "Chronicles and Memorials" is the outcome of these recommendations.

In Canada the Records are scrupulously kept, and their contents disclosed for the information of the public. In 1872 the Dominion Government appointed an Archivist, and founded an Archives Office at Ottawa, where all the public records, with the exception of those retained by the provincial authorities, are stored. The papers consist partly of original documents, and partly of copies of old despatches and other manuscripts transcribed by a staff of writers from originals discovered by the Archivist in the London Record Office and Departments of State, and in the archives of Paris and other European cities. From time to time reports are issued in which the Records are described, and when considered necessary, printed in full. In this manner the public is placed in possession of information of the highest interest and importance relating to the early history of Canada which had never before seen the light.

In New South Wales, owing to the shorter period of time, and the smaller quantity of material to be dealt with, it is possible to do what would be impracticable under other circumstances, that is to say, to publish in full the Records of the Colony from its foundation. It has also been decided to publish all available correspondence concerning Captain Cook and his connection with Australian discovery. The Cook Papers form Part I of Vol. I. Part II of Vol. I contains the records relating to the establishment of the Colony and its progress under Governor Phillip.

When the settlement at Port Jackson was established the chief authority was vested in the Governor, who not only governed the Colony, but administered its affairs. The Civil business was conducted nominally by a staff, but much of the work fell upon the Governor, who was troubled with matters of a kind which would

be settled in the present day by an ordinary clerk. He was also at the head of the naval and military forces, and was the principal, it may almost be said the only, channel of communication between the Colonial Government and the English authorities. The reasons which led the English Government to plant a convict settlement in New South Wales are only briefly indicated in the scanty papers discovered in the State Departments; but when the Colony had been established its affairs formed the subject of periodical letters from the Governors, who wrote fully about the concerns of the settlement, receiving in reply despatches for their guidance and instruction. Most of this correspondence has been preserved in the English Departments of State either in the original or in official copies. Its value is inestimable. The despatches are full of information. The Governors were required by their instructions to keep the Home authorities well informed about matters great and small, and in the despatches sent to London almost every transaction that took place is minutely described. More than this, copies of all the proclamations and orders issued by the Governor and the military commander were forwarded for the information of the English authorities. These documents are recorded with the other State papers.

The early history of New South Wales is founded mainly upon the despatches sent by the Governors to the authorities in England, and the despatches received by them in reply. The Records are comprised within measurable bounds, and as they are the chief material out of which history must be made, it has been decided to print them as they stand.

This course has been adopted on the recommendation of a Board, consisting of the late Hon. Geoffrey Eagar, Under Secretary for Finance and Trade from 1872 to 1891; Alexander Oliver, M.A., Barrister-at-Law; Professor G. Arnold Wood, B.A., Challis Professor of History at the Sydney University; and R. C. Walker, Principal Librarian, Public Library. The Board having ascertained the nature of the documents at the disposal of the Government, came to the conclusion that the design with which the publication of the Official History was commenced could not be fully carried out unless the State papers and other

official documents upon which the work was based were made as accessible to the public as the History itself. They decided, therefore, that the printing of the Records was not only desirable but necessary, and in the month of March, 1891, a recommendation to that effect was made to the then Colonial Treasurer, the Hon. William McMillan. The proposal received the cordial approval of the Minister, who gave the necessary authority to carry out the work on the lines recommended by the Board. Arrangements were made accordingly for printing and publishing the despatches, reports, letters, and other papers which had been collected.

While the best use has been made of the material at command, the Records of the early days of the Colony cannot be presented in an absolutely complete form. Every paper of consequence that has been discovered, or may be discovered hereafter, will be published; but unfortunately manuscripts of great interest and importance, which are known to have existed, cannot now be found. The most valuable of the early Records are the despatches sent to England by the Governors, and the despatches received by the Governors from the authorities in London. At Government House, Sydney, there are a number of letter-books containing copies of the despatches sent to England, and the original despatches received from the Home authorities; but these Records, instead of going back to 1788, the year in which New South Wales was founded, begin with 1800. Of the despatches received and sent before that date, during the Governorships of Phillip and Hunter, and the Lieutenant-Governorships of Grose and Paterson, there is no trace. What has become of them it is impossible to say. A hundred years ago State papers were not so carefully guarded as they are now; the English system was loose, and it would have been surprising if greater care had been taken in Sydney than in London. Some of the early Australian Governors may have taken their papers with them when they left office. On that supposition the disappearance of the despatches from 1788 to 1800 is readily explained; but even then the whole case is not met, for public Records of which the Governors were not the custodians are also missing.

There are circumstances, however, which discourage the view that Governors' despatches in the early days were treated as the property of those to whom they were sent. It is certain that they were not so treated by Governor King, and there seems to be no reason why Phillip and Hunter, Grose and Paterson, should have followed a different practice. We have the means of knowing exactly the course pursued by Hunter's immediate successor. The Hon. Philip Gidley King, M.L.C., has placed at the disposal of the Government the books and papers left by his grandfather, Governor King ; but, while these manuscripts include copies of most, if not all, of the despatches received by King from the English Ministers and Under Secretaries of State, no originals are to be found. The despatches have been copied into letter-books, some by King himself, some by his secretary ; but, while many unofficial letters to King are among the papers, the originals of the Home despatches are wanting. The inference is plain. If King had at any time regarded the English despatches as his own property, he would not have gone to the trouble of copying them, and the originals would have been found among his papers. He was exceedingly careful about his correspondence, preserving communications of all kinds, whether trivial or important, but duplicating nothing. When an original document is met with there is no copy. And the manuscripts at Government House show that when King relinquished the government he left the originals of the English despatches in the office. If in doing so he acted in accordance with the recognised practice, the presumption is that his predecessors—Governors Phillip and Hunter, and Lieutenant-Governors Grose and Paterson—treated in the same way the despatches received by them.

What then has become of these manuscripts ? Most probably they have been destroyed ; but by whom or with what object can only be conjectured. That the missing despatches met with this fate is the more likely from the fact previously stated, that public records of corresponding dates, for which the Governors were not responsible, have also disappeared. A strong-room in the Colonial Secretary's Office, Sydney, contains all the original records of New South Wales that can be found. These

papers have been examined and scheduled, and it may be seen at a glance of what they consist. They begin with a General Order, dated 7th August, 1789, "Instructions to the Night Watch." Two other orders of no particular importance follow, and these are all out of the many hundreds issued during Phillip's Governorship that appear to have been preserved. There are no official papers whatever belonging to the administration of Lieut.-Governor Paterson—December, 1794, to September, 1795; and only one of the time in which Lieut.-Governor Grose ruled—December, 1792, to December, 1794. Hunter's Governorship, which covered more than five years—11th September, 1795, to 27th September, 1800—is represented by one book containing copies of the orders made from September, 1795, to December, 1797, and five or six papers of minor importance. Papers belonging to the King period, 1800 to 1806, are more numerous; but the Records are scanty and intermittent until the term of Governor Macquarie is reached, January, 1810. There are no despatches to or from the Governors during any period. The only manuscripts of this class in Sydney are in the Secretary's room at Government House.

The Records, so far as Sydney is concerned, are thus defective in two respects. In the first place, the despatches from the foundation of the Colony up to the beginning of 1800 are wanting; in the second place, the orders, proclamations, and other official papers showing how authority was exercised in the early days are found only in fragments—in fact, they can scarcely be said to exist.

But for the active search made in London by Mr. James Bonwick, F.R.G.S., the early Records of New South Wales would have been little better than a blank. The despatches sent to England by the Governors, as well as the despatches and letters transmitted to them, have been preserved, if not as completely as could have been wished, yet to a very large extent, in the Departments of State. These sources of information have been thrown open to the Government, and the transcriptions that have been made repair, so far as it can be repaired, the misfortune the Colony has sustained in the loss of its early Records.

The first step to tap these valuable sources of information was taken in April, 1887, when the Colonial Secretary, Sir Henry Parkes, G.C.M.G., through the Agent-General, authorized Mr. Bonwick to make copies of certain despatches which he had discovered. In the following year, in view of the publication of the "History of New South Wales from the Records," authority was given for the transcription of documents relating to the period during which Governor Phillip was at the head of affairs, *i.e.*, 1788-1792. The information obtained in this way proved so interesting and valuable that Mr. Bonwick was instructed to continue his researches, and the work has since gone on without interruption. The purpose in view is to collect from every available source all the authentic information it is possible to obtain relating to the foundation of the Colony and its government during the early part of its existence.

An awkward gap is thus filled up. The information, however, was not easily obtained. The manuscripts were not readily accessible; they were gathered from many Departments. The Governors in the early days were not only responsible to the Home Office, which had the Colonies in its charge, but, as naval officers, they owed allegiance to the Admiralty. They had to correspond with the Home Secretary and the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, and with the Under Secretaries of those departments. Each department and sub-department kept two letter-books, one for the Minister and the other for the Under Secretary, so that it was necessary to examine four different sources of information for the purpose of discovering what had passed between the Governors and the English authorities.

In dealing with the Records belonging to a still earlier period—that in which the establishment of a settlement in New South Wales was discussed—the ground to be covered was wider still, though not so productive. In making preparations for the despatch of the First Fleet many departments and sub-departments were engaged—the Home Office, which had general direction of the business; the Admiralty, which undertook the equipment and officering of the ships, and the appointment of the force of marines which guarded the transports and formed the garrison at Port

Jackson ; the Treasury, which made the financial arrangements ; the Transport Office, which had to do with the convict-ships ; and the Victualling Department, which provisioned the fleet. When the marines were replaced by the special corps raised by Major Grose, known afterwards as the New South Wales Corps, another Department of State, that of War, was brought into operation ; and, accordingly, correspondence between that department and the Home Office, and between the officials at the War Office and the officers of the corps, takes its place amongst the Records. Three of the transports which constituted, with the warship *Sirius* and its tender the *Supply*, the vessels forming the First Fleet, were under charter to the East India Company to take cargoes of tea from China to London after landing convicts and stores at Port Jackson ; and at a subsequent stage, the Company, owing to the obstacles it threw in the way of Australian trade with the East, figured largely in the official correspondence relating to New South Wales. The records of the India Office are therefore another source of information.

The transcripts which have been despatched to Sydney are thus gathered from a wide field, embracing as it does the Public Record Office, the British Museum, the Home Office, the Colonial Office, the War Office, the Privy Council Office, the Admiralty, the India Office, and Somerset House. The documents had to be searched for, and the work was not without difficulty, owing to the imperfect and unsystematic way in which official records were kept in the early days. Some documents, the earlier Orders and Proclamations, for example, cannot be found at all ; others, which were believed to be missing, such as the commissions of the early Governors, have been discovered in the Home Office, after a patient search, in which valuable assistance was given by the officers of the Department. A number of the despatches copied by the transcribers in London escaped notice in the first instance because they had been placed amongst papers relating to the American colonies.

While the principal storehouse of facts concerning the early days of the Colony is the Public Record Office and the Departments of State in London, information has been obtained from

other sources. Six years ago the Agent-General, Sir Saul Samuel, acting under instructions from the Government at Sydney, purchased from Lord Brabourne a valuable collection of papers relating to the settlement and early history of New South Wales. They were once known as "The Brabourne Papers"; they are now known as "The Banks Papers." The grandfather of the present Lord Brabourne was related to Sir Joseph Banks, and in that way the papers came into the possession of the Brabourne family. Sir Joseph Banks, as pointed out in Vol. I of the Official History, took an active part in the consultations and negotiations which led to the settlement of New South Wales; and there can be no doubt that his representations, founded upon what he saw of the country during his visit to Botany Bay with Captain Cook in the *Endeavour*, did a great deal towards bringing about the settlement of New South Wales. After the Colony had been established he watched its fortunes with a parental eye, and the deep interest which he took in its welfare is shown by the correspondence that has come, through Lord Brabourne, into the possession of the Government of New South Wales. These manuscripts are apparently only a part of the papers that Sir Joseph kept with regard to this Colony. The "Banks Papers" were discovered by accident in Sir Joseph Banks' old house in Soho Square, but these manuscripts are only a portion of the correspondence which Sir Joseph had with English Ministers, and with Australian Governors, settlers, and explorers. Many of his manuscripts relating to Australian affairs have been lost or destroyed. The papers begin with four letters from Captain Cook (originals), and go up to 1814, six years before Sir Joseph's death. The absence of letters from or to Phillip, with whom Sir Joseph Banks corresponded, the fact that there are no manuscripts of later date than 1814, and other considerations, indicate that the collection, precious as it is, is only the remnant of a large store of papers relating to the foundation and early history of New South Wales.

The manuscripts of Governor King, referred to at page xi, which have been lent to the Government by the Hon. Philip

Gidley King, M.L.C., are extensive and important. They consist of a Journal, in two volumes, kept partly on board the *Sirius** on the voyage from England to Botany Bay with the First Fleet of Transports, and partly at Norfolk Island, where King acted as Commandant and Superintendent from March, 1788, to March, 1790, under a Commission issued by Phillip as Governor of New South Wales and its Dependencies; a letter-book, containing copies of despatches received and sent both during King's term as Commandant and during his subsequent command as Lieutenant-Governor, under commission from the Crown, from November, 1791, to October, 1796; four letter-books, kept during his term as Governor of New South Wales, from September, 1800, to August, 1806; and original letters and despatches, extending from 1799 to 1811. It should be pointed out with regard to the despatches recorded in the letter-books, that King during his first term at Norfolk Island corresponded with Governor Phillip, from whom he derived his authority, while during his Lieutenant-Governorship at Norfolk Island and his Governorship at Sydney he was in direct communication with the Home Office and other Departments of State in England. While acting as Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Island, from November, 1791, to October, 1796, King wrote a Second Journal, a copy of which is amongst the transcripts sent from England to the Government in Sydney.

Discoveries from time to time of manuscripts which were believed to have been lost, or the existence of which was unknown, may interfere to some extent with the consecutive printing of the Records; but it has been considered better to begin publishing at once than wait an indefinite time to make sure that all possible sources of information have been exhausted. The plan of the work contemplates the publication of the Records in chronological order, and the rule will not be departed from except in cases where despatches of a given date contain enclosures of earlier dates. Under such circumstances, to place the manuscripts in strict chronological order would cause con-

* King came out to New South Wales as Second Lieutenant of the *Sirius*.

fusion, instead of helping the reader. The plan of arranging matter according to subjects has its advantages, but it is considered that what might be gained in this way would be outweighed by the disadvantages of a system under which the reader would be obliged to look through half-a-dozen volumes to find one piece of information relating to a particular day in a particular year. It is believed that by printing the Records in chronological order, and giving with each volume a comprehensive Index, the Records will be of greater value for purposes of reference than if they were dealt with under separate heads.

As the papers given in these volumes form the basis of the Official History which is published concurrently, they are presented without comment, and without any attempt to explain the story they tell. The proper place for description, analysis, and comment is the History itself. The Records are given here as they were found, and they speak for themselves. Where it has been considered necessary to explain the relation of papers to each other, or to give information concerning persons and places, as an aid to the reader in studying the Records, the Editor has written the necessary notes, which are printed at the foot of the page, but no alteration of the text has been made in any case. Errors of composition and spelling are allowed to go without correction; in a word, the Records as printed are literal transcripts of the originals. This is the plan now generally adopted in the reproduction of manuscripts; indeed no other course could be pursued without mutilating the originals, and depriving them of their historic value.

It will be noticed in examining the Records from 1783 to 1789 that duplicates are given of some of the documents printed in Vol. I of the Official History. It was impossible to avoid this repetition. The Records stand by themselves, and they must be given intact. For this reason, the documents published in Vol. I of the History have been reprinted; in future issues, however, repetitions will not occur. In the Historical Records will be found the full text of the papers; in the History they will be digested and explained. The writer of Vol. I made such use of the manuscripts as the space at his disposal allowed; the broader plan

now adopted gives the simple facts in one set of volumes and the historical narrative in another. In this way the full Records will appear in print, while the History will not be burdened by long extracts and quotations. It is believed that by the adoption of this course the convenience of the reader will be consulted and the object which the Government has in view carried into effect.

ALEXR. BRITTON.

Government Printing Office,
Sydney, February, 1892.

VOL. I, PART 2.



INTRODUCTION.

THE papers which form the Second Part of the First Volume of the Historical Records begin with August, 1783, when the establishment of a convict settlement in New South Wales became for the first time a matter of serious consideration with the English Government, and end with December, 1792, when Phillip, the first Governor of the colony, left Sydney on his return to England.* The manuscripts reproduced here represent a period of nine years and four months. During the first three years proposals and suggestions were under consideration, eight months were occupied in making preparations for the departure of the First Fleet of transports, and the voyage took up eight months. The remainder of the time, rather more than five years, belongs to the actual history of the Colony.

The papers cover a great deal of ground. They relate to the proposals which led to the adoption of a plan under which New

* Phillip applied for a year's leave of absence in April, 1790 (post, pp. 329, 330). He renewed the request on the 25th March, 1791, on the ground of ill-health (post, pp. 483, 484). On the 21st November, 1791, he wrote to Lord Grenville, requesting permission to resign the Government, so that he might return to England, "in hopes of finding that relief which this country does not afford" (post, p. 559). The reply to this communication, which came from the Right Hon. Henry Dundas, who had succeeded Lord Grenville at the Home Office, did not arrive until the 7th October, 1792, but as permission to retire was not expressly granted, Phillip waited for more definite instructions, which, however, do not seem to have reached him. He sailed for England on the 11th December, 1792, leaving Major Grose, the Lieutenant-Governor, in charge. Soon after returning to England (July, 1793) he formally resigned the Governorship, on the ground that he suffered from a complaint which could not be properly treated in the Colony.

South Wales became a convict settlement, the arrangements made for the occupation of the country, the equipment and despatch of the vessels which formed the First Fleet, the voyage to Botany Bay, which was chosen in the first instance as the site for the new colony, the rejection of Botany Bay by Phillip in favour of Port Jackson, the landing at Sydney Cove and the establishment there of the first settlement, the measures taken for the government of the Colony, the difficulties experienced by Phillip owing to the scarcity of food and the unfriendly attitude of the officers who commanded the garrison of marines, the efforts made to explore and cultivate the country, the formation of settlements at Parramatta and Toongabbe, the occupation of Norfolk Island, and other matters which need not be set forth in detail.

The correspondence includes letters from Departments of State to other Departments, letters between Phillip and the Departments while he was watching the arrangements for sending out the First Fleet, despatches sent by Phillip to the Home Office and the Admiralty after his arrival at Sydney, despatches sent from England to the Governor, Phillip's correspondence with Major Ross and other officers of the Marines, arising out of questions of duty and discipline, despatches from the commandants of Norfolk Island to Phillip, despatches from the officer in command of the Marines to the Admiralty, and correspondence between Phillip and officers of the Civil Staff upon matters affecting the welfare of the Settlement. There are also letters and papers showing what steps were taken during Phillip's Governorship to procure provisions and live stock from India, Batavia, and the Cape of Good Hope, and accounts written by responsible officers describing the loss of the *Sirius* and the *Guardian* when carrying supplies for the Settlements, the former for Norfolk Island, the latter for Sydney.

This part of the Records contains the commissions given to Phillip and his staff, the Order of the King in Council (Geo. III) appointing New South Wales a place to which convicts might be sent, the Royal Instructions given to Phillip before he sailed, and the Additional Instructions sent to him after his arrival at Sydney, the Letters Patent constituting Law Courts and a Court of Vice-

Admiralty in New South Wales, the form of land grant given to the first settler, public orders promulgated at Sydney and Norfolk Island, and other official documents.

Extracts from the Banks Papers are also given here, but the number is comparatively small. Although Sir Joseph Banks had a great deal to do with the foundation of the Colony, his name seldom appears in the official correspondence, and in the papers purchased from Lord Brabourne there is little trace of his connection with the deliberations which led to the despatch of the First Fleet. But in papers of later date the active interest he took in the welfare of the new settlement and the influence he exerted are abundantly shown. That Sir Joseph Banks had access to Phillip's despatches may be inferred from the extracts in his own handwriting which have been found amongst his papers, and that he enjoyed the confidence of Ministers may be gathered from the fact that drafts of their despatches and instructions form part of the manuscripts purchased from Lord Brabourne by the Government of this Colony.

The collection does not contain many papers relating either to the establishment of the Colony or the time of Phillip's Government, but some of them are of great interest, those, for example, which relate to the Mutiny of the *Bounty*. Captain Bligh, who commanded that vessel on its memorable voyage, owed his appointment to Sir Joseph Banks, to whom he wrote, according to his own statement, a fuller account of the affair than the official report which he sent to the Admiralty. In one respect this is true, for while the official report begins with the arrival of the *Bounty* at the Cape of Good Hope on the voyage from England to Otaheite, the account sent to Banks sets forth the object of the expedition—the carrying of the bread-fruit tree from the Society Islands to Jamaica—and gives a short statement concerning the fitting out of the *Bounty* and the instructions given to her commander. It also briefly describes the voyage from England to the Cape. But as regards the mutiny, and the adventures of Bligh and his companions after they had been cast adrift in the *Bounty's* launch, the official account is the fuller of the two, and carries the story to a later date. The account sent to Banks

will be found at pp. 268-278. Bligh's official despatch, which was not received in time for insertion in the body of the volume, is given in Appendix A, together with four letters from Bligh to the Admiralty reporting the movements of the *Bounty* on the voyage to the Cape.

There are also among the extracts made from the Banks Papers some highly-interesting letters relating to the expedition of discovery and survey to the North-west Coast of America made by Captain Vancouver, under instructions from the English Government. Another series of letters which passed between Mr. W. Richards, junr., a navy contractor, and Sir Joseph Banks is valuable, because of the light it throws upon the transportation arrangements of the early days. The correspondence also contains proposals on the part of Mr. Richards to go out to New South Wales as a settler, and to open a public store in Sydney. About this time the emigration question was under Sir Joseph Banks's notice in another shape, as will be seen from a plan briefly sketched in his handwriting, for establishing a number of families on an estate in the new settlement to be allotted by the Government.* A memorandum found among the papers, occupying only three lines of type, is of peculiar interest, for it records the fact that Sir Joseph Banks could have held office if he had chosen to do so, and that he refused the distinction because he considered that his services would be of more value to the Colony if he kept aloof from political responsibilities.† A few other papers from the collection are also published, but they do not require special notice.

The Historical Records relating to the foundation of the Colony begin with "A Proposal for Establishing a Settlement in New South Wales," written, in August, 1783‡, by Mr. James Maria Matra, of Marston House, Frome, Somersetshire, and No. 4 Duke-street, Grosvenor Square, London. Little is known of this gentleman at the present day, beyond the fact that he was for a time the Consular representative of Great Britain in Morocco; but he was undoubtedly a man of position and influence, or his

* Post, p. 424.

† Post, p. 229.

‡ Post, pp. 1-6.

proposal would not have commanded the attention it received from English ministers. Matra is a name well-known in Corsican history; and it is more than probable that James Maria Matra, who was certainly an English subject either by birth or naturalization, was of Corsican origin. In the early part of the Eighteenth Century the Marquis Matra occupied a position of political importance in Corsica. During the years 1741-48, according to Boswell's "Account of Corsica,"* one of the Matras and his fellow-countryman, Gaffori, were joint Protectors of the Island, and led the Corsicans in their efforts to drive out the Genoese. According to the *Nouvelle Biographie Générale*, Marius Emmanuel Matra had a command under Pasquale de Paoli in 1754, but turned against his countrymen. He joined the Genoese in an attack on Paoli, and was killed in the encounter. Another Matra (Colonel Antonio Matra), who had joined the Genoese, took part in an attack upon Corsica in 1767. The Marquis Matra had an hereditary enemy in the Marquis Hyacinthe, or Giacinta de Paoli, whose son, Pasquale de Paoli, became in 1755 Dictator of Corsica, a position which he occupied for fourteen years, when he was dispossessed by the French.† In an article published in the *Nineteenth Century*, July, 1891, Mr. Walter Frewen Lord sketches the career of Pasquale de Paoli, and tells the fate of the Matra family. The Marquis de Paoli maintained "a fierce vendetta all his life with the Marquis Matra," and when Pasquale de Paoli came into power one of the first steps he took was to "cut off the Matras root and branch." Mr. Lord puts the thing in another way; the Matras, he says, were "piously exterminated" by Paoli. It is not unreasonable to suppose, however, that some members of the family escaped from Corsica, and found their way to England, at that time the only safe shelter for political refugees. The circumstances are suggestive, but it cannot be assumed that James Maria Matra was one of the refugees of 1755, for in 1783, only twenty-eight years later, he appears to have been living as a well-established English

* "An Account of Corsica," by James Boswell. Third edition, London, 1769.

† Paoli took refuge in England, where he became an intimate friend of Johnson and Boswell.

gentleman. But Corsica was an uncomfortable place for the Matras long before the time of Pasquale de Paoli, and it is not unlikely that some branch of the family made a home for itself in England early in the eighteenth century. In that case, there is nothing improbable in the supposition that the author of the "Proposal for Establishing a Settlement in New South Wales" was a descendant of one of the Corsican Matras, born in England. Nothing positive can be stated as to Matra's origin, but so much interest attaches to the writer of the Proposal, that his probable connection with the Matras of Corsica cannot be passed over.

Mr. Matra's proposal was laid before the Coalition Government of Fox and Lord North, but the Ministry went out of office in December, 1783, and no action was taken. Mr. Matra's suggestions, however, were made use of by the Pitt Ministry, which succeeded that of Fox and North, in preparing the scheme which was ultimately carried out. In the proposal as originally submitted no allusion was made to sending out convicts, but after conversing with Lord Sydney, who had taken Lord North's place at the Home Office—the department which had the control of Colonial affairs—Mr. Matra wrote an addendum to his paper, in which he adopted the suggestion made by the Minister that New South Wales was a proper place for the reception of convicts condemned to transportation. The scheme thus amended seems to have formed the basis of the proposal of Admiral Sir George Young, forwarded to Lord Sydney in January, 1785, through the Attorney-General, Pepper Arden.* The same ideas appear in another form in a paper without name or date entitled "Heads of a Plan for effectually disposing of convicts by the establishment of a colony in New South Wales."† This paper is official, as shown by Lord Sydney's letter to the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury, 18th August, 1786,‡ and his letter to the Lords of the Admiralty, 31st August, 1786§, and the settlement was established practically on the lines laid down in the "Heads of a Plan."

Preparations for the despatch of the First Fleet were immediately begun, and the vessels sailed in May, 1787. In the

* Post, pp. 10-13.

† Post, pp. 14-16.

‡ Post, pp. 17-20.

§ Post, pp. 20-22.

interval correspondence took place between department and department and between Governor Phillip and the departments. Phillip, who was first captain of the *Sirius*, Hunter being second in command, had two important matters to look to—the general outfit of the expedition and the equipment of his own vessel—and during the time of preparation he wrote many letters to Ministers, Under Secretaries, and other officials. Most of these were sent from London, where he was detained, as stated in King's Journal, awaiting the decision of the Ministry on matters of importance relating to the expedition. He did not go on board the *Sirius* at the Motherbank until the 11th May, the day before the fleet got under weigh. From the Motherbank Phillip sent one letter, and three others were despatched by the *Hyæna*, which accompanied the *Sirius* a hundred leagues from the entrance of the English Channel. The papers next in order consist of a series of letters from Phillip written at Santa Cruz, Rio de Janeiro, and the Cape of Good Hope, at which ports the fleet put in for water and fresh provisions.

On the 18th January, 1788, the *Supply*, having on board Governor Phillip, who had left the *Sirius* eighty leagues to the east of the Cape, entered Botany Bay, and on the 26th the whole fleet was at anchor in Sydney Cove.

Phillip was not in a position to send any communication to England until one of the transports sailed on the return voyage, and his first despatch to the Secretary of State for the Home Department bears date 15th May, 1788. After this he sent despatches as opportunities arose. These despatches deal very fully with the condition and progress of the settlement; they constitute, in fact, a history of the Colony from its establishment to the close of Phillip's Governorship. Phillip's first despatch, addressed to Lord Sydney, was replied to on the 20th June, 1789, by the Right Hon. W. W. Grenville, afterwards Lord Grenville, who had succeeded Lord Sydney, and the correspondence was continued with regularity. At this time Ministerial changes and promotions were frequent, and as the passage to Australia was not usually made under six or eight months, Phillip sent despatches to England in ignorance of the actual state of

affairs. He wrote to Lord Sydney after that Minister's place had been taken by the Hon. W. W. Grenville, and to Grenville when he in turn had been superseded by the Right Hon. Henry Dundas. Eight months after Grenville had been raised to the Peerage, Phillip addressed his despatches to "the Right Hon. W. W. Grenville." These things are not of great importance in themselves; they are simply pointed out for the purpose of explaining apparent discrepancies.

The despatches from Sydney to London are more numerous and more voluminous than the despatches from London to Sydney. This is what might have been expected. Phillip was required to transmit to the Home Office a full account of his proceedings and the affairs of the settlement, and he faithfully obeyed his instructions. His despatches, though not wordy, were frequently of considerable length. He had to deal with matters of detail as well as questions of importance, and it was sometimes necessary to treat special subjects in separate despatches. A large portion of this volume is taken up by Phillip's communications to the English Departments of State, while the replies, which in many instances contain little more than an acknowledgment of the intelligence received from Phillip and a brief intimation of opinion regarding his proceedings, occupy a comparatively small space.

Although the English Government depended chiefly upon Phillip's reports it was not without information from other sources. Major Ross, who acted as Lieutenant-Governor until the detachment of Marines, which he commanded, was replaced by the New South Wales Corps, wrote official despatches to the Admiralty, as well as private letters to Evan Nepean, Under Secretary for the Home Department, and Phillip Stephens, Secretary to the Admiralty. Ross's private letters are of greater interest than his public ones, for they are written without reserve, and give his independent views of the condition and prospects of the Colony at the time.

It may be as well to state here that other private letters will be found in the correspondence now published, but, although private, they are of such a nature that their right to a place in the

Records cannot be disputed. Apart from the Banks Papers, few of which are official, although they relate to matters historically important, the Records contain a number of private and quasi-private letters which are as much a part of history as the formal despatches. The correspondence of this class includes letters between Phillip and the English Ministers, and between Phillip and the Under Secretaries. With only a few exceptions these letters refer to matters of public concern, and some of them are of peculiar interest and importance. They are written with a freedom which is foreign to official communications, and they throw light upon points which without them would be obscure. Correspondence of this nature, written in confidence, need not be treated as confidential now. An examination of the Records will show that private letters, when they bore upon matters of public importance, were considered by the English Government and frequently acted upon. The manner in which they were treated is indicated by the fact that private letters have been found among the papers preserved in the Departments of State.

Other letters, private in form, but of public importance by reason of the information contained in them, are printed with the Records. They include an unofficial letter from Captain William Hill, who commanded a detachment of the New South Wales Corps on board the *Surprise*, one of the vessels belonging to the Second Fleet, which gives fuller information regarding the sufferings of the convicts on the voyage than can be found in the official despatches. There is also an unofficial letter from the Rev. R. Johnson, the first chaplain of the Settlement, describing the sad condition of the convicts brought by the *Neptune*, *Surprise*, and *Scarborough*—the Second Fleet—on their arrival at Sydney, which is valuable for a similar reason. Among other private letters of historical value is one from Captain Edward Manning, commander of the *Pitt*, in which an account is given of a severe outbreak of fever amongst the soldiers and seamen during the voyage. Major Grose, the Commandant of the New South Wales Corps, who was on board the vessel with a detachment of soldiers, wrote an official letter on the subject to Nepean, but Captain Manning's account, written without any restraint, is

much fuller and far more interesting. In the same category may be placed a letter from Lieutenant Fowell, of the *Sirius*, in which he sends to his father in England a full account of the loss of that vessel at Norfolk Island and King's voyage to Batavia in the *Supply*.* A letter from Mr. William Wilberforce, the philanthropist, to the Right Hon. Henry Dundas, as to the appointment of a second chaplain for New South Wales, enclosing a note from the Archbishop of Canterbury, has been found among the Home Office Papers, and is reproduced. Though the latter was written in confidence, it is of great public interest. That it was considered and acted upon can scarcely be doubted, for a second chaplain, the Rev. Samuel Marsden, was soon afterwards appointed.

The despatches written by Phillip at Sydney begin by announcing the arrival of the First Fleet in Botany Bay in January, 1788, and carry the record of transactions to the 16th October, 1792, two months before he took his departure for England. In the interval several fresh batches of convicts had been sent out, and notwithstanding the great loss of life on board some of the transports, and the heavy mortality that took place after the convicts were landed, the population of the settlements had increased to upwards of 4,000, of which number about one-fourth belonged to Norfolk Island. In the face of serious difficulties a good deal of work had been done. Buildings had been erected at Sydney, branch settlements had been established at Parramatta and Toongabbe, and 1,500 acres of land had been brought under cultivation. Exploration had not been neglected. A knowledge of the country between Parramatta and the Nepean had been acquired, while the Hawkesbury had been explored from its mouth to Windsor, where a settlement was afterwards formed. The progress that was made may be traced step by step in the despatches, which also reveal the disadvantages under which the young community laboured, the privations and sufferings which all classes of the people endured, and the obstacles which were

* King, who was on his way to England with despatches from Phillip, parted company with Fowell at Batavia. The latter had instructions to hire a vessel at that place to take provisions to Sydney. While engaged in this service he caught a fever and died.

placed in Phillip's way by the perverse temper of some of the marine officers. To what extent the situation was realised in England, and what steps were taken to afford relief, may be discovered by examining the despatches sent to Phillip, beginning with Lord Grenville's communication of 20th June, 1789 (the first despatch from England), and ending with the despatch of his successor, the Right Hon. Henry Dundas, 14th July, 1792. Other correspondence took place between the Home Office in London and the Governor in Sydney. There was a regular interchange of letters between Phillip and his friend, Under Secretary Nepean, who discussed at length matters which were briefly dealt with in the communications between Minister and Governor. The two sets of correspondence must be read together; the one is the complement of the other.

Although the official despatches from the Home Office to Phillip and from Phillip to the Home Office, constitute the most important part of the records, other papers of great interest connected with the affairs of the settlement are printed. There are, for example, the letters sent by Captain Hunter to the Admiralty about the voyage of the *Sirius* to the Cape of Good Hope, where she was sent for supplies in October, 1788, and her loss at Norfolk Island in March, 1790, while taking provisions to that settlement; and the letters of Lieutenant Riou, who describes the accident to the *Guardian*, which struck an iceberg while on her way to Sydney under his command with supplies for the settlement, and was taken with difficulty to Table Bay, where she was abandoned.

The steps taken to send out a special force (the New South Wales Corps) for service in the Colony, to replace the detachment of marines, which constituted the first garrison, and the conditions under which the corps was raised by Major Grose, are set forth in the correspondence which passed between that officer and the War Office, and between the War Office and the other Departments of State. King, who went out as Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Island in 1791, purchased live stock at the Cape for the benefit of the settlement at Sydney, and a full account of these transactions is given in the letters which were sent by him to the Home Office. As previously stated, it became necessary very

shortly after the establishment of the Colony to send to the Cape of Good Hope, Batavia, and India for provisions, and amongst the papers will be found letters from the Home Office to the Governor-General of India, as well as correspondence between the Home Office and the contractors. Correspondence also passed between Phillip and the Indian authorities on the subject, and between Phillip and the contractors.

Towards the close of 1791 and in the early part of 1792 the Home Office was in communication with John Sutton, a Quaker, who made proposals for sending fifteen Quaker families to Sydney. The correspondence shows that the proposals were accepted with modifications, but owing to delays and other circumstances not clearly stated in the despatches, the persons who had been nominated did not embark, and the first effort to place emigrants from England as free settlers on the soil of New South Wales came to nothing.* According to Judge-Advocate Collins, the Quakers had "engaged to take their passages in the *Bellona*," which arrived at Sydney 16th January, 1793, "but it was said they had been diverted from their purpose by some misrepresentations which had been made to them respecting this country."

A considerable portion of the correspondence relates to Norfolk Island and its affairs. A few weeks after the landing of the expedition at Sydney Cove, Phillip despatched Lieutenant King to the island with a batch of convicts; and for a number of years intimate relations existed between the two settlements. During Phillip's term of office the Government at Norfolk Island underwent several changes. King was replaced by Major Ross as Commandant in March, 1790, and in November, 1791, Ross was superseded by King, who had been sent to England with despatches, and returned as Lieutenant-Governor of the island. During King's first command he corresponded with Phillip, from whom his authority was derived, and from whom he received his commission and instructions. Ross held office under similar conditions, and he also corresponded with Phillip. King as Lieutenant-Governor sent despatches both to Phillip and the Home Office,

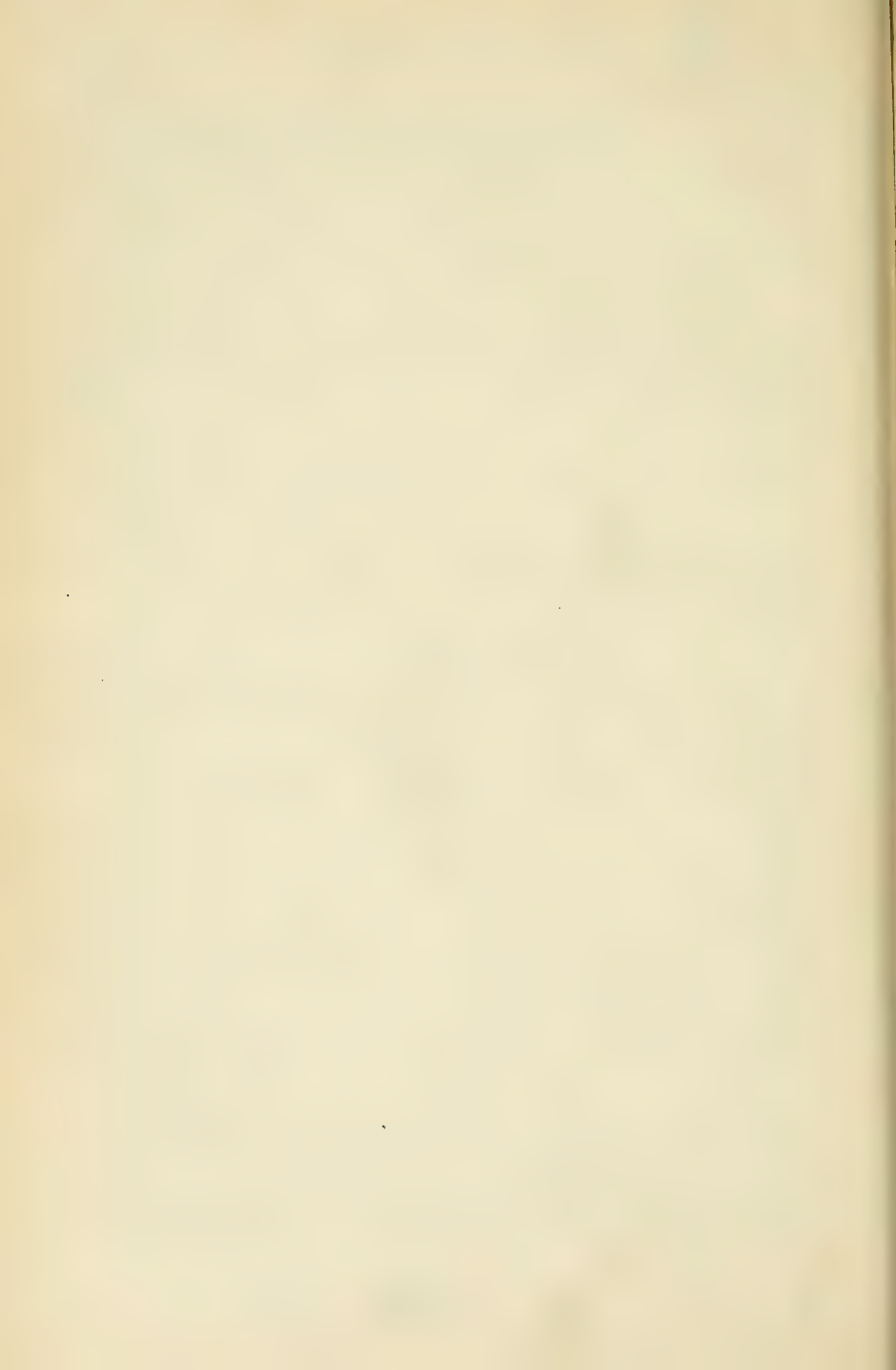
* See note, post, p. 584.

but so far as this collection of papers goes the despatches are to Phillip only. The information received at Sydney from Norfolk Island was forwarded to the Home Office as opportunity arose. Sometimes Phillip contented himself with giving in his own despatches summaries of the reports he had received from the Commandant or Lieutenant-Governor; at other times he sent extracts from the Norfolk Island despatches, or the despatches themselves. The more important of the public orders and proclamations made at Norfolk Island were sent to England as enclosures, and are printed with Phillip's despatches. Both Ross and King wrote descriptions of the place they had been called upon to govern, in which they offered their opinion of its capabilities as a settlement, and gave information regarding its climate, soil, and products. These reports form part of the records now published.

As indicated in the Preface, the Records contained in these pages are not to be regarded as absolutely complete. There are blanks in the correspondence, and some of the enclosures which accompanied the despatches are absent. The omissions may perhaps be made good when the manuscripts in the Record Office and the Departments of State in London have been thoroughly exhausted, but all the papers that were procurable when this collection was prepared for the press have been printed. Unexpected discoveries were made while the transcriptions were in progress, and early manuscripts, not now in the possession of the Government, may yet be brought to light. In the meantime, the best use has been made of the material at command.

To prevent any misconception, it should be stated that the marginal notes do not form part of the manuscripts, but have been written as a guide to their contents. The object of the foot notes is to explain points not made clear in the text, and to assist the reader in finding papers having relation to the same subject but printed in chronological order in different parts of the volume.

The Index contains lists of the despatches, together with full information on the subjects to which they relate.



HISTORICAL RECORDS

OF

NEW SOUTH WALES.

JAMES MARIA MATRA'S PROPOSAL.*

A PROPOSAL FOR ESTABLISHING A SETTLEMENT IN NEW SOUTH WALES.

1783

23 Aug.

I AM going to offer an object to the consideration of our Government what [that] may in time atone for the loss of our American colonies.

Loss of
America.

By the discoveries and enterprise of our officers, many new countries have been found which know no sovereign, and that hold out the most enticing allurements to European adventurers. None are more inviting than New South Wales.

New fields of
Colonisation

Capt. Cook first coasted and surveyed the eastern side of that fine country, from the 38th degree of south latitude 'down to the 10th, where he found everything to induce him to give the most favourable account of it. In this immense tract of more than 2,000 miles there was every variety of soil, and great parts of it were extremely fertile, peopled only by a few black inhabitants, who, in the rudest state of society, knew no other arts than such as were necessary to their mere animal existence, and which was almost entirely sustained by catching fish.

Cook's
account of
New South
Wales.

The climate and soil are so happily adapted to produce every various and valuable production of Europe, and of both the Indies, that with good management, and a few settlers, in twenty or thirty years they might cause a revolution in the whole system of European commerce, and secure to England a monopoly of some part of it, and a very large share in the whole.

Climate
and soil.

* Mr. Matra and his proposal are noticed in the Introduction, ante pp. xxiv-xxvi.

1783

23 Aug.

Tropical
products.

Part of it lies in a climate parallel to the Spice Islands, and is fitted for the production of that valuable commodity, as well as the sugar-cane, tea, coffee, silk, cotton, indigo, tobacco, and the other articles of commerce that have been so advantageous to the maritime powers of Europe.

Flax.

I must not omit the mention of a very important article, which may be obtained in any quantity, if this settlement be made the proper use of, which would be of very considerable consequence, both among the necessities and conveniences of life. I mean the New Zealand hemp or flax-plant, an object equally of curiosity and utility. By proper operations it would serve the various purposes of hemp, flax, and silk, and it is more easily manufactured than any one of them. In naval equipments it would be of the greatest importance; a cable of the circumference of ten inches would be equal in strength to one of eighteen inches made of European hemp. Our manufacturers are of opinion that canvas made of it would be superior in strength and beauty to any canvas of our own country. The threads or filaments of this plant are formed by nature with the most exquisite delicacy, and they may be so minutely divided as to be small enough to make the finest cambric; in color and gloss it resembles silk. After my true, though imperfect description of this plant, I need not enlarge on it, as a very singular acquisition, both to the arts of convenience and luxury.

Its capability
for
manu-
facture.To
American
loyalists.

This country may afford an asylum to those unfortunate American loyalists to whom Great Britain is bound by every tie of honour and gratitude to protect and support, where they may repair their broken fortunes, and again enjoy their former domestic felicity.

Send a
ship to
investigate.

That the Government may run no risque nor be left to act in a business of this kind without sufficient information, it is proposed that one ship of the peace establishment (to incur the least possible expence) be directly sent to that country, for the discovery and allotment of a proper district, for the intended settlement; that one or two gentlemen of capacity and knowledge, as well in soil and situation, as in every other requisite, be sent in her, that there may be no imposition on the Government, nor upon the Americans, who, with their families, shall adventure there.

Or two ships
with
marines and
artificers.

If the Government be disposed to extend this plan, two vessels may be sent with two companies of marines, selected from among such of that corps as best understand husbandry, or manufactures, and about twenty artificers, who are all the emigration required from the parent State; these last to be chiefly such as are taken on board ships of war for carpenters' and armourers' crews, with a few potters and gardeners.

These twenty men and the marines, under a proper person, to be left at the new settlement, with materials and provisions, to prepare for the reception of the intended settlers, that their wants may be as few as possible on their arrival.

1783

23 Aug.

As the ship, or ships, stop at the Cape of Good Hope, a sufficient stock to begin with of cows, sheep, goats, hogs, poultry, and seeds may be obtained there. A supply of the like articles, as well as cotton seeds, plantains, grapes, grain, &c., &c. may be had in any quantity at Savu or any of the Moluccas, which are very near New South Wales.

Live stock
and plants.

When the landing is effected the smaller vessel may be dispatched home with the intelligence; and while the party designed to be left are superintending the gardens and increase of live stock, the other ship may, if thought proper, be despatched to New Caledonia, Otaheite, and the neighbouring islands to procure a few families there, and as many women as may serve for the men left behind. There is every reason to believe they may be obtained without difficulty. If but one vessel goes, the party with their stock may be left without apprehension of danger from the natives.

One ship to
return.The other
to be sent
to the
islands.

Sir Joseph Banks is of opinion that we may draw any number of useful inhabitants from China, agreeably to an invariable custom of the Dutch in forming or recruiting their Eastern settlements.

Banks
recommends
Chinese.

As it is intended not to involve the Government in either a great or a useless expense (for the settlement is designed to increase the wealth of the parent country, as well as for the emolument of the adventurers), a sum not exceeding £3,000 will be more than adequate to the whole expense of Government. Most of the tools, saws, axes, &c., &c., for the use of the party left may be drawn from the ordnance and other public stores, where at present they are useless; and the vessels also, being part of the peace establishment, neither can, nor ought to be, fairly reckoned in the expenditure.

Probable
expense.

That the Ministry may be convinced that this is not a vain, idle scheme, taken up without due attention and consideration, they may be assured that the matter has been seriously considered by some of the most intelligent and candid Americans, who all agree that, under the patronage and protection of Government, it offers the most favorable prospects that have yet occurred to better the fortunes and to promote the happiness of their fellow-sufferers and countrymen.

Scheme
approved of
by the
Americans,

Sir Joseph Banks highly approves of the settlement, and is very ready to give his opinion of it, either to his Majesty's Ministry or others, whenever they may please to require it.

and by
Banks.

Should this settlement be made, we may enter into a commerce that would render our trade to China, hitherto extremely against

Trade with
China.

1783

23 Aug.

Trade with
China and
the islands.

us, very favourable. The Aleutian and Foxes islands, situated between Asia and America, which abound with the choicest furs, lie nearly north of New South Wales. It is from these islands the Russians get the most and best of their furs, with which they carry on a very lucrative trade by land with the Chinese. Our ships that sailed under the command of Captain Cook and Clerke stopped at some of them, and the skins which they procured then sold in China at 400 hard dollars each, though for the few they brought home, of the same quality, they only received about ten pounds each. As our situation in New South Wales would enable us to carry on this trade with the utmost facility, we should be no longer under the necessity of sending such immense quantities of silver for the different articles we import from the Chinese Empire.

Woollen
trade with
Japan

There is also a prospect of considerably extending our woollen trade. We know that large quantities of woollen cloth are smuggled to Japan by the Russians, which, as it is taken by land carriage from St. Petersburg to Kamschatka, and then to the islands by a very precarious navigation in boats, must be extremely dear. The Japanese, however, go in their junks to the islands and purchase great quantities of it.

and Korea.

The peninsula of Korea, a kingdom tributary to the Chinese, and unvisited by Europeans, has its supply at second-hand chiefly from the Japanese. No ship has ever attempted this commerce, excepting once or twice that the Spaniards ventured thither from their American dominions; but as the inhabitants of New Spain are but indifferent navigators for the high, cold latitudes, they could not oftener repeat the enterprise.

New Zealand
timber for
shipping

It may be seen by Captain Cook's voyage that New Zealand is covered with timber of size and every quality that indicates long duration; it grows close to the water's edge, and may be easily obtained. Would it not be worth while for such as may be dispatched to New South Wales to take in some of this timber on their return, for the use of the King's yards? As the two countries are within a fortnight's run of each other, and as we might be of the utmost service to the New Zealanders, I think it highly probable that this plan might become eminently useful to us as a naval power, especially as we might thus procure masts, a single tree of which would be large enough for a first-rate ship, and planks superior to any that Europe possesses.

The trade
in spices.

By the preliminary articles of peace with Holland we are entitled to a free navigation in the Molucca Seas. Without a settlement in the neighbourhood, the concession is useless; for the Dutch have an agent almost on every island in those seas. If we have a settlement, it is unnecessary; for as spices are the only articles we could expect by it, it is probable we should stand in no need of their indulgence, for as part of New South Wales lies in

the same latitude with the Moluccas, and is even very close to them, there is every reason to suppose that what nature has so bountifully bestowed on the small islands may also be found on the larger. But if, contrary to analogy, it should not be so, the defect is easily supplied, for, as the seeds are procured without difficulty, any quantity may speedily be cultivated.

1783

23 Aug.

Spices
may be
cultivated.

To those who are alarmed at the idea of weakening the mother country by opening a channel for emigration, I must answer that it is more profitable that a part of our countrymen should go to a new abode, where they may be useful to us, than to the American States. If we cannot keep our subjects at home, it is sound policy to point out a road by following of which they may add to the national strength.

Emigration
policy.

The place which New South Wales holds on our globe might give it a very commanding influence in the policy of Europe. If a colony from Britain was established in that large tract of country, and if we were at war with Holland or Spain, we might very powerfully annoy either State from our new settlement. We might, with a safe and expeditious voyage, make naval incursions on Java and the other Dutch settlements; and we might with equal facility invade the coast of Spanish America, and intercept the Manilla ships, laden with the treasures of the west. This check which New South Wales would be in time of war on both those powers makes it a very important object when we view it in the chart of the world with a political eye.

Value of a
naval
station.

Sir Joseph Banks' high approbation of the scheme which I have here proposed deserves the most respectful attention of every sensible, liberal, and spirited individual amongst his countrymen. The language of encomium, applied to this gentleman, would surely be inequitably censured as the language of adulation. To spurn the alluring pleasures which fortune procures in a frivolous and luxurious age, and to encounter extreme difficulties and dangers in pursuit of discoveries, which are of great benefit to mankind, is a complicated and illustrious event, as useful as it is rare, and which calls for the warmest publick gratitude and esteem.

Banks's
opinion
entitled to
attention.

I shall take this opportunity to make a remark on colonization which has not occurred to me in any author, and which I flatter myself will contain some important civil and political truth.

Colonisa-
tion.

Too great a diminution of inhabitants of the mother country is commonly apprehended from voluntary emigration—an apprehension which seems to me not to be the result of mature reflexion. That we almost universally have a strong affection for our native soil is an observation as true as it is old. It is founded on the affections of human nature. Not only a Swiss, but even an Iceland, when he is abroad, sickens and languishes in his absence from his native country; therefore, few of any country will ever think of settling in any foreign part of the world, from

Depopula-
tion theory.

Love of
country.

1783

23 Aug.

Poverty the
source of
emigration

a restless mind and from romantic views. A man's affairs are generally in a very distressed, in a desperate situation when he resolves to take a long adieu of his native soil, and of connections which must be always dear to him. Hence a body of emigrants, nay a numerous body of emigrants, may in a commercial view be of great and permanent service to their parent community in some remote part of the world, who, if they continue at home, will probably live to see their own ruin, and will be very prejudicial to society. The politician of an expanded mind reasons from the almost invariable actions of human nature. The doctrine of the petty statesman is hardly applicable to a larger extent than that of his own closet. When our circumstances are adverse in the extreme they very often produce illegal and rapacious conduct. If a poor man of broken fortunes and of any pretensions be timid in his nature, he most probably becomes a useless, if he has an ardent spirit, he becomes a bad and a criminal, citizen. There are indeed some epochs in a State when emigrations from it may be too numerous; but when from some calamitous and urgent publick cause it must be unworthy of inhabitants.

and crime.

JAMES M. MATRA.

August 23rd, 1783.

Sydney's
opinion.

When I conversed with Lord Sydney on this subject it was observed that New South Wales would be a very proper region for the reception of criminals condemned to transportation. I believe that it will be found that in this idea good policy and humanity are united.

Report on
gaols.

It will here be very pertinent to my purpose to give an extract from the report of the committee appointed to consider the several returns relative to gaols [gaols].*

Colonisation
recom-
mended.

1st Resolution:—"That the plan of establishing a colony or colonies in some distant part of the globe, and in new discovered countries, where the climate is healthy, and where the means of support are attainable, is equally agreeable to the dictates of humanity and sound policy, and might prove in the result advantageous to navigation and commerce."

Convicts
should be
sent out to
form
colonies.

2d. Resolution.—"That it is the opinion of this committee that it might be of publick utility if the laws which now direct and authorize the transportation of certain convicts to his Majesty's colonies and plantations in N. America were made to authorize the same to any part of the globe that may be found expedient."

The following facts will particularly corroborate the second resolution:—

Transporta-
tion to
Africa.

Seven hundred and forty-six convicts were sent to Africa from the year 1775 to 1776. The concise account of them given into the committee exhibits an alarming expenditure of human life.

* Committee of the House of Commons, appointed in 1777.

334 died, 271 deserted to no one knows where, and of the remainder no account could be given. Governor O'Hara, who had resided in Africa many years, was of opinion that British convicts could not for any time exist in that climate.

1783

23 Aug.

The estimate of the expence, given in by Mr. Roberts, necessary to establish a settlement there, to receive them, amounted to £9,865. Afterwards the annual charge to the publick for each convict would be about £15 14s. Government pays annually to the contractor for each convict who is employed in the hulks £26 15s. 10d. The annual work of each man is valued at a third of the expence.

Expense of settlement in Africa.

I am informed that in some years more than 1,000 felons are convicted, many of whom are under 18 years of age. The charge to the publick for these convicts has been increasing for the last seven or eight years; and, I believe, now amounts to more than £20,000 per annum.

Cost of convicts at home.

When the convicts were sent to America they were sold for a servitude of seven years. A proposal has been made for the alteration of this mode, respecting those sent to Africa, by condemning them to some publick work there. They were to be released from servitude, and some ground was to be given them to cultivate in proportion as a reformation was observed in their conduct.

Two plans for utilising convicts.

Neither of those plans can I approve.

Give them a few acres of ground as soon as they arrive in New South Wales, in absolute property, with what assistance they may want to till them. Let it be here remarked that they cannot fly from the country, that they have no temptation to theft, and that they must work or starve. I likewise suppose that they are not, by any means, to be reproached for their former conduct. If these premises be granted me, I may reasonably conclude that it is highly probable they will be useful; that it is very possible they will be moral subjects of society.

Another plan—free grants of land.

Do you wish, either by private prudence, or by civil policy, to reclaim offenders? Show by your treatment of them that you think their reformation extremely practicable, and do not hold out every moment before their eyes the hideous and mortifying deformity of their own vices and crimes. A man's intimate and hourly acquaintance with his guilt, of the frowns and severities of the world, tend more powerfully, even than the immediate effects of his bad habits, to make him a determined and incorrigible villain.

Reformation of offenders.

Treat them like men.

By the plan which I have now proposed a necessity to continue in the place of his destination and to be industrious is imposed on the criminal. The expence to the nation is absolutely imperceptible, comparatively, with what criminals have hitherto cost

Economy and humanity

1783 Government ; and thus two objects of most desirable and beautiful
23 Aug. union will be permanently blended—economy to the publick, and
humanity to the individual.

JAMES M. MATRA.

1784

J. M. MATRA TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

1 Oct.

Marston House, Frome, Somersetshire,

1st October [November], '84.

Dear Sir,

De Lancey's
proposal to
send out
American
loyalists.

Of the many letters that I have long been pestered with on the subject of New South Wales, the enclosed is the only one that I am now desirous of answering, for which reason I take the liberty of sending it to you. I know that Mr. De Lancey, who is very sanguine on the business, has been active in procuring the consent of many people to go ; and as a settlement somewhere is essentially necessary to them, I wish to be authorized to give him a decisive answer, which, whatever my private opinion may be, I think, would be improper till I hear from you. You will, therefore, do me a particular pleasure, if to the great trouble you have already taken in pushing forward this business for me you would be so obliging as to tell me if the Ministry have come to a decided resolution to reject the plan, or if there be any chance of its being entered on in the spring season. I shall go next Thursday for a few days to Ld. Craven's, Benham Place, Berks., where your letter to me, under Ld. Cork's cover, will safely reach me. My company, to be sure, is not politically orthodox, but when I assure you that I am not contaminated by their heresies, you will excuse the direction. I shall always be extremely cautious of obtruding on your time ; and, were you to see but a list of the fiftieth part of the letters I am perplexed with about the S. Seas, I know you would pardon this instance.

I am, &c.,

JAMES M. MATRA.

Thursday morning.

South Sea
scheme.

The Attorney-General, I believe by his own desire, has had communicated to him an observation on the passage of our China ships that I imagine will remove the only difficulty that I can think of in the way of the South Sea scheme.

The China
route.

It is a better rout and shorter for the ships bound to China to pass by the coast of New South Wales—now that it is so well known—than that which they at present pursue. Sir George Young has spoken to several of them on this subject, and it

* Evan Nepean, Under Secretary of the Home Department, which was charged with the administration of Colonial affairs. He was created a baronet in 1802. Mr. Matra's letter and enclosure refer to a proposal to send American loyalists as emigrants to New South Wales. The American loyalists were the colonists who remained loyal to Great Britain in the War of Independence, and were punished by being driven from their homes. Mr. De Lancey's suggestions did not meet with the approval of the British Government.

appears that the Government may send out convicts at about £15 a head, and as Mr. Pitt's Commutation Bill will considerably increase the number of China ships, twenty being taken out by each yearly, will rid you of as many as are on hand. As perhaps the Attorney-General may not receive this in time, you will oblige me by communicating it to Ld. Sydney before he goes to the Cabinet Council. 1784
1 Oct.

As there are officers of some consideration in the service who are willing to go on this duty, and as the number of convicts taken out at the beginning are few, and chosen, I think the impropriety of employing King's ships in the first instance sufficiently removed. Officers willing to serve.

[Enclosure.]

JAMES DE LANCEY TO J. M. MATRA.*

Dear Sir, Southampton, October the 12th, 1784. 12 Oct.

I should have answered yours of the 31st of August sooner, but waited in expectation of another letter from you, which would have contained something decisive in regard to New South Wales.

My brother will deliver this to you. He wishes much to have this business determined one way or the other, in order that, if the plan of making a settlement in the Southern Hemisphere should be given up, he may think of some other way of rendering himself usefull, as he has an active mind, and does not chuse to remain idle. A decision desired.

The season for a voyage to that country will soon be elapsed, and unless the equipment is speedily sett on foot, another year will be lost, and my prospect of procuring settlers from the loyalists in Nova Scotia rendered less favourable, for by next year I should suppose most of them who have gone there will have procured some kind of habitation for themselves, and will not chuse to quit them for an uncertain settlement in N.S. Wales, and I would like to have among the emigrants some of the better sort, and should not chuse to have the colony composed only of such persons who would not get their living anywhere else. The Loyalists. Superior emigrants.

I find that the Treasury Board have met, and therefore hope that now the Ministers have returned to town some final determination will be had on this business, and flatter myself that a measure which appears to meet with general approbation will not be abandoned.

I am, &c.,

JAMES DE LANCEY.

* This letter was addressed to James Maria Matra, Esq., No. 4, Duke-street, Grosvenor Square. No further correspondence on the subject has been found amongst the Records.

1784

LORD HOWE* TO LORD SYDNEY.

26 Dec.

Admiralty, 26th Dec., 1784.

I RETURN, my dear Lord, the papers† you left with me to-day, which are copies only of the former sent to me on the same subject on Friday evening.

Matra's
plan.

Should it be thought advisable to increase the number of our settlements on the plan Mr. Matra has suggested, I imagine it would be necessary to employ ships of a different construction. Frigates are ill adapted for such services. I conceive that ships of burthen to contain the various stores, provisions, implements, &c., wanted for the first colonists meant to be established there, and composing the chief part of the company of the ship, should be provided for the purpose, tho' an armed vessel of suitable dimensions might be previously appointed to inspect and fix on the preferable station for forming the intended establishment. The length of the navigation, subject to all the retardments of an India voyage, do not, I must confess, encourage me to hope for a return of the many advantages in commerce or war which Mr. M. Matra has in contemplation.

Unfavour-
able opinion.

I am, &c.,

HOWE.

SIR GEORGE YOUNG'S PLAN.‡

THE ATTORNEY-GENERAL TO LORD SYDNEY.

1785

13 Jan.

Lincoln's Inn Fields,

Jan'y 13th, 1785.

Sir George
Young's
plan.

My Lord,
Inclosed you receive a scheme of Sir George Young, of the Navy, for settling New South Wales, which he has desired me to transmit to your Lordship for your consideration, to which I take the liberty of recommending it. Lord Mansfield mentioned the subject to me, and desired Sir George Young would call upon me and explain his ideas. I profess myself totally ignorant of the probability of the success of such a scheme, but it appears to me, upon a cursory view of the subject, to be the most likely method of effectually disposing of convicts, the number of which requires the immediate interference of Government. As your Lordship and Sir George Yonge were desirous that the Lord Chancellor should be consulted respecting the removal of the soldiers from Hastings, and as I understood your Lordship was to see the Chancellor to-day, I shall be obliged to you if you, as soon as it

A likely
proposal.

* Admiral Howe, First Lord of the Admiralty.

† Matra's proposal.

‡ The names Young and Yonge, which both occur in the Attorney-General's letter, must not be confounded. Sir George Young, who proposed a plan for settling convicts on the New South Wales coast, was a naval officer of distinction (Admiral of the White). Sir George Yonge was Secretary at War.

is determined whether an application shall be made for their removal, inform me, and I will give immediate orders for the proper steps to be taken for that purpose. I have, &c.,

1785

13 Jan.

R. P. ARDEN.

[Enclosure.]

THE "PLAN."

The following is a rough outline of the many advantages that may result to this nation from a settlement made on the coast of New South Wales:—

Its great extent and relative situation with respect to the eastern and southern parts of the globe is a material consideration. Botany Bay, or its vicinity, the part that is proposed to be first settled, is not more than sixteen hundred leagues from Lima and Baldivia [Valdivia], with a fair open navigation, and there is no doubt but that a lucrative trade would soon be opened with the Creole Spaniards for English manufactures. Or suppose we were again involved in a war with Spain, here are ports of shelter and refreshment for our ships, should it be necessary to send any into the South Sea.

Geographical position.

Trade with South America.

From the coast of China it lies not more than about a thousand leagues, and nearly the same distance from the East Indies, from the Spice Islands about seven hundred leagues, and near a month's run from the Cape of Good Hope.

Commercial position.

The variety of climates included between the forty-fourth and tenth degrees of latitude gives us an opportunity of uniting in one territory almost all the productions of the known world. To explain this more fully I will point out some of the countries which are situated within the same extent of latitude, on either side of the Equator. They are China, Japan, Siam, India, Persia, Arabia-felix, Egypt, Greece, all Turkey, the Mediterranean Sea, Italy, Spain, South of France, and Portugal, with Mexico, Lima, Baldivia [Valdivia], and the greatest part of the Pacific Ocean, to which may be added the Cape of Good Hope, &c., &c.

Variety of climate and productions.

From this review it will, I think, be acknowledged that a territory so happily situated must be superior to all others for establishing a very extensive commerce, and of consequence greatly increase our shipping and number of seamen. Nor is it mere presumption to say the country is everywhere capable of producing all kinds of spice, likewise the fine Oriental cotton, indigo, coffee, tobacco, with every species of the sugar-cane, also tea, silk, and madder. That very remarkable plant known by the name of the New Zealand flax-plant may be cultivated in every part, and in any quantity, as our demands may require. Its uses are more extensive than any vegetable hitherto known, for in its gross state it far exceeds anything of the kind for cordage and

Facilities for trade.

Tropical products.

Flax.

- 1785** canvas, and may be obtained at a much cheaper rate than those materials we at present get from Russia, who may perhaps at some future period think it her interest to prohibit our trade for such articles, and the difficulties that must arise in such a case are too obvious to mention, but are everywhere provided against in this proposal.
- 13 Jan.** With but a trifling expence and a little industry we may in the course of a few years establish a commercial mart on one island comprehending all the articles of trade in itself and every necessary for shipping, not to mention the great probability of finding in such an immense country metals of every kind.
- Commercial centre.** At a time when men are alarmed at every idea of emigration I wish not to add to their fears by any attempt to depopulate the parent state. The settlers of New South Wales are principally to be collected from the Friendly Islands and China. All the people required from England are only a few that are possessed of the useful arts and those comprized among the crews of the ships sent on that service.
- Metals of every kind.** The American loyalists would here find a fertile, healthy soil, far preferable to their own, and well worthy their industry, where, with a very small part of the expence the Crown must necessarily be at for their support, they may be established now comfortably, and with a greater prospect of success than in any other place hitherto pointed out for them.
- Settlers from the islands and China.** The very heavy expence Government is annually put to for transporting and otherwise punishing the felons, together with the facility of their return, are evils long and much lamented. Here is an asylum open that will considerably reduce the first, and for ever prevent the latter.
- The American loyalists.** Upon the most liberal calculation the expence of this plan cannot exceed £3,000, for it must be allowed that ships of war are as cheaply fed and paid in the South Seas as in the British Channel.
- Felons.** Had I the command of this expedition, I should require a ship of war—say, the old *Rainbow*, now at Woolwich, formerly a ship of forty guns—as the best constructed for the purpose of any in the Navy, with only half her lower-deck guns and 250 men, one hundred of which should be marines; a store-ship, likewise, of about 600 tons burthen, with forty seamen and ten marines, and a small vessel of about 100 tons, of the brig or schooner kind, with twenty men, both fitted as ships of war and commanded by proper officers.
- Expense.** The large ship is necessary for receiving fifty of the felons, provisions, and stores, with a variety of live stock and plants from England and the Cape of Good Hope. She is more particularly wanted as a guard-ship, to remain in the country at least two years after her arrival, or longer, as may be found necessary, to protect the settlers, &c. The store-ship is required for taking an
- Ships required.**
- Guard-ship**

additional quantity of provisions, to serve until we are about to raise some for ourselves. The brig or schooner is principally wanted to explore the coast on our arrival, for notwithstanding a convenient place is already mentioned for the purpose, nature and experience inform me a navigable river may be found on such an extensive coast, which, when discovered, she may be then dispatched to England with an account of our proceedings. In the meantime, the store-ship may be sent to the Friendly Islands for inhabitants and useful plants.

The settlement being thus established, any difficulties that may arise from the great distance of New South Wales are obviated in the manner following :—The China ships belonging to the East India Company, after leaving the Cape of Good Hope, and keeping more to the southward than usual, may land the felons on the coast, and then proceed to the northward, round New Ireland, &c., or through Saint George's Channel, and so on to the island Formosa for Canton. With a little geographical investigation, this passage will be found more short, easy, and a safer navigation than the general route of the China ships—from Madras through the Streights of Malacca.

Perhaps the number of the felons, after the present are disposed of, may not require more than two ships in the course of a year. The expence thereof attending the transporting of them by this method must certainly be much less than by any other whatever, without even the most distant probability of their return. Every ship may take any number of felons not exceeding seventy.

Necessary Implements :—

Implements.

Iron in bars	Soap
Forges and anvills	Hatts and caps
Spades and shovels	Wheels of barrows
Mattocks	Seeds and plants
Spikes and nails	Articles of trade with natives of the islands, &c.
Pitchforks	Window glass
Axes of sorts	Grain of sorts
Iron crows and wedges	Fishing tackle
Saws of sorts	Gardening too
Large hammers	Carpenters' do.
Mills	Smiths' tools
Grindstones	Shoemakers' do.
Cutlery	Bricklayers' do.
Cooking utensils	Masons' do.
Iron pots of sorts	Coals as ballast
Shoes and leather	Some leaden pumps, &c.
Linnen and woollen cloth	Scythes
Tinware	Pewter and earthenware.
Thread, needles, &c.	
Stockings	

1785

13 Jan.

Exploring-
ship.Route for
the China
ships.Cheap trans-
portation.

1786

LORD SYDNEY TO THE LORDS COMMISSIONERS OF THE TREASURY.

18 Aug.

My Lords,

Whitehall, 18th August, 1786.

Gaols ever-
crowded.

The several gaols and places for the confinement of felons in this kingdom being in so crowded a state that the greatest danger is to be apprehended, not only from their escape, but from infectious distempers, which may hourly be expected to break out amongst them, his Majesty, desirous of preventing by every possible means the ill consequences which might happen from either of these causes, has been pleased to signify to me his royal commands that measures should immediately be pursued for sending out of this kingdom such of the convicts as are under sentence or order of transportation.

Convicts to
be
transported

The Nautilus, sloop, which, upon the recommendation of a committee of the House of Commons, had been sent to explore the southern coast of Africa, in order to find out an eligible situation for the reception of the said convicts, where from their industry they might soon be likely to obtain means of subsistence, having lately returned, and it appearing by the report of her officers that the several parts of the coast which they examined between the latitudes 15° 50' south and the latitude of 33° 00' are sandy and barren, and from other causes unfit for a settlement of that description, his Majesty has thought it advisable to fix upon Botany Bay, situated on the coast of New South Wales, in the latitude of about 33 degrees south, which, according to the accounts given by the late Captain Cook, as well as the representations of persons who accompanied him during his last voyage, and who have been consulted upon the subject, is looked upon as a place likely to answer the above purposes.

to Botany
Bay.Order for
first fleet.

I am, therefore, commanded to signify to your Lordships his Majesty's pleasure that you do forthwith take such measures as may be necessary for providing a proper number of vessels for the conveyance of 750 convicts to Botany Bay, together with such provisions, necessaries, and implements for agriculture as may be necessary for their use after their arrival.

Marines.

In order that a proper degree of subordination and regularity may be preserved in this new intended settlement, his Majesty has been pleased to give orders that an officer and proper assistants shall be appointed to superintend it, and that three companies of the Marine Corps shall be stationed there so long as it may be found necessary. The officers and marines will be embarked on board a ship of war and a tender, which the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty have been directed to provide for this service, the commanders of which will be instructed to take under their protection the ships on board of which the convicts may be embarked, and to regulate their sailing to the place of destination.

The crews of the ship of war and the tender, as well as the Marine Corps, will be victualled by the Naval Department during

their passage; but your Lordships will please to take notice that the marines are to be provided for after their landing, and supplies of provisions, as well as implements for agriculture, should also be procured for their use. The number may amount to about 180, to which is to be added the staff establishment, consisting of fifteen, and perhaps 200 females, which your Lordship will see by a sketch of the plan for forming this new settlement, herewith transmitted,* are likely to be procured from places in its neighbourhood, as companions for the men.†

1786

18 Aug.

Island
women.

If the persons who may contract for the passage of the convicts should be desirous of obtaining military assistance for their greater security, they may be accommodated with a part of the marines, who would otherwise be conveyed to the new settlement in the ship of war and the tender.

Guard for
transports.

According to the best opinions that can be obtained, it is supposed that a quantity of provisions equal to two years' consumption should be provided, which must be issued from time to time, according to the discretion of the superintendent, in the expenditure of which he will, of course, be guided by the proportion of food which the country and the labour of the new settlers may produce.

Two years'
provisions.

From the length of the passage to New South Wales, the commanding officer will most likely find it necessary to call at the Cape de Verd Islands, as well as at the Cape of Good Hope, for the purpose of recruiting the water. At the latter of these places he will, in all probability, be enabled to obtain cattle and hogs, as well as seed grain, all of which must be procured for the new settlers, with a view to their future subsistence, and as expenses will thereby, of course, be incurred, it will be necessary that your Lordships should authorize the naval commander, or the superintendent, to draw upon you for the amount; and that, in addition thereto, a quantity of merchandise should be put on board the ship of war or the tender previous to their sailing, sufficient to obtain supplies of live stock by the means of barter with the inhabitants of the islands contiguous to the new intended settlement, from whence such supplies may at all times be obtained.

Cattle and
grain from
the Cape.

Barter.

A small quantity of garden seeds should be sent out from hence, together with some seed grain, to prevent inconveniences that might happen should any difficulties arise in procuring a supply, particularly of the latter, at the Cape of Good Hope.

Garden
seeds
and grain.

The tools for erecting habitations, and implements for agriculture, which it is supposed will be most useful in the settlement, are specified in the list accompanying this, and with

Tools and
implements.

* Post, p. 17.

† Women from the Islands. This part of the plan was not carried out.

1786

18 Aug.

Clothing.

Instruments
and
medicines.Immediate
action.

which it will be proper to supply the marines and the convicts after their landing at the settlement. It is, therefore, his Majesty's further pleasure that these articles be also provided and sent out, together with bedding for each of the convicts, and a proportion of cloathing agreeably to the estimate enclosed. The marines will be supplied with bedding from the ship of war.

I have it in command from his Majesty only further to acquaint your Lordships that a quantity of surgical instruments and medicines and necessaries for the sick will likewise be wanted, and as soon as an estimate can be formed it shall be transmitted to your Lordships, together with the staff establishment.

In the meantime, I have only to recommend it to your Lordships to cause every possible expedition to be used in preparing the shipping for the reception of the said convicts, and for transporting the supplies of provisions and necessaries for their use to the place of their destination.* I have, &c.,

SYDNEY.

[Enclosure.]

1786.

Tools and
utensils

List of Tools, Utensils, &c., necessary for the Convicts and Marines intended to proceed to New South Wales.

Spades, 1, @ 3s. ; shovels, 1, @ 3s. ; hoes, 3 for each man, @ 9d. ; felling axe, 1, @ 3s. ; hatchet, 1, @ 1s. ; knife, 1, @ 6d. each ; gimblet, wooden bowls, platters, and spoons, 6d. for each man.

The articles necessary to each man amounts to 12s. 6d.,	£	s.	d.
which for 700 men will be	437	10	0

General Stock.

Crosscut saws, 40 @ 10s. each	20	0	0
Hand saws, 1 for every 4 men, @ 5s. each	43	15	0
Frame saws, 40, @ 16s. each	32	0	0
Adzes, 100, @ 2s. each	10	0	0
Broad axes, 100, @ 2s. 6d. each	12	10	0
Hammers, 1 for every 4 men, @ 1s. each	8	15	0
Augers, 140, @ 1s. each	7	0	0
Drawing knives, 140, at 1s.	7	0	0
Chisssels and gouges, 300, @ 7d. each	8	15	0
Planes, 100, @ 2s. 6d. each	12	10	0
Iron forges, anvils, and hammers, 10, @ £3	30	0	0
Grindstones, 30, @ 10s. 6d. each	15	15	0
Wheelbarrows, 40, @ 10s. each	20	0	0
Pickaxes, 50, @ 5s. each	12	10	0
Ploughs, 12, @ £4 each	48	0	0
Iron hand mills, 40, @ £2 each... ..	80	0	0
Coopers' tools, 10 setts, @ £1 15s. each	17	10	0

<i>Carried forward</i>	£823	10	0
-------------------------------	------	----	---

* The King's Speech (George III) read at the opening of Parliament, on the 23rd January, 1787, contained the following passage:—"A plan has been formed, by my direction, for transporting a number of convicts in order to remove the inconvenience which arose from the crowded state of the gaols in different parts of the kingdom; and you will, doubt not, take such further measures as may be necessary for this purpose."

	£	s.	d.	
<i>Brought forward</i>	823	10	0	1786
Nails of diff't sizes, @ 2s. 9d. p'r 1,000, ab't 10 barrels	100	0	0	18 Aug.
Spikes, 2,000, @ £1 10s. p'r 100	30	0	0	
Hinges, 200 pairs, @ 8d. each	6	13	4	Tools and utensils.
Locks, 100, @ 1s. each	5	0	0	
Bar iron, flat and square, 10 ton, @ £17	170	0	0	
Glass, 1,000 squares, @ 8d. per doz.	33	6	8	
Fishing lines, hooks, nets, needles, twine, &c.	100	0	0	
	£1,268	10	0	

Estimate of clothing to serve a male convict for one year.

Clothing.

	£	s.	d.
Jackets, 2, @ 4s. 6d.	0	9	0
Wollen drawers, 4, @ 2s.	0	8	0
Hat, 1, @ 2s. 6d.	0	2	6
Shirts, 3, @ 3s.	0	9	0
Worsted stockings, 4 p'r, @ 1s.	0	4	0
Frocks, 3, @ 2s. 3d.	0	6	9
Trousers, 3, @ 2s. 3d.	0	6	9
Shoes, 3, @ 4s. 6d.	0	13	6
	£2	19	6

The expence of clothing female convicts may be computed to amount to the same sum.

A proportion for two years to be provided.

[Enclosure.]

HEADS OF A PLAN.*

HEADS of a plan for effectually disposing of convicts, and rendering their transportation reciprocally beneficial both to themselves and to the State, by the establishment of a colony in New South Wales, a country which, by the fertility and salubrity of the climate, connected with the remoteness of its situation (from whence it is hardly possible for persons to return without permission), seems peculiarly adapted to answer the views of Government with respect to the providing a remedy for the evils likely to result from the late alarming and numerous increase of felons in this country, and more particularly in the metropolis.

Proposal for a penal settlement.

It is proposed that a ship of war of a proper class, with a part of her guns mounted, and a sufficient number of men on board for her navigation, and a tender of about 200 tons burthen, commanded by discreet officers, should be got ready as soon as possible to serve as an escort to the convict ships, and for other purposes hereinafter mentioned.

Ships.

That, in addition to their crews, they should take on board two companies of marines to form a military establishment on shore (not only for the protection of the settlement, if requisite, against the natives, but for the preservation of good order), together with an assortment of stores, utensils, and implements, necessary for erecting habitations and for agriculture, and such quantities of provisions as may be proper for the use of the crews.

Marines.

Stores and provisions.

1786

18 Aug.

As many of the marines as possible should be artificers, such as carpenters, sawyers, smiths, potters (if possible), and some husbandmen. To have a chaplain on board, with a surgeon, and one mate at least; the former to remain at the settlement.

Live stock
and seed.

That these vessels should touch at the Cape of Good Hope, or any other places that may be convenient, for any seed that may be requisite to be taken from thence, and for such live stock as they can possibly contain, which, it is supposed, can be procured there without any sort of difficulty, and at the most reasonable rates, for the use of the settlement at large.

Transports.

That Government should immediately provide a certain number of ships of a proper burthen to receive on board at least seven or eight hundred convicts, and that one of them should be properly fitted for the accommodation of the women, to prevent their intercourse with the men.

Two years'
provisions.

That these ships should take on board as much provisions as they can possibly stow, or at least a sufficient quantity for two years' consumption; supposing one year to be issued at whole allowance, and the other year's provisions at half allowance, which will last two years longer, by which time, it is presumed, the colony, with the live stock and grain which may be raised by a common industry on the part of the new settlers, will be fully sufficient for their maintenance and support.

Guards for
transports.

That, in addition to the crews of the ships appointed to contain the convicts, a company of marines should be divided between them, to be employed as guards for preventing ill consequences that might arise from dissatisfaction amongst the convicts, and for the protection of the crew in the navigation of the ship from insults that might be offered by the convicts.

Surgeons.

That each of the ships should have on board at least two surgeons' mates, to attend to the wants of the sick, and should be supplied with a proper assortment of medicines and instruments, and that two of them should remain with the settlement.

Further
supplies.

After the arrival of the ships which are intended to convey the convicts, the ship of war and tender may be employed in obtaining live stock from the Cape, or from the Molucca Islands, a sufficient quantity of which may be brought from either of those places to the new settlement in two or three trips; or the tender, if it should be thought most advisable, may be employed in conveying to the new settlement a further number of women from the Friendly Islands, New Caledonia, &c., which are contiguous thereto, and from whence any number may be procured without difficulty; and without a sufficient proportion of that sex it is well-known that it would be impossible to preserve the settlement from gross irregularities and disorders.

Island
women.Govern-
ment.

The whole regulation and management of the settlement should be committed to the care of a discreet officer, and provision

should be made in all cases, both civil and military, by special instructions under the Great Seal or otherwise, as may be thought proper.

1786

18 Aug.

Upon the whole, it may be observed with great force and truth that the difference of expence (whatever method of carrying the convicts thither may be adopted) that this mode of disposing of them and that of the usual ineffectual one is too trivial to be a consideration with Government, at least in comparison with the great object to be obtained by it, especially now the evil is increased to such an alarming degree, from the inadequacy of all other expedients that have hitherto been tried or suggested.

Expense not
to be
considered.

It may not be amiss to remark in favour of this plan that considerable advantage will arise from the cultivation of the New Zealand hemp or flax-plant in the new intended settlement, the supply of which would be of great consequence to us as a naval power, as our manufacturers are of opinion that canvas made of it would be superior in strength and beauty to any canvas made of the European material, and that a cable of the circumference of ten inches made from the former would be superior in strength to one of eighteen inches made of the latter. The threads or filaments of this New Zealand plant are formed by nature with the most exquisite delicacy, and may be so minutely divided as to be manufactured into the finest linens.

Flax.

Most of the Asiatic productions may also without doubt be cultivated in the new settlement, and in a few years may render our recourse to our European neighbours for those productions unnecessary.

Tropical products.

It may also be proper to attend to the possibility of procuring from New Zealand any quantity of masts and ship timber for the use of our fleets in India, as the distance between the two countries is not greater than between Great Britain and America. It grows close to the water's edge, is of size and quality superior to any hitherto known, and may be obtained without difficulty.

New Zealand
timber.

Staff Establishment for the Settlement at New South Wales:—

Estimate of
expenditure.

	Yearly Salary.
The Naval Commander to be appointed Governor or Superintendent-General	£ 500 s. 0 d. 0
The Commanding Officer of the Marines to be appointed Lieut.-Gov. or Dept. Superintendent	250 0 0
The Commissary of Stores and Provisions, for himself and assistants (to be appointed or named by the contractors for the provisions)	200 0 0
Pay of a surgeon	£182 10 0
Ditto of two mates	182 10 0
	<hr/>
Chaplain	365 0 0
	182 10 0
	<hr/>
	£1,497 10 0

1—Staff.

1786		Estimate of clothing to serve a male convict for one year :—				
18 Aug.	2—Clothing.				No.	Value each.
						s. d. £ s. d.
		Jackets	...	...	2	4 6 0 9 0
		Woollen drawers	...	...	4	2 0 0 8 0
		Hat	...	...	1	2 6 0 2 6
		Shirts	...	...	3	3 0 0 9 0
		Worsted stockings	...	4 pr.		1 0 0 4 0
		Frocks	...	...	3	2 3 0 6 9
		Trousers	...	...	3	2 3 0 6 9
		Shoes	...	...	3 pr.	4 6 0 13 6
						£2 19 6

The expence of clothing female convicts may be computed to amount to the like sum.

TURNBULL MACAULAY AND T. GREGORY TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

21 Aug. Sir, London, 21st August, 1786.

If Government should determine to send the convicts to South Wales, we beg leave to offer to undertake to convey them thither, and provide what may be wanting for them, on the following terms :—

Terms for
conveying
convicts.

To provide sufficient vessels for transporting them thither, and to remain two months with them after their arrivals ; accomodation on board ; and sufficient provisions for the voyage, and two months after ; at the rate of twenty-eight guineas each person.

To deliver in South Wales sufficient provisions, in proportion, as the troops are victualled, for such number of men and such length of time as may be required, at the rate of 7½d. sterling p'r man p'r day ; freight and insurance to South Wales therein included.

To purchase on the most reasonable terms whatever tools, utensils, &c., may be wanted, without charging any commission thereon.

We have, &c.,

TURNBULL MACAULAY AND T. GREGORY.

LORD SYDNEY TO THE LORDS OF THE ADMIRALTY.

31 Aug. My Lords, Whitehall, 31st August, 1786.

Convicts to
be sent to
Botany Bay.

The King having been pleased to signify his Royal Commands that 750 of the convicts now in this kingdom under sentence of transportation should be sent to Botany Bay, on the coast of New South Wales, in the latitude of 33° south, at which place it is intended that the said convicts should form a settlement, and that the Lords of the Treasury should forthwith provide a sufficient number of vessels for their conveyance thither, together with provisions and other supplies for their subsistence, as well as tools to enable them to erect habitations, and also

implements for agriculture; and it being his Majesty's intention that a ship of war of a proper class, with part of her guns only on board, commanded by an able and discreet officer, and a sufficient establishment of inferior officers and men, together with a vessel of about 200 tons burthen, commanded also by an officer, should, as soon as the convict ships are ready, proceed with them to the new settlement, for the purpose of regulating their sailing, and for the preservation of peace and good order during the passage, as well as for other purposes after their arrival—

1786

31 Aug.

Ships
required.

I am commanded to signify to your Lordships the King's pleasure that you do forthwith cause a ship of war and a tender for those services to be fitted for sea with all possible expedition, and when the said convicts shall be put on board the ships which are preparing for their reception in the river Thames, to instruct the commander of the ship of war to take the convict ships under his protection, and proceed with them and the tender (which he will employ as he shall find occasion) to Botany Bay, calling off Plymouth, on his way thither, for another convict ship, the master of which will be directed to join the convoy from thence upon its appearance.

Ship of war
and tender.Instructions
for the
commander.

From the length of the voyage to New South Wales, the convoy will, of course, find it necessary to put into port on their way thither, for the purpose of recruiting their water. Your Lordships will, therefore, give instructions accordingly, only taking care that one of the places to be fixed upon for a rendezvous may be the Cape of Good Hope, from whence it is intended that as many supplies as possible for the new settlement shall be procured.

Rendezvous
at the Cape.

As it has been thought advisable that some military establishment shall be made at the new intended settlement, not only to enforce due subordination and obedience, but for the defence of the settlement against incursions of the natives, and as from the nature of the service to be performed it is highly expedient that it should be composed of men accustomed to and under proper discipline, his Majesty has been pleased to direct that 160 private marines, with a suitable number of officers and non-commissioned officers, shall proceed in the ship of war and the tender to the new settlement, where it is intended they shall be disembarked for the purposes before mentioned. They will be properly victualled by a commissary immediately after their landing, and provision has been also made for supplying them with such tools, implements, and utensils as they may have occasion for, to render their situation comfortable during their continuance at the new intended settlement, which it is designed shall not exceed a period of three years.

Garrison.

Marines.

The soldiers
to be made
comfortable.

When these circumstances are known, it is very probable that many of the non-commissioned officers and men may express a desire of embarking upon this expedition; if the whole number

Volunteers.

1786

31 Aug.

Marines to
be
encouraged
to volunteer.

Heads of a
plan.

Commis-
sions and
instructions.

Officers to be
under the
Home
Depart-
ment.

to be employed upon it were to consist of persons of that description, it would upon many accounts be advisable to give them a preference. It is therefore his Majesty's pleasure that their wishes in this respect should as much as possible be attended to, and that your Lordship should, if there should be occasion, hold out such further indulgences to them as may induce them to embark voluntarily upon this service, either by bounty or promise of discharge should they desire it upon their return, or at the expiration of three years, to be computed from the time of their landing at the new intended settlement should they prefer the remaining in that country.

I enclose to your Lordships herewith the heads of a plan* upon which the new settlement is to be formed, for your further information, together with the proposed establishment for its regulation and government; and as soon as I am acquainted by your Lordships with the names of the officers intended to command the ship of war and the marine corps I shall receive his Majesty's further pleasure for preparing their commissions, and such instructions as may be requisite for their guidance.

From the nature of the services they are to execute under these instructions, entirely unconnected with maritime affairs, it would be proper that they should be immediately subordinate to the direction of this office, and upon that ground it is his Majesty's pleasure that they should be directed after their arrival at New South Wales to follow such orders and directions as they may receive from his Majesty thro' his Principal Secretary of State for this department.

I have, &c.,

SYDNEY.

LORD HOWE TO LORD SYDNEY.

3 Sept.

Langar, 3rd September, 1786.

THE benefit of the King's service being our common object, I am persuaded, my dear Lord, it will never suffer for want of our ready concurrence when a necessary facility can be rendered by us, on either part, to promote the advancement of it on any occasion.

In the present instance, the settlement of the convicts, as you have determined, being a matter so immediately connected with your department, I could never have a thought of contesting the choice you would make of the officer to be entrusted with the conduct of it.

I cannot say the little knowledge I have of Captain Philips† would have led me to select him for a service of this complicated nature. But as you are satisfied of his ability, and I conclude he will be taken under your direction, I presume it will not be unreasonable to move the King for having his Majesty's

Phillip's
appoint-
ment.

* Ante, p. 17.

† Phillip's name was frequently mis-spelt by the public men of the time.

pleasure signified to the Admiralty for these purposes as soon as you see proper, that no time may be lost in making the requisite preparations for the voyage. 1786

I am, &c.,
HOWE.

THE MARINES AND THEIR TERM OF SERVICE.

Extract from a letter written to the Commanding Marine Officers at the Divisions, respecting a detachment to be sent out to New South Wales :—

8th October, 1786. 8th Oct.

THE non-commission officers and private marines to be allowed their discharge, if they desire it, on their return to England, after they have been relieved (which it is intended shall take place at the expiration of 3 years), provided their good behaviour shall entitle them to such favor; or will be discharged abroad upon the relief, and be permitted to settle in the country, if they prefer it. Three years' service.

To be victualled by a commissary, and to have such tools, implements, and utensils as they may have occasion for whilst employed for the protection of the new settlement. Vicuallling and tools.

SIR A. S. HAMOND* TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Dear Sir,

Gillingham, 8th Octr., 1786.

I do not exactly know what plan Government may have in view with respect to Botany Bay, but if colinization may be intended, perhaps it may be thought necessary to have the country surveyed and explored. Lieut. Bray, of the Navy, who is a very ingenious draftsman, is very desirous of being a volunteer on the expedition. He says he can be well recommended to Lord Sydney by several noblemen of rank, but before he makes his application he wishes to know if any draftsmen are intended to be sent out.† If you can give him this, or any other information that may be useful to him in his persuit, it will be serving a man of merit, and oblige, A volunteer draftsman.

Yours, &c.,

A. S. HAMOND.

THE LORDS OF THE ADMIRALTY TO LORD SYDNEY.

My Lord,

Admiralty Office, 12th October, 1786.

12 Oct.

Your Lordship having acquainted us in your letter of the 31 of August last that his Majesty has signified his royal commands that 750 of the convicts now in this kingdom under sentence of transportation should be sent to Botany Bay, on the coast of New South Wales, where it is intended they should form a settlement; and at the same time signified the King's pleasure

Sir Andrew Snape Hamond, one of the Commissioners of the Navy.

† Lieut. Bray's services were not accepted.

1786

12 Oct.

The Sirius to
be got ready.Phillip and
Ross.

that a ship of war of a proper class, with a proper vessel for a tender, and a detachment of marines, should be got in readiness to proceed with the convicts for the purposes mentioned in your Lordship's letter,—we are to acquaint your Lordship that, in obedience to his Majesty's commands, we immediately ordered the Sirius,* one of his Majesty's ships of the sixth rate, with a proper vessel for a tender, to be fitted for this service; and that the ship will be ready to receive men by the end of this month. We are further to acquaint your Lordship, in answer to that part of your letter desiring to be informed of the names of the officers intended to command the ship of war and the marine corps, that Captain Arthur Phillip† will be appointed to command the Sirius, and Major Robert Ross the detachment of marines.

We are, &c.,

HOWE.

CHS. BRETT.

ARDEN.

12 Oct.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP'S FIRST COMMISSION.‡

George R.

George the Third, &c., to our trusty and well-beloved Captain Arthur Phillip, greeting:—

Phillip
appointed
Governor.

WE, reposing especial trust and confidence in your loyalty, courage, and experience in military affairs, do, by these presents, constitute and appoint you to be Governor of our territory called New South Wales, extending from the northern cape or extremity of the coast called Cape York, in the latitude of 10° 37' south, to the southern extremity of the said territory of New South Wales or South Cape, in the latitude of 43° 39' south, and of all the country inland to the westward as far as the one hundred and thirty-fifth degree of longitude, reckoning from the meridian of Greenwich, including all the islands adjacent in the Pacific Ocean, within the latitude aforesaid of 10° 37' south and 43° 39' south, and of all towns, garrisons, castles, forts, and all other fortifications or other military works, which now are or may be hereafter erected upon this said territory. You are therefore carefully and diligently to discharge the duty of Governor in and over our said territory by doing and performing all and all manner of things thereunto belonging, and we do

* Philip Gidley King, Second Lieutenant of the Sirius, who afterwards held the offices of Lieut.-Governor of Norfolk Island and Governor of New South Wales, states in his journal:—"The construction of a King's ship not being deemed proper for the service, the Berwick, storeship, was pitched on by the Admiralty, and her name changed to the Sirius, so called from the bright star in ye southern constellation of the Great Dog."

† Appointed first Governor of New South Wales by Commission, 12th October, 1786.

‡ This commission is dated 12th October, 1786, and the Records show that it was acted upon almost at once. It was replaced, however, by a fuller commission, 2nd April, 1787. Post, p. 62. According to the Annual Register for 1787, Phillip's appointment was not publicly announced until 17th April. Instructions were issued, 25th April, 1787. Post, p. 85. Additional Instructions, post, p. 256.

hereby strictly charge and command all our officers and soldiers who shall be employed within our said territory, and all others whom it may concern, to obey you as our Governor thereof; and you are to observe and follow such orders and directions from time to time as you shall receive from us, or any other your superior officer according to the rules and discipline of war, and likewise such orders and directions as we shall send you under our signet or sign manual, or by our High Treasurer or Commissioners of our Treasury for the time being, or one of our Principal Secretaries of State, in pursuance of the trust we hereby repose in you.

1786

12 Oct.

Instruc-
tions.

Given at our Court at St. James's, the twelfth day of October, 1786, in the twenty-sixth year of our reign.

By his Majesty's command,
SYDNEY.

SIR A. S. HAMOND TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Dear Sir,

Chatham, 16th Oct., 1786.

16 Oct.

Mr. White,* the surgeon of the Irresistible, is a candidate for Botany Bay. He is a young man of much credit in his profession, and of that sort of disposition and temper that render him a very proper person for such an establishment. If no surgeon is yet appointed, and you will do me the favor to recommend him to Lord Sydney, I shall think myself much obliged to you, and shall consider myself bound to Government for his good behaviour.

Surgeon.

I am, &c.,

A. S. HAMOND.

UNDER SECRETARY ROSE† TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.‡

Sir,

Treasury Chambers, 21st Oct., 1786.

21 Oct.

The Commissioners of the Navy having, in their letter of the 18th instant, represented to the Lords Commissioners of his Majesty's Treasury that they have agreed for a sufficient quantity of shipping to convey the convicts, &c., to Botany Bay, and that they will be ready to proceed from Gravesend in a month at furthest; and stated that if the ships get to New Holland so early as to be able to reach China by the 1st of January, 1788, they are to be discharged, but if they are unnecessarily delay'd on the passage, or detained in Botany Bay after the convicts are landed, so as to be prevented from proceeding in time for China, they will be under the necessity of continuing them in their pay till their return to Deptford,—I am commanded by their Lordships to desire that you will move the Lords of the Admiralty to direct—

Ships
engaged.

* Mr. John White, appointed Chief Surgeon of the Settlement, 24 October, 1786. Returned to England, 1794.

† Mr. George Rose, Under Secretary of the Treasury.

‡ Philip Stephens, Secretary of the Admiralty.

1786

21 Oct.

the captain of the King's ship who accompanies them to take care that no unnecessary delay happens on the passage to Botany Bay, or on their departure from thence, and that he uses his best endeavours to enable the ships under his command to reach China by the 1st January, 1788.

I am, &c.,

GEO. ROSE.

MAJOR ROSS'S COMMISSION AS LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR.*

24 Oct.

George R.

George the Third, &c., to our trusty and well-beloved Major Robert Ross, greeting :—

Lieut.
Governor.

WE, reposing especial trust and confidence in your loyalty, courage, and experience in military affairs, do, by these presents, constitute and appoint you to be Lieutenant-Governor of the settlement within our territory called New South Wales. You are therefore, as Lieutenant-Governor, to take the said settlement into your care and charge, and carefully and diligently to discharge the duty of Lieutenant-Governor thereof, by doing and performing all and all manner of things thereunto belonging ; and we do hereby strictly charge and require all our officers and soldiers who shall hereafter be in our said territory, and all others whom it may concern, to obey you as our Lieutenant-Governor thereof, and you are to observe and follow such orders and instructions from time to time as you shall receive from us, our Governor of our said territory for the time being, or any other your superior officer, according to the rules and discipline of war, in pursuance of the trust we hereby repose in you.

Given at our court at St. James's, the twenty-fourth day of October, 1786, in the twenty-sixth year of our reign.

By his Majesty's command,

SYDNEY.

JUDGE-ADVOCATE COLLINS'S COMMISSION.†

George R.

George the Third, &c., to our trusty and well-beloved Captain David Collins, greeting :—

Judge-
Advocate.

WE do, by these presents, constitute and appoint you to be Deputy Judge-Advocate in the settlement within our territory called New South Wales. You are therefore, carefully and diligently to discharge the duty of Deputy Judge-Advocate, by doing

* Major Ross was in command of the detachment of marines sent out to guard the convicts. He was Lieut.-Governor of Norfolk Island from March, 1790, to October, 1791.

† Captain of marines, afterwards colonel. He acted as Judge-Advocate and Secretary to the Governor at Sydney, until Sept., 1796, when he sailed for England, on leave of absence. He did not resume the position of Judge-Advocate, but was appointed, Dec., 1803, Lieut.-Governor of the proposed settlement at Port Phillip. The place, however, displeased him, and he established a settlement instead on the Derwent, Van Diemen's Land.

and performing all and all manner of things thereunto belonging ; 1786
 and you are to observe and follow such orders and directions from 24 Oct.
 time to time as you shall receive from our Governor, of our said
 territory for the time being, or any other your superior officer,
 according to the rules and discipline of war.

Given at our Court at St. James's, the twenty-fourth day
 of October, 1786, in the twenty-sixth year of our reign.

By his Majesty's command,
 SYDNEY.

FIRST CHAPLAIN'S COMMISSION.*

George R.

George the Third, &c., to our trusty and well-beloved Richard
 Johnson, clerk, greeting :—

WE do, by these presents, constitute and appoint you to be Chap-
 lain to the settlement within our territory called New South
 Wales. You are, therefore, carefully and diligently to discharge
 the duty of chaplain by doing and performing all and all manner Chaplain.
 of things thereunto belonging ; and you are to observe and
 follow such orders and directions from time to time as you shall
 receive from our Governor of our said territory for the time
 being, or any other your superior officers, according to the rules
 and discipline of war.

Given at our Court at St. James's, the twenty-fourth day of
 October, 1786, in the twenty-sixth year of our reign.

By his Majesty's command,
 SYDNEY.

SURGEON WHITE'S COMMISSION.

George R.

George the Third, &c., to our trusty and well-beloved John White,
 greeting :—

WE do, by these presents, constitute and appoint you to be
 Surgeon to the settlement within our territory called New South
 Wales. You are, therefore, carefully and diligently to discharge
 the duty of surgeon by doing and performing all and all manner Chief
surgeon.
 of things thereunto belonging ; and you are to observe and follow
 such orders and directions from time to time as you shall receive
 from our Governor of our said territory for the time being, or
 any other your superior officer, according to the rules and discip-
 line of war.

Given at our Court at St. James's, the twenty-fourth day
 of October, 1786, in the twenty-sixth year of our reign.

By his Majesty's command,
 SYDNEY.

* The Rev. Richard Johnson acted as Chief Chaplain of the Settlement until 1800, when
 he retired.

1786

ASSISTANT-SURGEON BALMAIN'S COMMISSION.

24 Oct.

George R.

George the Third, &c., to our trusty and well-beloved William Balmain, gent., greeting:—

Assistant-Surgeon.

WE do, by these presents, constitute and appoint you to be Assistant-Surgeon to the settlement within our territory called New South Wales. You are, therefore, carefully and diligently to discharge the duty of Assistant-Surgeon, by doing and performing all and all manner of things thereunto belonging; and you are to observe and follow such orders and directions from time to time as you shall receive from our Governor of our said territory for the time being, or any other your superior officer, according to the rules and discipline of war.

Given at our Court at St. James's, the twenty-fourth day of October, 1786, in the twenty-sixth year of our reign.

By his Majesty's command,

SYDNEY.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.*

31 Oct.

Sir,

[London] October 31, 1786.

Armament of the Sirius

The Right Honorable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty having ordered his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, under my command, to be supply'd with six caronades and four six-pounders, I am to request that you will please to move their Lordships to order ten more of the six-pounders to be put on board, with the ironwork necessary for the carriages. Having the ironwork, the guns can at any time be mounted, and may, I presume, in future be of great use to us, on board or on shore, as the service may require.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

3 Nov.

Sir,

[London] November 3, 1786.

Orders from the Admiralty.

I acknowledge the receipt of the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty's orders for surveying and making the necessary observations in the different harbours, roads, &c.—the orders for salutes—for bearing widows' men—the copy of the Act of Parliament for preventing abuses in the payment of seamen's wages, prize-money, &c.—abstracts of the said Act and orders, to affix them in a public place on board his Majesty's ship under my command, as likewise orders for receiving such additional stores and provisions as can be conveniently stored.

Their Lordships' orders on these heads will be duly comply'd with. I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

* This is the first of a series of letters written from London. Lieut. Philip Gidley King, of the *Sirius*, afterwards Governor of New South Wales, says in his journal:—"It was not till ye 11th of May [1787] that the Governor joined us, he having been detained in town until the Ministry had arranged and fixed the different orders, settling a number of things so incident to ye great voyage we were about to undertake."

THE LORDS OF THE ADMIRALTY TO LORD SYDNEY.

1786

My Lord,

Admiralty Office, 21st Nov., 1786.

21 Nov.

Your Lordship having, in your letter of the 31st August ^{The} last, acquainted us that it is his Majesty's pleasure a party of ^{marines.} marines, consisting of 160 private marines, with a suitable number of officers and non-commissioned officers, shall proceed to Botany Bay, on the coast of New South Wales, not only to enforce due subordination and obedience in the settlement intended to be formed there, but for the defence of the settlement against the incursion of the natives; and that they shall, immediately after their landing, be properly victualled by a commissary, and supply'd with such tools, implements, and utensils as may be necessary to render their situation comfortable during their continuance there—we beg leave to inform your Lordship that the marines, while they serve on board his Majesty's ships, are victualled in like manner as the seamen, without any deduction from their pay on that account, and do therefore humbly submit to his Majesty ^{Their pay.} whether any stoppage should be made from the pay of the marines going to Botany Bay upon the present occasion towards defraying the expence of the provisions with which they are to be supply'd by the Commissary while on shore.

And as it is usual when any regiments are sent upon service to his Majesty's colonies or plantations to allow them to take with them a certain number of women, we beg leave to propose that the wives of the marines going to Botany Bay, not exceeding ten to each company, which will not in the whole amount to more than forty ^{Marines' wives.} women, may be allowed to embark with them. We are, &c.,

HOWE.

CHAS. BRETT.

RD. HOPKINS.

RATIONS provided for the Marines during their passage to Botany ^{Rations for} Bay. ^{marines}

	Bread.	Beef.	Pork.	Pease.	Oatmeal.	Rum.	Butter.	Cheese.	Vinegar.
	lb.	b.	lb.	pts.	pts.	pint	oz.	lb.	pts.
Sunday	1	...	1	$\frac{1}{2}$	...	$\frac{1}{2}$	...	...	...
Monday	1	...	...	...	1	$\frac{1}{2}$	2	$\frac{1}{4}$	...
Tuesday	1	2	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$	...	...	...
Wednesday	1	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$	1	$\frac{1}{2}$	2	$\frac{1}{4}$	...
Thursday	1	...	1	$\frac{1}{2}$	...	$\frac{1}{2}$	...	...	...
Friday	1	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$	1	$\frac{1}{2}$	2	$\frac{1}{4}$	...
Saturday	1	2	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$	...	...	$\frac{1}{2}$
	7	4	2	2	3	$3\frac{1}{2}$	6	$\frac{3}{4}$	$\frac{1}{2}$

Per week when on shore.—7 lb. of bread or 7 lb. of flour, 7 lb. of beef or 4 lb. of pork, 3 pints pease, 6 oz. butter, and 1 lb. flour or $\frac{1}{2}$ lb. rice.

1786

SURGEON WORGAN TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

23 Nov.

Sir,

Sirius, Deptford, 23rd November, 1786.

Peruvian
bark.

From the experienced utility of Peruvian bark in ships stationed on the coast of Guinea and in similar climates, it would seem a very necessary article in the present intended expedition; but from the high price of the drug Navy surgeons cannot afford the vast quantity required to do justice to the men without wronging themselves; therefore I humbly beg, sir, that you will move for a proportionate supply to the number of men on board the Sirius.

I am, &c.,

G. B. WORGAN, Surgeon of the Sirius.

CAPTAIN PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

2 Dec.

Sir,

[London] December 2nd, 1786.

Wine and
spirits for
the garrison.

As I fear much discontent in the garrison if there is no allowance of wine or spirits (to which they have ever been accustomed) until spruce beer can be procured for them, I beg that you will please to lay this circumstance before the Lords of the Treasury.

I shall be able to receive a certain quantity of wine on board at Teneriffe, or the Cape, if judg'd necessary, and which I hope will be the case.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

ORDER FOR TRANSPORTATION.*

6 Dec.

Transporta-
tion Act.

Recital.

WHEREAS by the Act passed in the twenty-fourth year of the reign of his present Majesty, intituled 'An Act for the effectual transportation of felons and other offenders, and to authorize the removal of prisoners in certain cases, and for other purposes therein mentioned,' it is enacted that from and after the passing of the said Act when any person or persons at any session of oyer and terminer or gaol delivery or at any Quarter or other General Session of the Peace, to be holden for any county, riding, division, city, town, borough, liberty, or place within that part of Great Britain called England, or at any great Session to be holden for the county palatine of Chester, or within the Principality of Wales, shall be convicted of fraud or petty larceny, or any other offence for which such person or persons shall be liable by the laws of this realm to be transported: It shall and may be lawful for the court before which any such person or persons shall be so convicted as aforesaid, or any *subsequent court holden at any place for the said county, riding, division, city, town, borough, liberty, or place, respectively, with like authority to order and adjudge that such person or persons so convicted as aforesaid shall be transported beyond the seas for any term of years not exceeding

* New South Wales was first named as a place of transportation at the Council held at the Court of St. James's, 6th of December, 1786.

the number of years or term for which such person or persons is or are or shall be liable by any law to be transported; and in every such case it shall and may be lawful for his Majesty, by and with the advice of his Privy Council, to declare and appoint to what place or places, part or parts, beyond the seas, either within his Majesty's dominions or elsewhere out of his Majesty's dominions, such felons or other offenders shall be conveyed or transported, and such court as aforesaid is thereby authorized and empowered to order such offenders to be transported to the use of any person or persons and his or their assigns, who shall contract for the due performance of such transportation; and when his Majesty, his heirs and successors, shall be pleased to extend mercy to any offender or offenders who hath or have been or shall be convicted of any crime or crimes for which he, she, or they is, are, or shall be by law excluded from the benefit of clergy, upon condition of transportation to any place or places, part or parts, beyond the seas, either for term of life, or any number of years, and such intention of mercy shall be signified by one of His Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State, it shall be lawful for any court having proper authority to allow such offender or offenders the benefit of a conditional pardon, and (except in cases where such offender or offenders shall be authorized by his Majesty to transport himself, herself, or themselves) to order the transfer of such offender or offenders to any person or persons who shall contract for the due performance of such transportation, and his or their assigns, for such and the same terms of years for which such offender or offenders shall have been ordered to be transported, or for such term of life or years as shall be specified in such condition of transportation as aforesaid.

And whereas it hath been represented to his Majesty that the several offenders whose names are contained in the list hereunto annexed have been transported or ordered to be transported to parts beyond the seas, his Majesty doth hereby judge fit, by and with the advice of his Privy Council, to declare and appoint the place to which the several offenders shall be transported for the term or terms in their several sentences mentioned to be the eastern coast of New South Wales, or some one or other of the islands adjacent; and all persons whom it may concern are to give the necessary directions for causing the said several offenders to be conveyed or transported to the eastern coast of New South Wales, or some one or other of the islands adjacent, in the manner directed by the said Act.

[The list contains many hundreds of names. At the Council held December 22, 1786, a similar order was made with regard to women. These, and others previously sentenced to be transported to America, "shall be transported to the eastern coast of New South Wales, or some one or other of the islands adjacent."]

1786

2 Dec.

Transportation.

Conditional pardon.

Convicts to go to New South Wales.

Women.

1786 MEMO. FROM UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN TO SIR C. MIDDLETON.

Estimate of expenses. Mr. NEPEAN presents his compliments to Sir Charles Middleton. Is desired by Mr. Pitt* to request that he will order a statement to be made of the expences which it is supposed will be incurred under the direction of the Navy Board for the providing of provisions, clothing, implements, &c., for the convicts, and sending them out to Botany Bay, including the expenses incurred for the detachment of marines. It is not expected that any statement which can now be made will be an accurate one, but Mr. Pitt wishes to obtain within a few days some information upon the business which may lead him to form an opinion to what expence this establishment may be likely to amount.

Equipment of the Sirius. Mr. Nepean has applied to the Admiralty for information respecting the equipment of the Sirius and the tender, and the annual expence of their crews, as well as with regard to the pay of the marines. He has likewise applied to Mr. Rogers for an account of the value of the stores which have been supplied by the Board of Ordnance.

EQUIPMENT OF THE SIRIUS AND SUPPLY.

Sirius and Supply — cost of equipment. AN estimate of the expences which will attend the equipment of the Sirius and the tender that will accompany her to Botany Bay ; of the annual expence of their establishment, including the victualling ; of the probable value of the stores that may be annually expended on board the Sirius and Supply ; and also of the annual pay of the marine establishment.

<i>First Year's Equipment—</i>					Sirius.	Supply.
Hull, mast, yards, furniture, and stores					7,072	3,270
Wages					3,322	1,123
Victuals					1,981	681
<i>Second Year—</i>					12,375	5,074
Wages and victuals as before					5,303	1,804
<i>Third Year—</i>						
Wages and victuals as before					5,303	1,804
					22,981	8,682
					8,682	
					31,663 ¹	
Annual Pay and Clothing of the } Marine Establishment } £4,696 6s. 8d.						
Three Years					14,089	
Total					£45,752	

¹ No charge for stores included in the last two years, it being supposed that what is carried out will last the whole term.

* The Prime Minister, the Right Hon. William Pitt.

ESTIMATE of the Expence of Ordnance Stores ordered to be sent to the intended Settlement at Botany Bay. 1786

	£	s.	d.	Estimate of ordnance stores.
6 iron guns, 12 and 6 pdrs.	116	4	0	
2 brass guns, mounted on travelling carriages, 6 pdrs.	126	9	0	
6 standing carriages, 12 and 6 pdrs	50	15	11	
2 travelling carriages, 12 pdrs.	73	0	0	
Round shot and other stores necessary for the above mntd. guns	635	19	0 $\frac{3}{4}$	
500 tents for the convicts	533	2	6	
160 tents for the marines	176	19	10 $\frac{3}{4}$	
200 musquets for barter	340	0	0	
200 cutlasses for barter	23	6	8	
200 stand of arms for marines	340	0	0	
	£2,435	17	0 $\frac{1}{2}$	

FIRST YEAR'S CIVIL SALARIES.

ESTIMATE proposed for defraying the establishment in New South Wales from the 10th of October, 1786, to the 10th of October, 1787 :—

	£	s.	d.	Estimate of civil estab- lishment.
Allowance to the Governor	1,000	0	0	
„ Lient.-Governor	250	0	0	
„ Depy. Judge-Advocate	182	10	0	
„ Provost-Marshal	91	5	0	
„ Chaplain	182	10	0	
„ Surgeon	182	10	0	
„ Three Surgeon mates, each £91 5s.	273	15	0	
„ Surveyor of lands	182	10	0	
„ Agent	150	0	0	
„ Upon account for payment of fees upon the receipt and audit...	200	0	0	
	£2,695	0	0	
„ Commissary	182	10	0	
	£2,877	10	0	

CAPTAIN TEER TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir,

Deptford, Dec. the 9th, 1786.

9 Dec

I am desired by Sir Charles Middleton* to acquaint you that the following arrangement is made by him, agreeable to your letter, and that an official one will be sent on Monday to the Treasury, and that the ships will be sent accordingly as soon as the charge of provisions and other necessaries can be made. Some spirits must be sent from the Lady Penrhyn to the Charlotte and Friendship, for the marines that were first intended for her now ordered to the two last. Therefore, as this is absolutely necessary now, you will take care to indemnifie the masters of

The
transports

* Comptroller of the Navy; afterwards Rear-Admiral of the White.

1786

9 Dec.

these transports, who will act by my orders for the good of the service, from all harm, as no fraud is or shall be done by this change to the excise.

Distri- bution.			Men.	Women.	Marines.
	The Alexr.	... ..	210	...	32
	Lady Penrhyn to carry	...	...	102	... to go to Gallons.*
	Charlotte	... ..	100	24	40
	Friendship	... ..	80	24	40 to go to Plymouth.
	Scarborough	... ..	210	...	32 to go to Spithead.
			600	150	144

Besides the marine officers, surgeon, &c.

I am, &c.,

GEO. TEER.

UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN TO SIR C. MIDDLETON.

Dear Sir,

December 9th, 1786.

Since I was favor'd with your letter yesterday I have received a note from Captain Teer, containing an arrangement which you have made for sending out the women, by which I observe that instead of embarking the whole hundred and fifty in the Lady Penrhyn, or, if that could not be done, to put on board of her a hundred and twenty-four, and to let the remaining twenty-six now on board the Dunkirk at Plymouth go out in *one* of the ships intended to take away the male convicts from thence, you have order'd the women to be divided on board of *three* ships. I ought not, to be sure, to presume to offer any opinion to you, as you must, for many reasons, be a better judge of these matters than I am, but it strikes me very forcibly that they should not, if possible, be divided.

The women,

A mistake
to divide
them.

The Lady
Penrhyn
could ac-
commodate
all.

From the tonnage of the Lady Penrhyn I should imagine that with scarce any alteration she could be made to contain the whole of the women, tho' they might be a little crowded, with less inconvenience than most of the transports which are to contain the men, and would most likely be more healthy, as there would be no danger from the allowing the women to be constantly upon deck. However, this business must remain with you to determine, and I hope that you will forgive me for starting an opinion upon it.

I hope that it has occur'd to you in your engagements for the transports that the owners, as well as the masters and mates, must enter into the bonds which the Acts of Parliament require for the safe custody of the convicts whilst on board the transports. If that has not been done new difficulties will arise, for the courts will not vest them with the custody of the convicts without it.

Bonds
for safe
custody.

The
marines.

Perhaps some of the victuallers† might take a part of the marines.

I am, &c.,

EVAN NEPEAN.

* The Galleons in the Thames.

† Store ships.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1786

Sir,

[London] December 11, 1786.

11 Dec.

You will please to inform the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, under my command, left her moorings at Deptford, and went down to Long Reach the 9th instant, where she now remains, to receive on board her guns and the remainder of her stores.

I enclose a weekly account, and have the honour to be,—

A. PHILLIP.

SIR C. MIDDLETON TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Dear Sir,

December 11, 1786.

It is absolutely impracticable to arrange the transports in any other manner than we have done without unloading and new filling all the ships, and which would require at least three weeks from this time. The *Lady Penryhn* being intended for seventy women, the number we were ordered to provide for, was made a provision ship, and fitted accordingly for the women. The others, being for males, had the disposition of provisions, &c., suitable to that arrangement. I do not, however, see any force in the objection you have mentioned of putting male and female in the same ship, as it is done continually in all the African (Negro) cargoes that are carried to the West Indies. Each have their separate rooms, and, though both in the same vessel, have no communication with each other. It will be the same in the two ships who are to go to Plymouth, and who by a new arrangement of the marines will just carry the number of males and females intended to embark from that place, with this only difference, that a few supernumeraries will be carried out in them to the other ships. The women have separate rooms from the men, and no communication whatever with each other. This restriction must be strongly enforced to the officers who embark as the guard, and to ye agent who conducts them, and from the example which I have been a witness of for some weeks in a Guinea ship I see no reason for apprehension in this disposition.

The women cannot be more crowded than they are, having only 1½ ton allowed to each, and which is as little as possible for so long a voyage.*

On the subject of security I see a real difficulty, unless the King's authority [is given] to supersede the usual practice of the courts in dispensing with it.

I have never been employed in sending out convicts till now, and of course have made no enquiry into the law forms, and which should have been conveyed to us in the original order. I must, however, observe that, as far as I remember concerning this business, those who formerly carried out convicts had not only

* See Phillip's letters to Nepean, post pp. 46, 77.

1786

11 Dec.

The
conditions
of contract.

an allowance pr. head, but an interest in them after they were embarked. This makes a wide difference, and will account for ye security, which, under present circumstances, cannot be expected from owners of ships, who have no other advantage but the freight and victualling, and take the risk of their ships (which, by the bye, is no small one) upon themselves.

State of the
ships.

I send Captain Teer with this, who will explain to you more particularly by word of mouth than I can by letter of the present state of the ships and the difficulties that will attend any further alteration in them.

Taken by
surprise.

I trust and hope that when any business of this kind is agitated again that I may have some notice of it before it is sent officially. This was the practice in the last war, and prevented all difficulties, and saved much expence to ye public. We must now do as well as we can, and I shall be very [particular] in following every mode that can be pointed out for putting an end to this disagreeable and troublesome business ; being with much regard, Yours, &c.,

CHAS. MIDDLETON.

P.S.—I write in great haste, having a great load of business before me.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO THE NAVY BOARD.

12 Dec.

Gent'n,

Admiralty, 12th Decr, 1786.

Guns for
the Supply.

My Lords Commissioners of the Adm'ty having received a letter from Lieut. Ball, commander of his Majesty's arm'd tender the Supply, representing that he is of opinion four-pounder guns will be too heavy for her, and desiring that they may be exchanged for three-pounders, I am commanded by their Lordships to send you the said letter enclosed for your consideration and opinion whether it may be proper to comply therewith.

I am, &c.,

P.S.*

P.S.—You will please to return the enclos'd with your ans'r.

SECOND CAPTAIN OF THE SIRIUS.

15 Dec.

At the Court at St. James's, the 15th of December, 1786.

Present :—

The King's Most Excellent Majesty,

Viscount Howe,

Lord Hawkesbury,

Viscount Gallway,

William Pitt, Esq.,

Lord Sydney,

Sir George Yonge.

WHEREAS there was this day read at the Board a memorial from the Right Honorable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, dated the 14th of this instant, in the words following, viz. :—

“Lord Sydney, one of your Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State, having, in his letter of the 31st of August last, signified to

* Philip Stephens. Copied from the letter-book at the Admiralty, in which only the initials of the name are given.

us your Majesty's pleasure that one of your ships of war should proceed with the transport vessels appointed to convey convicts to Botany Bay, on the coast of New South Wales, with a view to form a settlement at that place; and it appearing by the staff of the intended settlement, which accompanied his Lordship's said letter, that it is your royal intention to appoint the captain of your Majesty's ship employed upon this service to be Governor or Superintendent-General of the said settlement, we beg leave to represent to your Majesty that, as it will probably be found expedient for the ships to proceed to some other parts of the coast, or to some of the islands in the Pacific Ocean, while the residence of the captain, in the quality of Governor or Superintendent, may be requisite on shore, for the better forming and maintaining the settlement, we are of opinion it will be for the advantage of your Majesty's service that an officer of superior rank to a lieutenant should upon such occasions, and at all times in the absence of the captain, have the charge and command of the said ship, and we do therefore humbly propose that your Majesty will be pleased, by your Order-in-Council, to authorize us to appoint an additional officer to the said ship, under the denomination of second captain, with the rank of post-captain, and with power to command her in the absence of the principal captain, subject, nevertheless, to his control, and to such orders and directions as he may, from time to time, think fit for the regulation of his proceedings; that the pay of the second captain be equal to the pay of a captain of a sixth-rate, and that he be allowed four servants."

1786

15 Dec.

War ship for
Botany Bay.

Governor.

Second
Captain.Order-in-
Council.

His Majesty, taking the said memorial into consideration, was pleased, with the advice of his Privy Council, to approve of what is therein proposed, and to order, as it is hereby ordered, that the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty do appoint an additional officer to the man-of-war that shall proceed with the transport vessels appointed to convey the convicts to Botany Bay, under the denomination of second captain, with the rank of post-captain, and with the power to command the said ship in the absence of the principal captain, subject nevertheless to his control, and to such orders and directions as he may, from time to time, think fit to give him for the regulation of his proceedings; that the pay of the said second captain be equal to the pay of a captain of a sixth-rate, and that he be allowed four servants.*

LIEUT.-COLONEL STIRLING† TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Dear Sir, 27, Church-street, Soho, Dec. 21st, 1786.

21 Dec.

Should the accompanying letter and plan meet your approbation, you will do me a favour by laying them before Lord Sydney.

Letter and
plan.

* The vessel chosen was the *Sirius*, and the appointment of second captain was given to Captain John Hunter, afterwards Governor of New South Wales—1795–1800.

† Marlborough Parsons Stirling, Captain of 36th Foot, July 8th, 1773; Major, Feb. 19th, 1783; local rank of Lieut.-Colonel in the East Indies.

1786

21 Dec.

Permit me to acknowledge how sensibly I feel your kind attention, and shall esteem it an additional obligation your giving me a few lines when at leisure to say how my proposals are received.

I am, &c.,

M. P. STIRLING.

[Enclosure.]

LIEUT.-COLONEL STIRLING TO LORD SYDNEY.

My Lord,

December 21st, 1786.

Proposal.

I beg leave to submit the accompanying proposal for your Lordship's consideration, and from my long and faithful services to solicit your interest in my behalf.

A corps for
New South
Wales.

I am certain it will strike your Lordship most forcibly the necessity of having a corps ready for that service by the time accounts arrive from thence, and flatter myself the terms will be found advantageous to Government, moderate, and consistent with my claims to your Lordship's attention.

Six months'
training.

Should the measure be instantly adopted, I could not pledge myself for the perfect discipline of the corps under six months from their being assembled, wherever it may be thought convenient, and am convinced less time would only disappoint the expectations which might be formed; nor would I, my Lord, however alluring the greatness of the object to a soldier, risk some little reputation, hardly acquired during many years' servitude, with an undisciplined multitude.

I have, &c.,

M. P. STIRLING.

[Enclosure.]

PLAN.

18 Dec.

Plan for
special
corps.

As it is probable the present body of marines destined for the protection of the colony intended to be formed at Botany Bay, in New South Wales, may be found on their arrival there inadequate to the service, both from the increasing number of the colonists, who will require a strong force to keep them in subjection, as well as from the uncertain dispositions of the natives, who may be naturally presumed hostile to strangers forming a settlement among them, and are certainly formidable and numerous, from the immense tract of country they possess—in order to obviate any difficulty that may arrive when a reinforcement shall prove necessary, Lieut.-Colonel Stirling, of his Majesty's 36th Regt., proposes to raise a corps in Ireland, to be ready in every respect for that service by the time accounts shall arrive from the Governor either to relieve or reinforce the marines now going out, as may be thought most proper.

To be raised
in Ireland.Strength
of corps.

The corps to consist of the following number:—One lieutenant-colonel comdg., (without a company), eight captains, eight lieutenants, eight ensigns, one chaplain, one quarter-master, one

adjutant, one surgeon, one mate, twenty-four sergeants, twenty-four corporals, sixteen drummers, twenty-four contingent, five hundred and four privates. 1783
18 Dec.

The men to be enlisted for seven years from the time of their landing in New South Wales; at the expiration of that time, the corps to be compleated in whatever manner shall be judged most eligible, and to be recruited from time to time by having a captain, lieutenant, and ensign in Ireland. Seven years' enlistment.

The corps to be raised without any expense to the State, and if Lieut.-Colonel Stirling is allowed the nomination of the officers, taking them from the Line, and giving each a step, their former commission remaining at the disposal of Government, he will be responsible for the corps being compleated in three months from the date of his beating orders. No expense to the State.

If Government think proper to appoint the officers, he will give in an estimate of quotas for each officer, they taking the responsibility for fulfilling their agreement and adhering to their instructions.

Lieut.-Colonel Stirling begs leave to add that he has been upwards of four-and-twenty years an officer in his Majesty's service—has been on trying service in both East and West Indies, and being obliged by loss of health to return lately from the former, had the mortification to have a junior officer put over his head, as major to the 52nd Regt., although he was by five years the oldest captain in his Majesty's army in India, and the officer who succeeded was actually on his passage to Europe at the time of his appointment. Lieut.-Colonel Stirling's services.

He also, at a very critical period in the year 1783, when the troops in general were found averse to the service in India, received the then commander-in-chief's approbation to an offer of raising five hundred men immediately for that service, and had his orders on this head, when the 33rd Regt. being ordered out, he suffered a severe disappointment. A former offer.

From these circumstances, and his long services, is inclined to hope that should this, his plan, be deemed expedient, he will be favoured with a preference,* his connexions in Ireland ensuring success, and his most sanguine wishes leading him to promote, by every exertion, an undertaking so useful to his country. Success certain.

M. P. STIRLING,

Major in the Army and Lieut.-Colonel in India.

December 18th, 1786.

MAJOR ROSS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Craven-street, 22nd Dec., 1786.

22 Dec.

As there is a certainty that the marine detachment intended for Botany Bay will be under a necessity of encamping on their Themarines.

* Colonel Stirling's proposals were not accepted. A commission to raise a special corps, afterwards known as the New South Wales Corps, was given to Major Francis Grose. Post, pp. 249-251.

1786

22 Dec.

Camp
equipage.

arrival there, and that they must unavoidably continue so until such time as proper places of security can be found, as well for their own safety as for the safety of the convicts,—

I have, as commanding officer of the detachment, to request you will be pleased to demand camp equipage for them agreeable to the enclosed list:—For one field officer, four captains, one adjutant, one quarter-master, twelve subalterns, twelve serjeants, twelve corporals, eight drummers, and one hundred and sixty privates—the actual number the detachment consists of.

Urgency.

I must again request your attention to this demand, as our leaving England without them may be attended with the most alarming consequence to the detachment.

Insufficient
supplies.

I submit it to you, sir, whether it will be proper to demand a greater quantity than will on our first arrival be wanted for the service, as the having but the bare quantity mentioned in the enclosed list will put it out of your power to supply what may, from the many accidents such articles are liable to, be from time to time absolutely wanted.

This may appear to you the more necessary on reflecting that you may sometimes have occasion to detach from the main body.

I am, &c.,

R. Ross, Major.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

27 Dec.

Sir,

[London] 27 December, 1786.

I am to request that you will please to move the Right Honorable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty to give me such orders for my conduct as they may judge proper when the following circumstances occur:—

The Sirius—
instructions
asked for.

1. When his Majesty's ship Sirius, under my command, is supply'd with fresh meat in any foreign port, am I to order the same for the marines on board the transports?

2. And is such provision to be paid for by bill on the Victualling Board or on the Treasury?

3. Am I to bear the marines' wives that go out as supernumerarys on board the Sirius on the supernumerary list with their husbands, that they may be victualled?

4. If it should be necessary to land any marine that may be sick in a foreign port, in what manner is he to be landed and paid for?

5. Am I to order wine to be purchased for the Sirius and the tender? and

6. If when I arrive at the Cape or such port as I intend to take my departure from for the intended settlement, am I at liberty to order the provisions that have been expended on

the passage on board the Sirius and on board the tender, to be replaced, particularly bread and beef, supposing the same may be purchased at a reasonable price?

1786

27 Dec.

7. Are the convicts to be supplied with fresh meat when the marines on board the transports are; and is it to be paid for by bill on the Victualling Board or on the Treasury?

8. Should it be necessary to land any of the convicts, either from the loss of limbs, or from any fatal distemper on board the transports, am I at liberty to do it, and is the expense to be paid by bill on the Victualling Board or on the Treasury?

9. If in a foreign port any of the masters of the ships under my convoy should be obliged to purchase stores or provisions that may be absolutely necessary to enable them to proceed on their voyage, and the merchants should refuse to take their bills, am I at liberty to draw on the Navy Board bills to purchase such stores.

10. If from the particular conduct of any marine belonging to the garrison, I judge it for the good of the service to exchange such marine for a marine belonging to the Sirius or to the tender, am I at liberty to make such exchange?

11. If I judge it necessary hereafter to order the Sirius or the tender to England, in order to lessen the expense to Government, or for any other just reason, I presume I am at liberty to do it; but if I send home the Sirius or the tender, in what manner am I to be paid as captain, in full pay, after such ship is paid off in England?

12. In case of sending home the Sirius or the tender, am I at liberty to discharge such men as may desire to remain in the settlement, and who are not absolutely necessary for the navigating the ship home?

13. May any commission or warrant officer be permitted to remain when his ship is ordered home?

14. When I put his Majesty's ship Sirius under the command of Captain Hunter, that officer of course should take charge of the ship's books, sign the officers' monthly expenses, &c. In that case, as I shall have no accounts to pass for the time, in what manner am I to be paid?*

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN TO MR. THOMAS.

Whitehall, 30 Dec., 1786.

30 Dec.

MR. NEPEAN presents his compliments to Mr. Thomas; begs he will be so good as to favor him with an account of the number of persons which each of the transport ships is to contain.

* Replies to these questions are given in a letter from Secretary Stephens. Post, pp. 48, 49.

1786
30 Dec.

His setting down the numbers upon this paper will be quite sufficient.*

The transports.	Convicts.		Marines.	
	Men.	Women.	Men.	Women.
Alexander—in the river	210	.....	32	4
Scarborough—at Portsmouth	210	... ..	32	4
Friendship—at Plymouth	80	24	40	3
Charlotte—at Plymouth	100	24	40	3
Lady Penrhyn—in the river ... ..	.....	102	.....	4
Ship to be taken up ... ..	.....	30	30	30+
	600	180	174	48

The first chaplain.

SIR C. MIDDLETON TO ————†

Dear Sir,

As Mr. Wilberforce is not in town himself, I introduce for a few minutes' conversation Mr. Johnson, who is nominated as minister for Botany Bay. He has settled his business with the Treasury, and therefore comes to you for his appointment, and an order for a few parish things, which are perfectly proper, and not paid for by individuals. He may procure them himself, and they may be brought into one list of necessaries.

I am, &c.,

CHAS. MIDDLETON.

1787
1 Jan.

UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN TO MR. SHELTON.

Sir,

Whitehall, 1 Jany., 1787.

Transportation orders.

I send you herewith attested copies of four Orders of Council, which passed on the 6h and 22d days of last month, fixing the destination of the several convicts therein named,§ now under sentence of transportation. These attested copies are intended for your use.

Bonds and contracts.

I understand from Mr. Campbell|| that you have already been furnished with a list of such convicts as are to be sent out in the Alexander, and as it is wished that they may be removed as soon as possible from the hulk to make room for the people now in Newgate, I will beg of you to get the bonds and contracts (if necessary) executed with as little delay as may be.

* The reply to this note is the return which accompanies it.

† Wives of marines.

‡ The name is omitted, and also the date, but the letter is evidently intended for Under Secretary Nepean. Mr. William Wilberforce, the philanthropist had interested himself in the appointment of a chaplain for the settlement.

§ The Order-in-Council appointing New South Wales as a place to which convicts might be sent was made on the 6th December, 1786. Ante, p. 30.

|| Mr. Duncan Campbell, Superintendent of Convicts, on the Thames.

The Lady Penrhyn, now in the river, will receive all the female convicts now in Newgate under sentence of transportation, and her commander, with Mr. Richardson, will enter into the bonds the latter will contract. 1787
1 Jan.

There will be a further list sent to you, I hope, to-day, of other convicts now in the hulks who are to be sent to the ship Scarborough at Portsmouth, to be conveyed from thence to the intended settlement at Botany Bay, and which will include all that are to go out in the first convoy. I am, &c.,

EVAN NEPEAN.

ARTICLES to be provided, purchase of stock, &c., for the intended settlement at Botany Bay.*

The wine to be procured from the Cape de Verd Islands must be paid for in bills of exchange. Wine.

Live stock and grain to be procured at the Cape of Good Hope must be paid for in the same manner. Live stock and grain.

At Java and all the Molucca Islands, from whence black cattle, goats, and hogs are to be procured, a Dutch factor resides, who is the only European usually on the island. By a compact between the Raja and the Dutch, the factor controuls the whole of the commerce, and it is probable that he will not permit any trade with foreigners until he is bribed. About £10, in addition to some English beer (perhaps a few dozen), will satisfy him. A bribe necessary. Ducats to the amount of £50 will be sufficient for this purpose, with two or three casks of beer.

The cattle, hogs, and goats are to be obtained from the natives for cutlasses and firearms, and it is supposed that 200 musquets and the same number of cutlasses would purchase a sufficient quantity. Those arms might be taken from the Ordnance Department, as a great number of them are now in store, daily decreasing in value. Barter.

As there will most likely be occasion to keep up an intercourse with the Society Islands, from whence, indeed, various supplies may be obtained, about £150 laid out in small hatchets, some of them made in the Otaheite fashion, glass beads (chiefly white), pocket looking-glasses, nails and ginlets, and a few *real* red feathers, will answer that purpose. Trade with the islands.

ADMIRALTY WARRANT FOR CAPTAIN COLLINS AS JUDGE-ADVOCATE.

WHEREAS we have thought fit to appoint you to officiate as Judge-Advocate to the detachment of his Majesty's marine forces ordered to proceed to Botany Bay, on the coast of New South Wales, for the protection of the settlement intended to be formed at that place, you are hereby authorized and directed to officiate as Judge-Advocate accordingly at all such courts-martial as shall be Judge-Advocate.

* No date or signature.

1787

1 Jan.

there held for the trial of any officers, non-commiss'd officers, or private men belonging to the said detachment, pursuant to an Act of Parliament now in force for the regulation of his Maj's marine forces while on shore, and any other Act of Parliament in that behalf which shall hereafter be in force, and to such rules, articles, and regulations as now are or shall hereafter be established by the Lord High Admiral or Commiss'rs for executing the office of Lord High Admiral for the time being, during the continuance of the power and authority hereby given to you as aforesaid. And for your care and trouble in executing the said employment we do hereby grant unto you an allowance after the rate of ten shillings per day, to be paid to you quarterly by the Paymaster of Marines, and to commence on the date hereof.

Given, &c., and the seal, &c., the 1st of Jan'y., 1787.

HOWE.

C. BRETT.

J. L. GOWER.

WARRANT FOR TRANSPORTATION.

George R.

3 Jan.

WHEREAS a contract has been entered into for transporting to New South Wales, or some other of the islands adjacent, the several convicts now in your custody on board the hulks in the river Thames whose names are contained in the list hereunto annexed* : Our will and pleasure is that you forthwith do deliver over to the contractors, Mr. William Richards, shipbroker, and Mr. Duncan Sinclair, master of the transport ship called the Alexander, the said convicts whose names are specified in the said list, in order that they may be transported to the said coast of New South Wales, or some one or other of the islands adjacent, on board the said ship Alexander, for the terms of years for which said convicts are severally sentenced or ordered to be transported. And for so doing this shall be your warrant. Given at our Court at St. James's, the third day of January, 1787, in the twenty-seventh year of our reign.

The
Alexander's
convicts.

To our trusty and well-beloved Duncan Campbell, Esq.,
Superintendant of the Convicts on the river Thames.

By his Majesty's command,

SYDNEY.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO THE NAVY BOARD.

4 Jan.

Gent'n,

Admiralty, 4 Jan'y, 1787.

Having communicated to my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty your letter of the 2d inst., informing them that being under orders to hire transports to carry convicts to Botany Bay

* The list is not attached to the warrant in the Record Office.

at the time of Lieut. Shortland's* return with the troops from Halifax, and an agent being requisite for superintending the same, you appointed him, as being conversant in the business, to take charge of the said ships, I am commanded by their Lordships to acquaint you that they have no objection to Lt. Shortland's being employed to superintend these transports, but that you should have obtained their Lordships' permission before you app'd him to that employment.

I am, &c.,
P.S.†

1787

4 Jan

Lieut.
Shortland.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir,

[London] Jan. 4, 1787.

As it has been found necessary to add additional securities to the hatchways and to alter the handcuffs on board the Alexander, the same will be necessary to be done on board the different ships as they arrive at Portsmouth, consequently orders should be sent down to that port, to inform your office, or the Navy Board, when such alterations are made, otherwise the convicts may be sent from town before the ships are ready to receive them.

Alterations
to trans-
ports.

I likewise beg leave to observe that the number of scythes (only 6), of razors (only 5 dozen), and the quantity of buck and small shot (only two hundred pounds) now ordered is very insufficient, and that 20 scythes, 12 dozen of razors (at 12s. a dozen), and 5lb. [1 cwt.] of small shot, chiefly buck, in addition to the above, is very necessary.

Scythes,
razors, and
shot.

I have likewise to request that you will please to inform me in what manner those people are to be paid who superintend the convicts in their various occupations, for some people there must be named for that purpose, and no one will undertake this business without some reward, tho' it may be very small, being held out to them, as likewise those who must be employed in issuing the daily provisions—these people cannot well be taken from the garrison—I think they may from the ship.

Superinten-
dents for
convicts.

The knowing what provisions, cloathing, &c., are on board the different ships is very necessary, as I find there are some things put on board the transports by the agent that cannot possibly remain there. I therefore beg that I may have the account as soon as it can possibly be given.

Several of the staff have requested that I would once more apply to you for a twelvemonth's advance, as they find themselves much distress'd in fitting for the voyage, and the uncertainty of

Advance for
the staff.

* Lieut. John Shortland. He subsequently became Master and Commander in the Navy. His eldest son, John Shortland, went out to New South Wales with Governor Phillip, as midshipman of the Sirius, and was on board that vessel when she was wrecked at Norfolk Island. He went back to England with Capt. Hunter, and returned with him to Port Jackson in 1795, as First Lieutenant of the Reliance. In 1797 he discovered Hunter River. He was made Commander in 1800.

† Copied from the Letter-book at the Admiralty, in which the initials, instead of the name in full, are frequently given.

1787 which makes their agents unwilling to advance the sum they find
 4 Jan. absolutely necessary to set out—and they feel it the more as the
 officers of marines have now received a year's advance. Indeed,
 I doubt if one or two of the assistant surgeons will be able to
 leave town without the advance.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO THE NAVY BOARD.

11 Jan. Gent'n, Admiralty, 11th Jan'y, 1787.

The First
Fleet.

I am commanded by my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'ty
 to signify their direction to you to transmit to them a list of
 the names of the ships you have taken up for the conveyance
 of the convicts, the marine establishment, provisions, tools, &c.,
 to Botany Bay, on the coast of New South Wales, with the
 names of their masters, distinguishing which of them are intended
 to receive the convicts and the marine establishment and which
 are to receive the provisions, &c., the state of readiness which
 they are in, and to what ports they are ordered, and whether
 any and which of them have already received any convicts on
 board.

I am,

P.S.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir, [London] Jan. 11, 1787.

Overcrowd-
ing of trans-
ports.

By letters from Lieut. Shortland and the surgeon's assistant
 on board the *Alexander*, I find that 184 men are put on board
 that ship, and 56 women on board the *Lady Penrhyn*, that there
 are amongst the men several unable to help themselves, and that
 no kind of surgeon's instruments have been put on board that
 ship or any of the transports. You will, sir, permit me to observe
 that it will be very difficult to prevent the most fatal sickness
 amongst men so closely confined; that on board that ship which
 is to receive 210 convicts there is not a space left for them to
 move in sufficiently large for 40 men to be in motion at the same
 time, nor is it safe to permit any number of men to be on deck
 while the ship remains so near the land.

Removal to
Spithead.

On this consideration, I hope that you will order the *Alex-
 ander* and *Lady Penrhyn* to join his Majesty's ship *Sirius*
 immediately, and proceed to Spithead, where more liberty may be
 allowed the convicts than can be done with safety in the river,
 and those that are wanting to compleat the number to be sent
 out in those ships may be sent round to Portsmouth with the other
 convicts, for the most fatal consequences may be expected if the
 full number is kept on board any length of time before we sail.

Surgical
instruments
required.

You will, I presume, see the necessity of ordering some surgeon's
 instruments to be sent on board the ships that carry the convicts

—and I do hope that no more will be embarked till the ships are ready to sail, and which they cannot be for a week after they get to Spithead. 1787
11 Jan.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO THE NAVY BOARD.

Gent'n, Admiralty, 16 Jan'y, 1787. 16 Jan.

I am commanded by my Lords Comm'r's of the Adm'ty to signify their direction to you to direct the masters of the Alexander and Lady Penryhn, transports, taken up to carry convicts to Botany Bay, to put themselves under the comm'd of Capt. Phillip, or in his absence Captain Hunter, of his Majesty's ship Sirius, in Long Reach, and to follow his orders for their further proceedings.

I am, &c.,

P.S.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir, Admiralty, 18 Jan'y, 1787. 18 Jan.

Having laid before my Lords Commiss'r's of the Admiralty a letter from Mr. Rose, Secretary to the Lords Comm'r's of the Treasury, desiring that directions may be given to the captain of the ship which is to conduct to Botany Bay the ships taken up to proceed with convicts to that place, to take care that no unnecessary delay happens on the passage thither, or in sending the ships from thence after the convicts are landed, and that he uses his best endeavours to enable them to reach China by the 1st Jan'y, 1788, as they must otherwise be continued in pay till the return to Deptford, I am commanded by their Lordships to send you the enclosed copy of the said letter,* and to desire you will lay the same before Lord Sydney, they not thinking themselves at liberty to give any directions to Capt. Phillip for his proceedings after his arrival at Botany Bay.

No unnecessary delay.

I am, &c.,

P.S.

SUPERINTENDENT CAMPBELL TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

My Dear Sir, Adelphi, 29 Jan., 1787. 29 Jan.

It cost me some time to find out a paper which would enable me to answer your letter effectually,† and which I have this moment laid my hand on, which caused my delay in answering yours sooner.

It appears by a calculation I made for the information of the House of Commons some years since that upon an average of seven years, viz., from 1769 to 1775, both inclusive, I transported 547 convicts annually from London, Midx., Bucks, and the four counties of the Home Circuit, and that 117 of these transports were women. I always looked upon the number from the other parts of the kingdom to be equal to what was transported by me.

Transportation from England

With regard, &c.,

DUN. CAMPBELL.

* Ante, p. 25. † The letter to which this is a reply is not available.

1787

SURGEON WHITE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

7 Feb.

Sir,

[London] 7 February, 1787.

Marines
and convicts
without
medicines.

I beg leave to inform you that in case of illness prevailing among the marines intended for Botany Bay there has been no necessaries supplied. As they are equally subject to the diseases and accidents to men embarked on board the King's ships, I am inclined to think and hope the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, on your representation, would order them to be supply'd in proportion, and in the usual manner of the Navy. I think it my duty to add that the convicts are in a similar position.

I have, &c.,

JOHN WHITE.

THE TRANSPORTS AND THE EAST INDIA COMPANY.*

9 Feb.

The trans-
ports
and the
East India
Company.

At a Court of Directors, held on Friday, the 9th February, 1787,—Order'd, that in case the ship Lady Penrhyn should be prevented arriving in China by the time prescribed in her charter-party, she be allowed to remain there till the next season, and then receive her loading for London, provided the Company shall not incur any additional expense thereby.

At a Court of Directors, held on Wednesday, the 4th April, 1787,—Order'd, that the owners of the ships chartered for China from Botany Bay be excused from the obligation of those ships being in China by the 15th January, 1788, free of expence to the Company.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

23 Feb.

Sir,

Admiralty Office, 23d February, 1787.

My Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty having taken into their consideration the several queries stated in your letter of the 27th of December last,† I am commanded to acquaint you, in answer to the—

No direc-
tions.

1 and 2. That as the Board of Treasury have given directions to the Navy Board for victualling the marines who are to embark on board the transports, my Lords cannot give any directions respecting the furnishing them with fresh provisions.

Marines'
wives.

3. The wives of marines who are permitted to embark on board the Sirius must be victualled in like manner as the wives of land forces embarked on board transport ships, of which you will obtain information from the Victualling Board.

Sick
marines.

4. If it be absolutely necessary to send any marines sick on shore in foreign parts, they must be treated in the same manner

* The paragraphs which follow are extracts from records in the East India Company's Office. The transports Charlotte, Scarborough, and Lady Penrhyn were under charter to the Company from Botany Bay to China, whence they were to carry cargoes of tea to London.

† Ante, p. 40.

as seamen ; but the expence to be kept separate, and bills drawn on the Commissioners for Sick and Hurt for the amount. 1787

5 and 6. You are at liberty to purchase wine for the use of the crews of the Sirius and Supply tender, and to cause the provisions they may have expended on the passage to be replaced, particularly bread and beef, if the same can be purchased at a reasonable rate. 23 Feb. Wine allowed.

7 and 8. Their Lordships cannot give any directions respecting the victualling of the convicts, nor for the treatment of them, in case it should be found necessary to land any of them. No directions for victualling.

9. Nor can their Lordships authorize you to interfere in the purchasing any stores or provisions that may be wanted for any of the transports in the course of the voyage. Governor must not interfere.

10. You are at liberty to exchange marines from the garrison to the Sirius or Supply tender if you judge it for the good of the service so to do. Marines may be exchanged.

11, 12, and 13. As you will be instructed to follow such orders as you receive through the channel of one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State, on your arrival at Botany Bay, their Lordships decline answering these articles, not considering themselves at liberty to give directions for your conduct subsequent to your arrival at that place. Phillip to await orders.

14. When Captain Hunter takes charge of the ship's books and accounts, his certificate thereof to the Navy Board will be their justification of paying you without passing any further account.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP STEPHENS.

SURGEON WHITE TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Hungerford Coffee House, Strand,

Sir,

Feb'y 27th, 1787.

27 Feb.

Finding that the Revd. Mr. Johnston is to be allowed the privilege of taking with him to Botany Bay a servant, I hope it will not be deemed unreasonable or improper if I solicit a like indulgence, whose situation during the voyage will require some assistance, having no mate on board the ship I take my passage in—indeed the number of mates will by no means admit of it. The marine officers generally (and of course will) have servants out of the ranks, an advantage I can by no means lay claim to or expect. Being in a civil capacity, and without a servant, my situation must be truly uncomfortable, on which I am persuaded it is needless to say more, when addressing you, who must know and admit the inconveniences I shall be subject to, not only on the passage, but after landing without one. I have apply'd to Captain Phillip, who has no objection, and admits the propriety, if not necessity, of the request, but can do nothing in the matter without yr. permission being first obtained. The obligation I already owe you Application for servant. Phillip's sanction.

1787

would prevent my asking any further, were I not encouraged by others, and satisfied in my own mind, it cannot meet your disapprobation ; with a hope of that being the case, I beg leave to assure you of my gratitude, esteem, and respect.

I am &c.,
JOHN WHITE.

23 Feb

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

My Lord,

[London] February 28th, 1787.

Having received the inclosed reports* respecting the marines and convicts now embarked on board the Alexander and Lady Penrhyn transports, I beg to submit it to your Lordship whether it may not be advisable to make some alteration in the provisions, by allowing the marines a proportion of flour in lieu of a certain proportion of salt meat, and some addition to the provisions served to the convicts ; at present a convict has only, for forty-two days, sixteen pounds of bread, as will appear to your Lordship by the inclosed list.

A more
liberal
ration.

Fresh food
for the
strong, wine
for the sick.

And I likewise beg leave to solicit your Lordship that orders may be given for the supplying both marines and convicts with fresh meat and vegetables while they remain at Spithead, and that a small quantity of wine may be allowed for the sick.

I have, &c.,
A. PHILLIP.

P.S.—I likewise beg leave to represent to your Lordship that the contractors having a power of substituting half-a-pound of rice in lieu of one pound of flour will be very severely felt by the convicts.

PHILLIP'S VIEWS ON THE CONDUCT OF THE EXPEDITION AND
THE TREATMENT OF CONVICTS.†

The war-
ships should
precede the
transports.

Phillip's
foresight.

By arriving at the settlement two or three months before the transports many and very great advantages would be gained. Huts would be ready to receive the convicts who are sick, and they would find vegetables, of which it may naturally be supposed they will stand in great need, as the scurvy must make a great ravage amongst people naturally indolent and not cleanly.

Huts would be ready for the women ; the stores would be properly lodg'd and defended from the convicts in such manner as to prevent their making any attempt on them. The cattle and stock would be likewise properly secured, and the ground marked out for the convicts ; for lists of those intended to be sent being given to the commanding officers, mentioning their ages, crimes, trades, and characters, they might be so divided as to render few changes necessary, and the provisions would be

* The reports are not available.

† Phillip's handwriting, on small sheets of paper.

1787

ready for issuing without any waste. But if convicts' provisions, &c., must be landed a few days after the ship's arrival, and consequently mostly at the same time, great inconvenience will arise, and to keep the convicts more than a few days on board after they get into a port, considering the length of time which they must inevitably be confined, may be attended with consequences easier to conceive than to point out in a letter. Add to this, fevers of a malignant kind may make it necessary to have a second hospital.

A ship's company is landed, huts rais'd, and the sick provided for in a couple of days; but here the greater number are convicts, in whom no confidence can be placed, and against whom both person and provision is to be guarded. Everything necessary for the settlement should be received at the Cape on board with the commanding officer, and nothing left for the transports but a certain proportion of live stock.

Convicts not to be trusted.

I may add, the short space of time left to choose a proper situation.*

The confining the convicts on board the ships requires some consideration. Sickness must be the consequence in so long a voyage (six months may be allow'd for the voyage—that is, from the time of leaveing England to the arrival in Botany Bay) and disagreeable consequences may be feared if they have the liberty of the deck. The sooner the crimes and behaviour of these people are known the better, as they may be divided, and the greatest villains particularly guarded against in one transport.

Probable sickness on the voyage.

The women in general I should suppose possess neither virtue nor honesty. But there may be some for thefts who still retain some degree of virtue, and these should be permitted to keep together, and strict orders to the master of the transport should be given that they are not abused and insulted by the ship's company, which is said to have been the case too often when they were sent to America.

Care of the women.

At the ports we put into for water, &c., there may be some sick that may have fever of such a nature that it may be necessary for the sake of the rest to remove them out of the ship. In such a case, how am I to act?

What is to be done if fever breaks out?

The greatest care will be necessary to prevent any of the convicts from being sent that have any venereal complaints.

During the passage, when light airs or calms permit it, I shall visit the transports to see that they are kept clean and receive the allowance ordered by Government: and at these times shall endeavour to make them sensible of their situation, and that their happiness or misery is in their own hands,—that those who behave well will be rewarded by being allow'd to work occa-

Inspection on the voyage.

* The MS. is continued, on foolscap, in another hand—evidently a copy of Phillip's paper.

1787

sionally on the small lots of land set apart for them, and which they will be put in possession of at the expiration of the time for which they are transported.

Defence
against the
natives.

On landing in Botany Bay it will be necessary to throw up a slight work as a defence against the natives—who, tho' only seen in small numbers by Captn. Cook, may be very numerous on other parts of the coast—and against the convicts; for this my own little knowledge as a field engineer will be sufficient, and will be the work of a few days only; but some small cannon for a redoubt will be necessary. Within the lines the stores and provisions will be secured; and I should hope that the situation I should be able to take may admit of having the small rivers between the garrison and the convicts so situated that I may be able to prevent their having any intercourse with the natives.

Make friends
with them,
if possible.

I shall think it a great point gained if I can proceed in this business without having any dispute with the natives, a few of which I shall endeavour to persuade to settle near us, and who I mean to furnish with everything that can tend to civilize them, and to give them a high opinion of the new guests, for which purpose it will be necessary to prevent the transports' crews from having any intercourse with the natives, if possible. The convicts must have none, for if they have, the arms of the natives will be very formidable in their hands, the women abused, and the natives disgusted.

Marriage
should be
encouraged.

The keeping of the women apart merits great consideration, and I don't know but it may be best if the most abandoned are permitted to receive the visits of the convicts in the limits allotted them at certain hours, and under certain restrictions; something of this kind was the case in Mill Bank formerly. The rest of the women I should keep apart, and by permitting the men to be in their company when not at work, they will, I should suppose, marry, in which case they should be encouraged, if they are industrious, by one day in the week more than the unmarried on their own lots of ground.

Intermarry-
ing with
natives.

The natives may, it is probable, permit their women to marry and live with the men after a certain time, in which case I should think it necessary to punish with severity the men who use the women ill, and I know of no punishment likely to answer the purpose of deterring others so well as exiling them to a distant spot, or to an island, where they would be obliged to work hard to gain their daily subsistence, and for which they would have the necessary tools, but no two to be together, if it could be avoided.

Rewards
and punish-
ments.

Rewarding and punishing the convicts must be left to the Governor; he will be answerable for his conduct, and death, I should think, will never be necessary—in fact, I doubt if the fear of death ever prevented a man of no principle from committing a bad action. There are two crimes that would merit death—

murder and sodomy. For either of these crimes I would wish to confine the criminal till an opportunity offered of delivering him as a prisoner to the natives of New Zealand, and let them eat him. The dread of this will operate much stronger than the fear of death.

1787

As the getting a large quantity of stock together will be my first great object, till that is obtained the garrison should, as in Gibraltar, not be allowed to kill any animal without first reporting his stock, and receiving permission. This order would only be necessary for a certain time, and I mention it here only to show the necessity of a military government: and as I mean in every matter of this kind to sett the example, I think that I can say this will never occasion any uneasiness, but if it should, it will be absolutely necessary, otherwise we shall not do in ten years what I hope to do in four.

Preservation of stock.

Women may be brought from the Friendly and other islands, a proper place prepared to receive them, and where they will be supported for a time, and lots of land assigned to such as marry with the soldiers of the garrison.

Women from the islands.

As I would not wish convicts to lay the foundations of an empire, I think they should ever remain separated from the garrison, and other settlers that may come from Europe, and not be allowed to mix with them, even after the 7 or 14 years for which they are transported may be expired.

Convicts should be isolated.

The laws of this country will, of course, be introduced in [New] South Wales, and there is one that I would wish to take place from the moment his Majesty's forces take possession of the country: That there can be no slavery in a free land, and consequently no slaves.

No slavery.

The cloathing for the convicts will last for a certain time, after which what means should I have of furnishing them with materials for their making their own cloaths?

How are the convicts to be clothed?

It will be necessary to know how far I may permit the seamen and marines of the garrison to cultivate spots of land when the duty of the day is over, and how far I can give them hopes that the grounds they cultivate will be secured to them hereafter; likewise, how far I may permit any of the garrison to remain, when they are ordered Home in consequence of relief.

Land grants.

By what I am informed, hatchets and beads are the articles for barter—a few small grindstones for the chiefs; and as they use a light they hold it in their hands, small tin lamps on a very simple construction must be very acceptable.

Lamps for the natives.

Ships may arrive at Botany Bay in future. On account of the convicts, the orders of the port for no boats landing but in particular places, coming on shore and returning to the ships at stated hours, must be strictly enforced.

Shipping regulations.

The saddles I mentioned will be absolutely necessary, for two horsemen will examine the country to a certain distance, when it

Exploration.

1787

might be dangerous to attempt it with half the garrison, for I am not of the general opinion that there are very few inhabitants in this country, at least so few as have been represented—but this article I take upon myself, as likewise the knives, &c., that I mentioned.

Fruit-trees.

Such fruit trees and cuttings that will bear removing should be added to the seeds carried from England, as likewise roots that will bear keeping that length of time out of the ground.

Houses.

Two or three of the houses in question will be highly necessary, and there is no time to lose in giving the orders, if intended.

Articles for barter.

A certain quantity of the articles of husbandry, stores, corn, seeds, &c., of the articles for traffick, should be put on board the *Berwick*,* that in case of an accident we may not be in immediate want of those things, and the same on board the store-ship in which the Lt.-Gouverneur goes.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

1 March.

Sir,

[London] March 1st, 1787.

The Governor's instructions.

From the letter I have received from the Admiralty, and of which I enclose a copy,† you will see that respecting my 11th, 12th, 13th queries the Board decline giving any answer. As I am to be entirely under the direction of the Secretary of State, immediately after I arrive on the coast of New South Wales, for what regards the Naval Department, as well as respecting the settlement, from the Board's answer to these queries, as well as similar answers to several others of the same nature, I must request your particular attention to the following circumstances in drawing up my instructions:—

Purchase of wine.

That I am directed to order wine to be purchased in the passage, at Teneriffe, or where it can be procured; for circumstances may prevent my taking on board the quantity intended, at Teneriffe, or perhaps any part of it, and it may be got at the Cape or elsewhere.

A hospital ship.

That I may employ one of the transports as an hospital ship, if I find it necessary on the passage.

Fresh meat and vegetables.

To order the marines and convicts to be supply'd with fresh meat and vegetables at such places as I may stop at in the passage, and to order the Commissary to draw bills on the Treasury for such supplies.

Exchange of men.

That I have the power of exchanging any part of the garrison with the marines embark'd on board the ships, or of incorporating the marines now belonging to the ship with those of the garrison, if the service requires it.

Officers.

That I am directed to appoint officers to fill such stations as may become vacant by death or otherwise.

Discharge of unnecessary officers

That I am directed to discharge from the ship such officers and men as may not be necessary for the navigating of the ships, and

* Renamed the *Sirius*. Ante, p. 24.

† Ante, p. 48.

which may be necessary in the garrison, such people being desirous of remaining in the settlement. 1787
1 March.

That I make the settlement in such port as I may find the most convenient and best to answer the intentions of Government. The place of settlement.

That I send one of the ships to Charlotte Sound, in the Island of New Zeland, for the flax-plant, and to the Friendly Islands for the bread-fruit, and, as women will be there procured, that I put an officer on board such transport. Bread-fruit and island women.

That the terms by which lands are to be granted are pointed out by the article which gives me the power of granting lands. Land grants.

That I have a power of exiling to New Zealand or the neighbouring islands any convict that may be condemned to death. Power of exile.

That I have the power of emancipation. Emancipation.

The power of suspending and sending home such officer who from his situation cannot be tried by a court-martial. Suspension.

That in case of sending home the Sirius I have orders from the Secretary of State to take the command of such ships or vessels as remain on the coast, by hoisting a distinguishing pendant on board such ship or tender as I may judge necessary (such pendant not to give me any claim to the pay of a commanding officer), in order to retain the command by sea, to be more at liberty to visit the coast, and to retain the command of the ships or vessels that remain. The naval command.

That I have a power to change the species of provisions served to the marines and convicts, for if salt meat is issued, without any proportion of flour, as has been hitherto done by the contractor to the marines embarked on board the Alexander, the scurvy must prove fatal to the greatest part. Of the marines already embarked two months, one in six are sent to the hospital since that ship's arrival at Spithead.* A better ration needed.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO THE NAVY BOARD.

Gentlemen,

2nd March, 1787. 2 March:

I am commanded by my Lords Commrs. of the Admty. to signify their direction to you to order the masters of the several transports and store-ships named on the other side hereof to put themselves under the command of Capt. Philip (or in his absence, of Capt. Hunter), of his Majesty's ship the Sirius, and follow his orders for their future proceedings. The First Fleet.

I am, &c.,
P.S.

Vessels :—

Alexander	Borrowdale
Lady Penryhn	Golden Grove
Scarborough	Fishburn
Charlotte	Prince of Wales
Friendship	

* See Lord Sydney's reply; post, pp. 82-83.

1787

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO CAPTAIN MARSHALL.*

3 March.

Sir,

3rd March, 1787.

The Gorgon.

Having communicated to my Lords Commissioners of the Adm'ty your letter of yesterday's date, acquainting them that fearing the weather might continue bad you had applied to Commissioner Martin for the Gorgon, the ship which he had appointed for the reception of the convicts, to be fitted with as much security as the time would possibly admit, and that you had been obliged to embark them on board her, and had given orders for their guard and security, similar to those issued when the Firm hulk receives such people, I am commanded by their Lordships to acquaint you that they approve thereof, and Lord Sydney, one of his M'y's. Principal Sec'rys of State, having desired that as the said convicts, as well as the marines who have been appointed to guard them, will stand in immediate need of a supply of provisions for their subsistence until they can be sent out to the Motherbank, which Mr. Townshend, who is charged with the care of them, cannot conveniently procure, orders may be given for the said marines and convicts being supplied with such provisions from one of his Majesty's ships in Portsmouth harbour, as Mr. Townshend shall require, upon his settling with the purser for the amount thereof, and that as the boiling of the meat with which they are supplied on board of the ship wherein they are now confined will most likely be attended with difficulty, the meat may be dressed on board the ship from whence the same shall be supplied, I am comm'd by their Lordships to signify their direction to you to give the necessary orders conformable thereto.

Provisions.

The enclosed letter from Lord Sydney to Mr. Townshend,† upon the subject, you will be pleased to cause to be delivered to him.

I am, &c.,

P.S.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

12 March.

My Lord,

[London] March 12th, 1787.

As the Navy Board have informed me that no alteration can be made respecting the victualling of the marines during the passage, it is to prevent my character as an officer from being called in question, should the consequences I fear be realized, that I once more trouble your Lordship on this subject.

The contracts for the garrison and convicts were made before I ever saw the Navy Board on this business, and tho' I never have had it in my power officially to interfere in any respect, yet I have repeatedly pointed out the consequences that must be expected from the men's being crowded on board such small ships, and from victualling the marines according to the contract,

Bad victual-
ling—a
warning.

* One of the Commissioners of the Victualling Department.

† Not recorded.

which allows no flour, as is customary in the Navy. This must be fatal to many, and the more so as no anti-scorbutics are allowed on board the transports for either marine or convict; in fact, my Lord, the garrison and convicts are sent to the extremity of the globe as they would be sent to America—a six-weeks' passage.

1787

12 March.

I see the critical situation I may be in, after losing part of the garrison that is at present very weak when the service for which it is intended is considered; but I am prepared to meet difficulties, and I have only one fear—I fear, my Lord, that it may be said hereafter the officer who took charge of the expedition should have known that it was more than probable he lost half the garrison and convicts, crowded and victualled in such a manner for so long a voyage. And the public, believing it rested with me, may impute to my ignorance or inattention what I have never been consulted in, and which never coincided with my ideas, to avoid which is the purport of this letter; and I flatter myself your Lordship will hereafter point out the situation in which I have stood thro' the whole of this business should it ever be necessary.

Phillip declines responsibility.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

MAJOR ROSS TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir,

Portsmouth, 14th March, 1787.

14 March,

I yesterday muster'd the convicts on board the different transports at the Mother Bank. The enclosed lists* are exact as to numbers, and the most correct I could get from them of their names. I hope it will answe'r all your purposes, and if there is anything else wanted you will please to let me know, and I shall have pleasure in obeying your commands. Perhaps you would wish to have similar lists of those on board the ships from Plymouth; if you do, you have only to let me know.

Muster of convicts.

I have great pleasure in informing you that the convicts seem perfectly satisfied and obedient. They wish, if possible, to be allowed more bread than is at present served them—taking off as much, if so, of the allowance of their salt provisions, as may be equal in value.

The convicts satisfied and obedient.

You are too well acquainted with the consequences attending the being kept long upon a diet of salt provisions to need my saying anything upon that head, being well convinced that whatever can be done for the preservation of health will be done by you.

Their health.

I likewise beg to observe to you that the contractors for victualling the marines have not put any flour on board the transports for their use, and of course, as they are the only people deprived of that necessary article, which I have reason to believe was never intended to be the case, may I request that, you will

No flour.

* In the lists are given fictitious and real names. Among the fictitious are—"Black Jack," "Bone," "Gash," "Major," &c.

1787 use your endeavours to get the mistake rectified, as you know that
 14 March. the preservation of their health is of the utmost consequence on
 the present occasion. I have, &c.,
 R. Ross.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO THE NAVY BOARD.

17 March Gent., Admiralty, 17 March, 1787.

Having communicated to my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'ty your letter of yesterday's date, informing them of the arrival of the two convict ships from Plymouth, of the Cynet [Cygnets], sloop, having made the signal for sailing, and of Captain Hunter, of the Sirius, having applied to you to know what to do with respect to the eleven men sick on shore, should he go to sea, having very little reason to expect their return to their duty, and requesting, therefore, that you may know their Lordships' pleasure thereon, and whether you are to consider the Supply, tender, in the same situation; and, in return, I am comm'd by their Lordships to signify their direction to you to cause the men sent sick on shore from the said ship and tender to be discharged, and to endeavour to supply their places by volunteers from the guard-ship, agreeable to what is contained in my letter to you of the 26th of last month.

Sick men to
be dis-
charged.

I am, &c.,
P.S.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

18 March. Dear Sir, [London] March 18th, 1787.

A letter which I have received from the surgeon states the situation of the convicts to be such that I am under the necessity of requesting you to lay their case before Lord Sydney, that directions may be given to the Commissioners of the Navy for ordering lighters from Portsmouth yard to the Alexander, to receive the convicts while the ship is cleaned and smoaked, and tho' I have so often solicited that essence of malt or some anti-scorbutic may be allowed, I cannot help once more repeating the necessity of it; and, putting the convicts out of the question, which humanity forbids, the sending of the marines that are on board the transports such a voyage as they are going, in a worse state than ever troops were sent out of the Kingdom, even to the nearest garrison (for taking off the tonnage for the provisions of stores, they have not one ton and a half a man) cannot, I am certain, be the intention of his Majesty's Ministers, yet it is absolutely the case, and I have repeatedly stated this fact. Fresh meat for all the convicts and wine for the sick I was informed had been ordered in consequence of the representation I made as soon as the ships got round to Portsmouth, but the sick only have fresh meat. Wine, at the discretion of the surgeon, is very necessary for the sick, as the convicts are not allowed anything more than water.

Anti-
scorbutics
necessary.

Bad pro-
visioning.

* A private letter.

The necessity of making one of the transports an hospital ship is obvious, and, I think, cannot be deferred. The *Friendship*, as having the smallest number of convicts on board, I propose for that purpose.

1787

18 March.

The giving cloaths to those convicts who have been embarked at Plymouth is so very necessary that I have ordered it to be done, and presume the Navy Board will replace the cloathing, but as there are more convicts to be sent on board the different ships, unless orders are being given for their being washed and clothed on their leaving the prison or the hulks, all that we may do will be to no purpose.

Convicts' clothing.

These complaints, my dear sir, do not come unexpected, nor were they unavoidable. I foresaw them from the beginning, and repeatedly pointed them out, when they might have been so easily prevented, at a very small expense, and with little trouble to those who have had the conducting of this business. At present the evils complained of may be redressed, and the intentions of Government by this expedition answered. But if now neglected, it may be too late hereafter, and we may expect to see the seamen belonging to the transports run from the ships to avoid a fatal distemper, and may be refused entrance into a foreign port.

Danger ahead.

The situation in which the magistrates sent the women on board the *Lady Penrhyn*, stamps them with infamy—tho' almost naked, and so very filthy, that nothing but clothing them could have prevented them from perishing, and which could not be done in time to prevent a fever, which is still on board that ship, and where there are many venereal complaints, that must spread in spite of every precaution I may take hereafter, and will be fatal to themselves. There is a necessity for doing something for the young man who is on board that ship as surgeon, or I fear that we shall lose him, and then a hundred women will be left without any assistance, several of them with child. Let me repeat my desire that orders immediately may be given to increase the convict allowance of bread. 16 lb of bread for 42 days is very little.

The women ill-clothed and filthy.

To supply all the convicts with fresh meat while they remain at Portsmouth, the sick with some small quantity of wine.

Their helpless condition.

Fresh meat and wine.

Lighters to be ordered to attend the *Alexander* while that ship is smocked, &c. To wash and cloath the convicts that are still to be sent down before they are put on board the transports, and to have one of the transports ordered to serve as an hospital ship.

Care of the convicts.

This is a long letter, but it is my duty to repeat complaints, that may be redressed, and which I am certain you desire equally with myself.

I remain, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

1787

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO THE NAVY BOARD.

20 March.

Gent'n,

Admiralty, 20th Mar., 1787.

The Supply.

Having communicated to my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'ty your letter of the 16th inst., enclosing a copy of one from the master and surgeon of the Supply, armed tender, relative to the alterations which Lt. Ball, the commander, had caused to be made in the accommodation provided for them, I am commanded by their Lordships to acquaint you that they have signified to Lt. Ball their disapprobation thereof, and ordered him to cause the accommodation for those officers to be restored to the state in which they were fitted under your direction.* I am, &c.,

P. S.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

22 March.

[London] Thursday morning, 22nd March, 1787.

Portable
soup for
Sirius.

CAPTAIN Phillip presents his compliments to Mr. Stephens, and as it is probable the ship's company will be on salt provisions for some months after they arrive on the coast of New South Wales, will be glad of two hundred pounds of portable soup, in addition to the fifty pounds already supply'd. I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO CAPTAIN MARSHALL.

23 March.

Sir,

Admiralty, 23 March, 1787.

Lieut. Riou.

Having communicated to my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'ty your letter of yesterday's date, enclosing one from Captain Gower, of the Salisbury, requesting a month's leave of absence for Lt. Riou,† of the said ship, to attend his private affairs, and informing their Lordships of your having ordered Captain Hunter, of the Sirius, and Lieutenant Ball, of the Supply, tender, to discharge the men they had put sick on shore, and that they are now completing their complements from their guard-ships, I am, in return, comm'd by their Lordships to acquaint you that they are pleased to permit you to give Lieut. Riou the leave of absence desired, but that it was not their intention the sick men should have been discharged from the Sirius and Supply, and other men appointed to supply their places, nor did they apprehend you would have given orders for that purpose, until the said ship and tender had received their sailing orders.

I am, &c.,

P.S.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO CAPTAIN MARSHALL.

29 March.

Sir,

Admiralty, 29th March, 1787.

Having laid before my Lords Comm'rs of the Admiralty your letter of the 27th inst., informing them of the sailing of the Winchelsea from Spithead, and enclosing a letter which you had received from Lieut. Ball, commanding his Majesty's armed

* Post, p. 61.

† Afterwards commander of the Guardian.

tender Supply, desiring, for the reasons therein stated, that an enquiry may be made into his conduct respecting the victualling the said tender, I am commanded by their Lordships to return you the said letter herewith, and to signify their direction to you to take to your assistance some of the captains of the ships under your command, and to cause a particular enquiry to be made into what is therein represented, reporting to me, for their Lordships' information, how the same shall appear to be judged necessary. I am, &c.,

1787
29 March.
Victualling
the Supply.
P.S.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO THE NAVY BOARD.

Gen'l'n, Admiralty, 2nd April, 1787. 2 April.

My Lords Comm'rs of the Admiralty having directed Captain Hunter, of his Majesty's ship the Sirius, to make enquiry concerning the alterations made in the apartments of the master and surgeon of the Supply, tender, whose complaint thereof you enclosed to their Lordships in your letter of the 16th ult., I am comm'd to send you a copy of Captain Hunter's letter in answer thereto, and to acquaint you that my Lords have directed him to reprimand the master and surgeon for having made so groundless a charge against the lieutenant of the Supply.* I am &c.,

A ground-
less char.g.
P.S.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO CAPTAIN MARSHALL.

Sir, Admiralty, 3rd April, 1787. 3 April.

Having laid before my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'ty the report of the captains who, in consequence of their Lordships' directions to you in my letter of the 29th ult., you assembled to enquire into the conduct of Lieut. Ball, commanding his Majesty's armed tender the Supply, respecting the victualling the said tender, I am commanded to acquaint you that their Lordships have sent a copy thereof to the Navy Board, for their information, and as they deem the master an improper person to be continued in the tender, they have directed them to appoint a proper person to supersede him. I am, &c.,

The master
of the sup-
ply super-
seded.
P.S.

PHILLIP'S COMMISSION.†

Arthur Phillip Esqre }
Governor of New South Wales. }

George the Third by the Grace of God King of Great Britain France and Ireland Defender of the Faith &c. to our right trusty and well-beloved Councillor Edward Lord Thurlow Baron Thurlow our Chancellor of Great Britain greeting :—

2 April.

WEE will and command that under our Great Seal of Great Britain (remaining in your custody) you cause these our letters to be made

Letters
patent.

* Ante, p. 60.

† Phillip was appointed Governor of New South Wales 12th October 1786, when a commission, briefly worded, was signed. Ante, p. 24.

1787

2 April

forth patent in form following : George the Third by the Grace of God of Great Britain France and Ireland King Defender of the Faith &c.

To our trusty and well-beloved ARTHUR PHILLIP Esquire.

Governor of
New South
Wales.

Limits of the
territory.

Wee reposing especial trust and confidence in the prudence courage and loyalty of you the said Arthur Phillip of our especial grace certain knowledge and meer motion have thought fit to constitute and appoint and by these presents do constitute and appoint you the said Phillip to be our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief in and over our territory called New South Wales extending from the Northern Cape or extremity of the coast called Cape York in the latitude of ten degrees thirty-seven minutes south to the southern extremity of the said territory of New South Wales or South Cape in the latitude of forty-three degrees thirty-nine minutes south and of all the country inland westward as far as the one hundred and thirty-fifth degree of east longitude reckoning from the meridian of Greenwich including all the islands adjacent in the Pacific Ocean within the latitudes aforesaid of ten degrees thirty-seven minutes south and forty-three degrees and thirty-nine minutes south and of all towns garrisons castles forts and all other fortifications or other military works which may be hereafter erected upon the said territory or any of the said islands.

The Govern-
nor to be
guided by
his commis-
sion and
instructions.

And Wee do hereby require and command you to do and execute all things in due manner that shall belong to your said command and trust Wee have reposed in you according to the several powers and directions granted or appointed you by this present Commission and the instructions and authorities herewith given to you or by such further powers instructions and authorities as shall at any time hereafter be granted or appointed you under our signet and sign manual or by our order in our Privy Council

To take the
oaths.

And our will and pleasure is that you the said Arthur Phillip after the publication of these our letters patent do in the first place take the oaths appointed to be taken by an Act passed in the first year of the reign of King George the First intituled "An Act for the further security of his Majesty's person and Government and the succession of the Crown in the heirs of the late Princess Sophia being Protestants and for extinguishing the hopes of the pretended Prince of Wales and his open and secret abettors" as altered and explained by an Act passed in the sixth year of our reign intituled "An Act for altering the oath of abjuration and the assurance and for amending so much of an Act of the seventh year of her late Majesty Queen Anne intituled "An Act for the improvement of the Union of the two Kingdoms as after the time therein limited requires the delivery of certain lists and copies therein mentioned to persons indicted of High Treason or misprision of Treason."

As also that you make use and subscribe the declaration mentioned in Act of Parliament made in the twenty-fifth year of the reign of King Charles the Second intituled "An Act for preventing dangers which may arise from Popish Recusants."

1787
2 April.
No popery.

And likewise that you take the usual oath for the due execution of the office and trust of our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief in and over our said territory and its dependencies for the due and impartial administration of justice.

Oath of office.

And further that you take the oath required to be taken by Governors in the plantations to do their utmost that the several laws relating to trade and the plantations be duly observed. Which said oaths and declaration our Judge-Advocate in our said territory is hereby required to tender and administer unto you and in your absence to our Lieutenant-Governor if there be any upon the place.

Trade and navigation laws.

All which being duly performed you shall administer unto our Lieutenant-Governor if there be any upon the place and to our Judge-Advocate the oaths mentioned in the first-recited Act of Parliament altered as above as also cause them to make and subscribe the afore-mentioned declaration.

And Wee do hereby authorize and empower you to keep and use the public seal which will be herewith delivered to you or shall be hereafter sent to you for sealing all things whatsoever that shall pass the Great Seal of our said territory and its dependencies.

Public seal.

Wee do further give and grant unto you the said Arthur Phillip full power and authority from time to time and at any time hereafter by yourself or by any other to be authorized by you in that behalf to administer and give the oaths mentioned in the said first-recited Act of Parliament altered as above to all and every such person or persons as you shall think fit who shall at any time or times pass into our said territory or its dependencies or shall be resident or abiding therein.

Power to administer oaths.

And Wee do hereby authorize and empower you to constitute and appoint justices of the peace coronors constables and other necessary officers and ministers in our said territory and its dependencies for the better administration of justice and putting the law in execution and to administer or cause to be administered unto them such oath or oaths as are usually given for the execution and performance of offices and places.

Power to appoint justices.

And Wee do hereby give and grant unto you full power and authority where you shall see cause or shall judge any offender or offenders in criminal matters or for any fine or fines or forfeitures due unto us fit objects of our mercy to pardon all such offenders and to remit all such offences fines and forfeitures treason and wilful murder only excepted in which cases you shall likewise have power upon extraordinary occasions to grant reprieves to the offenders untill and to the intent our royal pleasure may be known therein.

To pardon and

reprieve.

1787

2 April.

Lunatics.

And whereas it belongeth to us in right of our Royal Prerogative to have the custody of ideots and their estates and to take the profits thereof to our own use finding them necessaries and also to provide for the custody of lunaticks and their estates without taking the profits thereof to our own use.

Custody of
lunatics and
their estates.Grants and
commit-
ments.Power to
levy forces
for defence.Pirates and
rebels.

Martial law.

And whereas while such ideots and lunaticks and their estates remain under our immediate care great trouble and charges may arise to such as shall have occasion to resort unto us for directions respecting such ideots and lunaticks and their estates Wee have thought fit to entrust you with the care and committment of the custody of the said ideots and lunaticks and their estates and Wee do by these presents give and grant unto you full power and authority without expecting any further special warrant from us from time to time to give order and warrant for the preparing of grants of the custodies of such ideots and lunaticks and their estates as are or shall be found by inquisitions thereof to be taken by the Judges of our Court of Civil Jurisdiction and thereupon to make and pass grants and committments under our Great Seal of our said territory of the custodies of all and every such ideots and lunaticks and their estates to such person or persons suitors in that behalf as according to the rules of law and the use and practice in those and the like cases you shall judge meet for that trust the said grants and committments to be made in such manner and form or as nearly as may be as hath been heretofore used and accustomed in making the same under the Great Seal of Great Britain and to contain such apt and convenient covenants provisions and agreements on the parts of the committees and grantees to be performed and such security to be by them given as shall be requisite and needful.

And Wee do hereby give and grant unto you the said Arthur Phillip by yourself or by your captains or commanders by you to be authorized full power and authority to levy arm muster and command and employ all persons whatsoever residing within our said territory and its dependencies under your government and as occasion shall serve to march from one place to another or to embark them for the resisting and withstanding of all enemies pirates and rebels both at sea and land and such enemies pirates and rebels if there shall be occasion to pursue and prosecute in or out of the limits of our said territory and its dependencies and (if it shall so please God) them to vanquish apprehend and take and being so taken according to law to put to death or keep and preserve alive at your discretion.

And to execute martial law in time of invasion or other times when by law it may be executed and to do and execute all and every other thing and things which to our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief doth or ought of right to belong.

And Wee do hereby give and grant unto you full power and authority to erect raise and build in our said territory and its

dependencies such and so many forts and platforms castles cities boroughs towns and fortifications as you shall judge necessary and the same or any of them to fortify and furnish with ordnances and ammunition and all sorts of arms fit and necessary for the security and defence of the same or any of them to demolish or dismantle as may be most convenient.

1787

2 April.

Fortifications.

And forasmuch as divers mutinies and disorders may happen by persons shipped and employed at sea during the time of war and to the end that such as shall be shipped and employed at sea during the time of war may be better governed and ordered Wee do hereby give and grant unto you the said Arthur Phillip full power and authority to constitute and appoint captains lieutenants masters of ships and other commanders and officers and to grant to such captains lieutenants masters of ships and other commanders and officers commissions to execute the law-martial during the time of war according to the directions of an Act passed in the twenty-second year of the reign of our late royal grandfather intituled "An Act for explaining amending and reducing into one Act of Parliament the laws relating to the government of his Majesty's ships vessels and forces by sea as the same is altered by an Act passed in the nineteenth year of our reign intituled an Act to explain and amend an Act made in the twenty-second year of the reign of his late Majesty King George the Second intituled an Act for amending explaining and reducing into one Act of Parliament the laws relating to the government of his Majesty's ships vessels and forces by sea."

Naval discipline.

Martial law.

And to use such proceedings authorities punishments corrections executions upon any offender or offenders who shall be mutinous seditious disorderly or any way unruly either at sea or during the time of their abode or residence in any of the ports harbours or bays of our said territory as the case shall be found to require according to martial law and the said directions during the time of war as aforesaid.

Punishment of offenders.

Provided that nothing herein contained shall be construed to the enabling you or any by your authority to hold plea or have any jurisdiction of any offence cause matter or thing committed or done upon the high sea or within any of the havens rivers or creeks of our said territory and its dependencies under your Government by any captain commander lieutenant master officer seaman soldier or other person whatsoever who shall be in actual service in pay in or on board any of our ships of war or other vessels acting by immediate commission or warrant from our Commissioners for executing the office of our High Admiral of Great Britain or from our High Admiral of Great Britain for the time being under the seal of our Admiralty.

No jurisdiction where offence committed on the high seas.

But that such captain commander lieutenant master officer seaman soldier or other person so offending shall be left to be

1787

2 April.

Offenders
on the high
seas to be
tried by
Commis-
sion.

proceeded against and tried as the merits of their offences shall require either by commission under our Great Seal of Great Britain as the statute of the Twenty-eighth of Henry the Eighth directs or by commission from our Commissioners for executing the office of our High Admiral of Great Britain or from our High Admiral of Great Britain for the time being according to the aforesaid Act intituled "An Act for amending explaining and reducing into one Act of Parliament the laws relating to the Government of his Majesty's ships vessels and forces by sea" as the same is altered by an Act passed in the nineteenth year of our reign intituled "An Act to explain an Act made in the twenty-second year of his late Majesty King George the Second intituled 'An Act for amending explaining and reducing into one Act of Parliament the laws relating to the Government of his Majesty's ships vessels and forces by sea.'"

Offences
committed
on shore by
officers or
men belong-
ing to the
Navy

to be
dealt with
on shore.

Provided nevertheless that all disorders and misdemeanors committed on shore by any captain commander lieutenant master officer seaman soldier or any other person whatsoever belonging to any of our ships of war or other vessels acting by immediate commission or warrant from our Commissioners for executing the office of our High Admiral of Great Britain or from our High Admiral of Great Britain for the time being under the seal of our Admiralty may be tried and punished according to the laws of the place where any such disorders offences and misdemeanors shall be committed on shore notwithstanding such offender be in our actual service and borne in our pay on board any such our ships of war or other vessels acting by immediate commission or warrant from our Commissioners for executing the office of our High Admiral of Great Britain or from our High Admiral of Great Britain for the time being as aforesaid so as he shall not receive any protection for the avoiding of justice for such offences committed on shore from any pretence of his being employed in our service at sea.

Public
moneys.

Our will and pleasure is that all public monies which shall be raised be issued out by warrant from you and disposed of by you for the support of the Government or for such other purpose as shall be particularly directed and not otherwise.

Power to
grant land.

And Wee do hereby likewise give and grant unto you full power and authority to agree for such lands tenements and hereditaments as shall be in our power to dispose of and them to grant to any person or persons upon such terms and under such moderate quit rents services and acknowledgments to be thereupon reserved unto us according to such instructions as shall be given to you under our sign manual which said grants are to pass and be sealed by our seal of our said territory and its dependencies and being entered upon record by such officer or officers as you shall appoint thereunto shall be good and effectual in law against us our heirs and successors.

And Wee do hereby give you the said Arthur Phillip full power to appoint fairs marts and markets as also such and so many ports harbours bays havens and other places for conveniency and security of shipping and for the better loading and unloading of goods and merchandizes as by you shall be thought fit and necessary.

1787

2 April.

To appoint fairs and markets.

And Wee do hereby require and command all officers and ministers civil and military and all other inhabitants of our said territory and its dependencies to be obedient aiding and assisting you the said Arthur Phillip in the execution of this our commission and of the powers and authorities herein contained and in case of your death or absence out of our said territory to be obedient aiding and assisting to such person as shall be appointed by us to be our Lieutenant-Governor or Commander-in-Chief of our said territory and its dependencies to whom Wee do therefore by these presents give and grant all and singular the powers and authorities herein granted to be by him executed and enjoyed during our pleasure or until your arrival within our said territory and its dependencies.

General Jurisdiction.

And if upon your death or absence out of our said territory and its dependencies there be no person upon the place commissioned or appointed by us to be our Lieutenant-Governor or Commander-in-Chief of our said territory and its dependencies our will and pleasure is that the officer highest in rank who shall be at the time of your death or absence upon service within the same and who shall take the oaths and subscribe the declaration appointed to be taken and subscribed by you or by the Commander-in-Chief of our said territory and its dependencies shall take upon him the administration of the Government and execute our said commission and instructions and the several powers and authorities therein contained in the same manner and to all intents and purposes as other our Governor or Commander-in-Chief should or ought to do in case of your absence until your return or in all cases untill our further pleasure be known therein.

Provision for vacancy in office.

And Wee do hereby declare ordain and appoint that you the said Arthur Phillip shall and may hold execute and enjoy the office and place of our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief in and over our said territory and its dependencies together with all and singular the powers and authorities hereby granted unto you for and during our will and pleasure.

Term of office.

In witness &c.

Witness ourself at Westminster the second day of April in the twenty-seventh year of our reign.

By writ of Privy Seal.

THE ACT OF PARLIAMENT ESTABLISHING THE COLONY.

(27 George III, 1787.)

WHEREAS by an Act made and passed in the twenty-fourth year of his present Majesty's reign, intituled, An Act for the effectual

24 Geo. III
c. 56.

1787

transportation of felons and other offenders, and to authorise the removal of prisoners in certain cases, and for other purposes therein mentioned, it is enacted that, from and after the passing of that Act, when any person or persons at any Sessions of Oyer or Terminer or Gaol Delivery, or at any Quarter or other General Session of the Peace to be holden for any county, riding, division, city, town, borough, liberty, or place, within that part of Great Britain called England, or at any Great Session to be holden for the County Palatine of Chester, or within the Principality of Wales, shall be lawfully convicted of grand or petit larency, or any other offence for which such person or persons shall be liable by the laws of this realm to be transported, it shall and may be lawful for the Court before which any such person or persons shall be convicted as aforesaid, or any subsequent Court holden at any place for the same county, riding, division, city, town, borough, liberty, or place respectively, with like authority, to order and adjudge that such person or persons so convicted as aforesaid shall be transported beyond the seas for any term of years not exceeding the number of years or terms for which such person or persons is or are or shall be liable by any law to be transported ; and in any such case it shall or may be lawful for his Majesty, by and with the advice of his Privy Council, to declare and appoint to what place or places, part or parts, beyond the seas, either within his Majesty's dominions, or elsewhere out of his Majesty's dominions, such felons or other offenders shall be conveyed or transported : And such Court as aforesaid is thereby authorised and empowered to order such offenders to be transferred to the use of any person or persons, and his or their assigns, who shall contract for the due performance of such transportation.

Court may
order trans-
portation.

Order-in-
Council may
appoint
place of
transporta-
tion.

And when his Majesty, his heirs and successors, shall be pleased to extend mercy to any offender or offenders who hath or have been or shall be convicted of any crime or crimes, for which he, she, or they is or shall be by law excluded from the benefit of clergy, upon condition of transportation to any place or places, part or parts, beyond the seas, either for terms of life or any number of years, and such extension of mercy shall be signified by one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State, it shall be lawful for any Court, having proper authority, to allow such offender or offenders the benefit of a conditional pardon, and (except in cases where such offenders shall be authorised by his Majesty to transport himself, herself, or themselves) to order the transfer of such offender or offenders to any person or persons who shall contract for the due performance of such transportation, and his or their assigns, for such and the same term of years for which any such offender or offenders shall have been ordered to be transported, or for such term of life or years as shall be specified in such condition of transportation.

Court may
order trans-
fer of
convicts to
contractor.

And whereas his Majesty, by two several Orders-in-Council, bearing date respectively on the sixth day of December, 1786, hath judged fit, by and with the advice of his Privy Council, to declare and appoint the place to which certain offenders, named in two lists to the said several Orders-in-Council annexed, should be transported for the time or term in their several sentences mentioned, to be the eastern coast of New South Wales, or some one or other of the islands adjacent.

1787

Order-in-Council appointing New South Wales.

And whereas Sir James Eyre, Knight, and Sir Beaumont Hotham, Knight, two of the Barons of his Majesty's Court of Exchequer of the degree of the coiffe, according to the authority to them given by the said statute, did, on the thirtieth day of December, 1786, order that the said several offenders, in the said several lists to the said several Orders-in-Council annexed, should be transported to the place and for the time and terms aforesaid.

Order of Court for transportation.

And whereas it may be found necessary that a colony and a civil Government should be established in the place to which such convicts shall be transported, under and by virtue of the said Act of Parliament, the said two several Orders of Council, and other the said above-recited Orders, and that a Court of Criminal Jurisdiction should also be established within such place as aforesaid, with authority to proceed in a more summary way than is used within this realm, according to the known and established laws thereof.

Colony and civil government

Criminal Court.

Be it therefore enacted by the King's Most Excellent Majesty, by and with the advice and consent of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal and Commons, in this present Parliament assembled, and by the authority of the same, that his Majesty may, by his Commission under the Great Seal, authorise the person to be appointed Governor, or the Lieutenant-Governor in the absence of the Governor, at such place as aforesaid, to convene from time to time, as occasion may require, a Court of Judicature for the trial and punishment of all such outrages and misbehaviours as, if committed within this realm, would be deemed and taken, according to the laws of this realm, to be treason or misprision thereof, felony or misdemeanor, which Court shall consist of the Judge-Advocate, to be appointed in and for such place, together with six officers of his Majesty's forces by sea or land :

Governor may convene Criminal Court.

How composed.

Which Court shall proceed to try such offenders by calling such offenders respectively before that Court, and causing the charge against him, her, or them respectively to be read over, which charge shall always be reduced into writing, and shall be exhibited to the said Court by the Judge-Advocate, and by examining witnesses upon oath, to be administered by such Court, as well for as against such offenders respectively, and afterwards adjudging by the opinion of the major part of the persons composing such Court, that the party accused is or is not (as the case shall appear to

Method of procedure.

1787 them) guilty of the charge, and by pronouncing judgment therein
Judgment of death or corporal punishment. (as upon a conviction by verdict) of death, if the offence be capital, or of such corporal punishment not extending to capital punishment, as to the said Court shall seem meet : and in cases not capital, by pronouncing judgment of such corporal punishment, not extending to life or limb, as to the said Court shall seem meet.

Provost-Marshal. II. And be it further enacted that the Provost-Marshal, or other officer to be for that purpose appointed by such Governor or Lieutenant-Governor, shall cause due execution of such judgment to be had and made under and according to the warrant of such Governor or Lieutenant-Governor in the absence of the Governor, under his hand and seal, and not otherwise.

In capital cases five must concur. Provided always that execution shall not be had or done on any capital convict or convicts unless five persons present in such Court shall concur in adjudging him, her, or them, so accused and tried as aforesaid, to be respectively guilty, and until the proceedings shall have been transmitted to his Majesty and by him approved.

Court to be a Court of Record. III. And be it so enacted by the authority aforesaid that the said Court shall be a Court of Record, and shall have all such powers as by the laws of England are incident and belonging to a Court of Record.

LETTERS PATENT CONSTITUTING THE COURTS OF LAW.

2 April. George the Third, by the Grace of God, King of Great Britain, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. To all to whom these presents shall come, greeting :—

Orders-in-Council. WHEREAS by virtue of an Act of Parliament passed in the twenty-fourth year of our reign Wee have judged fit, by and with the advice of our Privy Council, by two several orders bearing date respectively on the sixth day of December [and the twenty-second day of December] one thousand seven hundred and eighty-six, to declare and appoint the place to which certain offenders should be transported for the time or terms in their several sentences mentioned to be the eastern coast of New South Wales, or some or other of the islands adjacent.

Colony and civil government. And whereas Wee find it necessary that a colony and civil government should be established in the place to which such convicts shall be transported, and that sufficient provision should be made for the recovery of debts and determining of private causes between party and party in the place aforesaid.

Civil Court. Wee, taking the same into our Royal consideration, and being desirous that justice should be administered to all our subjects, have of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and meer motion thought fit to grant, ordain, direct, and appoint, and by these

presents do for us, our heirs and successors, will, grant, ordain, direct, and appoint that there shall be within the place aforesaid a Court, to be called the COURT OF CIVIL JURISDICTION.

1787

2 April.

And that such Court shall consist of the Judge-Advocate for the time being, together with two fit and proper persons inhabiting the said place, to be appointed from time to time by our Governor, or in case of the death or absence by our Lieutenant-Governor for the time being, or of any two of them (whereof the Judge-Advocate to be one), to which Court Wee do hereby give full power and authority to hold plea of and to hear and determine in a summary way all pleas concerning lands, houses, tenements, and hereditaments, and all manner of interests therein, and all pleas of debt, account, or other contracts, trespasses, and all manner of other personal pleas whatsoever.

The Civil Court—its constitution

and jurisdiction.

And Wee do further will, ordain, and grant to the said Court full power and authority to grant probate of wills and administration of the personal estates of intestates dying within the place or settlement aforesaid.

Probate and administration.

And our further will and pleasure is, and Wee do by these presents for us our heirs and successors direct, ordain, and appoint that, upon complaint to be made in writing to the said Court by any person or persons against any other person or persons residing or being within the said place of any cause or suit, the said Court shall or may issue a warrant in writing under the hand and seal of the said Judge-Advocate for the time being, to be directed to the Provost-Marshal, or such other officer as shall be appointed by our Governor to execute the process thereof, which warrant shall contain shortly the substance of the complaint, and shall either command such officer to summon the defendant or defendants to appear.

Procedure.

Summons to appear.

Or in case the value of the demand be ten pounds or upwards (of which oath shall first be made), command him to bring his, her, or their body or bodies, or take bail for his or their appearance before the said Court at a certain time or place therein to be named, to answer to the said complaint and to find sufficient security for his, her, or their performance of such judgment, sentence, or decree as shall be pronounced thereupon or finally given upon an appeal.

Bail for appearance.

And upon appearance, arrest, or non-appearance, or return by the officer that the defendant or defendants cannot be found, Wee do hereby, for us, our heirs and successors, ordain, direct, and authorize the said Court to proceed to the examination of the matter and cause of such complaint, and upon due proof made thereof, either upon the oath or oaths of any witness or witnesses in writing, to be by him, her, or them subscribed (for which purpose Wee do by these presents empower and require the said Court to administer an oath to such witnesses as shall be produced

Proceeding in Court.

1787

2 April.

by either party, plaintiff or defendant), or by the voluntary confession of such defendant or defendants, to give judgment and sentence according to justice and right.

Execution.

And to award and issue out a warrant or warrants of execution under the hand and seal of the said Judge-Advocate for the time being, for levying the duty adjudged or decreed to the party or parties complainant, together with costs of suit, upon the goods and chattels of such defendant or defendants, and to cause sale to be made of the said goods and chattels, rendering to the party the overplus, if any be.

Imprisonment in default.

And for want of sufficient distress, Wee do hereby for us our heirs and successors give full power and authority to the said Court to imprison the defendant or defendants until satisfaction be made by him, her, or them, to the plaintiff or plaintiffs of the duty decreed, together with the costs; and in case judgment shall be given for the defendant or defendants, Wee do hereby likewise give full power and authority to the said Court to award costs to such defendant or defendants, and to issue like process of execution for the same as in cases where costs are awarded to any plaintiff or plaintiffs.

Costs to defendant.

Appeal to the Governor

And if either party shall find him or themselves aggrieved by any judgment or decree to be given or pronounced by the said Court, our will and pleasure is that he, she, or they shall and may appeal to the Governor of the eastern coast of New South Wales and the parts adjacent, or in case of his death or absence to the Lieutenant-Governor for the time being, whom Wee do hereby empower and authorize to hear and determine the same, and to issue process of summons to answer to such appeal and the like process of execution as the said Court is hereby directed and empowered to issue.

and Privy Council.

And if either party shall find him, her, or themselves aggrieved by the judgment or determination of the said Governor in any case where the debt or thing in demand shall exceed the value of £300, and not otherwise, our will and pleasure is that such party so aggrieved may appeal to us or our heirs and successors in Council.

Time of appeal.

And Wee do further will and ordain that no appeal shall be admitted from the judgment of the said Court, unless the same shall be interposed within eight days after the said judgment, nor from the judgment of the Superior Court unless the same shall be interposed within fourteen days after the judgment of such Superior Court; And further, that the said Court may proceed in a summary way by foreign attachment of goods, debts, and effects of debtors in the hand or possession of other persons residing in the place aforesaid.

Attachment.

And Wee further will and ordain that all complainants at whose suits any persons shall be imprisoned shall make an allowance

to each of such defendants after such rate for every day so long as such defendants shall be kept in prison as the said Court shall direct, and in default of payment thereof for one week such person shall be discharged out of prison, and such discharge out of prison shall be a discharge of the debt, unless the complainant shall before any new proceeding against such defendants pay or tender to them all the arrears of such allowance from the time of the last payment to the time of such new proceeding.

1787

2 April.

Maintenance
of debtor in
prison,

Provided always that such defendant do make oath before the Judge-Advocate, to his satisfaction, that he hath not any estate or effects sufficient to maintain himself with necessaries in the prison, otherwise that such allowance be not made to him.

if unable to
maintain
himself.

And whereas it is necessary that a COURT OF CRIMINAL JURISDICTION should also be established within the colony or settlement aforesaid, with authority to proceed in a more summary way than is used within this realm according to the known and established laws thereof.

Criminal
Court.

And whereas, by an Act of Parliament passed in this present year of our reign, it is enacted that his Majesty may, by his Commission under the Great Seal, authorize the person to be appointed Governor, or the Lieutenant-Governor in the absence of the Governor of such place as aforesaid, to convene from time to time, as occasion may require, a Court of Judicature for the trial and punishment of all such outrages and misbehaviours as if committed within this realm would be deemed and taken according to the laws of this realm to be treason or misprision thereof, felony, or misdemeanour.

Act of
Parliament
recited :—

Which Court shall consist of the Judge-Advocate to be appointed in and for such place, together with six officers of his Majesty's forces by sea or land, which Court shall proceed to try such offenders by calling such offenders respectively before that Court by the Judge-Advocate, and by examining witnesses upon oath to be administered by such Court, as well for as against such offenders respectively, and afterwards adjudging by the opinion of the major part of the persons composing such Court that the party accused is or is not (as the case shall appear to them) guilty of the charge, and by pronouncing judgment (as upon a conviction by verdict) of death, if the offence be capital, or of such *corporal punishment*, not extending to capital punishment, as to the said Court shall seem meet, and in cases not capital by pronouncing judgment of such corporal punishment, not extending to life or limb, as to the said Court shall seem meet.

Governor
authorised
to convene
Court.Sentence of
death or
corporal
punishment.

And that the Provost-Marshal, or other officer to be for that purpose appointed by such Governor or Lieutenant-Governor, shall cause due execution of such judgement to be had and made under and according to the warrant of such Governor or Lieutenant-Governor, in the absence of the Governor, under his hand and seal, and not otherwise.

Execution of
judgment.

1787

2 April.

Capital
cases.

Provided always that execution shall not be had or done on any capital convict or convicts unless five persons present in such Court shall concur in adjudging him, her, or them, so accused and tried as aforesaid, to be respectively guilty until the proceedings shall have been transmitted to his Majesty and by him approved : And that the said Court shall be a Court of Record, and shall have all such powers as by the laws of England are incident and belonging to a Court of Record.

Court
created.

Now know ye that Wee, upon full consideration of the premises and of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, have thought fit to grant, direct, and appoint, and by these presents Wee do accordingly, for us, our heirs and successors, grant, direct, ordain, and appoint that there shall be within the settlement and colony aforesaid a Court which shall be called the Court of Criminal Jurisdiction ; and Wee do hereby create, direct, and constitute the said Court of Criminal Jurisdiction to be a Court of Record, and that our said Court of Criminal Jurisdiction shall have all such powers as are incident to a Court of Record by the laws of that part of our Kingdom of Great Britain called England.

Its
constitution

And Wee further will, ordain, and appoint that the said Court of Criminal Jurisdiction shall consist of our Judge-Advocate for the time being, together with six officers of our sea and land service, as our Governor, or in case of his death or absence our Lieutenant-Governor, shall, by precept issued under his hand and seal, convene from time to time for that purpose, and that the said Court of Criminal Jurisdiction shall have power to enquire of, hear, determine, and punish all treasons or misprisions thereof, murders, felonies, forgeries, perjuries, trespasses, and other crimes whatsoever committed in the place or places aforesaid, such punishment so to be inflicted being according to the laws of that part of our Kingdom of Great Britain called England, as nearly as may be, considering and allowing for the circumstances and situation of the place and settlement aforesaid and the inhabitants.

and juris-
diction.Conduct of
trials.

And it is our further will and pleasure that our said Court of Criminal Jurisdiction shall proceed to try all offenders by calling them respectively before such Court, and causing the charge or charges against him, her, or them, respectively, when reduced into writing and exhibited by our Judge-Advocate, to be read over to such offender or offenders respectively, and that the said Court shall adjudge by the opinion of the major part of the persons composing the same as aforesaid that the party accused is guilty or not guilty of the charge so exhibited as aforesaid.

Sentence of
death.

And, if adjudged guilty, that the Court shall proceed to pronounce judgement of death, if the offence be capital, in like manner as if the prisoner had been found guilty by verdict of a jury in that part of our Kingdom of Great Britain called England, or by pronouncing judgment of such corporal punishment, not extending

to capital punishment, as to the said Court, or the major part of the persons comprising the same, shall seem meet ; and in cases not capital by the laws aforesaid by pronouncing judgment of such corporal punishment, not extending to life or limb, as the said Court, or the major part of the persons composing the same, shall seem meet.

1787

2 April.

Corporal
punishment.

And it is our further will and pleasure and Wee do hereby ordain, direct, and appoint that our Provost-Marshall, or such other officer as shall be appointed for that purpose by our Governor, or in case of his death or absence by our Lieutenant-Governor for the time being, shall cause due execution to be had and made of such judgments as aforesaid, according to the warrant of our Governor, or in his absence of our Lieutenant-Governor for the time being, under their hands and seals respectively, and not otherwise.

Provost-
Marshal.Execution of
judgments.

And Wee do hereby ordain and direct that execution of any judgment of death shall not be had or done on any offender or offenders unless five persons present sitting in judgment in our said Court of Criminal Jurisdiction shall concur in adjudging such offender or offenders so accused and tried as aforesaid to be respectively guilty, until the proceedings in the trial of such offender or offenders shall have been transmitted to us, our heirs and successors, and our or their pleasure shall have been signified thereupon.

In capital
cases five
must
concur.

And that execution be not done in any capital case whatever without the consent of our said Governor, or in case of his death or absence, of our Lieutenant-Governor ; and in case execution shall be suspended, that the said Governor or Lieutenant-Governor shall apply to us, our heirs and successors, for our or their direction therein.

Warrant for
execution.

And our further will and pleasure is that all and every the members of our said Court of Civil Jurisdiction respectively shall, before they proceed to sit in judgment, severally make oath well and truly to try the several issues brought before them, and to give true judgment according to the evidence ; and that all and every the members of our said Court of Criminal Jurisdiction shall, in like manner, make oath to make true deliverance between us, our heirs and successors, and the several prisoners who shall by them be tried, and to give a true judgment according to the evidence.

Members of
the Court
to be sworn.

And Wee do hereby give full power and authority to our Judge-Advocate for the time being to administer such oaths to the respective members of our said several Courts.

by the
Judge-
Advocate.

And further know ye that Wee, for preserving the peace of our said settlement and the islands thereunto adjacent, of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and meer motion have granted, ordained, directed, and appointed, and by these presents do grant, ordain, direct, and appoint, that our present and all our future Governors and Lieutenant-Governors, and our Judge-Advocate for the time being, shall be Justices of the Peace within the said place or settlement.

Justices of
the Peace.

1787

2 April.

Powers of
Justices of
the Peace.Authority of
Letters
Patent.To remain in
force until
revoked.

And that all and every such Justice and Justices of the Peace shall have the same power to keep the peace, arrest, take bail, bind to good behaviour, suppress and punish riots, and to do all other matters and things with respect to the inhabitants residing or being in the place and settlement aforesaid as Justices of the Peace have within that part of Great Britain called England, within their respective jurisdictions.

And these our Letters Patent or the enrollment or exemplification thereof shall be, as well unto the said Courts respectively as unto all and every person or persons whomsoever, a sufficient warrant and discharge from time to time for all and whatever they shall do or execute in pursuance of our Royal will and pleasure hereinbefore declared.

And, lastly, our will and pleasure is, and Wee do hereby declare, that this our charter shall be and remain in force only until Wee shall be pleased to revoke and determine the same.

In witness whereof Wee have caused these our Letters to be made Patent.

Witness ourself, at Westminster, the second day of April, in the twenty-seventh year of our reign.

By Writ of Privy Seal.

YORKE.

VICE-ADMIRALTY COURT.

4 April.

At the Court of St. James's, the 4th of April, 1787.

Present :—

The King's Most Excellent Majesty.

Lord President.

Lord Sydney.

Earl of Aylesford.

Sir Geo. Yonge.

Viscount Hinchinbroke.

Henry Dundas, Esq.

Lord Herbert.

John Chas. Villiers, Esq.

WHEREAS there was this day read at the Board a memorial from the Right Honorable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, dated the 27th of last month, in the words following, viz. :—

Governor.

Lord Sydney having acquainted us that your Majesty has been pleased to appoint Captain Arthur Phillip to be Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the territory called New South Wales, extending from the northern cape or extremity of the coast, called Cape York, in the latitude of ten degrees thirty-seven minutes south, to the southern extremity of the said territory of New South Wales, or South Cape, in the latitude of forty-three degrees thirty-nine minutes south, and of all country inland to the westward, as far as the one hundred and thirty-fifth degree of east longitude, reckoning from the meridian of Greenwich, including all the islands adjacent in the Pacific Ocean within the latitudes aforesaid of 10° 37' south and 43° 39' south, and that it is your

Majesty's pleasure we should grant him such powers as have been usually granted to the Governors of your Majesty's colonies in America; we beg leave to represent to your Majesty that the powers usually granted by this Board to the Governors of your Majesty's colonies in America are those of Vice-Admiral, but that we are empowered by our commission to constitute Vice-Admirals at such places only where Vice-Admirals have usually been appointed by the High Admiral. We do, therefore, beg leave to submit to your Majesty whether it may not be necessary that we should be empowered to appoint a Vice-Admiral and also a Judge and other officers requisite for a Court of Vice-Admiralty within the territory called New South Wales.

1787

4 April.

Vice-Admiral.

His Majesty, taking the said memorial into consideration, was pleased, with the advice of his Privy Council, to approve of what is therein proposed, and to order, as it is hereby ordered, that a commission be passed under the great seal granting authority to the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty to appoint a Vice-Admiral, and also a Judge and other officers requisite to form a Court of Vice-Admiralty within the said territory called New South Wales; and the Right Honourable Lord Sydney, one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State, is to cause a warrant to be prepared for his Majesty's royal signature, in order to pass a commission under the great seal accordingly.*

Vice-Admiralty Court.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

My Dear Sir,

[London] April 11th, 1787.

11 April.

When you find a quarter of an hour, be so good as to give me a line to the Navy Board, sufficiently explicit to prevent any further delays with respect to the ordinary caps for the convicts; one hhd. of porter in bottles, as a present to the commanding officer in the island from which we are to procure stock, and ducats to the value of thirty pounds for the same purpose. The beer may be bought at Portsmouth, and I will find room for it on board the Sirius.

More stores required.

A line likewise is necessary to the Admiralty, that I may have an order to receive on board the Sirius the Commissary and the servant to the Judge-Advocate; likewise for victualling the 40 marines' wives, and to desire that sour krout and portable soup may be ordered for the convicts that may be sick. There is some krout in store at the Victualling Office. I am, &c.,

The Commissary.

PHILLIP.

P.S.—By some mistake 109 women and children are put on board the Lady Penrhyn, tho' that ship was only intended to carry 102, and with propriety should not have more than $\frac{2}{3}$ of that number.

Overcrowding.

* Letters Patent constituting the Vice-Admiralty Court were issued 5th May, 1787. Post, p. 95.

1787

MAJOR ROSS TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

13 April.

Sir,

Portsmouth, 13th April, 1787.

Sickness
among the
marines.

I have to request you will please to inform their Lordships that the sickness which has, and still does prevail among the marine detachment embarked on board the *Alexander*, transport, gives me a great degree of concern. Since the time of their first embarkation no less than one serjeant, one drummer, and fourteen privates have been sent sick on shore from her, some of whom, I am informed, are since dead.

The cause.

How far the cause of this sickness may be of a malignant kind is not for me to say, but I am apt to suppose that the situation in which the marines are placed in that ship is of itself sufficient to cause the disorder with which they are afflicted.

Unhealthy
arrange-
ments.

I beg leave to observe, for their Lordships' information, that the place allotted for the marines on board the *Alexander* is upon a deck, and immediately under where the seamen are birthed. In this place they are excluded from all air, but what passes through the hatchway leading from the seamen's birth, which must in some degree render it putrid before it reaches the others.

Fears for
the future.

Should what is above hinted at be the cause of the present sickness on board of her, how much more have we to dread the fatal effects of it in the more southern latitudes.

No remedy.

I have conversed with the agent for the transports on this subject, who is perfectly of my way of thinking; but in the present state of that ship does not see how the evil can be remedied.

Reduction of
numbers.

He this morning proposed, if it could possibly be done, to have the convicts on board the *Alexander* reduced in numbers, so as to permit a sufficient space in the fore part of the ship to be taken away from what was allotted for them, and converted into a birth for the seamen, the marines then removed to where the seamen now are, and the present birth of the marines converted into the only thing it is fit for, the stowing away provisions.

No rations
for the
children.

You will likewise please to inform their Lordships how much I am concerned at finding myself under a necessity of mentioning again to them the children of the marines embarked in the transports, which have not yet been ordered to be victualled. What leads me to trouble their Lordships with it at this time is a scene of distress that I was witness to yesterday when visiting the transports at the Motherbank. In one of them I found a marine, his wife, and two children living upon a ration and a half of provisions. I feel myself the more hurt at this from my having when last at Plymouth, and thinking myself authorized to do so, informed that part of the detachment that their wives and children were to be victualled in a certain proportion.

A hard case.

I am, &c.,

R. Ross, Major.

RETURN of the Botany Bay detachment of Marines, the number of wives and children, and the names of the ships on board of which they are embarked, with the number on board of each ship. April, the 15th, 1787.

1787

15 April

The First Fleet.
1.—The marines.

Ships' Names.	Commandant.	Captains.	Capt.-Lieutenants.	First Lieutenants.	Second Lieuts.	Adjutant.	Qr.-master.	Judge-Advocate.	Serjeants.	Corporals.	Drummers.	Privates.	Wives.	Children		Total on each Ship.
														Male.	Female.	
H.M. ship Sirius	1	..	..	2	..	1	1	..	1	..	2	6	4	..	..	16
Alexander, transport	..	..	..	2	..	..	..	..	2	3	1	23	1	..	..	36
Charlotte do.	..	..	1	2	..	..	..	..	3	3	1	34	6	1	..	51
Scarborough do.	..	1	..	2	..	..	..	..	2	2	1	26	..	..	..	34
Friendship do.	..	..	1	..	2	..	..	..	2	3	..	36	3	4	1	52
Prince of Wales do.	..	..	..	2	..	..	..	..	2	2	1	24	16	2	4	53
Lady Penrhyn do.	..	1	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	3	..	..	..	6
Sick on shore	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	2	3	..	..	..	5
General Total	1	2	2	9	3	1	1	..	12	12	8	160	30	7	5	253

RETURN of the male, female, and children convicts embarked for Botany Bay, distinguishing the number of each on board each transport. April, the 15th, 1789.

2.—The convicts.

Ships' Names.	Male.	Female.	Male Children.	Female Children.	Total each Ship.
Alexander, transport	198	..	..	..	198
Charlotte do.	86	20	1	1	108
Scarborough do.	205	..	..	..	205
Friendship do.	75	1	3	..	97
Prince of Wales do.	..	19	..	1	11
Lady Penrhyn do.	1	1040	2	3	110
General Total...	565	153	6	5	729

UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN TO SIR C. MIDDLETON.*

Dear Sir,

Whitehall, 18th April, 1787.

18 April.

I send you enclosed copies of two letters† from Major Ross, Lieutenant-Governor of the new intended settlement, representing the unhealthy state of the party of marines embarked on board the Alexander, transport, and the distressed state of the wives and children of the detachment intended to proceed in the transport ships to Botany Bay. Lord Sydney will be obliged to you if you will take any measures which you may think advisable for the better accommodation of the Alexander's party, and that you will be so good as to give orders that the women and children of

The sick marines.

Women and children.

* A private letter.

† One of these letters will be found on page 78; the other is not recorded.

- 1787** the marines may be supplied with the same proportion of provisions as hath been usually allowed to the women and children of troops during their passage, which Major Ross states in one of his letters.*
- 18 April.** I find from Captain Phillip that some of the convicts are almost destitute of cloathing, and that it will be necessary to supply them with such articles as are needful immediately.
- Convicts' clothing.** Captain Hunter and Lieutenant Shortland have been desired to inquire into their wants and to supply them, and Lord Sydney will be glad if the quantity which they may issue out of the general stock be replaced, and that such a number of worsted nightcaps be also issued as may be requisite for the supply of such of the convicts whose hair it may be necessary to cut off.
- Wants to be supplied.** I must beg of you to give me credit for official representation through the proper channel upon these points, which you shall have as soon as the business is finished. I hope this will be the last letter, except the general sweeping one, which I may have occasion to trouble you with upon this business, which I must suppose has given you nearly as much perplexity as it has your faithful humble servant.
- A perplexing business.** I hope Phillip will get away on Saturday; all his civil commissions, I expect, will pass the Great Seal on Friday.
- Phillip's departure.** The children of the women convicts, Lord Sydney thinks, should have a small proportion of provisions, which his Lordship begs you will order; there are not above ten.
- Provisions for children.** I omitted to mention that about £30, in ducates, will be necessary for Captain Phillip to purchase stock, and which Lord Sydney wishes may be supplied to him; and also that he may be allowed to purchase a hhd. of strong beer, in bottles—the latter he can easily procure at Portsmouth; these articles will be requisite for the obtaining stock at some of the islands he may have occasion to have recourse to. There is no oatmeal on board the convict ships to make gruel for the sick; it is a very necessary article, and Lord Sydney thinks that a couple of casks should be put on board each of the convict ships for that purpose, to be considered as surgeon's necessaries.
- Stock.** I am, &c.,
- Beer.** EVAN NEPEAN.
- Oatmeal**

TRIAL OF PIRATES.

20 April.

At the Court of St. James's, the 20th of April, 1787.

Present:—

The King's Most Excellent Majesty.

Lord Chancellor.

Duke of Richmond.

Lord President.

Lord Sydney.

Lord Privy Seal.

John Chas. Villiers, Esq.

WHEREAS there was this day read at the Board a report from the Right Honourable the Lords of the Committee of Council ap-

* *Note by transcriber.*—Major Ross acknowledged this attention to his request in letters to Mr. Nepean.

pointed for the consideration of all matters relating to trade and foreign plantations, dated the 13th of this instant, proposing that the draught of a commission should be prepared for the tryal of pirates within the Government of New South Wales, the description of which government is herewith annexed, marked A. His Majesty, taking the said report into consideration, was pleased, with the advice of his Privy Council, to approve thereof, and accordingly to order, as it is hereby ordered, that his Majesty's Advocate-General, with the Advocate of the Admiralty, do forthwith prepare and lay before his Majesty at this Board the draught of a commission, in order to be passed under the seal of his Majesty's High Court of Admiralty, for the tryal of pirates within the said new Government, under the act of the 11th and 12th of King William the Third; and that they do insert therein the names of the persons contained in the annexed list marked B, as commissioners for carrying the said commission into execution.

1787

20 April.

Territory.

Commission.

Commissioners.

A.

The territory called New South Wales, extending from the Northern Cape or extremity of the coast, called Cape York, in the latitude of ten degrees thirty-seven minutes south, to the southern extremity of the said territory of New South Wales or South Cape, in the latitude of forty-three degrees thirty-nine minutes south, and of all the country inland to the westward as far as the one hundred and thirty-fifth degree of east longitude, reckoning from the meridian of Greenwich, including all islands adjacent in the Pacific Ocean within the latitudes aforesaid of 10° 37' south and 43° 39' south.

New South Wales.

B.

List of names to be inserted in the Commission for the Trial of Pirates on the coast of New South Wales.

Arthur Phillip, Esq., Governor, or the Governor for the time being.

Members of the court.

Robert Ross, Esq., Lieutenant-Governor, or the Lieutenant-Governor for the time being.

Andrew Miller, Esq., Commissary of Stores and Provisions, or the Commissary of Stores and Provisions for the time being.

Augustus Alt, Esq., Surveyor of Lands, or the Surveyor of Lands for the time being.

John Hunter, Esq., Captain of the Sirius.

William Bradley, Esq., 1st Lieutenant.

Philip Gidley King, Esq., 2nd Lieutenant.

Geo. William Maxwell, Esq., 3rd Lieutenant.

Henry Lidgbird Ball, Esq., Lieutenant and Commander of the Supply, armed tender.

And all other captains and commanders of his Majesty's ships who are or shall be within the Admiralty jurisdiction of the territory of New South Wales.

1787

LORD SYDNEY TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.*

20 April.

Sir,

Whitehall, 20th April, 1787.

Phillip's
queries.

Your letter to Mr. Nepean, of the 1st of March, inclosing a copy of a letter to you from the Secretary of the Admiralty in answer to certain queries which you had desired might be submitted to the consideration of the Lord Commissioners of that Board, have been laid before me, together with your observations upon the instructions, which have been prepared to pass under the Royal Sign Manual for your guidance in the exercise of the government of New South Wales.

Virtuallling
arrange-
ments.

With regard to the 1st and 2nd queries, to which the Admiralty have declined to give any answer, and referred you to the Treasury Board, I am to acquaint you that their Lordships have caused contracts to be entered into for the virtuallling of the marines, their wives and children, as well as the convicts, who are to take their passage in the transport ships; and that any supplies which it may be necessary to provide for their maintenance during the voyage will be obtained and paid for by the contractor or his agent.

Queries
already
answered.

The 3rd, 4th, 5th, and 6th queries are, I observe, fully answered in the Secretary of the Admiralty's letter to you; and the 7th query is answered in the first paragraph of this letter.

Hospital
ship.

8th. In case any of the convicts should be seized with an infectious distemper, a proper place is to be set apart in the ship on board of which they may be embarked for their accommodation, and if the disease should so spread itself as to render it absolutely necessary that the infected people should be removed away from the other convicts, one of the transport ships may be converted into an hospital ship. But this step, you will observe, is not to be taken except upon urgent necessity.

Supplies.

9th. If any difficulties should be found by the masters of the transports in procuring supplies either of stores or provisions which they may stand in need of at places where the convoy may touch, the agent appointed by the Navy Board is instructed in what manner to proceed on such occasions.

The 10th query appears to be fully replied to by the Secretary to the Admiralty.

Emolu-
ments.

11th. Your instructions under the Royal Sign Manual point out in what manner the emoluments which would arise to you from the Sirius are, in case you should be able to send her home, to be paid to you.

Naval
settlers.

12th and 13th. The Lords of the Admiralty will authorize any number, not exceeding forty, of the petty officers and men belonging to the Sirius who may be desirous of remaining at New South Wales, upon that ship's return to Europe.

The 14th query is answered by the Secretary of the Admiralty. All the queries which you submitted to the Admiralty being now fully explained, I am to acquaint you, in reply to your letter of

* See letter from Secretary Stephens. Ante, p. 48.

the 1st March, and your observations upon your instructions,* that it is not thought advisable under the present circumstances of the service that you should wear any distinguishing pendant; but during the absence of the Sirius from the seat of government, or upon her return to Europe, proper instructions will be given to the commander of the tender, or of any other ship or vessel which may arrive at the settlement, junior to you in rank, to obey such orders and directions as they may from time to time receive from you for their future proceedings.

1787

20 April.

No distinguishing pendant.

Upon the death or suspension of any civil officers of the Government you are at liberty to appoint any proper person for the execution of the duties of such office until his Majesty's pleasure be known, and to send such suspended officer to England by the first convenient opportunity which may offer, with your reasons for such suspension; and also to exchange marines from the garrison and the Sirius, or Supply, tender, if you should judge it for the good of the service so to do.

Power to appoint officers.

There can be no objection to your establishing any part of the territory or islands upon the coast of New South Wales, in the neighbourhood of Botany Bay, which you may consider as more advantageously situated for the principal settlement; but at the same time you must understand that you are not allowed to delay the disembarkation of the establishment upon your arrival on the coast upon the pretence of searching after a more eligible place than Botany Bay.

Choice of settlement.

It will be proposed to Parliament in a few days to fix your salary as Governor at £1,000 per annum nett, which, with the pay of the Sirius, is judged to be a proper allowance for the support of the stations you are appointed to fill. You will also be allowed a contingent charge of 5/- per diem for the pay of a secretary, and £20 per annum for stationery.

The Governor's salary.

With regard to the compensation you solicit by way of table money, I am to inform you that no allowance whatever of that sort can be granted to you.

No table-money.

You will receive herewith a copy of a letter from the Secretary of the Treasury with respect to the dispatch of the transport ships after their arrival at Botany Bay, the purport of which you will use your utmost endeavour to comply with. I am, &c.,

The transports.

SYDNEY.

MAJOR ROSS TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.†

My Dear Sir,

Portsmouth, 22nd April, 1787.

22 April.

I understand from Captain Phillip that I am appointed a Judge in the Vice-Admiralty Court for our new settlement. I have to return you my best thanks for this appointment; but I,

Ross and his friend.

* Ante, p. 54.

† A private letter.

1787

22 April.

at the same time, cannot but sincerely lament that something could not have been hit upon in all the late appointments for James Campbell.*

The late honour confer'd upon me would have been well bestow'd upon him, and tho' I have not a wish to resigne it on any other terms than the putting him in possession of something, tho' without emolument, that would show his friends he was not totally neglected in this business. I would in that case wish it done. I am sure his abilities and length of service intitle him to a share in such things as are to be given in a new settlement, where it is probable his judgement may be of the greatest use.

An appeal.

If the above cannot possibly be done for him, do, for God's sake, endeavour at something else for him. You know Capt. Gould's appointment in Nova Scotia, and is not such an appointment absolutely for us? If it is, is there no such thing as getting him something of the same kind?

Honour,
not gain.

An addition to his present income is not, I am convinced, his principle object. What I myself wish for him, and what is I am sure his own only wish, is some kind of appointment that would give him some little consequence in himself, as well as in the eyes of his brother-officers going with him, all of whom with respect to length of service are but of yesterday.

You, my dear sir, have no idea how much I am interested in this affair, nor how very severely I shall feel myself mortified if something or other cannot be done for him before we quit this country.

I am, &c.,

R. Ross.

PHILLIP'S INSTRUCTIONS.

25 April

At the Court at St. James's, the 25th April, 1787.

Present:—

The King's Most Excellent Majesty.

Lord President.

Lord Sydney.

Marquis of Carmarthen.

William Pitt, Esq.

Lord Chamberlain.

Sir George Yonge.

Lord Onslow.

WHEREAS there was this day read at the Board a report from the Right Honorable the Lords of the Committee of Council, appointed for the consideration of all matters relating to Trade and Foreign Plantations, upon the draught of instructions for Captain Arthur Phillip, whom his Majesty has been pleased to appoint Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the territory of New South Wales. His Majesty taking the said report and draught of instructions into consideration, was pleased, with the advice of his Privy Council, to approve of the said draught of instructions, and to order, as it is hereby ordered, that the

* Captain of Marines in Major Ross's detachment

Right Honorable Lord Sydney, one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State, do cause the said draught of instructions, which are herewith annexed, to be prepared for his Majesty's signature.

1787

25 April,

G.R.

INSTRUCTIONS for our trusty and well-beloved Arthur Phillip, Esq., our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief in and over our territory of New South Wales and its dependencies, or to the Lieutenant-Governor or Commander-in-Chief of the said territory for the time being. Given at our Court at St. James's, the 25th day of April, 1787, in the twenty-seventh year of our reign.

WITH these our instructions you will receive our commission* under our Great Seal constituting and appointing you to be our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of our territory called New South Wales, extending from the northern cape or extremity of the coast, called Cape York, in latitude of ten degrees thirty-seven minutes south, to the southern extremity of the said territory of New South Wales or South Cape, in the latitude of forty-three degrees thirty-nine minutes south, and of all the country inland to the westward, as far as the one hundred and thirty-fifth degree of east longitude, reckoning from the meridian of Greenwich, including all the islands adjacent in the Pacific Ocean, within the latitudes aforesaid, 10° 37' south and 43° 39' south: and of all towns, garrisons, castles, forts, and all other fortifications or other military works which may be hereafter erected upon the said territory, or any of the said islands, with directions to obey such orders and instructions as shall from time to time be given to you, under our signet and sign manual, or by our order in our Privy Council.

Commission
as Governor.

Territory.

Instruc-
tions.

You are, therefore, to fit yourself with all convenient speed, and to hold yourself in readiness to repair to your said command, and being arrived, to take upon you the execution of the trust we have reposed in you, as soon as conveniently may be, with all due solemnity to cause our said Commission under our Great Seal of Great Britain constituting you our Governor and Commander-in-Chief as aforesaid to be read and published.

Commission
to be read in
public.

And whereas we have ordered that about 600 male and 180 female convicts now under sentence or order of transportation whose names are contained in the list hereunto annexed should be removed out of the gaols and other places of confinement in this our kingdom, and be put on board of the several transport ships which have been taken up for their reception, it is our royal will and pleasure that as soon as the said convicts, the several persons composing the civil establishments, and the

Order for
transporta-
tion.

* Ante, p. 61.

1787

25 April.

stores, provisions, &c., provided for their use, shall be put on board the Supply, tender, and the transport ships named in the margin,* and be in readiness to depart, that you do take them under your protection and proceed in the Sirius with the said tender and transports to the port on the coast of New South Wales, situated in the latitude of 33° 41', called by the name of Botany Bay, agreeably to the instructions with which you will be furnished by the Commissioners of our Admiralty, in pursuance of our royal commands already signified to them.

Botany Bay.

Wine to be
taken on
board.

Bills to be
drawn.

And whereas it may happen upon your passage to New South Wales that you may find it necessary and expedient to call with the ships and vessels under your convoy at the island of Teneriffe, at the Rio de Janeiro, and also at the Cape of Good Hope, for supplies of water and other refreshments for the voyage, it is our further will and pleasure that you do upon your arrival at the former of those places take on board any of the ships of the convoy which you may think proper such quantities of wine as may be requisite for the supply of the said settlement, according to the instructions with which the Commissary of Stores and Provisions will be furnished by the Commissioners of our Treasury, taking care that the quantities purchased do not exceed the proportions to be issued to the several persons composing the said settlement entitled thereto, agreeably to the said instructions, for the time to which they have confined the supply of that article; and for the amount of such purchases you will direct the Commissary to draw bills of exchange upon them properly certified by you, or our Lieut.-Governor of the said intended settlement, with the other usual attestations that the same has been obtained at the most reasonable rates, transmitting at the same time an account thereof to them, in order that you may be released from any imprest which such purchases might occasion.

Seed-grain,
black cattle,
sheep, &c.

Notwithstanding there is already a considerable quantity of corn and other seed-grain put on board the ships of the convoy, probably more than may be immediately necessary for raising supplies for the settlement, we are disposed to guard as much as possible against accidents which may happen, or injuries which these articles might sustain during the passage: It is, therefore, our further will and pleasure that you, upon your arrival at any of the places you may have occasion to touch at, endeavour to obtain such further quantities of seed-grain as you may think requisite for the tillage of the land at the place of your destination: And also that you do take on board any number of black cattle, sheep, goats, or hogs which you can procure, and the ships of the convoy can contain, in order to propagate the breed of these animals for the general benefit of the intended settlement, causing the Commissary of Stores and Provisions to draw

* Alexander, Charlotte, Scarborough, Friendship, Prince of Wales, Lady Penrhyn.

bills for the same as is before directed for such supplies, as well as for any fresh provisions which it may be requisite to procure for the use of the marines or convicts at those places, and transmitting information to the Commissioners of our Treasury of such proceedings.

1787

25 April.

And whereas it is intended that several of the transport ships and victuallers which are to accompany you to New South Wales should be employed in bringing home cargoes of tea and other merchandize, from China, for the use of the East India Company, provided they can arrive at Canton in due time, whereby a very considerable saving would arise to the public in the freight of these vessels: It is our royal will and pleasure that upon your arrival at Botany Bay, on the said coast of New South Wales, you do cause every possible exertion to be made for disembarking the officers and men composing the civil and military establishments, together with the convicts, stores, provisions, &c., and having so done, you are to discharge all the said transports or victuallers, in order that such of them as may be engaged by the East India Company may proceed to China, and that the rest may return home. You will, however, take care, before the said transport ships are discharged, to obtain an assignment to you or the Governor-in-Chief for the time being, from the masters of them, of the servitude of the several convicts for the remainder of the times or terms specified in their several sentences or orders of transportation.

Transports bound to China

to be promptly unloaded.

Assignment of servitude to the Governor.

According to the best information which we have obtained, Botany Bay appears to be the most eligible situation upon the said coast for the first establishment, possessing a commodious harbour and other advantages which no part of the coast hitherto discovered affords. It is therefore our will and pleasure that you do immediately upon your landing, after taking measures for securing yourself and the people who accompany you as much as possible from any attacks or interruptions of the natives of that country, as well as for the preservation and safety of the public stores, proceed to the cultivation of the land, distributing the convicts for that purpose in such manner, and under such inspectors or overseers, and under such regulations as may appear to you to be necessary and best calculated for procuring supplies of grain and ground provisions. The assortment of tools and utensils which have been provided for the use of the convicts and other persons who are to compose the intended settlement are to be distributed according to your discretion, and according to the employment assigned to the several persons. In the distribution, however, you will use every proper degree of economy, and be careful that the Commissary so transmit an account of the issues from time to time to the Commissioners of our Treasury, to enable them to judge of the propriety or expediency of granting further

Botany Bay.

Cultivation of the land.

Tools and utensils.

Economy.

1787

25 April.

supplies. The clothing of the convicts and the provisions issued to them, and the civil and military establishments, must be accounted for in the same manner.

The Sirius
and Supply

And whereas the Commissioners of our Admiralty have appointed Capt. Hunter to repair on board the Sirius, to assist you in the execution of your duty, and to take the command of the ship whenever you may see occasion to detach her from the settlement, and also to station the Supply, tender, under your orders, and to be assisting to you upon occasional services after your arrival. And whereas it is our royal intention that measures should be taken, in addition to those which are specified in the article of these our instructions, for obtaining supplies of live stock, and having, in consequence of such intention, caused a quantity of arms and other articles of merchandize to be provided and sent out in the ships under your convoy, in order to barter with the natives either on the territory of New South Wales or the islands adjacent: It is our will and pleasure that as soon as either of these vessels can be spared with safety from the settlement you do detach one or both of them for that purpose, confining their intercourse as much as possible to such parts as are not in the possession or under the jurisdiction of other European powers.

to go to the
islands for
live stock.

Amplly
supplied
with
vegetables.

Caution as to
slaughtering
stock.

The increase of the stock of animals must depend entirely upon the measures you may adopt on the outset for their preservation; and as the settlement will be amply supplied with vegetable productions, and most likely with fish, fresh provisions, excepting for the sick and convalescents, may in a great degree be dispensed with. For these reasons it will become you to be extremely cautious in permitting any cattle, sheep, hogs, &c., intended for propagating the breed of such animals to be slaughtered until a competent stock may be acquired, to admit of your supplying the settlement from it with animal food without having further recourse to the places from whence such stock may have originally been obtained.

Public stock.

More
convicts
to follow
shortly.

It is our will and pleasure that the productions of all descriptions acquired by the labour of the convicts should be considered as a public stock, which we so far leave to your disposal that such parts thereof as may be requisite for the subsistence of the said convicts and their families, or the subsistence of the civil and military establishments of the settlement, may be applied by you to that use. The remainder of such productions you will reserve as a provision for a further number of convicts, which you may expect will shortly follow you from hence, to be employed under your direction in the manner pointed out in these our instructions to you.

From the natural increase of corn and other vegetable food from a common industry, after the ground has once been cultivated, as

well as of animals, it cannot be expedient that all the convicts which accompany you should be employed in attending only to the object of provisions. And, as it has been humbly represented to us that advantages may be derived from the flax-plant which is found in the islands not far distant from the intended settlement, not only as a means of acquiring clothing for the convicts and other persons who may become settlers, but from its superior excellence for a variety of maritime purposes, and as it may ultimately become an article of export, it is, therefore, our will and pleasure that you do particularly attend to its cultivation, and that you do send home by every opportunity which may offer samples of this article, in order that a judgment may be formed whether it may not be necessary to instruct you further upon this subject.

1787

25 April.

Flax.

Samples to be sent home.

And whereas we are desirous that some further information should be obtained of the several ports or harbours upon the coast, and the islands contiguous thereto, within the limits of your government, you are, whenever the *Sirius* or the *Supply*, tender, can conveniently be spared, to send one, or both of them, upon that service.

Exploration of the coast.

Norfolk Island, situated in the lat.* , and long.* east from Greenwich about* , being represented as a spot which may hereafter become useful, you are, as soon as circumstances will admit of it, to send a small establishment thither to secure the same to us, and prevent it being occupied by the subjects of any other European power; and you will cause any remarks or observations which you may obtain in consequence of this instruction to be transmitted to our Principal Secretary of State for Plantation Affairs for our information.

Norfolk Island to be settled.

And whereas it may happen, when the settlement shall be brought into some state of regulation, that the service of the *Sirius* may not be necessary at the said settlement, and as we are desirous to diminish as much as possible the expences which the intended establishment occasions, you will, whenever the service of the said ship can be dispensed with, order Capt. Hunter to return with her to England. And as from such an arrangement the emoluments of your station will be diminished, it is our royal intention that the same shall be made good to you by bills to be drawn by you upon the Commissioners of our Treasury.

Sirius to return to England.

You are to endeavour by every possible means to open an intercourse with the natives, and to conciliate their affections, enjoining all our subjects to live in amity and kindness with them. And if any of our subjects shall wantonly destroy them, or give them any unnecessary interruption in the exercise of their several occupations, it is our will and pleasure that you do cause such offenders to be brought to punishment according to the degree of the offence. You will endeavour to procure an account of the numbers inhabiting the neighbourhood of the intended settle-

The natives to be protected.

1787

25 April.

ment, and report your opinion to one of our Secretaries of State in what manner our intercourse with these people may be turned to the advantage of this colony.

Religion.

And it is further our royal will and pleasure that you do by all proper methods enforce a due observance of religion and good order among the inhabitants of the new settlement, and that you do take such steps for the due celebration of publick worship as circumstances will permit.

Public worship.

Women to be brought from the islands.

And whereas, as from the great disproportion of female convicts to those of the males who are put under your superintendence, it appears advisable that a further number of the latter should be introduced into the new intended settlement, you are, whenever the *Sirius* or the tender shall touch at any of the islands in those seas, to instruct their commanders to take on board any of the women who may be disposed to accompany them to the said settlement.* You will, however, take especial care that the officers who may happen to be employed upon this service do not, upon any account, exercise any compulsive measures, or make use of fallacious pretences, for bringing away any of the said women from the places of their present residence.

Emancipation.

And whereas we have by our Commission, bearing date [2nd April] 1787, given and granted upon you full power and authority to emancipate and discharge from their servitude any of the convicts under your superintendence who shall, from their good conduct and a disposition to industry, be deserving of favour: It is our will and pleasure that in every such case you do issue your warrant to the Surveyor of Lands to make surveys of and mark out in lots such lands upon the said territory as may be necessary for their use; and when that shall be done, that you do pass grants thereof with all convenient speed to any of the said convicts so emancipated, in such proportions and under such conditions and acknowledgments as shall hereafter be specified, viz. :—To every male shall be granted 30 acres of land, and in case he shall be married, 20 acres more; and for every child who may be with them at the settlement at the time of making the said grant, a further quantity of 10 acres, free of all fees, taxes, quit rents, or other acknowledgments whatsoever, for the space of ten years: Provided that the person to whom the said land shall have been granted shall reside within the same and proceed to the cultivation and improvement thereof; reserving only to us such timber as may be growing, or to grow hereafter, upon the said land which may be fit for naval purposes, and an annual quit rent of † after the expiration of the term or time before mentioned. You will cause copies of such grants as may be passed to be preserved, and make a regular return of the said grants to the Commissioners of our Treasury and the Lords of the Committee of our Privy Council for Trade and Plantations.

Grants of land to emancipated convicts.

Conditions and reservations.

Grants to be recorded.

* This part of the Instructions was not carried out.

† Blank in MS.

And whereas it is likely to happen that the convicts who may after their emancipation, in consequence of this instruction, be put in possession of lands will not have the means of proceeding to their cultivation without the public aid: It is our will and pleasure that you do cause every such person you may so emancipate to be supplied with such a quantity of provisions as may be sufficient for the subsistence of himself, and also of his family, for twelve months, together with an assortment of tools and utensils, and such a proportion of seed-grain, cattle, sheep, hogs, &c., as may be proper, and can be spared from the general stock of the settlement.

1787

25 April.

Emancipists to be supplied for twelve months.

And whereas many of our subjects employed upon military service at the said settlement, and others who may resort thither upon their private occupations, may hereafter be desirous of proceeding to the cultivation and improvement of the land, and as we are disposed to afford them every reasonable encouragement in such an undertaking: It is our will and pleasure that you do, with all convenient speed, transmit a report of the actual state and quality of the soil at and near the said intended settlement, the probable and most effectual means of improving and cultivating the same, and of the mode, and upon what terms and conditions, according to the best of your judgement, the said lands should be granted, that proper instructions and authorities may be given to you for that purpose.

In view of free settlement,

report on the land.

And whereas it is our royal intention that every sort of intercourse between the intended settlement at Botany Bay, or other place which may be hereafter established on the coast of New South Wales and its dependencies, and the settlements of our East India Company, as well as the coast of China, and the islands situated in that part of the world, to which any intercourse has been established by any European nation, should be prevented by every possible means: It is our royal will and pleasure that you do not on any account allow craft of any sort to be built for the use of private individuals which might enable them to effect such intercourse, and that you do prevent any vessels which may at any time hereafter arrive at the said settlement from any of the ports before mentioned from having communication with any of the inhabitants residing within your Government, without first receiving especial permission from you for that purpose.

All intercourse with foreign ports prohibited.

No sailing vessels to be built.

No communication from ship to shore.

G. R.

SIR CHARLES MIDDLETON TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

Dear Sir,

The Navy Board, in contracting for the victualling of the convicts on their passage, have observed the same rule that has

Victualling the convicts.

* No date or address: the letter, a private one, was sent, apparently, in April, 1787, to Under Secretary Nepean.

1787 been always followed with soldiers on board of transports—that is, two-thirds of what is allowed to the troops serving in the West Indies, spirits excepted.

When it is considered that the confinement on shipboard will not admit of much exercise, this allowance will be found more advantageous to the health of the convicts than full allowance, and when compared to bread and water, which I take for granted is the prison allowance, may be termed abundance.

For these reasons, and the impossibility of altering the contracts without adding considerably and unnecessarily to the expence of the public, and probably increasing the mortality by detaining the transports in this climate, I am of opinion no alteration should take place.

In consequence of a letter lately received from the Treasury, the contractor proceeds to Portsmouth on Saturday to furnish the sick with fresh provisions and vegetables, and which may be extended to ye convicts and marines in general if an order is sent from the Treasury for that purpose, as also wine for ye sick; and if flower is preferred to rice, Captain Philips may direct a preference on ye passage, and repay it out of the storeships on their arrival, but the substitute of rice for flower is agreeable to ye Army contract, and so paid by the Treasury.

In short, the convicts cannot suffer from short allowance, as they are provided with two years' stock of provisions, independent of what is laid in for their passage.

I am, &c.,

CHAS. MIDDLETON.

LORD SYDNEY TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

27 April.

Sir,

Whitehall, 27th April, 1787.

I transmit you herewith his Majesty's commission* under the Great Seal appointing you Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the territory of New South Wales, together with a commission, also passed under the Great Seal, for establishing a court of civil jurisdiction† within the said territory, and instructions under the Royal Sign Manual‡ for your guidance in the execution of the affairs of the territory to which you are appointed Governor.

The commission for the trial of pirates, and that appointing you Vice-Admiral, and for other officers to form an Admiralty Court, I find are not yet compleated, but those commissions will be sent to you.

I am, &c.,

SYDNEY.

MAJOR ROSS TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.§

Dear Sir,

Portsmouth, 27th April, 1787.

Anxieties.

Before I bid a long farewell to you and home, will you give me leave to remind you of my being about to leave Mrs. Ross and very small tho' numerous family behind me.

* Ante, p. 61.

† Ante, pp. 70-76.

‡ Ante, pp. 85-91.

§ A private letter.

I believe that you are no stranger to my circumstances in life ; and that you know my daily pay to be the whole of the fortune I am possessed of, to support and educate them, as well as to maintain myself. 1787
27 April.

But do not, my dear sir, be alarmed, and suppose me about to solicit your assistance for an addition to this income, for, in truth, that is not my design.

My only view in mentioning the situation in which cruel necessity compels me to leave Mrs. Ross and my young family is, that in case any accident should deprive them of their all, in depriving them of me, you will then permit me to hope that your friendly assistance and interest shall be employ'd in endeavouring to procure for the widow and fatherless some compensation from the public. Provision for family.

As you are yourself both a husband and a father—both of which may you long continue to be in peace, health, and happiness—you will the more readily enter my present feelings, and the more easily excuse this application. Could I but be assured that Mrs. Ross and little ones would have your friendship to plead their cause in support of their claim, my oppress'd mind would then be reliev'd in some measure from a weighty load of the care and anxiety which you must naturally suppose me, at this time, to suffer on their account. A load of care.

I have now only to add that this is the first instance in which the corps of marines has been employ'd in any way out of the usual line of duty, and as I firmly believe that any part of it being so employ'd is entirely owing to your friendly wish of drawing the corps forth from that subordinate obscurity in which it has hitherto moved,—impress'd with this belief, permit me to offer you my own as well as the sincerest thanks of the officers of the detachment under my command, for the generous opinion you have shown in favour of the corps, and to assure you that every nerve shall be strain'd in the faithful and diligent discharge of our duty, and I entertain not a doubt but that the conduct of the whole will be such as will not only do credit to your recommendation, but give satisfaction to the Administration. These much-wished-for objects obtain'd, I shall then ardently hope that what you once hinted to me might be the consequence, will, with your assistance, take place, and that we shall no more return to our original obscurity, but become an active corps of your own creation. An opportunity for the marines.

An active corps.

Adieu, my dear sir, and with real esteem and regard, believe me, &c., R. Ross.

LORD SYDNEY TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Whitehall 28th April, 1787.

The King judging it necessary, in case of your death or absence from your Government of the territory of New South Wales, that an officer properly qualified to execute that trust shall be appointed to succeed you, and that a dormant commission 28 April.

1787.
27 April.
Hunter's
dormant
commission.

for that purpose should be in your possession, his Majesty has been pleased to name Captain John Hunter, second captain of his Majesty's ship the *Sirius*, to be Governor of the said territory in either of those events, and to sign a commission for that purpose, which I herewith send you.* I am, &c.,
SYDNEY.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Sir, [London] May 3d, 1787.

3 May.

You will please to inform the Right Hon'ble the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that I have received their Lordships' order for the *Hyæna's* going one hundred leagues to the westward with his Majesty's ship under my command, and the order respecting the *Supply*, tender, as likewise their Lordships order to proceed to Botany Bay, on the coast of New South Wales, which orders I shall carry into execution with all possible expedition.

Sailing
orders for
Botany Bay.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

LORD SYDNEY TO THE LORDS OF THE ADMIRALTY.†

My Lords, Whitehall, 5th May, 1787.

5 May.
Phillip may
leave the
convoy.

As it may be expedient for Capt. Phillip to arrive upon the coast of New South Wales previous to the convoy under his protection, in order to fix upon an eligible spot for their settlement, and to make proper arrangements for the landing of the marines and convicts, I am commanded to signify to your Lordships the King's pleasure that you do authorize Captain Phillip, upon his leaving the Cape of Good Hope, to proceed, if he thinks fit, to the said coast of New South Wales in the *Supply*, tender‡, leaving the convoy to be escorted by the *Sirius* to the rendezvous which he may fix upon.

[No signature.]

LORD SYDNEY TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir, Whitehall, 5th May, 1787.

5 May.

It has not been thought advisable that the detachment of marines intended to be landed on the coast of New South Wales shall be constantly supplied with wine or spirits, but as it may happen that the service upon which they may be employed may require such an addition to the ration with which they are directed to be supplied, I am commanded to acquaint you that upon your arrival at Rio de Janeiro, or at the Cape of Good Hope, you have permission to order the Commissary to purchase such a quantity of spirits or wine for their use as he can obtain

Spirits for
the marines.

* Not recorded.

† This letter is not signed, but it is obviously from Lord Sydney.

‡ This proposal was carried out by Phillip, but owing to the bad sailing of the *Supply* he arrived at Botany Bay only one day before the *Alexander*, *Scarborough*, and *Friendship*, and two days before the *Sirius*, *Charlotte*, *Prince of Wales*, and *Lady Penrhyn*. See Phillip's letter to Lord Sydney, post, p. 121.

for £200. You will order him to draw bills upon the Treasury for that sum, and cause the said wine or spirits to be issued to the said marines at such times and in such proportions as you may judge requisite; you will, however, observe that no further quantity of wine or spirits will hereafter be allowed for that purpose.

1787
5 May.

I am, &c.,

SYDNEY.

LORD SYDNEY TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Whitehall, 5th May, 1787.

By your instructions under the Royal Sign Manual, you are referred to the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty for permission to discharge forty of the petty officers and men belonging to the Sirius, in case you should hereafter have it in your power to dispense with the service of that ship, but it has since been determined that after your arrival at New South Wales your proceedings should be regulated by the Secretary of State, and I am in consequence to signify to you that you have permission to discharge as many of the said forty petty officers and seamen from the Sirius as you may think proper, whenever you may determine to send that ship to England, and also to discharge twenty petty officers and men from the Supply, tender, in like manner, in case you should order the said tender to return home, provided that there be left on board the said ship and tender a sufficient number of men to navigate them during the voyage.

Seamen
may be
discharged.

You have also permission, if you should find it necessary, to discharge from time to time from the Sirius or the Supply, tender, any of the marines belonging to the detachment appointed to serve on shore whenever any event shall take place to reduce the number of which the said detachment now consists.

I am, &c.,

SYDNEY.

LETTERS PATENT CONSTITUTING THE VICE-ADMIRALTY COURT.

GEORGE THE THIRD by the Grace of God of Great Britain France and Ireland King Defender of the Faith. To our trusty and well-beloved Arthur Phillip Esquire our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the territory called New South Wales extending from the Northern Cape or extremity of the coast called Cape York in the latitude of ten degrees thirty-seven minutes south to the southern extremity of the said territory of New South Wales or South Cape in the latitude of forty-three degrees thirty-nine minutes south and of all the country inland to the westward as far as the one hundred and thirty-fifth degree of east longitude reckoning from the meridian of Greenwich including all the islands adjacent in the Pacific Ocean within the latitude aforesaid of 10° 37' south and 43° 39' south and our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the said territory called New South Wales for the time being,

Commission
to form a
Vice-
Admiralty
Court.

1787

5 May.

Robert Ross Esquire, Lieutenant-Governor of the said territory called New South Wales and the Lieutenant-Governor of the said territory for the time being,

Andrew Miller Esquire, Commissary of Stores and Provisions in the said territory called New South Wales, and the Commissary of Stores in the said territory for the time being,

Augustus Alt Esquire, Surveyor of Lands in the said territory called New South Wales, and the Surveyor of Lands in the said territory for the time being,

John Hunter Esquire, second Captain of our ship Sirius, William Bradley Esquire, first Lieutenant, Philip Gidley King Esquire, second Lieutenant, and George William Maxwell, third Lieutenant of the said ship Sirius, Henry Lidgbird Ball Esquire, Lieutenant and Commander of the Supply, armed tender, and all other Captains and Commanders of our ships who are or shall be within the Admiralty jurisdiction of the said territory called New South Wales,

Greeting :

Act of
Parliament
recited, 11 &
12 Wm. III,
c. 7.

Whereas by an Act of Parliament made in the eleventh and twelfth year of the reign of our late Royal Predecessor King William the Third intituled an Act for the more effectual suppressing of Piracy (reciting as therein recited) it is amongst other things enacted that all piracies, felonies or robberies committed in or upon the sea or in any haven, river, creek or place where the Admiral or Admirals have power authority or jurisdiction may be examined, enquired of, tried, heard, and determined and adjudged according to the directions of the said Act in any place at sea or upon the land in any of his said late Majesty's islands, plantations, colonies, dominions, forts or factories to be appointed for that purpose by his said late Majesty's Commission or Commissions under the Great Seal of England, or the Seal of the Admiralty of England, directed to all or any of the Admirals, Vice-Admirals, Rear-Admirals, Judges of Vice-Admiralties or Commanders of his said late Majesty's ships-of-war, and also to all or any such person or persons officer or officers by name or for the time being as his said late Majesty should think fit to appoint :

Trial by
Commis-
sioners.

Power to
commit

and to
assemble a
Court of
seven
members,

or three,
who should
have power
to summon
four more.

Which said Commissioners should have full power jointly or severally by warrant under the hand or seal of them or any one of them to commit to safe custody any person or persons against whom information of piracy, robbery or felony upon the sea should be given upon oath and to call and to assemble a Court of Admiralty on ship-board or upon the land when and as often as occasion should require, which Court should consist of seven persons at the least :

And it is thereby further enacted that if so many of the persons aforesaid could not conveniently be assembled, any three of the aforesaid persons, whereof the president or chief of some English factory or the Governor, Lieutenant-Governor or member of his

said late Majesty's Council in any of the plantations or colonies aforesaid or Commander of one of his late Majesty's ships was always to be one (should be one), should have full power and authority by virtue of the said Act to call and assemble any other persons on ship-board or upon the land to make up the number of seven :

1787

5 May.

And it is thereby also provided that no persons but such as were known merchants, factors or planters or such as were captains lieutenants or warrant officers in any of his late Majesty's ships-of-war or captains, masters or mates of some English ship should be capable of being so called and sitting and voting in the said Court :

Qualifications.

And it is thereby further enacted that such persons, called and assembled as aforesaid, should have full power and authority according to the course of the Admiralty to issue warrants for bringing up any persons accused of piracy or robbery before them to be tried heard and adjudged, and to summon witnesses and take informations and examinations of witnesses upon their oath, and to do all things necessary for the hearing and final determination of any case of piracy robbery and felony, and to give sentence and judgement of death, and to award execution of the offenders convicted and attainted as aforesaid according to the civil law and the methods and rules of the Admiralty, and that all and every person and persons so convicted and attainted of piracy and robbery should have and suffer such losses of lands, goods, and chattels as if they had been attainted and convicted of any piracies, felonies, and robberies according to a statute made in the twenty-eighth year of the reign of King Henry the Eighth for tryals of treasons, felonies, robberies, murthers and confederacies committed upon the sea :

Power to issue warrants of arrest, to summon witnesses, to take evidence, and to pronounce sentence.

28 Hen. VIII, c. 15.

Which said first-recited Act by another Act made in the fifth year of the reign of our late Royal Predecessor Queen Anne, was continued from the expiration thereof for the further term of seven years and from then to the end of the then next session of Parliament which by another Act made in the first year of the reign of our late Royal Ancestor King George the First was revived from the twenty-ninth day of September 1715 and was to be in force during the continuance of that Act which was to continue for five years and from then to the end of the next session of Parliament and which by an Act made in the sixth year of the reign of our said late Royal Ancestor King George the First was made perpetual :

8 Geo. I, c. 24, made perpetual.

And whereas by one other Act of Parliament made in the eighth year of the reign of our said late Royal Ancestor King George the First entituled an Act for the more effectual suppression of Piracy (reciting as therein is recited) It is amongst other things thereby enacted that all and every person and persons therein and thereby declared to be guilty of or accessory or accessories to any piracy

1787

5 May.

Procedure.

Punishment
on conviction.

felony or robbery shall and may be enquired of, heard, determined and adjudged of and for all or any the matters contained in the said last-recited Act according to the said statute made in the eleventh and twelfth years of his late Majesty King William the Third and that all and every person being thereupon attainted and convicted should have and suffer such pain of death and loss of lands goods and chattels as pirates and robbers ought by the said Act of the eleventh and twelfth years of his late Majesty King William the Third to suffer :

Commis-
sioners
appointed.

Now know ye that in pursuance of the said recited Act of the eleventh and twelfth year of the reign of his said late Majesty King William the Third and of the eighth year of our said late Royal Ancestor King George the First, of our special grace certain knowledge and meer motion have made constituted and appointed and by these presents do hereby constitute and appoint you the said Arthur Phillip Esquire, and our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the said territory called New South Wales for the time being,

Robert Ross Esquire, and our Lieutenant-Governor of the said territory called New South Wales for the time being,

Andrew Miller Esquire, and the Commissary of Stores and Provisions of the said territory called New South Wales for the time being,

Augustus Alt Esquire and the Surveyor of Lands in the said territory called New South Wales for the time being,

John Hunter, William Bradley, Philip Gidley King, George William Maxwell and Henry Lidgbird Ball Esquire and the Captain and Commander of our ships who are or shall be within the Admiralty jurisdiction of the said territory called New South Wales

Jurisdiction
of the Court.

To be our Commissioners at the said territory called New South Wales for the examining, enquiring of, trying, hearing and determining and adjudging according to the directions of the same Acts in any place at sea or upon the land at the said territory called New South Wales, all piracies, felonies and robberies and all assessories thereunto committed or which shall be committed in or upon the sea or within any haven, river, creek or place where the Admiral or Admirals have power authority or jurisdiction :

Commis-
sioners.

And you the said Arthur Phillip Esquire and our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the said territory called New South Wales for the time being :

Robert Ross Esquire and our Lieutenant-Governor of the said territory called New South Wales, for the time being,

Andrew Miller Esquire and the Commissary of Stores and Provisions of the said territory called New South Wales for the time being,

Augustus Alt Esquire and the Surveyor of Lands in the said territory called New South Wales for the time being,

John Hunter, William Bradley, Philip Gidley King, George William Maxwell and Henry Lidgbird Ball Esquire and the Captains and Commanders of our ships who are or shall be within the Admiralty jurisdiction of the said territory called New South Wales

1787

5 May.

Our Commissioners at the said territory called New South Wales for the purposes hereinbefore mentioned We do make, ordain and constitute by these presents, hereby giving and granting unto you our said Commissioners jointly or severally by warrant under the hand and seal of you or any one of you full power and authority to commit to safe custody any person or persons against whom information of piracy, robbery or felony upon the sea as accessory or accessories thereto shall be given upon oath (which oath you or any one of you shall have full power and are hereby authorised to administer) :

empowered
to commit,

And to call and assemble a Court of Admiralty on shipboard or upon the land when and as often as occasion shall require, which Court our will and pleasure is shall consist of seven persons at the least and if so many of you our said Commissioners cannot conveniently be assembled any three or more of you whereof you the said Arthur Phillip Esquire, our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the said territory called New South Wales, or the Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the said territory for the time being,

and to
assemble
a Court.

Or you the said Robert Ross Esquire, Lieutenant-Governor of the said territory called New South Wales, or the Lieutenant-Governor of the said territory, for the time being,

Commis-
sioners

Or you the said Andrew Miller Esquire, Commissary of Stores and Provisions in the said territory called New South Wales, or the Commissary of Stores and Provisions for the time being,

Or you the said Augustus Alt Esquire, Surveyor of Lands in the said territory called New South Wales, or the Surveyor of Lands in the said territory for the time being,

Or you the said John Hunter Esquire, second Captain of our ship Sirius, William Bradley Esquire, first Lieutenant, Philip Gidley King Esquire, second Lieutenant, and George William Maxwell Esquire, third Lieutenant, of the said ship Sirius, or you the said Henry Lidgbird Ball Esquire, Lieutenant and Commander of the Supply, armed tender, or a commander of one of our ships (as the place of tryall shall appear) to be always one,

Shall have full power and authority by virtue of the said recited Acts and these presents to call and assemble any other persons on shipboard or upon the land to make up the number of seven.

empowered
to form a
Court.

Provided that no persons but such as are known merchants, factors, or planters or such as are captains, lieutenants or warrant officers in any of our ships-of-war or captains masters or mates of some English ship shall be capable of being so called sitting and acting in the said Court.

Qualifica-
tions.

1787

5 May.

Power of
Commis-
sioners.

And our further pleasure is, and We do hereby expressly declare and command, that such persons called and such other persons hereby authorised and assembled as aforesaid, shall have full power and authority according to the course of Admiralty to issue warrants for bringing any persons accused of such piracy, robbery, or felony or as accessory thereto, and to give sentence and judgment of death and to award execution of the offenders convicted and attainted as aforesaid according to the civil law and the methods and rules of the Admiralty :

Effect of
sentences.

And that all and every person and persons so convicted and attainted of piracy, robbery, or felony or as accessory thereto, shall have and suffer such losses of lands goods and chattels as if they had been attainted and convicted of any piracies, felonies, and robberies according to the aforementioned statute made in the reign of King Henry the Eighth.

Commission
to be read in
open Court.

And our express will and pleasure is, and We do hereby direct and command that so soon as any Court shall be assembled as aforesaid, either on shipboard or upon the land, this our Commission shall first be openly read and the said Court then and there shall be solemnly and publicly called and proclaimed, and then the President of such Court shall in the first place publicly in open Court take the oath mentioned and appointed to be taken by the said recited Act of the eleventh and twelfth years of the reign of his said late Majesty King William the Third, and such President having taken the oath in manner aforesaid shall immediately administer the same to every person who shall sit and have a vote in the said Court upon the trial of such prisoner or prisoners as aforesaid.

Procedure
thereupon.Court to be
guided by
statutes and
Commis-
sion.

And lastly We do hereby direct empower and require you our said Commissioners to proceed act adjudge and determine in all things according to the powers authorities and directions of the above-recited Acts and of these presents.

Authority
to act.

And these presents or the entry or registering thereof in our High Court of Admiralty shall be unto you and each and every one of you for so doing a sufficient warrant and discharge.

In witness whereof we have caused the Great Seal of our High Court of Admiralty of England to be hereunto affixed.

Given at London the fifth day of May in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and eighty-seven and of our reign the twenty-seventh.

GODF. LEE FARRANT,
Registrar.

MEMORIAL FROM THE MARINES.*

7 May

Scarborough, transport, May 7th, 1787.

WE, the marines embarked on board the Scarborough, who have voluntarily entered on a dangerous expedition replete with num-

* The memorial is not addressed ; it was intended, apparently, for the officer commanding the detachment.

berless difficulties, which in the faithful discharge of our duty we must necessarily be exposed to, and supposing ourselves to be on the same footing as if embarked on board any of his Maj's ships of war, or as the seamen and marines on the same expedition with us, we hope to receive the same indulgence, now conceive ourselves sorely aggrieved by finding the intentions of Government to make no allowance of spiritous liquor or wine after our arrival at the intended colony in New South Wales.*

A moderate distribution of the above-ment'd article being indispensable requisite for the preservation of our lives, which change of climate and the extreme fatigue we shall be necessarily exposed to may probably endanger, we therefore humbly entreat you will be pleased to convey these our sentiments to Major Ross. Presuming, sir, that you will not only be satisfied that our demand is reasonable, but will also perceive the urgent necessity there is for a compliance with our request, flatter ourselves you will also use your influence to cause a removal of the uneasiness we experience under the idea of being restricted in the supply of one of the principal necessaries of life, without which, for the reasons above stated, we cannot expect to survive the hardships incident to our situation. You may depend on a cheerful and ready discharge of the public duties that may be enjoined us. The design of Government is, we hope, to have a feeling for the calamities we must encounter. So as to induce them to provide in a moderate and reasonable degree for our maintenance and preservation, we beg leave to tender our most dutiful assurances of executing to the utmost of our power our several abilities in the duty assign'd, so that we remain in every respect loyal subjects to our King and worthy members of society

[Signed by the Detachment.]

1787

5 May.

Spirits.
necessary.

Hardships

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir,

Portsmouth, 8th May, 1787.

8 May.

Since my coming down I am informed by Major Ross that the marines who were embarked at Plymouth were told by him that they were to be victualled in the usual manner after they were landed in New South Wales, and that they all in general expected the usual allowance of wine or spirits. He likewise informs me that he understood from Lord Howe that they were to have such an allowance, as they have no market to go to, and I fear much discontent amongst the garrison. I wish such an allowance could be granted them; indeed, I fear very disagreeable consequences if they have not the same allowance of spirits in the garrison as the marines and seamen are allowed on board the

Spirits for
the marines.

Disagreeable
conse-
quences of
refusal.

* The allowance was granted for three years. See letter from Under Secretary Nepean, post, p. 102.

1787

8 May.

Sirius, and they certainly were told they should be victualled in the same manner. Spirits may be purchased in the Brazil.

The contractor promises that everything shall be on board next Thursday ; if so, I shall be ready to sail the day after.

I have not yet received either the character of the convicts, or the letter to the Vice-King.* You will be so good as to favor me with Lord Sydney's final determination respecting the allowance of spirits. Major Ross has received some letters from the marines, which he sends to the Admiralty by this day's post.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

10 May.

Sir,

Whitehall, 10th May, 1787.

The liquor
question.

It never was intended that the marines, after landing in New South Wales, should be allowed either wine or spirits, and I am rather inclined to think that Major Ross must have mistaken Lord Howe upon that point, for in the estimate of victualling, which was delivered in with the original plan, it was particularly expressed that "the usual rations should be given, excepting wine and spirits."

Three
years'
supply.

Lord Sydney wishing, however, to remove every possible cause of dissatisfaction, has desired me to acquaint you that he shall recommend it to the Lords of the Treasury to pay such bills as you may authorise the Commissary to draw at the places you may touch at during your passage, for a portion of wine or spirits sufficient to serve the marines for the space of three years, at the expiration of which time it must be understood that no further supplies of that sort will be allowed. I am, &c.,

EVAN NEPEAN.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sirius, on the Motherbank,

11 May.

Dear Sir,

11th May, 1787.

Contractors'
bread.

Since my letter of this morning I have seen the bread which the contractors offered for the convicts, in the room of what was to be baked, and which could not have been ready before Monday. It is good, tho' coarse, and I have ordered it to be sent on board this evening.

The marines
satisfied.

The order Major Ross received from the Admiralty respecting the marines has the following words: To be properly victualled by a Commissary. On this they grounded their letters of complaint. But this business is now settled. All are satisfied. I return you Lord Sydney's letter, and hope we shall not give you any further trouble. Had I sailed when first I came down some of the ships must have gone short of water, which is not yet compleat, but will, I hope, this evening ; and we must likewise

* The Portuguese Governor of Rio de Janeiro, at which port the fleet was to put in for supplies.

have left all the necessaries for the sick behind us (they not coming down before last night), as well as a great deal of provisions. In fact, it was not possible to sail before this day, and now, unfortunately, the wind is westerly, and blows fresh. The reason the contractor assigns for not having the provisions on board sooner was having only three ovens to bake the bread, and in doing which he has lost no time since he received the Navy Board's order. I shall not lose a moment after there is the least chance of getting down channel; on that you may depend.

1787

11 May.

Delay in shipping provisions.

No spirits can be received at present on board any of the ships, but the greatest economy will be used in purchasing as much as the ships can stow when in the Brazil, where it is reasonable.

Spirits to be purchased at Brazil.

I have received the warrant for appointing courts-martial, the articles of war, and the order for the Commissary's purchasing three years' spirits. The two letters for the Vice-King and the Governor of the Cape are not yet received; but I must beg of you, my dear sir, to point out to the Navy Board that for women's cloathes I have no resource, and desire them to order that they may be sent down. The agent for the transports, who has corresponded with that Board on this subject, says he has expected them for some time. Be assured that I shall not wait a single hour for them after it is possible to sail. I had desired that the Sirius and Supply, armed tender, might not be paid the two months' advance till the day before I intended to sail, and that was done yesterday.

The women's clothing.

It is not in my power to send you my lists at present more correct than those you have received from Major Ross, but you shall have one by the return of the "Hyana," for I hope we shall not remain here long enough to make it out, as it will take some days to examine the different ships.

Once more I take my leave of you, fully sensible of the trouble you have had in this business, for which at present I can only thank you; but at a future period, when this country feels the advantages that are to be drawn from our intended settlement, you will enjoy a satisfaction that will, I am sure, make you ample amends.

Prospective advantages.

Wishing you health,—

I remain, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Sir,

Sirius, May 12th, 1787.

12 May.

You will please to inform the Right Honorable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that the transports having on Friday evening compleated their provisions, and the wind this morning coming round to the south-east, I made the signal and got under weigh, but the seamen on board several of the transports refusing to get their ships under sail, put me under the

The fleet under weigh.

1787

11 May.

Refractory
seamen.

disagreeable necessity of ordering eight men to be taken out of the Fishburn ; and the seamen on board the *Alexander* refusing to proceed to sea unless they were paid what wages were then due and had permission to go on shore, and that when I was under sail, I ordered Capt. de Courcey to take out the boatswain and ten men from that ship, and replace them with men from the *Hyæna*, but when I was proceeding to St. Hellen's, finding that two of the ships that had got under sail anchored at Spithead, and that several remained at anchor on the Motherbank, where I had desired Capt. de Courcey to remain till they were all under sail, I judged it necessary to anchor between the buoys, and this morning (Sunday) having a fresh breeze at S.E. am again under sail, and hope the transports will follow, but they have hitherto behaved very ill.

Transports
behave
badly.Clothing left
behind.

It may be necessary to inform their Lordships that the provisions and water on board the transports was not completed till yesterday, which prevented our sailing sooner, and now we leave a considerable part of the women's cloathing behind us.

Inclosed is the state and condition of his Majesty's ship under my command.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

MAJOR ROSS TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

His Maj's. ship *Sirius*, Mother Bank,

Sir,

12th May, 1787.

Invalids
discharged.

You will please to inform my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that the ships are now getting under sail, with a fair wind, and that I have not time to comply with their order for an effective list to be sent in the correct manner I wish it. but that it shall be sent by the *Hyæna*, on her return*; and as I have discharged from the detachment all the non-commissioned officers and private men who are not sufficiently recovered to be received again, and the commanding officer thinks the mode correct and proper, all of them belong to this division, and have not contracted any additional debts since they embarked, I hope their Lordships will find that [the list] answer the purpose until the other can be sent.

Thanks.

I have likewise, in the name of the whole of the detachment, to offer to their Lordships their most sincere and grateful acknowledgments for their wonted goodness and attention to everything that could render their situation comfortable, and, at the same time, am desired to assure their Lordships that if a most strict and faithful discharge of their duty will evince their gratitude they shall still hope for a continuance of their protection.

I feel myself particularly fortunate in joining with the officers in expressing their sense of the honour their Lordships have done us by the very particular and flattering attention which they have been pleased to pay to us on all occasions. I am, &c.,

R. Ross, Major.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.*

1787

Sirius ; latitude, 47° 57' ; longitude, 12° 14' 30",

Sir,

May 20th, 1787.

20 May.

You will please to inform my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, under my command, with the *Supply*, armed tender, and the transports intended for the coast of New South Wales, being nearly one hundred leagues distant from the entrance of the English Channel, I have, pursuant to their Lordships' orders, directed Capt. de Courcey to return to Plymouth, sending dispatches by him for the Right Hon'ble Lord Sydney.

Despatches;

And you will, sir, inform their Lordships that the *Fishburn* having left five of her people on shore, and Capt. de Courcey having assisted her with three men, who the master has requested may remain, I have given Capt. de Courcey orders to discharge them from the *Hyæna*, it being with his consent and that of the people's that the master of the *Fishburn* has made this request.

Transfers.

Nothing particular has happened since we sailed from Portsmouth.

Inclosed you will receive the state and condition of his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, but there is too much sea to send on board the *Supply* for her weekly account, or to get any return of the marines or convicts from the different transports.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.†

Dear Sir,

Sirius, May 20th, 1787.

As we are now nearly one hundred leagues clear of the Channel, the *Hyæna* leaves us this evening to return to Plymouth, but the sea runs too high to send on board the different transports to get any particular account of the state of the convicts. I have, therefore, only to repeat what I said in my last from the Motherbank, that a great part of the women's cloathing was not come down from London when we sailed, nor did I receive the letters for the Vice-King. The Provost-Martial, who had not been since seen for a considerable time before we sailed, is left behind. As it will be very necessary to have such an officer on the spot, I have ordered Mr. Henry Brewer to act as such, and shall be glad if he is approved of. I enclose a copy of the last returns, and shall send you a more particular account from Teneriff. At present our motion is such that I find it very difficult to sit at table, but the weather is good, and tho' the *Charlotte* and *Lady Penrhyn* sail very badly, the clearing the Channel is one great point gained, and with which I look on all our difficultys as ended.

The Channel cleared.

Clothing left behind.

A missing Provost-Marshal.

All difficulties at an end.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

Latt., 47° 57'. Long., 12° 14' 30". Wind, W. by N.

* Sent by the *Hyæna*.† A private letter, sent by the *Hyæna*.

1787

RETURN BY MAJOR ROSS.*

20 May.

One Major, 2 Captains, 2 Captain-Lieutenants, 9 First Lieutenants, 3 Second Lieutenants, 1 Adjutant, 1 Quarter-master, 1 Judge-Advocate, 12 sergeants, 12 corporals, 8 drummers, 160 privates.

Major Commanding :—Robert Ross.

Captains :—James Campbell and John Shea.

Captain-Lieutenants :—James Meredith and Watkin Tench.

First Lieutenants :—James Maxwell, John Creswell, John Poulden, John Johnstone, James Maitland Shairp, George Johnston, Robert Kellow, Thomas Davey, Thomas Timins.

Second Lieutenants :—Ralph Clarke, William Faddy, William Collins.

Adjutant Second Lieutenant :—John Long.

Quarter-master First Lieutenant :—James Furzer.

Judge-Advocate :—David Collins.

Total, 20.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.†

My Dear Sir,

Sirius, May 20th, 1787.

A convict
plot.

Since I sealed my letters I have received a report from the officers on board the Scarborough respecting the convicts, who, it is said, have formed a scheme for taking possession of the ship. ‡ I have order'd the ringleaders on b'd the Sirius, and should not mention the affair at this moment, as I have no time to enter into particulars, but that I suppose it will be mention'd in letters from that ship. I did intend to write to Lord Sydney, but it is late, and I wish the boats on board the different ships. You may assure his Lordship of my respects, and tell him the reason that prevents my writing to him.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

Compliments and good wishes to Mr. T. Townshend.§

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.||

Sirius, at S'ta Cruz [Teneriffe],

My Lord,

June 5th, 1787.

5 June.

At Santa
Cruz.

Improved
health of the
convicts.

Amm'nition
forgotten.

I have the honor to inform your Lordship that I anchored here the 3rd inst., with his Majesty's ship under my command, the Supply tender, store-ships, and transports. By the inclosed list your Lordship will see that the convicts are not so sickly as when we sailed, and while we remain here the Commissary will be able to procure them fresh meat at a very moderate expence.

I understood when the marines, who were to form the garrison, were embarked that they would be furnished with ammunition ;

* Sent by the Hyæna, ante, p. 104.

† A private letter, sent by the Hyæna.

‡ See letter from Phillip to Nepean. Post, p. 108.

§ The Hon. John Thomas Townshend, Lord Sydney's son. At the time this letter was written he was one of the Under Secretaries of the Home Department.

|| A similar despatch was sent to the Admiralty.

but since we sailed find that they were only supplied with what was necessary for immediate service while in port, and we have neither musquet balls nor paper for musquet cartridges, nor have we any armourer's tools to keep small arms in repair. 1787
5 June.

I am therefore to request that your Lordship will be pleased to give orders that those articles may be sent out by the first ship, and for which, as well as for the women's cloathing that was left behind, we shall be much distressed. The women's cloathing again.
I hope the transports will be able to compleat their water by the 9th, and shall not lose an hour after that is done.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

STATE of the Sick Convicts and Marines, June 4, 1787.

Ships.	Fever.	Intermittent Fever.	Dysentery.	Dropsy.	Veneral.	Debility.	Ulcers.	Convalescent.	Wounds.	Deaths.
Charlotte—										
Marines .. ..	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	...	1	...
Convicts ... ..	...	1	1	2	1	6	2	2	...	1
Alexander—										
Marines ... ..	...	...	...	...	2	...	...	...	...	...
Convicts ... ..	...	9	...	...	...	6	1	5	...	5
Scarborough—										
Marines ... ..	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Convicts ... ..	...	4	1	...	...	4	...	...	...	...
Friendship—										
Marines ... ..	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	...	...	...
Convicts ... ..	...	...	1	...	...	10	1	...	...	...
Lady Penrhyn—										
Marines ... ..	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Convicts ... ..	...	...	...	...	4	4	...	2	...	1
Prince of Wales—										
Marines ... ..	...	2	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Convicts ... ..	...	1	3	...	3	...	...	...	...	...
	1	20	3	2	10	30	5	9	1	*8

Total number sick, 81. * Since May 13.

JOHN WHITE.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

My Dear Sir,

Sta. Crux, 5th June, 1787.

I have the pleasure of informing you that I anchored here the third, late in the evening, and by the returns, made to Lord Sydney, you will see that the convicts are in a better state than when we sailed.

The procuring fresh meat being absolutely necessary, and wishing that it should be done with as little expence to Govern- Purchase of fresh meat.

1787

5 June.

Butter.

No
cartridges or
repairing
tools.Good
behaviour of
the convicts.

ment as possible, I have ordered bread to be issued to the marines and convicts from the store-ships, for it could not be got here but at a very high price. The butter intended for the use of the garrison will be good for very little, and much wasted before we land, from being in single firkins. A proportion of butter I have therefore ordered also to be served while we remain here, and by which means the marines and convicts will have fresh provisions at a less expense to Government (including the value of the biscuit and butter) than if they had continued on salt provisions.

As we have sailed without either musquet cartridges for the use of the garrison, or paper or ball to make them, we shall have none but what little the *Sirius* can supply. This I have mentioned in my letter to Lord Sydney. Nor have we any tools to keep the small arms in repair, the want of which will put us to many inconveniences.

In my letters by the *Hyæna* I mentioned the apprehensions the officers on board the *Scarborough* were under, and tho' I did not then think they had reason to be seriously alarmed. As some of the convicts had behaved very ill, two of the supposed ringleaders were ordered on board the *Sirius*, punished, and then sent on board the *Prince of Wales*, where they still remain. In general, the convicts have behaved well. I saw them all yesterday for the first time. They are quiet and contented, tho' there are amongst them some compleat villains.

I shall sail the moment the transports have compleated their water, and hope that will be done by Saturday or Sunday. The Spanish packet that sails this afternoon gives me this opportunity of writing, and I shall leave duplicates to be forwarded by the next conveyance, as it will be a very considerable time after this before I shall have an opportunity of writing again.

As the store-ships cannot receive any more wine for the garrison, spirits will be procured for them at Rio de Janeiro.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

10 June.

Sir,

Sta. Crux, 10th June, 1787.

A week's
fresh
provisions.

I enclose duplicates of my letters of the 5th inst., since which nothing has occurred that merits notice. The marines and convicts have had six days' fresh provisions, and a bill has been drawn on the Lords of the Treasury for the expence, which amounted to seventy-six pounds one shilling and nine-pence. The marines received every day one pound of bread, one pound of beef, and a pint of wine. The convicts every day three-quarters of a pound of beef and three-quarters of a pound of bread.

The list enclosed will show the numbers victualled.

As the transports will have all their water compleat this evening, I shall sail in the morning, and have the honour to be with great esteem,
 A. PHILLIP. 1787
 10 June.

P.S.—Three firkins of butter were issued in the six days to the marines and convicts.

[Enclosure.]

STATE of the Garrison and Convicts that are on board the transports, June 10th, 1787.

Marines, including officers	...	...	...	...	197	Marines.
Marines' wives	...	...	...	...	28	
Do. children	...	...	...	...	17	
Chaplain and wife	...	...	...	...	2	
Surveyor-General	...	...	...	...	1	
Surgeon and assistants	...	...	...	...	5	
Servants	...	...	...	...	2	
Men convicts	...	...	...	...	538	
Women convicts	...	...	...	...	192	
Children	...	...	...	...	13	
Number victualled					1,015	
Convicts dead since they were embarked	...	...	...	...	21	Convicts.
Convict children do. do.	...	...	...	...	3	
Reed. H. M.'s pardon before the ship left England	...	...	...	...	2	

LIEUTENANT BLIGH TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS.—(Banks Papers.)

No. 4, Broad-street, St. George's, East,

August 6, 1787.

Sir,

6 Aug.

I arrived yesterday from Jamaica, and should have instantly paid my respects to you had not Mr. Campbell told me you were not to return from the country untill Thursday. I have heard the flattering news of your great goodness to me, intending to honor me with the command of the vessel which you propose to go to the South Seas,* for which, after offering you my most grateful thanks, I can only assure you I shall endeavour, and I hope succeed, in deserving such a trust. I await your commands, and am, with the sincerest respect,

Captain
Bligh and
the Bounty.

Yours, &c.,

WM. BLIGH.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

My Lord,

Rio de Janeiro, 2d September, 1787.

2 Sept.

Having sailed from Teneriffe the 10th of June, I anchored off this harbour the 5th of this month,† of which I had the honour of informing your Lordship by a ship that past us, and the 6th in the evening anchored in the harbour with the tender, store-ships, and transports.

The Fleet
at Rio.

I inclose returns of the detachment and of the convicts, who, as well as the officers and seamen belonging to the ship, continue very healthy.

* The Bounty.

† As in MS. The correct date s 5th Aug. st.

1787

2 Sept.

Kindness of
the Vice-
King.

In my letter to Mr. Nepean I have mentioned particulars respecting the provisions, spirits, &c., procured here, and I have the honour of assuring your Lordship that every little assistance we have wanted in this port has been most readily granted by the Vice-King,* and to whom I feel myself under particular obligations for the attention he has shown to me and the officers under my command.

The convicts
more
healthy.

The convicts have been very plentifully supply'd with fresh provisions, and that at a small expense, three-pence three-farths. a head pr. day, all expenses included. The allowance of meat to the convicts has been twenty ounces every day, and they are much healthier than when we left England. Only fifteen convicts and one marine's child have died since we sailed from Spithead.

I hope to sail to-morrow, and have the honour to be, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

1 Sept.

GENERAL Return of the four Companies of Marines detach'd to serve in the settlement in New South Wales, September the 1st, 1787 :—

Marines.

Fit for Duty :—1 Major-Commandant, 2 Captains, 2 Captain-Lieutenants, 9 First Lieutenants, 3 Second Lieutenants, 1 Qr.-master, 1 Judge-Advocate, 12 Serjeants, 12 Corporals, 8 Drummers, 160 Privates.

Major-Commandant :—Robert Ross.

Captains :—James Campbell and John Shea.

Captain-Lieutenants :—James Meredith, Watkin Tench, James Maxwell, George Johnstone, John Cresswell, and Robert Kellow.

First Lieutenants :—John Poulden, John Johnstone, James Maitland Shairp, Thomas Davey, Thomas Timins.

Second Lieutenants :—William Faddy and William Collins.

Assistant Second Lieutenant :—John Long.

Qr.-master First Lieutenant :—James Furzer.

Judge-Advocate :—David Collins.

R. Ross, Major.

[Enclosure.]

Convicts.

RETURN of the male and female convicts and their children, September the 1st, 1787 :—

Male.	Female.	Children.		Number on board the Transports.
		Male.	Female.	
552	190	7	7	756

* Don Luis de Varconcellos, the Portuguese Governor.

[Enclosure.]

1787

REPORT of Sick, 30th August, 1787.

30 Aug.

Ships.							
	Fever.	Dysentery.	Veneral.	Scorbutic ulcers.	Cholera Morbus.	Convalescents.	Deaths.
Charlotte—							
Marines ...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...
Convicts ...	1	2	...	6	...	5	2
Alexander—							
Marines ...	4	..	1	..	...	3	...
Convicts ...	1	1	...	9	...	6	10
Scarborough—							
Marines ...	...	...	2	...	...	2	...
Convicts ...	1	1	...	7	...	4	...
Friendship—							
Marines ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...
Convicts ...	1	1	...	4	...	3	1
Lady Penrhyn—							
Marines ...	...	...	...	...	...	Captain Campbell.	...
Convicts ...	...	...	2	1	1	1	1
Prince of Wales—							
Marines ...	...	...	...	1	...	1	child 1
Convicts ...	...	...	2	2	...	2	1
Total sick, 81.							Total dead since 13th of May, 1787 ... 16

JOHN WHITE.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sirius, 2nd September, 1787,

2 Sept.

Dear Sir,

Rio Janeiro.

By my letters of the 5th and 10th of June from Sta. Crux I had the honor of informing you of the impossibility of receiving any wine on board for the use of the garrison, that the marines and convicts received six days' fresh provisions, and that the Commissary had drawn for £76 1s. 9d., the expences at that port. I likewise mentioned the slops for the women not being sent down before we sailed, and the want of musket-balls and paper cartridges for the use of the garrison, as likewise tools to keep the small arms in repair; those articles will, I hope, be sent out in the ship that goes for the bread-fruit.*

The Provost-Martial having remained in England, I recommended Mr. Henry Brewer as a proper person to fill that post, and I shall order him to do the duty till I receive instructions on that head.

With respect to the women's cloathing, it was made of very slight material, most too small, and in general came to pieces in a

* The Bounty.

- 1787** few weeks. If materials are sent out, it will be much cheaper to Government, and the cloaths will be better made.
- 2 Sept.** A few vegetables could be procured at Sta. Crux. I should have stop'd for twenty-four hours at Port Praya, but when off that port light airs of wind and a strong current making it probable some of the ships might not get in, I did not think it prudent to attempt it.
- Port Praya avoided.**
- Rio.** We anchored off Rio Janeiro the 5th of this month [August], of which I had an opportunity of informing you by a ship that past us, and the 6th in the evening got into the harbour with the Supply tender, store-ships, and transports.
- I have the pleasure of saying that every assistance we have wanted in this port has been most readily granted.
- Purchase of rum.** One hundred and fifteen pipes of rum has been purchased for the use of the garrison, when landed, and for the use of the detachment at this port.
- Fresh provisions plentiful.** The marines and convicts have had fresh provisions since in port, and as I found at Teneriffe that three-quarters of a pound of beef was not sufficient for a convict for the day, and that no butter or cheese could be procured here, the beef being exceeding good and very cheap, I ordered each person victualled by the Commissary a pound and a quarter of beef and a pound of rice, and to the children of the marines and convicts three-quarters of a pound of meat and a pound of rice, with vegetables, every day.
- Spirits.** The marines and their wives have had the usual quantity of spirits. The allowance for the convicts when at sea being so small was the reason I ordered them while in port the same allowance as the officers and men belonging to the garrison, spirits excepted.
- Cheap victualling.** The victualling all those who are under the inspection of the Commissary, including fixing and every other expense, amounts to no more than $3\frac{3}{4}$ d. a head per day.
- The price of spirits.** Wine is not to be bought at present but from those who retail it, there being none in store, consequently is dearer than in general; and the rum on our coming in, there being little in the place, rose more than five-and-twenty per cent.
- Wine.** Thirty pipes of wine is the quantity that was ordered for the hospital, but for the above reasons only 15 pipes have been purchased.
- A substitute for bread.** One hundred sacks of casada has been purchased, which will be issued to the convicts when the bread is expended, and will be cheaper to Government; it costs only 1 ff 0 20 — 5s. $8\frac{7}{8}$ d., and the sacks being of strong Russia, will be used hereafter in cloathing the convicts, many of whom are nearly naked.
- Musket-balls purchased.** As the Vice-King offered anything the King's stores furnished that might be wanted, ten thousand musquet-balls has been purchased from the arsenal, the Sirius not being able to supply the garrison with a sufficient quantity to serve till ball might be sent from England.

Before we sailed from Portsmouth two medicine-chests were fitted for the transports that had none, and at Teneriffe soap was bought to repay what the convicts had received before we sailed from England from the marines. These articles and some few others were too trifling to draw for on the Treasury, and were paid by me.

1787

2 Sept.

Medicine-chests and soap.

Some expenses have now attended the procuring seeds and plants that could not be purchased, and it will be necessary to satisfy those people whose store we have occupied with some tents that have been damaged and sent on shore to air, and where we have had officers and men since we have been here, with the timekeeper and the necessary instruments to determine its rate of going, as likewise the captain of the port, with his boat's crew, who, the day we came in, attended to give any assistance the transports might want, we then having only a light air of wind, and this I do having refused the paying the customary fees, which are paid by their own merchant's ships, as well as strangers. It is three pounds twelve shillings on coming in, the same on going out, and five shillings and sixpence a day while they remain at anchor in the port. This was demanded for the transports, but never insisted on, after I had said it could not be paid, as the ships had King's stores on board. And as these are such as do not permit vouchers, I have not thought it right to order the Commissary to pay them, but have drawn on the Treasury for £135, which will be sufficient for the whole. It is little more than half the sum that must have been paid for the store, had it been hired.

Expenses on shore.

Port charges.

With respect to the convicts, they have been all allowed the liberty of the deck in the day, and many of them during the night, which has kept them much healthier than could have been expected.

Convicts allowed on deck.

It has been necessary that the store-ships might receive the spirits to move part of the provisions from them into the transports, and I am sorry to say that what with some of the provisions being in very slight casks, and very little attention having been paid to the stowage, we have had much trouble in moving the casks, and some tents and slops that were only in wrappers were damaged. I fear many articles will be destroyed before they are landed, and which it is not now possible to prevent.

Provisions damaged.

Only fifteen convicts and one marine's child have died since we left England.

Deaths.

I have been able to procure all such fruits and plants as I think likely to thrive on the coast of New South Wales, particularly the coffee, Indigo, cotton, and cochineal.

Fruit-trees and plants.

I hope to sail to-morrow, as I only wait for the accounts to be settled with the contractor, and have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

1787

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

2 Sept.

Dear Nepean,

Rio Janeiro, Sept. 2nd, 1787.

Proposed
expedition
against
Monte
Vedio.

This is my last letter, as I hope to sail to-morrow. You know how much I was interested in the intended expedition against Monte Vedio, and that it was said that the Spaniards had more troops than I supposed. The following account I have from a person who was there all the war, and I am certain that the account is exact :—

One Regiment under	...	...	...	700
Four Companys of Artillery	...	...	...	400
Dragoons	...	...	...	400
Two Battalions of Infantry	...	...	...	700

These were divided on the north and south shores, and in different towns. Monte Vedio would not have been defended, as half these troops could not have been drawn together. Of this you will be so good as to inform the Lords Sydney and Landsdown; it will corroborate what I mentioned before I left town.

Exchange of
compliments.

The 21st being the Prince of Portugal's birthday, and the Vice-King receiving the compliments of all the officers, I waited on him with those I had presented to him on our arrival. The Sirius fired 21 guns, having the flag of Portugal hoisted at the fore-topmast-head, and the Union at the mizen. He seemed much pleased with this compliment, and we part perfectly satisfied with each other. Three slight shocks of an earthquake have been felt at Trinadade, where the Portuguese still keep a small garrison.

Earthquake.

I did intend to send you your wine and Lord Sydney's by this ship, but now think it will be better to let it go the voyage and send it by Shortland.

You will, my dear sir, remember me to your colleagues, and believe me, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Sirius, 2nd September, 1787.

Sir,

Rio Janeiro.

Rio.

You will please to inform the Right Hon^{ble} the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that I sailed from Sta. Crux the 10th of June, and when off Port Praya intended to have anchored for twenty-four hours in order to procure vegetables for the people, but light airs of wind, and a strong current setting to the S.W., making it doubtful if all the ships would be able to get in, I bore away, and the 5th of August anchored off this harbour with the Supply, tender, store-ships, and transports, of which I had the honor of informing their Lordships by a ship that past us for Lisbon. We got into the harbour the 6th.

Repairs.

The Sirius, since we came in, has had the spar and gun decks caulked, and which was absolutely necessary, the spar deck having never been caulked more than once, and both decks leaked very badly.

* A private letter.

Lieutenant Ball having reported the Supply as having too much head sail, and requested that two feet might be taken from the fore yard, and a cloth out of the fore sail, and that a reef might be taken from the fore topsail, and the topmast shortened, I have ordered it to be done. The foretop, which was rotten, has been repaired, and the main deck caulked. The master of the Sirius, Mr. Micah Morton, having unfortunately been ruptured from an accident he met with in unmooring the ship at Sta. Crux, has never been able to do any duty since we left that port, and the surgeon having represented to me that there did not appear any probability of his being able to return to his duty, I ordered the surgeons of the Sirius and Supply, with the surgeon of the intended settlement, to survey him; by their report, which I inclose, their Lordships will see the necessity of sending him home, and I beg leave to assure their Lordships that I have always found him a very sober diligent officer.

1787

2 Sept.

The master
of the Sirius
disabled.

Mr. James Keltie, a master in the Navy, who left England as mate of the Fishburn, has replaced Mr. Morton as master of the Sirius.

His
successor.

A midshipman, likewise, in the course of the voyage having met with a similar accident, and the surgeon thinking by his returning to England he might be cured, I have discharged him from the Sirius, and he returns with the master in a ship that has been to the southward on the whale fishery and has put into this port to repair.

A midship-
man sent
home.

I likewise discharge a midshipman, and who returns to England in the same ship, on account of a venereal complaint which being long neglected is not likely to be cured at sea.

Another
discharged.

The time-keeper has been put on shore under the care of Lieutenant Dawes with the instruments necessary to determine its rate of going, which since we left England appears to have been very regular; it loses at present only 0.95" more in the twenty-four hours than it did at Portsmouth, when it lost 1.35" in that time.

T'me-
keeper.

Rum has been purchased here for the garrison when landed. The transports are now ready for sea, and I intend sailing tomorrow. I inclose the state and condition of his Majesty's ship Sirius and the Supply, tender, with returns of the detachment and convicts, and I think it my duty to inform their Lordships, that every assistance we wanted has been most readily granted by the Vice-King. You will, sir, likewise inform their Lordships that the port charges, which is three pounds twelve shillings, paid by all merchant ships coming in, and the same going out of port, with five shillings and sixpence a day while they remain here, was demanded for the store-ships and transports, but not insisted on when I objected to its being paid as they were ships employed by Government.

Rum.

Port
charges.

Only fifteen convicts and one marine's child have died since we left England.

Deaths.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

1787

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

3 Sept.

My Dear Nepean,

Rio, September 3, 1787.

Politeness of
the
Vice-King.Drafts
on the
Treasury.

Wrotten.

Fowell.

The live
stock.

I have been prevented sailing this morn'g from the accounts not being yet finally settled, that is, the vouchers not yet sent off. I sail to-morrow, and at the Cape shall have more time, for here, as the only one that understands the language, I have been obliged to be linguist and Commissary. By the master of the Sirius you will have some private as well as public letters; and by a ship going to Lisbon you will receive this and copies of my public letters sent by the master, who, as he met with his accident in doing his duty on board the ship, will, I hope, get some little provision. I have told you in one of my letters how far the V.-King (the same who was here when I past for India) has carried his politeness, and that tho' I desired much to be recd. here as the capt. of the Sirius only, and for which I had a particular reason, he refused my request, and gave it out in orders that I recd. the same honor as himself, that is, as Capt-General. This has prevented my having any house on shore, and that for obvious reasons. I have endeavoured to explain to Mr. Rose why I have drawn on the Treasury for £135. The little matters paid by me when the ships were at Portsmouth, and the expences here in procuring seeds and plants that are not publicly sold, could not be paid for by the Commissary, nor would any satisfaction have been received from him for the island, as the Patrão Mor and his people.† To have hired a store on the island would have been more than the whole sum. The things have been granted as favors, but returns expected, and I made them first at my own expence, till I found I was a hundred pounds out of pocket, and then thought that Government had not been so very liberal to me as to make it necessary to pay such a compliment. I have been very unwilling to send Wrotten home, but the young man since he met with the accident has been anxious to return, and is not so steady as might be expected for his age. Fowell‡ is a very good young man, and improves very much. If I can preserve the seeds and plants procured here, I shall be very indifferent about those articles at the Cape. Sir Joseph Banks will receive from the master a small box that contains some plants he was very anxious to procure. The rams are in good health, and my breeding sows, as well as the ladys, seem well calculated for the end proposed. I intend making a very short stay at the Cape, as the ships are now in much better order than when they left England. Adieu, my dear friend; health and happiness attend

* A private letter.

† The letter at this point is not clear. The island referred to is Enchados, a small island in the harbour, upon which Lieutenant Dawes and two assistants landed for the purpose of checking the chronometer and making astronomical observations. Collins, vol. i, p. xxii. "Patrão Mor" signifies the intendant or captain of the port.

‡ Lieut. Fowell, of H.M.S. Sirius

you and your good little woman and child. Tell Pollock this is not a country for shells, and remember me to that family.

Yours, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

1787

3 Sept.

LIEUTENANT BLIGH TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)

Sir, Bounty, Spithead, Monday, 5th Nov., 1787.

5 Nov.

I have been very anxious to acquaint you of my arrival here, which I have now accomplished with some risk. I anchored here last night, after being drove on the coast of France in a very heavy gale. However, by persevering, I am now in readiness, or will be in three days, to receive my final orders. I once before made an attempt to get here,* but was glad to go into the Downs again, altho' of all other places it is one of the most disagreeable to be in. I think I cannot have much worse weather in going round Cape Horn, and it is with pleasure I tell you I think the ship very capable.† This also is another consolation to me, for my ideas of making a ship fit for sea and of those above were very different, and my conduct in troubling the Navy Board for alterations cannot be reprehensible, for had I not got ye masts, yards, and tops all altered I should now be getting ready to go into the harbour. The master is a very good man, and gives me every satisfaction, and I think between this and the latitude of 60° south I shall have them all in very good order. The conduct of Nelson‡ and the gardener is very satisfactory, and we all seem embark'd heartily in one cause, which I shall cherish as much as possible. I shall take 18 months' provisions, which, with other supplies, will do very well, and my present intention is that, as I shall be late round Cape Horn, not to depend on touching there, but complete my water, if convenient, at Falkland Islands, for if I get the least slant round the Cape I must make the most of it. Lord Howe, when I took leave of him, behaved very flatteringly to me, but he took from me a Mr. Brown you recommended, and was the best uncommissioned officer I had. He was sent to the Ariel, commanded by a Lieut. Moorsom, designed for some private service, who, I am informed, is to be made a master and commander. My surgeon, I believe, may be a very capable man, but his indolence and corpulency render him rather unfit for the voyage. I wish I may get him to change. The wind and weather is now very bad, and I fear will continue so for some days; but I assure you, sir, I will loose no time in proceeding on my voyage. As we have effectually got rid of that troublesome application about Mr. Lockhead, and if I find no possibility of getting rid of my

The
Bounty.

A "capable"
ship.

Arrange-
ments for
the voyage.

* The Bounty was ordered from Long Reach to Spithead, 15 October.

† The Bounty was unable to weather Cape Horn, and was taken round the Cape of Good Hope instead. Vide Bligh's letter to Banks, post, p. 269.

‡ The Bounty had been fitted out for the purpose of conveying the bread-fruit tree from Otaheite to the West Indies. Nelson was the botanist in charge of the plants.

1787

5 Nov.

A fresh
surgeon or a
surgeon's
mate.

surgeon, I think it would be very proper for me to endeavour to get some young man as surgeon's mate, and enter him as A.B., for I am aware how improper any application for one publicly would be at this crisis. I have just now waited on Lord Hood,* who has not yet received any orders concerning me. The Commissioner promises me every assistance, and I have no doubt but the trifles I have to do here will be soon accomplished. I shall take a pleasure of informing you of my progress as I go on, and I hope by the time my business is over here the wind will turn favorable. At present I could not move with it. I am particularly happy at receiving your letter of the 25th, and I trust nothing can prevent me from completing my voyage much to your satisfaction. Difficulties I laugh at whilst I have your countenance, and shall be always sufficiently repaid whilst I am admitted to subscribe myself,

Yours, &c.,

WM. BLIGH.

[At the foot of this letter is written in Sir Joseph Banks's hand : "I offered my interest to any surgeon's mate who would go out as able with C. Bligh."]

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

10 Nov.

The fleet at
the Cape.

Sir, Sirius, at the Cape of Good Hope, Nov. 10, 1787.

Supplies
purchased.

You will please to inform the Right Hon'ble the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that I sailed from Rio de Janeiro the 4th of September, and anchored here the 13th of October, with the ships under my command. Having immediately on my arrival requested permission to procure refreshments, and such provisions as were wanted for his Majesty's ship *Sirius* and the *Supply*, tender, I was informed that the crops of corn having failed the year before last the inhabitants had been reduced to the greatest distress, and that I could not be permitted to purchase any flour or bread. I, however, obtained an order for three days' bread for all the ships, and as I found on enquiry that the last year's crops had been very good, I requested by letter to the Governor and Council permission to purchase what provisions were wanted for the *Sirius* and *Supply*, as likewise corn for seed, and what was necessary for the live stock intended to be embarked at this place. The three days granted for the bread being expired, leave was given for three days longer, and which permission was afterwards continued till 23rd, when I received an answer from the Council, who had taken that time to deliberate on my letter of the 15th, granting permission to receive bread daily for the use of the ships while we remained in this port, and the same evening I received a letter from the Governor granting all my demands.

* Viscount Hood, one of the Lords of the Admiralty.

Our passage from Rio de Janeiro was very favourable. The number of sick on our arrival here was twenty marines and ninety-three convicts. The Sirius and Supply had only eight sick on board; and as all the ships were very amply supplied with soft bread, vegetables, and fresh meat, I did not think it necessary to land any of the sick. Their Lordships will see by the returns that there are few sick at present. We are now ready for sea. What live cattle the ships can stow are now getting on board, with such grain and seeds as was wanted, and I shall sail immediately. The remaining so long before I could obtain leave to procure the necessaries we wanted has detained me longer in this port than I wished, but it will, I hope, be the means of keeping the people in health for the rest of the passage.

I inclose a weekly account with the state and condition of the Sirius and Supply, as likewise returns of the detachment and convicts.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

THE REV. THOMAS WALSH TO LORD SYDNEY.*

My Lord,

You have been apprized of the desire of two clergymen of the Catholic persuasion which they have to instruct the convicts who are of their faith who are destined for Botany Bay. I beg leave to inform your Lordship of my sentiments concerning their request. There are not less, probably, than 300, ignorant, you may imagine, of every principle of duty to God and man. The number is great, and consequently constitutes an object of consequence to every man who has the happiness of his neighbour at heart. That the Catholics of this country are not only of inoffensive principles, but that they are zealously attached to the constitution of it, I may presume is well known to your Lordship. For my part, who am one of those clergymen who wish to take care of the convicts of my persuasion, I beg to acquaint your Lordship that if I be so happy as to be permitted to go that I trust my endeavours to bring these unhappy people to a proper sense of their duty as subjects and citizens may be attended with some salutary consequences. They earnestly desire some Catholic clergyman may go with them, and I trust to the known humanity of Government that a request which seems to promise some hopes of their reformation will not be denied. It is well known that these people will not pay the attention to other ministers which they do to their own. Perhaps, also, the presence of such may be of great use to make them readily obey every order of their governors, and I have no doubt but our conduct will meet the approbation of them.

I sincerely pity these poor people, not so much for the disagreeable situation into which they have brought themselves, as for the misdemeanours which have made them deserving of it.

* This letter is not dated, but it was written apparently in the year 1787.

1787

10 Nov.

The voyage from Rio.

The sick not numerous.

Cattle, grain, and seed.

Catholic clergymen.

The Catholic convicts.

Desire of the convicts.

Value of ministers.

1787

The priests' mission.

Yet, I trust, if their ignorance be removed, and their obligations as men and Christians be forcibly inculcated to them, that this may be a means, under Providence, of their becoming useful to themselves, and perhaps afterwards to their country.

An appeal.

At least this I sincerely wish, nor do I think I can ever be as happy elsewhere as in the place of their destination, employed in using my endeavours to bring them out of the wretched state of depravity into which they have fallen. I entreat, therefore, most humbly that this, our request, may be granted.* Those poor people will bless and thank you. I shall take care that they be not forgetful of their obligations to Government and Lord Sydney.

I have, &c.,

My Lord,

THOMAS WALSHE, Priest.

Passages asked for.

We are not so presumptuous as to wish support from Government. We offer our voluntary services. We hope, however, not to offend in entreating for our passage.

CAPTAIN BLIGH TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)

3 Dec

Sir, Bounty, at Spithead, Decr. 3rd, 1787.

Weather-bound at Spithead.

Having met with contrary winds and bad weather since my sailing, I was not able to get farther than 7 leagues west of the Isle of Wight. The weather being very thick and the wind at west, I thought it not consistent with the good of the voyage to persist in keeping any longer at sea at this hazardous period of the year, and therefore came through the Needles and anchored. The wind blows still fresh at W.S.W., which gives me much uneasyness, knowing how late I am, which, if I was ever so negligent, would be a severe spur to get me clear of the channel, where one unfortunate gale may render all our plans abortive, but if there is any possibility of my getting away you may rely on my utmost exertion.†

I am, &c.,

WM. BLIGH.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Head-quarters, Sydney Cove,

1788

Sir,

26th April, 1788.

26 April.

As the surgeon volunteer who was put on board the *Lady Penrhyn* transport to attend the convicts was found to be very unequal to the task, I was under the necessity of desiring Mr. Arthur Bowes, surgeon of that transport, to take charge of the medicines, and attend to the sick, which he did with great attention. I therefore beg leave to recommend him to your notice, as he has not received any recompense for his trouble.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

Surgeon Bowes.

* No reply to this letter has been found amongst the records, but the proposal was not entertained.

† The Bounty did not clear the Channel until the 23rd December.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.*

1788

Sydney Cove, New South Wales,

15 May.

My Lord,

May 15th, 1788.

I had the honor of informing your Lordship, by Captain Cox, who was returning to Europe from Madrass, that I was ready to sail from the Cape of Good Hope, and which I did with the ships under my command the 12th of November. The 25th, being eighty leagues to the eastward of the Cape, I left the Sirius, and went on board the Supply, tender, in hopes, by leaving the convoy, to gain sufficient time to examine the country round Botany Bay, and fix on the most eligible situation for the colony before the transports arrived. At the same time I ordered the agent for the transport in the Alexander to separate from the convoy with that ship, the Scarborough and Friendship, they sailing better than the others. I had reason to expect their arrival soon after the Supply's, and by having the labour of the convicts they had on board much might be done in preparing for the landing the stores and provisions.

On board
the Supply

Major Ross now left the Sirius, and went on board the Scarborough, that he might be with that part of the detachment, which would probably be the first landed.

Major Ross
and the
Scar-
borough.

Captain Hunter in the Sirius was to follow with the storeships and the remainder of the transports, and he had the necessary instructions for his future proceedings, should the Supply meet with any accident.

Captain
Hunter and
the Sirius.

The westerly winds we now had continued till the 3rd of January, when we saw the coast of New South Wales, but the winds, which had been so favourable, having seldom been to the eastward, and then for a few hours only, blowing from the N.W. to the S.W., generally very strong gales, now left us, and we had variable winds, with a current that at times set very strong to the southward, so that we did not arrive at Botany Bay before the 18th.

Sighting the
Australian
coast.

The Alexander, Scarborough, and Friendship came in the next day, and the Sirius, with the rest of the ships, the day after. Those ships had continued very healthy.

Arrival at
Botany Bay.

The Supply, sailing very badly, had not permitted my gaining the advantage hoped for, but I began to examine the bay as soon as we anchored, and found, that tho' extensive, it did not afford shelter to ships from the easterly winds; the greater part of the bay being so shoal that ships of even a moderate draught of water are obliged to anchor with the entrance of the bay open, and are exposed to a heavy sea that rolls in when it blows hard from the eastward.

No shelter
for ships.

Several small runs of fresh water were found in different parts of the bay, but I did not see any situation to which there was not some very strong objection. The small creek that is in the northern part of the bay runs a considerable way into the country,

Unsatisfac-
tory reports.

* The first despatch sent from Sydney.

1788

15 May.

Point
Sutherland.

but it had only water for a boat. The sides of this creek are frequently overflowed, and the lowlands a swamp. The western branch runs up for a considerable distance, but the officers I sent to examine it could not find any water, except in very small drains.

The best situation that offered was near Point Sutherland, where there was a small run of good water; but the ground near it, as well as a considerable part of the higher ground, was spongy, and the ships could not approach this part of the bay.

Port Jack-
son to be
examined.

Several good situations offered for a small number of people, but none that appeared calculated for our numbers, and where the stores and provisions could be landed without a great loss of time. When I considered the bay's being so very open, and the probability of the swamps rendering the most eligible situation unhealthy, I judged it advisable to examine Port Jackson; but that no time might be lost if I did not succeed in finding a better harbour, and a proper situation for the settlement, the ground near Point Sutherland was in the meantime to be cleared and preparations made for landing under the direction of the Lieutenant-Governor.

Three
exploring
parties.

As the time in which I might be absent, if I went in the Supply, must have been very uncertain, I went round with three boats, taking with me Captain Hunter and several officers, that by examining different parts of the port at the same time less time might be lost.

"The
finest har-
bour in the
world."

We got into Port Jackson early in the afternoon, and had the satisfaction of finding the finest harbour in the world, in which a thousand sail of the line may ride in the most perfect security, and of which a rough survey, made by Captain Hunter and the officers of the Sirius after the ships came round, may give your Lordship some idea.

Shipping
accommo-
dation.

The different coves were examined with all possible expedition. I fixed on the one that had the best spring of water, and in which the ships can anchor so close to the shore that at a very small expence quays may be made at which the largest ships may unload.

Sydney
Cove.

This cove, which I honoured with the name of Sydney,* is about a quarter of a mile across at the entrance, and half a mile in length.

We returned to Botany Bay the third day, where I received a very unfavourable account of the ground that was clearing.

The fleet in
Port Jack-
son.

The ships immediately prepared to go round, and the 25th—seven days after I arrived in the Supply—I sailed in her for Port Jackson, leaving Captain Hunter to follow with the transports, it then blowing too strong for them to work out of the bay. They joined me the next evening, and all the transports were moored in the cove.†

* After Lord Sydney, Secretary of State.

† This was the 26th January, the day now observed as Anniversary Day. The British flag was unfurled at the head of Sydney Cove, toasts were drunk, and volleys of musketry fired, but the formal proclamation of the Colony did not take place till the 7th February.

Two sail had appeared off Botany Bay the 24th, under French colours, and anchored there before the Sirius left it—the Boussole and the Astrolabe. These ships were commanded by Monsr. La Perouse, who, having express'd a desire of sending letters to Europe, I sent an officer over, it being only eight miles, to tell him in what time it was probable the ships might sail. Captain Clonard had left the ship in one of their boats the same morning, and Lieut. Shortland, the agent for the transports, is charged with the letters he brought. They are addressed to the French Ambassador. The officer I sent over was informed that Monsr. La Perouse sailed from France in June, 1785; that he had been to Sta. Catherina, had run along the coast of Chili and California, and had been at Easter Island, Noatka Sound, Cook's River, Kamtschatka, Manilla, Isles des Navigateurs, Sandwich, and the Friendly Islands. He had, likewise, anchored off Norfolk Island, but could not land on account of the surf. In this voyage he had not lost any of his people by sickness, but had lost two boats' crews in a surf on the north-west part of America, and at Maouna (one of the Isles des Navigateurs) Monsr. De Langle, capt. of the Astrolabe, was cut off by the natives, with twelve officers and men. Many were wounded, and two long-boats he had on shore destroyed. The ships were then under sail, and De Langle went on shore to fill some water-casks. The boats were suffered to ground, and the natives, with whom they had been on the most friendly terms, and who had supply'd them with refreshments in the greatest abundance, attacked them when they were endeavouring to get them afloat. He had forty officers and men with him, and the ships, being round a point of land, knew nothing of the accident till the small boats returned. These ships, while in Botany Bay, set up two long-boats, the frames of which they had brought from Europe. They sailed the 10th of March, I believe to return to the northward.

1788

15 May.

La Perouse
in Botany
Bay.Voyage of
the Boussole
and the
Astrolabe.Misfortunes
of the
French.Departure of
La Perouse.

The clearing the ground for the people and for erecting store-houses was begun as soon as the ships got round, a labour of which it will be hardly possible to give your Lordship a just idea.

The necks of land that form the different coves, and near the water for some distance, are in general so rocky that it is surprising such large trees should find sufficient nourishment, but the soil between the rocks is good, and the summits of the rocks, as well as the whole country round us, with few exceptions, are covered with trees, most of which are so large that the removing them off the ground after they are cut down is the greatest part of the labour; and the convicts, naturally indolent, having none to attend them but overseers drawn from amongst themselves, and who fear to exert any authority, makes this work go on very slowly.

Your Lordship will permit me to observe that our situation tho' so very different from what might be expected, is nevertheless

Clearing the
ground.Slow
progress.The best
situation
available.

1788

15 May.

No large
water-
courses.

Cultivation

Outbreak of
scurvy.Settlement
of Norfolk
Island.King as
Command-
ant.

Broken Bay.

less the best that offered. My instructions did not permit me to detain the transports a sufficient length of time, to examine the coast to any considerable distance, it was absolutely necessary to be certain of a sufficient quantity of fresh water, in a situation that was healthy, and which the ships might approach within a reasonable distance for the conveniency of landing the stores and provisions, and I am fully persuaded that we should never have succeeded had it been attempted to move them only one mile from where they were landed. There are some parts of this harbour where the trees stand at a considerable distance from each other, and where there are small runs of water, which shall be cultivated when our numbers permit, and when the country inland can be examined. I make no doubt but some good situations will be found that have water, which I have never yet been able to find, either in Botany Bay or in this harbour, but in very small streams.

Some land that is near, and where the trees stand at a considerable distance from each other, will, as soon as convicts can be spared, be cultivated by the officers for raising a little corn for their stock; and this I have endeavoured to promote as much as possible, for I fear the consequences if a ship should be lost in her passage out with provisions.

As there are only twelve convicts who are carpenters, as many as could be procured from the ships have been hired to work on the hospital and store-houses. The people were healthy when landed, but the scurvy has, for some time, appeared amongst them, and now rages in a most extraordinary manner. Only sixteen carpenters could be hired from the ships, and several of the convict carpenters were sick. It was now the middle of February; the rains began to fall very heavy, and pointed out the necessity of hutting the people; convicts were therefore appointed to assist the detachment in this work.

February the 14th the Supply sailed for Norfolk Island, with Philip Gidley King, second lieutenant of his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, for the purpose of settling that island. He only carried with him a petty officer, surgeon's mate, two marines, two men who understood the cultivation of flax, with nine men and six women convicts. Their number shall be increased when a small detachment of marines can be spared. I have the honour of transmitting your Lordship a copy of the order and instructions given to that officer,* and I beg leave to recommend him as an officer of merit, and whose perseverance in that or any other service may be depended upon.

The 2d of March I went with a long-boat and cutter to examine the broken land mentioned by Captain Cook, about

* Post, pp. 136-138. King was Superintendent and Commandant of Norfolk Island from March, 1788, to March, 1790; Lieutenant-Governor from November, 1791, to October, 1796; Governor of New South Wales, from September, 1800, to August, 1806.

eight miles to the northward of Port Jackson. We slept in the boat that night within a rocky point, in the north-west part of the bay (which is very extensive), as the natives, tho' very friendly, appeared to be numerous; and the next day, after passing a bar that had only water for small vessels, entered a very extensive branch, from which the ebb tide came out so strong that the boats could not row against it in the stream; and here was deep water. It appeared to end in several small branches, and in a large lagoon that we could not examine for want of time to search for a channel for the boats amongst the banks of sand and mud. Most of the land on the upper part of this branch was low and full of swamps. Pelicans and variety of birds were here seen in great numbers. Leaving this branch, which I called the north-west branch, we proceeded across the bay and went into the south-west branch, which is very extensive, and from which a second branch runs to the westward, affording shelter for any number of ships, and as far as we examined there is water for the largest ships, having seven fathoms at the entrance, and deep water as you go up. But the almost continual rains prevented any kind of survey. Here the land is much higher than at Port Jackson, more rocky, and equally covered with timber, large trees growing on the summits of mountains that appear to be accessible to birds only.

Immediately round the headland that forms the southern entrance into the bay there is a third branch, which I think the finest piece of water I ever saw, and which I honoured with the name of Pitt Water.* It is, as well as the south-west branch, of sufficient extent to contain all the Navy of Great Britain, but has only eighteen feet at low water on a narrow bar which runs across the entrance. Within the bar there are from seven to fifteen fathom water. The land here is not so high as in the south-west branch, and there are some good situations where the land might be cultivated. We found small springs of water in most of the coves, and saw three cascades falling from a height which the rains then rendered inaccessible. I returned to Port Jackson after being absent eight days in the boats. Some of the people feeling the effects of the rain, which had been almost constant, prevented my returning by land, as I intended, in order to examine a part of the country which appeared open and free from timber.

Lieutenant Ball, who commands the Supply, arrived the 19th of March. He made Norfolk Island on the 29th of February, and was five days before a place could be found at which it was possible to land the provisions, and saw very few places at which it was possible to land a man, so completely do the rocks surround that island. They succeeded, however, having found a small opening in a reef that runs across a bay that is at

1788

15 May

Brisbane
WaterThe
Hawkes-
bury.

Pittwater.

Return to
Port
JacksonNews from
Norfolk
Island.

* In honor of the Prime Minister.

1788

15 May.

The whole
island a
forest.

Valuable
timber.

Lord Howe
Island.

Discharge of
transports.

The first
Criminal
Court.

Incorrigible
thieves.

Agriculture
under
difficulties.

Loss of live
stock.

the south end of the island, and the six months' provisions were all safely landed. Lieut. King describes this island as one intire wood, without a single acre of clear land that had been found when the Supply left them, and says that the pine-trees rise fifty and sixty feet before they shoot out any branches. There are several other kinds of timber on the island, which, as far as he could examine it, was a rich black mould, with great quantities of pumice-stone. The trees are so bound together by a kind of supple-jack that the penetrating into the interior parts of the island was very difficult. Several good springs of water were found, and I apprehend his Majesty's ships in the East Indies may be supplied from this island with masts and yards, which will render it a very valuable acquisition. The cultivation of the flax-plant will be attended to when people can be sent to clear the ground.

A small island being seen on the passage to Norfolk Island, Lieutenant Ball examined it on his return, and says it abounds in turtle, but unfortunately has no good anchoring-ground. He named it after Lord Howe.* It is in 31° 36' south latitude, and 159° east longitude. Part of this island may be seen sixteen leagues, and a rock that is five leagues to the southward and eastward of the island may be seen eighteen leagues.

The Charlotte, Scarborough, and Lady Penrhyn, transports, were cleared of all their stores and discharged from Government employ the 24th and 25th of March, and left at liberty to proceed to China when they judged proper. The other ships remain till store-houses can be finished.

Your Lordship will not be surprized that I have been under the necessity of assembling a Criminal Court. Six men were condemned to death. One, who was the head of the gang, was executed the same day; the others I reprieved. They are to be exiled from the settlement, and when the season permits I intend they shall be landed near the South Cape, where, by their forming connexions with the natives, some benefit may accrue to the public. These men had frequently robbed the stores and the other convicts. The one who suffered and two others were condemned for robbing the stores of provisions the very day they received a week's provisions, and at which time their allowance, as settled by the Navy Board, was the same as the soldiers, spirits excepted; the others for robbing a tent, and for stealing provisions from other convicts.

The great labour in clearing the ground will not permit more than eight acres to be sown this year with wheat and barley. At the same time the immense number of ants and field-mice will render our crops very uncertain.

Part of the live stock brought from the Cape, small as it was, has been lost, and our resource in fish is also uncertain. Some days

* Admiral Howe, First Lord of the Admiralty.

great quantities are caught, but never sufficient to save any part of the provisions; and at times fish are scarce.

1788

15 May.

Your Lordship will, I presume, see the necessity of a regular supply of provisions for four or five years, and of clothing, shoes, and frocks in the greatest proportion. The necessary implements for husbandry and for clearing the ground brought out will with difficulty be made to serve the time that is necessary for sending out a fresh supply.

Provisions
and clothing
wanted for
four or five
years.

The labour of the convicts shall be, as is directed, for the public stock, but it is necessary to permit a part of the convicts to work for the officers, who, in our present situation, would otherwise find it impossible to clear a sufficient quantity of ground to raise what is absolutely necessary to support the little stock they have; and I am to request that your Lordship will be pleased to direct me to what extent that indulgence may be granted the officers of the garrison.

Convict
labour.

The Sirius shall be sent to the northward to barter for stock, and which shall be employed solely for the purpose of increasing the breed of such cattle as she may procure. The Supply is no ways calculated for this service, as in the least sea her decks are full of water.

The Sirius to
go north for
live stock.

The very small proportion of females makes the sending out an additional number absolutely necessary, for I am certain your Lordship will think that to send for women from the Islands, in our present situation, would answer no other purpose than that of bringing them to pine away in misery.

More women
required.

I have had the honor of informing your Lordship that this harbour is, in extent and security, very superior to any other that I have ever seen—containing a considerable number of coves, formed by narrow necks of land, mostly rocks, covered with timber, and the face of the country, when viewed from the harbour, is the same, with few exceptions. The neck of land between the harbour and the coast is mostly sand. Between that part of the harbour in which the settlement is made and Botany Bay, after you pass the wood which surrounds us, and which in some parts is a mile and a half, in others three miles across, the country is a poor sandy heath, full of swamps.

Advantages
of Port
Jackson.

The country towards the head of the bay* is covered with timber, and here the land appears less rocky, and the trees stand in some parts at a greater distance; but the head of the bay being left dry in several parts at low water, and the winds being obstructed by the woods and the different windings of the channel, must, I conceive, render this part of the harbour unhealthy till the country can be cleared. As far as the eye can reach to the westward the country appears to be one continued wood.

Country
wants
clearing.

The timber is well described in Captain Cook's voyage, but unfortunately it has one very bad quality, which puts us to great

Refractory
timber.

* Port Jackson.

1788

15 May.

Beautiful
vegetation.

Flax.

Botanist and
gardener
wanted.Freestone,
and clay
for bricks.The natives
shy.Phillip's
observations
upon them.Confidence
recipro-
cated.

inconvenience; I mean the large gum-tree, which splits and warps in such a manner when used green, and to which necessity obliged us, that a store-house boarded up with this wood is rendered useless. The timber which in its growth resembles the fir-tree warps less, but we are already obliged to fetch it from some distance, and it will not float. There are a variety of palm-trees, and the heaths that are free from timber are covered with a variety of the most beautiful flowering shrubs, wild celery, spinages, samphose[samphire], a small wild fig, and several berries, which have proved very wholesome, particularly the leaves of a small shrub which is found in such plenty that it has not yet failed us as most of the others have done. What seeds could be collected are sent to Sir Joseph Banks, as likewise the red gum taken from the large gum-tree by tapping, and the yellow gum which is found on the dwarf palm-tree. The small quantity of flax that has been procured is sufficient to show the quality, but the flax-plant described by Capt. Cook I have never met with, nor had the botanists that accompanied Mons. La Perouse found it when I saw them, and which was some time after they arrived; and here, my Lord, I must beg leave to observe, with regret, that being myself without the smallest knowledge of botany, I am without one botanist, or even an intelligent gardener, in the colony; it is not therefore in my power to give more than a very superficial account of the produce of this country, which has such variety of plants that I cannot, with all my ignorance, help being convinced that it merits the attention of the naturalist and the botanist.

The stone of this country is of three sorts: Freestone, which appears equal to Portland stone, a bad firestone, and a stone that appears to contain a large proportion of iron. We have good clay for bricks, but no chalk or limestone has yet been found.

With respect to the natives, it was my determination from my first landing that nothing less than the most absolute necessity should ever make me fire upon them, and tho' persevering in this resolution has at times been rather difficult, I have hitherto been so fortunate that it never has been necessary. Mons. La Perouse, while at Botany Bay, was not so fortunate. He was obliged to fire on them, in consequence of which, with the bad behaviour of some of the transports' boats and some convicts, the natives have lately avoided us, but proper measures are taken to regain their confidence.

The few hours I have to collect and put into method the observations I have made of these people will, I hope, excuse me to your Lordship for sending only extracts from my journal, as they have been set down when the little incidents occurred, and from which a more just opinion of these people may be drawn than I should perhaps be able to give.

When I first landed in Botany Bay the natives appeared on the beach, and were easily persuaded to receive what was offered

them, and, tho' they came armed, very readily returned the confidence I placed in them, by going to them alone and unarmed, most of them laying down their spears when desired; and while the ships remained in Botany Bay no dispute happened between our people and the natives. They were all naked, but seemed fond of ornaments, putting the beads or red baize that were given them round their heads or necks. Their arms and canoes being described in "Captain Cook's Voyage," I do not trouble your Lordship with any description of them.

1788

15 May.

Phillip and
the natives.

When I first went in the boats to Port Jackson the natives appeared armed near the place at which we landed, and were very vociferous, but, like the others, easily persuaded to accept what was offered them, and I persuaded one man, who appeared to be the chief or master of the family, to go with me to that part of the beach where the people were boiling their meat. When he came near the marines, who were drawn up near the place, and saw that by proceeding he should be separated from his companions, who remained with several officers at some distance, he stopped, and with great firmness seemed by words and acting to threaten if they offered to take any advantage of his situation.

A friendly
chief.

He then went on with me to examine what was boiling in the pot, and expressed his admiration in a manner that made me believe he intended to profit from what he saw, and which I made him understand he might very easily by the help of some oyster-shells. I believe they know no other way of dressing their food but by broiling, and they are seldom seen without a fire, or a piece of wood on fire, which they carry with them from place to place, and in their canoes, so that I apprehend they find some difficulty in procuring fire by any other means with which they are acquainted.

The boats, in passing near a point of land in the harbour, were seen by a number of men, and twenty of them waded into the water unarmed, received what was offered them, and examined the boats with a curiosity that gave me a much higher opinion of them than I had formed from the behaviour of those seen in Captain Cook's voyage, and their confidence and manly behaviour

Intrepidity
of the
blacks.

made me give the name of Manly Cove to this place. The same people afterwards joined us where we dined: they were all armed with lances, two with shields and swords—the latter made of wood, the gripe small, and I thought less formidable than a good stick. As their curiosity made them very troublesome when we were preparing our dinner, I made a circle round us. There was little difficulty in making them understand that they were not to come within it, and they then sat down very quiet. The white clay rubbed on the upper part of the face of one of these men had the appearance of a mask; and a woman that appeared on some rocks near which the boats passed was marked with white on the face, neck, and breasts, in such a manner as to render her

Manly Cove.

The savage
described.

1788

15 May.

Subjection
of the
women.*The entente
cordiale.*Curious
aboriginal
customs.Ill-treat-
ment of the
women.

the most horrid figure I ever saw. They are not often seen marked in this manner, and it is done only on some particular occasions. Several women landed from their canoes the morning the boats stopp'd in a small bay near the entrance of the harbour, when I was going to examine the coast to the northward, and three of them were very big with child. Ribbons, baize, &c.. they tied round their necks when they were given to them, Several of them had children with them in the canoes. They appeared to be less chearful than the men, and under great subjection. Two canoes with three women in each, and one canoe with a man and woman, came off to us when we were a mile from the land, and came alongside the boat to receive some fish-hooks and lines which were offered them.

In Broken Bay several women came down to the beach with the men where we landed, one of which, a young woman, was very talkative and remarkably cheerful. They all readily assisted us in making a fire, and behaved in the most friendly manner. In a bay in which we landed to haul the seine many of the natives joined us, and I now observed that the women had lost two joints of the little finger of the left hand. As they appeared to be all married women, I supposed it to be a part of the marriage ceremony, but in going into a hut where there were several women and children who did not seem inclined to show themselves, I found one woman, who appeared to have had children, and a very old woman, on neither of whom this operation had been performed. There was likewise a child of five or six years of age that had lost the two joints. It is the women only that suffer this operation, which, as it must be performed with the shell that serves them, when fixed at the end of a short stick, as a chisel for pointing their spears and for separating the oysters from the rocks, must be a painful one. And as it is only on the little finger of the left hand that it is performed it cannot be any part of the marriage ceremony, for I have seen several women with child whose fingers were perfect, and, as I before observed, a female child of five or six years of age that had suffered the operation. I likewise saw some very young female children whose fingers were perfect. The loins of many of the women appeared as if they had something of a scrofulous disorder, but which I thought might be the marks still remaining of a chastisement. They certainly are not treated with any very great tenderness, and I believe are mostly employed in the canoes, where I have seen them with very young infants at the breast. They appear very obedient to the men, and as they are the weakest, so in this state of nature they appear to be treated as the inferior. The women, as well as the men, seem fond of little ornaments, but which they soon lay aside, and the talkative lady, when she joined us in her canoe the day after we first landed, stood up and gave us a song

that was not unpleasing. As most of the women have lost the two first joints of the little finger on the left hand, so most of the men want the right front tooth in the upper jaw, and have the gristle that separates the nostrils perforated, frequently having a piece of stick or a bone thrust through, and which does not add to their beauty. This is general, but I saw some very old men that had not lost the tooth, and whose noses were not perforated for this ornament. On my showing them that I wanted a front tooth it occasioned a general clamour, and I thought gave me some little merit in their opinion. Their bodies, chiefly about the breasts and arms, are scarified, and sometimes the skin is raised for several inches from the flesh, appearing as if it was filled with wind, forming a round surface of more than a quarter of an inch in diameter. They have scars, likewise, on different parts of the body, and frequently one on the instep; nor does the head always escape, for one of them, putting aside the hairs on the fore part of the head, showed a scar, and then, pointing to one on the foot and those on different parts of the body, gave us to understand that he was honoured by these marks from head to foot. The scars the men are fond of showing, but I did not think that the women seemed to be fond of showing the mutilated fingers, and sometimes found it rather difficult to know whether they had lost the joint or not, for, though they had not the smallest idea that one part of the body required concealment more than the other, they appeared timid, would not approach us so readily as the men did, and sometimes they would not land from their canoes, but made signs for us to give what we offered them to the men.

When the south branch of Broken Bay was first visited we had some difficulty in getting round the headland that separates the two branches, having very heavy squalls of wind and rain, and where we attempted to land there was not sufficient water for the boat to approach the rocks, on which were standing an old man and a youth. They had seen us labour hard to get under the land, and after pointing out the deepest water for the boats, brought us fire, and going with two of the officers to a cave at some distance, the old man made use of every means in his power to make them go in with him, but which they declined; and this was rather unfortunate, for it rained hard, and the cave was the next day found to be sufficiently large to have contained us all, and which he certainly took great pains to make them understand. When this old man saw us prepare for sleeping on the ground, and clearing away the bushes, he assisted, and was the next morning rewarded for his friendly behaviour. Here we saw a woman big with child that had not lost the joints of the little finger.

When we returned, two days afterwards, to the spot where the old man had been so friendly he met us with a dance and a song

1788

15 May.

Disfiguring
practices.Scarifica-
tion.Timidity of
the women.A friendly
proposal
declined.

1788

15 May.

*Meum and
turn.*

of joy. His son was with him. A hatchet and several presents were made them, and as I intended to return to Port Jackson the next day every possible means were taken to secure his friendship; but when it was dark he stole a spade, and was caught in the fact. I thought it necessary to show that I was displeased with him, and therefore, when he came to me, pushed him away, and gave him two or three slight slaps on the shoulder with the open hand, at the same time pointing to the spade. This destroyed our friendship in a moment, and seizing a spear he came close up to me, poised it, and appeared determined to strike; but whether from seeing that his threats were not regarded—for I chose rather to risk the spear than fire on him—or from anything the other natives said who surrounded him, after a few moments he dropped his spear and left us. This circumstance is mentioned to show that they do not want personal courage, for several officers and men were then near me. He returned the next morning with several others, and seemed desirous of being taken notice of; but he was neglected, whilst hatchets and several other articles were given to the others.

Courage of
the natives.

A fish diet.

The men hang in their hair the teeth of dogs and other animals, lobsters' claws, and several small bones, which they secure by gum; but I never saw the women do this. Their food is chiefly fish. The shark, I believe, they never eat. The fern root, wild fig, and the kernels of a large fruit that is not unlike a pine-apple, but which when eaten by the French seamen occasioned violent retchings. Their hooks are made from shells, and their lines and nets, I believe, from the flax-plant;* but I have some that were made from the fur of some animal, and others that appeared to be made of cotton. The craw-fish and lobsters they catch in small hoop nets, the making of which shows some art; yet they have no kind of cloathing. At the same time, they appear to be sensible of the cold, and to dislike the rain very much, putting on their heads when it rains a piece of bark, under which I have seen them shiver. Their huts are generally surrounded by oyster and muscle shells, and their bodies smell of oil. They cannot be called a very cleanly people, yet I have seen one of them, after having in his hand a piece of pork, hold out his fingers for others to smell, with strong marks of disgust; and tho' they seldom refused bread or meat if offered them, I have never been able to make them eat with us, and when they left us they generally threw away the bread and meat; but fish they always accepted, and would broil and eat it.

Absence of
clothing.No taste for
bread or
meat.Mode of
burial.

The ground having been seen raised in several places, as is common in England, where poor people are buried I had one of these graves opened, and from the ashes had no doubt but that they burn their dead. From the appearance of the ashes, the body must be laid at length only a few inches below the surface, and

is, with the wood ashes made by burning the body, covered lightly over with mould, fern, and a few stones. A grave was opened by Captain Hunter, in which part of a jawbone was found, not consumed by the fire, but we have seen very few of these graves, and none near their huts.

1788

15 May.

It is not possible to determine with any accuracy the number of natives, but I think that in Botany Bay, Port Jackson, Broken Bay, and the intermediate coast they cannot be less than one thousand five hundred.

Number of
the native
population.

In going to examine a cove near the entrance of the harbour (Shell Cove) I found a passage with deep water into a branch of the harbour that runs to the north-west, and finding on examining that there was a run of fresh water that came from the westward, I went a few days after to examine the source. I landed with four days' provision, several officers, and a small party of marines, and found to the northward of this part of the harbour a large lake, which we examined, tho' not without great labour, for it is surrounded with a bog and large marsh, in which we were frequently up to the middle. There we saw a black swan; it was larger than the common swan, and when it rose, after being fired at, the wings appeared to be edged with white; there is some red on the bill, and it is a very noble bird. With great labour, in three days we got round the swamps and marshes, from which all the fresh water drains that this harbour is supplied with.

Lake
Narrabeen.

The country we past thro' when we left the low grounds was the most rocky and barren I ever saw; the ascending and descending of the mountains being practicable only in particular places, but covered with flowering shrubs; and when about fifteen miles from the sea-coast we had a very fine view of the mountains inland, the northernmost of which I named Carmarthen Hills,* and the southernmost Lansdowne Hills.† A mountain between I called Richmond Hill,‡ and from the rising of these mountains I did not doubt but that a large river would be found, in search of which I set off the 22nd of April, with six days' provision. We were eleven officers and men, and landed near the head of the harbour. Here the country was good, but we soon came to a close cover, that we endeavoured for some time to get thro', but were obliged to return, and the next day past this cover by keeping along the banks of a small creek for about four miles. The three following days we proceeded to the westward, finding the country in general as fine as any I ever saw, the trees growing from twenty to forty feet from each other, and, except in particular places where the soil was stony and very poor, no underwood. The

Carmar-
then and
Lansdowne
Hills.

Fine
country to
the
westward.

* Named after the Marquis of Carmarthen, afterwards Duke of Leeds, who was Secretary of State for the Foreign Department, and administered the affairs of the colonies during a part of the year 1783.

† Named after the Marquis of Lansdowne (Earl of Shelburne).

‡ Named, it is supposed, after the Duke of Richmond, then Master-General of the Ordnance.

1788

15 May.

Exploration
checked.Land fit for
cultivation.Hardships of
exploring.Good
country
near the
settlement.

Ganyahs.

Trees on
fire.

country thro' which we past was mostly level, or only rising in small hills, which gave it a pleasing and picturesque appearance. The fifth day we got to a rising ground, and for the first time since we landed saw Carmarthen Hills, as, likewise, the hills to the southward. The country round this hill was so beautiful that I called the hill Bellevue, but the hills we wished to reach still appeared to be at least thirty miles from us. We had been five days out, and the want of provisions obliged us to return to the spot we left, by the track we went, otherwise our journey might be lengthened several days longer than we expected, by meeting with deep ravines, which we might be obliged to go round; and, I believe, no country can be more difficult to penetrate into than this is, tho' we always found pools of water that had remained after the rainy season, yet, as that could not be depended on, the water necessary for the day was always carried, which, with the provisions, arms, and a couple of tents, obliged every officer and man to carry a very heavy load, but which at present was so much lightened, and having the trees marked, in one day and a half we got back to the head of the harbour. We had been thirty miles to the westward, and had seen a country that might be cultivated with ease, and I intended returning in a few days in hopes of reaching the bottom of Landsdown or Carmarthen Hills; and the tracing of the natives inland, added to the hopes of finding a large river, which the appearance of the country promised, made everyone, notwithstanding the fatigue, desirous of being of the party; but my having when I went to Broken Bay, before I was perfectly recovered from the complaint which had been so general, slept several nights on the wet ground, brought on a pain in the side, which this journey increased so much that I found a few weeks' rest necessary after I returned.

I have had the honor of informing your Lordship that we now know there is a good country near us, and it shall be settled and cultivated early in the spring. In this journey I was surprized to find temporary huts made by the natives far inland, where they must depend solely on animals for food, and to procure which we have never yet seen any other weapon than the spear, which is certainly very inferior to our guns, and with which in this journey, tho' we were in want of provisions for the last two days, procured us barely sufficient for two meals. These huts consist of only a single piece of bark, about eleven feet in length, and from four to six feet in breadth, being, when stripped from the tree, bent in the middle, and sat up as children put up a card, affording shelter against a shower of rain if you sit under it. The hut may, perhaps, only be intended to hide them from the animals they lay in wait for. Near one of these huts we found some of the bones of a kangaroo, and saw several trees that were on fire; the natives, I suppose, had left them on our approach. I also found the root of fern, or something like the fern root, that had been chewed by

one of the natives ; he could only have left the spot a few minutes ; but we never saw any of them, and I believe their numbers in these woods must be very small. Whether they live in the woods by choice, or are driven from the society of those who inhabit the sea-coast, or whether they travel to a distant part of the country, I can form no judgment at present. The bark of many of the trees were cut in notches, and at the foot of one tree we found the fur of a flying squirrel. Many trees were seen with holes that had been enlarged by the natives to get at the animal, either the squirrel, kangaroo rat, or opossum, for the going in of which perhaps they wait under their temporary huts, and as the enlarging these holes could only be done with the shell they use to separate the oysters from the rocks, must require great patience. Against several trees where the hole was near the ground, but too high to reach, boughs of trees were laid for to climb up by. We saw many places where the natives had made fires, but at one place only were any oyster or muscle shells seen, and there not more than half-a-dozen, and no fish-bones, so that when they go inland they certainly do not carry any fish to support them.

1788

15 May.

How the natives catch small game.

In Botany Bay, Port Jackson, and Broken Bay we frequently saw the figures of men, shields, and fish roughly cut on the rocks ; and on the top of a mountain I saw the figure of a man in the attitude they put themselves in when they are going to dance, which was much better done than I had seen before, and the figure of a large lizard was sufficiently well executed to satisfy every one what animal was meant.

Aboriginal carving.

In all the country thro' which I have passed I have seldom gone a quarter of a mile without seeing trees which appear to have been destroyed by fire. We have seen very heavy thunderstorms, and I believe the gum-tree strongly attracts the lightning, but the natives always make their fire, if not before their own huts, at the root of a gum-tree, which burns very freely, and they never put a fire out when they leave the place.

Traces of fire.

Near some water we saw the dung of an animal that fed on grass, and which I thought could not be less than a horse. Kangaroos were frequently seen, but very shy, and it is a little extraordinary that more of these animals are seen near the camp than in any other part of the country, notwithstanding they are fired at almost daily. Black swans are found on most of the lakes, and a bird as large as the ostrich was killed while I was at Broken Bay. It differs both from the ostrich and the emu. Several have been seen, but they are very shy, and much swifter than the greyhounds. Here are wild ducks, teal, and quails, with great variety of small birds.

Plenty of game.

Black swans.

Wild ducks.

On my return from this excursion I had the mortification to find that five ewes and a lamb had been killed in the middle of the day, and very near the camp, I apprehend by some of the native dogs.

Sheep killed by native dogs.

1788

15 May.

Departure of
transports
for China—
the Supply
to Lord
Howe
Island.

The beginning of May the rainy season was once more supposed to be set in, but after a week we had fine weather.

The three transports for China* sailed the 5th, 6th, and 8th of May; and the Supply, having been caulked, sailed the 6th to Lord Howe Island, to endeavour to procure turtle, in hopes of checking the scurvy, with which most of the people are affected, and near two hundred rendered incapable of doing any work. It is not possible to send the Sirius to the northward, for she must then have her carpenters, and only three of those hired from the transports now remain; and tho' the detachment began to build barracks for the use of the men and huts for the officers the 14th of February, and near a hundred convicts were given to assist in this work, they are not yet finished, nor is the hospital or the store-house that is to receive the provisions still remaining on board three transports, and on these works the carpenters of the Sirius are employed. I have before pointed out the great labour in clearing the ground as one cause of our slow progress.

Buildings.

Your Lordship will, I hope, excuse the confused manner in which I have in this letter given an account of what has past since I left the Cape of Good Hope. It has been written at different times, and my situation at present does not permit me to begin so long a letter again, the canvas house I am under being neither wind nor water proof.

Writing
under
difficulties.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

12 Feb.

GOVERNMENT OF NORFOLK ISLAND.

By His Excellency Arthur Phillip, Esq., Governor-in-Chief and Captain-General in and over his Majesty's territory of New South Wales and its dependencies, &c., &c., &c.

King's ap-
pointment.
to Norfolk
Island.

By virtue of the power and authority vested in me, I do hereby constitute and appoint you, Philip Gidley King, Superintendant and Commandant of Norfolk Island, and of the settlement to be made thereon.†

You are therefore carefully and diligently to discharge the duty of Superintendant and Commandant of the same, by doing and performing all and every such instructions as you have, or may hereafter, from time to time, receive from me, for the good of his Majesty's service.

Given under my hand and seal, at head-quarters, in Port Jackson, New South Wales, this 12th day of February, 1788.

ARTHUR PHILLIP.

To Philip Gidley King, Esq.,

Superintendant and Commandant of Norfolk Island.

By Command of his Excellency.

Andrew Miller, Secretary.

* Scarborough, Charlotte, and Lady Penrhyn.

† See Phillip's despatch to Lord Sydney, ante, p. 124. King was afterwards appointed Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Island by Commission, post, p. 287.

[Enclosure.]

1788

Instructions for Philip Gidley King, Esq., Superintendent and
Commandant of the Settlement of Norfolk Island.

12 Feb.

WITH these Instructions you will receive my Commission appointing you to superintend and command the settlement to be formed on Norfolk Island, and to obey all such orders as you shall, from time to time, receive from me, his Majesty's Governor-in-Chief and Captain-General of the territory of New South Wales and its dependencies, or from the Lieutenant-Governor in my absence.

King's
instructions.

You are therefore to proceed in his Majesty's armed tender Supply, whose commander has my orders to receive you with the men and women, stores and provisions, necessary for forming the intended settlement, and on your landing on Norfolk Island take upon you the execution of the trust reposed in you, causing my Commission appointing you Superintendent over the said settlement to be publicly read.

Settlement
to be
formed.

And after having taken the necessary measures for securing yourself and people, and for the preservation of the stores and provisions, you are immediately to proceed to the cultivation of the flax-plant, which you will find growing spontaneously on the island, as likewise to the cultivation of cotton, corn, and other grains, with the seeds of which you are furnished, and which you are to regard as public stock, and of the increase of which you are to send me an account, that I may know what quantity may be drawn from the island for the public use, or what supplies may be necessary to send hereafter. It is left to your discretion to use such part of the corn that is raised as may be found necessary; but this you are to do with the greatest economy. And as the corn, flax, cotton, and other grains are the property of the Crown, and are as such to be accounted for, you are to keep an exact account of the increase, and you will, in future, receive directions for the disposal thereof.

The island
to be
cultivated.Economy in
the use of
grain.

You are to inform yourself of the nature of the soil, what proportion of land you find proper for the cultivation of corn, flax, and cotton, as likewise what quantity of cattle may be bred on the island, and the number of people you judge necessary for the above purposes. You will likewise observe what are the prevailing winds in the different seasons of the year, the best anchorage according to the season, the rise and fall of the tides, likewise when the dry and rainy seasons begin and end.

The
capabilities
of the island
to be
studied.

You will be furnished with a four-oared boat, and you are not on any consideration to build or to permit the building of any vessel or boat whatever that is decked, or of any boat or vessel that is not decked, whose length of keel exceeds twenty feet; and if by any accident any vessel or boat that exceeds twenty feet keel should be driven on the island, you are immediately to

No large
boats to be
built.

1788

12 Feb.

cause such boat or vessel to be scuttled, or otherwise rendered unserviceable, letting her remain in that state until you receive further directions from me.

Provisions
for six
months.

You will be furnished with provisions for six months, within which time you will receive an additional supply, but, as you will be able to procure fish and vegetables, you are to endeavour to make the provisions you receive serve as long as possible.

Convicts to
work for the
public.

The convicts being the servants of the Crown till the time for which they are sentenced is expired, their labour is to be for the public, and you are to take particular notice of their general good or bad behaviour, that they may hereafter be employed or rewarded according to their different merits.

Observance
of religion.

You are to cause the prayers of the Church of England to be read with all due solemnity every Sunday, and you are to enforce a due observance of religion and good order, transmitting to me, as often as opportunity offers, a full account of your particular situation and transactions.

Intercourse
with trading
vessels
prohibited.

You are not to permit any intercourse or trade with any ships or vessels that may stop at the island, whether English or of any other nation, unless such ships or vessels are in distress, in which case you are to afford them such assistance as may be in your power.

Given under my hand, at head-quarters, in Port Jackson,
New South Wales, this 12th day of February, 1788.

ARTHUR PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

My Lord, Sydney Cove, Port Jackson, May 16, 1788.

16 May.

Superinten-
dents
wanted.

I have in my first letter had the honour of observing to your Lordship the great want of proper persons to superintend the convicts. The officers who compose the detachment are not only few in number, but most of them have declined any interference with the convicts, except when they are employed for their own particular service. I requested soon after we landed that officers would occasionally encourage such as they observed diligent, and point out for punishment such as they saw idle or straggling in the woods. This was all I desired, but the officers did not understand that any interference with the convicts was expected, and that they were not sent out to do more than the duty of soldiers. The consequence must be obvious to your Lordship. Here are only convicts to attend to convicts, and who in general fear to exert any authority, and very little labour is drawn from them in a country which requires the greatest exertions. In this declaration I do not mean to include the Lieut.-Governor,* who has shown every attention that could be expected from him; and the Judge-Advocate,† acting as a Justice of the Peace, with a diligence that

Reluctance
of officers to
supervise
convicts.

* Robert Ross, Major of Marines and Commandant of the detachment at Port Jackson.

† David Collins, Captain of Marines, also Secretary to the Governor.

does him the greatest credit, they are under as good order as our present situation permits. 1788

The sitting as members of the Criminal Court is thought a hardship by the officers, and of which they say they were not informed before they left England. It is necessary to mention this circumstance to your Lordship, that officers coming out may know that a young colony requires something more from officers than garrison duty. 16 May. Officers object to sit on criminal court.

The not having the power of immediately granting lands the officers likewise feel as a hardship. They say that they shall be obliged to make their minds up as to the staying in the country or returning before they can know what the bounty of Government intends them. Disappointed at getting no land.

As it is, my Lord, impossible for the Commissary to attend to the issuing of provisions without some person of confidence to assist and to be charged with the details, I have appointed the person who was charged with the victualling the convicts from England. Assistant Commissary appointed.

There is likewise a very useful person who acts as Provost-Martial (the one appointed in England not having come out), and who likewise superintends the different works going on. Superintendent of works.

Two people, who are farmers, and the clerk of the Sirius are employed in cultivating ground, and in the store, as likewise a smith that superintends the convict smiths. As the granting these people any land would at present draw their attention from the public service, I have promised that their situation should be represented to your Lordship. Making men useful.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

My Lord, Sydney Cove, N.S. Wales, May 16, 1788.

I have the honor of transmitting your Lordship copies of the proceedings of a battalion court-martial, and the letters which passed on that occasion,* by which your Lordship will see the reasons assigned by the commandant of the detachment for putting the officers under arrest, as likewise the reasons giving [given?] by the court for not altering the sentence. Officers under arrest.

Battalion court-martial being ordered by Major Ross, as Commandant of the detachment, when he judged necessary, I was not informed of the courts† being under arrest till the next morning, when he came to inform me, and I used every means in my power to prevent a general court-martial, the inconveniences of which were obvious. Any accommodation being declined, I did not judge it prudent to put the guards in the charge of

* Post, pp. 140-141, 159-164.

† The officers constituting the court, viz., Capt.-Lt. Tench, 1st Lt. Kellow, 1st Lt. Poulden, 1st Lt. Davey, and 1st Lt. Timins.

1788
16 May.

serjants, which must have been done to assemble the court, the number of officers capable of doing duty being but thirteen. I therefore ordered the officers to return to their duty till a general court-martial could be assembled. I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

Proceedings of a court-martial held at Port Jackson, by order of Major Ross, Commandant of the Battalion of Marines.

Captain-Lieut. Tench, President.

Members:—First Lieut. Kellow, F. Lieut. Davey, F. Lieut. Poulden, F. Lieut. Timins.

18 March.

18th March, 1788.

Joseph Hunt, private of the 15th Compy., bro't to trial for striking William Dempsey, private in Captain Meredith's cy., when going to the cooking-place.

William Dempsey prosecutes, and informs the court that on Sunday evening last, as he was going to the cooking-place with a pot in his hand to boil, he saw Jane Fitzgerald, a female convict, talking to another marine. The woman (Fitzgerald) asked him how he did. He told her he was well, immediately on which the prisoner came up and struck him with a stick. On his asking Hunt the meaning of such treatment, he told him that he would let him know that he had no right to speak to any woman of his (the prisoner's) ship. Thos. Jones, marine, then coming up, asked why he struck Dempsey. He directly called him a Portsmouth rascal, and told him to go directly out of his sight. On further advice from Jones to return to his tent, the prisoner at length complied.

A marine
strikes a
comrade.

Evidence.

Thomas Jones, private of the 15th Compy., informs the court that he was standing near the cooking-place on Sunday evening, when he heard some words between the prosecutor and prisoner of an angry nature, but which he could not distinctly make out. He says that he saw no blows pass, and that after some little time Hunt went away towards his tent.

James Wedman, private of the 5th Compy., informs the court that he was at the cooking-place at the time William Dempsey came up, and that on a female convict speaking to him, the prisoner struck him on the shoulders with a small stick he had in his hand. Dempsey showed some dissatisfaction at this, upon which Hunt struck him twice on the head with his fist, and on being told by the prosecutor that he would complain of him, the prisoner said that if he pleas'd he was welcome to do so. After this Hunt went away to the encampment.

Question from the prisoner to Wedman:-- Did you hear me say to Dempsey that he should not speak to a woman of the ship I came out in? Answer: I did not.

Question from the prisoner to the prosecutor :—Did I strike you with my open hand or my clenched fist? Answer: I am not certain what it was, tho' I think rather with the open hand. 1788 18 March.

The prisoner, being put on his defence, acknowledges that he struck the prosecutor, but says that he was not in earnest in it, and did it not with the intention of hurting him. Denies having said to him that he would not allow him to speak to any woman of the ship he came out in, and submits himself to the mercy of the court. The prisoner calls on the President of the court and Lieutenants Poulden and Timins for a character, and those members are glad to have it in their power to give him the character of a good soldier. The offence admitted.

The court was of opinion that the prisoner is guilty of the crime laid to his charge, and falls under a breach of the 18th Article of the 14th section of the Articles of War, and do sentence him either to ask public pardon before the battalion of William Dempsey, the soldier whom he struck and injur'd, or to receive one hundred lashes on his bare back, by the drummers of the detachment, and where the commanding officer shall appoint. The sentence.

WATKIN TENCH,
Capt.-Lt. Mars. [Marines] and President.

The court having met a second time, by order of the commanding officer, to reconsider the nature and extent of the crime laid to the prisoner's charge, the evidence in support of the prosecution, the prisoner's defence, and their own judgment, do not in deliberating among themselves see any cause to rescind the sentence they have already given. Its confirmation.

WATKIN TENCH,
Capt.-Lieut. and President.

PROPOSED TRADING SETTLEMENT AT NORFOLK ISLAND.

London, May 24, 1788. 24 May.

To the Right Honourable Lord Sydney, one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State, &c., &c.

The petition of Sir George Young, Knt., and John Call, Esquire, in behalf of themselves and others,—

Sheweth—

That your petitioners have it in contemplation to form a settlement on a small uninhabited island, first discovered* by Captain Cook, and by him named Norfolk Island,* lying in the latitude of 29° 2' south, and longitude 168° 16' east from Greenwich, in the Pacific Ocean, in order to promote the cultivation of the New Zealand flax-plant, and the growth of pine timber for masts, being persuaded that if they are fortunate enough to succeed in their undertaking it will be attended with great Flax and timber.

* The petitioners were ignorant of the fact that this island had been taken possession of by Lieutenant King, and a settlement planted there, three months before the date of their application.

1788

24 May.

Proposed
trading
settlement
at Norfolk
Island.

national utility, by furnishing a future supply of those valuable articles of cordage and masts for his Majesty's ships-of-war in India, which have hitherto been obtained at an enormous expense, owing to the difficulty of conveying them thither, and from their scarcity have often reduced the maritime force employ'd in the East Indies to great inconvenience and even distress.

A free grant.

Your petitioners, therefore, considering the great expence and risque they must necessarily incur in prosecuting an enterprise in which if they succeed the nation cannot fail in being benefited, humbly solicit from his Majesty a grant to them and their heirs for ever of the said island, to be held of the Crown as of the Manor of East Greenwich.

GEO. YOUNG.
JNO. CALL.

SURGEON WHITE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

4 July.

Sir,

July the 4th, 1788.

Medical
comforts.

Among the troops, their wives and children, as well as among the convicts who have been ill, the want of necessities to aid the operation of medicine has been most materially and sensibly felt. My duty leads me to mention this circumstance to your Excellency in order that you may use such means for their procurement as may seem most expedient.

Bedding.

For your Excellency's information I have taken the liberty to insert the articles in the margin* which come under the head of necessities, to which I beg leave to add blankets and sheets for the hospital, none of which are in the colony, altho' they are essential and absolutely necessary. The want of them makes that observance and attention to cleanliness (a circumstance which among sick persons cannot be too much inculcated or attended to), utterly impossible. With respect to necessities, our situation here, constantly living on salt provisions without any possibility of a change, makes them more necessary than perhaps in any other quarter of the globe. I have, &c.,

Hardships

JOHN WHITE, Surgeon.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

5 July.

Dear Sir,

July the 5th, 1788.

Spirits for
soldiers'
wives.

Having, pursuant to the instructions I received from the Right Honourable the Lord Sydney, ordered the Commissary to purchase a sufficient quantity of spirits at Rio de Janeiro to serve the garrison for three years from the time of their landing, the same is issued according to the instructions; but the soldiers' wives soon after landing being sickly, and the surgeon judging that a small quantity of spirits would be of service, I then ordered the Commissary to issue to each soldier's wife half the proportion

* Sugar, sago, barley, rice, oatmeal, currants, spices, vinegar, portable soup, tamarinds.

of spirits allowed the husbands—that is, one-quarter of a pint per day, on condition that the quantity so issued should be hereafter stop'd from the husbands' allowance if not approved of.

1788
5 July.

The same ration is settled by the Navy Board for the detachment as for the convicts, and is as follows, viz. :—

Rations for seven days successively for each marine and male convict—

Seven pounds of bread, or, in lieu thereof, seven pounds of flour.

Seven pounds of beef, or, in lieu thereof, four pounds of pork ; three pints of pease; six ounces of butter; one pound of flour, or, in lieu thereof, half a pound of rice.

I am informed that seven pounds of pork is given to the soldiers in the settlement when they are served pork, and not four pounds of pork in lieu of seven pounds of beef; and here, as is the custom of the Navy, the eighth is deducted.

You will, sir, be so good as to explain the intent of Government on this head. The eighth is stopped for the benefit of the Crown, and to make up for the loss in serving in small quantities. The Commissary, of course, has not any advantage from the provisions.

Stoppage of percentage.

The one pound of flour is not clearly understood. If intended to be given weekly, as is done, or if it was intended to be given in lieu of pease, which from the manner of wording the order from the Navy Board does not appear to have been the intention of Government. If it is not the intention of Government that the eighth should be stopped, I have promised that they should be repaid when the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners of his Majesty's Treasury have signified their pleasure thereon.

What does the Government intend?

Every possible attention will be given to the cultivation of the flax-plant when circumstances permit, and on our first arrival in this port it was frequently met with; but when I judged the seed to be ripe, and ordered it to be collected, very little was found, and none in those places where it had been seen in any quantity, which I impute to the natives pulling up the plant when in flower to make their fishing-lines. A few plants have been collected, and which are sent home under the care of the agent of the transports.

Flax.

Sheep do not thrive in this country at present, but as many cows with one or two young bulls as the ships intended for this settlement that touch at the Cape can receive on board will, I hope, be ordered, as likewise seeds and a few quarters of wheat, barley, and Indian corn.

Sheep do not thrive.

Cloathing for the natives, if sent out, will, I daresay, be very acceptable to them when they come amongst us. I should recommend long frocks and jackets only, which will equally serve both men and women.

Clothing for the natives

A great part of the cloathing I have, sir, already observed was very bad, and a great part of it was likewise too small for people

Bad clothing.

1788

5 July.

Presents for
the natives.

of common size. If some coarse blankets were to be sent out they would greatly contribute to preserve the health of the convicts.

In addition to the frocks and jackets for the natives, good house carpenters' axes, hats, hooks and lines will be the most beneficial, as well as most acceptable, to the natives. I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

MAJOR ROSS TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Camp, Sydney Cove, New South Wales,

9 July.

Sir,

9th July, 1788.

Invalided
officers.

You will please to inform their Lordships that I have permitted First Lieutenant James Maxwell and Second Lieutenant William Collins to return to England, in consequence of the report made to the Governor and me of the impossibility of their recovering their health in this country.

Enclosed you have a copy of the report of the surgeons,* and the Governor is to order them a passage in such of the returning transports as he chooses.

I have directed them, upon their arrival in England, to transmit to you a copy of their letter of leave, as likewise an account of their then state of health, and to request their Lordships' orders for their future proceedings.

Arduous
duties.

The several duties we have to perform being very severe upon the officers in general, and the subalterns in particular, I beg to assure their Lordships that nothing less than the chance of saving those officers' lives could have made me grant the leave they requested, and therefore hope their Lordships will approve of what I have done.

I have taken them off the strength of the detachment, and Second Lieut. Dawes, who has been discharg'd from the Sirius's books, has taken the place of Second Lieutenant Collins in it.

A new
drummer.

I have likewise turned a drummer, a very bad one, into the ranks, and replaced him with a very fine, stout boy, son to one of the detachment, in order to draw as few men as possible from the Sirius; and, sir, as he is attested, he stands upon the strength of the detachment.

I have, &c.,

R. Ross, Major.

MAJOR ROSS TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Camp, Sydney Cove, New South Wales,

Sir,

9th July, 1788.

Another
Lieutenant
wanted.

Inclosed you have for their Lordships' information a general return of the state of the detachment under my command. By it you will see that we want one second lieutenant to complete the four companies.

* Surgeon White, chief surgeon of the settlement, and Surgeon Worgan, of the Sirius, reported that Lieut. Collins suffered from dysentery and Lieut. Maxwell from amaurosis.

As I have ever since my arrival here entered my son, John Ross, as a volunteer, serving without pay, may I presume to solicit their Lordships to do me the honor of appointing him to that vacancy in the detachment? 1788
9 July.
John Ross.

What emboldens me to pray their Lordships for this particular mark of favor is, my knowing the attention shown by the Board of Admiralty in giving a preference to the children of old officers, among which number I may, after two-and-thirty years' actual service, surely class myself. An old officer's son.

I have, &c.,

R. Ross, Major.

[Enclosure.]

OFFICERS OF THE DETACHMENT OF MARINES.

Major-Commandant :—Robert Ross.

Captains :—James Campbell, John Shea.

Captain-Lieutenants :—James Meredith, Watkin Tench.

First Lieutenants :—George Johnston, John Johnstone, John Creswell, James Maitland Shairp, Robert Kellow, Thomas Davey, John Poulden, Thomas Timins.

Second Lieutenants :—Ralph Clarke, William Faddy, William Dawes.

Adjutant Second Lieutenant :—John Long.

Quarter-master First Lieutenant :—James Furzer.

Judge-Advocate :—David Collins.

R. Ross, Major.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

Sydney Cove, New South Wales,

My Lord, July the 9th, 1788.

I have had the honor of informing your Lordship of the situation of this colony prior to the 15th of May, since which two stores have been finished, and the ships are now landing the remainder of the stores and provisions. Stores and provisions.

The commandant of the detachment, having enclosed letters from First Lieutenant James Maxwell and Second Lieutenant William Collins, and desired that their requests to return to Europe might be complied with, if their state of health was found by the surgeon to be as represented, and the surgeon having reported First Lieutenant Maxwell as incapable of duty, from a defect in his sight, and Second Lieutenant Collins to be so debilitated in state from a long illness that his life depends on his returning to Europe, these officers have my leave; and Lieutenant Collins is charged with the despatches for your Lordship. Lieutenant Dawes,* who came out as a lieutenant of marines on board the Sirius, replaces one of these officers. Officers returning on sick leave.

Lieutenant Dawes.

The hutting the battalion is still going on, and though from seventy to one hundred convicts have been almost constantly Building huts.

* William Dawes, Second Lieutenant of Marines. Officer of Engineers and Artillery.

1788

9 July.

Carpenters
and
bricklayers
wanted.

employed assisting in this business, it will not, I apprehend, be finished before the end of July ; and every day proves the necessity of proper persons being sent out to superintend the convicts. If a small number of carpenters and bricklayers are sent out with proper people, who are capable of superintending the convicts, they will soon be rendered serviceable to the State, and without which they will remain for years a burden to Government. Numbers of them have been brought up from their infancy in such indolence that they would starve if left to themselves ; and many (their numbers now exceed fifty), from old age and disorders which are incurable, and with which they were sent from England, are incapable of any kind of work.

Provisions
from
England
necessary.

Thus situated, your Lordship will excuse my observing a second time that a regular supply of provisions from England will be absolutely necessary for four or five years, as the crops for two years to come cannot be depended on for more than what will be necessary for seed, and what the Sirius may procure can only be to breed from. Should necessity oblige us to make use of what that ship may be able to procure, I do not apprehend that the live stock she will bring in twelve months will be more than a month's provision for the colony ; and the supply is totally unfit for a service of this kind.

Failure to
obtain
turtle.

Lieutenant Ball returned the 25th from Lord Howe Island, where I had sent him in hopes he would have been able to procure some turtle for the sick, but the weather was bad, and that island, not having any good water, will not be of any service to us, for Lieutenant Ball did not see any turtle, nor does he suppose they were bred there. The transports that sailed for China* had my directions not to go to that island, but they all appeared there before the Supply left it, and one was near being lost.

Store-ships
and
transports to
return.

The store-ships and transports, as cleared, are ordered to prepare to return to England immediately, but some of their sheathing being much destroyed by the worms, it is necessary to permit several of those ships to heave down.

A convict
speared.

One of the convicts who, in searching for vegetables, had gone a considerable distance from the camp, returned very dangerously wounded in the back by a spear. He denies having given the natives any provocation, and says that he saw them carrying away a man that had gone out for the same purpose, and who they had wounded on the head. A shirt and hat, both pierced with spears, have been since found in one of the natives' huts, but no intelligence can be got of the man, and I have not any doubt but that the natives have killed him, nor have I the least doubt of the convicts being the aggressors. Eleven male and one female convicts have been missing since we landed. A bull

Twelve
convicts
missing.

* Scarborough, Charlotte, and Lady Penryhn. They sailed respectively on the 5th, 6th and 8th May. Ante, p. 136.

calf has likewise been wounded by a spear, and two goats have been killed by some of our own people, the skin of one being found where the natives never appear, so that the little stock we now have is likely to decrease; and though robberies are punished with severity, there is not a week passes but there are people who lose their provisions and cloaths, which in our present situation it is impossible to prevent.

I should hope that few convicts will be sent out this year or the next, unless they are artificers, and after what I have had the honour of observing to your Lordship I make no doubt but proper people will be sent to superintend them. The ships that bring out convicts should have at least the two years' provisions on board to land with them, for the putting the convicts on board some ships and the provisions that were to support them in others, as was done, I beg leave to observe, much against my intimation, must have been fatal if the ship carrying the provisions had been lost.

I have the honour to enclose your Lordship the intended plan for the town. The Lieutenant-Governor has already begun a small house, which forms one corner of the parade, and I am building a small cottage on the east side of the cove, where I shall remain for the present with part of the convicts and an officer's guard. The convicts on both sides are distributed in huts, which are built only for immediate shelter. On the point of land which forms the west side of the cove an Observatory is building, under the direction of Lieutenant Dawes, who is charged by the Board of Longitude with observing the expected comet. The temporary buildings are marked in black; those intended to remain, in red. We now make very good bricks, and the stone is good, but do not find either limestone or chalk. As stores and other buildings will be begun in the course of a few months, some regular plan for the town was necessary, and in laying out of which I have endeavoured to place all public buildings in situations that will be eligible hereafter, and to give a sufficient share of ground for the stores, hospitals, &c., to be enlarged, as may be necessary in the future. The principal streets are placed so as to admit a free circulation of air, and are two hundred feet wide. The ground marked for Government House is intended to include the main guard, Civil and Criminal Courts, and as the ground that runs to the southward is nearly level, and a very good situation for buildings, streets will be laid out in such a manner as to afford a free air, and when the houses are to be built, if it meets with your Lordship's approbation, the land will be granted with a clause that will ever prevent more than one house being built on the allotment, which will be sixty feet in front and 150 feet in depth. This will preserve uniformity in the buildings, prevent narrow streets, and the many inconveniences which the increase

1788

9 July.

Despatch of
criminals
should be
restricted.

Plan of
Sydney.

Observatory.

No
limestone.

The streets
200 feet
wide

Building
restrictions.

1788

9 July.

Barracks.

A
substantial
store-house.Murders by
natives.The blacks
not the
aggressors.But they
decamp.Another
band
discovered.Phillip's
courage.

of inhabitants would otherwise occasion hereafter. The hospital is a building that will stand for some years. It is clear of the town, and the situation is healthy. The barracks and huts now building for the officers and men will stand three or four years. If water could be found by sinking wells on the high ground between the town and the hospital, I proposed building the barracks on that spot, and surrounding them with such works as we may be able to make, and which I did intend beginning as soon as the transports were cleared and the men huttet; but I now find that without some additional workmen the progress must be so very slow that that design is laid aside, and the only building I shall attempt will be a store-house. That will be secure, those we have already built being not only in danger from fire, from being thatched, but of material that will not stand more than two years. The barracks, and all buildings in future, will be covered with shingles, which we now make from a tree like the pine-tree in appearance, the wood resembling the English oak.

The 30th of May two men employed collecting thatch at some distance from the camp were found dead; one of them had four spears in him, one of which had passed through his body; the other was found at some distance dead, but without any apparent injury. This was a very unfortunate circumstance, and the more, as it will be impossible to discover the people who committed the murder, and I am still persuaded the natives were not the aggressors. These men had been seen with one of their canoes, but I was not informed of that circumstance for some days. Though I did not mean to punish any of the natives for killing these people, which, it is more than probable, they did in their own defence, or in defending their canoes, I wished to see them, and as they had carried away the rushcutters' tools, I thought they might be found out, and some explanation take place, for which purpose I went out with a small party the next day, and landed where the men were killed; but after traversing the country more than twenty miles we got to the north shore of Botany Bay without meeting any of the natives. There we saw about twenty canoes fishing. It was then sunset, and as we made our fires and slept on the beach I did not doubt but some of them would join us, but not one appeared; and the next morning, tho' fifty canoes were drawn up on the beach, we could not find a single person; but on our return, keeping for some time near the sea-coast, we came to a cove where a number of the natives were assembled, I believe more than what belonged to that particular spot. Though we were within ten yards when we first discovered each other, I had barely time to order the party to halt before numbers appeared in arms, and the foremost of them, as he advanced, made signs for us to retire, but upon my going up to him, making signs of friendship, he gave his spear to another, and in less than three

minutes we were surrounded by two hundred and twelve men, numbers of women and children were at a small distance, and whether by their superiority of numbers, for we were only twelve, or from their not being accustomed to act with treachery, the moment the friendship I offered was accepted on their side they joined us, most of them laying down their spears and stone hatchets with the greatest confidence, and afterwards brought down some of their women to receive the little articles we had to give them. I saw nothing to induce me to believe these people had been concerned in the murder which had been committed. We parted on friendly terms, and I was now more than ever convinced of the necessity of placing a confidence in these people as the only means of avoiding a dispute. Had I gone up to them with all the party, though only twelve, or hesitated a moment, a lance would have been thrown, and it would have been impossible to have avoided a dispute.

1788

9 July.

Friendship
offered and
accepted.

How to treat
the natives.

Here we saw the finest stream of fresh water I have seen in this country, but the cove is open to the sea. When the natives saw we were going on towards the next cove, one of them, an old man, made signs to let him go first, and as soon as we were at the top of the hill he called out, holding up both his hands (a sign of friendship) to the people in the next cove, giving them to understand that we were friends; we did not go to that cove, but saw about forty men; so that, unless these people had assembled on some particular occasion, the inhabitants are still more numerous than I had imagined. I have before had the honor of observing to your Lordship that we had traced the natives thirty miles inland, and this morning, in crossing the hills between Botany Bay and Port Jackson, we saw smoke on the top of Landsdowne Hills, so that I think there cannot be any doubt of there being inhabitants fifty miles inland.

A fine-
stream of
water.

Friendly
natives.

Inland
natives.

His Majesty's birthday was observed with every possible mark of attention our situation permitted. The three men that had been reprieved from death, in order to be exiled, were fully pardoned, and for the twenty-four hours I believe there was not one heavy heart in this part of his Majesty's dominions.

The King's
birthday.

If we had been unfortunate in our live stock in general, I had the satisfaction of seeing the cows and horses thrive; but the man who attended the former, having left them for a short time, they strayed and were lost.* The loss of four cows and two bulls will not easily be repaired. Pardon, my Lord, these tedious relations of robberies and losses; it is the only means I have of giving your Lordship a faint idea of the situation in which I am placed. Of the live stock purchased at the Cape, part died on the passage, and the greatest part of what remained since landing.

Cattle lost.

* The cattle made their way to the Cowpastures on the Nepean River, where they were found by Governor Hunter, 20th November, 1795. They had increased to upwards of 60 head. Collins, vol. I, p. 436.

1788

9 July.

Having reason to believe that one of the natives had been murdered and several wounded, which, it is probable, occasioned the attack on the rushcutter, I have promised to emancipate any convict that will discover the aggressors; it will, I hope, at least prevent anything of this kind in future.

An
absconder's
sufferings.

A convict who had committed a robbery, and absconded the 5th of June, returned the 24th, almost starved; he found it impossible to subsist in the woods. One of the natives gave him a fish, but then made signs for him to go away. He says he afterwards joined a party of the natives, who would have burned him, but that he got away from them, and that he saw the remains of a human body on the fire. In the woods he saw four of the natives who were dying, and who made signs for food. This man was tried, pleaded guilty, and suffered with another convict. He persisted in the story respecting the natives intending to burn him, and I now believe they find the procuring a subsistence very difficult, for little fish is caught.

Starving
natives.

An
earthquake.

The 22nd of this month (June) we had a slight shock of an earthquake; it did not last more than two or three seconds. I felt the ground shake under me, and heard a noise that came from the southward, which I at first took for the report of guns fired at a great distance.

Ships
preparing to
sail.

Four ships are now clear, and preparing to sail the first week in July;* a fifth will be clear in a few days, if the heavy rains we have had these two days will cease, and will sail with them. The store-ship that has the spirits on board must remain some time longer. I hope to send her away by the middle of August.

A fine
climate.

Tho' we have had heavy rains at the change of the moon, this cannot be called a rainy season. The climate is a very fine one, and the country will, I make no doubt, when the woods are cleared away, be as healthy as any in the world, but is, I believe, subject to violent storms of thunder and lightning. Soon after we landed, several trees were fired by the lightning, and several sheep and hogs killed in the camp.

The people
counted.

Of the convicts, 36 men and 4 women died on the passage, 20 men and 8 women since landing—eleven men and one woman absconded; four have been executed, and three killed by the natives. The number of convicts now employed in erecting the necessary buildings and cultivating the lands only amounts to 320—and the whole number of people victualled amounts to 966—consequently we have only the labour of a part to provide for the whole.

Your Lordship will doubtless see the necessity of employing a considerable force in the country, and I presume an addition of

* The greater part of this despatch appears to have been written before the date it bears.

five hundred men will be absolutely requisite to enable me to detach three or four companys to the more open country near the head of the harbour. 1788
9 July.

I could have wished to have given your Lordship a more pleasing account of our present situation; and am persuaded I shall have that satisfaction hereafter; nor do I doubt but that this country will prove the most valuable acquisition Great Britain ever made; at the same time no country offers less assistance to the first settlers than this does; nor do I think any country could be more disadvantageously placed with respect to support from the mother country, on which for a few years we must entirely depend. The outlook encouraging.

The heavy rains have prevented the provisions and stores being landed so soon as I expected. It is now the 9th July, and the ships sail the 12th. Duplicates and triplicates of my despatches to your Lordship go by these ships, and I have the honor of enclosing your Lordship the returns of the detachment and of the sick: the necessary demands for the hospital, &c., are sent to the Under Secretaries of State. Heavy rain.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

An Account of Live Stock in the Settlement, May 1st, 1788.

To whom belonging.	Stallions.	Mares.	Colts.	Bulls.	Cows.	Sheep.	Goats.	Hogs.	Pigs.	Rabbits.	Turkeys.	Geese.	Ducks.	Fowls.	Chickens.
Government ..	1	2	..	2	2	1 ram 12 ewes	1	1 boar 19 sows	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Governor .....	..	1	..	2	..	3 wethers 1 ewe 1 lamb	..	10	..	3	5	8	17	22	..
Lieut.-Governor	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	1	7	..	5	6	4	9	..
Officers and men belonging to the detachment ..	..	..	..	..	1	..	12	10	17	2	6	9	8	55	25
Staff .....	..	..	..	..	..	11	5	7	1	..	2	6	6	36	62
Other individuals ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..
Total.....	1	3	3	2	5	29	19	49	25	5	18	29	35	122	87

Since the 1st of May, three sheep dead, and the cows and bulls lost.

ANDREW MILLER, Commissary.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

My Dear Sir, Sydney Cove, July the 9th, 1788.

You will see by my letters to Lord Sydney that this colony must for some years depend on supplies from England.

The Sirius will be sent to the northward for live stock as soon as we can spare her carpenters; and from what Monsieur The Sirius to go for live stock.

* A private letter. A great deal of the information it contains is given in Phillip's despatch to Lord Sydney of the same date.

1788
9 July. La Perouse said to Captain Hunter, one of the *Iles des Navigateurs* is the most likely to furnish us with what we want. But though these islands supply two or three ships very abundantly, they will afford but very little towards the support of this colony, the situation of which I have particularly pointed out in my letter to Lord Sydney, and which I shall recapitulate in this, as the ship by which I now write may arrive before either of those that have my despatches on board.

Land in
cultivation.

The Lieutenant-Governor has about four acres of land in cultivation. I have from eight to ten in wheat and barley. The officers will be able to raise sufficient to support the little live stock they have, and which is all that can be expected from them. All the corn raised this year and the next will be saved for seed, and if necessity should oblige us to use it it would be only a few days' support for the colony; and from the rats and other vermin the crops are very uncertain.

Thunder
and
lightning.

This country is subject to very heavy storms of thunder and lightning, several trees having been set on fire and some sheep and dogs killed in the camp since we landed.

Unsafe
storage.

All the provisions we have to depend on until supplies arrive from England are in two wooden buildings, which are thatched. I am sensible of the risk, but have no remedy.

Losses of
live stock.

The greatest part of the stock brought from the Cape is dead, and from the inattention of the men who had the care of the cattle, those belonging to Government and two cows belonging to myself are lost. As they have been missing three weeks, it is probable they are killed by the natives. All my sheep are dead, and a few only remain of those purchased for Government. The loss of four cows and two bulls falls very heavy. The horses do very well.

Difficulty in
getting
supplies.

With respect to any resources that the Cape of Good Hope might afford, I have only to observe that the strong westerly winds that prevailed all the year between that Cape and the southern extremity of this country would render a passage to the Cape very tedious if attempted to the southward, and little less so if ships go to the northward. Batavia and our own settlements are at a great distance, and when the transports are sailed I shall have only the *Sirius* to employ on a service of this kind; and as I should not think myself at liberty to send either to the Cape or the East Indies unless in a case of the greatest necessity, it would in all probability then be too late. I mention these circumstances just to show the real situation of the colony, and I make no doubt but that supplies will arrive in time, and on which alone I depend. The provisions sent to support this colony for two years being put on board three ships was running a very great risk, for had they separated and afterwards been lost the consequence is obvious, for this country at present does not furnish the smallest resource

A great risk.

except in fish, and which has lately been so scarce that the natives find great difficulty in supporting themselves. Any accident of this kind will be guarded against, of course; and soldiers or convicts when sent out will be put on board the ships with provisions to serve them for two years after they land; and in our present situation I hope few convicts will be sent out for one year at least, except carpenters, masons, and bricklayers, or farmers, who can support themselves and assist in supporting others. Numbers of those now here are a burthen and incapable of any kind of hard labour, and, unfortunately, we have not proper people to keep those to their labour who are capable of being made useful.

1788

9 July.

Fish a poor resource.

No drones wanted.

Officers decline the least interference with the convicts, unless when they are immediately employed for their (the officers) own conveniency, or when they are called out at the head of their men: the saying of a few words to encourage the diligent when they saw them at work, and the pointing out the idle when they could do it without going out of their way, was all that was desired. The convicts were then employed clearing the ground on which the officers were encamped, and this they refused; they did not suppose that they were sent out to do more than garrison duty, and these gentlemen (that is, the majority of the officers) think the being obliged to sit as members of the Criminal Court an hardship, and for which they are not paid, and likely think themselves hardly dealt by, in that Government had not determined what lands were to be given them. But I presume an additional force will be sent out when the necessity of making detachments in order to cultivate lands in the more open country is known, and from four to six hundred men will, I think, be absolutely necessary.

Officers will not help.

Judicial duties objected to

If fifty farmers were sent out with their families they would do more in one year in rendering this colony independent of the mother country, *as to provisions*, than a thousand convicts. There is some clear land, which is intended to be cultivated, at some distance from the camp, and I intended to send out convicts for that purpose, under the direction of a person that was going to India in the Charlotte, transport, but who remained to settle in this country, and has been brought up a farmer, but several of the convicts (three) having been lately killed by the natives, I am obliged to defer it untill a detachment can be made.

Farmers as settlers.

The natives are far more numerous than they were supposed to be. I think they cannot be less than fifteen hundred in Botany Bay, Port Jackson, and Broken Bay, including the intermediate coast. I have traced thirty miles inland, and the having lately seen smoke on Landsdown Hills, which are fifty miles inland, I think leaves no doubt but that there are inhabitants in the interior parts of the country.

The natives numerous.

Lists of what articles are most wanted will be sent by the Commissary; and I am very sorry to say that not only a great

1783

9 July.

part of the cloathing, particularly the women's, is very bad, but most of the axes, spades, and shovels the worst that ever were seen. The provision is as good. Of the seeds and corn sent from England part has been destroyed by the weevil; the rest in very good order.

Provost-marshal.

The person I have appointed Provost-Marshall is likewise very useful in superintending the carpentry; the person sent out by the contractor, who assists the Commissary in the delivery of provisions, one that was clerk of the Sirius, a master smith, and two farmers are very useful people, and I beg leave to recommend them to Government. The granting them lands would draw their attention from their present occupations.

Earthquake.

We had a slight shock of an earthquake in the afternoon of the 22nd [June]; it lasted between two and three seconds, and was attended with a noise like the report of very distant cannon, which came from the southward.

Fishburn and Golden Grove.

The Fishburn, store-ship, is detained until a proper place can be provided for the spirits; and the rains have for some days prevented the landing the remainder of the provisions from the Golden Grove; therefore those two ships will sail together, I hope, by the end of August; the other ships have all cleared, and preparing to sail.

Convicts' sentences unknown.

The masters of the transports having left with the agents the bonds and whatever papers they received that related to the convicts, I have no account of the time for which the convicts are sentenced, or the dates of their convictions; some of them, by their own account, have little more than a year to remain, and, I am told, will apply for permission to return to England, or to go to India, in such ships as may be willing to receive them. If lands are granted them, Government will be obliged to support them for two years; and it is more than probable that one-half of them, after that time is expired, will still want support. Until I receive instructions on this head, of course none will be permitted to leave the settlement; but if, when the time for which they are sentenced expires, the most abandoned and useless were permitted to go to China, in any ships that may stop here, it would be a great advantage to the settlement.

China for the useless.

The climate.

The weather is now unsettled, and heavy rains fall frequently, but the climate is certainly a very fine one, but the nights are very cold, and I frequently find a difference of thirty-three degrees in my chamber between 8 o'clock in the morning and 2 o'clock in the afternoon, though the sun does not reach the thermometer, which is at the west end of my canvass house.

Starvation in the bush.

A convict who fled to the woods after committing a robbery returned after being absent eighteen days, forced in by hunger; he had got some small support from the people, and the few fish left by accident on the beach after hauling the seine, and had

endeavoured to live amongst the natives, but they could give him but little assistance; he says they are now greatly distressed for food, and that he saw several dying with hunger. It is possible that some of the natives at this time of the year might find it easier to support themselves on birds, and such animals as shelter themselves in the hollow trees, than on fish; but then, I think, they would not go to the top of the mountains, where at present it must be very cold. I intend going to Landsdown or Carmarthen Hills as soon as the weather permits, if it is possible, and which will explain what is at present a mystery to me, how people who have not the least idea of cultivation can maintain themselves in the interior parts of this country. When I went to the westward, in hopes of being able to reach the mountains, we carried six days' provisions, and proceeded five days to the westward; returning we were very short of provisions, and our guns only procured us two scanty meals.

1788

9 July.

Intended
exploration.

I shall now conclude with saying that I have no doubt but that the country will hereafter prove a most valuable acquisition to Great Britain, though at present no country can afford less support to the first settlers, or be more disadvantageously placed for receiving support from the mother country, on which it must for a time depend. It will require patience and perseverance, neither of which will, I hope, be wanting on the part of

A predic-
tion.

Dear Sir, Yours, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

His Majesty's Commission, with that for establishing the Courts of Civil and Criminal Judicature, were read soon after landing, and as it is necessary in Public Acts to name the county, I named it Cumberland, and fixed its boundaries by Carmarthen and Landsdown Hills to the westward, by the northern parts of Broken Bay to the northward, and by the southernmost part of Botany Bay to the southward.

The county
of Cumber-
land.

I have enclosed copies of a letter I have received from the surgeon,* reporting the state of the hospital and the great necessity of *blankets* and *sheets*, as well as sugar, and those articles coming under the denomination of necessaries, and the want of which is equally felt by the marines and convicts.

Hospital
necessaries.

The number of marines now under medical treatment	...	36
Convicts	...	66
Unfit for labour from old age and infirmities	...	52

[Enclosure.]

A List of Articles most wanted in the Settlement.

House carpenters' axes	Iron in bars
Chalk-lines (none sent out)	Steel in ditto
Felling-axes	Armourers' tools (none sent out)
Cross-cut saws	Gunpowder, musquet balls and paper
Pit saws	for the use of the garrison (none sent out)
Saw setts	

* Ante, p. 142.

1788

List of Articles—*continued*.

9 July.

Files for cross-cut and pit saws (a considerable number, as they soon wear out)	Strong double tin plates
Gimlets, augers, chissels and gouges	Stonemasons' tools
Iron pots of 3, 4, and 5 gallons (much wanted at this time)	Trowels for bricklayers
Billhooks	Glass, not less than 10 inches by 8
Scyths and reap-hooks	Fifteen puncheons of red wine, for the use of the hospital
Nails, mostly of 18, 20, and 24 penny	Hooks and fishing lines for the natives
Nails (spike), brads	Cloathing for the men and women convicts, with a large proportion of shoes
Sheet and pig lead	Long frocks and strong jackets for the natives
Swan and buck shot	Soldiers' blankets for the convicts
White and red paint	Twelve turn-over carts
Oil for ditto	Wheel-barrows
Canvas, No. 3, 6 bolts	Four timber carriages
" " 4, "	Blacksmiths' hammers
" " 6, 8 "	Carpenters' ditto
" " 7, "	Turkey stones for the carpenters' tools (none sent out)
" " 8, 6 "	Rope, of 1½ inch, 1 coil
Twine, one hundred weight	" 1 " "
Sail needles	
Copper nails for repairing boats	

ANDW. MILLER,

9th July, 1788.

Commissary.

MAJOR ROSS TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.*

Sir,

Camp, Sydney Cove, 9 July, 1788.

I am very much concerned at the necessity I am under of acquainting you, for their Lordships' information, with a transaction that took place in the detachment which their Lordships have honoured me with the command of, on the 18th of March last.

From the papers herein enclos'd their Lordships will see that it relates to a court-martial, which I had ordered to assemble on that day, for the tryal of a private of the detachment—for disorderly behaviour.

Court-martial.

On perusing the proceedings of the court-martial, which had been brought to me by the President, I observ'd to him that they had found the prisoner guilty of the crime with which he stood charg'd, and that the sentence past upon him was such as I could by no means approve of, as it was of such a nature as to leave it in the breast of the prisoner to receive or not receive the punishment. That it was wresting out of the hands of the commanding officer a most essential and necessary power, the power of mitigating or inflicting the punishment order'd the prisoner, as he might see cause; that the passing of two sentences upon a prisoner try'd but for one crime, and leaving the option of the punishment to be inflicted in the breast of the prisoner, was

An incomplete sentence.

* See Phillip's despatch, 16 May. Ante pp. 139-141.

contrary to, and out of, the common practice of the service. I therefore requested that he would get it alter'd to either one or other of the sentences, I did not care which.

1788

9 July.

Captain-Lieutenant Tench, the President, carried with him the proceedings—soon after he came to me again with the proceedings of the court, in the state of the inclos'd copy of it. From their mode of proceeding, finding that they wanted to deprive me, as commanding officer, of a power which I did not think myself authorised to give up into the hands of others, I directed the adjutant to write the letter of which No. 1 is a copy. To this letter I very soon after received an answer, of which reply to No. 1 is a copy. Not being yet out of hope but that they might be induced to make an alteration in their sentence, I caused the adjutant to write the letter of which No. 2 is a copy, directed it to the President and members of the court, at the same time desiring the adjutant to inform them that it should be the last time I would write to them on the subject, and that I should look upon their refusal as a disobedience of orders. But this message, the adjutant says, he did not deliver; the reason why is best known to himself. To this letter I received an answer, of which reply to No. 2 is a copy. From their last answer, finding them obstinate in assuming a power which I did not think vested in them, and not deeming it prudent, in my present critical situation, to give up any part of the power or authority with which their Lordships have honoured me, I found myself reduced to the disagreeable necessity of either giving up the consequence of the commanding officer, or putting the President and members of the court under an arrest, and the latter I did as the mode least likely to injure the service, till the return of the Governor, who was then absent on a party of discovery, when I hoped the affair might be settled without my having occasion to trouble their Lordships with it. On the return of the Governor I had still more reason to be of this opinion, for, when I laid the court-martial, together with the letters that passed on the occasion, before his Excellency, and a verbal report of my having put the President and members under arrest, he very humanely wished me to leave the papers with him, saying that he would send for Captain Tench, and endeavour to accomodate the matter, as he judged that the making an alteration of a few words in the sentence would make it a proper one, but this endeavour his Excellency was not able to accomplish, and I have since been inform'd by him of his having proposed to those gentlemen that the business should be left to the decision of any three, five, seven, or nine officers to be named by me and them, unless we wished him to name one of them. To this they desired a short time to consider, and that they would send their answer in writing, which should be final. In their answer,* which I hope, and have requested, the Governor has still

Commanding officers' powers invaded.

Officers under arrest.

The Governor suggests a *modus vivendi*.

* Post, p. 164.

1788

9 July

The officers
on their
dignity.

Report to
the
Governor.

His
decision.

Officers
return to
duty.

Dissensions.

Captain
Campbell's
opinion.

in his possession, they say that nothing short of what could not, possibly, in our then situation, be granted—a general court-martial, or a public reparation for the indignity done them—would satisfy their feelings.

Upon the Governor receiving the above answer, he told me that if I meant to proceed in the business I should send him a report of the whole in writing. Of this report No. 3 is a copy, in answer to which I received the reply to No. 3, and was, at the same time, told by H. Excellency that he had determined on the steps he was to take; but that before he could or would make his intention known to any person it was necessary that I should first apply to him for a general court-martial upon them. Having complied with his desire by writing him a letter of which No. 4 is a copy, he soon after gave out the order of which No. 5 is a copy. Of this order I had not the most distant knowledge til it was bro't to me by the adjutant copied into the orderly-book of the detachment, and when I had read it I desired that the adjutant would, before he gave out the orders for the day, shew it to the President and members of the court-martial. On his return from them he gave a note, of which No. 6 is a copy, and, as soon as the orders were given out, the officers who had been under the arrest returned, and were by me received, to their duty, which they still continue doing.

Since the above transaction, this detachment being mostly composed of young officers, some of whom being without much experience or military knowledge are led away into party, which has, in a great measure, destroy'd that harmony so very essential to good order and military discipline, and, indeed, I may say, of which it is the very soul; and I have found myself from my present situation obliged to put up with such mortifying things, more particularly from Captn.-Lieut. Tench, as nothing else than that situation, my distance from their Lordships, my ardent wish to promote the publick good, as well as my wish and determin'd resolution to keep every kind of dissension (as far as in my power lay) from the knowledge of the privates of the detachment, could possibly make me submit to. Soon after my having order'd the above officers under an arrest, I asked Captain Campbell, the next officer to me in command, and an officer of one-and-thirty years' experience in actual service, what judgement he formed of the proceedings; and I found him with me in opinion, that if the officers who compos'd the court-martial deem'd themselves injur'd or oppress'd by the request and order they received, the time and situation they took to show their obstinacy was highly improper, for even supposing them to think their commanding officer wrong in his idea of the propriety of their sentence, they well knew where they were sure of obtaining redress (by laying their grievance before their Lord-

ships) without impeding the service; and I have myself ever made it a rule to obey all orders, and if I thought them oppressive, made my complaint after having carried them into execution; nor do I believe it to be a very uncommon thing for young officers to submit their own opinions in military affairs to the judgement of the more experienc'd, who are presumed to be the best judges how far situation and the nature of the service employ'd on may render it necessary to deviate from general rules.

1788

9 July.

I have, therefore, earnestly to request you will move their Lordships to take such steps in this affair as may to them appear most proper and necessary; and I must, at the same time, take the liberty of observing that unless some decisive step is taken by their Lordships to put a stop to the present dissention, and the restoring subordination, it will be absolutely impossible for any commanding officer ever to carry on the service in such manner as to be either useful to the publick or satisfactory to himself.

A decisive
step
necessary.

In justice to many officers of this detachment, I must take the liberty of observing to their Lordships that I by no means intend the above observation as a general one, as many of the officers under my command do all the duties ordered them very much to my satisfaction, and with a cheerfulness and alacrity that does them honour, and I cannot but likewise observe that the duties they have to perform are more severe than I ever knew it upon any other service.

Some
officers
praised.

The same may, with justice, be said of the non-commissioned officers and privates, who, a very few excepted, seem impress'd with a very proper sense of the nature of the service on which they are employ'd, and perform all their duties, as well as the different works order'd them, very much to the satisfaction of every person in any kind of authority over them. I have, &c.,

Good
conduct
of the
regiment.

R. Ross, Major.

[Enclosure No. 1.]

ADJUTANT LONG TO CAPTAIN-LIEUTENANT TENCH.

Sir,

Camp, Port Jackson, March the 18th, 1788.

18 March.

I am directed by the commanding officer to inform you that the court-martial of which you was President, and which met this morning for the tryal of Joseph Hunt, private in the 15th Compy., for striking William Dempsey, pte. in Captn. Meredith's cy., having pass'd a sentence by no means consistent with the martial law, it is therefore his orders that you convene the officers composing that court and proceed to passing a sentence without the choice of two sentences, either to the commanding officer or prisoner, and enclosed herewith you will receive the original proceedings for such alterations as you and the rest of the court may think necessary. I am, &c.,

The
sentence to
be reviewed

J. LONG, 2nd-Lieut and Adjut.

1788

[Reply to Enclosure No. 1.]

18 March.

OFFICERS' REPLY TO ADJUTANT LONG.

Port Jackson, March 18th,

Sir,

4 o'clock in the afternoon.

The court
will not sit a
third time.

We have had the honor of receiving your letter of this afternoon, address'd to Captn.-Lt. Tench, ordering him to convene us for the purpose of revising a second time the sentence we pass'd, after the strictest deliberation and most impartial enquiry, on Joseph Hunt, privte. in Captn. Campbell's cy., for striking Wm. Dempsey, private in Captn. Meredith's compy., and beg leave to acquaint you that we do not think ourselves authoriz'd to sit in judgment a third time in the same cause, as the latter part of the 10th Article of the Act of Parliament for the regulation of his Majesty's marine forces while on shore expressly instructs us "that no sentence given by any court-martial, and signed by the president thereof, is liable to be revised more than once."

We have, &c.,

WATKIN TENCH, Capt.-Lt. and President.

ROBT. KELLOW,

JOHN POULDEN,

THOS. DAVEY,

THOS. TIMINS,

} 1st Lieuts. and Members.

[Enclosure No. 2.]

ADJUTANT LONG TO OFFICERS.

Sir,

Camp, Port Jackson, March the 18th, 1788.

The
command-
ant instructs
the court.

I am directed by the commanding officer to acquaint the officers composing the court that there cannot be two sentences past on a prisoner tryed for one crime, and as in their original proceedings they pass'd two sentences, leaving it to the choice of the prisoner which shall be inflicted, therefore returning those proceedings could not be a reversal, because it was not a sentence.

It is, therefore, his orders that you do immediately proceed to finish the court-martial that you were in orders for, by passing only one sentence for one crime.

I am, &c.,

J. LONG, 2nd Lieut. and Adjt.

[Reply to Enclosure No. 2.]

OFFICERS TO MAJOR ROSS.

Port Jackson, 18th March, 1788,

Sir,

7 o'clock in the evening.

We have been honored with your answer to our letter of this afternoon, wherein you state that the proceedings of the court-martial held this morning would not be sent back a second time by you for a reversal, because a sentence was not passed.

The court
firm.

We now beg leave to observe to you that we could not then, or do we now, conceive it possible for us to alter a judgment which

we gave after the most impartial enquiry and most mature deliberation without revising and reconsidering the nature of the crime for which the prisoner was tried, the evidence given in, and the defence—matters which we cannot think it proper or military to come again under our cognizance after we had revised them, agreeable to the latter part of the 10th Article of the Act of Parliament for the regulation of the marine forces while on shore, and the custom of the Army.

We have, &c.,

WATKIN TENCH, Captn.-Lt. and President.

ROBERT KELLOW,)

JOHN POULDEN,)

THOS. DAVEY,)

THOS. TIMINS,)

1st Lieuts. and Members.

[Enclosure No. 3.]

MAJOR ROSS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

[In a letter to the Governor there is first a copy of the above letter (7 o'clock in the evening) and then :—]

From the above answer, finding that the court-martial seemed determined to wrest all power from the commanding officer, by passing such a sentence on the prisoner they tried as to leave it solely in his power to be punished or not, as he chose, I did not think it consistent with my duty, either to the publick or myself, to resign all authority into their hands, and give up the command of the detachment entrusted to my care,—and from their determined obstinacy I had no alternative left but the very mortifying and disagreeable one of suspending the president and members that composed the court-martial from all duty, by putting them under an arrest, which I ordered the adjutant to do for disobedience of orders, til such time as the opinion of more competent judges than either them or myself might be had thereupon.

Your Excellency will therefore please to take such steps in this disagreeable business as may appear to you most proper for the establishment of good order and military discipline, so indispensable and absolutely necessary in our present critical situation.

I have, &c.,

R. ROSS.

[Reply to Enclosure No. 3.]

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO MAJOR ROSS.

Sir,

Head-quarters, 20th March, 1788.

20 March.

I have this moment received yours of this day's date, informing me that you had suspended from all duty Capt.-Lieut. Tench, Lieuts. Robert Kellow, John Poulden, Thos. Davey, and Thos. Timins, by putting them under arrest for disobedience of

Officers
placed under
arrest.

The arrest.

1788

20 March.

orders, until such time as the opinion of more competent judges than either them or yourself might be had, or the sentence past by those officers, who were ordered by you to assemble on the 18th inst. for the trial of a private marine for unsoldierlike behaviour; your not approving of the sentence past by the said officers, which, by your letter, left a choice of two sentences to the prisoner, and they refusing to make any change in the sentence, which in their letter they say they had revised once, and were not at liberty to revise a second time, by the Act of Parliament past for the regulation of his Majesty's marine forces while on shore.

Phillip
suggests a
settlement.

As there are only four captains and twelve lieutenants in the detachment, two of which from their sickness are unable to do their duty, the having one captain and four lieutenants under arrest out of so small a number must very materially affect the service. The opinion of most competent judges, if you mean the opinion of the officers who compose the detachment, may be had without any official application to me for that purpose, if you and the officers under arrest are satisfied to leave it to their decision; and I shall be very happy if it can be immediately settled by this means, and which I hope neither you nor the officers under arrest will refuse, as I know no other alternative, if not immediately settled, but that of a general court-martial.

I am, &c.,

[Enclosure No. 4.]

A. PHILLIP.

MAJOR ROSS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

21 March.

Sir,

Camp, Port Jackson, 21 March, 1788.

A disagree-
able duty.

Having found myself reduced to the most disagreeable necessity of ordering Capt'n.-Lieut. Watkin Tench, First Lieut. Robert Kellow, First Lieut. John Poulden, First Lieut. Thos. Davey, and First Lieut. Thos. Timins, the first as president and the others as members of a court-martial, which I ordered to assemble on the 18th for the trial of Joseph Hunt, pte. marine, and both of the detachment under my command, under an arrest for passing what they call a sentence on the prisoner tried by them of such a nature as, in my opinion, tends greatly to the subversion of all military discipline, by passing two judgements, and thereby leaving it solely in the breast of the prisoner, after finding him guilty, whether he should or should not receive corporal punishment, and for positively refusing when directed by my order to make any alteration in the sentences they had pass'd on the above Joseph Hunt,—

Subversion
of discipline.

Request for
general
court-
martial.

I have therefore to request that you will please to order a general court-martial to assemble for the trial of the above officers for refusing to make any alteration in a sentence passed by them on the prisoner tried, which, if suffered to pass, introduces

a precedent in its consequences subversive of all order and military discipline, and takes all the power of mitigation out of the hands of the commanding officer, or in any other manner that may appear to your Excellency most likely to restore harmony and support that military discipline and good order which is absolutely necessary to maintain in the present critical situation of the detachment.

I have, &c.,

R. Ross, Major.

[Enclosure No. 5.]

GENERAL ORDER.

Parole, Bengal.

Head-quarters, 22nd March, 1788.

22 March.

THE major commandant of the detachment doing duty in this settlement having, by letter dated the 21st instant, reported the following officers under an arrest, viz. :—Captain-Lieutenant Watkin Tench, First Lieutenant Robert Kellow, First Lieutenant John Poulden, First Lieutenant Thos. Davey, and First Lieutenant Thomas Timins, the first as president and the others as members of a court-martial which he ordered to assemble on the 18th inst., for the trial of a private belonging to the detachment, the said court having, in his opinion, passed a sentence which tends to the subversion of all military discipline, and requesting that a general court-martial may be ordered to assemble for the trial of the aforesaid officers for refusing to make any alteration in the said sentence, or that it might be settled in any manner most likely to restore harmony and support that military discipline and good order which is so absolutely necessary to be maintained.

The position

The officers under arrest having declined the proposal made of submitting the determination of this affair to any number of officers, and having informed the Judge-Advocate, who had orders to propose that or any other mode of settling this matter without a general court-martial, that they being put under an arrest by the Commandant did not conceive that anything less than a legal decision by a general court-martial, or a public reparation from their commandant, would clear their characters.

Officers wish for court-martial.

The service does not at this moment permit a general court-martial to be assembled, the officers composing the detachment (exclusive of the five officers under arrest) being no more than three captains and eleven subalterns, one of which is confined to his bed by sickness, which reduces the number of officers in this settlement eligible to sit on this occasion to thirteen, consequently not leaving any one officer for duty. It is therefore ordered that the minutes of the trial of the aforesaid private soldier, with the letters that have passed on the occasion between the court and the commandant of the detachment, be delivered to the Judge-Advocate, that when the service permits by there being a sufficient number of officers to form a general court-

A general court-martial impossible

1738

21 Marc

1788

22 March.

To be held
when
practicable.Officers to
return to
duty.

martial, and for the necessary duty of the camp, a general court-martial may be then held on the said Capt.-Lt. Watkin Tench, First Lt. Robt. Kellow, First Lt. John Poulden, First Lt. Thos. Davey, and First Lt. Thos. Timins, if such general court-martial shall be then required by either of the parties.

The officers now under arrest to return to their duty.

GEO. JOHNSTON,* Adjut. of Orders.

A true copy from the original.

DAVID COLLINS, Judge-Advocate.

[Enclosure No. 6.]

DECLARATION OF OFFICERS.

WE are put under an arrest by the commanding officer for disobedience of his orders. We are now ordered out of it, and whenever Major Ross shall think proper to bring the merits or demerits of our conduct to a legal decision we are ready to meet the charge, and we once more repeat that a general court-martial only can bring the matter to a proper issue.

WATKIN TENCH, Capt.-Lt. of Mars.

ROBERT KELLOW, 1st Lt.

JOHN POULDEN, 1st Lt.

THOS. DAVEY 1st Lt.

THOS. TIMINS, 1st Lt.

OFFICERS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.†

19 March.

Sir,

Port Jackson, 19th March, 1788.

The officers
thank
Phillip,

The friendly and handsome part you have taken in endeavouring to reconcile the unfortunate difference of opinion which subsists between us, as the members of a court-martial, and Major Ross, as commandant of the battalion of marines, demands our warmest and most respectful acknowledgments. It is not, at the same time, without pain that we state to you that we conceive the treatment we have received so violent, and our present disgraceful situation so notorious, that we cannot, without injustice to our feelings, consent to have the arrest we now suffer under taken off until a public reparation should have been made for the indignity we have been used with. We farther, sir, beg permission to say that it is our unanimous opinion, should the measure we have stated be deemed ineligible by the commanding officer, that no meeting of officers, short of the customary usage of service in like cases, can adequately and properly fix on a mode of extricating us from the ignominious condition in which we have the honour to subscribing ourselves, sir,

Your most, &c.,

WATKIN TENCH. JOHN POULDEN.

ROBERT KELLOW. THOS. DAVEY.

THOS. TIMINS.

* First Lieutenant of Marines.

† See Major Ross's despatch, 9th July, ante, p. 157.

But
refuse to
leave arrest.

MAJOR ROSS TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1788

Camp, Sydney Cove, New South Wales,

10 July.

Sir,

10th July, 1788.

Inclosed you will find some letters from officers of this detachment requesting to be relieved at the expiration of the time for which they understood their Lordships intended they should continue here. Officers who want to return.

You will therefore please to communicate them to their Lordships.

I am, &c.,

R. Ross, Major.

[Enclosures.]

Sir,

Camp, Port Jackson, 24th June, 1788.

24 June.

I beg you will be pleased (the first opportunity) to forward my request to my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that I may be relieved at the expiration of three years, or at the first relief of this garrison, as my private affairs will require my attention in England by that time.

Pouliden.

I am, &c.,

JOHN POULIDEN.

Lieut. Timins, July 8th, said—"My private affairs being so situated as to render a longer absence from them highly injurious." Timins.

Lieut. Davey, July 9th—Ditto to Lt. Timins.

Davey.

Lieut. Clarke, June 22nd—Ditto to Lt. Timins.

Clarke.

Lieut. Creswell, June 15th—"A longer stay in this country than the term of three years will be injurious to my private affairs." Creswell.

Lieut. Kellow, July 18th—"As a longer stay in this country will be very injurious to my private affairs." Kellow.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.*

Sydney Cove, New South Wales,

Sir,

July 10th, 1788.

10 July.

You will please to inform the Right Honorable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that I sailed from the Cape of Good Hope with the ships under my command the 12th of November, leaving my despatches for their Lordships with Captain Cox, who was at the Cape on his way to Europe from India.

Departure from the Cape.

The wind continuing southerly for some days after we sailed, it was the 23rd before we past the Cape, and the 25th being eighty leagues to the eastward of it, then having strong westerly winds, I left the *Sirius* and went on board the *Supply*, armed tender, in order to precede the transports, in hopes of gaining a sufficient time to examine Botany Bay, and fix on the most

On board the *Supply*

* A portion of this despatch being identical with Phillip's despatch to the Home Office, May 15, 1788, is omitted. The passages omitted are indicated by asterisks.

1788
10 July. eligible situation for the colony; at the same time I named Lieutenant Shortland, the agent for the transports, who was on board the *Alexander*, to follow with that ship, the *Scarborough*, and *Friendship*. They sailed better than the other transports, and I wished to make some preparation for landing the stores and provisions, which the convicts on board those ships would enable me to do, if they arrived soon after the *Supply*, and before the other ships, as I had reason to expect. Captain Hunter, in the *Sirius*, was left with the rest of the transports. This was the first separation that had taken place since we left England, and the ships were then all very healthy. The strong westerly wind continued, shifting regularly from the N.W. to the S.W. quarter, and then backing round to the northward, very seldom coming to the eastward, and then for a few hours only, untill the 3rd of January, when we saw the southern extremity of New South Wales. The westerly winds now left us, and we had variable winds with southerly currents until the 18th, when we anchored in Botany Bay. The *Alexander*, *Scarborough*, and *Friendship* came in the next day, and the *Sirius*, with the rest of the ships, the day following. These ships had all continued very healthy.

Hunter with
the
transports.

Botany Bay.

* * * * *

Major Ross having, by letters of the 8th and 10th of May, requested that the surgeons might be ordered to examine into the state of health of First Lieutenant James Maxwell, who had not done any duty for some months, on account of a defection in his sight, and of Second Lieutenant William Collins, who from a very long and severe illness was in so weak a state that there were no hopes of his recovery in this country, an order was given to the principal surgeon of the garrison and the surgeon of his Majesty's ship *Sirius* to enquire into the same, who have given it as their opinion that the recovery of these officers depended on their return to Europe, they have my leave; the report of the surgeons is enclosed for their Lordship's information.

Sick officers.

As Major Ross will inform their Lordships of the particulars respecting the detachment of marines under his command, I do not trouble their Lordships with a repetition, and only inclose the returns. Lieutenant Dawes, of the *Sirius*, who had done duty with the detachment for some time, replaced Second Lieutenant Collins.

Movements
of the ships.

The transports began to land their provisions and stores as soon as store-houses were ready to receive them. The *Prince of Wales* was cleared the 23rd of May, and the *Borrowdale* the 12th of June; the rest of the ships in succession, and, the *Fishburn* and *Golden Grove* excepted, all were cleared by the 25th. These ships as they were cleared had orders to get ready to return to Europe, but the worm had so much destroyed their sheathing that most of them were obliged to heave down. The *Fishburn*,

having the spirits on board for the garrison for three years, was retained until a proper place could be got ready to receive them. 1788
10 July.

Lieutenant Ball, in the Supply, having sailed the 6th of May, returned the 25th without being able to procure any turtle; by the account that officer now gives of the island* it will not be any great use to us; no turtle breed there, there is no good water, or any anchoring-ground; the Supply being obliged to come too lost an anchor and cable. The three transports that sailed for China came to this island before the Supply left it, and one of them was near being lost. The Supply loses an anchor and cable.

I shall send the Sirius to the northward as soon as her carpenter can be spared, and from what Monsieur La Perouse said I think one of the Isles des Navigateurs the most likely to furnish the refreshments we want; at the same time, no supplies we shall be able to procure in this country for several years will maintain the colony, and regular supplies of provisions must be sent from Europe. The seeds we have been able to put in the ground this year will, I hope, furnish sufficient seed for the next year, and that is the most I expect. Of the live stock brought from the Cape the greater part is dead; several of the sheep have been killed, and it is doubtful whether by the natives' dogs or by some of our own people. Supplies from the islands and from Europe.
Loss of live stock.

The natives, who are far more numerous than I expected to find them, have lately revenged the insults they received from some seamen and convicts, by wounding one of the convicts, and carrying off a second, who, from circumstances, there is no doubt but they killed; these people were out collecting vegetables; and two men who were cutting rushes have been killed by the natives. As I am well convinced that we have been the aggressors, and it is not possible to find out the people that committed these murders, I have only taken such steps as may prevent the like accidents in future, and have endeavoured, by going to the places to which the natives generally resort, to satisfy them that our intentions are friendly; but since these accidents, except two canoes that went alongside the Sirius, the natives generally avoid us. The day after the two last men were killed I went out in hopes of finding their tools on some of the natives, which might have enabled me to have come to an explanation with them; but not a native appeared in Botany Bay, where I slept that night, and though twenty canoes were fishing when we made our fire on the beach, none came near us; fifty canoes were seen on the beach next morning, but not a man could be found, and, on our return to Port Jackson, in a small cove on the sea-shore, we fell in with a number of huts, and the moment we appeared, the natives armed, and made signs for us not to advance, but on my going forward unarmed, and making signs of friendship, most of Men killed by natives.
The blacks disappear.

* Lord Howe Island.

1738

10 July.

Two
hundred
natives.

them laid down their spears, and though we were within ten yards of them before they discovered us in less than three minutes amounted to two hundred and twelve men. We parted with these people on good terms, and their behaviour convinces me that they will never be the first aggressors, though I have been fully satisfied that they revenge the smallest affront. Whether from their superiority of numbers, for we were only twelve, or from their not being accustomed to act with treachery, the moment the friendship I offered was accepted on their side they joined us, most of them laying down their arms; and afterwards, with the greatest confidence, brought down their women to receive fish-hooks, and what we had to give them.

Friendship.

Of these people we know little; for though I go amongst them as often as the many circumstances which draw my attention permit, yet not being able to remain any time with them, and they never coming near us, but when we are near the coves in which they reside, or for a few minutes in their canoes alongside the Sirius, very few words of their language are attained.

The natives
hold aloof.

Store-ships

The store-ships and transports are now preparing to return to Europe, the Fishburn excepted. That ship cannot be cleared untill a secure place is made for the spirits, which I hope will be done, so as to permit her to sail before the middle of August.

The climate
good.

I have only to add that, with respect to this country, the climate is very good, and it will, I make no doubt, be as healthy as any in the world when the woods are cleared round us. At present the only disorder that prevails is the scurvy, which still rages. The storms of thunder and lightening, judging from what we had soon after we landed, must be very heavy in the summer; and as several trees have been fired and some sheep and hogs killed in the camp, all the provisions the colony has to subsist on untill fresh supplies are sent from Europe being in two stores, which are thatched, give me some anxiety, but for which there is no remedy at present. Had the three store-ships parted company and afterwards been lost the consequences must have been fatal to the settlement, for no resources within our reach would have supported us untill supplies could have been procured from the Cape or any European settlement.

Danger from
lightning.Two years'
provisions.

Their Lordships will, without doubt, order that those sent out in future are embarked in the ships that bring the provisions intended to support them for two years after they land, which is the least time they can be victualled for, untill a regular cultivation has taken place, and which will, I apprehend, be four years. The islands may furnish us with live stock to breed from, but I am fully satisfied that all the Sirius will be able to procure in a year will not be more than a month's subsistence for the colony, should we be obliged to make use of it. The Supply is no way calculated for a service of that kind. Cloathing in this country is full as

necessary as in England, the nights and mornings being very cold ; 1788
and before any supplies can be sent out most of the people will 10 July.
be without shoes, the most necessary article.

Of the convicts, thirty-six men, four women died on the passage,* Deaths.
twenty men eight women since landing ; eleven men and one
woman have absconded, and are supposed to have perished in the
woods ; three have been killed by the natives, and four have been
executed.

The rains setting in have prevented the Golden Grove being Rain.
cleared, and that ship will sail, with the Fishburn, as soon as
possible after the other ships.

The weekly accounts, returns of marines on board the Sirius,
and last weekly return of the detachment serving on shore are
inclosed.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

MAJOR ROSS TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.†

Camp, Sydney Cove, New South Wales,

Sir,

10th July, 1788.

You will please to inform the Right Honourable the
Lords Commissioners of the Adm'ty that since my last letter
from the Cape of Good Hope, which we left the 13th Novr.,
1787, nothing material happen'd till a few days after, when
Governor Phillip inform'd me for the first time of his intention
of proceeding to Botany Bay in the Supply, tender, as he wished,
if possible, to arrive there some time before the rest of the fleet. Altered plans.
He likewise said that the Alexander, Scarboro', and Friendship,
the best sailing transports, should be order'd to follow him under
the direction of the agent, and that the other transports, with
the victuallers, were to be left with Captain Hunter. He then
asked me if I chose to proceed in either of the first-named
transp'ts. I told him I was there to be dispos'd of in whatever
way he might think I could be made most useful for carrying on
the publick service ; but as the principal part of the detachment
under my command were on board the transports which were to
proceed with the agent, I thought it best to go with them if he
approv'd of it. I could not, I confess, but feel myself much hurt
at His Excellency's not having given me the most distant hint
of his intention prior to our quitting the Cape, that I might No notice given.
have made some preparation for such an event, and more par-
ticularly so as I found that it had been made known to others, as
a proof of which I received my first intimation of his design from
the mess of the Sirius's gun-room.

* According to the official return, post, p. 193, there also died five convicts' children, one marine, one marine's wife, and a marine's child, making the total number of deaths on the passage 48.

† Major Ross, in this despatch, writes upon matters which are dealt with in Phillip's despatch of 15th May. Ante, pp. 121-136.

1788

10 July.

On board
the Scar-
borough.

On the 25th November, the Governor, with Lieut. King and Lieut. Dawes of the *Sirius's* detachm't of marines, embark'd on board the *Supply*, myself and the Adjutant on board the *Scarbro'*, and the Qr.-master, who I thought it necessary to carry with me (to take charge of such marine stores as might be landed), on board the *Alexander*. At 12 o'clock we parted company, and in the evening of the same day we lost sight of both the *Supply* and *Sirius*.

Gales.

From this time til our making the South Cape we were most fortunate in fair winds, but from thence to Botany Bay we had bafeling, and at times, strong gales.

Botany Bay.

On the morning of the 19th of Jan., 1788, the *Alexander*, *Scarbro'*, and *Friendship* entered Botany Bay, where we found the *Supply* had arrived the evening before, and the next morning the *Sirius*, with the other transports and victuallers, joined us.

Immediately on my arrival I waited upon the Governor, whom I accompanied in quest of the most proper spot for carrying his Majesty's intention of forming a settlement on this coast into execution.

A bad situ-
ation.

Meeting with no eligible situation on this or the following day's excursion, the whole country, as far as we saw, appearing to us to be either sand, rock, or swamp, and, as far as we could judge, unfit for any kind of cultivation. From this appearance his Excellency, before he would land the detachment or the convicts, determin'd to explore the nearest harbour (mention'd by the late Capt'n. Cooke) to the northward.

Port
Jackson
chosen.

Before he left us (22nd Jan'y) he directed me to land a certain number of men on the south side of the bay every morning to fall trees and form saw-pits, in order that the whole might be set to work in erecting stores, &c., in case he did not meet with a more promising situation. On his return he inform'd me that he found Port Jackson one of the finest harbours in the world; that he had determin'd to fix the settlement in one of the many coves in it, and that he would proceed before us in the *Supply*, the *Sirius*, with the transports and victuallers, to follow as soon as possible.

On the 25th, his Excellency, with a detachment of two subalt'ns, a proportion of non-commiss'd officers and twenty privates, sail'd for Port Jackson; and on the 27th the *Sirius*, with her convoy, with much difficulty worked out of the bay, and just as the night came on got safe into the cove, where we now are.

French
ships in
Botany Bay.

I have to observe to their Lordships that on the day we left Botany Bay two French ships of war arrived there. I found they were on a voyage of discovery, but as Governor Phillip can give their Lordships a much better account of them than I have the power of doing, I must refer their Lordships to his letter on that subject.

On the 26th his Excellency directed that a number of the convicts should be landed every morning for the purpose of falling

trees and forming saw-pits, go on board to dinner, land after it, and be embark'd again in the evening. This mode being found tedious and troublesome, two days after orders were given to land the detachment and the convicts as soon as tents could be got ready for them, which was soon accomplished, and all in health landed; the Governor, with the civil department and a number of the convicts, taking possession of the east side of a small stream which runs into the cove, and the marine detachment, with the rest of the convicts, of the west side of it, in which state we still remain, and send a subaltern's guard to the opposite side every morning.

1788

19 July.

Landing.

Here, in justice to myself and the detachment under my command, I must observe to their Lordships that the detachment is at this hour without any kind of place of defence to retire to in case of an alarm or surprize, tho' I have, in justice to myself, repeatedly mention'd and urged his Excellency to get something or other erected for that purpose. Indeed, a surprize seems to me, from all I have seen, to be the only danger we have to apprehend. The natives, tho' in number near us, shew no inclination to any kind of intercourse with us, for ever since our arrival there has not one of them come near us on this side, and only two, who had been known at Botany Bay, visited the other side soon after our arrival.

No defences.

Natives shy.

Tho' we have had little or no opportunity of coming at their real dispositions and character, yet I am by no means of opinion that they are that harmless, inoffensive race they have in general been represented to be, and my suspicions have in some measure been confirm'd by an event that Capt'n. Campbell met with a few weeks past. Being out with a party, he met with the bodys of two of the convicts (who had been sent out to cut thatch for covering in the store-house), who had been most barbarously mangled and murder'd by the natives. One of the bodys had no less than seven spears in it, some of which went through and through, and the skulls of both were fractured. What appears very extraordinary is that they took away no part of the provisions or cloths belonging to the unfortunate men, but the whole of their working implements had been carried off. But to return to the detachment. We still remain under canvas, no habitations being provided for either officers or men but what they themselves, with the assistance of four carpenters and a few others, convicts (all of no trades), has been given me for the use of the detachment, were for some time erecting, and when any of them will be finished (the whole, from the nature of this sandy soil, being obliged to be constructed of wood) is impossible for me to say; but I fear it will be a length of time before the principal huts can possibly be finished, for the wood here is of so indifferent a quality that we sometimes fall a number of trees before we meet with one

Not so harmless as represented.

They kill two convicts.

Under canvas.

Building huts.

1788

10 July.

Sick
increasing.

that can be converted to any use, and as the huts are, for want of other materials, to be shingled, it becomes a very tedious bit of work. The consequences to be apprehended from this delay are to me truly alarming, for our sick list increases daily, and the scurvy is making great havocks among us.

Men from
the ships
assisting to
erect
buildings.

Finding that the Governor had employed carpenters and sawyers from the Sirius, as well as the transports, paying them for their work, I applied to him for an order to employ such artificers as could be found in the detachment, in order to assist in hutting both officers and privates, without which we never should have got from under canvas covers, which order he granted, saying they should be paid agreeable to the usual custom of paying troops for extra work. I immediately caused that order to be made publick, and the artificers are now employed, with the four carpenters already mentioned, erecting the necessary buildings.

I hope their Lordships will see the necessity I was under of adopting this method, and as I had no other method of retaining them, the men knowing that artificers employed by the Governor were to be paid for their work, I hope they will approve of what I have done.

Dawes.

On the 23rd March, Lieut. Dawes, a corporal and eight privates of the Sirius's detachment of marines, were sent to do duty with the detachment on shore. Soon after his Excellency order'd Lieut. Dawes to be discharg'd from the ship's books, and to be put upon the strength of the detachment in room of Second Lieut. William Collins, who from ill-health is obliged to be sent home, immediately after which he gave out in public orders that Lieut. Dawes was to do the duty of engineer and artillery officer, by which means the subalterns of the detachment are in no shape reliev'd by his joining us.

King sent to
Norfolk
Island.

Soon after our arrival here the Supply was order'd, with Lieut. King, of the Sirius, some male and female convicts, to Norfolk Island, but with what instructions or appointment I am entirely unacquainted.

Unpromis-
ing country.

As I have not since my arrival here been out of hearing of the drums of the detachment but once by water with the Governor, it is impossible for me to give their Lordships any other account of the country than the little I have learned from those who have made excursions a few miles round, and sorry am I to say that the accounts are by no means of a flattering kind. The country in general is rocky and barren, a very few spots excepted. Nothing but small streams of water have yet been discover'd. All the stone yet seen is of one kind, something like our Portland stone. The face of the country is, as described by Capt'n. Cooke, covered with trees, the greatest part of which has the appearance, but the appearance only, of being very fine timber. The best kind is a tree with a pine top, but it is very hard, and in grain not

unlike the English oak, and is the only one that can be made use of, but it does not grow to any considerable size, and such as are of any tolerable size are all rotten in the heart. It may be worthy of remark that the same tree is often found to be for some feet perfectly sound, then decayed, then sound, and so on alternately, but of such, and cabbage-trees, are our officers and men, with great labour and difficulty, obliged to form their huts.

Might I presume to intrude an opinion on their Lordships with respect to the utility of a settlement upon this coast, at least upon this part of it, it should be that it never can be made to answer the intended purpose or wish of Government, for the country seems totally destitute of everything that can be an object for a commercial nation, a very fine harbour excepted, and I much fear that the nature of the soil is such as will not be brought to yield more than sufficient sustenance for the needy emigrants whose desperate fortunes may induce them to try the experiment. Here I beg leave to observe to their Lordships that the above is but a private opinion. The Governor's I am unacquainted with, as he has never done me the honor of informing me of his or asking me for mine; neither has he made me or any other person that I know of acquainted with any part of the intentions of Government, nor have I been let into any part of his plan, which will, I hope, be a sufficient apology for the very lame accounts in my power to give their Lordships, independant of what I have already said. The face of the country round us produces dreadful proofs of the devastation caused by the frequent lightnings, besides our having been already visited by a shock of an earthquake, which happened on the 22nd of June. The fatal effects of the first Captain Campbell and myself have woefully experienced in having the principal part of our live stock (all our sheep and lambs, with some hogs which we purchased at the Cape of Good Hope) destroyed by it soon after our arrival, and what little remains among the whole of us are now in a starving condition for want of food to feed them. While I am on this subject I shall take the liberty of mentioning to their Lordships the quantity of provisions served to myself, the officers and men of the detachment, in which there is now no difference between us and the convicts, but in half a pint per day of Rio spirits, which in taste and smell is extremely offensive. Indeed, I may say that nothing short of absolute necessity could induce men to use it. What makes this the more severely felt by many of us is our not having known what we were to be supplied with till it was much too late to make any other provision for ourselves.

I have likewise to observe to their Lordships that the quantity of provision served to the detachment is short of what it used to be. On my mentioning this, at the request of the officers and privates, to his Excellency, he said that it was by particular

1788

16 July.

Poor timber.

The site
condemned.Ross'
private
opinion.Not
consulted by
Phillip.Lightning
and earth-
quakes.Live stock
destroyed.

Bad spirits.

Shortration.

1788

10 July.

Deduction
made.A broken
promise.Scant
allowance.

direction from the Navy Board he was to deduct a certain weight from each species of provisions issued. I then inform'd him of its being the first instance I had ever known in which a Commissary made any deduction from the daily ration, unless it was by a general order to put the whole upon short allowance. If his Excellency thought it right to give such an order, I would answer for the detachment receiving whatever he ordered without a murmur; but that men never would without such order be satisfied with fourteen for sixteen ounces of anything. I likewise mentioned to him that this detachment came out with a promise from their Lordships of their being properly victualled while they remained here, and that I had myself been informed by Mr. Nepean, of the Secretary of State's office, that we were to be victualled in every respect the same as the garrison of Gibraltar, only not to pay for our rations. That had I not understood it so, and could I possibly have imagined that I was to be served with, for instance, no more butter than any of the convicts (nearly six ounces per week), I most certainly would not have left England without supplying myself with that article, as well as many other, or oyle, for my own use. His Excellency then said that he would write home for permission to increase the present allowance, which he hoped and had no doubt would be granted him, in which case every deficiency from the time of our landing should be made good; but it may be necessary to observe that this declaration followed my observing to him the customary ration I had ever known troops to receive, and that I thought it absolutely necessary to inform their Lordships of our present situation.

The Sirius.

Wine and
spirits.

On the 20th June his Excellency order'd the corporal and eight privates lent from the Sirius to be sent on board again, saying that he would discharge three privates from the ship's books to complete the detachment, which he did on the 2nd instant, and now we are complete with the same number of men we first embark'd with. I likewise beg you will inform their Lordships that on the 8th instant the Governor read the copy of a letter from Mr. Nepean, of the 10th May, 1787, wherein he authorizes his Excellency to purchase on the passage a proportion of wine or spirits to serve the marines three years, but that it must be understood that at the expiration of that time there would be no more wine or spirits allowed.

Victualling
defective.

It is therefore, in justice to the detachment under my command, my earnest request that their Lordships will please to take us under their protection, and cause us to be properly victualled in the manner they intended; and as it is not possible to suppose troops can subsist with comfort on salt provisions and water only, it is hoped this request will be attended to, as I can affirm that no troops in the King's service ever had such severe duty to

do: so can I with equal truth say that duty can never be done with more alacrity than it is done by this detachment.

1788

10 July.

But should their grog be stopt I dread the consequences, and must pray that before such an event takes place, should it be so intended, their Lordships will order the detachment to be relieved, and shall hope I may be permitted to share with them in the same indulgence.

Grog indispensable.

I also beg leave to mention that clothing will be very much wanted for the detachment, they being already intitled to the quantity first sent out.

Clothing.

I must likewise intreat their Lordships will please to order a supply of stationary to be sent out, as the quantity we have brought with us is far too small for the necessary uses of the detachment, guards, &c.

Stationery.

I am, &c.,

R. Ross, Major.

SURGEON WHITE TO LORD SYDNEY.*

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

My Lord,

New South Wales, July, 1788.

The prevalence of disease among the troops and convicts, who on landing were tainted with the scurvy, and the likelihood of its continuance from the food (salt provisions) on which they are from necessity obliged to live, has made the consumption of medicines so very great that the inclosed supply will be very much wanted before any ships can possibly arrive here from England.

More medicines required.

The distress among the troops, their wives and children, as well as among the convicts, for want of necessaries to aid the operation of medicines has been great. What are included under the head of necessaries I take the liberty to enumerate, which are sugar, sago, oatmeal, barley, rice, currants, different spices, vinegar, and portable soup. Indeed, our situation, not having any fresh animal food, nor being able to make a change in the diet, which has and must be salt meat, makes these things more necessary here than, perhaps, in any quarter of the globe. However, the necessity of having these things sent out by the first opportunity will no doubt be strongly recommended to your Lordship's notice by his Excellency Governor Phillip. I have mentioned them lest they should escape him through the multiplicity of matters all new settlements afford. I have to entreat your Lordship will be pleased to cause the medicines to be sent from Apothecaries' Hall, where they are sure to be genuine and fresh, a circumstance, considering the immense distance we are off, and the length of time which it will take before we can receive them, that cannot be too much attended to. Care in the

Medical comforts.

Medicines

* See White to Phillip. Ante, p. 142.

1788 putting them up and having them placed in a dry place where
10 July. no wet can come at them during the voyage, is another circumstance equally to be attended to.

I have, &c.,

JOHN WHITE, Surgeon.

MAJOR ROSS TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

Camp, Sydney Cove, New South Wales,

My Dear Sir,

10th July, 1788.

Ross's
grievances.

General dis-
satisfaction.

The country
condemned.

Convicts and
turtle.

I know not whether the Secretary of State expects I am to write to him or not, but I suppose rather not, for as I came out without any orders or instructions from your office with respect to the intentions of Government, so am I still ignorant of it, for the Governor has never told me, neither has he ever advised or consulted with me on the subject, and I believe everybody else are in the dark as well as myself. Should his Lordship expect letters from me, I hope you will think the above a sufficient excuse, for I cannot see how I could write without informing him of the manner in which the Governor treats me as Lieut.-Governor; and as to the detachment, they have just the same cause for complaint that I have. This you will see cannot be done without my letter coming in the manner of a complaint, which I by no means wish to be the case at this stage of the business; but I will not answer for what may be the case hereafter, for, take my word for it, there is not a man in this place but wishes to return home, and indeed they have no less than cause, for I believe there never was a set of people so much upon the parish as this garrison is, and what little we want, even to a single nail, we must not send to the Commissary for it, but must apply to his Excellency, and when we do he allways says there is but little come out, and of course it is but little we get, and what we are obliged to take as a mark of favor.

If you want a true description of this country it is only to be found amongst many of the private letters sent home; however, I will, in confidence, venture to assure *you* that this country will never answer to settle in, for altho' I think corn will grow here, yet I am convinced that if ever it is able to maintain the people here it cannot be in less time than probably a hundred years hence. I therefore think it will be cheaper to feed the convicts on turtle and venison at the London Tavern than be at the expence of sending them here.

I have now only to add my hope that yourself, Mrs. Nepean, and the family are well, and to assure you that it is not possible you can be better than you are wished to be by James Campbell,† as well as by, my dear sir,

Yours, &c.,

R. Ross.

* A private letter.

† Captain Campbell.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

1788

My Lord,

Sydney Cove, July the 10th, 1788.

19 July.

In obedience to the instructions I received under the Royal Sign Manual, respecting the natives, and transmitting an account of the nature and quality of the soil in and near the settlement, and the mode, and upon what terms and conditions, according to the best of my judgment, lands may be granted,* I have the honor of informing your Lordship that the natives have ever been treated with the greatest humanity and attention, and every precaution that was possible has been taken to prevent their receiving any insults; and when I shall have time to mix more with them every means shall be used to reconcile them to live amongst us, and to teach them the advantages they will reap from cultivating the land, which will enable them to support themselves at this season of the year, when fish are so scarce that many of them perish with hunger, at least, I have strong reason to suppose that to be the case. Their number in the neighbourhood of this settlement, that is within ten miles to the northward and ten miles to the southward, I reckon at fifteen hundred.

The natives.

Their friendship sought.

Their number.

With respect to the soil, I have had the honor of informing your Lordship that near the head of the harbour there is a tract of country running to the westward for many miles which appears to be in general rich, good land; the breadth of this tract of country I have not yet been able to examine, but I believe it to be considerable. These lands, and several particular spots, may be settled, and the ground cleared of timber, without the great labour we experience in the situation in which I have been obliged to fix the colony. Farmers and people used to the cultivation of lands, if sent out (and without which agriculture will make but a very slow progress), must be supported by Government for two or three years, and have the labour of a certain number of convicts to assist them for that time, after which they may be able to support themselves, and to take the convicts sent out at the expence which Government is put to for their transportation: but then, I presume, none should be sent whose sentence is for a less term than fourteen years. A yearly fine to be paid for the lands granted, after the fifth year; the fine to be in grain, and in proportion to the crop; and this, I should hope, would be the only tax laid on the crops, giving the church lands in the room of tythes.

Good land.

Farmers as settlers.

Land grants.

The sending out settlers, who will be interested in the labor of the convicts, and in the cultivation of the country, appears to me to be absolutely necessary.

Settlers wanted.

Lands granted to officers or settlers will, I presume, be on condition of a certain proportion of the lands so granted being cultivated or cleared within a certain time, and which time and quantity can only be determined by the nature of the ground and

Conditions of settlement.

1788

10 July.

situation of the lands; and, in that case, when lands are granted to officers, the garrison must be sufficient for the service of the place, and to permit such officers occasionally to be absent at the lands they are to cultivate, and for a certain time; they likewise must be allowed convicts, who must be maintained at the expence of the Crown.

An opinion
to order.

Your Lordship will be pleased to consider this opinion as given in obedience to orders, on a subject which requires more consideration than I can give it at present, and at a time when I have only a very superficial knowledge of the country for a few miles around.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

Dear Sir,

July the 10th, 1788.

Survey
of Port
Jackson.

By the *Alexander*, under the care of Lieutenant Shortland, agent for the transports, I have sent dispatches to the Right Honourable the Lord Sydney and for yourself, with a rough survey of Port Jackson. Duplicates of these dispatches go by the *Friendship*, under the care of Lieutenant Collins, of the marines, triplicates of most by the master of the *Borrowdale*, and a quadruplicate of my publick letters to you by the *Prince of Wales*. With your dispatches I have sent duplicates and triplicates of my publick letters to the Admiralty and Navy Board, and I have taken the liberty of troubling you with some private letters.

Letters from
La Perouse.

Lieutenant Shortland is likewise charged with a box of letters from Monsieur *La Perouse* for the French Ambassador.

Natives
appropriate
fish.

Yesterday twenty of the natives came down to the beach, each armed with a number of spears, and seized on a good part of the fish caught in the seine. The coxswain had been ordered, however small the quantity he caught, always to give them a part whenever any of them came where he was fishing, and this was the first time they ever attempted to take any by force. While the greatest number were seizing the fish, several stood at a small distance with their spears poised ready to throw them if any resistance had been made, but the coxswain very prudently permitted them to take what they chose, and parted good friends. They, at present, find it very difficult to support themselves.

Precautions.

In consequence of what happened yesterday, no boat will in future go down the harbour without an officer.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

* A similar letter was sent to Secretary Stephens.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.*

1788

My Lord,

Sydney Cove, †July, 1788.

10 July.

The publick letters to your Lordship will show the situation of this settlement, and the little difficultys we have met with, which time, an additional force, and proper people for cultivating the land will remove; and your Lordship may be assured that anxious to render a very essential service to my country, by the establishment of a colony, which from its situation must hereafter be a valuable acquisition to Great Britain, no perseverance will be wanting on my part, and which consideration alone could make amends for the being surrounded by the most infamous of mankind, it is to your Lordship and to Nepean only that I make a declaration of this kind. Time will remove all difficultys, and with a few familys who have been used to the cultivation of lands, this country will wear a more pleasing aspect, and those who are to come out, knowing what the country really is, will be less disapointed. As to myself, I am satisfied to remain as long as my services are wanted: I am serving my country, and serving the cause of humanity. I flatter myself that by the return of the ships that brought us out provisions, *and on which is placed our sole dependence*, I shall be able to give your Lordship a more satisfactory account of this country.

Difficulties.

Time will remove them.

Devotion to duty.

Lt. Philip Gidley King, the second lieut. of the Sirius, who is at Norfolk Island, is a very steady, good officer. He, too, is cut off from all society, and is in a situation that will require patience and perseverance, both of which he possesses, with great merit in the service as an officer; as such I beg leave to recommend him to your Lordship. The rank of master and commander he well earned in the late war, and I should be very happy if he now attained it, thro' your Lordship.‡ I have now, my Lord, only to request that my compliments may be made acceptable to Lady Sydney and family, and as I have directed my official letters to Mr. Nepean, to Mr. Townshend in particular, I hope he will not forget his exiled friend.

King praised.

His promotion asked for

Of your Lordship's friendship I have had proofs, and of which I retain a just sense; add to the obligation, my Lord, by believing that I merit the friendship you honor me with, and that I am, with esteem,—

Your Lordship's, &c.,
A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.§

My Lord,

Sydney Cove, July 10th, 1788.

I have now closed all my publick letters, which, from the hurry in which they have been written, will appear unconnected,

* A private letter.

† The day of the month is not given, but the letter was probably written on the same day as the official despatches, *i.e.*, 10th July.

‡ King was promoted 2nd March, 1791.

§ A private letter.

- 1788
10 July.
Care for the
natives.
- and stand in need of an apology. Your Lordship will see by the last letter that the natives, armed, took some fish by force from the boat's crew. The temptation was great, for the quantity caught was considerable, and fish is now very scarce. We shall guard against any dispute on this head in future, and when the ships sail I shall have time to go amongst them and to give them some little assistance if, from the rains having ceased, fish can be caught in any quantity.
- Presents
for England.
- The enclosed memorandum contains the articles for your Lordship, which are on board the *Alexander*, and of which I beg your acceptance. The wine will, I hope, be improved by the voyage.
- Birds.
- I have once more the pleasure of assuring your Lordship of my esteem, and of a just sense of the friendship with which I am honor'd, and of requesting that my respects may be made acceptable to Lady Sydney, with compliments to Mr. Townshend. The birds from Lord Howe Island may be acceptable to Lady Chatham; and I am sorry that I have not been able to procure any small birds for Miss Townshend, to whom, likewise, your Lordship will please to make my compliments.
- A kangaroo.
- The kangaroo* for your Lordship is the largest I have yet seen. As it stands it measures five feet nine inches. This extraordinary animal makes the same use of his fore feet as the monkey does. Major Ross has one alive. It is young, very tame, and comes to you and embraces your hands with the fore feet. The female was killed, and the young one remained by the body.
- Wishing your Lordship health, I have the honour to be, with the greatest esteem, &c.,
- A. PHILLIP.
- Lt. Collins, whose bad state of health obliges him to return, I beg leave to recommend to your Lordship's notice.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

- 12 July.
Urgent
wants.
Leather.
- My Dear Sir,
- Sydney Cove, July 12th, 1788.
- To the articles which I have mention'd as more immediately wanted, the following, tho' so very necessary, have escaped my memory till this moment. Leather for soles for the men's shooes, and the materials for mending them. Shooes here last but a very short time, and the want of these materials, and thread to mend the cloathing, will render it impossible to make them serve more than half the time for which they were intended. This country requires warm cloathing in the winter; the rains are frequent and the nights very cold.
- Warm
clothing.
- You will excuse the repetition of our wants; they will, I hope, be less in future.
- I have, &c.,
A. PHILLIP.
- Vinegar.
- Vinegar will be very acceptable; it is very much wanted.

* Up to this time no agreement seems to have been come to as to the spelling of "kangaroo."

THE REV. RICHARD JOHNSON TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

1788

Port Jackson, in the county of Cumberland,

12 July

Hon'd. Sir,

New South Wales, July 12th, 1788.

Though I have nothing particular to mention to you, I cannot think of letting the fleet return to England without dropping you a single line to inform you of my health and welfare. It would be unnecessary for me, sir, to give you any account of the various circumstances or incidences respecting the fleet during our late passage from England to this distant part of the globe, as, no doubt, you will receive ample information respecting these matters, together with a description of this country as to climate, natives, &c., &c., from his Excellency Arthur Phillip, Esq., our Governour, and others. Everything here is as yet (as you may easily suppose) very unsettled, but hope in time our situation will be rendered more comfortable; and, even now, all things considered, thank God, I have no reason to complain.

Things unsettled.

You may remember, sir, a circumstance which greatly interested the public a little before our leaving England. This was respecting the Norwich goaler and two convicts, ——— and ———, which, with a child, were removed from Norwich gaol to Plymouth in order to be embarked on board one of the transports bound to New South Wales. These two persons I married soon after our arrival here. Some persons made a charitable contribution for these two persons, collected the sum of £20, and laid this out in various articles, at the same time requesting I w'd see this delivered to them upon our arrival here. Unfortunately, these have not been found. This circumstance has been brought before the Civil Court here, when a verdict was found in their favor ag't the captain of the Alexander. Am sorry this charitable intention and action has been brought to this disagreeable issue, the more so because the public seemed to be so much interested in their welfare. The child is still living—of a weakly constitution, but a fine boy.

Marriage of convicts.

Hope, sir, you will excuse my freedom in directing these few lines to you, my chief intention, as I have already mentioned, being to inform you of my health and welfare, and that I may have the honour of once more subscribing myself, &c.,

RICHARD JOHNSON.

MAJOR ROSS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Camp, Sydney Cove, New South Wales,

Sir,

22nd August, 1788.

22 Aug.

Having on the 15th of May represented to your Excellency the absolute impossibility of erecting barracks for the officers and men of the detachment without employing such artificers for that purpose as could be found amongst themselves,

1788

22 Aug.

Artificers.

and having at the same time said that they could not be retained at such work unless they were to be paid in the customary manner of paying all troops employed on extra works for the public service, and more especially so as they knew that the artificers employed from the ships of war and transports were to be paid for work done on shore.

Paid like troops.

Your Excellency having done me the honor of agreeing with me that it would be necessary to employ them, and that if it was customary, there could be no doubt but that the men so employed would be paid, I, in consequence, gave out an order on the 17th of May that such artificers as belonged to the detachment, and employed in erecting barracks or other public works, should in future be paid in the same manner that troops usually have been.

I do myself the honor of inclosing for your Excellency's inspection a list of such artificers as have been employed from the date of the above order to the 17th of August, 1788.

I have, &c.,

R. Ross, Major.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

1st September, 1788.

1 Sept.

My Lord,

Despatches.

I had the honor of informing your Lordship of the situation of this colony, by the agent for the transports, Lieutenant Shortland, who sailed the 13th of July, in the *Alexander*, with the *Friendship* and *Prince of Wales*, transports, and the *Borrowdale*, store-ship; duplicates of my letters to your Lordship being sent at the same time by Lieutenant William Collins, whose bad state of health obliged him to return to Europe; and triplicates by the master of the *Borrowdale*.

Capt. Carteret's track.

These ships went to the northward, intending to follow Captain Carteret's track between New Britain and New Ireland; and as it is not now impossible but that the ships by which I have now the honor of writing to your Lordship may be the first that arrive, I shall recapitulate the heads of my former letters.

[Here follow extracts from letters already given.]

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

September 28th, 1788.

28 Sept.

My Dear Sir,

The *Sirius* sent to the Cape for corn.

I have ordered the *Sirius* to the Cape, for the reasons assigned in my letter to Lord Sydney;* all the seed wheat and most of the other seeds brought from England having been spoiled, as well as what wheat was put on board the *Supply* at the Cape; several acres sown with this wheat have been sown a

second time, with the seeds preserved for next year, in case of any accident happening to what we have in the ground, and which has left us without a bushel of seed in the settlement. Having only a year's flour in store, Captain Hunter has orders to purchase as much as the ship can stow, and I apprehend he will be able to bring six months' for the settlement; as likewise what seed wheat, &c., we may want. The *Sirius* and *Supply* being victualled from the stores lessens our provisions; and you will, I believe, see the necessity of having always two years' provisions beforehand: a store-ship may be lost a long time before it is known here or in England.

1783

1 Sept.

Two years' stock of provisions.

No kind of necessaries for the sick after landing was sent out. I enclose the surgeon's letter,* and what he has demanded for six months I have ordered to be purchased, and apprehend necessaries for the hospital will be sent out by the first ships. The cloaths for the convicts are in general bad, and there is no possibility of mending them for want of thread; it is the same with the shoes, which do not last a month; these necessary articles, to the amount of a few pounds, I have likewise ordered to be purchased. A strong launch to remove provisions will soon be necessary, as some convicts are going to cultivate land near the head of the harbour, and to bring timber, for what we now use is brought already from a considerable distance, and our roads after heavy rains are bad.

Hospital needs.

Clothing and shoes.

A launch required.

Bills are given to the carpenters and sawyers of the *Sirius* and *Supply* for the time they have been ashore (certificates were given to those belonging to the transports). The whole amounts to £192 17s. 6d. These small bills will give the Treasury some trouble, but this country has no Treasury. There are now only ten convict carpenters; more are absolutely necessary, as well as bricklayers, for the building to secure stores will be a heavy work, and must be undertaken; at the same time I wish to avoid hiring the ships' carpenters in future.

Carpenters and bricklayers wanted.

The tools and articles in the inclosed lists will be much wanted by the time they can be sent out, and I cannot help repeating that most of the tools were as bad as ever were sent out for barter on the coast of Guinea.

Tools.

Of the thirty pipes of wine ordered for the hospital, only fifteen were purchased. There being no more port wine in the stores at Rio de Janeiro, you will be so good as to let orders be given for the remainder being procured at Teneriffe, if port wine is not sent from England.

Wine.

The ration, as settled by the Navy Board, is the same for the men convicts as for the garrison, and the giving of only four pounds of pork in lieu of seven pounds of beef I think too little. The additional pound of flour a month is, I suppose, according to the custom of other garrisons, but this is the business of a Com-

Ration, too small.

1788 missary, and with which I am unacquainted. The eighth was
28 Sept. stopped for some time in favour of Government, on account of
 the loss in issuing the provisions in small quantities, but being
 The desirous, if possible, to do away with every cause of discontent, on
 deduction to Major Ross informing me that it never was done in any garrison
 be taken off. on his knowledge, the full weight being given, and the loss falling
 on Government, I have ordered that deduction to be taken off,
 and the garrison and convicts receive their full allowance.

Children's allowance. The women have two-thirds of what is allowed the men, and
 the children one-third. The children's allowance is, I think, too
 little, and I have been obliged in several instances to order
 children half the men's allowance, or two-thirds, as the women
 are allowed.

Poor wood-ware. The wooden ware sent out were too small; they are called
 bowls and platters, but are not larger than pint basons. There
 was not one that would hold a quart.

Candles. As the candles sent out will not last more than two years, I
 wish to know if it is the intention of Government to furnish the
 settlement with that article for any longer term.

Clothing. The requisites for mending the men and women's cloaths and
 shoes, as well as some kind of bedding for them, are very neces-
 sary, and some kind of covering will be wanted for the children.
 This is not an expense that will be necessary to continue after a
 number of settlers are in the colony, for then the convicts will
 have some resources; at present they have none.

More help. Amongst our many wants a few proper people to superintend
 the convicts has been mentioned, and we are at a great loss for
 the necessary people to attend the stores and see the provisions
 issued. The convicts who are proper for this are those who have
 had some little education, and they are the greatest villains we
 have. In fact, there is no choice of persons of any class, and I
 am obliged to continue such as we have in places for which they
 prove themselves very unfit subjects.

Paint The paint I have desired is chiefly for the gun-carriages, boats,
 &c.

Convicts' sentences. The knowing when the time expires for which the convicts
 have been transported is very necessary, many of whom will
 desire to return; and there are many that will be a burthen to
 Government, and who I should be glad to send away. This I
 mentioned more particularly in a former letter.

Norfolk Island. Copies of the order and instructions given to the Commandant
 of Norfolk Island are inclosed,* as likewise what articles are
 ordered to be purchased at the Cape.

The good rewarded. The good behaviour and industry of two convicts, ——
 and —— have induced me to request that their families
 may be sent to them.† The men are at Norfolk Island, and

* Ante, pp. 136-138. † The request was complied with. Post, p. 254.

which they do not wish to leave after the time for which they have been transported expires. The names and places of abode of these two families are inclosed. 1788
23 Sept.

An account of the artificers belonging to the detachment who have been employed as such is inclosed in my letter to Lord Sydney. You will, sir, be so good as to inform me what they are to be paid a day; and, as the ships that may come out will bring many necessaries which these people stand in need of, they hope that money will be sent out to pay them, as bills would be attended with great loss and inconvenience. Artificers' pay.

The carpenters belonging to the transports had notes given to them for what they had earned, at the rate of three shillings per day. Carpenters' wages.

The master carpenter of his Majesty's ship *Sirius* and the master carpenter of the *Supply*, armed tender, have been paid by bills at the rate of three shillings per day. The rest, carpenters and sawyers, have been paid by bills at the rate of two shillings per day.

The master smith, who belongs to the *Sirius*, has no allowance for his work, as I have written by the ships that sailed in July to request he may be established in the settlement with such an allowance as may be judged proper. The master smith.

The *Golden Grove* is now ready to sail with one midshipman, one serjeant, one corporal, and five privates, twenty men and ten women convicts. These will make the number on Norfolk Island sixty, and I send eighteen months' provisions. The *Fishburn* will be ready to sail by the time the *Golden Grove* returns, and both ships shall sail immediately for England. I have, &c.. Detachment for Norfolk Island.

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

My Lord,

28th September, 1788.

Extracts from my letters by the ships which sailed in July accompany this letter, and I have now the honor of informing your Lordship that the *Supply* sailed for Norfolk Island the 17th of July, and returning the 26th of August, brought me the following particulars from the Commandant of that island.* He says that immediately after being landed they proceeded to clear ground sufficient for building huts for themselves and a store-house, the whole island not affording a single acre free from timber. They were landed on the south-west end of the island, a rough sketch of which I received from that officer, and have the honor of enclosing your Lordship. The bay in which they landed is sheltered by a reef of coral rock, through which there is a passage for a boat, but which, with the tide of flood when the wind is westerly, makes the landing dangerous; and a midshipman who was ordered to lay within the reef, in order to attend the boats Norfolk Island.

* Despatches were sent from Norfolk Island on the 11th August.

1788

28 Sept.

Landing
dangerous.

coming on shore, imprudently letting the boat drive into the surf, was lost with four men. This was the second time the boat had been overset with that midshipman in her, and the first time one man was lost.

Rich land.

The want of a good landing-place, and security for vessels in the winter, is the only thing to be wished for, the island being in every other respect one of the finest in the world. The earth is very rich—mould to the depth of five and six feet wherever they have dug so deep, and all the grain and garden seeds which have been put into the ground growing in the most luxuriant manner. This island, from the great quantity of pumice-stone found there, must formerly have been a volcano, the mouth of which, it is probable, will be found on the top of a small mountain near the middle of the island, which he has named Mount Pitt.† The island is exceedingly well watered, a strong stream, which rises at or near Mount Pitt, running through a very fine valley—sufficiently strong to turn a mill, though divided into several branches; and very fine springs of water are found in different parts of the island.

A fine
stream.Exploration
difficult.

There are several small bays, and there are some hopes of finding a better landing-place, but the necessity of employing everyone in sheltering themselves and stores from the weather, the small number of people, only seventeen men and six women, and the whole island being covered with wood, which a sort of supple-jack, interwoven with the trees, renders almost impassable, have hitherto prevented its being examined. With this small number, Mr. King has cleared sufficient ground to have vegetables of every kind in the greatest abundance; three acres in barley, part of which had been first sown with wheat, but none of which came up, the grain being injured by the weevil, and ground was ready to receive rice and Indian corn, when the Supply was there. All his people were in good houses, and he says that he has no doubt but that within three years they shall be in such a situation as to support themselves, with the assistance of a small proportion of salt provisions, and that they will not stand in need of that after the fourth year.

Cultivation.

The people
well housed.Fish, turtle,
pigeons,
flax.Flax-
dressers
wanted.

They have fish in great abundance, some turtle in the season, great number of pigeons, and have found the plantain growing wild. The flax-plant (some roots of which I shall send by the Sirius to the Cape, to be forwarded to England) is found very luxuriant all over the island, growing to the height of eight feet: unfortunately, the person I sent, who calls himself a flax-dresser, cannot prepare it, as this plant requires a different treatment in the dressing to what the European flax-plant does. Your Lordship, I presume, will order proper persons to be sent out, by which means that island will, in a very short time, be able to furnish a considerable quantity of flax. The pine-trees, in the opinion of the carpenter of the Supply, who is a good judge, are superior to any he has ever seen; and the island affords excellent timber for

† In honor of the Prime Minister, the Right Honourable William Pitt.

ship-building, as well as for masts and yards*, with which I make no doubt but his Majesty's ships in the East Indies may be supplied, as likewise with pitch and tar, the only difficulty being the want of a good landing-place, and I have not the least doubt but that one will be found in some of the small bays, or if not, Mr. King proposes blowing up two or three of the small rocks which make the reef dangerous, but if disappointed in both, there will be no danger in the summer-time; and I am assured by the master of the Supply it will be safer for a ship to load with masts and spars at Norfolk Island than it is in Riga Bay, where so many ships load yearly.

1778

28 Sept

Fine timber.

The Supply has been twice to the island, but in this season we have blowing weather, and that has prevented our receiving any spars. The Golden Grove will sail the beginning of October, with one petty officer, a serjeant, corporal, and six marines, twenty men and ten women convicts, and eighteen months' provisions for the island; and by that ship I expect spars, some of which shall be sent to the Commissioners of His Majesty's Navy, that they may be properly examined, as I believe the wood is nearly as light as the best Norway masts, and grows to a most extraordinary size, some of the trees measuring from one hundred and sixty to one hundred and eighty feet, and rise eighty feet without a branch: the turpentine from them is very white, and in the opinion of those who have seen it is of the purest kind. The fern-tree is likewise found of a good height, measuring from seventy to eighty feet, and affords good food for the hogs, sheep, and goats, all which thrive: and I shall send them what live stock we now have remaining of what was purchased on account of Government. No quadrupeds have been seen except rats, which at present overrun the island, but which the cats and terrier dogs intended to be sent will, I hope, soon destroy; until that is done, their crops must suffer very considerably. There are, likewise, great plenty of cabbage-trees, but not a single blade of grass has been seen on the island, the pigeons, sheep, and goats eating the leaves of the shrubs and of particular trees, with which they grow very fat. Two canoes were found on the rocks, probably driven from New Zealand.

Another detachment for Norfolk Island.

Great pine-trees.

Thriving live stock.

Rats.

No grass.

They had not had such heavy storms of thunder as we have experienced, and the people have been very healthy. I think this island will answer the most sanguine expectations, and am satisfied that the officer who commands there will, in a very few years, not only put that island in a situation to support itself, but to assist this colony.

Good prospects.

As soon as the rains permitted the getting the provisions on shore from the two remaining store-ships, they were cleared, except of the spirits, which are on board of one of them, and

* Other experts were of a different opinion. Post, p. 460. The timber, when tried, was found to be unfit for masts or yards. See King's Description of Norfolk Island, post, p. 429.

1788

28 Sept.

Failure of
seed.A second
sowing.Bad
stowage.Food
running
short.Grain from
the Cape.Hospital
necessaries.

Wine.

Cellar for
spirits.

which will be landed the end of this month. It was my intention to send the two store-ships away together, and expected they would be ready to sail the first week in October, and the *Sirius* was ordered to be ready to sail about the same time to the northward, in order to procure live stock ; but it was now found that very little of the English wheat had vegetated, and a very considerable quantity of barley and many seeds had rotted in the ground, having been heated in the passage, and some much injured by the weevil. All the barley and wheat, likewise, which had been put on board the *Supply* at the Cape were destroyed by the weevil. The ground was, therefore, necessarily sown a second time with the seed which I had saved for the next year, in case the crops in the ground met with any accident. The wheat sent to Norfolk Island had likewise failed, and there did not remain seed to sow one acre. I could not be certain that the ships which are expected would bring any quantity of grain, or, if put on board them, that they would preserve it good by a proper attention to the stowage, to the want of which I impute our present loss.

The colony not being in a state to support any considerable quantity of live stock, many being under the necessity at present of frequently killing a part of what they have for want of food to support them, I should be obliged to kill what the *Sirius* might procure, and which could not be expected to exceed ten or fourteen days' provision for the settlement ; and we now have not more than a year's bread in store, having been obliged to furnish the *Sirius* and the *Supply* with provisions. On these considerations, but more immediately from the fear of not having grain to put into the ground next year, when we shall have a more considerable quantity of ground to sow, I have thought it necessary to order the *Sirius* to go to the Cape of Good Hope in order to procure grain, and at the same time what quantity of flour and provisions she can receive. Capt'n. Hunter is likewise ordered to purchase what necessarys the surgeon of the hospital demands for six months, no necessarys of any kind, according to his letter, which is inclosed, having been sent out. Fifteen pipes of wine were purchased at Rio de Janeiro, which were all that could be procured ; and I presume, as thirty pipes were ordered, the remainder will be sent out by any ship that may stop at Teneriffe. I have only ordered a sufficient quantity of necessarys to be purchased for that time, as a demand has been made in my first letter to your Lordship. The cellar for receiving the spirits will be finished, and the Fishburn store-ship cleared and ready to sail by the time the *Golden Grove* returns from Norfolk Island, when both ships shall be immediately ordered to England.

I send the store-ship to Norfolk Island, as I think the *Supply* may be necessary in the harbour while the *Sirius* is absent.

Your Lordship will see by the returns the state of the garrison and the provisions remaining in store. What the *Sirius* will bring will be mostly flour, and that she may take on board as large a quantity as possible I have ordered some of her guns to be landed.

1788

28 Sept.
Lightening
the *Sirius*.

I presume that your Lordship will see the necessity of this colony having always a certain quantity of provisions in store.

As soon as the *Sirius* sails I intend going up the harbour to the ground pointed out in my former letters as more easily cultivated than the land round us,* with a small detachment, consisting of two lieutenants, one captain, twenty-five non-commissioned and privates, and forty or fifty convicts, who will be employed in cultivating the ground. I purpose remaining with this party until they are settled, and have no doubt when settlers come out, and proper people to superintend the convicts that will be employed for the Crown, but that two or three years will give this country a very different aspect; and in the meantime the clearing the ground near the settlement shall not be neglected.

Fresh
ground.

The hutting the detachment has been going on under the direction of the Major-Commandant. The officers have all separate houses, and except one or two are now under cover. The barracks are still in hand. There being some carpenters and sawyers in the different companies, I ordered them to be employed as such; and it being customary to pay the soldiers when so employed, and Major Ross thinking that they could not otherwise be set to work as artificers, I have inclosed his report of such as have been employed for your Lordship's approbation. I have likewise the honour of inclosing your Lordship his returns of such officers as wish to be relieved at the expiration of the three years for which they were sent out†, and of those who are desirous of remaining, as likewise copies of his letter and my answer respecting the encouragement offered by Government to settlers.

Officers'
houses.

Relief.

The barracks, officers' houses, hospital, store-houses for the use of the detachment and for the public stores, are buildings that will stand for some years, as they will hereafter be walled up with brick or stone, if limestone can be found in the country, or if sent out as ballast in the transports.

Buildings.

The detachment is now inclosing ground for their gardens, and we have about six acres of wheat, eight of barley, and six acres of other grain, all which, as well as such garden seeds as were not spoiled, promise well; and though the soil is in general a light sandy soil, it is, I believe, as good as what is commonly found near the sea-coast in other parts of the world. The great inconvenience we find is from the rocks and the labour of clearing away the woods which surround us, and which are mostly gum-trees of a very large size, and which are only useful as firewood,

Fields and
gardens.

* Rose Hill, named after Mr. G. Rose, Under Secretary, The Treasury. † Ante, p. 165.

- 1788 though I think that when we can cut them down in the winter and give them time to season they may be made useful in building.
- 23 Sept. The fish begin to return with the warm weather, but I fear we shall never be able to save any part of the provisions by the quantity that will be taken.
- Fish. The rainy season is, I hope, nearly over, and though we have had very heavy rains they have not been more frequent than was expected, and were chiefly confined to a few days near the full and change of the moon.
- Heavy rain. The climate is equal to the finest in Europe, and we very seldom have any fogs. All the plants and fruit-trees brought from the Brazil and the Cape that did not die in the passage thrive exceeding well; and we do not want vegetables, good in their kind, which are natural to the country.
- Fine climate. With respect to the sending to the Islands for women, your Lordship will, I believe, think that in the present situation of this colony it would be only bringing them to pine away a few years in misery; and I am very sorry to say that those we have are most of them very abandoned wretches. Still, more women will be necessary when more convicts are sent out.
- The woman question. Stone houses that will not be in danger from fire will, if possible, be erected in the course of the summer, as likewise a place of worship; and if ships coming out bring limestone as ballast these very necessary works will go on fast. At present we are obliged to lay the bricks and stones in clay, and of course to make the walls of an extraordinary thickness, and even then they are not to be depended on.
- Want of lime. This country is supposed to have mines of iron and tin or silver by those who have been used to work in mines; but I give no encouragement to search after what, if found in our present situation, would be the greatest evil that could befall the settlement.
- Mineral wealth. A convict, used to work in the Staffordshire lead mines, says the ground we are now clearing contains a large quantity of that metal; and copper is supposed to be under some rocks which have been blown in sinking a cellar for the spirits. I have no doubt but that the earth contains iron and other metals, and that mines may hereafter be worked to great advantage. The red used by the painters, and which they call Spanish brown, is found in great abundance; and the white clay with which the natives paint themselves is still in greater plenty; and which the Abbé that came out with Monsieur Perouse as a naturalist told me, if cleared of the sand (which may be done with little trouble), would make good china. Specimens were sent to Sir Joseph Banks,* and a stone taken out of a slate quarry that I thought contained some metal.
- Lead, iron, and copper. Clay for china.

* Mr. Josiah Wedgwood, to whom a sample of the clay was submitted, declared it to be "an excellent material for pottery." He made from it a medallion, which is now in the possession of R. Tangye, Esq., of Birmingham.

Your Lordship will, I hope, judge it expedient to send out settlers, to whom a certain number of convicts may be given; they, my Lord, will be interested in cultivating the lands, and when a few carpenters and bricklayers are sent out who will act as overseers, and have some little interest in the labour of the convicts who are under their care, a great deal of labour will be done by them who are employed on the public works. I have in a former letter mentioned that a couple of decked vessels of 30 or 40 tons burthen, if sent out in frames, and two or three good shipwrights, would be of great service.

The natives, though very friendly whenever they are met by two or three people who are armed, still continue to attack any of the convicts when they meet them in the woods, and two or three have been lately wounded by them. I have been with a small party to examine the land between the harbour and Broken Bay; we went as far as Pittwater, and saw several of the natives, but none came near us. There are several hundred acres of land free from timber, and very proper for cultivation, when a small settlement can be made on the coast. On our return to the boats near the mouth of the harbour, we found about sixty of the natives, men, women, and children, with whom we stayed some hours; they were friendly, but, as I have ever found them, since they find we intend to remain, they appeared best pleased when we were leaving them, though I gave them many useful articles; and it is not possible to say whether it was from fear or contempt that they do not come amongst us. I have already had the honor of informing your Lordship of the little we know of these people. Most of the women, and all the female children I saw had lost two joints from the little finger of the left hand, and two women were scarred on the shoulders like the men, the first I had seen. The women, when we first came on the beach, were in their canoes fishing, which is their constant employment, the men chiefly employing themselves in making canoes, spears, fizzes, &c.

The day before we returned, the boat that was waiting for us, near the harbour's mouth, saw about two hundred men, who assembled in two parties, and who, after some time, drew up opposite to each other, and from each party men advanced singly and threw their spears, guarding themselves at the same time with their shields. I suppose this to have been no more than an exercise, for the women belonging to both parties remained together on the beach; though towards the end of the combat they are said to have run up and down, uttering violent shrieks.

As it had been supposed that many of the natives had left this part of the coast on account of the great scarcity of fish, the different parts of the harbour were examined in one day, and the canoes counted; not more than sixty-seven canoes and one hun-

1788

28 Sept.

Another
request
for settlers.

Attacks by
natives.

Friendly
intercourse.

Strange
customs.

A combat.

Counting
the natives.

1788

28 Sept.

Native food.

dred and thirty-three people were seen ; but it was the season in which they make their new canoes, and large parties were known to be in the woods for that purpose. I went a few days after to examine the coast between this harbour and Botany Bay, in which journey few of the natives were seen ; but a young whale being driven on the coast, all we met had large pieces, which appeared to have been lain on the fire until the outside was scorched, in which state they eat it. These people last summer would neither eat shark nor stingray ; but the scarcity of fish in the winter, I believe, obliges them to eat anything that affords the smallest nourishment. They have two kinds of root which they chew after roasting ; one is the fern-root ; they eat together, that is, in families, and seldom broil their fish (the only way they ever dress it) for more than a few minutes. I am sorry to have been so long without knowing more of these people, but I am unwilling to use any force, and hope this summer to persuade a family to live with us, unless they attempt to burn our crops, of which I am apprehensive, for they certainly are not pleased with our remaining amongst them, as they see we deprive them of fish, which is almost their only support ; but if they set fire to the corn, necessity will oblige me to drive them to a greater distance, though I can assure your Lordship that I shall never do it but with the greatest reluctance, and from absolute necessity.

Conciliation.

The natives not migratory.

As there are paths which are much frequented between this harbour and Broken Bay, I apprehend they frequently change their situation ; but have no reason to suppose they go to the northward in the winter, and return in the summer.

Kangaroos.

The kangaroo is the only animal of any size that we have yet seen, and they are frequently killed ; they are of two sorts, one seldom weighing more than sixty pounds ; these live chiefly on the high grounds ; the hair is of a reddish cast, and the head shorter than the large sort, some of which have been killed that weighed one hundred and fifty pounds ; both are of the opossum kind, and the young ones, several of which have been taken, grow very tame in a few days, but none have ever lived more than two or three weeks.

Live stock disasters.

I have now given up all hopes of recovering the two bulls and four cows that were lost, and one sheep only remains of upwards of seventy which I had purchased at the Cape on my own account and on Government's account. It is the rank grass under the trees which has destroyed them, for those who have only had one or two sheep which have fed about their tents have preserved them.

Pigs do well.

Hogs and poultry thrive and increase fast. Black cattle will thrive full as well, and as we shall be able in future to guard against their straying, your Lordship will please to determine whether it would not be necessary to order any ship that was

coming to the settlement with provisions to purchase at the Cape as many cows as could be conveniently received on board, with a couple of young bulls. But the ship for that purpose should be able to stow them between decks; and I beg leave to observe that a forty or fifty gun ship that brought out provisions and stores, leaving her guns out, would answer the purpose better than any transport, and at once stock this settlement. Savu is at too great a distance for the Sirius to be employed on that service to any extent.

Your Lordship will, I hope, excuse so long a detail of matters trifling in themselves, and which I should not have dwelt on but that I wished the situation of the colony to be known as fully as possible.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

RETURN of men, women, and children belonging to the settlement that have died since the 13th of May, 1787.*

Mortality bill.

Died on the passage.

Marines	...	...	...	...	...	1
Do. wives	...	...	...	...	...	1
Do. children	...	...	...	...	...	1
Convicts—Men	...	...	...	...	...	36
Do. women	...	...	...	...	...	4
Do. children	...	...	...	...	...	5

Total number dead on the passage ... 48

Died since landing.

Marines	...	...	...	...	...	3
Do. wives	...	...	...	...	...	0
Do. children	...	...	...	...	...	2
Convicts—Men (including 3 killed by the natives)	...	...	...	...	...	26
Do. women	...	...	...	...	...	12
Do. children	...	...	...	...	...	9

Total number dead since landing ... 52

Total number dead since leaving England 100

Eleven men and one woman missing. Four executed.

DAVID COLLINS, Secretary.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

Sir,

September 28th, 1788.

Lieutenant Shortland, who sailed from hence the 13th of July, in the *Alexander*, with the *Friendship*, *Prince of Wales*, and *Borrowdale*, transports, was charged with my dispatches for the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty.

Those ships went to the northward, intending to follow Captain Carteret's track between New Britain and New Ireland.

You will please to inform their Lordships that as soon after the sailing of those ships as the weather permitted the two remaining store-ships were cleared of the provisions; and the

1788
28 Sept.
Norfolk
Island.

Golden Grove was immediately hove down and ordered to prepare for sea, the Fishburn being obliged to remain with the spirits on board until a place of security was prepared. Lieutenant Ball sailed the 20th of July with provisions for Norfolk Island, and returned the 26th of August, having met with very strong gales in his passage, and very indifferent weather while he was off the island. From Lieutenant Philip Gidley King, the Commandant I received the following particulars.*

* * * * *

Small
vessels
required.

The having a settlement on Norfolk Island, and the extent of this harbour, as well as the great necessity there will be of procuring that kind of wood which is proper for building, and which is not to be got even at present but with the labour of a great number of convicts, will render two vessels of thirty or forty tons of infinite service to this settlement. I presume they might be sent out in frame, but it will be necessary to send a few shipwrights to put them together, and who, as well as a mast-maker, and one that understands the manner of tapping the pine-trees, will be of great service.

I inclose the state and condition of his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, and *Supply*, armed tender, the returns of the detachment of marines, and the returns made by the surgeon of the hospital.

The *Sirius* is now ready to sail for the Cape, and the Golden Grove for Norfolk Island.

The sketch of Howe Island made by Lieutenant Ball is inclosed.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

MAJOR ROSS TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Camp, Sydney Cove, New S. Wales,

1 Oct.

Sir,

1st October, 1788.

Governor Phillip having determin'd to order the *Sirius* to the Cape of Good Hope, this letter will be convey'd so far by Captain Hunter, who is to sail in the course of the week.

Letters
home.

By the transports which sail'd for England in July I did myself the honor of transmitting to you, for their Lordships' information, two sets of letters—one set by Lieut Shortland, agent for transports, and the other by Lieut. Maxwell, of the marines, who, with Second Lieut. Collins, had been ordered home for the recovery of health.

Sundry
requests

With my letters I transmitted effective lists, made up to the first of July, a general return of the detachment, a list of such necessaries as I judged we should be in absolute want of for the use of the detachment at large, as well as such articles as the surgeon reported to me to be indispensibly wanted for our sick in quarters, as well as hospital. I likewise took the liberty of

* The information given in the despatch to Lord Sydney, September 28th, 1788, is repeated. Ante, pp 185-187

expressing to their Lordships a wish that they would please to authorize the person who furnishes the corps with slops to send some articles of clothing for the wives and children of the soldiers, which, when issued, can be charg'd against the husbands' or fathers' pay. I also mentioned my having taken the liberty of gratifying the earnest request of the detachment in purchasing some tobacco from the master of one of the transports for their use, and my having drawn bills upon their Lordships for its value. This tobacco is in charge of the quarter-master, and is charg'd against the men's pay as it is issued out by him.

1783

1 Oct.

Clothing for women and children.

Tobacco.

By the same conveyance I found myself under the necessity of laying before their Lordships a copy of a court-martial held here the 18th April [March]* with copys of several papers relative to the said court-martial, with an observation of its then appearing to me, as it still does, that the proceedings of that court-martial tended to endeavour to wrest an essential power out of the hands of the commanding officer, and if suffered to pass unnoticed might tend much to the prejudice of the service, by leading astray the minds and judgments of inexperienced officers who might otherwise be well dispos'd.

Court-martial.

It is with much regret that I now inform their Lordships of my finding my fears in some measure verified, in a shameful inattention of all the captains (Capt. Campbell excepted) to the erecting the barracks for their companies; in place of which their attention seems to have been chiefly employ'd in the erecting houses and outhouses for themselves, their servants, and stock, otherwise I am convinced the whole of our men would long ere now have been comfortable in their barracks. As a proof of this inattention, I have only to observe that tho' the barracks for Captain Campbell's company is equally large with the others, and has been entirely constructed by such men only as he could find in his own company, I am convinced that had I not found myself oblig'd to deprive him, and him only, of the use of the whole of his working men for some time, for the purpose of expediting a store-house for the reception of the clothing and stores of the detachment from the *Sirius*, prior to her going to sea, all his company would have been comfortably settled in their barracks long ere now. And yet, even as it is, they will be in in the course of the next week. I wish I could say when the others will be finish'd, tho' I am not out of hope but that the plan now pursued two or three months more will nearly, if not entirely, get them out of hand.

Neglect of officers.

Captain Campbell an exception.

The backwardness of the other barracks induced me to ask Captain Shea some questions respecting his, when, in place of such answer as I thought I had a right to expect from him, he told me he did not conceive it to be any part of his duty to superintend the erecting a barrack for his company. I then

Capt. Shea takes his ground.

* See despatch and enclosure. Ante, pp. 156-164.

1788

1 Oct.

Refuses to
superintend
building of
barracks.

Captain
Shea
retreats.

told him that as he had at first undertaken it, I judged he should go on with it, but if he thought it was not any part of his duty he should manfully say he would or he would not do it, to which he replied, in the presence of Captain Campbell, that he would not. On receiving this answer, I found myself oblig'd to inform the Governor of it, who seem'd astonish'd at the idea that any officer should not suppose it a part of their duty to attend to the erecting barracks for their own men. I then observ'd to H. Excellency that Captain Shea's answer might have proceeded from passion, and the vexation of seeing the barrack for his company so much neglected, and that I hoped and believed he would before morning see his error, to which the Governor was pleas'd to reply he hoped it would be so, and that he would himself be over in the morning and talk to him, which he did, when, to his as well as to my very great surprize, Captain Shea told him twice, in the presence of Captain Collins, Lieut. G. Johnston, and Adjutant Long, that he did not conceive it to be any part of his duty, but that he would do whatever he was order'd. Leaving Captain Shea's answer to be determin'd by his Excellency, in whatever way he might think proper, I requested that he would (if he thought it a part of the duty of officers) please to give out such an order as would enable me to oblige the officer to attend to the erecting the barracks. In consequence, his Excellency was pleas'd to give out the following general order:—

“General Order.

20 August.

Head-quarters, August 29th, 1788.

Parole, Garth ; C. Sign, Wiltshire.

A general
order
given.

The major-commandant of the detachment having represented that he cannot make the necessary inquiry into the manner in which the barracks erecting for the detachment is carrying on, from some of the officers not conceiving it to be any part of their duty to direct the forwarding of that work,—and requesting that such orders may be given as may enable him to oblige them to attend that service,—the Governor is very sorry to be under the necessity of giving an order for any officer's attendance to which is undoubtedly a part of his duty, and particularly so in the present situation of the colony. The officers by every means in their power are to forward the erecting the barracks belonging to their respective companies, and make such report to their commandant as he may from time to time think necessary to demand.”

And I soon after gave out in the publick orders for the detachment an order, of which the following is a copy :—

“Battalion Order.

31 August.

31 August, 1788.

Further
orders.

In consequence of the general orders of the 29th inst., it is the commanding officer's orders that the captains do, or cause

an officer of their company to, superintend the artificers and others employ'd in erecting the public barracks for their respective companies, by preventing such artificers, &c., from absenting themselves during the working-hours. Mr. Brewer, who is appointed to direct the carpenters and surveyors in the works to be performed by them, will give the captains and officers such information as they may think necessary for forwarding that work."

1783

1 Oct.

Erection of barracks.

Notwithstanding the above orders, finding the same degree of inattention still prevail, I, with the approbation of the Governor, and the advice of Mr. Brewer, the architect granted by the Governor for directing the artificers and sawyers employ'd on and for the barracks, ordered that the whole of the artificers and sawyers employ'd on the three left-hand barracks should be set to work on only one at a time, and to begin with Captain Shea's.

Special instructions.

On the 11th September, to my great surprize and vexation, Mr. Brewer came to me with a complaint, saying that two marine sawyers employ'd, and paid by the publick, would not suffer him to bring away the rafters which I had order'd him to get from their pit, they saying they had Captain Tench's positive orders not to suffer anything to be taken from that pit without his orders and permission.

Conflicting orders.

On my sending the adjutant to Captain Tench to know the reason of it, he denied his having given any such orders. This answer, for the sake of discipline, made me judge it necessary to have the sawyers tried by a court-martial for disobedience of orders, &c., which court-martial, as thinking it a very extraordinary one, I take the liberty of enclosing a copy of,* by which their Lordships will not only see the absurdity of the President and members, but likewise see that Captain Tench makes a conspicuous figure in the proceedings, for, by his own evidence, he acknowledges giving the order the men mention prior to my order of 31st August, and his having neglected to recall that order on my giving the other, or (as is the invariable rule and custom of the service, and for the observance of which every officer commanding a company is answerable) taking care that all orders issued by a commanding officer shall be made known to the whole of his company, and more especially explaining to those whom such order may immediately concern. As he has not thought it necessary to make any excuse or apology for this neglect, I cannot but be of opinion that it clearly proves a determin'd resolution in him to retard and perplex, as far as in his power, the carrying on the service in the manner good officers would wish for.

Another court-martial.

Captain Tench's conduct.

Obstruction.

Should this conduct appear to their Lordships in the same light that it does to me, I hope they will not wonder at my entreating (notwithstanding his own wish of remaining three years longer in this country) that their Lordships will please to order him to be recall'd. My reason for pressing this is, there

Tench's recall requested.

* Post, pp. 199-201.

1788

1 Oct.

Why Tench
is not tried
by court-
martial.

not being a sufficient number of officers to try Captain Tench, and the members of the court-martial of the 18th April last, else that trial would have taken place long before now, and, as I have some doubt whether he can be tried for any other crime until his first offence has been tried, I have not, therefore, reported him to the Governor, or I most assuredly would have had him tried on a charge of disobedience of orders, neglect of duty, and contempt to his commanding officer. And that he has been guilty of those crimes the enclos'd copy of the court-martial will, I have no doubt, sufficiently prove to their Lordships to be the case.

Settlement
at Rose Hill.

I have a general order for a detachme't, consisting of one captain, two subalterns, two serjeants, two corporals, one drummer, and twenty privates, to hold themselves in readiness to set out for the head of the harbour the beginning of next month. This detachment is to be commanded by Captain Campbell, and is intended for the protection of some convicts, which the Governor is going to send with him, for the purpose of clearing and cultivating some ground for corn. As this place seems the most promising spot yet seen in our neighbourhood, so does it appear to me to be the only hope of raising grain.

Captain
Campbell's
zeal.

Captain Campbell's zeal and attention to the service in general, and to the settlement in particular, will, I am well convinced, in this, as on all other occasions, induce him to exert himself, in doing himself, and causing to be done by others, not only everything he may be commanded or instructed to do, but likewise everything that can possibly be expected or wished for.

Prospects of
proposed
settlement.

From my having in company with the Governor viewed the part of the country they are going to, and my knowledge of Captain Campbell's attention and perseverance in forwarding everything that tends to the good of the public, flatters me with the hope that, under his fostering hand, the scheme may succeed.* But should the ground, unfortunately, not answer the intended purpose, I shall give up every hope of finding any place near as fit to form a settlement upon, much less the purpose of establishing a colony.

Military as
settlers.

When it was supposed the Sirius was to go to the islands, and that the transports would sail for Europe, I judg'd it necessary to ask the officers and men of the detachment which of them would wish to continue in this country, either as soldiers or settlers, and which of them would wish to return to England, at, or as near as conveniently could be, the time mention'd in their Lordships' letter of the 8th October, 1786.† As that return was intended to be sent by the transports, which not being now to sail as soon as was expected, I, therefore, do myself the honor of enclosing it by the present conveyance for their Lordships'

* The settlement (Rose Hill) was a success. Post, p. 306.

† Ante, p. 23.

information.* But should any change of sentiments take place in the minds of either officers or men before sailing of the transports their Lordships shall then be made acquainted with it. 1788
1 Oct.

With regard to myself, I have only to observe that this country is by no means a place that I wish to continue in, nor do I think that any constitution can stand long against the scorbutick attacks natural to a salt diet, and I see not the most distant prospect of our being able to get any other. Yet, nevertheless, should their Lordships think it necessary to continue me in the command for a year or two longer than their first intention, I shall be happy in obeying their commands. Ross not anxious to remain.

The marines' stores having been just landed, and being now under survey, does not give me an opportunity of letting their Lordships know the state in which they are found; but by the transports, which I understand are to sail in six weeks, I shall find a return of the whole issued, damag'd, and remaining. I beg to observe that there is now no clothing in the store, the last being in the hands of the taylor, and when finish'd will be given to the men, having been due to them for some time. Inclos'd you will receive a return from the quarter-master of such articles as had been furnish'd by Mr. Preater, so far as they have been survey'd. Many of the small articles would have been issued long ago, could we have got them on shore for that purpose. No clothing in store.

You will likewise receive with this the effective lists for the two last quarters.

I have, &c.,

R. Ross, Major.

[Enclosure.]

Proceedings of a Battalion Court-martial, held by order of Major Robert Ross, Port Jackson, September 11th, 1788.

11 Sept.

Capt. Shea, *President*.

Members :—First. Lt. Shairp, First Lt. Timins, First Lt. Davey, Second Lt. Clarke.

William Strong, private, 24th Company, and Richard Knight, private, 35th Company, brought to tryal by order of the commanding officer for disobedience of orders, in preventing the person authorized from bringing in materials to erect the barracks for Capt. Shea's coy. Charge of disobedience.

Mr. Brewer prosecutes, and informs the court that the rafters that were sawed by the prisoners being wanted, he had applied to the commanding officer to have them brought in, when he gave orders for that purpose, desiring him to go himself and see it done. He (Mr. Brewer) took four people with him, and went to the sawpits, and repeated to the prisoners Major Ross's orders to take them away, ordering the people to take up the rafters, upon which William Strong, p'te, express'd very civilly his apprehensions of Capt. Trench's displeasure should he permit them to The case stated.

1788

11 Sept.

go without his orders, and requested that a written order might be procured of Capt'n. Tench to let them go. As there were other rafters at the next pit, they wished he would take them until such order was obtained ; that he took the other rafters, and did not strenuously persist in taking those he was ordered to do ; that on his return to camp he acquainted the command'g officer.

Question from the court to Mr. Brewer.—Did the prisoners at any time prevent your taking away the rafters? No, they did not, but only requested me not to take them, for the reasons before given.

Captain
Tench's
statement.

The prisoners being put on their defence, call upon Captain Tench to inform the court what orders he had given them, and deny preventing Mr. Brewer bringing in the rafters. Captain Tench informs the court that the sawpit the prisoners worked at was dug by the company, and all the timber sawed by it brought in by them, and since the publick orders for the sawpit being under the direction of Mr. Brewer he never sent any orders to the sawyers to obey Mr. Brewer or not—that the piece that was then sawing was put on the pit by his (Capt. Tench's) orders some time since, and, when sawed up, suppos'd it would be converted to the use of the battalion. That the prisoners are men of very good character, and have always done their work to his satisfaction.

Question from the court to the prisoners.—Did you ever receive any orders to obey Mr. Brewer? *Ans'w'r.*—No.

Acquittal.

The court are of opinion that the prisoners are not guilty of the crime laid to their charge, not having received any directions to obey Mr. Brewer's orders, and do therefore acquit them.

JNO. SHEA, Capt'n and President.

Revision of
proceedings.

The court having met agreeable to the commanding officer's orders, to revise the proceedings of the above court-martial, find it necessary to call upon Capt'n Tench. The court being open, and the prisoners brought before it,—

Further
investiga-
tion.

Question from the court to Capt'n Tench.—Have the prisoners been acquainted with the battalion orders of the 31st of August, 1788, respecting the carpenters and sawyers being under the direction of Mr. Brewer. *Ans'w'r.*—I have already ans'w'd the question, by saying that I never gave orders that Mr. Brewer should or should not have the stuff saw'd up at the pit. Many months ago I directed the sawyers, on digging the pit, never to suffer any stuff saw'd up by it to be taken away without my knowledge or approbation—that I have desired the serjeant and corp's of my comp'y at first landing to read all orders to them, and have frequently since repeated them.

Question from the court to Serj't Smith, of Capt'n Tench's Co.—Was you orderly on the 31st Aug't last? *Ans'w'r.*—I was. *Question.*—Did you read the orders of that day to the prisoners

respecting the sawyers and carpenters being under the direction of Mr. Brewer? *Ans'r.* -I don't recollect I did; they were read to the comp'y, and I never received any order to carry them to the men at the sawpit. 1788 11 Sept.

The court not being clear of the legality of calling in fresh evidence, made application to the Judge-Advocate for his opinion thereon, in answer to which he informs them that the adducing of fresh testimony, either for or against the prisoners, would be a new trial. Fresh evidence rejected.

The court, therefore, takes no notice of the questions ask'd Serjeant Smith, and that having, with the most mature and strict deliberations, reconsidered the whole of the proceedings, find no cause to alter their original opinion. Decision confirmed.

JNO. SHEA,
Capt'n and President.

[Enclosure.]

1 Oct

LIST of such Officers, Non-commission'd Officers, Drummers, and Privates as are desirous of remaining in the country after the time their Lordships [Lords of the Admiralty] intended to relieve the detachm't, as express'd in their letter of the 8th October, 1786. New South Wales, 1st October, 1788:—

—	Names and Qlty.	Desirous of remaining in this Country.	Officers and marines who wish to remain in the colony.
	Watkin Tench, Capt.-Lieut. . .	As a soldier for one tour of 3 yrs. more.	
	George Johnston, F. Lieut. . .	{ Having been so short a time in this country, cannot determine whether he would wish to remain or not; as to settling, can say nothing.	
	John Johnstone, do. . .	{ Do., do.; as to settling, can say nothing until he knows on what terms.	
	James Maitland Shairp, do. . .	{ Being so short a time in the country, he cannot yet judge whether he would wish to remain or not; as to the settling, until he knows the terms and nature of the grant, can't determine.	
	William Dawes, 2nd Lieut. . .	As a soldier for one tour of 3 yrs. more.	
53	William Baker, Serjeant . .	As a soldier.	
	George Hemming, Pte. . .	As a soldier for 3 yrs. more.	
24	Isaac Farr, do. . .	As a settler.	
56	James Manning do. . .	As a soldier.	

All the Officers, Non-commission'd Officers, Drummers, and Private men of the detachm't whose names are not express'd in the above list wish to return to England at the time propos'd by their Lordships' letter of the 8th October, 1786, or as soon after as their Lordships may find it convenient.

R. Ross, Major.

1788

JUDGE-ADVOCATE COLLINS TO MAJOR ROSS.

14 Oct.

Sir, Head-quarters, Sydney Cove, 14th October, 1788.

I have to request you will be pleased to transmit one of the enclosed papers* to the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, and lay the other before his Excellency the Governor.

I have, &c.,

DAVID COLLINS,

Judge-Advocate.

MAJOR ROSS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Camp, Sydney Cove, New South Wales,
17th October, 1788.

17 Oct.

Sir,

Having on the 1st inst. occasion to trouble your Excellency with a letter requesting you would be pleas'd to order a general court-martial to be assembled for the trial of Quarter-master James Furzer, for neglect of duty, contempt, and disrespect to his commanding officer, which letter, prior to its being left at your Excellency's house, I sent by the adjutant to Mr. Furzer, telling the adjutant at the same time that my motive for doing it was in consequence of the friendship I had for Mr. Furzer, and that by his seeing the letter he would have a choice in his power of having the buisiness inquir'd into by a general court-martial, or if he judg'd any other method better or safer for himself he would then know what to do; but as Mr. Furzer declares that had my motive for sending him that letter been sufficiently explained at the time he would then have done what he this morning did, and which he hopes would have had the wish'd for effect in preventing the unfortunate steps that have since taken place.

Court-
martial on
Q.-M.
Furzer.

Explanation.

I have the pleasure of assuring your Excellency that Mr. Furzer has now taken such steps as are becoming him, both as an officer and a gentleman, and fully satisfies me that the like will not happen again, and as my disposition has ever been a wish rather to convince than punish, I therefore hope that from the same motive your Excellency will be pleas'd to grant my request that my letter to your Excellency, together with your warrant, may be withdrawn in so effectual a manner as never to appear to the prejudice of either party.

Proceedings
withdrawn.

I have, &c.,

R. Ross, Major.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.†

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

27th October, 1788.

27 Oct.

My Lord,

I am very sorry to be under the very disagreeable necessity of troubling your Lordship with the following particulars, but the very unpleasant situation of the detachment doing duty in this

Trouble
with the
military.

* Collins's opinion on officers' objections to sit on court-martial. Post, p. 210.

† A similar despatch was sent to the Admiralty.

country, from the discontents between the Commandant and the officers, will, I presume, satisfy your Lordship of that necessity, as I am sorry to say it is not in my power to restore that harmony which is so very requisite in our situation.

Having received a letter from Major Ross requesting a general court-martial on an officer* for neglect of duty, contempt, and disrespect to him, I issued a warrant for assembling a general court-martial; but the thirteen senior officers, when assembled, declared that they could not sit as members of a general court-martial under that warrant, being, as a part of his Majesty's marine forces, amenable only to the authority of the Commissioners for executing the office of Lord High Admiral of Great Britain. The warrant was issued under the authority of his Majesty's Commission for assembling general courts-martial, but they declined sitting under the Act of Parliament made for the Army.

Having assigned their reasons in writing to Major Ross (to whom the warrant was directed), I have the honor to enclose your Lordship a copy.†

Though the letter from the commanding officer of the detachment was very sufficient grounds for ordering the court-martial, if the officer could have been tried on the spot, as it was now determined that there was no legal authority in this country for ordering a general court-martial on any part of the marine corps, and the officer accused declared himself innocent of every part of the charge, I ordered a court of enquiry to be assembled to *enquire into the particulars of the charge*, and to report whether there was, or was not, sufficient ground for a general court-martial, intending, if the court of enquiry reported that they found sufficient ground, to order a court of enquiry to examine fully into the charge and to report their opinion, which was the only means I had left of doing justice to both parties, as no court-martial could be held; for though I knew that courts of enquiry always preceded courts-martial, yet in the present instance I was fully satisfied that the warrant I had issued for holding the court-martial was totally done away [with] by the officers having denied the legality of it, as far as it respected themselves, and consequently a court of enquiry perfectly regular; and I had reason to suppose that both parties would have consented to such a determination, no other being possible, under our present circumstances. The court of enquiry met, and I received the following answers, signed by the President:—That had the business been referred to them before the application for a court-martial they might then have proceeded with the consent of both parties, but that at present they thought themselves precluded from making any enquiry, and only reported that an application from a commanding officer was always deemed a sufficient ground for a general court-martial (which was never doubted). They had

1788

27 Oct.

General
court-
martial.Officers
refuse to sit.Their
reasons.Court of
inquiry
ordered.

Result

* Quarter-master Furzer. Ante, p. 202.

† Post, pp. 205, 206.

1788

27 Oct.

Officers
under
arrest.

refused to sit as members of the court-martial, not deeming the warrant legal, with respect to themselves, as being marine officers, and they now refused to make any enquiry because that warrant had been issued.

To order an officer to return to his duty under the same commanding officer whom he was accused of treating with contempt or disrespect, or to let him remain under arrest until he could be tried in this country, might be attended with very disagreeable circumstances, for of seventeen officers composing the detachment five have been put under arrest by their commandant, and are only returned to duty by my order until a sufficient number of officers to form a general court-martial can be assembled, as I have in a former letter had the honor of informing your Lordship.

The original
charge
withdrawn.

I therefore ordered the evidence on both sides to be taken by the Judge-Advocate, and intended to send them home with the officer, but before that could be done I received a letter from Major Ross, informing me that the officer had fully satisfied him respecting the charge, and desiring that he might be permitted to withdraw his request for a court-martial. I therefore ordered the officer to return to his duty.

Taken by
surprise

When the warrant was granted for assembling a general court-martial, I did not know that an Act of Parliament had been passed for a limited time, by which the marines serving in America had been tried; nor did any officer in the detachment entertain a doubt of the propriety of their sitting under a warrant issued by the authority of his Majesty's commission, until the evening before the court was to assemble, when the doubt arose, on the Judge-Advocate's reading over the oath.

The present situation of the detachment will be obvious to your Lordship.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

CAPTAIN CAMPBELL TO MAJOR ROSS.

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

13th October, 1788.

Sir,

13 Oct.

Officers
cannot
legally sit.

The officers assembled by your order for the purpose of holding a general court-martial beg leave to acquaint you that not conceiving they can legally sit as members of a court-martial under any other than a warrant from the Admiralty, enclose you their reasons for that opinion, which they request you will lay before his Excellency the Governor, and afterwards transmit a copy of the same to the Right Hon^{ble} the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty.

They further request they may be allowed to accompany you to his Excellency with the statement of their opinion.

I have, &c.,

JAS. CAMPBELL, Captn.

[Enclosure.]

1788

13 Oct

OFFICERS' OBJECTIONS.

THE officers of marines, assembled by order of their commanding officer, for the purpose of holding a general court-martial, beg leave to state the following particulars :—

THE Legislature every year passes an Act for the regulation of his Majesty's marine forces while on shore in any place within the realm of Great Britain, or in any other of his Majesty's dominions, which Act empowers the Lord High Admiral, or three or more of the Commissioners for executing that office, to grant a commission to any officer of the said forces, not under the degree of a field officer, for holding general courts-martial at any place within the intent and meaning of the Act, and to make articles for the punishment of mutiny and desertion. By this Act of Parliament, and by these Articles of War, the marine forces have always been regulated and governed, except during the late war in America, when the marines serving in that country were included in the provisions of an Act of the same Legislature, pass'd in the year 1775, for the purpose of amending and rendering more effectual in his Majesty's dominions in America an Act for punishing mutiny and desertion, and for the better payment of the Army and their quarters.

At the succeeding sessions the usual Act for the regulation of the marine forces while on shore was passed, that is for the regulation of such part of the corps as were not in America, for the marines were included in the Act for the punishment of mutiny and desertion amongst the troops serving in that country; and at all general courts-martial where marine officers sat in conjunction with those of the land forces, or appear'd before a military tribunal, they were guided and directed by the articles of war for the Army.

In the oath prescribed by the (Marine) Act of Parliament the members swear not to divulge the sentence of the court until it shall have been approved by the Lord High Admiral, or three or more of the Commissioners for executing that office. Nor does it appear in that Act of Parliament that they can assemble for the trial of any marine officer or soldier but by warrant from the Admiralty. The Judge-Advocate is also directed to transmit the original proceedings and sentence of every court-martial to the Secretary of the Admiralty, as no sentence can be put in execution until a report shall have been made of the whole proceedings to the Board. Neither can a commiss'd marine officer be dismiss'd the service except by an order from his Majesty, or by the sentence of a general court-martial, approved by their Lordships.

Hence it plainly appears that this Act of Parliament is meant for the internal regulation of the marine forces, and that whenever

Act of Parliament.

Articles of War.

Act of Parliament.

General court-martial can only be held by warrant.

Special legislation

1788

13 Oct.

it is intended they shall be under any other a particular Act of the Legislature has been deemed necessary.

The situation then of that part of the corps of marines that is serving in New South Wales, under the Government of his Majesty's Governor-in-Chief and Captain-General of that territory, is attended with the following peculiarities:—

Governor's
commission.

A commission has issued from his Majesty empowering the said Governor-in-Chief to assemble general courts-martial for the trial of any officer or soldier of the troops under his command, and to confirm or set aside their sentence.

Only the
Admiralty
can order
general
courts-
martial.

The usual Act of Parliament for the regulation of the marine forces while on shore, passed a month or two before the departure of the detachment from that corps ordered for New South Wales, without any alterations or new provision being made for their particular situation. A Judge-Advocate was appointed by the Admiralty, who was instructed in their warrant to keep the Act of Parliament constantly for his rule. No other power than the Admiralty is authorized to grant a warrant for their holding general courts-martial, and the members are sworn to the same oath of secrecy as their brethren at home. The prisoner also is to wait the approval of the Admiralty before he can know his fate.

The
Governor's
warrant
insufficient.

Under all these circumstances and considerations, the officers directed to assemble for the purpose of holding a general court-martial are humbly of opinion that, being officers of his Majesty's marine forces, they cannot sit for that purpose under the warrant of his Excellency the Governor, and beg leave to represent the unpleasant situation they feel themselves placed in, hoping that this statement of it may be transmitted to the Right Hon'ble the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, under whose direction they always consider themselves, and from whom they hope such remedy will be applied as their Lordships may think expedient.

Obedience
to law.

At the same time they solicit that in this business they may be understood to be acting only in conformity to an Act of the British legislature passed expressly for their regulation while on shore in any part of his Majesty's dominions; and that they have not in any shape been wanting in the respect that belongs to the high authority of his Majesty's commission, or to the officer invested with it in this country.

JAS. CAMPBELL, Captain.

JNO. JOHNSTONE, 1st Lieut.

JNO SHEA, do.

JS. M. SHAIRP, do.

WATKN. TENCH, Capt.-Lieut.

THOS. DAVEY, do.

GEO. JOHNSTON, 1st Lieut.

THOS. TIMINS, do.

JNO. CRESWELL, do.

RALPH CLARKE, 2nd Lieut.

ROBT. KELLOW, do.

WM. DAWES, 2nd Lieut.

JOHN POULTON, do.

Camp, Sydney Cove, 13th October, 1788.

DAVID COLLINS, Judge-Advocate.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

1788

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

30 Oct.

My Lord,

30th October, 1788.

By his Majesty's ship *Sirius* I had the honor of informing your Lordship of my reasons for sending that ship to the Cape of Good Hope*; the loss of all the seed wheat, and the greatest part of the other grains and seeds, brought from England, which had been heated in the long passage, and very little of which, when sown, ever vegetated; all the seed wheat put on board the *Supply* at the Cape of Good Hope had likewise been destroyed by the weevil; and after sowing the ground a second time with what seed had been brought from Rio de Janeiro and the Cape of Good Hope there did not remain sufficient to sow a single acre; and the crops in the ground are exposed to various accidents in our present situation.

The *Sirius*
sent to the
Cape.

The *Sirius* sailed the 2nd instant, to go round the South Cape; and Captain Hunter has directions to purchase for the use of the garrison what flour the ship can receive, after having completed his own provisions; the quantity will not be very considerable (at present we have 18 months' bread in store). Necessaries for the hospital were likewise ordered to be purchased, none of any kind being sent out either for the detachment or convicts after they landed.

Supplies
to be
purchased.

Your Lordship will see by my former letters the little progress we have been able to make in cultivating the lands, and, I presume, the necessity of a few proper persons being sent out to superintend the convicts, as well as settlers, who have been used to cultivation; for at present this settlement only affords one person that I can employ in cultivating the lands on the public account. Most of the officers have cultivated a little ground, but it is merely for their own convenience, and none more than a single acre, except the Lieutenant-Governor, who has about three acres. I have sixteen at a small farm on the public account.

Cultivation
slow.

It must, my Lord, be settlers, with the assistance of the convicts, that will put this country in a situation for supporting its inhabitants; nothing but the uncertainty of the time in which my letters may reach England, and the possibility of those last written being the first received, would make me trouble your Lordship in this letter with a repetition of what I have fully explained in my former letters—that people who are not convicts are necessary for the stores, from which provisions or stores are delivering almost hourly, and that we want for superintending the convicts such as have been brought up in the line in which they are to be employed.

Request for
settlers
repeated

Store-
keepers
necessary.

If the ships that bring out provisions were such as could receive on board black cattle at the Cape of Good Hope, I think we shall in future be able to preserve them; and a ship to remain here as a

* Ante, p. 188.

1788

30 Oct.

Convicts
killed by
natives.The natives
revenge
themselves.They
hold aloofOfficers and
convicts.Officers
asked to
assist in
supervising
convicts.

They refuse.

store-ship would be attended with many advantages. It is still a doubt whether the cattle we lost have been killed by the natives, or if they have strayed into the country.* I fear the former, and am sorry to say that the natives now attack any straggler they meet unarmed; and though the strictest orders have been given to keep the convicts within bounds, neither the fear of death or punishment prevents their going out in the night; and one has been killed since the *Sirius* sailed. The natives, who appear strictly honest amongst themselves, leave their fizzes, spears, &c., on the beach, or in their huts, when they go a-fishing; these articles have been taken from them by the convicts, and the people belonging to the transports buy them at the risk of being prosecuted as receivers of stolen goods, if discovered. The natives, as I have observed, revenge themselves on any they meet unarmed; it is not possible to punish them without punishing the innocent with the guilty, and our own people have been the aggressors.

The natives still refuse to come amongst us, and those who are supposed to have murdered several of the convicts have removed from Botany Bay, where they have always been more troublesome than in any other part. I now doubt whether it will be possible to get any of those people to remain with us, in order to get their language, without using force; they see no advantage that can arise from us that may make amends for the loss of that part of the harbour in which we occasionally employ the boats in fishing.

If my former letters have reached your Lordship the situation of this settlement is known, and as most of the officers have declined any kind of interference with the convicts, except when immediately employed by themselves, the little progress made in clearing land that requires so much labour will be accounted for. A letter sent from the Admiralty to the commanding officers of marines at Portsmouth and Plymouth is what the officers say they govern themselves by, and in which they say no extra duty is pointed out. What I asked of officers was so very little, and so far from being what would degrade either the officer or the gentleman in our situation, that I beg leave to report once more to your Lordship the request I made soon after we landed, and which was made in the following words:—"That officers would, when they saw the convicts diligent, say a few words of encouragement to them, and that when they saw them idle, or met them straggling in the woods, they would threaten them with punishment." This I only desired when officers could do it without going out of their way; it was all I asked, and was pointedly refused. They declared against what they called an interference with convicts, and I found myself obliged to give up the little plan I had formed in the passage for the government of these people, and which, had even that been proposed to the officers, required no more from them than the hearing any appeal the overseer

might find it necessary to make, and a report from the officer to me, or to the Judge-Advocate, if he thought it necessary, but which never has been asked of the officers, as they declined any kind of interference. 1788
30 Oct.

The Golden Grove store-ship sailed for Norfolk Island the 2nd of October, with provisions and some stores, and carried a midshipman, two seamen, a serjeant, corporal, and five privates, with twenty-one men and eleven women convicts. Their numbers will be increased in the course of the summer. Norfolk Island.

The Fishburn is now fitting for sea, that she may sail with the Golden Grove, as soon as that ship returns from Norfolk Island.

The same reason which makes me trouble your Lordship with tedious extracts from my former letters makes it necessary to point out in this letter that we at present depend entirely for provisions being sent from England; and I beg leave to observe that if a ship should be lost in the passage it might be a very considerable time before it could be known in England. The Sirius, from the length of the voyage, would not be able to supply this settlement from the Cape, and though the Islands may furnish refreshments in great abundance to one or two ships, if the Sirius was employed between the Islands and this settlement, the quantity procured would be but small for so great a number of people; but, my Lord, I hope a very few years will put this country in a situation to support itself, for I have the pleasure of seeing what land has been cleared in a very flourishing state. Anxieties.

I am now preparing to go up the harbour with a small detachment of one captain, two lieutenants, and twenty privates, who are to protect some convicts intended to clear land near the head of the harbour,* where it is a fine open country, having very little timber, and being perfectly free from underwood. A new settlement.

The Supply remains here, as I think that vessel necessary in the harbour at present, and which was my reason for sending the store-ship to Norfolk Island.

Returns of the detachment and the quantity of provisions in store are enclosed to Mr. Nepean.

I have, &c.,
A. PHILLIP.

JUDGE-ADVOCATE COLLINS TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

Dear Sir,

15th November, 1788.

15 Nov.

I beg leave to trouble you with the enclosed paper. It contains my opinion on the question respecting general courts-martial in this country, and the expedient that I proposed for getting over the difficulty that was started by myself, and adopted by the officers here. General courts-martial.

I beg you to rest assured, and through the whole of your consideration on this affair, to take this with you—that nothing

1788

10 Nov.

Doubts.

would give me more pain than to be thought to start difficulties for the sake of throwing obstacles in the way of the service. The doubts that occurred to me were deemed satisfactory to the officers of marines here, and the resolution adopted that you will find among the public letters from the Governor. I sincerely wish the expedient I proposed had also been adopted.

I sincerely hope you enjoy your health, and remain, with great esteem,—

DAVID COLLINS.

Stationery
and law
books.

I should be glad of a fresh supply of paper, and would be extremely obliged to you if you would order Cooper to send me Blackstone's Reports, any author that treats on costs, and any law publication of note that has appeared since my departure, with whatever Acts of Parliament you may think necessary.

[Enclosure.]

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

13 Oct.

13th October, 1788.

To the question, "Whether a general court-martial formed of marine officers can assemble by virtue of a warrant from his Majesty's Governor-in-Chief of this territory, having a commission to grant the same,"—

Officers
cannot
legally act,

I reply, I am of opinion that, being marine officers, they cannot comply with the directions of the Act of Parliament passed for their regulation while on shore in any part of his Majesty's dominions, and hold a general court-martial under the warrant of his Excellency the Governor of New South Wales.

but should
sit and ask
indemnity.

But when I consider the time that must elapse before a remedy can be applied—when I consider how much his Majesty's service may and must suffer from the want of a tribunal to which officers should be amenable—when I consider that although the strict letter of the law is against their sitting, it has been clearly the intention of every branch and department of his Majesty's Government that there should be such a tribunal in this country, I am of opinion that, waving the privilege of being assembled in conformity with their own Act of Parliament, they should sit under the authority of the King's commission and Governor of this territory, throwing themselves, with the strong plea of necessity, on the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty for procuring them an indemnification for their having so acted.

I have, &c.,

DAVID COLLINS,

Judge-Advocate.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

16 Nov.

My Lord,

November 16, 1788.

Since I closed my letter of the 30th of October to your Lordship the Golden Grove has arrived from Norfolk Island, where

the people and provisions were landed, and from whence I have received the most favourable accounts. They have vegetables in great abundance, as well as fish. The grain that had been sowed after the first had failed (from having been heated in the passage, or injured by the weevil) promises a great increase. The soil is extremely rich, and to the depth of many feet wherever they have dug; the people very healthy, and perfectly satisfied under an officer, who will in less than two years render that island independent of this colony for the necessaries of life, if we can procure black cattle to send him.* He will have an additional number of people in the course of the summer. A few honest, industrious families would then find themselves happy in a good climate, as healthy as this settlement (and no place can be healthier), with a rich land, easy of cultivation, and where the storms of thunder and heavy rains have not been felt. The flax-plant will supply the settlers on that island with rope and canvas, as well as a considerable part of their cloathing, when they can dress it properly; but a person experienced in dressing flax is much wanted, as well as a few good husbandmen, for those we have been able to send there are not only in general idle and abandoned, but ignorant. A cocoanut that was as good as if just taken from the tree, and a small piece of wood, said to resemble the handle of a flylap, as made in the Friendly Islands, and which did not appear to have been long in the water, have suggested an idea that some island which is inhabited lays at no great distance, but which my present situation does not permit me to determine. The remains of two or three canoes have been found on the rocks. The Golden Grove, in her passage from Norfolk Island, saw a very dangerous reef, the south end of which lay in the latitude of 29° 25' south, longitude 159° 59' east.† It appeared from the N.E. by N. to N. when they were four leagues from it, but no judgment can be formed how far it extends to the northward.

I had the honor of informing your Lordship of my intentions of fixing a settlement near the head of the harbour,‡ and I have lately passed several days in examining the country. The land is good, and though there is none we can take possession of at present which can be cultivated without clearing the ground of the timber—for if the trees are at the distance of thirty or even fifty feet the roots spread—the labour there, nevertheless, will not exceed the fourth part of what is required in our present situation, and there the land appears to be the best I have seen in this country; and as far as I could examine, which was for a couple of miles round the spot on which I have fixed, I think the country as fine as any I have seen in England. I had

1788

13 Oct.

Good
accounts
from
Norfolk
Island.

The island to
be
independent
in two
years.

Flax.

A dangerous
reef.

Port
Jackson.

A fresh
settlement.

Fine
country.

* The anticipation was not realised. It was not known at this time, however, that so many convicts would be sent to Norfolk Island as was afterwards determined.

† Post, p. 215.

‡ Rose Hill.

1788 an officer and ten men with me, which I left to finish a small
 16 Nov. redoubt, and in a few days the remainder of the detachment will
 be sent up with some convicts.

A soldier missing. A soldier has been lately missing, who, I suppose, lost his way
 in the woods, and has either been killed by the natives or died by
 a fit, to which he was subject.

The people healthy. Except the old, and those who brought incurable complaints
 with them, the people are very healthy. The weather is now
 settled, and the two store-ships are ready to sail, and intend
 going round the South Cape.

Flax and pepper. A small quantity of flax, as I received it from Norfolk Island
 is enclosed with the despatches. A plant that produces pepper,
 and supposed to be the same as the East India pepper, is found
 in great plenty in Norfolk Island. Several roots of this plant,
 and some of the pepper, are sent to Sir Joseph Banks, who I
 have requested to inform your Lordship or Mr. Nepean if it
 proves to be, as supposed, the black pepper used in England.

Black sand. In sinking a well the sand was thought to contain a very large
 proportion of metal, a small quantity of which is sent by the
 two ships. It has been twenty-four hours in a strong fire, but
 we could not get it to melt. I suppose it to be blacklead.*

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

MAJOR ROSS TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.†

Marine Quarters, Sydney Cove,

My Dear Sir, 16th November, 1788.

Grievances
 of the
 marines.

I do not feel myself at all at ease with respect to you, as
 I much fear you expect to hear from me by every ship which sails
 from here. The truth of the matter is that I have no one thing
 to communicate to you that can give you either pleasure or satis-
 faction, for, unless I attempted to give you a description of this
 country, and of the hardships, mortifications, and I had almost
 said cruelties, we are obliged to submit to, I have no subject
 worth taking up your time with.

Phillip
 reticent.

From our Governor's manner of expressing himself, for he com-
 municates nothing to any person here but to his secretary (Capt.
 Collins), he has, I dare say, described this country as capable of
 being made the Empire of the East. But notwithstanding all he
 may from interested motives say—and as this letter is only for
 your own private perusal—I do not scruple to pronounce that in
 the whole world there is not a worse country than what we have
 yet seen of this. All that is contiguous to us is so very barren
 and forbidding that it may with truth be said here nature is
 reversed; and if not so, she is nearly worn out, for almost all the

A bad
 country.

* A sample was submitted to Mr. Josiah Wedgwood, who pronounced it to be "a pure
 species of plumbago or blacklead."

† A private letter.

seeds we have put into the ground has rotted, and I have no doubt but will, like the wood of this vile country when burned or rotten, turn to sand. This latter is a fact that has been proved, and will, I much fear, be fatally felt by some of its present inhabitants. I say the present, because if the Minister has a true and just description given him of it he will not surely think of sending any more people here. If he does, I shall not scruple to say that he will entail misery on all that are sent and an expense on the mother country that in the days of her greatest prosperity she was not equal to, for there is not one article that can ever be necessary for the use of man but which must be imported into this country. It is very certain that the whole face of it is covered with trees, but not one bit of timber have we yet found that is fit for any other purpose than to make the pot boil. Of the general opinion entertained here of the wretched prospect we have before us I cannot I think give you a more convincing proof than that every person (except the two gentlemen already mentioned, whose sentiments I am perfectly unacquainted with) who came out with a design of remaining in the country are now most earnestly wishing to get away from it.

1788

16 Nov.

No more
people
should be
sent.

A wretched
prospect.

You will, no doubt, see a copy of the return which I am going to send to the Admiralty, as the Governor has requested it for your office. It is a return of that part of the marine detachment that wish to remain in this country, and the purposes for which they wish to stay.* I think this return [will] open people's eyes more than a volume writ upon the subject would.

Marines who
wish to stay.

There is an effort making for clearing some land for corn at the head of this harbour. The party gone and to go are to be under the care and protection of your old friend Campbell, who is to have two officers and twenty marines with him. His perseverance and attention to the forwarding the public service in general is too well known to require my saying anything on that head, unless it is to assure you that his abilities ever since his arrival here has been constantly employed with the most sedulous attention to the success of this settlement in particular, and was I in a situation that would admit my doing it, I most assuredly would make the Secretary of State acquainted with his worth. But as that is not the case, I dare say you will think it a justice due to any man, much more in the present instance, for your old acquaintance, whom I am sure you wished to serve. I flatter myself you will have pleasure in representing him as he deserves, and possibly by that means procuring for him that for which he has served so long for.†

Rose Hill.

Campbell's
value.

R. Ross.

* Ante, p. 201.

† The latter part of this letter is omitted by the transcriber as being devoid of public interest.

1788

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

16 Nov.

Sir, Sydney Cove, Port Jackson, November 16, 1788.

Previous reports.

By his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, that sailed from hence for the Cape of Good Hope the 2nd of October, I had the honor of transmitting, for the information of the Lords Commissioners, particulars respecting this settlement and Norfolk Island, with such drawings of that and Lord Howe Island as I had received from the lieutenants King and Ball.

A survey, made by Captain Hunter and the officers of the *Sirius*, of this harbour was sent with my dispatches in July, under the care of Lieutenant Shortland.

Movements of ships.

The loss of all the seed wheat and most of the other grain and seeds that was brought from England, by being heated, was my reason for sending the *Sirius* to the Cape. You will, sir, please to inform their Lordships that the *Fishburn* is now ready for sea. The *Golden Grove* sailed for Norfolk Island the 2nd of October. Both ships will sail for England as soon as that ship returns.

Detachment for Norfolk Island.

I thought it necessary to keep the *Supply*, tender, here in the absence of the *Sirius*, which was my reason for sending the *Golden Grove* to Norfolk Island; and I ordered the master of the *Supply* on board that ship, as he is acquainted with the island, where the landing is difficult. Eighteen months' provisions and stores, with a petty officer, one sergeant, one corporal, five privates, two seamen, twenty-one men, and eleven women convicts, were sent in the *Golden Grove*. These make the number of people on Norfolk Island sixty-one, and more will be sent in the course of the summer.

Misunderstandings with the natives.

The natives now avoid us more than they did when we first landed, and which I impute to the robberies committed on them by the convicts, who steal their spears and fizgigs, which they frequently leave in their huts when they go out a-fishing, and which the people belonging to the transports purchase, though every possible precaution has been taken to prevent it. This the natives revenge by attacking any stragler they meet, and one convict has been killed since the *Sirius* sailed.

Store-ship for the harbour.

The advantages attending a ship of the line as a store-ship in this harbour I have observed in my former letters. Such ship might bring a considerable quantity of black cattle from the Cape, as I presume she would have few guns on board. One or two small vessels of thirty or forty tons would, likewise, be employed to great advantage, and which I beg leave to submit to their Lordships' consideration. The necessity of a regular supply of provisions has been, likewise, pointed out in my former letters, as the resources this country affords at present are very trifling.

Small vessels.

A marine missing.

A marine has been lately missing, and it is doubtful whether he lost his way in the woods and was killed by the natives, or whether he died in a fit, he being subject to fits.

The Golden Grove returned from Norfolk Island the 10th instant, having landed the provisions and people. In her return they fell in with a dangerous reef, on which the sea broke very high. The south end of the reef only was seen, which, by Mr. Blackburn's account (the master of the Supply), is in the latitude of $29^{\circ} 25' S.$, longitude $155^{\circ} 59' E.$ * It extended from N.E. by N. to north, but the weather did not permit him to examine how far it extends to the northward. They were, when the bearings were taken, four leagues from it, with light airs of wind. It shall be examined in the course of the summer.

1788

16 Nov.

A dangerous reef.

The accounts I have received from Norfolk Island are equally favorable with those first received. Vegetables of every kind are there in abundance. The corn they have sown promises well, and the landing may be made much safer than it is at present. The two store-ships have each a lower yard and top-gallant masts from that island, which I have ordered them to deliver at Deptford Yard, by which it may be determined how far the pine of that island may be useful. We still continue clearing the land near us, and some convicts, with a small detachment, are settled near the head of the harbour, where the ground is better and less timber to clear away.

Fertility of Norfolk Island.

The two store-ships are now nearly ready for sea. The state and condition of his Majesty's armed tender Supply is inclosed. The store-ships are to endeavour to make their passage round the South Cape.

Store-ships ready for sea.

During the winter we had frequently very heavy gales of wind, several from the eastward; but the weather is now settled, and we have had less rain in the winter than what I have generally known in that season on the Brazil coast.

Gales.

Some driftwood, a cocoanut, and a small piece of wood like the handle of a fly-flap, such as are made in the Friendly Islands, having been driven on shore at Norfolk Island, not appearing to have been long in the water, have suggested an idea there that some inhabited island is at no great distance.

An inhabited island.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

MAJOR ROSS TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Sir, Marine Q'rs, Sydney Cove, 16th Nov., 1788.

Since I did myself the honor of writing to you on the 1st October by Captain Hunter, who was ordered to the Cape of Good Hope, I found myself under the necessity of ordering an officer into confinement, but as it has ever been my wish rather to convince than punish, I directed the adjutant to show the officer the letter I had written to the Governor, requesting a

An arrest.

* Middleton Reef, named after Sir Charles Middleton, Comptroller of the Navy. The "Directory of the South Pacific Ocean" gives the latitude of the "west elbow" of the reef $29^{\circ} 27' 40'' S.$, and the longitude $159^{\circ} 3' 38'' E.$

1788

16 Nov.

general court-martial, telling him at the same time my motive for doing so was that if he felt himself sensible of the impropriety of his conduct he would then know what he had to do, and that then the letter would not be sent; but if, on the contrary, he preferred a trial by court-martial, my letter would immediately be transmitted. To this the adjutant bro't me an answer that it was very well, and he had no objection to a general court-martial.

A general
court-
martial.

In consequence of my application, the Governor sent me a warrant for the assembling a general court-martial, which was accordingly ordered, and was for some days prevented from meeting by the indisposition of one of the members. This officer (Capt. Meredith) continuing to grow worse, it became necessary to order another member, which was done. On the 13th October the officers ordered to compose the court assembled agreeable to orders. Soon after, Capt. Campbell, who was to have been the President, delivered me a letter with a paper inclos'd, of which No. 1 is a copy,* and which, at his and the request of the other officers who were to have compos'd the court, I have the honor of inclosing, for their Lordships' information, together with a letter and paper given to me at the same time by the Judge-Advocate, of which No. 2 is the original.† The Judge-Advocate's motive for giving me this paper I find myself yet at a loss to account for, nor can I possibly here omit observing that there did not seem to be a doubt entertained of the Governor's being sufficiently authorized to order a general court-martial till the Judge-Advocate called upon Captain Campbell, and in my presence told him it was his opinion that being marine officers they could not legally sit under a warrant from the Governor, as there was no power delegated to him for that purpose, either by Parliament or the Admiralty.

Doubts as to
its legality.

A court of
inquiry.

The court-martial being now, as their Lordships will see by the above paper, out of the question, the Governor, without withdrawing the warrant or returning my letter, order'd a court of enquiry to assemble and enquire into the charge, and report whether there was, or was not, sufficient grounds for a court-martial. The report of this court was made to the Governor by Captain Campbell, from whom I understand that he did not think himself at liberty, under the above circumstances, of entering into the enquiry, and that the court only gave an opinion that an application from a commanding officer had ever been deem'd sufficient grounds for granting a general court-martial. At this stage of the business the Governor judg'd fit to send the Judge-Advocate to the officer in confinement, to inform him that he should send him to England by the first ship, together with the charge against him.

The accused
to be
ordered
home.

At this time I received a letter from the officer purporting that the adjutant did not at the time I sent him with my letter

* Ante, pp. 205-206.

† See enclosure in Collins's letter to Nepean. Ante, p. 210.

inform him of my motives for so doing, else he would have done everything in his power to have the letter stopt, and express'd much sorrow at his having been so long kept in ignorance of my intentions. This circumstance I communicated to the Governor, who told me it was then too late, for as the warrant had been granted the letters could not be recall'd, and that he found himself under the necessity of sending them to England. This reply, I must confess, mortified me, but on my receiving the necessary apology from the officer I wrote a letter to the Governor, of which No. 3 is a copy,* in consequence of which he ordered the officer to return to his duty, but has not given up the letters.

1733

16 Nov.

An apology.

The officer returns to duty.

In our present situation their Lordships will see the impossibility of our holding a general court-martial til such time as the difficulties mentioned in the paper No. 1 are removed, which I am convinced their Lordships will cause to be done as soon as possible.

I am sorry to inform their Lordships that on the 26th October James Rogers, a private marine, in the 15th Company, who had for some time been employ'd in sawing, was returning to his hutt, and the distance to it not more than a quarter of a mile, yet in that short distance he is suppos'd to have lost his way and wandered in the woods till he was starved, for he has not since been heard of. I have repeatedly sent all the officers and men off duty, with all the dogs they could collect, in search of the body, but all to no purpose. It being impossible for a man to exist in the woods of this country, even supposing him to have his arms, which was not this man's case, and as he had always been looked upon as one of the best and quietest men in the detachment, I have no doubt of his being dead, and have therefore set him off as dead in the effective list.

Lost in the bush.

Another unfortunate circumstance has lately happened, which I have pain in relating. On the 6th inst. a quarrel happen'd overnight between Thomas Bulmore, a marine, and some of his comrades. It had not been so effectually settled that night as to prevent them from going out the next morning, which they unfortunately effected without the knowledge of either commissioned or non-commissioned officers. From the bruises or blows that Bulmore received in the quarrel he died on the 10th. Four of the marines are now in confinement for it, and to be tried by the criminal court†. Should that court have determined their fate before the ship sails their Lordships shall be made acquainted with it.

A marine killed in a fight.

In my last letter I inform'd you of my having an order for a detachment to be in readiness for the head of the harbour the first week in October. It was only a few days ago that a part of

Rose Hill.

* Ante, p. 202.

† They were found guilty of manslaughter, and sentenced to 200 lashes each. Post, p. 220.

1788

16 Nov.

Slow
progress
with
barracks.

that detachment was sent up to protect some men order'd to erect a store-house for provisions. The rest will, I beleive, in the course of a few days be ordered to join those already sent.

In my last letter I informed their Lordships with the state of the barracks erecting for the detachment. Captain Campbell's company has for some time been in the one erected for his company, but to say when the other companys will be in theirs it is now impossible for me to say, though I much fear that it will not be for some months, as all the artificers have been drawn off from us for purposes that his Excellency imagin'd to be of more importance than the getting the detachment under proper cover. I have, with the Governor's assistance, contrived to have hammocks for our men, but as they are in general very bad, I hope their Lordships will be induced to direct the Navy Board to send a sufficient number, with the bedding which we want much for the detachment. My reason for preferring hammocks to standing beds is that they are much more easily kept clean, and, of course, more healthy for the men.

Smiths
wanted.

The blacksmiths employ'd by the Governor are kept in such constant employ as to render it impossible for me to get them to attend to the arms of the detachment. Two of our firelocks have been in their hands for the last three months, and are now in the same state as when sent to them. This makes me fear that I shall be under the necessity of employing one of our own men, who is a gunsmith. Should it be so I shall endeavour to engage him upon the same terms with the people of that description employ'd at the different divisions, which will, I hope, meet with their Lordships' approbation.

The Governor has informed me that he will order the detachment to be compleated from the party of marines serving on board the Supply, armed tender. If he does before the ships sail their Lordships will see it by the general return.

Bad paper.

I am sorry to say that the paper supplied for the use of the detachment is so spungy and of so inferior a quality as to be almost totally useless from its having got damped and mildew'd upon the passage. I therefore request that their Lordships will please to order me to be supplied with those articles of a better quality, and some of a larger kind than what was sent before.

With this letter I transmit for their Lordships' information a copy of the effective list for the last quarter, a general return of the detachment, and an account of the issues and remains of the quarter-master's stores.*

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Dear Sir, Sydney Cove, Port Jackson, 16th Nov., 1788.

Norfolk
Island flax.

In the box which contains my despatches, on board the Golden Grove, I have put up some flax, as received from Nor-

* Note by transcriber:—"Name of R. Ross omitted, though from him direct."

folk Island. I have before observed they have no person who understands how to manage it. There is likewise a small box with sand, which I suppose to contain blacklead. One paper in that box contains what was in as strong a fire as we could make for twenty-four hours, but did not melt. I have sent a small quantity by the Fishburn to Sir Joseph Banks. Here is a tree, of which we have whole forests, from the leaves of which is distilled an essential oil that appears to be equal to oil of peppermint.* The returns of the detachment, state of the sick, and quantity of provisions in store for the detachment and convicts (not including the ships' companies of the Sirius and Supply, who must be hereafter victualled from the store), are inclosed.†

1788

16 Nov.

Specimens,
mineral and
vegetable.

Two lower yards were cut at Norfolk Island for the two store-ships, and the masters have my directions to deliver them at Deptford Yard. By those spars they will be able to determine the quality of the wood.

I have mentioned the situation of Lieutenant King, who is the Commandant of Norfolk Island, in my former letters to Lord Sydney and yourself; and you will now permit me to mention Mr. Jamison, the surgeon, who is surgeon's first mate of the Sirius. He is a very good man, and if the surgeon was to die would lose his chance of promotion; at the same time, if the Sirius leaves the station, he would not be entitled to any pay from the Navy Board. At present he has only the pay of surgeon's mate.

Surgeon
Jamison.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir, Sydney Cove, 17th November, 1788. 17 Nov

The flax contained in this box is from Norfolk Island.

I have mentioned in my former letters the want of a person that understands the preparing and manufacture of flax. If properly dressed, I think it would be superior to any that grows in Europe.

Norfolk
Island flax.

Of the cotton seed brought from England very little vegetated.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

MAJOR ROSS TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Marine Quarters, Sydney Cove,
Sir, New South Wales, 18th Nov., 1788. 18 Nov.

I have to inform you, for their Lordships' information, that since my letter of yesterday's date the criminal court have acquitted

* See note to memo, by Sir Joseph Banks. Post, p. 283.

† In the return of the civil establishment enclosed eleven officers are mentioned, including Governor, Lieutenant-Governor, Judge-Advocate, chaplain, commissary, surgeon, surveyor-general, three assistant surgeons, and acting provost-marshal. The military force consisted of 160 privates, major, two captains, two captain-lieutenants, eight first lieutenants, three second lieutenants, adjutant second lieutenant, quarter-master first lieutenant, and Judge-Advocate (David Collins).

1788 the marines (that were tried) of willful murder, and brought it in
 18 Nov. manslaughter, and have sentenced them to two hundred lashes
 each.

I have, &c.,

R. Ross, Major.

MR. D. CONSIDEN* TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)

Sir,

Port Jackson, Nov. 18, 1788.

From the intimacy which subsisted between you and my friend, Capt. Charles Hamilton, I have taken the liberty of sending home some birds and a kangaroo skin, properly stuffed, to your care, to be forwarded to him as soon as possible. At the same time I beg your acceptance of five birds and a kangaroo skin—all properly prepared and stuffed. I have likewise sent two living opossums (one for you, the other for Captain Hamilton), and two beautiful paroquets alive (one for Mrs. Charles Hamilton, the other for your daughter). I sincerely wish they may reach you safe. Understanding you were a naturalist as well as a botanist, I have sent you some beetles, viz., two species from S. America, and some flower-seeds (such as I could at present collect in this country), and specimens of two sorts of gum, the production of this country, the one red and the other yellow. The first is the red astringent gum well-known in England; the other, I have taken the liberty of naming the balsam to be of New South Wales. These I have used medicinally, and found them to answer my most sanguine expectations. I have sent you some of the sweet tea† of this country, which I recommend, and is generally used by the marines and convicts. As such it is a good anti-scorbutic, as well as a substitute for that which is more costly.

This country produces a variety of flowers and shrubs totally unknown in Europe, and five or six species of wild myrtle, some of which I have sent to you dried. An infusion of the leaves of one sort is a mild and safe astringent in the dysentery. We have a large peppermint-tree, which is equal, if not superior, to our English peppermint. I have sent you a specimen of it. If there is any merit in applying these and many other simples to the benefit of the poor wretches here, I certainly claim it, being the first who discovered and recommended them.

Many of the shrubs are now in bloom, and many more have not yet ripened their seed. Therefore, I cannot send you that variety I could wish; but I will make it my business during my residence here to send you some by every opportunity, should it be pleasing to you.

You are probably surprised I have not given you some account of the country, &c., when I have taken the liberty of addressing you at all. For this I beg leave to refer you to Capt. Hamilton, to whom I have given a short sketch of it, together with my opinion.

* Assistant Surgeon.

† The native sarsaparilla. The herb is a common article of trade amongst Sydney herbarists.—Maiden's "Useful Plants of Australia," p. 203.

Animals and
insects.

Gum.

Sweet tea.

Flowers and
shrubs.

I had forgot to say that the red gum is produced by two very different sorts of trees, and that the yellow gum is the production of a small tree of the palmette kind, the seed of which I have sent to you. It grows on a stalk from 6 to 12 feet long, and very much resembling a cane, out of the centre of the top of the tree, which is from 3 to 7 feet high, and the circumference from 18 to 24 inches; the external surface appears as if burned, but upon examination it is only a black vein, which, if powdered, becomes of a red colour.

1783

18 Nov.

Red and
yellow gum.

I am, &c.,

D. CONSIDEN.

Memo. of such things as I have sent to you and Capt. Hamilton by the Golden Grove, transport, of London, Wm. Sharp, master:—

Eight paroquets, prepared and stuffed; a nameless bird, prepared and stuffed; flying squirrel, prepared and stuffed; 2 American beetles, prepared and stuffed; some seeds, all in one box; 2 live paroquets, in a cage; 2 live opossums, male and female; 2 kangaroo skins, stuffed; and some of the native spears.

EXTRACT from a letter written by an officer of the marines, dated Port Jackson, 18th November, 1788 (Banks Papers).*

HAVING experienced a long tho' favourable voyage from England, we arrived at Botany Bay on the 20th of January last, where we expected to lay a foundation for a colony, but I am sorry to say the country for several miles round the bay does not afford a spot large enough for a cabbage garden fit for cultivation. The bay itself is beautiful and capacious, but open to the south-east winds which prevail there at a certain season. It is surrounded with rocks, sandhills, and swamps, all which are covered as thick as you can possibly imagine with trees and underwood. You may easily suppose our disappointment was great in having our sanguine hopes so soon frustrated; however, during our dilemma his Excellency the Governor explored the coast to the northward, and in a few days returned with the pleasing account of having discovered the finest harbour in the world, viz., Port Jackson, so named by Capt. Cook. On the following morning we quitted Botany Bay with pleasure, and anchored in Sidney Cove, Port Jackson, in the evening of the same day.

Botany Bay
disappoint-
ing.Port Jack-
son.

Port Jackson is, without doubt, the finest harbour in the known world. It extends from 15 to 20 miles into the country, forming beautiful bays and coves on every side, with deep water everywhere for ships of any burthen. Sidney Cove, which is the seat of Government, is 5 miles within the entrance of the harbor. The country all round the harbor is similar to that of Botany Bay, only more rocky, some few spots excepted, which may admit of cultivation with a deal of labor. The soil is in general sandy, and no fresh-water river or spring has as yet been discovered;

The "finest
harbour in
the world."Sandy soil,
unwhole-
some water

* Sir Joseph Banks's handwriting.

1788

18 Nov.

Lightning
and rain.

still, fresh water is found in many places, which is only the overflowing of swamps, consequently can't be very wholesome. It has on our arrival here, and still does occasion, many complaints, such as dysentery and worms. The climate is fine and temperate, and seems to be considerably influenced by the moon, as we have a deal of thunder and lightning at every change of that planet, besides torrents of rain. The lightning has done some damage by killing all the sheep belonging to the Lieut.-Govr. and others. We have had a great deal of rain in the months of June, July, and part of August, which seem to constitute the rainy season here.

Native
animals.

The country, as far as we know, produces few quadrupeds. The largest is the kangaroo. They make use of their hind legs only in jumping or escaping from their enemies. The female carries and nurses its young in the pouch under its belly. The opossum is next in size. They are easily tamed, and eat anything. There are flying squirrels, a spotted animal of the cat kind, but larger-bodied, extremely destructive to fowls, and three sorts of rats; the kangaroo rat, which partakes of that animal; the flying rat, which, by the assistance of its bushy tail, flies from tree to tree, which are numerous and very troublesome. These are all the quadrupeds we have seen here yet, except the native dogs, some of which are large, and seem to be of the fox kind.

Birds

The birds are not so numerous as you would expect in a wild country, but very beautiful in general, especially those of the parrot tribe. The ostrich is here, and the black swan; one of each has been killed, and several seen besides. Many other birds, large and small, which I can't describe. Twelve miles from this settlement I have shot wild ducks, pigeons, and quails.

Trees and
shrubs.

The country produces five or six kinds of trees, two of which produce the same sort of gum, viz., a red astringent gum well known in England. These gum-trees grow to an amazing size, but are scarce worth cutting down. The only tree fit for building or any other use is the fir-tree, and even that is bad. There are here many shrubs, plants, and flowers totally unknown in Europe, some of which have been used medicinally with success by our surgeon, Mr. Considen, particularly the yellow gum, as a substitute for balsam of tolu.

Iron.

There is neither ore nor mineral as yet found, except iron, which is very common, and a small portion of copper.

The natives.

The natives do not appear numerous, but the most wretched of the human race. They are dressed in nature's garb, subsist chiefly on fish and roots we are unacquainted with. They inhabit chiefly the cavities of rocks and trees; their miserable huts, which are few, are constructed of the bark of trees. They do not wish to cultivate our acquaintance or friendship. They are treacherous, for they have murdered several of the convicts and one marine,

besides wounding many more. Indeed, they attack every person they meet unarmed, and appear civil to all those they meet armed. This is what induces me to call them treacherous. They have spears which they use in fishing and in impaling their enemies, besides stone hatchets and chizels.

The kangaroo is a very timid animal, incredibly strong for its size, and can jump faster than a horse can run. Its flesh is not bad eating, something like coarse mutton.

Having given you a sketch of the country, I shall leave you to form your own opinion of it. At the same time I beg to give mine, which is, that it will never answer the intentions of Government, for two reasons : first, because it is at too great a distance from every trading country ; and secondly, it will never make any return to the mother country, nor can it support itself independent of the mother country these twenty years. I could adduce many other reasons besides these.

I shall now say a few words about the internal management of affairs in this country. About six months ago only it was fortunately discovered that there was not above eight months' flour in the colony. The consequence was that a council was convened, and the Sirius ordered to the Cape of Good Hope for a supply of that necessary commodity and the rations lessened. It was likewise judged necessary by his Excellency to order a detachment of marines and convicts to a place about 14 miles distant to cultivate the land, which is thought by those who pretend to understand it to be better soil and easier of cultivation than any nearer to us. However plausible this may appear, still the detachment is not yet gone (a few convicts excepted), and the season so far advanced that it is impossible they can raise grain time enough to prevent the impending danger in case any accident should happen to the Sirius.

An elegant brick house is built for the Governor, and another of hewn stone for the Lieut.-Govr. A hospital was began on our arrival here, and is not yet half-finished, nor fit to receive an object. Two store-houses were bungled up, and are now in a tottering condition. Private convenience is the chief study, and I am sorry to add that neither order, mode, nor regularity has appeared in any department in this colony. About four months since every gentleman had a grant of two acres of land, and a labourer to clear and cultivate them. I can assure you that my brother officers and myself have been at a great deal of trouble and expence to effect this, and now, when we were likely to reap the fruit of our labour, the men are taken from us to be sent with the detachment above mentioned, and I myself am ordered on the same service. We have been here between nine and ten months, and we are not as yet all hutted. You will hardly believe me when I say that we ourselves have been obliged for the want of assistance to cut thatch and

1788

18 Nov.

The kangaroo.

Scarcity of food.

Improvements.

Want of order.

1788

18 Nov.

No proper
dwellings.

wattles for our hutts, and now that I have nearly compleated mine I must quit it, and willingly obey orders. I have lived in a marquee since I arrived here, and am likely to continue it much longer. We have labor'd incessantly since we arrived here to raise all sorts of vegetables, and even at this distant period we can barely supply our tables, his Excellency's not excepted. This, together with the miserable state of the natives and scarcity of animals, are convincing proofs of the badness of the country. You will, no doubt, have a flattering public account, but you may rely upon what I have advanced. Every gentleman here, two or three excepted, concur with me in opinion, and sincerely wish that the expedition may be recalled."

Comment
by Sir
Joseph
Banks.

*Note by Sir Joseph Banks :—*N.B.—It would not be prudent to rely wholly upon what this gent has advanced, especially in that part of his letter that speaks of the quantity of flour in the colony. The public return of provision, dated Nov'r 16th, 1788, is as follows :—

	Months.				Months.		
Beef and pork	...	20		Butter	...	13	
Flour and rice	...	18		Pease	...	16	

CAPTAIN HUNTER TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1789

3 Jan.

Sirius, in Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope,

3rd January, 1789.

Sir,

His Excellency M. Van de Graave,* Governor of this settlement, having, upon my arrival here, very politely offer'd an immediate conveyance to Europe for any dispatches I might have to forward, I therefore embrace that opportunity of informing my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that, in obedience to an order from his Excellency Arthur Phillip, Esq., Governor of his Majesty's territory of New South Wales, &c., &c., a copy of which I send enclosed, together with the state and condition of the ship,† I sailed from Port Jackson on that coast, in his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, under my command, on the 2nd day of October, 1788; but Governor Phillip having declined to direct by what rout I should perform the voyage, I judged that at that season of the year the rout to the eastward, by Cape Horn, promised fairest for an expeditious passage; I therefore steered for the South Cape of New Zealand, which I passed on the 12th, and made the coast of Terra del Fuego on the 26th November. The weather off Cape Horn, altho' the summer was well advanced, was so exceedingly cold, occasioned by the vast mountains of ice which we daily fell in with, that the ship's company, who had been upon salt provisions ever since we left the Cape of Good Hope outward bound, and without any kind of vegitable, fell down very fast with the scurvy. I arrived in this bay on the 1st January, 1789, having buried three seamen on the passage.

The *Sirius*
leaves
Sydney.The Cape
Horn route.

Scurvy

* In other despatches the name is given as Von Graaffe. † The enclosures are not recorded.

On the day I sailed from Port Jackson the ship sprung a leak, which admitted 2 feet 4 inches water in the four hours, but as before my arrival here we had discovered it to be about two or three feet below the wale, starboard side, I hope to be able to have it stoped before I sail on my return to the coast of New South Wales.

1789

3 Jan.

A leak.

I transmit by this opportunity a box containing dispatches from Governor Phillip, directed to Lord Sydney, one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State. On the 12th of July last four transports* under the command of Lieutenant Shortland sailed from Port Jackson for Europe. They took their route to the northward, and might possibly have called at Batavia. They have not touched here; I therefore imagine they may have passed on to St. Helena and water'd there on their way home.

Transports.

I think it necessary, in case Governor Phillip's dispatches by the above transports should not arrive before this may reach the Admiralty, to mention for the information of their Lordships that the harbour of Port Jackson, which is about 4 leagues to the northward of Botany Bay, having been examined and found a safe, extensive, and commodious harbour, the Governor had fixed the seat of Government there, instead of Botany Bay. Its latitude is 33° 50' and its longitude 151° 25' Et. of meridian of Greenwich. The three transports chartered by the East India Company for China† were discharged, and left Port Jackson on the 6th May last; two of the store-ships remained when I sailed, and would be ready to sail for Europe about three weeks after my departure.

Botany discarded

As no part of the service on which I came to this place‡ is yet in any forwardness I cannot give their Lordships any information upon it, but will leave an account of my proceedings to be forwarded from hence after my departure, if no opportunity should offer before I sail.

I am, &c.,

JNO. HUNTER.

CAPTAIN HUNTER TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Sirius, Table Bay, Cape Good Hope,

20th January, 1789.

20 Jan

Sir,

Upon my arrival in this bay an opportunity offer'd, of which I availed myself, and wrote you for the information of their Lordships, signifying the service I came here upon, and enclosing a copy of my orders from his Excellency Arthur Phillip, Esq. In that letter, which was dated the 3rd instant, and goes by way of Holland, I mentioned that four of the transports which carried out the convicts to the coast of New South Wales had sailed from Port Jackson in the middle of July last, under the command of

The transports.

* Alexander, Prince of Wales, Friendship, and Borrowdale. Post, p. 226.

† Scarborough, Charlotte, and Lady Penrhyn.

‡ Hunter was sent to the Cape for supplies. Ante, p. 188.

1789

20 Jan.

Ships in
distress.

Lieut. Shortland, the agent of transports, but that they had not touched here on their way home. Having since the date of the above letter received some accounts of those ships, I judged it necessary to trouble their Lordships with such information as I had collected, and which has been so particularly told me that I have not the smallest doubt of its authenticity. A Dutch East India ship arrived here lately from Rio de Janeiro, the officers of which inform'd me that two ships arrived there seperately from the east coast of New Holland in so very distressed a condition by sickness and the death of many of their seamen that it became necessary for the boats which boarded them to stay and bring their ships to an anchor and to hand their sails. Those two ships, from the very particular description given of them, are, no doubt, the Prince of Wales and Borrowdale.

Great
mortality.A transport
scuttled.The sick
recovering.

A Dutch frigate arrived here yesterday from Batavia, by the officers of which I am informed that Lieutenant Shortland had arrived at that port in the end of November, also in very great distress by sickness; that out of the two ships which were together (Alexander and Friendship) they had lost so many of their people that it became necessary to destroy one ship to man the other; the crews of both were put on board the Alexander and the Friendship was sunk; and that the Alexander, when she came into the road of Batavia, was so sickly as to require the assistance of other ships to hand their sails and secure the ship, but when this frigate sailed (13th Decemr.) their sick were recovering fast, and the Alexander had been, by the assistance given them from other ships, re-fitted and put in a state for sea, so that I think it probable Lieutenant Shortland may arrive here before I sail on my return to the coast of New South Wales.

Plan of Port
Jackson

As Mr. Shortland is charged with Governor Phillip's dispatches, duplicates of which I think were on board the Friendship, with which are several cōps of the plan of Port Jackson, it is not probable that their Lordships can be in possession of any sketch of that harbour until his arrival. I have, therefore, reduced the original scale upon which the harbour was done for the convenience of the present conveyance, and send by this opportunity a copy of it.

Boats
wanted

I shall not be able to get the service upon which I came here so soon executed as I at first expected, chiefly for want of boats, Governor Phillip having found it necessary to keep the Sirius's long-boat and a smaller boat for the use of the settlement, which reduced our number to two six-oar'd cutters, and there is much difficulty in getting craft to hire, owing to the great number of ships in the bay at this time.

I am, &c.,

JNO. HUNTER.

P.S.—This letter and the sketch of Port Jackson I put under the care of Lieut. Chevalier, of his Maj.'s 15th Hanoverian Regt., who has promised to deliver them at the Admiralty Office himself.

CAPTAIN HUNTER TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1789

Sirius, Table Bay, Cape Good Hope,

18 Feb.

Sir,

18th February, 1789.

I beg you will be pleased to inform their Lordships [the Lords of the Admiralty] that, having compleated the victualling of his Majesty's ship under my command to twelve months, and taken on board an additional quantity of flour for the use of his Majesty's settlement on the coast of New South Wales, I shall immediately proceed on my return to that coast.

On the 20th ult^o I took the opportunity of an officer in his Majesty's service returning from the East Indies to England to write you a few lines for the information of their Lordships, in which I mention'd certain accounts which I had received from a Dutch frigate from Batavia, respecting two of the transports The transports which left Port Jackson in July last under the command of Lieutenant Shortland, the agent, who arrived here last night in the *Alexander*, transport, and confirms the intelligence I gave their Lordships in that letter, and by whom I shall forward this to England.

I have been so fortunate as to stop in a great degree the leak, which I mentioned in a former letter the ship had sprung on the day I left Port Jackson, but as I imagine we shall be subject to such accidents frequently from the apparent cause of the last leak (holes left by the decay of a bolt and some large spikes which fasten'd on the skirting board under the wales) which gave way by the working of the ship, I shall request permission from Captain Phillip on my arrival at Port Jackson to lighten and examine the ship as far as I can below the water, for I find by the warrant officers, who have been many years in the *Sirius*, that the copper has not been taken off her bottom since she was first employed as an arm'd store-ship,* which is now between eight and nine years. The *Sirius* unsound.

I have been able since my arrival in this bay, as will appear by the state and condition of the ship enclosed, to compleat the ship's company with British subjects, who, I am sorry to say, are in great numbers here, almost every foreign ship which arrives having some on board. The *Supply*, arm'd tender, being short of complement when I sailed, I have taken on board a certain number to compleat her; but I must beg leave to trouble their Lordships with an account of certain difficulties which attend the management of this business by taking his Majesty's subjects out of foreign ships here, where there is no consul to settle such matters. In consequence of a letter I received from a number of English seamen serving in a Dutch East India ship, requesting that they might be taken under the protection of his Majesty's flag, I made application to the Governor for the men. After some Recruiting.

English seamen in foreign ships.

1789
18 Feb. time and farther application from me, the men were sent to prison and treated rather harshly, at which I expressed my surprise, and sent an officer to demand their release. The men were liberated and brought on board, but as they had wages due to a considerable amount, I also made application for that, but was told it could not be paid. How far it is recoverable I confess myself ignorant, for they have not given security to the people. This difficulty in recovering wages will, when generally known amongst seamen, be a means probably of disposing them rather to remain in the foreign ships than to offer themselves to his Majesty's with the certainty of loosing all the pay which may be due to them; and altho' the commanders of King's ships can demand British subjects from a foreign service, yet when it is against the consent of the men themselves, they fly to the subterfuge of calling themselves Americans, which I find is very common, and it is very difficult to detect such an imposition.

Wages
unpaid.

Subterfuge.

I am, &c.,

JNO. HUNTER.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

20 Feb.

Sir,

Sydney Cove, February 20th, 1789.

The present situation of this colony renders it necessary to state the following particulars, and which you will please to communicate to the Right Hon'ble the Lord Sydney.

Official
complica-
tions.

When on the death of Captain Shea, who died the 2nd of Feb., 1789, Major Ross, as commandant of the detachment, came to inform me of that event, I observed to him that First Lieut. George Johnston, then doing duty as my Adjutant of Orders (and who was then present), would of course succeed to the capt.-lieutcy. which then became vacant, as being the oldest first lieutenant in the detachment, and that I should in future do without an adjutant, as there were so few officers. No direct answer was given by Major Ross, who left me, and sending for the Judge-Advocate offered him the company vacant by the death of Capt. Shea, telling him he was directed so to do by Lord Howe, and that if he accepted the comy. he was to give up the appointment of Judge-Advocate to the detachment. This offer being declined, any interference on my part was unnecessary; but as a circumstance of this kind may happen in future, I beg leave to observe that if the Judge-Advocate had accepted of the company he must have given up the appointment of Judge-Advocate to the settlement, for he could not possibly have attended to that charge, supposing he had always remain'd at head-quarters, but which could not have been the case, for the captains relieve each other every three months at Rose Hill; therefore, if officers who may be sent out in civil employs are at liberty to resign the place they hold when any vacancy happens

Major Ross
and the
Judge-
Advocate.

in the detachment, the colony, in its present situation, may lose an officer who is immediately necessary, and who, as in the present instance, cannot be replaced; nor is there any officer in this settlement so absolutely necessary as the Judge-Advocate, who likewise acts as a Justice of Peace, and which employs a very considerable part of his time.

1789

20 Feb.

When this circumstance is laid before Lord Sydney, I doubt not but his Lordship will see that the civil Government of this colony may be very materially affected by directions of such a nature being given to the commandant of the detachment, and by him carried into execution without the knowledge or consent of the Governor, and which I presume never was intended by Lord Howe. The first information I received of any such offer being intended was from the Judge-Advocate's saying that he would not accept the offer.

The civil
government
versus the
military.

I was the next day told by Major Ross that he intended to give commissions to the officers he promoted in consequence of Capt'n. Shea's death, and some days afterwards he came to ask me if his giving his son a commission as a second lieutenant would meet with my approbation. As Major Ross had not even at that time mentioned his having offer'd the company to the Judge-Advocate, or made any reference to me respecting the filling up the vacancies, I desired he would excuse me from giving any approbation to that appointment in particular.

The Go-
vernor and
Major Ross.

Captain Lieut. Meredith as succeeding to the vacant company, First Lieut. Geo. Johnston succeeding him as capt.-lieutenant, Second Lieut. R. Clark succeeding to the first lieuteny., and A. J. Ross (who appears in the returns as a volunteer doing duty without pay) as being appointed a second lieutenant in the detachment, were afterwards presented to me as such by their commandant.

New
commis-
sions.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

MEMORANDUM BY SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers).

The following memorandum, written upon a small piece of paper, has been found in the Brabourne Collection. The handwriting is that of Sir Joseph Banks:—

Feb. 1789.

I could not take office and do my duty to the colony. My successor would naturally oppose my wishes. I prefer, therefore, to be friendly with both sides.

Sir Joseph
Banks re-
fuses office.

SIR JOSEPH BANKS TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir,

London, 27th April, 1789.

27 April.

Concluding that it will be thought a desirable Object to bring home for His Majestie's botanic garden at Kew some of the many beautifull and usefull Plants with which the Country

1789

27 April.

The
Guardian's
paint-cabin.

in the neighborhood of Jackson's Bay is known to abound, I beg leave to suggest to you, sir, that if the tafferell of the ship Guardian be fitted for the reception of Pots, in the same manner as was done in the case of the bounty, and one Line along the sides of the Great Cabbin, she will be able, without any inconvenience to the officers, to bring home a great number.

If this plan is approv'd,* I shall be happy to pay all the attention in my power to the Execution of it, which, as the Bounty has been so lately fitted, cannot be a matter of the least difficulty.

I have, &c.,

JOS. BANKS.

LORD SYDNEY TO THE LORDS OF THE ADMIRALTY.

29 April.

My Lords,

Whitehall, 29th April, 1789.

Provisions
for Port
Jackson.

The letters which have been received from Captain Phillip, Governor of New South Wales, representing that a great part of the provisions sent out with him to the settlement lately made upon that coast had been expended, and that there is an immediate occasion for a further supply, together with certain articles of clothing, tools, and implements for agriculture, medicines, &c., for the use of the convicts now at that place, his Majesty has given orders that one of his ships of war of two decks, with only her upper tier of guns, shall forthwith be got ready to carry out the said provisions and stores.†

Ship to be
fitted out.

I inclose to your Lordships herewith estimates Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4, and 5‡ of the several articles which are supposed to be indispensably necessary on the present occasion; and I am commanded to signify to your Lordships his Majesty's pleasure that you do give orders that the same may be provided and be put on board of such ships as the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty may appoint for the execution of that service.

Wine and
live stock to
be bought.

I am also to acquaint your Lordships that the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty have been directed to instruct the officer commanding the above-mentioned ship to call at Teneriffe, and purchase twenty pipes of wine, and also, in case he should touch at Rio de Janeiro or the Cape of Good Hope, to take on board as many black cattle or other live stock as he can conveniently accommodate, for the amount of which he is directed to draw bills upon your Lordships, which bills it is his Majesty's pleasure you do discharge whenever they appear, provided they are accompanied by proper vouchers and certificates that the articles purchased shall have been obtained upon moderate terms.

Artificers
to be sent.

As there are at present but very few artificers and farmers amongst the convicts now in New South Wales, his Majesty has thought it adviseable that twenty-five of those confined in the

* The proposal was carried out in a modified form. Post, pp. 247-249.

† The Guardian was chosen, and placed under the command of Lieutenant Riou.

‡ These enclosures are not recorded.

hulks in the river who are likely to be the most useful should be sent out in the ship intended to convey the provisions and stores, and that about eight or ten persons should also be engaged and take their passage in the said ship, to be employed as overseers of the convicts. These measures, I must inform your Lordships, have been strongly recommended by Captain Phillip, particularly the latter, from his having found by experience that the convicts placed as overseers have not been able to enforce their orders and carry that command which persons in a different situation would be likely to do. His Majesty has, therefore, directed me to endeavour to engage the above-mentioned number of overseers, and to desire that your Lordships will make provision for their salaries (which will not exceed forty pounds per annum each), as well as for reimbursing the Naval Department for the expences of their victualling, and that of the twenty-five convicts before mentioned, during their passage out.

1789

29 April.

Overseers.

I understand from Mr. Richards, the contractor for the convicts on board the Lady Juliana, that after the supplies necessary for the voyage are put on board there will still be room for any article of provisions or stores which may be wanting in New South Wales. His Majesty has, therefore, commanded me to signify to your Lordships his farther pleasure that you do order a proportion of clothing, tools, instruments, medicines, &c., equal to one-fourth of the quantity proposed to be sent out in the ship of war to be put on board the Lady Juliana, and, in addition thereto, as many provisions as she can conveniently stow. The Lady Juliana, in case she should touch at Rio de Janeiro or the Cape, ought also to take on board any live stock which can without inconvenience be accommodated for the supply of the settlement. It will, therefore, be necessary that your Lordships should cause the superintendent or the master of that ship to be furnished with proper instructions in that respect previously to her sailing, which I hope and expect will shortly take place.

Clothing,
tools,
instruments,
medicines.

Live stock.

I am, &c.,

SYDNEY.

P.S.—I inclose to your Lordships an account of the several articles which Governor Phillip informs me he has authorized Captain Hunter to purchase at the Cape of Good Hope, which of course will occasion a reduction of the supplies (particularly of the surgeon's necessaries) to be sent out from hence in the ship now under dispatch.

Purchases at
the Cape.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO THE UNDER SECRETARY OF THE
TREASURY.

Sir, Admiralty, 12th May, 1789.

12 May.

Having communicated to my Lords Commrs of the Admty your letter of the 27th ulto., signifying the desire of the Board of

1789 Treasury that their Lordships would recommend a lieutenant of
 12 May. the Navy proper to proceed as a superintendant on board the Lady
 Superintendent. Juliana, transport, going with convicts to New South Wales,
 under such regulations as it may be thought expedient to adopt,
 I am commanded by their Lordships to recommend Lt. Saml.
 Edwd. Marshall as a proper person for such employment.

I am, &c.,
 P.S.

OPINION OF SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)

14 May.

May 14, 1789.

Remedy for scurvy. As the scurvy with which the settlers in New South Wales were
 afflicted during the first winter of their residence there disappeared
 entirely on the first approach of the spring, as their supply of
 culinary vegetables must be on the increase, and they must by
 degrees learn more and more the use of those which are found
 wild in the country, and as the later returns do not mention the
 scurvy as a disease with which they are at all afflicted, I am of
 opinion that it will be useless to send out essence of malt to them
 as a medicine.*

SIR GEORGE YONGE TO THE TREASURY.

20 May.

Sir,

W.O., 20th May, 1789.

New South Wales Corps. The King, intending that the detachment now serving in
 New South Wales should be relieved and brought to England,
 has thought it advisable, instead of replacing them with another
 detachment from that corps, that a corps of infantry should be
 forthwith raised for that particular service, to consist of four
 comp's, each of 1 capt., 1 lt, 1 ensign, 3 serg'ts, 3 corp'ls, 2 drum-
 m'rs, and 67 private men, with the usual staff off'rs; and to be
 commanded by a major having a comp'y. I am to acq't you
 therewith for the information of the Lords Com'rs of H.M.'s
 Treasury, and that it is H.M.'s P. [pleasure] that the said corps
 should be placed upon the establishment from the 24th inst.

Charges.

I enclose for their L'd's' information an estimate of the charge
 for the said corps for 365 days, as also a state of the subsistence
 p. d'm.

Recruiting-
 money.

H.M. is also pleased to direct that the major and capt'ns shall
 each raise their own comp's, receiving for each approved recruit
 the sum of three guineas, by which arrangement the charge of
 raising 300 men (including the serg'ts, corp'ls, and drum'rs) will
 amount to £945.

I am, &c.,

GEO. YONGE.

* In Sir Joseph Banks's handwriting, and endorsed by him :—" Opinion given May 13, on
 the subject of sending essence of malt to Jackson's Cove."

[Enclosure.]

1789

Estimate of the charge of a corps of foot consisting of four companies, for service in New South Wales :—

20 May.

Estimate of
charge.

	£	s.	d.
1 major commandant and captain	293	10	7½
3 captains—£171 7s. 1d.	514	1	3
4 lieutenants—£79 19s. 4d.	319	17	4
4 ensigns—£62 16s. 7¼d.	251	6	5
1 chaplain	114	4	8¾
1 adjutant	68	10	10
1 quartermaster	79	19	4
1 surgeon	68	10	10
1 surgeon's mate	59	19	5¾
12 serjeants—£18 5s.	219	0	0
12 corporals—£12 3s. 4d.	146	0	0
8 drummers—£12 3s. 4d.	97	6	8
268 privates—£9 2s. 6d.	2,445	10	0
	£4,677	17	6
Clothing	860	0	1½
Agency	87	5	5
4 captains—each £47 7s. 6d.	£189	10	0
Allowances to paymaster	120	0	0
Surgeon	120	0	0
	429	10	0
	£6,054	13	0¾

"W. RALEIGH"* TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir,

Edinburgh, May 23rd, 1789.

23 May.

It is much to the credit of those in office that an empire has been founded in the south, which time will render much superior to that which their predecessors have lost in the west. It is the duty of every good citizen to give the new colony every assistance his pen or his purse can afford. The following suggestions have flowed from the best motives, and I hope they will be received with candour. In looking back to the tottering foundation of the colonies of Virginia and New England, I find the first settlers were much more unfortunate than the founders of the present settlement in New Holland. Indeed, the latter have been in every respect successful, a few attempts in husbandry excepted. To give the colony immediate consistency, it is humbly recommended that the following mode of culture be adopted.

A new
empire.

Suggestions.

That the land as soon as cleared be prepared for sowing ; that oats or barley be sown in September or October ; that wheat be never attempted except in the very best land ; the second year the land be laid down in a green crop, consisting of field-pease or turnips ; both these will ameliorate the soil, while the former will be found an excellent succedaneum for hay, and the latter

Directions
for cultiva-
tion.

* This letter, as the last paragraph shows, is anonymous. "W. Raleigh" [? Walter Raleigh] is a *nom de plume*. The writer promised to send further communications, but nothing more on the subject has been found in the Records.

1789	afford good pasture for sheep and black cattle. Sheep will never
23 May.	fail where the turnip is cultivated, and it cannot be cultivated
—	with greater success than in New Holland. The third year
Crops.	it is proposed that it should be sown again, with barley or bean, and laid down in clover, rye grass, lucerne, or any other European grass. The land in the vicinity of Port Jackson would in this manner afford sufficient pasture in a short time for any live stock it might be supplied with, while the turnips, the peas, and the other intermediate steps of the proposed mode of culture would afford present security. The grass in an uncleared
Native grasses.	country we cannot expect to give proper nourishment to sheep or cattle. When Caesar landed in Britain he would have found the country execrable for farming had he made the experiment. It may be proper to observe, however, that 'till better grass can be procured, by frequent cuttings with the scythe, that the natural grass may be much improved and thickened where the ground will admit of it. To prepare the best land for wheat, it should be ploughed frequently (for the plough must not be excluded from New South Wales, if provisions for the colony be expected to grow there), manured with the algamarina or sea weed for a whole summer, and sown with wheat in March.
Ploughing.	Dampier mentions several heaths in New Holland; if they can be discovered they'll afford good present feeding for sheep; if they cannot, perhaps a detachment settled at the foot of the hills, about sixty miles inland from Port Jackson, might be beneficially employed in rearing and feeding sheep, while the situation might lead to discoveries of more value than we are aware of. At that distant situation from the shore they would not be molested by the natives, who, living on fish, range chiefly along the coast. The cattle should be guarded from straying by fences of good strong paling, and the sheep on all occasions well herded. The seeds of all the kinds of European grass might be sent with the next sailing fleet, and no article can be of greater use. Flax seed and hemp seed might be also sent, and might in time clothe and employ the new settlers.
An inland settlement.	Perhaps it might not be amiss to engage two or three young men for a few years, and send them, if found well versed in the secret of agriculture, to direct or superintend the rural labours of the colony, to husband the land, and improve their stock. Their stock might be much better increased from Lima and other ports on the western coast of South America than from the Cape of Good Hope. It might be had cheaper from the Spaniards, and if permission be obtained from them to pay in European goods for as much live stock as would supply the new colony the saving would be immense. The distance is not much greater, and it is much better sailing in the Pacific Ocean than in the tempestuous climate of the Cape. Strict orders should be given, however, not to attempt carrying
Flax and hemp.	
Husband- men.	
Cheap live stock.	

any women to Botany Bay from islands in the South Sea ; it would be inevitably attended with the most pernicious consequences. 1789
23 May.

To guard the settlement effectually against the ferocious incursions of the natives, the following remedy is humbly recommended : That a regiment consisting of six hundred men be immediately transported thither ; that two hundred of them be stationed at Botany Bay, two hundred at Cape Banks or any other convenient station to the northward, and a third division of equal force be posted on some favourable spot at the distance of fifteen miles inland, directly westward of Port Jackson. This would leave a wide field for the enterprise and industry of the colonists, consisting of an area of almost twenty miles square, where they might pursue their labours in perfect serenity, without being harrassed by their own fears or by the insidious attempts of their ferocious neighbours. To add to the civilized population of the country, as well as to the happiness and comfort of the troops, every soldier should be allowed and even encouraged to take with him his wife and family. By the best disciplined forces the lines are never so well manned when they have nothing at stake which they hold dear to them. Defence
against
natives.

A clear field.

Soldiers'
families.

Safe in their cares th' auxiliar forces sleep,
Whose wives and infants, from the dangers far,
Discharge their souls of half the care of war.

The troops should not be relieved in less than seven years. In that time a considerable saving might be made in clothing, &c., nearly equal to the expence of transportation. A canvass frock and blackstock would form the best uniform for the climate, and a part of this by proper management they and their wives might manufacture. I need not enlarge on the benefit of stationing a large body of troops in New South Wales. Should any disturbance (which God forbid) happen in the East Indies, they might be transported thither before our enemies in Europe knew anything of the matter ; but reinforcements from Europe are of little avail, their number becomes known to our rivals, and they despatch troops equal or superior in number to them. New Holland is a good blind, then, when we want to add to the military strength of India. In a seven
years' term.

A strong
garrison.

These are the first effusions of a series of economical remarks on the subject which you will receive in time. I have taken this method because I wish to be unknown. I have no motive but the public good. No person, not even yourself, shall ever know whence this proceeds, and I give my honor not a hint of it shall ever transpire. A modest
adviser.

I am, &c.,

W. RALEIGH.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO UNDER SECRETARY OF THE TREASURY.

Sir,

Admiralty, 26th May, 1789.

23 May.

Lieut. Saml. Edwd. Marshall having requested to decline the appointment of superintendant to the Lady Juliana, trans- Superin-
tendent.

1789 port, going with convicts to New South Wales, I am commanded
 26 May. by my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'ty to acquaint you therewith,
 and that Lt. Thos. Edgar is a very proper person to be employed
 in his stead. I am, &c.,

P.S.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

5 June. My Lord, Sydney Cove, Port Jackson, 5th June, 1789.

I am sorry to be under the disagreeable necessity of troubling your Lordship with the enclosed papers.

The officers
and the
criminal
court.

The letters Nos. 1,* 2,† and 3‡ I received from the Judge-Advocate the 26th of April, and Major Ross the next morning brought on three letters, which he desired I would read. Two of those letters were cyps of Nos. 2 and 3; the third letter was from Captain Campbell to Major Ross,§ as commandant of the detachment. It stated that as he had always understood there was no power in Major Ross to compel the officers to sit as members of the criminal court contrary to their own inclination, he desired that his name might not in future appear in the orderly-book as a member of that court.

Campbell
refuses to
sit.

After having pointed out the authority by which the criminal court was established, how much it was the officers' duty to sit as members of that court when called on, and the obvious necessity of it, I informed Major Ross, as I had done the day I first heard of the busyness, that the Judge-Advocate had declared in the most solemn manner that he never had intended any offence to Captain Campbell by his letter; and as I saw no reason for that officer's refusing what was most undoubtedly a part of his duty, I desired that he would think seriously of the consequences. The precept for assembling a criminal court was ready to be issued as soon as the names of the officers were inserted who were next for that duty, and if Captain Campbell should persevere in refusing that duty I desired to have his reasons in writing. Major Ross soon after brought me a letter, of which No. 4 is a copy,|| and as he told me Captain Campbell was fixed in his opinion that the sitting as a member of the criminal court was no part of his duty, and which he therefore declined, I desired that the officer next on the roster for that service might be named in his room; but Major Ross said that he did not see how that could be done, as he believed that I should find the officers in general of opinion that the sitting as members of the criminal court was not a duty to which they were obliged to submit, but a service in which they had volunteered it, and added "that he knew of no articles of war to compel them."

A breach of
duty.

Ross's view

I had been given to understand, soon after the commission for establishing the criminal court had been read, that the officers thought it a very disagreeable duty, and that it was looked on as a hardship by some; but I never had supposed officers thought it a service which they were at liberty to decline at their pleasure,

* Post, p. 240. † Post, p. 241. ‡ Post, p. 241. § Post, p. 242. || Post, p. 242.

and I observed to Major Ross that I could hardly believe it possible that such an opinion was general, but which would be known, as the precept for assembling the court should be issued. At the same time, being desirous to restore tranquillity, if possible, I consented to the demand then made by Major Ross that a court of inquiry might be ordered to give an opinion on the Judge-Advocate's letter before the precept was issued, and after having pointed out the consequences that must follow the officers refusing what was so necessary a part of their duty, and being declared such by an Act of Parliament, required no articles of war or particular instructions to the commandant of the detachment, I assured him that while there were ten men in ye detachment officers should not be wanting to form a criminal court.

1789

5 June.

A disagree-
able duty.Court of
inquiry to
pronounce
on the
Judge-
Advocate's
letter.

A reference to the officers who had composed the court at which the woman in question had been a witness was afterwards proposed, but those officers desired to decline any interference; and the court of inquiry, when assembled, declared, as appears in their report No. 5,* that they did not think themselves to be competent to give an opinion on a private dispute, which appeared to them to involve in itself a point of law.

A point
of law.

It may be necessary to inform your Lordship of the manner of assembling the criminal courts. Those assembled on our first landing were composed of the senior officers of the detachment and of the Navy, the first court being given out in general orders, after which a roster was kept for that service by the adjutant of the detachment; and when it was necessary to assemble a court the Judge-Advocate sent to the adjutant for the names of the officers next for that duty, whose names being inserted, and the precept signed and sealed by me, is then shewn to the different officers who are to compose the court, by the provost-martial, and which is always done one or two days before the court is to meet, the battalion orders of the day pointing out the officers of the detachment who are for that duty.†

Constitution
of criminal
courts.

Since landing fifteen criminal courts have been assembled, and on any particular occasion, as when the six marines were tried for robbing the stores, the senior officers in the detachment composed the court.

Senior
officers.

The court of inquiry which was ordered to meet on the Judge-Advocate's letter, having reported that they did not think themselves competent to judge on the matter laid before them, that court was dissolved, and Major Ross came to inform me that Captain Campbell would protest against the report, which he said was a partial report, in stating that the matter before them was of a private

Finding of
court of
inquiry.

* Post, p. 243.

† In a despatch to the Admiralty of the same date, Phillip says:—"The senior officers of the Navy have always been called on when in the harbour." As the despatch, with this exception, is identical with the one sent to Lord Sydney, it is not published with the Records.

1789

5 June

Officers
justify
themselves.

nature, and desired that the request made by the members of that court for copies of the letters laid before them might not be granted.

Captain Campbell afterwards declined making any protest against the proceedings of the court of inquiry, and copies of the letters which they thought necessary, in order to justify their proceedings to the Admiralty, were given them.

The adjutant of the detachment had my orders to give the Judge-Advocate, as usual, the names of the officers who were next for the duty of the criminal court, as soon as the court of inquiry had made their report, but he then came to inform me that Major Ross did not choose to let him give the names of the officers at the Judge-Advocate's request, and desired that it might appear in general orders, or that a verbal message might be sent him from me. The message was sent, and in the names given to the Judge-Advocate, Capt. Campbell's appear'd, and he sat the next day as a member of the criminal court. I had sent for several of the officers before the court met, in order to point out to them the consequences which would follow their refusal of so essential a part of their duty, and the officers I saw on that occasion assured me that they had never doubted its being a part of their duty, after they heard the Act of Parliament and the commission read, which established that court, but Major Ross, afterwards, *on the 6th of May*, telling me that he was still of opinion that many of the officers did not think the sitting as members of the Criminal Court any part of their duty, I desired that Major Ross would assemble the officers, that their separate opinions might be taken on that head. By the report No. 6,* which is inclosed, it appears that all the officers thought it a part of their duty, and Capt.-Lieut. Merridith and Lieut. Timmins, then absent from head-quarters, have since declared the same.

Conse-
quences of
refusal to
sit.Officers
recognise
their duty

As no legal inquiry into the conduct of any officers can be made here, and Capt. Campbell was the only officer that could be called on to sit as a member of the criminal court who did not think it a part of his duty, I judged it best, for the quiet of the settlement, to let him sit as a volunteer when his name was returned, and here I hoped that affair would have rested for the present, for tho' officers had, when I sent for them to point out to them the necessity of obeying the precept, mentioned their commandant's having heard their opinions, I did not choose to ask any questions as to what might have passed between them and their commandant; but being some time after informed that the officers had been assembled, and the Governor's conduct in calling on Captain Campbell to sit as a member of the criminal court had been stated to them by Major Ross as oppressive, and that endeavours had been used to induce them to join in Captain Campbell's opinion that the criminal court was not a part of their duty, I then thought it necessary to inquire what grounds

A volunteer
member of
the court.Phillip
accused of
oppression.

there were for such a report, and the first officer I spoke to on that subject, doubting of the propriety of saying what pass'd at a meeting to which the officers had been call'd by their commandant, I directed the Judge-Advocate to send for some of the senior officers then in quarters, and to ask them the necessary questions; and the adjutant, who had assembled the officers and attended the meeting, was afterwards sent for. By the answers given by those five officers it appears that all the officers at headquarters were call'd together on the 27th of April, after Major Ross had brought me Capt. Campbell's refusal to attend the duty of the cl. court, and that the tenor of Major Ross's discourse appear'd calculated to induce them to join Capt. Campbell in declining the duty of the criminal courts, saying that he had told the Governor that both he and the officers at large considered that service as what they had volunteer'd, not as a duty; that the Governor's conduct in calling on Capt. Campbell or on officers for that service was oppressive, and that he thought it hard officers should be obliged to sit as members of the criminal court, and oppressive to the highest degree.

1789

5 June.

The officers questioned.

Ross's influence and opinion

The consequences which must have followed had the officers in general been of that opinion will be obvious to your Lordship; but as no legal inquiry could be made respecting the conduct of the officer to whom, as the Lieutenant-Governor and commandant of the detachment, I was naturally to look for support, and from whom the situation of this colony at the time call'd for an address of a very different nature, I did not think it proper to direct any more officers to be sent for on that subject, unless Major Ross should desire it, when the officers informed him they had been examined respecting that meeting, and which they did as soon as they left the Judge-Advocate; and being asked what questions had been put to them, they desired to refer him to the Governor for the questions and their answers; but Major Ross has never mentioned that business to me, and I have therefore thought it best to let it rest in its present state.

The dispute unsettled

The answers given by the officers, and to which they sign'd their names, are inclosed, No. 7*; and I have now, my Lord, only to repeat my regret at being obliged to lay a business of this kind before your Lordship, but which the service and the situation of this colony renders unavoidable; and as the discontents in the detachment, which have been represented in my former letters, still continue, and into which I have not authority to make a legal inquiry, I can only inform your Lordship that those discontents, which have existed from the time this detachment landed, still continue.† I have, &c.,

Officers discontented.

A. PHILLIP.

* Post, p. 245.

† Lord Grenville, who had succeeded Lord Sydney at the Home Office when this despatch reached England, referred to the law officers of the Crown the question as to whether the marine officers could lawfully refuse to sit as members of the criminal court. The opinion given was that the officers were bound to act if called upon. Post, pp. 462-463

1789

[Enclosure No. 1.]

JUDGE-ADVOCATE COLLINS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

25 April.

Sir,

Sydney Cove, 25th April, 1789.

Charge of
robbery.

Having this day received a message from Captain Campbell respecting Mary Turner, one of the evidences on the late trial of the soldiers for robbing the store-house, I beg leave to lay before your Excellency the following particulars of that affair.

An untruth-
ful witness.

It appearing to the members of the court, as well as to myself, on the examination of the said Mary Turner, that she had not sworn the truth in giving her testimony, on her being told to withdraw, the provost-martial was ordered to detain and keep her apart from the other witnesses. The conviction and condemnation of the six prisoners very shortly followed, and the court was dissolved.

Not
sufficient
ground for
indictment.

On maturely weighing and considering the whole of Mary Turner's deposition, and comparing it with those of the other witnesses, since the trial, I was of opinion there was not sufficient proof to affect [convict?] her on an indictment for perjury; and as I have always wished to avoid lightly grounding a prosecution against the convicts, from the bad effect it might have, in pointing out to them how far they might offend, if they could but withhold sufficient proof, I had dropped for the present any thoughts of calling on Mary Turner for trial. Neither have I at any time, since then, heard it was the opinion or wish of any member of that court to bring her to trial, until this morning, when I was informed by the provost-martial that Captain Campbell, one of the members of the late court, had inquired of him if she was in his custody, and expressed some surprize and anger on being told she was not. As to this latter circumstance, I must observe to your Excellency, that, having no place of confinement or custody for female offenders, they have been always suffered to go at large until wanted for trial.

Captain
Campbell's
anger.Collins and
Campbell.

In consequence of the above message, I wrote to Captain Campbell a letter, wherein I informed him that "I did not think myself there was proof sufficient to bring her to trial, either for perjury or as an accessory; but, nevertheless, if he was of a different opinion, and would let me know what charge should be exhibited, it should be done"—for as I did not myself know of any proof sufficient to establish a charge against her, I was not certain but Captain Campbell might be informed of some that I was not acquainted with. I beg leave to trouble your Excellency with a copy of my letter, and of Captain Campbell's reply, which I received this afternoon; and have now only to add, that though I think the conviction of her being guilty of perjury may be clear in the breast and opinion of every individual of the last court, yet still there is not sufficient proof of it to convict her in the eye

of the law ; nevertheless, as Captain Campbell considers her as a prisoner by order of the late court, and thinks she ought to be delivered by a due course of law, I propose to bring her before the court that is to assemble in the next week, and try her on a charge of wilful and corrupt perjury at the late trial.

1789

25 April.

The witness
to be tried.

I have, &c.,

DAVID COLLINS.

[Enclosure No. 2.]

JUDGE-ADVOCATE COLLINS TO CAPTAIN CAMPBELL.

Sir,

Sydney Cove, 25th April, 1789.

I understand by the provost-martial, who has just been with me, that you imagined Mary Turner was in custody ; I have to acquaint you that Mary Turner is forthcoming at any time she may be wanted, but that I myself have at present no thoughts of calling on her, as I do not think, on mature consideration, there would be sufficient proof to affect [convict?] her either as an accessory in the late business or for perjury at the trial. However, if you are of a different opinion, and wish to have her tried, she may be brought before the criminal court that is to assemble on Tuesday or Wednesday next ; in such case I should wish to have timely notice of the charge to be exhibited against her, and what witnesses are to be called to support it, that the necessary steps may be taken.

Mary
Turner.Notice of
charge.

I have, &c.,

DAVID COLLINS.

[Enclosure No. 3.]

CAPTAIN CAMPBELL TO JUDGE-ADVOCATE COLLINS.

Sir,

Sydney Cove, 25th April, 1789.

In answer to your letter of this day I have to say that I perfectly well remember, at the last criminal court held in this island, when Mary Turner was ordered to withdraw from the court she was by yourself ordered into the custody of the provost. I do not by this mean to say that it was entirely an act of your own, for myself among others desired it might be so, as we then appeared to be unanimously of opinion that she was a very proper object to make an example of.

Arrest
ordered.

When the provost informed you this morning of my having desired him to speak to you about the woman he should have likewise informed you that I had immediately after the above was dissolved, and on my seeing the woman at liberty, desired him to make my compliments to you, and to know from you whether he had not misunderstood the orders you gave him in court—to take her into his custody, as I had myself been one of the members who desired it—nor could I till this morning possibly account for not having been acquainted with your opinion.

Why was
the order
disobeyed?

Having this morning by accident heard that a criminal court would be assembled the beginning of next week, I judged it a

1789

25 April.

discharge of a part of my duty to the publick to know what was to be done with Mary Turner, sensible that no power on this island could liberate her till she had undergone a trial.

Neglect.

I therefore sent for the provost, who, to my great surprise, had the assurance to tell me that he never delivered my message to you, upon which I ordered him to go and do it without loss of time.

The Judge-
Advocate
attacked.

Now, sir, you have the cause of your being troubled with any message from me this morning. How far such a message might authorize you to call upon me as a prosecutor I know not, nor shall I at present comment upon it. One point you have certainly gained by it, that you have effectually precluded Captain Campbell from sitting as a member of any criminal court that it may be necessary to assemble here, and of which you are a part.

Advice.

As this business may undergo future investigation I beg leave to recommend it to you to keep copies of such letters as you may choose to write upon the occasion, as I assure you I shall of mine. I at the same time think it proper to inform you that this is the only letter you will receive upon this subject from

Sir, &c.,

JAMES CAMPBELL.

[Enclosure No. 4.]

27 April.

CAPTAIN CAMPBELL TO MAJOR ROSS.

Sir,

Sydney Cove, 27th April, 1789.

Criminal
court.

As I have always understood that you are not in possession of any power to compel the officers of the detachment under your command to sit as members of the criminal court established in this colony contrary to their own inclinations, I have to request that you will please to direct the adjutant so as that my name may not for the future appear in your orderly book as a member of that court, as I shall be extremely concerned to be reduced to the very disagreeable necessity of objecting to any order of yours, or any other my superior in command.

Refusal
to sit

Reasons.

I am sensible it may be said of me that I have hitherto volunteered or acquiesced in being in my turn a member of that court, from my being likewise sensible that in the present situation of this colony such power could not, with any degree of propriety, be vested in any other hands but that of the Navy and Army. I have farther to say that I would still continue the same line of conduct did I think it consistent with either my character as a gentleman or my feelings as a man.

An insulting
letter.

You were yourself an ear-witness of the message sent by me by the provost to the Judge-Advocate on the 25th instant, to which message I very soon after received the inclosed (in my opinion) most insulting letter.* I had ever been taught to under-

* Ante, p. 241.

stand that the person officiating in his character at such courts was the person to carry on the prosecution. How far, or even how it was possible for him to construe my message into a belief that I was become the prosecutor, I know not, nor can I possibly imagine why he should call upon me *individually* for that purpose, as in his letter he certainly does, unless that he had some reason to suppose me of a more sanguinary and persecuting spirit than any other member of the court who wished the woman to be taken into custody for her having (evidently to all then present) perjured herself. The consequence of not using every possible means to prevent so dangerous a crime from getting to a head among the present inhabitants of this colony is too obvious to require any farther remarks upon it, and I am convinced that the wish of exerting every means in their power to prevent it was the motive of that court for desiring the woman to be taken into custody.

1789

27 April.

Not a prosecutor.

A dangerous crime.

With the Judge-Advocate's letter I take the liberty of inclosing for your perusal the copy of my answer to him, with the humble request that you will please to communicate the whole to the Governor, to the end that he may be convinced that I never had, nor ever will have, a wish or desire of impeding the publick service, and I have no doubt but that both him and you will do me the justice to say that I have used every means ever put in my power to promote it.

Appeal to Phillip.

As I have no copy of any of the papers now sent to you, I request that you will please not to part with any of them unknown to me or without my consent.

I have, &c.,

JAMES CAMPBELL.

[Enclosure No. 5.]

MARINE OFFICERS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Port Jackson, 28th April, 1789.

April.

Agreeable to the general and battalion orders of this morning, we the following officers, 1st Lieut. John Poulden, 1st Lieut. John Johnstone, and 1st Lieut. James Maitld. Shairp, met in Captain Campbell's hut at eleven o'clock, and after reading the letters produced in court, came to the following resolutions, viz.:—The officers commanding [constituting] the court, upon having read and considered the letters which passed in the business now before them, are of opinion that as the business involves in itself a point of law and a private disagreement, they feel themselves incompetent to decide upon it—and they further beg of your Excellency that copies of all the letters which have passed may be given to them (in case of their being at any time hereafter called upon) for the purpose of being inclosed and sent to the Lords of the

The court of inquiry.

No decision.

1789 Admiralty, which they think necessary in order to convince their Lordships of their incompetency to decide on an affair of such a nature.

We have, &c.,

JOHN POULDEN.

JOHN JOHNSTONE.

J. M. SHAIRP.

[Enclosure No. 6.]

MAJOR ROSS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

6 May.

Sir,

Marine Quarters, May 6th, 1789.

In compliance with your Excellency's command of this day's date, signified to me by the adjutant, I convened the officers of the detachment, and put the questions directed by your Excellency, and received their answers, as follows, viz. :—
 "The Governor requests that Major Ross will assemble the officers of the detachment now at head-quarters, and report to him their separate opinions, whether or not they think it their duty to sit as members of the criminal court established in this country." This the Governor desires, as Major Ross, their commandant, is of opinion they do not think it a part of their duty. Captain Campbell having already given his opinion, the Governor does not wish to press him further on that head."

Officers as
members of
criminal
court.

Answers
to Ross's
questions.

Major Ross's question to the officers of the detachment at head-quarters :—"Whether they look upon sitting at the criminal court as a military duty, or an extra duty in compliance with an Act of Parliament, and whether they had any knowledge of it before their arrival in this country?"

Tench.

Answer by Captain-Lieut. Tench :—"I had no knowledge of the Act of Parliament previous to my arrival in this country; from the moment I read it I look'd on it as Captain Tench's duty to sit on criminal courts whenever ordered, and still look on it as such.

G. Johnston.

Answer by Captain-Lieut. Johnston :—"Since I saw the Act of Parliament I have always thought it my duty to sit on criminal courts when ordered.

Creswell.

Answer by Lieutenant Creswell :—"I had never seen the Act of Parliament in England, but from the time I saw it I conceived it to be a part of my duty to sit on criminal courts when ordered, and not an extra duty, while I remain in this country.

Furzer.

Answer by Lieutenant and Quarter-master Furzer :—"I knew nothing of the Act of Parliament before I came to this country, but since I had a knowledge of it I always conceived it to be a part of my duty to sit on criminal courts when ordered.

Poulden.

Answer by Lieutenant Poulden :—"Since I saw the Act of Parliament I have always thought it my duty to sit on criminal courts when ordered.

J. Johnstone

Answer by Lieut. J. Johnstone :—"I saw the Act of Parliament before I left England, and always conceived it to be a part of my duty to sit on criminal courts when ordered.

Answer by Lieut. J. M. Shairp :—I saw the Act of Parliament before I left England, and always conceived it to be a part of my duty to sit on criminal courts when ordered, during the time of my remaining in this country. 1789
6 May.
Shairp.

Answer by Lieut. Davey :—I had not any knowledge of the Act of Parliament until I came into this country, but since that time I have ever conceived it to be a part of my duty to sit on criminal courts when ordered. Davey.

Answer by Lieut. Clarke :—I had not any knowledge of the Act of Parliament until I came into this country, but from the moment I read it I considered it as a part of my duty to sit on criminal courts when ordered, while I remain in this country. Clarke.

Answer by Lieut. Dawes :—I knew nothing of the Act of Parliament till I heard it read in this country, and from that time I considered it my duty to sit on criminal courts when ordered. Dawes.

Answer by Lieut. and Adjutant Long :—I knew nothing of the Act of Parliament when I left England, but since I heard it read in this country have considered it as a part of my duty to sit on criminal courts when ordered. Long.

Answer by Lieutenant Faddy :—I knew nothing of the Act of Parliament till I heard it read in this country ; since that time I have always thought it my duty to sit on criminal courts when ordered. Faddy.

R.R., Major.

[Enclosure No. 7.]

CRIMINAL COURT.—QUESTIONS TO OFFICERS.

Sydney Cove, 28th May, 1789. 28 May.

It having been reported that the major-commandant of the detachment did, in the presence of many of the officers, declare that the Governor's calling on Captain James Campbell to sit as a member of the criminal court, established by Act of Parliament for the trial of criminal causes in this country, was oppressive, and that the said major-commandant did publicly address the officers then present in order to induce them to concur with Captain Campbell in refusing to acknowledge the duty of the criminal court to be any part of the officers' duty, and to persuade them to refuse sitting as members of the said criminal court, I am, in consequence of the said report, desired by the Governor to call upon such officers of the detachment who were present at that meeting, and to put the following questions to them, in order that it may be known how far the said report is founded in truth.

Question 1 :—Was there such a meeting, and what reason was assigned by the major-commandant of the detachment for assembling the officers? An oppressive duty—
Major Ross's
action.

Questions
to officers.

Question 2 :—Did the major-commandant at that meeting say that the Governor's conduct in calling on Capt. Campbell to sit in his turn as a member of the criminal court was oppressive?

1789

23 May.

Question 3 :—Did he ask the officers to join Capt. Campbell in refusing to sit as a member of that court, or what was said on that subject?

Answers : --
Tench.

Answer to question 1, by Captain-Lt. Tench :—The meeting was held on Monday, the 27th of April, by order of the major-commandant. The reason he assigned for such meeting was to repeat a conversation he had had with the Governor, to lay before them a letter he had received on service from Capt. Campbell in consequence of a correspondence he had had with the Judge-Advocate, and to read the letters which had passed between them, all of which were read to the officers by the adjutant.

Answer to question 2 :—To the best of my recollection the major-commandant said he had told the Governor that his conduct respecting Capt. Campbell was oppressive, and that officers were not to be driven in cases where they did not feel themselves at ease to act, they were not to be compelled. I recollect that the major made use twice of the word "oppressive" in speaking of the Governor's conduct.

Answer to question 3 :—He did not ask the officers to join Capt. Campbell in refusing to sit as members of the criminal court, but it is my opinion that the whole tenor of Major Ross's conversation pointed that way. My reason for thinking so is that Major Ross more than once mentioned to the officers assembled that he had told the Governor that both he and the officers at large considered the sitting as members of the criminal courts as what they volunteered, not as a duty.

WATKIN TENCH,

Captain-Lt. of Marines.

Creswell.

Answer to question 1, by Lieut. Creswell :—There was such a meeting, and the reason assigned was to read the letters that had passed between the Judge-Advocate and Capt. Campbell, and to mention a conversation he had had with the Governor, and to say that the adjutant had a question to put to the officers who composed the last criminal court.

Answer to question 2 :—I cannot say that the major-commandant said that the Governor's conduct was oppressive in calling on Capt. Campbell, but I understood him that he had told the Governor so, and that officers were not to be driven, or words to that effect.

Answer to question 3 :—He did not ask such a question ; but as far as opinion goes, the tenor of his conversation seemed to lead towards getting officers to be of Captain Campbell's opinion. But this is merely opinion.

JOHN CRESWELL.

Johnston.

Answer to question 1, by Capt.-Lt. Johnston :—There was such a meeting. The reason assigned was to lay before them the correspondence between the Judge-Advocate and Captain Campbell.

Answer to question 2 :—The officers in speaking about the duty of the criminal court, one of them said it was, though an unpleasant duty, yet certainly a part of their duty ; Major Ross replied it was an oppressive duty.

1789

28 May.

Answer to question 3 :—I do not recollect that the major asked the officers to join in refusing with Captain Campbell to sit as members of the criminal court, but recollect his saying that officers were not to be driven, and believe he wished them to concur with Capt. Campbell's refusal.

GEORGE JOHNSTON.

Answer to question 1, by Lieut. Poulton :—There was such a Poulton. meeting, and the reason assigned was to lay before it the letters from the Judge-Advocate and Captain Campbell.

Answer to question 2 :—I do not recollect that the word "oppressive" was applied particularly to Capt. Campbell being ordered to sit at that court, but that it was meant, generally speaking, of that duty.

Answer to question 3 :—I do not recollect that the major asked the officers to concur with Captain Campbell in refusing to sit at that court.

JOHN POULTON.

Question to Lt. Long, adjutant of the detachment :—Did you Long. assemble the officers of the detachment by direction of the major-commandant on Monday, the 27th of April?

Answer :—I did.

Question :—Was anything said at that meeting by the major-commandant that, in your opinion, tended to induce the officers present to decline sitting in future as members of the criminal court?

Answer :—Major Ross, when speaking of the duty, and on being reminded that there was an Act of Parliament for it, said that he not only thought it hard that officers should be obliged to sit as members of the criminal court, but oppressive in the highest degree.

JOHN LONG,

Lieut. and Adjut. Marines.

Taken and subscribed before me,—DAVID COLLINS.

SIR JOSEPH BANKS TO THE RT. HON. W. W. GRENVILLE.*

Dear Sir,

Soho Square, June 7, 1789.

7 June.

In consequence of conversations held with yourself and other gentlemen in various departments of Government, in which it seemed fully agreed that it would be proper to send to the colony in New South Wales such trees and plants as are usefull in food or physick, and cannot conveniently be propagated by seed in potts of

Trees and
plants for
the colony.

* William Wyndham Grenville (afterwards Lord Grenville). He succeeded Lord Sydney at the Home Office, 5th June, 1789. He was raised to the Peerage, 25th November, 1790. The letter from Sir Joseph Banks is not official, but it was laid before the King and the Lords of the Admiralty, and was acted upon.

1789

28 May.

earth, I visited the Guardian, now under orders for New South Wales, on Friday last, in order to consider of the most commodious method of carrying that project into execution.

A crowded ship.

I found that her cabin had been divided into births for the various officers, and that the part left for the commander was not large enough, even if he were to submit to great inconvenience, to answer the purpose effectually, and that the rest of the ship was equally crowded by the variety of stores, &c., destined for her freight.

A plant-coach."

Finding myself in consequence of this reduced to the necessity of proposing the building of an apartment for the sole purpose of carrying the plants and the person allotted to take care of them, I proceeded to the quarter-deck abaft, and with the assistance of the builder of the yard and the master of the ship I caused the form of a small coach to be chalked out upon the deck in such a manner as they both agreed would not be at all in the way of working the ship.

It is $14\frac{1}{2}$ feet long, $12\frac{1}{2}$ broad forward, and $11\frac{1}{2}$ aft, and is intended to be only 5 feet high, in which case it is concluded both by the builder and the master that it will not in any degree impede the sailing of the ship.

The plant-coach.

The master builder informs me that in seven or eight days such a coach may be completed. I explained to him the mode in which I proposed to have the pots and the superintendant who is to have the charge of them stowed in it, the practicability of which met with his full assent.

If it is intended that such an erection should be made I will most willingly attend at Woolwich and finish the planning of it.

Alterations may be made.

Not having heard anything from the lieutenant-commander on the subject, I wrote to him a full account of the plan, and left the letter for him at Woolwich. I conclude he has no objection, but if he has I shall willingly alter it as far as I possibly can, consistent with the main object, till it meets with his approbation.

Yours, &c.,

JOS. BANKS.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO THE LORDS OF THE ADMIRALTY.

June.

My Lords,

Whitehall, 8th June, 1789.

Trees and plants for Port Jackson.

Having laid before the King a letter from Sir Jos^h Banks, proposing that a small coach may be erected on the quarter-deck of the Guardian, for the purpose of conveying to Port Jackson, in pots of earth, such trees and plants as will be useful in food or physic, and cannot conveniently be propagated by seed, and for bringing from thence any useful productions, I have the honor of transmitting to your Lordships a copy of the said letter, and I am commanded to signify to your Lordships his Majesty's pleasure that in case any material objection should not be likely

to arise from the placing of such an apartment as Sir Joseph has suggested, that you do give orders that it may be immediately erected, and that the commanding officer may be instructed to deposit therein any such trees or plants as may be sent on board, either here or in New South Wales, for the purposes before mentioned.

1789

8 June.

Amongst the superintendents of convicts who are to be sent out in the Guardian there will be one or two gardeners, to whom the charge of the trees and plants should be committed; and as these people are not to return in the ship, it will be very desirable that the commander should be authorized to appoint one of the crew to assist them in that business, who will thereby be the better qualified for attending to the care of the trees and plants which it is expected will be sent home from New South Wales in that ship.

Gardeners
to take
charge.

I am, &c.,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

SIR GEORGE YONGE TO MAJOR GROSE.

Sir,

W.O., 8th June, 1789.

I have the honor to acquaint you the King has been pleased to order that a corps shall be forthwith raised under your command for H.M.'s service abroad, with the particular view of being stationed in the settlement of New South Wales. The corps is to consist of four companies, and each company of 1 captain, 1 lieutenant, 1 ensign, 3 serjeants, 3 corporals, 2 drummers, with 67 private men. It is to be under your command as major, with the command of a company, and to have 1 adjutant, 1 qr.-mr., 1 chaplain, 1 surgeon, and 1 surgeon's mate. The pay of the officers is to commence from the dates of their commissions, which will take date from the Beating Order, but are not to be issued until the corps shall have been reviewed and established, and the pay of the non-commissioned officers and private men from the dates of their respective attestations. It is to be clearly understood that none of the officers who shall obtain appointments in your corps are to expect leave to dispose of their present commissions, but they will be considered as purchasers in the new corps. In case the corps shall be reduced after it has been once established the officers will be entitled to half-pay. Yourself and the three captains now to be appointed by H. M. will each be required to raise a complete company (viz., 3 serjeants, 3 corporals, 2 drummers, and 67 private men), in aid of the expenses of which you will be allowed to name the lieutenant and ensign of your respective companies, and to receive from the public three guineas for every recruit approved at the head-quarters of the corps by a general or field officer appointed for that purpose. The lieutenants are to be selected from the rank of ensigns; the ensigns not to be under sixteen years of

N.S.W.
Corps.

Grose to
command.

Commis-
sions.

Half-pay.

Recruiting-
money.

1789
8 June.
Stature
and age.

Officers and
chaplain

Immediate
action.

age; no recruit to be enlisted under five feet four inches and a half in height, nor under sixteen nor above thirty years of age. The names of the captains shall be communicated to you with as little delay as possible. In the meantime, I am to acquaint you that H.M. is pleased to leave to you the nomination of the adjutant and quar.-mar., as also of the chaplain, who must positively engage to embark with the corps, and to remain with it while abroad, and of whose character I shall expect to be furnished with proper certificates before I propose his appointment to his Majesty. Mr. Adair, Surgeon-general to the Army, will be directed to look out for proper persons for the appointment of surgeon and surgeon's mate. I am to add that it being required that the corps shall be instantly raised and approved, after being reviewed by the 1st of October next, every exertion on your part and of that of the officers of your corps will be necessary that H. M.'s expectations on this head may not be disappointed.

I am, &c.,
GEO. YONGE.

PROPOSALS TO GOVERNMENT BY MAJOR GROSE.

Grose's offer. SHOULD I be promoted to the rank of lt.-colonel, I will, without expence to Government, raise both the companies, reserving to myself the nomination of the captain and subaltern officers. Should it be thought expedient to add only a major to the corps without permitting me to succeed to any additional rank, I will raise the companies on conditions of receiving the levy money, nominating the captain and subaltern officers, and receiving from the captain appointed to a majority five hundred pounds.

I shall have no objection to raise the recruits on Government's account, charging exactly whatever it costs to procure them, and I will exert my utmost to recruit them at as little expence as possible, and with as much expedition as is in my power.

FRANS. GROSE.

Annual
charge.

Charge of an independent company of foot for three hundred and sixty-five days:—

		£	s.	d.
1 captain	... ..	180	9	7
2 lieutenants (each, £79 19s. 4d.)	... ..	159	18	8
1 ensign	... ..	62	16	7 $\frac{1}{4}$
4 serjeants (each, £18 5s.)	... ..	73	0	0
4 corporals (each, £12 3s. 4d.)	... ..	48	13	4
2 drummers (each, £12 3s. 4d.)	... ..	24	6	8
86 private men (each, £9 2s. 6d.)	... ..	784	15	0
100	Pay	1,333	19	10 $\frac{1}{4}$
	Clothing	275	13	10 $\frac{1}{4}$
	Agency	23	19	7
	Allowance to the captain	56	10	0
	Total	£1,690	3	4

SIR GEORGE YONGE TO THE PAYMASTER-GENERAL.

1789

Sir,

W.O., June 10th, 1789.

10 June.

The King having thought fit to order a corps of foot to be forthwith raised for service in New South Wales, to consist of four companies, each of one captain, one lieutenant, one ensign, three sergeants, three corporals, two drummers, and sixty seven private men, with the usual staff officers, and to be commanded by Major Francis Grose, having a company, I have the honor to acquaint you therewith, and to enclose a state of the subsistence of the said corps, and am to signify to you his Majesty's pleasure that the same shall commence and take place on the establishment from the 5th instant inclusive. I have, &c.,

N. S. W.
corps.Corps
established.

GEO. YONGE.

[Enclosure.]

State of subsistence [per day] of a corps of foot for service in New South Wales :—

					£	s.	d.
1 major commandant and captain	...	...	...	...	0	11	6
3 captains more, each 7s. 6d.	...	...	...	...	1	2	6
4 lieutenants „ 3s. 6d.	...	...	...	...	0	14	0
4 ensigns „ 3s.	...	...	...	...	0	12	0
1 chaplain ...	...	...	...	...	0	5	0
1 adjutant ...	...	...	...	...	0	3	0
1 quartermaster ...	...	...	...	...	0	3	6
1 surgeon ...	...	...	...	...	0	3	0
1 surgeon's mate ...	...	...	...	...	0	3	0
12 sergeants, each 1s.	...	...	...	...	0	12	0
12 corporals „ 8d.	...	...	...	...	0	8	0
8 drummers „ 8d.	...	...	...	...	0	5	4
268 privates „ 6d.	...	...	...	...	6	14	0
agent ...	...	...	...	...	0	2	0
					11 18 10		

[A fresh list, dated July 4th, orders 14 instead of 12 sergeants—making the total charge £12 0s. 10d.]

SIR GEORGE YONGE TO MAJOR GROSE.

Sir,

W.O., 20 June, 1789.

20 June

In answer to your letter of the 19th instant, I am to acquaint you that during the late war no charge was allowed to be made for the subsistence of recruits rejected at the final inspection of any new corps by a general officer, altho' such recruits might have been previously examined and approved at head-quarters; nor has it been usual for an intermediate inspection to be made under the orders of this officer, where the levy has been undertaken at the risque of the officers who were to have commissions therein.

No allow
ance for
rejected
recruits.

I have, &c.,

GEO. YONGE.

1789

10 June.

First
despatch
from
England.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.*
Sir, Whitehall, 20th June, 1789.

The ship Lady Juliana having been taken up for the purpose of conveying to Port Jackson about 240 female convicts, sentenced to be transported, I avail myself of that opportunity of acknowledging the receipt of your dispatches numbered from 1 to 7 inclusive, with numbers 9, 10, and 11, and of acquainting you at the same time that his Majesty is graciously pleased to approve of your conduct in the execution of the arduous and important service which has been committed to your care.

The Lady
Juliana.

Phillip's
action
commended.

Improve-
ment of
morals.

The service of the unfortunate women on board the Lady Juliana will, upon their landing at Port Jackson, be transferred to you, and you will cause them to be employed in such manner as may be most conducive to the advantage of the settlement. The attention paid by you to the proceedings of those who accompanied you thither, with the view to preventing an indiscriminate intercourse with the convicts of a different sex, is extremely commendable, and leads his Majesty to entertain a well-grounded hope that the same watchful care will be taken on your part on the present occasion, and that you will continue the exertions you have hitherto so successfully made for the promotion of matrimonial connexion between the unmarried people—a measure which must tend to the improvement of their morals, and is indispensibly necessary for securing the general peace and happiness of the settlement.

The
Guardian.

You will see by the enclosed invoice and bill of lading the several tools and implements, articles of clothing, provisions, &c., which have been put on board the Lady Juliana. That ship will be followed in about a fortnight by his Majesty's ship the Guardian. By the last-mentioned ship you will receive a farther supply, equal to about three times the quantity embarked on board the former, which, excepting in the article of provisions, you will find nearly to correspond with the estimates accompanying your letters upon that subject, and as these stores and provisions have been procured at a very considerable expence, it is to be hoped that you will appropriate them to the best possible advantage.

One
thousand
more con-
victs to be
sent.

In the course of the autumn I expect that about 1,000 more convicts of both sexes will be embarked from the several gaols, and despatched to Port Jackson, together with a suitable proportion of clothing and provisions for their use. This measure will render it necessary that you should make arrangements for their accommodation, as well as for their employment, on their arrival.

Port Jackson
approved of.

The soil of Port Jackson, which you have very properly chosen, from the very extensive harbour it possesses, is certainly a far preferable situation to Botany Bay, but, according to the information hitherto obtained from you, it does not appear to be as fertile as could have been wished, and exclusively of that con-

* The first despatch sent from England to Port Jackson.

sideration, the number of natives inhabiting its vicinity must render its cultivation both difficult and dangerous, particularly whilst they continue to avoid any friendly intercourse with the settlement.

1789

20 June.

From these circumstances, Norfolk Island, where the settlers possess the advantage of a luxurious [luxuriant] soil, and carry on their operations unmolested by any other inhabitants, is, I conceive, the most favorable position, and were it not from the great labor and expence incurred already at Port Jackson, I should have been inclined to have recommended that island's being made the principal settlement,* but although, from the circumstance which I have mentioned, this appears now to be impracticable, I think you will do right to increase its present establishment, as far as you conveniently can; and if any similar situation equally advantageous should be discovered, you will detach thither a considerable part of the convicts who will be sent out in the next ships. The Guardian will have on board about twenty-five convicts who are either artificers or persons accustomed to agriculture, and also eight or ten superintendents, who have been engaged in consequence of your recommendation of the measure; to each of the latter an annual salary of £40 will be given in addition to the ration of provisions, and I have no doubt they will be found to be extremely useful in the new settlements.

Norfolk
Island a
better place.

Artificers.

The obstacles which have occurred with respect to bringing to trial the officers of the corps of marines, by general court-martial, under the authority with which you have been furnished, would, had the detachment continued in the settlement, most likely have been removed by an interference of Parliament, but as that detachment is so shortly to be relieved, it is to be hoped that no further inconvenience will be experienced during their continuance abroad.

Difficulties
with the
marines.

It is but reasonable that the persons you have employed for the purpose of taking charge of the issues of provisions and stores should receive a suitable compensation for their services, I shall therefore have no objection to the recommending the payment of any moderate charge you may bring forward for that purpose in your contingent accounts.†

UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Dear Sir,

Whitehall, 20th June, 1789.

I have been favoured with your letters of the 5th, 9th, and 10th of July, 28th of Sept'r, and 16th Nov'r last, and have laid them, with their several inclosures, before the Secretary of State.

You will find by letters to you from Mr. Secretary Grenville, which you will receive by the present conveyance, that consider-

* Phillip discusses this question in his despatch of 17th June, 1790. Post, p. 348.

† This despatch is not signed, but it is from the Right Hon. W. W. Grenville.

1789

20 June.

Supplies for
Port
Jackson.

Settlers.

Land
grants, &c.

able quantities of clothing, provisions, medicines, tools, implements, &c., have been put on board the *Lady Juliana* and *Guardian*, and care will be taken to forward from time to time every proper necessary supply until the settlement shall be in a condition to provide for the support of its establishment.

The families of — and — will have a passage provided for them in the convoy expected to depart from hence early in the month of October next, if they are desirous of imbarcking for that country.*

The *Guardian* will sail in about a fortnight,† by which ship you will receive instructions relative to the granting of lands, and such other information as may be judged necessary for your guidance, together with a remittance for the paying the artificers of the marine detachment for the services they have performed.

I am, &c.,

EVAN NEPEAN.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Whitehall, 20th June, 1789.

The marines
to be
relieved.New South
Wales Corps.Marines may
return or
settle.Re-enlist-
ment.

The discontents which have prevailed in the marine detachment, and the desire expressed by most of the officers and men to return home as soon as they shall have performed the tour of duty they had undertaken, have led to the making arrangements for relieving them. With that view his Majesty has ordered a corps to be raised for that particular service, consisting of three hundred rank and file and a suitable number of officers, under a major-commandant.‡ This corps is ordered to be in readiness for embarkation on the 1st of October next, and will, it is expected, soon after that time proceed upon the voyage.

According to the engagements made with the marine detachment, any of the non-commissioned officers and men who may have behaved well are, if they desire it, to be allowed to quit the service on their return to England, or to be discharged abroad, upon the relief (originally designed to take place at the expiration of three years after their landing), and to be permitted to settle in the country if they prefer it. It is probable that some of these people will be desirous of continuing there, and as settlers of that description will be of great utility, not only for the purposes of protection and defence, but for the cultivation of the land, it is thought advisable that every reasonable encouragement should be held out to them to remain there.

If any part of this detachment can, however, be prevailed upon to enlist and add strength to the new corps it will be by far the most desirable plan, and in order to induce any of the non-com-

* See Phillip's despatch to Lord Sydney. Ante, p. 184.

† The *Guardian* did not sail till September, and was wrecked in December. The *Lady Juliana* sailed in July, and arrived at Sydney, 3rd June, 1790.

‡ Ante, pp. 249-251.

missioned officers or men so to do you are at liberty to offer to each a bounty of £3; at the same time to assure them that in case of a proper demeanour on their part they will, after a further service of five years, be allowed their discharge and a suitable quantity of land, together with such a proportion of tools and implements for agriculture as may be necessary for their cultivating the same, and also a supply of seed grain and of provisions for their subsistence for one year.

As the time for the relief of the marine detachment approaches, it will be inconvenient to wait for any farther opinion from you upon the mode and conditions of granting lands to the persons above mentioned who may claim their immediate discharge, and may be willing to settle in the country, or to other persons who may resort to that part of the world with a view of becoming settlers. I shall therefore avail myself of an early opportunity of submitting to his Majesty's consideration the draft of an instruction to you for your guidance in that respect, and you may expect to receive his Majesty's commands thereupon by the next vessel that sails from home for New South Wales.*

1789

20 June.

Land grants.

Instruction to be sent.

I have, &c.,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

SIR GEORGE YONGE TO THE PAYMASTER-GENERAL.

Sir,

W.O., 30 June, 1789.

30 June.

I have the honor to signify to you the K.'s p. [the King's pleasure] that out of the monies advanced to you for the recruiting service you do issue to Messrs. Cox, Cox, & Greenwood, agents to the corps to be raised for service in New South Wales, the sum of five hundred pounds, and that you do charge the same to the account of the corps for the current year. I have, &c.,

GEO. YONGE.

SIR GEORGE YONGE TO COLONEL JOHNSON.

Sir,

W.O., 11 Aug., '89.

11 Aug.

I have rec'd y'r let. of 5th inst.,† inclosing the inspection return of Lt. Paterson's company in the New So. Wales Corps, as also a return of recruits inspected by you, to make up the deficiencies in Major Grose's and Lt. Nepean's comp's, occasioned by rejection, desertion, &c., and to acq't you that the same is approved.

Fresh recruits.

With regard to the rank of Major Grose's corps, it being the youngest in the Army must, of course, when drawn up, either with other entire corps or with detach'ts from them, take part on the left. But with regard to the officers in all corps, without distinction, the militia excepted, they naturally take part in all duties according to seniority in their respective ranks.

Rank of corps.

I have, &c.,

GEO. YONGE.

* Post, p. 256.

† This letter is not available.

1789

24 Aug.

Instructions
for land
grants.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.
Sir, Whitehall, 24th August, 1789.

I transmit to you herewith an instruction under the royal sign manual with respect to the grants of land to be made to the several non-commissioned officers and private marines who may be desirous of remaining within your Government upon the relief of the detachment, as also to such other persons as may be disposed to become settlers, and I have no doubt of your exact compliance with his Majesty's commands, as signified to you by this instruction.*

Further
regulations.

If any farther regulations should appear to you to be necessary for the purpose of promoting the settlement and cultivation of the lands within your Government, you will take the earliest opportunity of apprising me of your opinion thereupon, that I may submit the same to his Majesty's consideration.

I have, &c.

W. W. GRENVILLE.

[Enclosure.]

PHILLIP'S ADDITIONAL INSTRUCTIONS.

20 Aug.

Additional Instructions to Our Trusty and Well-beloved Arthur Phillip, Esq., Our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief in and over Our Territory called New South Wales. Given at Our Court at St. James, the [twentieth] day of [August] 1789, in the twenty-ninth year of our reign.†

Land grants
to marines.

WHEREAS it has been represented unto Us that assurances were given to the non-commission officers and men belonging to the detachment of Our Marine Forces serving on the continent of New South Wales that such of the said non-commission officers and men as shall have behaved well shall be allowed to quit Our Service on their return to England, or be discharged abroad upon the relief (designed to take place at the expiration of three years after their landing) and be permitted to settle in that country: And whereas it is probable that in consequence of that engagement some of the said non-commission officers and men will be desirous of continuing in that settlement or upon the islands comprised within Your Government: And as persons of that description will be of great utility in the new settlements, not only for the purposes of protection and defence, but for the cultivation of the land: We have thought it advisable that every reasonable encouragement should be held out to them to induce them to be aiding in such salutary purposes. It is therefore Our Royal Will and Pleasure that You do issue Your Warrant to the Surveyor-General to survey and allot to such of the non-commission officers and men as shall be disposed to become settlers within Your

* Phillip acknowledges the receipt of these instructions in his despatch of 17th June, 1790 (post, p. 346).

† Phillip's original instructions were dated 25th April, 1787. Ante, p. 85.

Government, on their desiring the same, the proportions of land hereinafter mentioned, subject, however, to the following conditions and regulations :—

1789

20 Aug.

To every non-commission officer one hundred acres, and to every private man fifty acres, over and above the quantity directed by Our General Instructions to You to be granted to such convicts as may hereafter be emancipated or discharged from their servitude, free of all fees, taxes, quit rents, and other acknowledgements for the space of ten years ; but after the expiration of that time to be liable to an annual quit rent of one shilling for every ten acres.

Conditions.

And whereas it will be of advantage to Our Service that the non-commission officers and men disposed to continue in New South Wales or the islands dependant thereon can be prevailed upon to enlist into the corps appointed for their relief : It is Our farther Will and Pleasure, and You are hereby authorised to offer to each of them a bounty of £3 per man, at the same time to assure them that in case of a proper demeanor on their part they shall, after a farther service of five years, be entitled to double the proportion of land that would be granted to them, provided they should quit Our Service on the intended relief, free of all fees, fines, quit rents, &c., for the space of fifteen years, subject, however, after that time to the same quit rent for every ten acres as is specified in the preceding article of these Our Instructions.

Bounty.

Double grant.

And as a farther encouragement to the non-commission officers and men composing the detachment of Our Marine Forces serving on the continent of New South Wales or the islands dependant thereon who may be disposed to continue therein : It is our farther Will and Pleasure that you do upon their discharge, either on the intended relief or after a farther service of five years, issue to them out of the publick stores a proportion of clothes and of provisions for their subsistence for one year, together with a suitable quantity of seed grain for the tillage of the land, to be granted to them as before mentioned, and also a proportion of tools and implements proper for their use.

Clothes, provisions, and seed-grain.

And whereas from the disposition of many people to emigrate from this country there is a great probability that some of them may be desirous of becoming settlers in New South Wales or the said islands dependent thereupon : It is also Our Will and Pleasure that in case persons of that description should arrive from hence, or from any other part of Our Dominions, and apply to You for grants of land, You do afford them every encouragement that can be given in that undertaking, without subjecting the public to expence ; and that grants of land to such amount as you shall judge proper shall be made out for each person applying, not exceeding, however, in quantity the number of acres which you are hereby instructed to grant to the non-commission

Encouragement to settlers.

Land grants.

1789

20 Aug.

Assignment
of convicts.

officers before mentioned, and subject to the same quit rents payable unto Us at the expiration of five years after the passing of such grant.

And whereas many of the non-commission officers and men of the marine detachment, or other persons who may become settlers upon Our said continent of New South Wales, or the said islands dependant thereupon, may be desirous of availing themselves of the labour of part of the convicts now under your orders: It is Our Will and Pleasure, that in case there should be a prospect of their employing any of the said convicts to advantage, that you assign to each grantee the service of any number of them that you may judge sufficient to answer their purpose, on condition of their maintaining, feeding, and clothing such convicts in such manner as shall appear satisfactory to You, or to Our Governor of New South Wales for the time being.

Form of
grants.

You are to take care that all grants to be given of lands in Our said continent or islands be made out in due form, and that the conditions required by these Our instructions be particularly and expressly mentioned in the respective grants. That the same be properly registered, and that regular returns thereof be transmitted by the proper officers to Our Commissioners of Our Treasury and to the Committee of Our Privy Council appointed for all matters of Trade and Foreign Plantations within the space of twelve months after the passing of such grant.

Registra-
tion.The fat and
the lean.

It is also Our Will and Pleasure that in all grants of land to be made by You, as aforesaid, regard be had to the profitable and unprofitable acres, so that each grantee may have a proportionable number of one sort and of the other, as likewise that the breadth of each track to be hereafter granted be one-third of the length of such track, and that the length of such track do not extend along the banks of any bay or river, but into the mainland, that thereby the said grantees may have each a convenient share of what accommodation the said harbour or river may afford for navigation or otherwise.

Special
reservations.

It is also Our Will and Pleasure that between every two such grants of one hundred acres or of fifty acres, and adjacent to one of them, you do reserve for the benefit of Us, Our Heirs and Successors, a space of ten acres in breadth and of thirty acres in length, which spaces so reserved You are not to grant without Our special direction and license; but You are at liberty to lease the same for any term not exceeding fourteen years, and on such terms and conditions as You shall judge advantageous to Our service.

Townships
to be laid
out.

And whereas it has been found by experience that the settling plantees in townships hath very much redounded to their advantage, not only with respect to the assistance they have been able to afford each other in their civil concerns, but likewise with regard to their security, You are therefore to lay out townships

of a convenient size and extent, in such places as You, in Your discretion, shall judge most proper ; having, as far as may be, natural boundaries extending up into the country and comprehending a necessary part of the sea-coast, where it can be conveniently had. 1789
20 Aug.

You are also to cause a proper place in the most convenient part of each township to be marked out for the building a town sufficient to contain such a number of families as You shall judge proper to settle there, with town and pasture lots convenient to each tenement, taking care that the said town be laid out upon or as near as conveniently may be to some navigable river or the sea-coast ; and You are also to reserve to Us proper quantities of land in each township, for the following purposes, viz., for erecting fortifications and barracks, or for other military or naval services, and more particularly for the building a town-hall, and such other public edifices as you shall deem necessary, and also for the growth and production of naval timber, if there are any woodlands fit for that purpose. Public
buildings.

And it is Our further Will and Pleasure that a particular spot in or as near each town as possible be set apart for the building of a church, and four hundred acres adjacent thereto allotted for the maintenance of a minister, and two hundred for a school-master. Churches.

And whereas it is necessary that a reasonable compensation shall be made to the Surveyor-General of Our lands for surveying and laying out of the said lands for the use of such persons who may be disposed to become settlers in the said continent or islands dependant thereupon, We have thought fit to establish the table of fees hereunto annexed, which You are to allow him to demand from all persons whatsoever, excepting the non-commission officers and men of the detachment of Our Marine Corps, or to convicts emancipated or discharged, who are not to be subjected to the payment of such fees. Surveyors'
fees.

You are to cause the above-mentioned table of fees to be hung up in one of the most public places, that all persons concerned may be apprised of the demands which may be demanded of them on their taking up lands within the said continent or islands dependant thereon. Table of fees
to be
exhibited.

FEES ON LAND GRANTS, 1789.

Governor's Fees.

	£	s.	d.
For the Great Seal to every grant not exceeding 1,000 acres	0	5	0
For all grants exceeding 1,000 acres, for every 1,000 acres each grant contains	0	2	6
For a license of occupation	0	5	0

Land grant fees.

Governor.

medicines, &c., which have been provided by Government, and shipped on board the Guardian, for the use of the convicts and other persons residing within the limits of your Government. The heavy expence which attends the providing of these articles, and the sending them out to New South Wales, makes it extremely necessary that you should pay the utmost attention to appropriate them to the best advantage, and that you should from time to time transmit to me particular accounts of your proceedings in this respect.

The provisions which that vessel and the Lady Juliana contain are calculated, as you will see by the inclosed estimates, to afford an ample supply for a considerable time. I have no doubt that you will carefully attend to the manner in which they are issued, and I must particularly recommend to you to use every practicable exertion in order to put the colony in such a situation as not to depend on Great Britain for its supply in the article of provisions.

A farther proportion of these articles will accompany the convicts who are to be sent out in the autumn, but I cannot help flattering myself that after that period very little farther aids will be wanted from this country for the subsistence of the convicts. You will attend very particularly to this subject, and send me by the first opportunity an account of what you conceive to be the situation of the colony in this respect. One thousand and five barrels of flour, part of the intended supply, which the Guardian could not conveniently store, will be forwarded to you by the next ships that proceed to New South Wales.

I have acquainted you in a former letter that in consequence of your representation of the want of proper persons to instruct the convicts in the manner of tilling the land and to superintend their labor, his Majesty was pleased to authorize me to nominate nine persons to be sent out for that service. These people proceed to New South Wales in the Guardian, and on their arrival will put themselves under your orders; they have been engaged for the term of three years, and, in addition to the ration of provisions with which they are to be supplied out of his Majesty's stores, they will each of them be allowed a salary of £40 a year, which will be brought forward in the estimate to be annually laid before Parliament, and to be voted in like manner as the rest of the salaries charged on the civil establishment of your Government. I enclose a list of their names and qualifications. You will understand that during the period of their engagement they are not to be allowed to settle any land on their own account.

Your proposal of sending out a few artificers you will find upon the arrival of the Guardian has also been attended to, by the embarkation of twenty-five convicts of that description. Their service will be transferred to you by her commander, who has entered into the contracts required by law for that purpose. I have, &c.,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

1789

20 Aug.

Provisions
—an ample
supply.

Further
shipments.

Superin-
tendents
appointed.

Three years'
engage-
ment.

Artificers.

1789

[Enclosure.]

24 Aug.

SUPERINTENDENTS ON BOARD THE GUARDIAN.

Whitehall, August 24th, 1789.

List of superintendents of convicts ordered to be received on board the Guardian for their passage to New South Wales :—

Superintendents.

James Smith, George Austin, gardeners, lately employed in the King's Botanical Garden at Kew ; Philip Schaffer, formerly a lieutenant in one of the Hessian corps which served in America, has been accustomed to farming ; Thomas Clarke, a farmer ; Philip Divine, Andw. Hume, understand farming, have lately been employed by Mr. Duncan Campbell as superintendants of convicts at Woolwich ; James Reid, formerly an American planter, and has been commander of a merchant ship ; John Barlow, John Thos. Dodge, have served as officers in the Army, the former a good surveyor, and has also been employed as an engineer at Jamaica.

MAJOR ROSS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

26 Aug.

Sir,

Sydney Cove, 26th August, 1789.

The Lieut.-Governor's authority.

Your Excellency's having so repeatedly told me that the working convicts, employed on the west side of the cove,* were to be under the command and authority of the Lieut-Governor, so far that none of them should be removed from it by your Excellency without his knowledge, that it cannot have escaped your memory, it would be presumption in the extreme in me to suppose your Excellency not to know that when either duty, business, or pleasure may at any time induce your Excellency to absent yourself from this cove there cannot then remain in it any authority superior to that of the Lieut-Governor.

An insult.

Taking, therefore, your perfect recollection of the first and knowledge of the second for granted, I shall proceed to acquaint your Excellency with an account of what I cannot but deem an insult offered to me in my character of Lieutenant-Governor since your Excellency went last from this place.

The insult described.

About twelve o'clock yesterday, Fuller the carpenter told me that the convict plasterer had been with him to tell him that he was informed of Bazely's having been looking for him the day before in order to direct him to join Bloodsworth's gang. Soon after, in my walks to visit the guard, I saw Bazely, and asked him how Thady came by him to be ordered to join Bloodsworth's gang. On his saying that it was the desire of Mr. Brewer, I desired him to let Mr. Brewer know that I wanted to see him, and that he would find me with the officer of the guard. Mr. Brewer came soon after. I asked him how Thady came to be

* The main body of the convicts had been placed on the west side of the cove, under Ross's command. The opposite side of the cove was under Phillip's supervision. The detachment of marines, commanded by Ross, was camped at the head of the cove.

ordered away from the works that he was employed in on the west side. His answer was, indeed he did not know, but that Captain Collins had directed him to order Thady to join and work with Bloodsworth's gang from that morning. I then desired Mr. Brewer to go to Captain Collins and tell him, from me, that I wished to know how Thady came to be ordered away from the officers' huts, where he was at work. Captain Collins's answer by Mr. Brewer was that he knew nothing more of it than when the Governor was going away he left such orders with him.

1789

26 Aug.

However much I felt myself hurt by this impropriety of the manner in which the order came, I immediately determined with myself to give way to it so far as to cause the man to be taken off from the officer's hut, at which he had been at work, and sent over to the other side, which was immediately done. But I, at the same time, determined the business of too serious a nature or tendency to pass over without making your Excellency acquainted with it; for, however trivial it may at first view appear, yet the nature of it, the quarter from whence it came, your Excellency's name having been made use of upon the occasion, as well as the terms upon which I am too well known to stand with you, render it absolutely necessary for me, in justice to my own consequence and character, to request that your Excellency will please to direct me to be informed of the cause of such authority being assumed by those in whom no such power can at present be vested. But should your Excellency say—and I cannot possibly bring myself to think you will—that you, on going away from here, left your orders relative to the employing convicts with the Judge-Advocate, in place of leaving them with the Lieutenant-Governor, I have in such case to request that you will please to explain to me the line of conduct which, as Lieutenant-Governor of this settlement, you wish me either to preserve or follow, assuring yourself that I shall endeavour to pursue that line, at least till such time as a power superior to either of us shall determine the bounds of both, and redress our grievances. At present I acknowledge myself as much in the dark with respect to the line of conduct you expect me to pursue as Lieutenant-Governor, or what you expect from me, or that I shall do, as I was the first day of our meeting in London. But as this may be a subject of future discussion, I shall conclude this with my having the honor of being

An improper order.

Explanation desired.

In the dark.

Your Excellency's, &c.,

R. Ross, Lieutenant-Governor.

JUDGE-ADVOCATE COLLINS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Sydney Cove, 26th August, 1789.

Your Excellency having this evening done me the favour to acquaint me that the Lieutenant-Governor had written to your Excellency a letter complaining of some part of my conduct

Ross's complaint.

1789

26 Aug.

Ross's
complaint.

towards him while you were absent from the settlement, I beg leave to lay the following particulars before you ; but in so doing I must request you not to understand that I seek either to justify or excuse what I have done, except in the instance I shall mention ; for however seriously the Lieutenant-Governor may treat the circumstance, I can hardly deem it worth the discussion, and should not say a word on the subject were I not desirous of convincing your Excellency how little it was my wish to create a misunderstanding during your Excellency's temporary absence from the immediate seat of government.

Its origin.

Having received your directions on the Saturday previous to your departure for Rose Hill to order Thady, a convict plasterer, to join Bloodsworth's gang, I have to beg your Excellency's pardon for not giving that direction until late on Monday evening last, at which time I directed Bazely to inform the man that he was to join Bloodsworth's gang, and Bloodsworth that he was to receive him ; and, as I knew nothing where the man had been employed, I did not suppose anything more was requisite than to follow your Excellency's directions.

Collins in
explanation

In the forenoon of yesterday Mr. Brewer came to me from the Lieutenant-Governor, desiring to know by whose authority Thady was ordered into Bloodsworth's gang. I returned my compliments, and [said] that he was ordered by the Governor, who left such directions with me. Mr. Brewer soon after came back to tell me that the man would be sent to receive his orders from me. On being informed by Bloodsworth that he was employed in plastering Lieutenant Kellow's hut, I told him—and afterwards gave the man the same directions—to undoubtedly finish Lieutenant Kellow's hut, or any other work he had in hand, as I was certain your Excellency did not know he had any work to finish when you ordered him to join Bloodsworth's gang.

No inten-
tional
wrong.

As I conceive that if I have done wrong in this business it is in neglecting to order the man to join the overseer from the Saturday I received your Excellency's directions until the Monday evening, so I trust you will have the goodness to be assured that such neglect was unintentional, for it has always been my wish to forward, not obstruct, the public service.

I have, &c.,

DAVID COLLINS.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO MAJOR ROSS.

27 Aug.

Phillip
explains.

Sir,

Government House, 27th August, 1789.

A few days before I went to Rose Hill a list of all the convicts and their various employments was made out by my directions, by which it appeared to me that James Thady was unemployed. I therefore desired the Judge-Advocate to order him to join the bricklayers then at work for some of the officers, and last night upon my return received your letter stating that

an insult had been offered you as Lieutenant-Governor during my absence by the Judge-Advocate, in ordering a man employed under your directions to a different work.

1789

27 Aug.

I will, sir, repeat to you what the Judge-Advocate says on that head in his own words, "That he forgot to give the order the day I desired he would, and when he did recollect it he gave orders for that purpose; but on being told that the man was employed by your directions at Lieutenant Kellow's hut, as he was certain I did not know he had any work in hand when I gave the order for his joining the bricklayers' party." This, sir, if admitted, will, I presume, satisfy you that no insult was intended. I had myself informed you that I was going up the harbour for two or three days; and with respect to my orders being left with the Judge-Advocate that should have been left with the Lieutenant-Governor, there is not a shadow of reason to suppose anything of the kind ever was intended, and of which you must be sensible. And in answer to your question as to what line of conduct I wish you to pursue, I have, sir, only to wish that the peace of the settlement may not be disturbed, and that you will be so good as to be a little more guarded in your expressions, for I am certain you will think on reflection that the answer you gave to the convict who came to tell you his time was expired—"Would to God my time was expired, too!"—was not calculated to make him satisfied with his situation, till the necessary information is received from Government respecting those people, who draw their conclusions from what they hear, and perhaps very different from what the words are intended to convey. I did not, sir, take notice of the impropriety I saw in such a declaration, when you told me that was the only answer you gave to the convict, who was afterwards sentenced by the criminal court to a severe punishment, which he most undoubtedly deserved, as several officers were then present; but I repeat it, sir, that I am certain you must see the impropriety of it.

No insult intended

Ross advised.

A fault passed over.

The time cannot be far distant when a legal inquiry can take place, and all complaints will then be attended to. Till when his Majesty's service requires some little forbearance on your part as well as on mine.

Forbearance necessary.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

SIR GEORGE YONGE TO GENERAL TONYN.

Sir,

W.O., 22 Sept., 1789.

22 Sept.

I have the honour to signify to you H.M.'s p. that you do inspect Major Grose's corps of ft., and transmit to me for H.M.'s information an accurate report of the age, size, and general fitness of the recruits for active and immediate service, as well as of the progress they appear to have made in learning their exercise.

Inspection

1789

22 Sept.

Age and
stature.

You are to specify the number of men under five feet four inches and a half in height and under sixteen years of age or upwards of thirty. At the same time acq't me whether in your opinion any of those who fall under this description are, nevertheless, fit for duty.

Country.

You are likewise to distinguish the respective numbers of Highlanders, Lowlanders, Irish, and English recruits.

You will also be pleased to inform me how far the recruiting instructions of the major, of which he is to furnish you with a copy, have been observed in completing the said corps.

Enclosed I transmit a copy of the establishment of the corps, which is stationed at Chatham B'ks.

GEO. YONGE.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO THE LORDS OF THE
ADMIRALTY.

29 Sept

Ship
to be got
ready.

My Lords,

Whitehall, 29th Sept'r, 1789.

I am commanded to signify to your Lordships the King's pleasure that you do order one of the 44-gun ships which have lately been employed in relieving the regiments serving in North America to be got ready with all possible dispatch, in order to convey to New South Wales three companies of the corps intended to be employed in that country, and to bring home from thence the detachment of marines now serving there.

New South
Wales Corps.

The three companies consist of 241 men, officers included, in addition to which accommodation will be wanted for seven servants, thirty women, and sixty tons of baggage.

[No Signature.]*

MAJOR GROSE TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

8 Oct.

Augmenta-
tion.

Sir,

London, October the 8th, 1789.

Having heard that an augmentation of the corps I have the honour to command is likely to take place, I take the liberty of writing to you on the subject, for the purpose of requesting that, if such augmentation is to happen, you will be so good as to make it known to me—that I am ready to raise either one or any number of companies without a shilling expence to Government, if allowed to nominate the officers. The expedition with which I raised three of the four companies you are already acquainted with, and if you would be pleased to mention it it may possibly plead in my favour for the indulgence required.

Grose's
proposal.

I am, &c.,

F. GROSE, Major Com'g.

* Apparently from the Right Hon. W. W. Grenville.

LIEUTENANT BLIGH TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers)* 1789

Dear Sir,

Batavia, October 13, 1789. 13 Oct.

I am now so ill that it is with the utmost difficulty I can write to you; but as I hope to be in England before you can receive it, the necessary information which perhaps may be omitted in this letter will be of no consequence. Illness.

I have, however, for your satisfaction, enclosed to you a short account of my voyage.† It is nearly a copy of what I have given to the Governor of Coupang‡ and the Governor-General here, because my weak habit of body at present will not allow me to do more. Account of the voyage.

You will now, sir, with all your generous endeavors for the publick good, see an unfortunate end to the undertaking; and I feel very sensibly how you will receive the news of the failure of an expedition that promised so much. The anxious and miserable hours I have past is beyond my description; but while I have health the strange vissicitude of human affairs can never affect me. Unhappily, I have lost it at present, for on my arrival here I was seized with a fever, which, fixing in my head, it made me almost distracted; but I am now better, and am to sail in the packet on Thursd. next, which will save my life. An unfortunate enterprise.

You will find that the ship was taken from me in the most extraordinary manner, and I presume to say it could not have been done in any other way. I can, however, sir, promise to you that my honor and character is without a blemish, and I shall appear as soon as I possibly can before the Admiralty that my conduct may be enquired into, and where I shall convince the world I stand as an officer despising mercy and forgiveness if my conduct is at all blameable. An extraordinary crime.

Had I been accidentally appointed to the command the loss of the ship would give me no material concern; but when I reflect that it was through you, sir, who undertook to assert I was fully capable, and the eyes of every one regarding the progress of the voyage, and perhaps more with envy than with delight, I cannot say but it affects me considerably. To those, however, who may be disposed to blame, let them see I had in fact completed my undertaking. What man's situation could be so peculiarly flattering as mine 12 hours before the loss of the ship? Everything was in the most perfect order, and we were well stored with every necessary both for service and health. By early attention to those particulars I acted against the power of chance in case I could not get through Endeavour Straights, as Bligh courts inquiry.

* After the seizure of the BOUNTY by mutineers, Bligh, with the master, surgeon, two quarter-masters, two midshipmen, the botanist, the clerk, and ten of the crew, were placed on board one of the ship's boats, which arrived at Koepang, a Dutch settlement on Timor Island, after a perilous voyage of 3,600 miles, on the 15th June, 1789. From Koepang, Bligh found his way to Batavia, and afterwards to England, *via* the Cape of Good Hope.

† Post, pp. 268-278.

‡ Now spelt Koepang or Kupang.

Banks's recommendation.

No warning.

1789 well as against any accident that might befall me in them; and
 13 Oct. to add to this, I had most successfully got my plants in a most
 flourishing and fine order, so that upon the whole the voyage was
 The crew in $\frac{3}{4}$ over, and the remaining part no way doubtfull. Every person
 perfect health. was in the most perfect health, to establish which I had taken
 the greatest pains, and bore a most anxious care through the
 whole course of the voyage.

The plants before everything. I even rejected carrying stock for my own use, and throwing
 away the hencoops and every convenience, I roofed a place over
 the quarter-deck and filled it with plants, which I looked at with
 delight every day of my life.

The motive for the mutiny. I can only conjecture that the pirates (among whom is poor
 Nelson's assistant) have ideally assured themselves of a more
 happy life among the Otaheiteans than they could possibly have
 in England, which, joined to some female connections, has most
 likely been the leading cause of the whole busyness.

Equipment insufficient. If I had been equipped with more officers and marines the
 piracy could never have happened.

I arrived here on the 1st instant, and solicited the Governor-
 General to be allowed a passage in the first ship that sailed for
 Europe, but he has told me that he could not possibly send us all
 in one ship, and has consented, as granting me a favor, to be
 allowed to go in the packet, for the physician-general has repre-
 sented my life in danger if I remained here. I am, &c.,

WM. BLIGH.

[Enclosure.]

LIEUTENANT BLIGH TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)*

On the 16th August, 1787, I received my commission to command
 his Majesty's armed vessel *Bounty* (for that was her establish-
 ment), and to fit her out with the utmost despatch for remote parts.

The *Bounty* described. The burthen of this ship was nearly two hundred and fifteen
 tons, her extreme length on deck 90 ft. 10 in., and breadth from
 outside to outside of the bends 24 ft. 3 in., a flush deck, and a
 pretty figure-head of a woman in a riding-habit.

Comple- ment. The complement of men and officers :—

1 lieutenant and commander	1 qr.-master's mate
1 master	1 boatswain's mate
1 boatswain	1 gunner's mate
1 gunner	1 carpenter's mate
1 carpenter	1 sailmaker
1 surgeon	1 armourer
2 master's mates	1 corporal
2 midshipmen	1 carpenter's crew
1 clerk	24 able seamen
2 quarter-masters	45, total.

* This letter was sent to Sir Joseph Banks on October 13, 1789. Ante, p. 267.

Out of the number 45 is one borne not actually on board, his pay going to the support of widows, so that the real number on board were 44 seamen and officers, likewise one botanist and an assistant, the whole being 46. 1787-8

On the 4th October I was fully victualled and stored for 18 months, and on the 20th Novemr., 1787, I received my final orders to proceed on my voyage, the purport of which was as follows:—

The King, upon a representation from his subjects in the West Indies that the introduction of the bread-fruit-tree among them would be of universal good to constitute an article of food, and that such having been signified to be his Majesty's pleasure unto the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty by Lord Sydney, one of his Principal Secretaries of State, I was therefore directed to sail forthwith round Cape Horn for the Society Islands, in latitude about 18° S. and longitude 210° east of Greenwich, and there, with the necessary articles I was furnished with, to procure of the natives as many plants as I could stow on board the ship. To take the bread-fruit-tree to the West Indies.

Having completed this, I was to proceed through Endeavour Straights (which separate New Guinea from New Holland), and from thence to Prince's Island, in the Straights of Sunda, leaving to my discretion to touch at Java or any other island for refreshment and water as I might think most proper. Route.

From Prince's Island I was to proceed discretionally to St. Vincent's, one of the Windward Islands, and depositing one-half of my plants there, I was to go immediatly to Jamaica, and having given the remainder there to persons appointed to receive them, I was then, with such plants as were directed by his Majesty to be put on board, to return to England. Jamaica.

This was the sole design of my voyage, to complete which I sailed from Spithead on the 23rd December, 1787.

On the 23rd March, 1788, I doubled Staten Land,* and attempted to make my passage round Cape Horn, between the latitude of 59° S. and 61° S., but I met with such dreadful tempestuous weather and mountainous seas, with hail and snow storms, that altho' I tried it for 30 days I could not accomplish it. Failure to round Cape Horn.

I therefore (as my people were getting ill, and I had the honor to have the most discretionary orders to do as I thought best for the good of the voyage) determined to bear away for the Cape of Good Hope on the 22nd of April, and repassed Staten Land the next day. Cape of Good Hope.

On the 24th May anchored at the Cape of Good Hope, and having refitted and completed my stores and provisions, I sailed on the 1st July, 1788, arrived at Van Diemen's Land on the 20th August, and having completed wooding and watering, I sailed from thence the 4th September. Van Diemen's Land.

On the 19th September, after having past the south part of New Zealand, I discovered very dangerous rocky islets never known New Zealand.

* Staten Island.

- 1788-9 before. They extend $3\frac{1}{2}$ miles east and west, and $1\frac{1}{2}$ north and south. They lie from the Traps, off the south end of New Zealand, so. 89 east, distant 146 leagues. Their latitude is $47^{\circ} 44' 30''$ so.; longitude, $179^{\circ} 09'$ east.
- Otaheite. On the 26th October I anchored in Matavai Bay, Otaheite; sailed the 25th December, and anchored in Toahroah Harbour, 3 miles distance from the bay. I remained here untill the 4th April, when I sailed with 1,015 bread-fruit plants and many fruit kind, in all 774 pots, 39 tubs, and 24 boxes. Latitude of this harbour, $17^{\circ} 31' 26''$ S.; longitude, p'r observ'n, sun and moon, and stars each side of the moon, $210^{\circ} 31' 37''$ E.; variation compass, $5^{\circ} 31'$ E.
- Kindness of King and people. I left these happy islanders in much distress, for the utmost affection, regard, and good-fellowship remained among us during my stay. The King and all the Royal family were allways my guests, and their good sense and observations, joined with the most engaging dispositions in the world, will ever make them beloved by all who become acquainted with them as friends.
- An island discovered. On the 12th April I discover'd an island, called by the natives Whytootackee, whose chief was named Comackaiah, as I was informed by people in a cannoe that came off to me. Their language seemed to prove them nearly the same people as at Otaheite. This island is about ten miles in circuit, in latitude $18^{\circ} 52'$ S. It has eight small keys, lying joined by a reef to the S.S.E. of it, and one to the W.S.W. The southernmost key lies in latitude $18^{\circ} 58'$ S.; the longitude by observation is $200^{\circ} 19'$ east of Greenwich; variation compass, $8^{\circ} 14'$ E.
- Savage Island. On the 18th of April I saw Savage Island, in $19^{\circ} 02'$ S., and longitude, by my observation, $190^{\circ} 18'$ E. of Greenwich.
- The Friendly Islands. On the 21st of April I made the Friendly Islands, and on the 23rd following I anchored in Annamoca Road (called by Tasman, Rotterdam). On the 26th, having completed my water and got on board some wood, I sailed.
- This island lies in latitude $20^{\circ} 16'$ S., $185^{\circ} 30'$ E.
- Tofoa. On the 28th of April, in the morning, the N.W.'most of the Friendly Islands, called Tofoa, bore N.E. ten leagues, and I had directed my course to the W.N.W., with a ship in most perfect order, and all my plants in a most flourishing condition, all my men and officers in good health, and, in short, everything to flatter and insure my most sanguine expectations and success.
- The mutiny. But I am now to relate one of the most atrocious and consummate acts of piracy ever committed.
- Capt. Bligh seized and bound. At dawn of day Fletcher Christian, officer of the watch, Charles Churchill, ship's corporal, Thomas Burkitt, seaman, and several others came into my cabbin, and while I was asleep seized and tyed my hands behind my back with a strong cord, and with cutlasses and a bayonet fixed at my breast threatened instant death if

I spoke or made the least noise. I, nevertheless, called out so loud that everyone heard me, and were flying to my assistance; but all my officers, except those concerned, were kept in their cabbins by armed centinels, and the arm-chest was in their possession. I was now hauled upon deck in my shirt, and hands tied behind me, held by Fletcher Christian and Charles Churchill, with a bayonet at my breast, and two men, Alex. Smith and Thomas Burkitt, behind me with loaded musquets cocked and bayonets fixed. Under this guard I was kept abaft the mizen-mast. The different hatchways were all guarded by armed men in the same manner, and those who were to be sent out of the ship, and some of the mutineers who could be spared, hoisted the boats out. Among these was the boatswain, who, with some others, got sails, twine, rope, grapnel, and a small cask of water into the boat, about which there were many altercations among the mutinous crew, and exerting myself in speaking loud to try if I could rally any with a sense of duty in them, I was saluted with, "Damn his eyes! blow his brains out."

1789

The
mutineers in
possession.

A boat
lowered.

Being confined and kept apart from everyone, Mr. Samuel, my clerk, secured to me a quadrant and compass, some cloaths, my journals, and a few material ship's papers; but all my valuable instruments, with a timepiece of three hundred and fifty guineas value, a valuable collection of books, maps, and drawings, with all my remarks and observations for fifteen years past, were kept from me. He also secured about one hundred and fifty pounds of bread.

Books and
papers
retained.

The officers and men being now drove into the boat one by one, I was told by Christian, "Sir, your officers are now in the boat, and you must go with them." I was then taken hold of under a guard, and forced over the gangway into the boat, which waited only for me, and untying my hands, I was veer'd astern by a rope. A few pounds of pork were now thrown to us, being nineteen in number; and each began to solicit some of their little valuables that were left behind them. I desired only some firearms, and even at last solicited two, but we received insolence, and were told I should have none. Four cutlasses were, however, thrown into the boat, and we were cast adrift, and rowed with all our strength for the land.

Officers and
men forced
into the
boat.

Cast adrift.

The size of the boat was 23 feet from stem to stern, and rowed six oars, and was so deeply lumbered that they believed we could never reach the shore, and some of them made their jokes of it. However, by 7 o'clock in the evening I got safe under Tofoa, but could find no landing, and therefore kept the boat under the land all night, paddling with two oars to preserve our station.

Sheltering
under the
land.

29th.—Endeavouring to find landing, to increase our stock of water and to get some cocoanuts and provisions.

1789

Looking for
water.

30th.—Found landing at the N.W. part of the island, in a cove, latitude 19° 41' S., as I observed it. Went in search of water, but found only a few quarts in holes of the rocks; suffered much fatigue and distress. I should now have proceeded, as I intended, for some of the islands where I had a knowledge of the chiefs, for I was well acquainted here, but the wind and sea was too stormy to venture out. Part of us slept in the boat, and others, with myself, on shore, and as we saw no natives we felt our distress the more, because we wanted not to use any of our own stock.

Food from
the natives.

1st May.—Party out as yesterday, and found out the residence of the natives, who brought supplies of cocoanuts and bread-fruit, besides shells of water, all of which I bought for buttons which we cut off our cloaths. They all left us at sundown. W'r so windy could not proceed to sea.

The natives
hostile.

2nd.—In the morning two chiefs—Egyeefow, and the other Maccaacabou—came down; also two cannoes came in, and another chief, called Vageetee, and having enquired our situation and my determination to proceed to Paulehow, their king (Egyeefow) agreed as soon as it moderated to go with me. This readiness gave me pleasure, but in a few hours I had as much uneasiness. The natives began to be very troublesome, and shewed signs of hostilities towards us. We, however, thought they would go off at sundown, as they had done before, and that then I could leave the place without any risk, but it proved to the contrary, for three cannoes were now come in, and places were fixed on for their residence during the night and fires made.

An attack.

I therefore determined to do our best while it was light, and directed some provisions we had bought to be put in the boat. The chiefs desired I would stay, notwithstanding they perceived that I saw all their people were arming with clubs and stones. We were now all on the go, and taking one of the chiefs by the hand, with a cutlass in the other, and my people with sticks, we proceeded down to the boat, when we were attacked by a multitude of Indians, in the course of which I lost a very worthy good man,* and the rest of us more or less bruized and wounded.

Stoned by
the natives.

As I hauled out to our grapnel I hoped they could no longer annoy us, but here I was mistaken, for they launched their cannoes and gave battle to us, or rather stoned us, untill I got a league from the land. I could not return their salute but with such stones as lodged in the boat. I therefore, as the only thing left for to save our lives, exhorted everyone to persevere in rowing, and throwing overboard some cloaths, which beguiled them and they lost time in taking up, together with the night coming on, we very miraculously escaped. Taking this as a real sample of their natural disposition, there were little hopes to expect much where I was going, for I considered their good behaviour hitherto owing to a dread of our firearms, which now knowing us to have

Escape.

* The Quarter-master, John Norton.

none would not be the case, and that supposing our lives were safe, our boat, compass, and quadrant would all be taken from me, and thereby I should not be able to return to my King and country to give an account of the transaction. 1789

I was now solicited by every person to take them towards home, and when I told them no hopes of relief remained for us but what I might find at New Holland untill I came to Timor, a distance of 1,200 leagues, where there was a Governor, but that I had no idea at what part of the island the settlement was, they all agreed to live on one ounce of bread per day and one gill of water. One ounce of bread per day.

I therefore, after recommending this promise for ever to their memory, bore away for New Holland, and from thence to Timor, a distance of 1,200 leagues across a sea where the navigation is dangerous and not known, and in a small boat deep loaded with eighteen souls, without a single map, and nothing but my own recollection and general knowledge of the situation of places, assisted by a table in an old book of latitude and longitude, to guide me. Bound for Timor.

Our stock of provisions at first consisted of 150 pounds of bread (part of which afterwards got damaged and lost), 28 gallons of water, 20 pounds of pork, 3 bottles of wine, and 5 quarts of rum. Provisions.

It may be asked what could be the cause for such a revolution. In answer to which I have only to give a description of Otaheite, which has every allurements both to luxury and ease, and is the Paradise of the world. Cause of the mutiny.

The women are handsome and mild in their manners and conversation, with sufficient delicacy to make them admired and beloved, and the chiefs have acquired such a liking to our people that they rather have encouraged their stay among them than otherwise, and even made promises of large possessions to them. Attractions at Otaheite.

Under these and many other attendant circumstances equally desirable, is it to be now wondered at that a set of sailors void of connections (or, if they have any, not possessed of natural feelings sufficient to wish themselves never to be separated from them) should be led by such powerful ties. Powerful ties.

But equal to this, what a temptation is it to such wretches when they find it in their power (however illegally it can be got at) to fix themselves in the midst of plenty in the finest island in the world, where they need not labour, and where the allurements of dissipation are more than equal to anything that can be conceived. Allurements.

Desertions have happened more or less in every ship that has been at the Society Isles, but it has ever been in the commander's power to make the chiefs return their people. They therefore knew such a plan could never succeed, and perhaps suggested that never so small a ship and so eligible an opportunity would offer to them again. A good opportunity.

1789

Christian was the officer on deck, and the whole watch being concerned except two midshipmen, who knew not what their officer was about, it is not surprising that the business was speedily done, all the able men being concerned, and also the greatest number, as may be seen by the following list:—

People who came in the boat.

The loyal.	John Fryer, master	Jno. Norton {	qr.-mr.
	Willm. Cole, boatswain	{	Killed at Tofoa.
	Willm. Peckover, gunner		Geo. Simpson, qr.-mrs. mate
	Willm. Purcell, carpenter		Lawrce. Libogue, sailmaker
	Thos. Dr. Leward, act. surgeon		Robt. Tinkler, a boy
	Wm. Elphinstone, master's mate		Jno. Smith, capt's servt.
	Thos. Hayward, mid'n		Thos. Hall, ship's cook
	Jno. Hallett, do		Robt. Lamb, butcher
	Jno. Samuel, clerk		David Nelson, botanist*
	Peter Linkletter, qr.-mr.		18, total.

People who remained in the ship.

The disloyal.	Fletcher Christian, master's mate	Mattw. Thompson, seaman
	Geo. Stewart, acting do	Thos. Ellison, do
	Peter Heywood, mid'n.	Wm. Mickoy, do
	Edwd. Young, do.	Jno. Millward, do
	Chas. Churchill, corporal	Richd. Skinner, do
	James Morrison, boatsw's mate	Mathw. Quintal, do
	John Mills, gunner's mate	Michl. Byrne, do
	Chas. Norman, carp'r's mate	Heny. Hilbrant, do
	Thos. M'Intosh, do crew	Isaac Martin, do
	Josh. Coleman, armourer	Alex. Smith, do
	Thos. Burkitt, seaman	Willm. Muspratt, do
	Jno. Sumner, do	Willm. Brown, botanist's assist.
	Jno. Williams, do	25, total remaining in the ship.

To return now to my proceedings in the boat. I steered to the W.N.W., as I formerly had heard from the Freindly Island people that land lay in that quarter.

Bad
weather.

The weather very boisterous, and obliged to keep right before the sea, which at times run into us and nearly filled the boat, and were obliged to throw all spare cloaths overboard and every article we could possibly do without.

On the 4th May, latitude 18° 58' S., long. 182° 16' E., I discover'd land, an island, W.S.W. 4 or 5 leagues.

Islands.

On the 6th discovered ten other islands, and that day at noon was in lat. 17° 53' S., and long. 179° 43' east. Many shoals.

Chased by
canoes.

On the 7th discovered other islands; at noon latitude 16° 33' S., 178° 34' E., were chased by two large cannoes, but got clear of them by rowing. At night torrents of rain, with thunder and lightning; caught 6 gallons water.

On the 9th fair w'r; kept steering to the W.N.W. and west.

* Died of fever at Koepang. Post, p. 278.

On the 10th very heavy rains, hard gales and a high sea unto the 14th; suffered much cold in the nights, being constantly wet. 1789
13 Oct.

On the 14th discovered land—five islands—and were at noon in latitude $13^{\circ} 29' S.$, $169^{\circ} 31' E.$; steered to W.S.W. Islands.

On the 15th discovered an island; latitude at noon $13^{\circ} 4' S.$, long. $167^{\circ} 35' E.$ Very fresh gale and high sea, with rain; constantly wet and constantly bailing. Distress'd for want of light to see to steer by, the w'r being stormy, with thunder, lightning, rain, and a high sea, keeping the boat before it to the 21st, when we had most dreadful weather, and the rain fell so heavy that we could scarce keep the boat from filling. Stormy weather.

To the 24th the weather and sea continued very bad, and we now dreaded the nights, for we were all benumbed with cold, and what added to our distress in the weak situation we were in, one of us in turns was obliged to be constantly bailing the boat in all this dreadful weather, being continually wet, and never having a dry rag about us. The resource I directed to be taken was, in the intervals when the rain ceased to strip naked and wash and wring all our cloaths in the sea, which was a great refreshment. Sufferings in the boat.

To the 28th the weather better, when at midnight I fell in with most dreadful breakers, but I was able to stand away clear of them. As I knew I was near the coast of New Holland, I considered this to be the reef off that coast, and I therefore stood to the west again in the morning to search for a passage within it. At 9 in the morning I saw the reef again, and soon after standing along it to the northward I discovered an opening, which I safely entered and got into smooth water. The Australian coast.

At noon latitude $12^{\circ} 46' S.$, $145^{\circ} 02' E.$ The entrance I came in at S.E., about 2 leagues.

At $\frac{1}{4}$ past 5 in the afternoon I got into a bay on an island about a $\frac{1}{4}$ mile from the main, and finding it uninhabited I determined on searching for supplies. Night came on. We, however, got a few oysters from the rocks, which gave us a tolerable good meal. Landing on an island.

As our boat was only large enough to admitt one-half of us to rest at a time, I consented that one party should sleep on shore, but, unfortunately, having no materials, we could not light a fire. Division of the party.

29th May.—At dawn of day we went in search of water and what else we could get, and happily by digging found fine fresh water, and plenty of it. Oysters were the only supply besides, of which, with our allowance of bread, we made very good stews. When the sun came out strong I was enabled to kindle a fire by a small magnifying-glass, and we then made tinder and matches to supply our wants in future. Oysters.

All hands were very weak, which with dizziness in the head and a dreadful tenesmus were the only complaints. At night part of us slept on shore. Illness.

30th May.—I now determined, as the people were a little refreshed, to proceed on. I therefore by noon got our small water-

- 1789
 Fern roots
 as food.
- Birds
 caught.
- Poor living.
- A fresh
 start.
- Islands
 sighted
- and visited.
- Stewed
 oysters.
- Sickness.
- Improve-
 ment.
- casks filled, and having found some fern root that I thought whole-
 some and very conducive to prevent thirst, I ordered a parcel into
 the boat. Birds could have easily have been got here if I had
 had arms. On that account every one we saw recalled to us our
 miserable situation, but Providence has been graciously kind to us,
 for we frequently caught by hand sea fowls, which made great
 additions to our dinners of bread. The frequent supply of water
 was also a great blessing, but I had not vessels to contain a suffi-
 cient allowance; it therefore happen'd that nearly half a pint of
 water was what each person received in the course of the day,
 issued at 8 in the morning, at noon, and sunset, with $\frac{1}{2}$ of a pound
 of bread at breakfast, and the same at dinner.
- I found the latitude of this place $12^{\circ} 39' S.$, $144^{\circ} 44' E.$ The
 main appeared with a variety of high and low land, interspersed
 with wood, and the more interior parts mountainous.
- 31.—At 4 in the afternoon, having performed divine service, I
 sailed. Saw twenty natives, armed with spears, come down on the
 shore opposite to us. They were black, and waved to us to come
 to them.
- I steered along shore to the N.N.W. and N.W. by N., in the direc-
 tion of the coast. Saw several islands, and at 8 in the morning
 passed through a cluster, and saw more natives armed in the same
 manner, and made the same signs. I, however, did not land.
- The appearance of the country all changed, being very low,
 and mostly sandhills. Landed on an island, and gathered shell-
 fish, oysters, and clams; also water, in the hollow of a rock, which
 enabled us to fill our sea store.
- From the heights of this island I saw a small key to the N.W. by
 N. As my present situation was, therefore, too near the main,
 having discovered at this place the natives to have cannoes, I again
 prepared to sail, so as to reach the key before night. At noon dined
 on stewed oysters and clams. Found the latitude of this isl'd 11°
 $58' S.$, $144^{\circ} 29' E.$
- 1st June.—With a continuance of fine w'r this evening I landed
 and spent the night at the key above mentioned; could get no
 supplies of any kind. Some of my people were taken ill with
 vomitings and dizziness; besides, a most dreadful tenesmus afflicted
 many of them, who had not been at stool for three weeks, and some
 more.
- At noon I found the latitude of this key $11^{\circ} 47' S.$, longitude
 $144^{\circ} 24' E.$
- 2nd June.—This afternoon it came on strong gales, and my
 people being still ill I preferred giving them a good night's rest
 to going to sea. At dawn of day I sailed; people much better.
 Passed several islands; the coast sandy and barren. At noon,
 lat. $11^{\circ} 18' S.$, $144^{\circ} 20' E.$, I saw what I considered to be Cape
 York, bearing W. $\frac{1}{2}$ N., 3 leagues.

3rd.—At night I again stopt on an island, whose latitude is 1789
 10° 52' S., 141° 05' E., by corrected longitude from Cape York, Islands.
 whose true situation is 141° 15' E. My account, therefore,
 yesterday was 3° 05' wrong.

4th.—At dawn of day I again sailed, and followed the direction of the coast to the N.W.; saw many islands and breakers. At noon I was in 10° 31' S., and 140° 40' E. I now found I had Torres Straits.
 doubled the north part of New Holland.*

At 5 o'clock this evening I left New Holland, and steered accordingly for Timor, the latitude of which I was not very certain of. However, I determined to make it in the latitude of about 9° 30' S.

On the 12th June, at 3 in the morning, I saw the island of Timor sighted.
 Timor, bearing W.N.W.

At daylight, finding I was on the S.E. end of it, I went to the south of the island, laying-to at night lest I might pass any Lying-to.
 settlement, for I was not certain where the Governor resided.

On the 14th, in the afternoon, after having passed through a very heavy breaking sea and shoal water, I discovered an opening, into which I entered and anchored at 3 o'clock, which I since At anchor.
 find to be a bay on Timor, opposite to Pulo Samow, in the south entrance, the island Rotty being in sight to the S.W. by S.

Saw some Malays on the shore. Sent two men after them, and they brought several men to me. One of them agreed to be my pilot, and I agreed to give ten half-ducatoons to conduct me to the Governor.

This being settled, we rowed along shore, conducted by him, and on the morning, at dawn of day, I anchored off Coupang, Off Koepang.
 and waited for leave to come on shore. At sunrise I was desired by a soldier to come on shore, and I was conducted to a gentleman's house (Captain Spykerman), who, upon my application, ordered breakfast and victuals for all hands; the Governor, from severe indisposition, not being able to see me just at that time. The surgeon, a Mr. Max, gave us every kind assistance in dressing our sores, and all who saw us were ready to contribute to the comfort of such poor distress'd creatures, one-half of whom could not have survived a week longer, and some, perhaps, not a few days. Kind treatment.

The Governor, with much goodness, became anxious about us, and altho' his illness was very severe, I had it in my power to see him by 11 o'clock, and was received in a most affectionate and peculiar manner of kindness, which will ever endear him to my memory. Sympathy from the Governor.

Orders were instantly given for our accomodation and supplies, and I had full power to see my people taken care of.

Thus happily ended, through the blessing of Divine Providence, without accident, a voyage of the most extraordinary nature that An extraordinary voyage.
 ever happened in the world, let it be taken either in its extent, duration, or so much want of the necessaries of life.

* He had passed Cape York and was in Torres Straits.

1789

Death of
Mr. Nelson

I remained at Coupang until the 20th August, 1789,* during which time I had the misfortune to lose Mr. David Nelson (boatman), whose good conduct in the course of the whole voyage and manly fortitude in our late disastrous circumstances deserves this tribute to his memory. He died of a fever on the 20th of July.

I have not given so full an account to the Admiralty. You will please, therefore, to attend to it in that particular.†

UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS† TO MAJOR GROSE.

14 Oct.

Transports
ready.

Sir,

W.O., 14 October, 1789.

I have the S. of W.'s directions to apprise you that two of the ships destined to convey convicts to New South Wales will be ready to take on board the detachments of your corps which are to guard them on Monday next at Gravesend.

Orders to
embark.

You will accordingly take care that two detachments be in readiness to embark at that time, the one to consist of two commissioned officers and forty men, including non-commissioned, and the other of two commissioned officers and thirty men, including non-com'd off'rs. Another detachment of two officers and thirty men will be required in about ten days.

Two detach-
ments.

The remainder of the corps will embark in a 44-gun ship, commanded by a lieutenant of the Navy, in the course of a fortnight.

M. LEWIS.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO THE SECRETARY AT WAR.

16 Oct.

Sir,

Whitehall, 16th October, 1789.

I am commanded to signify to you the King's pleasure that you do give orders that a detachment of the corps which has been raised to serve in New South Wales, consisting of the number of officers and men mentioned in the margin,§ may be held in constant readiness to embark at Woolwich, on board the Neptune, Scarborough, and Surprise, transports, now preparing for the reception of convicts destined for New South Wales, in order to guard the said convicts, and preventing their effecting their escape or gaining possession of the ships during their passage thither.

A detach-
ment to go in
transports.

* Bligh arrived at Batavia on the 1st of October, 1789, and sailed for the Cape of Good Hope on the 16th October, arriving on the 16th December. He left the Cape on the 2nd January, 1790, and arrived at Portsmouth on the 14th March.

† The last sentence is in Bligh's handwriting. The account of the mutiny and boat voyage was apparently copied from his MS. Bligh's official report to the Admiralty, written from Koepang, was not received until this volume had been prepared for press. It will be found, however, in Appendix A. It contains some information not given here. Although Bligh did not give "so full an account to the Admiralty," he wrote and published, on his return to England in 1790, "A Narrative of the Mutiny on board His Majesty's Ship Bounty," which occupied 88 pages 4to. It was repeated in a fuller account of the Bounty's voyage, published in 1792.

‡ Mr. Matthew Lewis, Under Secretary at War.

§ Neptune: Officers, 2; men, 40—42. Scarborough: Officers, 2; men, 30—32. Surprise: Officers, 2; men, 30—32. Total, 106.

With regard to the remainder of that corps, I am to acquaint you that the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, pursuant to his Majesty's commands, have ordered one of the 44-gun ships which have been employed in relieving the regiments serving upon foreign stations to be equipped with all possible expedition, in order to convey it to New South Wales, and to bring home from thence the detachment of marines now serving there, which ship, I am informed, is nearly ready to proceed upon that service.

I am, &c.,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

1789

16 Oct.

The rest of the corps in a man-of-war.

UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN TO UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS.

Sir,

Whitehall, 17th October, 1789.

17 Oct.

I am directed by Mr. Sec'y Grenville to acquaint you, in addition to his letter to the Secretary at War of yesterday's date, that the detachment of the New South Wales Corps intended to be put on board the Neptune and Scarborough, transports, to guard the convicts which these ships have been ordered to receive, are to be embarked at Gravesend, on Thursday morning at nine o'clock, at which hour boats will be ready to carry them on board.

Orders to embark.

The Surprize will not be ready to receive the detachment intended for that ship for some days.

I am, &c.,

EVAN NEPEAN.

UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS TO MAJOR GROSE.

Sir,

W.O., 17 October, 1789.

In the abs'ce of the S. of W., I have the honour to send you enclosed H.M. orders and instructions for the conduct of your corps during their voyage to N.S.W., and also an order for making two detachments therefrom which are to embark on Thursday next.

Instructions.

When the whole of the corps shall have embarked, you will transmit to Sir George Yonge for H.M.'s information a return agreeable to the return (*sic*) herewith enclosed, and a like return addressed to the adjutant-general at his office in London.

Returns.

It may not be improper to have it understood that one of the vessels intended to convey part of your corps is not an ordinary transport, but a king's ship,* commanded by a lieutenant of the Royal Navy, who is entitled to the full exercise of the chief command on board, but will of course avoid interfering with the officers of your corps in any matters respecting the internal detail thereof.

Naval command.

[Enclosure.]

M. LEWIS.

ORDERS FOR THE NEW SOUTH WALES CORPS.

The commanding officer is to take care that every morning all the men be brought up on deck, the berths cleaned, and the bedding brought up to air, if the weather permits.

Discipline at sea.

That no smoaking be suffered between decks.

* H.M.S. Gorgon. Post, p. 285.

1789

17 Oct.

That no gaming be allowed ; nor shall any person be suffered to vend or distribute drams or spirituous liquors.

That as many men as possible be kept upon deck in the day-time.

Shore leave.

If any of the vessels should put into any port or harbour, no officer or soldier is to go on shore but by the consent of the off'r com'g the troops on board such vessels. And when any soldiers are allowed to go on shore a non-com'd off'r is to go with them, who is to be answerable for their conduct while on shore.

Deduction for expenses.

The com'g off'r will acq't the corps that in order to contribute towards the expence of provisions on board, the paym'r-gen'l of the forces is directed to make a deduction of threepence per diem from every off'r, non-com'd off'r, and soldier borne on the full establishment of the corps during the time of their being on board ship ; and the major is ordered to take care that the agent or paym'r stops no more from any off'r, non-com'd off'r, or soldier on account of provisions than the said threepence per diem, the commanders of the said vessels certifying the number of days the troops shall have been on board their respective ships.

Orders on arrival.

Upon the arrival of the corps at New South Wales they are to follow such orders as they shall receive from Governor Philip or off'r com'g-in-chief H.M. forces in those parts for the time being.

GEO. YONGE.

CAPTAIN HARVEY TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers).

28 Oct.

Sir,

Portsmouth, 28 Oct., 1789.

Lieut. Harvey and the Gorgon.

Upon receiving my present commission to command his Majesty's ship Gorgon, destined for New South Wales, I waited on you, but not having the pleasure of seeing you by your not being in town, seeing the impossibility of getting to London again, I take this opportunity to return you my most unfeigned and sincere thanks for your friendship in getting me this command.*

I have one more favor of you to beg, which is, that you will command and give me such instructions what curiositys, &c., &c., to get for you, and by so doing you will still more oblige,

Yours, &c.,

WM. HARVEY.

WARRANT FOR TRANSPORTATION.

George R.

30 Oct.

WHEREAS by an Act passed in the twenty-eighth year of our reign, intituled "An Act to continue several laws relating to the granting a bounty on the exportation of certain species of British and Irish linens exported, and taking off the duties on the importation of foreign raw linen yarns made of flax ; and to the pre-

* Captain Harvey was superseded by Captain John Parker. Post, p. 427.

venting the committing of frauds by bankrupts ; and for continuing and amending several laws relating to the imprisonment and transportation of offenders." It is amongst other things enacted that whenever we shall be pleased to give orders for the transportation of any offender or offenders, it shall and may be lawful for us under our royal sign manual, if we shall think fit to authorize and empower any person or persons to make contracts for the effectual transportation of such offender and offenders, and to direct to what person or persons security shall be given for the effectual transportation of such offender or offenders ; and every such contract and security shall be equally valid and effectual, and every person contracting for the transportation of any offender or offenders with any person or persons so authorized by us as aforesaid shall have the like property in the service of such offender or offenders, as if such contract had been made, and such security had been given in the manner required in the Act passed in the twenty-fourth year of our reign intituled "An Act for the effectual transportation of felons and other offenders." And whereas from the great number of persons remaining on board the hulks and in the several prisons within this kingdom under sentence of transportation, we have, pursuant to the powers vested in us by the said recited Acts, thought fit to give directions that a number of convicts who were severally convicted at the times and places hereinafter mentioned, and respectively received sentence to be transported, be immediately and effectually transported to our territory of New South Wales pursuant to their respective sentences. We do hereby authorize and empower our trusty and well-beloved Thomas Shelton, Esq're, to make a contract or contracts with any fit person or persons for the effectual transportation of the several convicts whose names are inserted in the list hereunto annexed, and to take security from the person or persons so contracting for the transportation of the said convicts, that he or they will transport, or cause to be effectually transported the said several convicts to our said territory of New South Wales, and procure such evidence as the nature of the case will admit of the landing of the said several convicts, at our territory aforesaid (death and casualty by sea excepted) and that they shall not respectively be suffered to return to Great Britain or Ireland by the wilful default of the said person or persons so contracting as aforesaid, or of his or their assigns according to the directions of the aforesaid Act passed in the twenty-fourth year of our reign : And for so doing this shall be your warrant.

1789

28 Oct.

Transportation laws.

Contracts.

Accumulation of convicts.

Transportation to New South Wales.

Contractors to give security.

Provision against default.

Given at our Court at St. James's, the thirtieth day of October, 1789, in the thirtieth year of our reign.

By his Majesty's command.

1789

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR GROSE'S COMMISSION.

2 Nov.

George R.

George the Third, &c., to our trusty and well-beloved Major Francis Grose, greeting :—

Lieut.-
Governor.To take
charge in
that capa-
city.Orders and
instructions.

WE, reposing especial trust and confidence in your loyalty, courage, and experience in military affairs, do, by these presents, constitute and appoint you to be Lieutenant-Governor of the settlement within our territory called New South Wales, in the room of Major Robert Ross, from and immediately after your arrival in our said settlement. You are, therefore, as Lieutenant-Governor to take the said settlement into your care and charge, and carefully and diligently to discharge the duty of Lieutenant-Governor thereof, by doing and performing all and all manner of things thereunto belonging ; and we do hereby strictly charge and require all our officers and soldiers who shall hereafter be in our said territory, and all others whom it may concern, to obey you as our Lieutenant-Governor thereof; and you are to observe and follow such orders and instructions from time to time as you shall receive from us, our Governor of our said territory for the time being, or any other your superior officer, according to the rules and discipline of war, in pursuance of the trust we hereby repose in you.

Given at our Court at St. James's, the second day of November, 1789, in the thirtieth year of our reign.

By his Majesty's command,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

THE HOME DEPARTMENT TO UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS.

6 Nov.

Sir,

Whitehall, 6th Nov'r, 1789.

Assistant
Surgeon.

It having been represented by Major Grose and Captain Nepean, the latter of whom is to embark with a party of the New South Wales Corps on board the Neptune, transport, which is to convey to that country a considerable number of convicts, that there is only one surgeon under the contractor's appointment to embark in the said ship, and that it will be necessary, in case of sickness on board, that the surgeon or surgeon's mate of Major Grose's corps should be ordered to take his passage in her, I am directed by Mr. Secretary Grenville to desire that you will move the Secretary at War to give direction that the surgeon or surgeon's mate of that corps, as may be thought proper, do take his passage on board that ship.

I am, &c.,

S. BERNARD.

THE HOME DEPARTMENT TO UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS.

9 Nov.

Sir,

Whitehall, 9th Nov'r, 1789.

The Surprise, transport, intended to carry out some of the convicts to New South Wales, and now lying in the galleons

in the river Thames, being ready for sea, I am directed by Mr. Secretary Grenville to desire that orders may be given without delay for putting on board that ship two officers and thirty men of the New South Wales Corps, as mentioned in his letter of the 16th of last month to the Secretary at War.

1789

9 Nov.

I am, &c.,
S. BERNARD.

TO MR. NEPEAN.* (Banks Papers).

THE Golden Grove brings 14 kangaroo skins; a bird, to be known by the smell it had when living, it burrows in the sand like a rabbit, and comes out only in the night; a dog, called dingo; a small box of black lead, any quantity of which may be obtained. Emus are seen frequently, but no more have been killed.

Animals,
&c., from
Port Jack-
son.

He has built a good house of brick and stone, 56 above high-water mark, and on sinking near it a well 15 feet in rock has found a spring of excellent water.†

LIEUTENANT RIOU TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

H.M. ship Guardian, Table Bay,

Sir,

Cape of Good Hope, 25th November, 1789.

25 Nov.

I am to request you will be pleased to communicate to the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty the arrival of his Majesty's ship Guardian at this place. I entrust this letter to the care of Mr. Hiram Lloyd, master of the ship Roman Emperor, a south whaler, who sails for Saldanha Bay this instant, and thence to England. Having, unfortunately, on board the Guardian two seamen, who I find to be unfit for his Majesty's service, and rendered by their disorder totally unserviceable, I embrace the opportunity of sending them home, with their certificates, on board the above ship. I hope the hurry in which I write this will be excused, as the ship is preparing to depart instantly, and as it is very uncertain whether she may arrive in England before other ships which may sail hereafter, I thought it incumbent on me by no means to detain her.

The
Guardian at
the Cape.

Unservice-
able seamen.

His Majesty's ship Vestal, as I am informed, sailed hence about ten days ago.

Vestal.

The last intelligence I had of the Lady Juliana, transport, was from a south whaler, which I spoke with in the latitude of 2° 14' north, the master of which informed me that that ship had sailed from Porto Praya on the 21st day of September. I have, &c.,

Lady
Juliana.

E. RIOU.

* So endorsed in Sir Joseph Banks' handwriting, dated 17th November, 1789. On the back of the paper is this label attached by wafers:—"Essential oil drawn from the leaves of a large tree; its smell and taste resembling the nut peppermint. Of these trees we have great abundance." Below the label Sir Joseph Banks has written:—"This ticket was fixed to the bottle of essential oil."

† The house referred to is evidently the Governor's. See officer's letter, 18 November, 1788. Ante, p. 223.

1789

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO LIEUT. SHAPCOTE.*

2 Dec.

Sir,

Whitehall, 2nd Decem'r, 1789.

The
Neptune.

The contractor for the transportation of convicts to New South Wales has informed me that the apartment designed for the female convicts on board the Neptune is capable of containing between thirty and forty more than the number now on board, and that preparations have been made by him for the reception of such other females as may be ready to embark.

Convicts'
wives.

As it is probable some of the male convicts put on board the ship now under dispatch may be desirous that their wives should accompany them, it has been thought adviseable that so many of them shall be allowed to embark as can conveniently be accommodated, and I shall be glad if you will notify to the several convicts the intention of granting this indulgence to them, in order that they may give information thereof to their wives, and hasten their embarkation as much as possible.

Mistresses.

If the number of convicts who may apply to you in consequence should not be sufficient to complete the number for which accommodation is provided, you will in such case acquaint the rest of the convicts that women who may have cohabited with them will also be received on board.

Clothing.

I shall take care that proper directions be given that such women as may embark in consequence of this proceeding may be victualled during their passage, and be provided with cloaths and necessaries in the same manner as the female convicts under order for transportation.

I am, &c.,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

24 Dec.

Sir,

Whitehall, 24th December, 1789.

The second
fleet.

In my letters of the 20th June and 24th August, I informed you that it was the intention of Government that a farther number of convicts should be sent out in the autumn, with a view to your making such arrangements as might be necessary for their reception. I am now to acquaint you that measures have been taken for that purpose, and that nine hundred and thirty males and seventy-eight females have been embarked on board the ships named in the margin,† now assembled at Spithead, and in readiness to depart the moment the wind proves favourable for their proceeding down Channel.

1,008 con-
victs.Wives and
mistresses.

The number of female convicts bearing a great disproportion to that of the males, it was thought adviseable that such of the latter as were married should be allowed to take their wives with them on board the ships in which they have been embarked, or even women that cohabited with them; but notwithstanding the

* Naval agent. Died on board the Neptune on the voyage to Port Jackson.

† Surprize, Scarborough, and Neptune.

indulgence held out to them of supplies of provisions and clothing, very few of the two latter descriptions of women have been prevailed upon to accede to the proposal. Such of them, however, as shall arrive within the limits of your Government are to be furnished with the same proportions of those articles as the female convicts.

The three ships above mentioned, and the *Justinian*, which has been taken up as a store-ship, and now in the river under orders to follow, contain a large supply of clothing, provisions, tools, &c., the particulars of which are specified in the inclosed estimates. All these articles will be found to be of the first quality, and will, I hope, be applied to the best possible advantage.

After the arrival of these ships it will be extremely desirable that you should, if no other more eligible situation shall have presented itself to you since your last communications, take the earliest opportunity that circumstances will admit of detaching a considerable number of the convicts to Norfolk Island, with a suitable proportion of provisions, &c. But as the ships in which they are now embarked are chartered by the East India Company to bring home teas from China, it will be necessary that the convicts, with the stores, provisions, &c., on board them, should be landed at Sydney, and that the ships should be discharged, and left at liberty to proceed upon their voyage as soon as possible, employing the services of the *Supply*, tender, in removing such convicts and stores to Norfolk Island or elsewhere whenever that arrangement can be carried into effect. The disembarking the convicts at Sydney, exclusive of the consideration before mentioned, seems indeed to be a measure highly necessary, as from the length of the passage from hence, and the nature of their food, there is every reason to expect that many of them will be reduced to so debilitated a state that immediate relief will be found to be expedient for the preservation of their lives.

The corps which I before informed you was to be raised to serve within your Government, instead of the marines now doing duty there, has been complete for some time past. A detachment from it, consisting of about 100 officers and men, has been put on board the convict ships for their greater security against any attempts which the convicts might meditate, and the remainder, under the command of Major Grose, amounting, as you will see by the enclosed establishment, to upwards of 200 more, will, I expect, embark at Portsmouth on board her Majesty's ship the *Gorgon** in the course of a few days.

Major Grose has been appointed to succeed to the Lieut.-Governor of N. S. Wales, and on his arrival you will direct Major Ross and the officers of the marine corps serving under his command, together with such of the non-commission officers

1789

24 Dec.

Supplies.

Norfolk
Island to
be settled.Sick
convicts.New South
Wales Corps.

Major Grose.

Lieut.-
Governor.

* Major Grose did not leave England until July, 1791. He arrived at Sydney in the ship *Pitt*, 14 February, 1792.

1789

24 Dec.

Marines.

New
company.Phillip to
make
appoint-
ments.

and private men as may be desirous of returning home, to be embarked as soon as possible for that purpose.

I am led to hope from the bounty and other indulgences which you have been authorized to offer to the non-commission officers and men that many of them will be induced to remain within your Government; and if such a number of them as shall be sufficient to compose a company equal to those of the new corps can be prevailed upon to accede to your proposals, his Majesty in such case has signified his intention of allowing you to recommend any three officers from amongst the marines already holding the rank of captain, 1st lieutenant, and 2d lieutenant, whom you may judge to be most deserving of his Majesty's favor, to be appointed to that company, and to be incorporated in the new corps with the rank of captain, lieutenant, and ensign. This measure will, however, be notified to you through his Majesty's Secretary at War by the Gorgon. In the meantime you will make your arrangements accordingly.*

A thousand
more con-
victs to be
sent.

From the present crowded state of the hulks, and the increase which must be expected of the number of felons under sentence of transportation, not only in this kingdom, but in Ireland, after the next Spring Assizes, it is intended that about one thousand men shall be sent abroad, and preparations must be made for their reception. With these last-mentioned convicts it is proposed that an additional company of troops shall be embarked, which, upon their arrival within your Government, will be annexed to the new corps, and will compose a force, I hope, competent to every necessary service that may occur.

King's
promotion.

The promoting Lieutenant King to the rank of master and commander cannot be done without much difficulty and inconvenience†; but as his services at Norfolk Island merit some mark of favor, I have submitted to his Majesty's consideration the appointing Mr. King to be Lieutenant-Governor of that island; and I have the pleasure of informing you that his Majesty has been pleased to order a commission to be prepared for that purpose, to which appointment will be annexed a salary of £250 per annum, payment of which will be provided for in the next estimate to be laid before Parliament, together with a salary for the Deputy-Commissary of Stores and Provisions. I am, &c.,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

King
appointed
Lieut.-
Governor of
Norfolk
Island.

LIEUTENANT RIOU TO THE ADMIRALTY.‡

25 Dec.

Sir, H.M. Guardian, 25 Dec., 1789, Lat. 44° S., long. 40° E.

Admirable
and wonder-
ful conduct.

If any part of the officers or crew of the Guardian should ever survive to get home, I have only to say their conduct after

* The extra company was raised in 1792, and the command given to Captain George Johnston.

† King received his promotion, 2nd March, 1791.

‡ Written in the cabin of the Guardian the day after the vessel struck an iceberg. It was doubtful at the time whether the vessel would sink or swim. Post, p. 310.

the fatal stroke against an island of ice was admirable and wonderful in everything that related to their duties, considered either as private men or on his Majesty's service. 1789
24 Dec.

As there seems to be no possibility of my remaining many hours in this world, I beg leave to recommend to the consideration of the Admiralty a sister, who, if my conduct or services should be found deserving any memory, their favors might be shown to her, together with a widowed mother. I am, &c., Riou and his
relatives.

E. RIOU.

A YOUNG SETTLER.*

1790

EDWARD FOULKES, a young gentleman of the age of nineteen, is desirous of going to Botany Bay in any capacity he may be thought fit for. He has had a good classical education, writes a good hand, and is a good accountant. 5 Jan.

He is recommended by the means of Mrs. Morris's, of Croome's Hill, Greenwich, and is a relation of Mr. and Mrs. Foulkes, Cursitor-street, Chancery Lane.

5 January, 1790.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO THE SECRETARY AT WAR.

Sir, Whitehall, 20th Jan'y, 1790. 20 Jan.

I am commanded to signify to you the King's pleasure that directions be immediately given for the embarkation of the corps raised for service in New South Wales, and commanded by Major Grose, on board his Majesty's ship Gorgon, now lying at the Nore, and ready to receive them. I am, &c., N.S.W.
Corps.

W. W. GRENVILLE.

NORFOLK ISLAND.—LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING'S COMMISSION.† 28 Jan.

George R.

George the Third, &c., to our trusty and well-beloved Lieutenant Philip Gidley King, greeting:—

WE, reposing special trust and confidence in your loyalty, courage, and experience, do, by these presents, constitute and appoint you to be Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Island, in the Pacific Ocean. You are, therefore, as Lieutenant-Governor, to take the said island into your care and charge, and carefully and diligently to discharge the duty of Lieutenant-Governor thereof by doing and performing all and all manner of things thereunto belonging, and we do hereby strictly charge and require all our officers and soldiers Lieut.-
Governor of
Norfolk
Island.

*This is one of the few proposals received by the Government of the day from persons desirous of settling in the colony. Another was sent 8th April, 1791. Post, p. 486.

†King was appointed, in the first instance, Superintendent and Commandant of Norfolk Island, 12th February, 1788. Ante, p. 136. He was recalled in March, 1790, and sent with despatches to England, where he learned that a commission as Lieutenant-Governor had been forwarded to him. He left England by the Gorgon, 15th March, 1791, and took charge at Norfolk Island, from November, 1791, to September, 1796.

1790

28 Jan.

Orders and
instructions.

who shall hereafter be in our said island, and all others whom it may concern, to obey you as our Lieutenant-Governor thereof, and you are to observe and follow such orders and instructions from time to time as you shall receive from us, our Governor of our territory of New South Wales and the islands adjacent for the time being, or any other your superior officer, according to the rules and discipline of war, in pursuance of the trust we hereby repose in you.

Given at our Court at St. James's, the 28th day of January, 1790, in the thirtieth year of our reign.

By his Majesty's command,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO LIEUT.-GOVERNOR KING.

1 Feb

Sir,

Whitehall, 1st Feb., 1790.

King's
appoint-
ment to
Norfolk
Island.

I have laid before the King the representations made by Gov. Phillip of your services since you have been employed under his command, and I have the satisfaction to acquaint you that his Majesty has, as a reward of those services, been pleased to sign a commission appointing you Lieut.-Governor of Norfolk Island, to which appointment it is intended to propose, in the next estimate to be laid before the House of Commons, an annual allowance of two hundred and fifty pounds. I am, &c.,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.*

Government House, Sydney Cove,

My Lord,

Feb. 1st, 1790.

Obstacles to
Govern-
ment.

As every obstacle thrown in the way of the civil government is rendered doubly embarrassing from our situation, and which does not permit those steps which would be taken on similar occasions in any other of his Majesty's settlements, I am under the disagreeable necessity of laying the following particulars before your Lordship.

The night-
watch.

Few nights having past for several months in which individuals had not suffered by having their gardens robbed, or by losing of poultry, I found it necessary to establish a watch, and the regulations (No. 1)† when drawn up were sent to Major Ross for his opinion respecting the detachment, and which he approved of, some little change being made at his request. The watch was then established, and which so fully answered the purpose that for three months not a single robbery was committed in the night.

Its duties.

The watch consisted of twelve convicts. They assembled immediately after the tap-too had beat, and patroll'd during the night. No complaint was ever made of them. They were par-

*The Right Hon. W. W. Grenville succeeded Lord Sydney at the Home Office, 5th June, 1789, but Governor Phillip was not yet aware of the fact.

† Post, p. 292.

ticularly cautioned against having any dispute with a soldier or sailor, and were promised to be rewarded in future if they were honest and vigilant, which they were, for they acted very properly on several occasions when they met with soldiers or sailors in the night, and they prevented many robberies.

Soldiers and sailors, when stopped by the watch, were left at the guard-house till the next morning, when, if nothing criminal was laid to their charge, they were delivered to their proper officers. But a soldier being one night stopped by the watch in the convicts' camp, and delivered, as usual, to the guard, Major Ross, the next morning, sent the adjutant to tell the Judge-Advocate (under whose direction I had placed the night-watch), "that he considered a soldier being stopped, when not committing any unlawful act, as an insult offered to the corps, and that they would not suffer themselves to be treated in that manner, or be controuled by the convicts, while they had bayonets in their hands." (Here I must beg leave to observe to your Lordship that the last sentence, respecting the bayonets, was never mentioned to me till after this business was settled, for if it had I should not have been induced to have withdrawn the order, which directed the night-watch to stop a soldier, by so pointed a menace, for I should not have thought it could tend to the good of his Majesty's service.) As soon as I was informed that Major Ross deemed the stopping that soldier by the night-watch an insult offered to the corps, I desired to see him. Soldiers had been frequently stopped in the night by the watch, and I wished to convince him of the necessity of stopping the soldier, as well as the sailor, when found in the convicts' camp or in suspicious places during the night, and the doing which had been the means of preventing many robberies; but I could obtain no other answer than "that it was an insult to the corps; if I wished to say anything further on that subject, he would wait on me the next day with two of his officers, giving me at the same time to understand that by the 5th Article in the Regulations* given to the watch I had put the soldiers under the command of the convicts, and which Article, he hoped, would be withdrawn."

Major Ross did not deny but that the robberies which had been so very frequent before the watch was established had been very effectually put a stop to. I had pointed out that robberies had been committed by the soldiers, and by whom the stores had been robbed the year round, which could not have been the case if the watch had been then established, and the little probability there was of detecting a soldier if he was never to be questioned, unless caught in the very act of stealing; but as he persisted in the opinion that it was an insult offered the corps, and that they

1790

1 Feb.

A soldier arrested.

Threats.

An insult to the corps.

Article 5.

The soldiers and the watch.

* The 5th Article of the Regulations is as follows: "Any soldier or seaman found straggling after the taptoo has beat, or who may be found in the convicts' huts, is to be detained, and information to be immediately given to the nearest guard-house."

1790

1 Feb.

were put under the command of convicts, no other alternative was left me but to withdraw the order respecting the soldiers, and consequently leave them at liberty to be about the gardens and the stores at all hours of the night, or run the risk of disputes between the soldiers and the watch; and it was not to be supposed that soldiers would quietly suffer themselves to be stopped by a convict watchman, after such declarations from their commandant, and which were known.

Article 5
withdrawn.

I therefore withdrew the 5th Article of the instructions, so far as it respected the detaining any soldier found straggling after the taptoo had beat, and having examined the report made by the captain of the day to his commandant, the information given me by the Judge-Advocate, and the examination of the watch, though I saw nothing which in my opinion could be deemed an insult to the corps, still, being desirous of doing away that idea, I sent the adjutant to inform his commandant that, though there did not appear to me to have been any insult offered, I was still ready to direct such enquiry to be made as Major Ross might judge necessary, and as he had proposed bringing two officers with him, I desired, if he thought it necessary to see me with two officers, that all the officers at head-quarters might come with him. The answer I received was

Overtures
repulsed.

“that he still thought an insult had been offered the corps, but as he had taken the necessary step, he did not wish any further inquiry.” What those necessary steps are I know not, nor do I know if all or any of the officers are of this commandant's opinion; but as I have now laid before your Lordship every information I have received on this business, and the regulations for the watch, with the officer of the guard's report, are enclosed, if I have by giving an improper authority to the convicts employed as a night, watch (and I have none but convicts to employ on such a service) put the soldiers under the command of convicts and insulted the detachment, it will be seen; but if, on the contrary, it appears that, as the only means of preventing those consequences which might naturally have been expected to follow such declarations from the commandant of the detachment, I have been driven to the necessity of withdrawing an order calculated for the public good, and which so fully answered the end proposed, and that I have been without reason accused of insulting those who are under my command, as I have been on a former occasion accused of oppression* for calling upon officers in their turn to sit as members of the criminal courts, then I trust and hope that such an inquiry will be ordered as may the most effectually do away such groundless charges.

Inquiry
courted.

No help
from
officers.

As I have said that I am a stranger to the officers' opinions on this matter, it may be necessary to inform your Lordship of the state of the detachment, and which will point out my reason for never making any reference to or taking the opinion of officers

in any shape. I have always used my endeavours to reconcile them to their commandant, and have cautiously avoided anything which might tend to have a contrary effect.

1790

1 Feb.

Officers have been put under arrest by their commandant, and courts-martial have been demanded, and which have likewise been requested by the officers in defence of their conduct, but no inquiry into the conduct of any individual above the rank of a non-commissioned officer can take place, and the consequences will be obvious to your Lordship, where so little harmony prevails between the commandant and his officers. The strength of the detachment consists of only eighteen officers, one of whom is on duty at Norfolk Island, and a second has never done any duty since he was appointed by Major Ross; of the sixteen remaining for the duty of this settlement, five have been put under arrest by the commandant, and are only doing duty till a general court-martial can be assembled, in consequence of a sentence passed by them at a battalion court-martial; a sixth officer is suspended in consequence of a representation made by the corps of his unofficerlike behaviour*; a seventh is suspended by his commandant for unofficerlike behaviour in taking a soldier who had been abused by a convict to make his complaint to the magistrates, without having first given information to his commandant; and both adjutant and quarter-master of the detachment have been equally under his displeasure, whilst the Judge-Advocate's conduct has been complained of by Major Ross, as commandant of the detachment, and as the Lieutenant-Governor, and the Judge-Advocate, in his turn, has represented his having been treated in such a manner by the Lieut.-Governor and Captain Campbell, before convicts and others, that he wished to resign his office of Judge-Advocate; and Captain Hunter, who one day in the week, while the *Sirius* is in the harbour, assists the Judge-Advocate as a Justice of the Peace, thought himself treated on the same occasion so very improperly by the Lieutenant-Governor that he represented it to me, and desired to be excused from that weekly attendance as a magistrate; and had those two officers declined that duty I could not have replaced them, for though other officers have been appointed to act as civil magistrates I have found it necessary to avoid calling on them to act in that capacity.

Wholesale
suspensions.

Friction
everywhere

Your Lordship will excuse my having entered on this detail; it will point out the necessity of some change being made, or an additional force being sent out; and it will prevent my troubling your Lordship further on this subject, as I shall now enclose the letters I have received from the Lieut.-Governor and Judge-Advocate to Mr. Nepean†; but I feel myself bound, in justice to the

Change
necessary.

* *Note by Governor Phillip* :—"This officer has since returned to his duty, at the desire of Major Ross and all the officers of the detachment."

† *Ante*, 262-264.

1790 Judge-Advocate, to say that I have seen no cause ever to be dissatisfied with his conduct; on the contrary, I have always found him ready to exert himself for the publick good. I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

Regulations. The following regulations to be observed by the night-watch appointed for the more effectual preservation of public and private property, and for preventing or detecting the commission of nightly depredations.

Duties of watch.

A NIGHT-WATCH, consisting of twelve persons, divided into four parties, is appointed, and fully authorised to patrol at all hours in the night, and to visit such places as may be deemed necessary for the discovery of any felony, trespass, or misdemeanor, and for the apprehending and securing for examination any person or persons that may appear to them concerned therein, either by entrance into any suspected hut or dwelling, or by such other manner as may appear expedient.

Divisions.

2.—Those parts in which the convicts reside are to be divided, and numbered in the following manner:—‘The convicts’ huts and the public farm on the east side of the cove to be the first division. Those at the brick-kilns and the detached parties at the different farms in that district the second division. Those on the western side, as far as the line that separates the district of the women from the men, the third division. The huts occupied from that line to the hospital, and from thence to the observatory, to be the fourth division.

Inspectors.

3.—These districts or divisions to be each of them under the particular inspection of one person, who shall be judged qualified to inform himself of the actual residence of each individual in his district, as well as of his business, connections, and acquaintance.

Offences.

4.—Cognisance is to be taken of such convicts as may sell or barter their slops or provisions, as also of such as game for either of the aforesaid articles, and report is to be made of them to the Judge-Advocate.

Stragglers.

5.—Any soldier or seaman found stragling after the taptoo has beat, or who may be found in the convicts’ huts, is to be detained, and information to be immediately given to the neearest guard-house.

Information to the watch

6.—On any person’s being robbed during the night, he is to give immediate information thereof to the watch of his district, who on the instant of application being made shall use the most effectual means to trace out the offender or offenders, so that he or they may be brought to justice

No gratuities.

7.—The watch of each district to be under the direction of one person, who will be named for that purpose, and all the patrols to be immediately under the inspection of Herbert Keeling. They are never to receive any fee, gratuity, or reward from any individual to engage their exertions in the execution of the above

trust; nor are they to receive any stipulated encouragement for the conviction of any offender; but their diligence and good behaviour will be rewarded by the Governor, and for which purpose their conduct will be strictly attended to by those who are in authority over them.

8.—The night-watch to go out as soon as the taptoo has done beating, to return to their huts when the working-drum beats in the morning, and reports to be made at twelve o'clock to the Judge-Advocate of all robberies and misdemeanors, by Herbert Keeling. Any assistance the patrols may require will be given them on applying to the officer of the nearest guard, and by the civil power if necessary; for which application is to be made to provost-martial.

1789

Report to
the Judge-
Advocate.

9.—Any negligence on the part of those who may be employed on this duty will be punished with the utmost rigour of the law.

Breach of
duty.

The night-watch to consist of the following persons:—

Charles Peat.	Wm. Bradbury.
William Hubbard.	Thos. Oldfield.
John Coen Walsh.	Stephen Le Grove.
John Neal.	John Archer.

A. PHILLIP.

7th August, 1789.

DAVID COLLINS, Judge-Advocate.

9th November, 1789.

NOTWITHSTANDING the 5th Article of the regulations established for the night-watch directs that any soldier found stragling after the taptoo has beat, or in the convicts' huts, is to be detained, and information immediately given to the nearest guard, the night-watch are not in future to stop any soldier, unless he is found in a riot, or committing any unlawful act, in which case such soldier is immediately to be taken to the nearest guard.

Article 5
withdrawn.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

Government House, Sydney Cove,

My Lord,

February 12th, 1790.

12 Feb.

I had the honor of informing your Lordship of the state of this colony by the last ships which sailed from hence, and I shall now proceed to lay before your Lordship such circumstances as have occurred since their departure.

In February [1789] the Supply, armed tender, went to Norfolk Island with provisions and twenty-seven convicts, for although the officer who commanded there had but a very small number of free people, and in whom alone he could place any confidence, yet from the apparent impossibility of the convicts succeeding I never supposed they would attempt an escape, and which was the less to be apprehended from the great lenity they had been treated with,

Norfolk
Island.

1790

9 Nov.

A convict
plot.The
mutineers'
plan.Seize the
Supply and
go to
Otaheite.A woman
informs.The mutiny
general.The
ringleader
escapes the
halter.King's
prudence.

A hurricane.

But when the Supply returned I was informed that the convicts had laid a plan for confining the officers and free people on the island, which was to be carried into execution the first Saturday after the Supply or any store-ship arrived.

It was usual for the commandant to go every Saturday to a farm at a small distance from the settlement. There he was to be seized, and they were then to send, in his name, for the surgeon and several others, who, as they came out, were to be confined with him, and the marines, going on Saturdays into the woods to get cabbage-tree, were to be met on their return and confined with the rest, as well as those who came on shore from the ship, after which two convicts were to go off in a small boat belonging to the island and inform those on board that their boat had been staved in landing. This intelligence they supposed would bring more people and boats on shore. The people were to be secured with the others, and the convicts were then to go and take possession of the ship, with which they intended to go to Otaheite, and there form a settlement.

A woman discovered this scheme to a man belonging to the Sirius, with whom she lived, in hopes of persuading him to leave the island, and some of the convicts, being examined, confessed their intentions.

The commandant, finding there were only three convicts who had not engaged in this affair, and that it would not be possible to send them all away when a ship should arrive, after taking such steps as he judged would prevent their attempting to carry their scheme into execution, returned them all to their different labours, and when the Supply arrived he received the convicts sent in her.

The convict who had first proposed the scheme was sent here to be tried; but no capital punishment could be inflicted upon him, as no attempt had been made to carry the scheme into execution.

My former letters mentioned that the officer sent to make the settlement on Norfolk Island, and who I had appointed to remain there as superintendant and commandant, was the second lieutenant of the Sirius. He speaks well of the few he had to depend on, and I beg leave to assure your Lordship that he acted in that affair with great prudence.

It had been thought necessary, after the discovery was made, to cut down all the trees which were within a certain distance of the huts, and which probably saved many lives, for in the following month they had a violent hurricane. It came from the south-east, and crossed the island, confining itself to a very narrow space, so that while all the trees on one side of the valley were broken down or torn up by the roots, the trees on the opposite side did not suffer the smallest injury. One tree, which from its situation had been left standing, fell on a granary, which it

destroyed. This hurricane was accompanied by very heavy rain, and a torrent of water, which came down from the hills, destroyed all their gardens of Indian corn, as well as doing considerable damage to the provisions.

1790

12 Feb.

I do not think the island is subject to hurricanes; if it was, some vestiges would appear, which I am told is not the case. Several of the pines which were blown down measured an hundred and eighty feet in length.

Gigantic pines.

When the *Sirius* sailed from hence the 2nd of October, 1788, Captain Hunter was to have made the passage round the South Cape, which I am confident will be found the best passage from hence to the Cape of Good Hope: but having the wind southerly when he sailed, he did not attempt that passage, but went round Cape Horn. Arrived at the Cape of Good Hope the 2nd of January. Left it the 20th of February, and anchored here the 8th of May, 1789, having met with a very heavy gale of wind when so close in with the South Cape that it was for some time doubtful if it would be possible to clear it.

Voyage of the *Sirius*.

By the *Sirius* we received some seed wheat and barley and four months' flour for the settlement, which was all that ship could bring, with a year's provisions for the ship's company.

Corn for Port Jackson.

After the arrival of the *Sirius* the *Supply* was sent to Norfolk Island with provisions, and carried a lieutenant, one non-commissioned officer, and fourteen privates.

Two guns had been landed from the *Supply*, and a small redoubt was to be erected, which, with this little additional force, will, I presume, prevent the convicts from making any future attempts. The *Supply*, after landing the people and provisions, had orders to go in search of the reef seen by the *Golden Grove*, store-ship, and a shoal or island which Lieutenant Shortland informed me (by the *Sirius*) he had seen in his passage to the northward. The *Supply* cruized for several days in the latitude and longitude in which Lieutenant Shortland places the island, but returned without seeing it. There is some reason to think that a mistake has been made as to the latitudes in which the island and shoal are placed by Lieutenant Shortland*; and I trouble your Lordship with this information in case any ship sent into those seas should go to the northward without calling at this port, and which, from the accounts received from the Cape of

Fortifications.

Island and shoal.

* Sir Charles Middleton's Island and Middleton Shoals, so named by Lieut. Shortland after Sir Charles Middleton, Comptroller of the Navy. Shortland gave the latitude and longitude as follows:—"Sir Charles Middleton's Island, lat. 28° 10' S., long. 159° 50' E. Middleton Shoals, lat. 29° 20' S., long. 158° 48' E." Search was afterwards made for the island and shoals by Lieut. Shortland, in the schooner *Francis*, and by Lieut. Ball, in the *Supply*, but without success. They failed to discover the shoals, because the latitude and longitude had been in the first instance incorrectly observed. The island, according to modern authorities, has no existence. The "Directory of the South Pacific Ocean," p. 856, gives the following information:—"Middleton Reef, an extensive reef, covered at high water. Its west elbow, according to Captain Denham, is in lat. 29° 27' 40" S., long. 159° 3' 38" E. The following reported dangers may be said not to exist: Middleton Island, or Sir Charles Middleton's Island, said to be very high, in lat. 27° 58' S., long. 159° 30' E."

1790

12 Feb.

Good Hope, there is reason to suppose the *Bounty*, store-ship, has done. The weather did not admit of the *Supply*'s going in search of the shoal seen by the *Golden Grove*. The *Sirius* is now under repair; and, when ready for sea, I shall send that ship and the *Supply* to determine the situation and extent of the shoals and the island.

Vegetables
and fish.

When the *Supply* left Norfolk Island the public were all very healthy, the damages sustained by the hurricane had been repaired, and they had vegetables in the greatest abundance. They get fish when the weather permits the boats to go without the reef, and at times in such quantities that fish is served to the people in lieu of salt provisions. They make their lines from the flax-plant; but unfortunately we have not any person who understands how to dress it.

Cotton and
cocoanuts.

Half a pod of cotton being found on this island, supposed to be brought there by a bird, and a cocoanut which was perfectly sound, and appeared to have been but a short time in the water, being thrown upon the beach, have given some reason to suppose that both those articles will be found on some island at no great distance.

New
Zealand
canoes and
idols.

Parts of two canoes, which answer the description given of the canoes of New Zealand, have been found on the rocks, and a wooden figure (very rudely carved), and which in every respect answers the description given of the idols seen in the Friendly Islands, has likewise been found, and probably was carried thither in one of the canoes.

Lord Howe
Island.

Lord Howe Island has been examined, but no fresh water or good anchorage being found it can be of no other advantage to this settlement than occasionally supplying a few turtle.

Rose Hill.

I had the honor of informing your Lordship that a settlement was intended to be made at a place I named Rose Hill. At the head of this harbour there is a creek which at half flood has water for large boats to go three miles up, and one mile higher the water is fresh and the soil good. A very industrious man who I brought from England is employed there at present,* and has under his direction one hundred convicts, who are employed in clearing and cultivating the ground. A barn, granary, and other necessary buildings are erected, and seventy-seven acres in corn promise a good crop. The soil is good, and the country for seventy miles to the westward, which is as far as I have examined, lays well for cultivation, but even there the labour of clearing the ground is very great, and I have seen none that can be cultivated without cutting down the timber, except some few particular spots, which, from their situation (lying at a distance from either of the harbours) can be of no advantage to us at present; and I presume the meadows mentioned in "*Captain Cook's Voyage*" were seen from the high grounds about Botany Bay, and from whence they appear well to the eye, but when

Cook's
"meadows."

* Dodd, Phillip's servant. He died January, 1791.

examined are found to be marshes, the draining of which would be a work of time, and not to be attempted by the first settlers. But I shall have the honor of giving your Lordship a more particular account of the country hereafter.

1790

12 Feb.

The captain's guard which untill lately did duty at Rose Hill is now reduced to a lieutenant and twelve privates, and intended merely as a guard to the store which contains the provisions, and which is in the redoubt; for I am sensible there is nothing to be apprehended from the natives, and the little attention which had been desired of the officers more than what was immediately garrison duty, when at Rose Hill, is now no longer required.

Rose Hill guard.

At Sydney Cove all the officers are in good huts and the men in barracks; and, although many unforeseen difficulties have been met with, I believe there is not an individual, from the Governor to the private soldier, whose situation is not more eligible at this time than he had any reason to expect it could be in the course of the three years station; and it is the same with the convicts, and those who have been in any ways industrious have vegetables in plenty. The buildings now carrying on are of brick and stone. The house intended for myself was to consist of only three rooms; but, having a good foundation, has been enlarged, contains six rooms, and is so well built that I presume it will stand for a great number of years.

Comfort at Sydney Cove.

The stores have been lately overrun with rats, and they are equally numerous in the gardens, where they do considerable damage; and as the loss in the stores could only be known by removing all the provisions, that was done, and many casks of flour and rice were found to be damaged or totally destroyed. The loss in those two articles by the rats since landing has been more than twelve thousand [pounds] weight.

Ravages of rats.

While the stores were under examination the Commissary one morning found that a key had been broken in a lock. This had been done in the night, and a convict, Smith, knew the wards of the key left in the lock to belong to a marine, who, being confined with several others on suspicion, one of them offered himself as an evidence for the Crown, and accused six of his comrades, who were tried, and the charge being fully proved the six were executed. One of those who suffered accused two others, but no proof could be brought against them.

Six marines hanged for theft.

These men had for many months robbed the stores of provisions and spirits, and in a manner that did not expose them to any great risk; for having procured keys for all the locks, they never attempted to rob the store but when one of the party was centinel at the door. The key was in the lock when they unexpectedly heard the patrol, and, in the hurry, they turned the key the wrong way, and not being able to get it out broke it, knowing that the locks were always examined by the patrol.

How the stores were robbed.

1790

12 Feb.

The night-
watch.

Vegetables and provisions having been frequently stolen in the night from convicts and others, twelve convicts were chosen as a night-watch,* and they have effectually answered the end proposed, no robbery having been committed for several months, and the convicts in general have lately behaved better than I ever expected.

Executions.

Only two convicts have suffered death in the last year; four were executed the first year. A marine tried for committing a rape on an infant was found guilty; but being particularly recommended for mercy by the criminal court, his sentence was changed to transportation to Norfolk Island for life.

A marine
transported.A fine
climate.

As near two years have now passed since we first landed in this country, some judgment may be formed of the climate, and I believe a finer or more healthy climate is not to be found in any part of the world. Of 1,030 people who were landed, many of whom were worn out by old age, the scurvy, and various disorders, only seventy-two have died in one-and-twenty months; and by the surgeon's returns it appears that twenty-six of those died from disorders of long standing, and which it is more than probable would have carried them off much sooner in England. Fifty-nine children have been born in the above time.

Lost in the
bush.

Since the last ship sailed (November, 1788) two marines and two convicts have been lost in the woods. One convict has been killed by the natives, and ten wounded—for it is impossible to prevent the convicts from straggling, and the natives having been robbed and ill-treated, now attack those they meet unarmed.

A native
captured.Carried off
by small-
pox.

Not succeeding in my endeavours to persuade some of the natives to come and live with us, I ordered one to be taken by force, which was what I would gladly have avoided, as I knew it must alarm them; but not a native had come near the settlement for many months, and it was absolutely necessary that we should attain their language, or teach them ours, that the means of redress might be pointed out to them if they are injured, and to reconcile them by showing the many advantages they would enjoy by mixing with us. A young man, who appeared to be about twenty-four years of age, was taken the latter end of December [1788], and unfortunately died of the small-pox in May [1789], when he was perfectly reconciled to his situation, and appeared so sensible of the advantages he enjoyed that, fully persuaded he would not leave us, I had for some time freed him from all restraint.† He had lived with me for the last two months, and his behaviour gave good reason for showing a more favourable opinion of the people of this country than what has been drawn from the report made by those who formerly touched on this coast.

* Ante, pp. 288-293.

† Aranbanoo. According to Hunter, Phillip called him Manly, because he was captured at Manly Cove.

Whether the small-pox, which has proved fatal to great numbers of the natives, is a disorder to which they were subject before any Europeans visited this country, or whether it was brought by the French ships, we have not yet attained sufficient knowledge of the language to determine. It never appeared on board any of the ships in our passage, nor in the settlement, until some time after numbers of the natives had been seen dead with the disorder in different parts of the harbour, and two men, with a boy of about eight years of age and a girl of eleven, had been brought to the hospital, in the small-pox.

1790

12 Feb.

Origin of the disease unknown.

Both the men died, but the boy and girl recovered. These people were brought up the middle and the latter end of April, and the small-pox never appeared in the settlement until the 2nd of May, when a man belonging to the Supply was seized with the disorder and died a few days afterwards; nor has it ever appeared in the settlement except on that man and the native who caught the disorder from the children.

Curious facts.

In addition to the loss of provisions which we had sustained by the rats, a very considerable quantity of flour, rice, &c., had been lost and damaged in the passage by the badness of the casks and by a quantity of oil and tar having been put on board of the store-ships.

Provisions damaged.

Although there could be little doubt but that supplies would arrive before the provisions we had in store were expended, it was necessary to guard against accident. I therefore directed only two-thirds of a ration to be issued to those who have hitherto received a full ration, by which our provisions would last until June, some few articles excepted. This order, which took place the 1st of November, 1789, included every person in the settlement, and at the same time the Sirius and Supply's ship's companies went to three-fourths allowance.

Reduced ration.

In December the corn at Rose Hill was got in; the corn was exceeding good. About two hundred bushels of wheat and sixty of barley, with a small quantity of flax, Indian corn, and oats, all which is preserved for seed. Here I beg leave to observe to your Lordship that if settlers are sent out, and the convicts divided amongst them, this settlement will very shortly maintain itself, but without which this country cannot be cultivated to any advantage. At present I have only one person (who has about an hundred convicts under his direction) who is employed in cultivating the ground for the publick benefit, and he has returned the quantity of corn above mentioned into the publick store. The officers have not raised sufficient to support the little stock they have. Some ground I have had in cultivation will return about forty bushels of wheat into store, so that the produce of the labour of the convicts employed in cultivation has been very short of what might have been expected, and which I take the liberty of pointing out to your Lordship in this place, to show as fully as possible the

Harvest.

Settlers wanted.

Poor results.

1790

12 Feb.

Officers and
convict
labour.

state of this colony, and the necessity of the convicts being employed by those who have an interest in their labour. The giving convicts to the officers has been hitherto necessary, but it is attended with many inconveniences, for which the advantages arising to the officers do not make amends. It will not therefore be continued after the detachment is relieved, unless particularly directed. The plan I should propose for giving the convicts to settlers will be submitted to your Lordship's consideration in another letter. The numbers employed in cultivation will of course be increased, as the necessary buildings are finished, but which will be a work of time ; for the numbers in this settlement who do nothing towards their own support exceed those employed for the public.

The fire-
stick.

My intentions of turning swine into the woods to breed have been prevented by the natives so frequently setting fire to the country.

Lost in bush.

The *Sirius*, for the conveniency of refitting, had gone into a small cove on the north side of this harbour ; and it was customary for the people to walk from the opposite shore to the ship, which one of the mates attempting lost himself in the woods, and every search that could be made to find him proved ineffectual.

Two natives
caught.

From the time our native died, orders had been given to take another whenever an opportunity offered ; but they were always on their guard, and I was desirous of it being done without being under the necessity of firing upon them. Towards the end of November two natives were taken,* and one of them proved to be a chief, who had been frequently mentioned to us as a great warrior. The necessary precautions were taken to prevent their escape, but which was effected by the chief, a fortnight after he was taken, from the neglect of those who had the care of him ; the other remains† ; he lives with me, and every possible means are used to reconcile him to us, and in which I make no doubt but that we shall succeed. The little information I am able to give your Lordship of these people and the country will be the subject of another letter.‡

One escapes.

Return of
the Supply.

In November the *Supply* sailed for Norfolk Island with some convicts, and returned after being absent about six weeks. All the people on that island were well, and their crops, after all they had suffered from rats, birds, and a worm which had done them considerable damage, so good that they had grain sufficient for six months' bread for everyone upon the island, reserving sufficient for their next year's crops.

The *Sirius*.

The third lieutenant of the *Sirius*§ had for a considerable time laboured under a disorder, which terminated in the loss of his senses, I therefore appointed another officer in his room. And as the *Sirius* was now nearly ready for sea, having repaired the damages

* Coleby and Bennilong.

† Bennilong.

‡ Post, pp. 303-310.

§ Lieutenant Maxwell.

sustained in the gale of wind, and being strengthened in the best manner our situation permitted, all the officers belonging to her would be necessary when she went to sea, and as Norfolk Island was now settled, and likely to answer the views of Government, I discharged the second lieutenant from the *Sirius*,* and appointed another officer in his room; consequently, that officer, who continues superintendant and commandant of Norfolk Island, will no longer receive any pay from the Admiralty, and I beg leave to recommend him to your Lordship's attention as an officer who has fully merited everything I can say in his favour.

1790

12 Feb.

Commenda-
tion of King.

Early in January, 1790, the *Supply* again sailed for Norfolk Island with more convicts; and in her passage left a small party on Lord Howe Island to turn turtle; but in fifteen days only three were taken, so that no great advantages will at present accrue from thence. The island has fresh water, but no good anchoring-ground.

Convicts
sent to
Norfolk
Island.

Since the deaths mentioned in a former part of this letter, one woman has suffered for a robbery, five children have died, and twenty-eight children have been born, making in all twenty-seven deaths and eighty-seven births.

Births and
deaths.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir,

Sydney Cove, February 12, 1790.

As the Lieutenant-Governor† has thought I did not pay a proper attention to his complaints of the Judge-Advocate's conduct, I trouble you with the enclosed papers, which contain all that passed on the subject, except my being given to understand, five months afterwards, that a proper attention had not been paid to that complaint.

Official
disputes.

No. 1‡ is a copy of a letter I received from the Lieutenant-Governor, No. 2§ the Judge-Advocate's letter on that occasion, and No. 3|| my answer to the Lieut.-Governor's letter.

As to the preamble in the Lieut.-Governor's letter, it would not merit my notice but to say that he was sensible that no orders ever had been left with anyone but himself; and as to parties of pleasure, he knew likewise that I had never been a day, and very seldom an hour, on that account; and he might have known that my absence which gave room for his complaint against the Judge-Advocate was at a time when my state of health was such that I should have been [better] pleased to remain in my bed than to have gone to Rose Hill to sleep on the boards in a hut belonging to the man who has the direction of the convicts. A journey I made soon after we landed fixed a complaint in my side which has rendered the fatigues of examining the country round us not parties of pleasure, but parties in which nothing but a sense

Phillip
explains.

Ill-health.

* Lieutenant King.

† Major Ross.

‡ Ante, p. 262.

§ Ante, p. 263.

|| Ante, p. 264.

- 1790 of duty and necessity would make me engage ; and, in fact, they
 12 Feb are such parties that they have lately been declined by most of
 those who were at first induced to engage in them from motives
 of curiosity.
- Major Ross. As to the Lieut.-Governor's saying that he is in the dark with
 respect to the line of conduct I wish him to pursue, I can only
 say that before we landed he knew the intentions of Government
 respecting this settlement as fully as I could explain them ; and
 after we had been landed some months, when he intimated that
 he had understood from Lord Howe that it had not been deter-
 mined in what part of the coast the settlement would be made,
 that therefore he supposed I was at liberty to remove if I found
 a better situation, and to detain the ships for that purpose, and
 giving me to understand that he thought himself entitled to more
 confidence than had been placed in him, I desired him to come
 to me the next day, which he did, and I then endeavoured to
 remove so groundless a cause of discontent by every means in
 my power. I read to him every part of my instructions relating
 to the settlement, and he left me, I thought, fully satisfied and
 contented ; and prior to the above time, when the officers had
 been assembled, and refused the little interference respecting
 the convicts which I had asked of them, though their comman-
 dant at that time had said nothing which could give reason
 to suppose he disapproved of their conduct in that respect, and
 which I thought I had a right to expect from him ; yet, when
 he told me some days after the meeting that he himself was
 ready to give me every assistance in his power, I accepted the
 offer with thanks, and in a long conversation pointed out to
 him that the great object we had to attain was the rendering the
 settlement independent with respect to the necessaries of life, and
 that as the outlines of the little plan I had formed on the passage
 were done away by the resolution the officers had taken, we would,
 as we proceeded in clearing the ground round us, get into some
 regular plan ; and I desired that he would look on the convicts on
 one side of the cove as immediately under his directions, those on
 the opposite side to remain under mine. The Lieut.-Governor
 then very well understood what I expected and wished, and on
 every occasion I readily acknowledged the assistance I received ;
 but a warmth of temper, which has been the source of many dis-
 contents, has obliged me for some time past to avoid, as far as
 the service permits, calling on the Lieutenant-Governor otherwise
 than as the commandant of the detachment. At the same time,
 no order has ever been given which might in any shape tend to
 restrict his authority. So far from it that from the time we
 landed to the present time it has been understood by every one in
 this settlement that all orders given by the Lieut.-Governor are
 to have the same effect as if given by me ; and whatever has been
- The place of settlement.
- Misconcep-
 tions.
- Ross's offer
 of assistance
- His hot
 temper.
- Treated
 with con-
 sideration.

demanded from the stores by him has always been delivered without any reference to me, in consequence of an order to the Commissary for that purpose. 1790 12 Feb.

The Lieut.-Governor has complained of that part of my letter in which I request that the peace of the settlement may not be disturbed: but have I not had sufficient cause to make that request? Has not representation or complaint been too frequent? Was not the answer given by him to a convict followed by a behaviour on the part of that wretch which drew on him a severe sentence from the criminal court? Did not the Lieut.-Governor, when that convict was under examination, behave in such a manner to Captn. Hunter and the Judge-Advocate that the former wished to be excused attending one day in the week as a Justice of the Peace, that he might not subject himself in future to such treatment when acting as a magistrate, and the latter wished to resign his office of Judge-Advocate in consequence of the treatment he had received from the Lieut.-Governor and Captn. Campbell in the presence of convicts and others? I quote the words those officers made use of when they represented that matter to me. And did not the Lieut.-Governor's conduct, as it appears from the evidence of several of his officers, when Captain Campbell refused the duty of the criminal court, bring this settlement to touch on the moment of a general confusion? Ross's conduct.

Surely I have had sufficient reason for desiring that the peace of the settlement might not be disturbed, and if my forbearance (which the peculiar situation I am in, and characters which cannot be drawn in a letter have made me think necessary) does not lay me open to censure, I cannot think that I have reason to apprehend it on any other account. Phillip's forbearance.

It has been said by the Lieut.-Governor "that the detachment had not justice done them, in not having received the necessaries ordered out for them," and he has been repeatedly called on to say what those necessaries are, and to explain himself, that an enquiry might be made, but from his answers nothing more can be drawn than that the Admiralty had informed him the detachment would, on their landing, be supplied with what might be necessary to render their situation comfortable. I think they are very comfortable, and much more so than they had reason to expect from the service on which they are employed, and the nature of the country; nor have I any reason to think that the officers in general are dissatisfied on that head. As to the necessaries sent out for the detachment, they have never been in the charge of any person but the quarter-master of the detachment, with the exception of their canteens, for which they had not room in their own store. And as to those necessaries which were sent for the use of the settlement, they have not only had a full proportion, but likewise a considerable part of those articles Ross's statement. His complaint groundless.

1790

12 Feb.

which were intended for the convicts only, such as shirts, frocks, and shoes, and I believe of the necessary articles sent out for the use of the settlement now remaining the greatest part are in possession of the detachment. I do not think it necessary to trouble you with letters which have passed on the above occasion; they will be forwarded hereafter. The charge has not a shadow of truth to support it.

Refer to
Lord
Sydney.

I will now, sir, conclude this letter, which, writ to explain myself so fully as not to be under the necessity of writing a second on the subject, has made a very long one, with requesting that such part, or the whole, as you judge proper, may be communicated to Lord Sydney.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

An after-
thought.

After reading this letter, which I have written in haste, and with a desire of explaining how little reason there has been for complaint, I think it appears so like a letter to justify my own conduct that I wish you only to lay the enclosed letters before Ld. Sydney, and explain to his L^dship that the preamble in the Lieut.-Gov.'s letters was not noticed in my answers, as I did not think it merited any attention.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

Government House, Sydney Cove,

February 13th, 1790.

13 Feb.

Charts.

My Lord,

In the charts of Botany Bay, Port Jackson, and Broken Bay, with the entrance of the harbour on a larger scale, which I have the honour of sending your Lordship, such parts of these harbours which have not been surveyed are from eye-draughts made in the different excursions, and sufficiently correct to give a pretty just idea of their different branches.

Botany Bay

In order to get a knowledge of the country round this settlement, frequent excursions have been made since the ships sailed in November, 1788; soon after which I went to Botany Bay, and the five days spent in that harbour confirmed me in the opinion I had first formed of it—that it afforded no eligible situation for fixing the settlement, and was a bad harbour, not affording good security for ships against the easterly winds, which frequently blow very hard in the winter; and which has been further proved by Captain Hunter and the first lieutenant of the *Sirius*, when there to survey the bay.

Broken Bay

After having been several times with the boats to Broken Bay, in order to examine the different branches in that harbour, a river was found, but the want of provisions obliged us to return without being able to trace it to its source, which has since been done; and in the sixteen days we were then out all those branches which had any depth of water were traced as far as the boats could proceed.

The river, which I named Hawkesbury, after the Lord Hawkesbury,* is laid down in the chart from an eye-sketch made by Captain Hunter, as we rowed up it. The breadth of this river is from three hundred to eight hundred feet, and it appears from the soundings we had to be navigable for the largest merchant ships to the foot of Richmond Hill; but as the water near the head of the river sometimes rises, after very heavy rains, thirty feet above its common level, it would not be safe for ships to go far up; but fifteen or twenty miles below Richmond Hill they would lay in fresh water and perfectly safe. I speak of Richmond Hill as being the head of the river, it there growing very shallow, and dividing into two branches.†

The high rocky country which forms Broken Bay is lost as you proceed up the Hawkesbury,‡ and the banks of the river are then covered with timber, the soil a rich light mould, and judging from the little we saw of the country, I should suppose it good land to a very considerable extent; the other branches of fresh water are shoal, but probably run many miles further into the country than we could trace them with our boats. On these rivers we saw great numbers of wild ducks and some black swans; and on the banks of the Hawkesbury several decoys made by the natives for to catch the quail.

Richmond Hill (near the foot of which a fall of water prevented our proceeding further with the boats) is the southern extremity of a range of hills, which, running to the northward, most probably join the mountains which lay nearly parallel to the coast, from fifty to sixty miles inland. The soil of Richmond Hill is good, and it lays well for cultivation. Our prospect from the hill was very extensive to the southward and eastward, the country appearing, from the height at which we were, to be a level covered with timber; there is a flat of six or seven miles between Richmond Hill and a break in the mountains, which separates Lansdown and Carmarthen Hills; and in this flat I suppose the Hawkesbury continues its course, but which could not be seen for the timber that, with very few exceptions, covers the country wherever the soil is good.

The great advantages of so noble a river, when a settlement can be made on its banks, will be obvious to your Lordship.

Broken Bay has been described in my former letters. Pitt-water as having eighteen feet at low water over a bank which lays across its entrance; and the south-west branch, as well as the western branch, which runs off from it (and leads to the Hawkesbury), as having water for the largest ships, and affording perfect security for a thousand sail; the north-west branch has only water for very small vessels. There is no danger going into this harbour but what is pointed out in the chart.

* Lord Hawkesbury was then President of the Council of Trade and Plantations.

† One, the Nepean (south), the other the Grose (west).

‡ See Appendix D.

1790

13 Feb.

Rose Hill.

The
Nepean.The Blue
Mountains.

Fine land.

Natives
harmless.

Settlement.

Convict
labour.Land for the
military.

The settlement I had the honor of mentioning to your Lordship as made at Port Jackson, near the head of the harbour [Rose Hill], very fully answers my expectations; the soil is exceeding good, lays well for cultivation, and is well watered. Six miles to the southward there is a small fresh-water river; and twenty miles to the westward there is a more considerable river, the source of which I suppose to be at the foot of the mountains. The banks of this river, which most probably empties itself into the Hawkesbury,* are high; the soil a good light mould and covered with trees; the wood of some of these trees is very light; they are about the size of large walnut-trees, which they resemble†; they shed their leaves, and bear a small fruit which is said to be very wholesome. This river likewise frequently rises thirty feet above its common level; it is, as far as I have seen it, from three hundred to four hundred feet in breadth. I named it the Nepean, and its source will be traced in the course of the winter; and from its banks I hope to reach the mountains, which has been attempted by a party who crossed the river, but after the first day's journey they met with such a constant succession of deep ravines, the sides of which were frequently inaccessible, that they returned, not having been able to proceed more than fifteen miles in five days; when they turned back they supposed themselves to be twelve miles from the foot of the mountains.

As the land for several miles to the southward, and twenty miles to the westward of Rose Hill, that is to the banks of the Nepean, is as fine land for tillage as most in England (some few particular spots excepted, the soil of which is poor, but bears a very small proportion to the good land), I propose that tract of land for those settlers which may be sent out; and though they will be placed at some distance from each other, for the conveniency of water (from one to two and three miles), they will have nothing to apprehend from the natives, who avoid those parts we most frequent, and always retire at the sight of two or three people who are armed.

As the labour of clearing the ground of timber will be great, I think each settler should not have less than twenty men on his farm, which I suppose to be from five hundred to one thousand acres; it will be necessary to give that number of convicts to those settlers who come out, and to support them for two years from the public stores; in that time, if they are any ways industrious—and I do not think they will be able to do it in less time—at the expiration of the two years, they may return half the convicts they have been allowed, and would want no further assistance from Government.

It may be necessary to grant lands to officers and soldiers who, becoming settlers, will, of course, be entitled to every indulgence; but few of the officers now here have reaped any great advantage

* It was found afterwards that the supposition was correct

† See Appendix C.

from being allowed convicts; and it is attended with unavoidable inconveniences, from the convicts being left so much to themselves, and from their mixing with the soldiers. It may be found more to the advantage of the Crown, and the officers likewise, if officers on duty in this settlement were allowed a certain quantity of grain to support their live stock until they have a market to go to; and I make no doubt but that in the third year from the time settlers arrive there will be a market well supplied with grain, poultry, hogs, and goats, all of which there has been a great increase, but killed, from wanting corn to support them; and the natives so frequently setting fire to the country, which they do to catch the opossum, flying squirrel, and other animals, has prevented swine from being turned out, as was intended.

1790

13 Feb.

Farming prospects.

If this plan of distributing amongst the settlers those convicts who are not immediately necessary for carrying on the public works is approved of, and which I propose as appearing to me the most likely to render this settlement independent for the necessities of life, in the shortest time possible, there are many regulations which will, of course, take place. And I beg leave to observe to your Lordship that it appears to me the expence which attends sending out the convicts might be very considerably lessened by sending them out in the ships bound to China. Those ships might bring a certain number, with the necessary quantity of provisions and cloathing. The passage to China, round the South Cape, being, in my opinion, full as good as the one now used; and in time of war would be attended with much less risk. But if hired transports are sent out, it is equally the interest of masters and owners to let those ships remain the longest time possible in those ports which are attended with little expence, and the time in which they may make the voyage to and from this country will always be very uncertain.

Making convicts useful.

The China route.

Your Lordship will permit me to add that if it is the intention of the Legislature by sending convicts to this country to prevent their return to England, that intention will be best answered by their being sent to Norfolk Island. The goodness of the soil has been pointed out, as well as the short time in which it may be presumed the island will be able to supply its settlers with all the necessities of life. Convicts would very seldom be able to escape, as there are only two or three places at which a boat can land, and from the badness of the ground ships will seldom anchor. Such convicts as are sentenced for life would be perfectly safe at Norfolk Island, where they may be employed in cultivating the flax-plant. But from this settlement, whenever ships going to India are in want of men they will easily find means of carrying away convicts.

Norfolk Island.

Your Lordship has been informed that some of the convicts have been killed and wounded by the natives, but that has I

1790

13 Feb.

The natives
friendly,but resent
ill-usage.A tamed
savage.Small-pox
amongst the
natives.Great
mortality.

believe never happened but when the convicts have been the aggressors. I have always found the natives friendly, and still retain the opinion I first formed of those people. That they do not betray a confidence placed in them I have reason to believe from their never having attempted to take that advantage which they might have done from the confidence which has been frequently placed in them by myself and those who have been with me in the different excursions, and from the confidence some of them have placed in us ; nor do I believe they would have ever been hostile but from having been ill-used and robbed, which has been the case, though every precaution that was possible has been taken to prevent it.

In December, 1788, one of the natives was seized for the purpose of learning the language and reconciling them to us (as mentioned in my former letter to your Lordship), none of the natives having for some months come near the settlement. The man who was taken for that purpose appeared to be about twenty-four years of age,* and in three months was so well reconciled that he was freed from all restraint, and lived with me perfectly satisfied with his situation.

In the beginning of the following April numbers of the natives were found dead with the small-pox in different parts of the harbour ; and an old man and a boy of about eight years of age were brought to the hospital. The man died, but the boy recovered, and now lives with the surgeon. An elderly man and a girl of about ten or eleven years of age were found soon after and brought up ; of the man there was no hopes of recovery, and he died the third day, but the girl recovered, and lives with the clergyman's wife. I brought these people up with the hopes that being cured and sent away with the many little necessities we could give them would be the means of reconciling them to live near us ; but unfortunately both the men died, and the children are too young to have weight with the natives with whom since they have frequently conversed, and what was more unfortunate our native caught the disorder and died. It is not possible to determine the number of natives who were carried off by this fatal disorder. It must be great ; and judging from the information of the native now living with us, and who had recovered from the disorder before he was taken, one-half of those who inhabit this part of the country died ; and as the natives always retired from where the disorder appeared, and which some must have carried with them, it must have been spread to a considerable distance, as well inland as along the coast. We have seen the traces of it wherever we have been.

From the death of the native who had lived with us, it was intended to get another as soon as possible ; but they were generally on their guard, and I wished it to be done without being

* Aranbanoo.

under the necessity of firing on those people, which must have been the case had anyone been seized in the presence of others. In last November (1789) two natives were brought up, one of whom made his escape a few days after ; the other* lives with me, and will soon be able to inform us of their customs and manners, but of which at present I can give your Lordship very little information.

1790

13 Feb.

Another capture.

The natives live in tribes, which are distinguished by the name of their chief, who probably takes his name from the district in which he resides. About the north-west part of this harbour there is a tribe which is mentioned as being very powerful, either from their numbers or the abilities of their chief. The district is called Cammerra ; the head of the tribe is named Cammerragal, by which name the men of that tribe are distinguished. A woman of this tribe is called a Cammerragalleon. The natives never use the letter S, and find some difficulty in pronouncing it.

Native tribes.

From the entrance of the harbour, along the south shore, to the cove adjoining this settlement the district is called Cadi, and the tribe Cadigal ; the women, Cadigalleon.

The south side of the harbour from the above-mentioned cove to Rose Hill, which the natives call Parramatta, the district is called Wann, and the tribe, Wanngal.

Parramatta.

The opposite shore is called Wallumetta, and the tribe, Wallumedegal.

The other tribes which live near us are those of Gweagal, Noronggerragal, Boroegal, Gomerrigal, and Boromedegal.

Some of these people perforate the gristle of the nose to receive the ornamental bone mentioned in "Captain Cook's Voyage"—others do not. The drawing a front tooth is more general, but many men have been seen who had not lost the tooth ; and which, there is good reason to believe, is given as a tribute to the head of one or more of the powerful tribes, and occasionally worn by him round the neck. Cammerragal is mentioned as having received the tooth from the native now living with us. Some refuse paying this tribute.

Curious customs.

Most of the women lose two joints of the little finger of the left hand, but the reason given for that (as we understand it) appears too trivial to be the real cause—to enable the women to fish the better, and to wind the line round the remaining three fingers. There is reason to believe that the women are treated as inferiors by the men, who employ them constantly fishing in the canoes. The men seldom fish with the line, but strike fish from the rocks ; their chief employment is the chase.

Treatment of women.

That they have some idea of a future state appears from their belief in spirits, and from saying that the bones of the dead are in the graves, but the body in the clouds : and the question has been asked, do the white men go thither ?

A future state.

1790

13 Feb.

Aboriginal
astronomy.

It is probable that some tribes subsist chiefly by the chase, which, leading them through the woods, must make some knowledge of stars necessary. They have names for many of the stars, for the Magellan Clouds, and for the four principal winds.

Clothing.

The native fires are frequently seen on the tops of the mountains, where the air in winter must be very sharp; and a small cloak has been found, made of the skins of the opossum and flying squirrel, very neatly sewed together, the inside ornamented in diamonds of curved lines, by raising the skin with the point of a small bone, which is made sharp for that purpose. This cloak they put over their heads when they sleep—and cloaks made by beating the bark of the brown gum-tree are common, and used for the same purpose, or to keep the rain from their heads and shoulders. Their knowledge in numbers appears to be very confined. It is remarkable that of all the words given in the vocabulary by Captain Cook there are only two we have ever heard the natives make use of. These people have several names—the one who lives with us calls himself Wogultrowey, Wolarrabarrey, Baunellon, Boinba, Bundebunda—and we have reason to think that children are named after the fish they first catch; and that after the death of a friend or relation they frequently assume one of the names of the deceased.

Cook's
vocabulary.

Garrison.

It will appear to your Lordship, after what has been said of the natives, that a less force will be wanted for the security of the settlement than what I considered as necessary soon after my arrival in this country, although that was not considerable; but as the military must be supported by the labour of others, which is felt in an infant colony so distant from any resource as this is placed, and in which, if it was possible, every one should be employed in procuring for himself the necessaries of life, I presume that a battalion of five hundred men will be sufficient, which will admit of one hundred being detached for the security of Norfolk Island.

Five
hundred
men.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

LIEUTENANT RIOU TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Table Bay, 22 February, 1790,

22 Feb.

Sir,

Re. 28 April, 1790, at 5 p.m.

I hope this letter will reach you before any account can be given of the loss of his Majesty's ship *Guardian*. If it should, I am to beg you will make known to their Lordships that on the 23rd Dec. the ship struck on an island of ice, and that on the 25th all hope of her safety being banished, I consented to as many of the officers and people to take to the boats as thought proper. But it pleased the Almighty God to assist my endeavours with the remaining part of the crew to arrive with his Majesty's ship in this bay yesterday.

The
Guardian
strikes an
iceberg.

A Dutch packet is now under sail for Europe, which prevents me from giving you any further particulars, especially as at this instant I find it more necessary than ever to exert myself in order to prevent the ship from sinking at her anchors. I am, &c.,
E. RIOU.

LIEUTENANT RIOU TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

H.M.S. Guardian,

Sir, Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope, 25 Feb., 1790. 25 Feb.

I hope their Lordships will forgive my not entering into any detail of the past melancholy situation of his Majesty's ship under my command, as I am still obliged to attend most strictly to the duty at present carrying on, which is that of landing the remaining cargo, furniture, and in short everything, with the greatest expedition, as with every assistance I can possibly wish for from the shore the pumps, necessarily going night and day, hardly hold way with the leaks. I have now too much reason to think the ship is past recovery.* I hope soon, sir, to have time to be more explicit. Till then I humbly hope their Lordships will pardon this hurried letter, and that they will do me the justice to think that my mind is solely bent on the good of his Majesty's service.

I am, &c.,
E. RIOU.

P.S.—To Mr. Will. Peckover, the gunner of his Majesty's ship Bounty, I deliver the charge of this letter. He may explain, in some measure, the deplorable situation of his Majesty's ship when I arrived in this bay.

NEW SOUTH WALES CORPS.

The following is Major Grose's statement of the strength and distribution of the New South Wales Corps on board the Second Fleet:—

New South Wales Corps on board the Neptune, Scarborough, Surprize, and Gorgon, 26 February, 1790:—

26 Feb.

	Officers.	Privates.	Women.	Children.
On Neptune	7	44	6	3
On Scarborough	4	28	4	2
On Surprize	6	26	10	6
On Gorgon	34	171	30	16
	51	269	50	27

One major, three captains, four lieutenants, four ensigns, one chaplain, one adjutant, one qr.-master, one surgeon, one sur. mate, fourteen serjeants, twelve corporals, eight drummers.

*The Guardian was beached at Table Bay, where a survey was made. The surveyors' report being unfavourable, she was abandoned.

1790

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

March

Sir,

Whitehall, March, 1790.

Discovery
and Gorgon.

It being the King's intention that his Majesty's ships Discovery and Gorgon—the former of which has been fitted for the purpose of surveying and the latter, as I informed you in my letter No 6, for the conveyance of troops and stores to New South Wales—should be employed upon an expedition on the north-west coast of America, and his Majesty having, with that view, ordered that the lower-deck guns, carriages, &c., of the Gorgon shall be carried out in her hold, I am commanded to signify to you his Majesty's pleasure that as soon as the said troops and stores shall have been landed from the ship you do direct her commander to mount her guns and to put her in a fit condition as soon as possible for proceeding on that service.

The Gorgon.

Crew from
the Sirius.

As the present company of that ship is barely sufficient for navigating her, it will be expedient that as many officers and men as can possibly be spared from the Sirius should be lent to her during the expedition, which you will order to be done as soon as possible, and such deficiency as will then remain in the number of her war establishment of men you will complete from the marine corps now serving on shore.

North
American
settlement.

One of the objects of this expedition being to form a settlement on the no-west coast of America,* it is his Majesty's pleasure that you should select from among the people with you a proper number of persons to compose it, and that you should embark them either on board the Discovery or Gorgon.

Establish-
ment.

The extent of this establishment, it is imagined, need not at first exceed thirty persons, a moiety of whom at least should consist of drafts from the new corps, under the command of a discreet subaltern officer, who is to be entrusted with the temporary superintendence of the new settlement. The remainder should consist of two or three of the most intelligent of the overseers, who have lately been sent out, a storekeeper, and any other persons who may be desirous of accompanying them, together with a few of the most deserving of the convicts, to whom you may offer a remission of a part of their service [sentence] as an inducement to go.

Stores, &c.

And you will be careful to embark on board these ships such articles of stores, provisions, medicines, and utensils for building, &c., as you may judge sufficient for their use, in order to enable them to fulfil the object of forming such a settlement as may be able to resist any attacks from the natives, and lay the foundation

* This design was given up, but an exploring expedition was sent out under the command of Captain George Vancouver, who had accompanied Cook on his voyage towards the South Pole. He was placed in command of the Discovery, and the armed tender Chatham took the place of the Gorgon as second vessel. Vancouver's instructions were not to go to Port Jackson for help, but to sail direct for the Sandwich Islands, and then explore the north-west coast of America for the purpose of discovering, if possible, a north-west passage. Post, pp. 451-454.

of an establishment for the assistance of his Majesty's subjects in the prosecution of the fur trade from the N.W. coast of America. 1790

As the chief command of this expedition is intended to be entrusted to the captain of one of his Majesty's ships now in the East Indies, directions have been sent to Commodore Cornwallis to despatch such frigate immediately to Owyhee, one of the Sandwich Islands, situated in the latitude $20^{\circ} 00'$ So., and long. $25^{\circ} 00'$ Et. from Greenwich, directing her captain to wait there until he shall be joined by the Discovery and Gorgon, when he is to lose no time in making the best of his way to the American coast, agreeably to the enclosed instructions, a copy of which is transmitted to you for your further information. You will entrust the original to the care of the commander of the Discovery, and the duplicate with the commanding officer of the Gorgon. You will despatch both these vessels to the place of rendezvous, at Owyhee, as soon as they are in a situation to proceed thither, and upon their meeting with the frigate above mentioned the commanding officer will deliver to the captain of the frigate the dispatches which you shall have committed to their care, and will put themselves under his orders. March
The
command.

Rendezvous
at Owyhee.

It is hoped that the frigate from the East Indies and the two vessels above mentioned will arrive at Owyhee soon enough to allow some time for refreshment to their crews, and to enable them to be on the coast of America early in the spring; but if, from any unforeseen event, the frigate which Commodore Cornwallis is directed to order upon this service should not reach the Sandwich Islands before the end of the month of April, 1791, it is his Majesty's pleasure that you should direct the senior officer of the two ships to open the dispatches, and proceed with those two ships to execute the instructions, leaving on his departure from thence one of his people with the natives, to be taken up again on his return, or adopting any other mode he may judge more advisable for conveying to the captain of the frigate information of the route he may design to take, with a view to his proceeding to the place of destination. Contin-
gencies.

You will receive by the Discovery and Gorgon certain packages, marked and numbered agreeably to the enclosed list,* containing such articles as are most esteemed by the people of the Sandwich Islands and the inhabitants of the American coast, in order to barter with them for provisions, and such other necessaries as they can supply, which packages they are to deliver to the commander of the frigate, if they should join him on their arrival at the Sandwich Islands, or to make use of themselves in case of his absence. Articles of
barter.

On the return of the Gorgon to Port Jackson from the intended expedition you will order the officers and men belonging to the Sirius on board their proper ship, and after embarking the

* No list recorded.

1790

March.

remainder of the marines you will direct Lieutenant Harvey to make the best of his way with them to England, agreeably to the orders he has already received on that head.

The Bounty.

In consequence of the information received from Lt. Bligh, late commander of H.M. ship the Bounty, of a mutiny. having taken place in that vessel, by which he was deprived of his command, his Maj'y has judged it proper that the Gorgon should be directed, on her return from the N.-W. coast of America, to touch at the Society Islands, and eventually at the Friendly Islands, in order, if possible, to apprehend the mutineers, a list of whom, rec'd from Lt. Bligh, is enclosed. If he should succeed in this object, he is directed to bring those men, or any of them, in confinement, to Port Jackson. And you will, in that case, send them home in confinement by the Gorgon, in order that they may be brought to trial in this country for an offence so prejudicial to the discipline of his Majesty's service.

Mutineers to
be appre-
hended.

If the Bounty should be recovered and brought to Port Jackson, it is left in your discretion to detain her or employ her in such manner as you shall judge best.

The Sirius to
be employed
if necessary.

If, by any accident, the Gorgon or Discovery should be disabled so as to be unfit to be employed on this service, it is left to your discretion to send the Sirius in the room of the Gorgon, and any light vessel, if any such should then be under your orders, in the room of the Discovery.

I have, &c.,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

NORFOLK ISLAND.—PHILLIP'S INSTRUCTIONS TO ROSS.

2 March

Instructions to be observed by the Lieutenant-Governor of his Majesty's territory of New South Wales during his command at Norfolk Island.*

By his Excellency Arthur Phillip, Esq., Captain-General and Governor in and over the territory of New South Wales and its dependencies, &c., &c.

HAVING taken upon you the command and charge of the settlement established at Norfolk Island, pursuant to the order you will receive herewith for that purpose, and having caused to be erected the buildings necessary for the shelter of the officers and people who accompany you, you will cause the convicts to be employed in the cultivation of the land in such manner as shall appear to you the best calculated to render that settlement independent as far as respects the necessaries of life, paying such attention to the cultivation of the flax-plant as your situation will admit of, and which is to be the principal object when the necessaries of life are secured to the settlers.

Cultivation.

Distribution
of goods.

The distribution of such public live stock, corn, implements of husbandry, cloathing, and all such other articles belonging to the

* See instructions to King as commandant, 12 Feb., 1788. Ante, pp. 137-138.

Crown as are intended for the use of the convicts or settlers as you will find at the settlement, as well as such as are now sent or may be sent hereafter, is left to your discretion to be disposed of according to his Majesty's most gracious intentions, for the benefit of the convicts and such persons who are now on the island that wish to become settlers.

The productions of all descriptions acquired by the labour of the convicts are to be considered as public stock, and to be accounted for as such, but left to your disposal, that such parts thereof as may be requisite for the subsistence of the said convicts and their families, or the subsistence of the civil and military establishment of the settlement, may be applied by you to that use, as well as to the use of such persons now on the island who, being free people, may be desirous of becoming settlers, and in the distribution of which you will use every proper degree of economy, and be careful that the storekeeper does transmit an account of the issues from time to time to the commissary of this settlement, to enable me to judge of the propriety or expediency of sending further supplies to the island, or of drawing supplies in future from thence. The remainder of such productions you will reserve as a provision for a further number of convicts which will be sent hereafter from this settlement, to be employed under your direction in the manner pointed out in these instructions.

And as from the great increase of corn and other vegetable food, which may be expected from a common industry and in so fertile a soil, after a certain quantity of ground is cleared and in cultivation, as well as from the natural increase of swine and other animals, it cannot be expedient that all the convicts should be employed in attending only to the object of provisions, you are to cause the greatest possible number of those people to be employed in cultivating and dressing the flax-plant, as a means of acquiring cloathing for themselves and other persons who may become settlers, as well as for a variety of maritime purposes, for which its superior excellence render it a desirable object in Europe.

As the increase of the stock of animals must depend entirely upon the measures you may pursue for their preservation, the use of fresh provisions, excepting for the sick, is to be dispensed with as far as possible, until a competent stock may be acquired to admit of your supplying the settlement from it with animal food, and until which time you will be regularly supplied with provisions from this settlement, as well as with cloathing for the convicts, and other necessary articles.

In issuing the customary ration from the stores, it is left to your discretion to cause such deductions to be made as you may judge necessary from the situation of the settlement, or from the quantity of fish which may occasionally be procured.

1790

2 March.

Public
stock.

Economy.

Reserves.

Flax-
dressing.Fresh meat
only for the
sick.

Deductions.

1790

2 March.

You will use all proper methods to enforce a due observance of religion and good order amongst the people, and take such steps for the due celebration of public worship as circumstances will admit.

Settlers.

You will transmit to me, from time to time, the names of such officers, soldiers, and others who may be desirous of becoming settlers on the island, as well as the names and other particulars respecting such convicts who shall, from their good conduct and disposition to industry, be judged by you deserving of favour. And you will cause the necessary implements of husbandry, with such a proportion of live stock and grain as the situation of the settlement permits, to be given to those who may become settlers, supplying them with the customary ration of provisions for twelve months from the public stores, putting them in immediate possession of thirty acres of land, for which grants will be hereafter made out, as well as for such an additional quantity of land as their situation and other circumstances may entitle them to.

Induce-
ments

Reports

You will at every opportunity transmit to me all such remarks or observations as you may make respecting the nature of the soil on the island, and point out such means as may appear to you the most likely to answer the views of Government in the cultivation of the flax-plant, or in rendering that island independent for the necessaries of life, and for the order and government of the settlers thereon, that such information may from me be transmitted to his Majesty's ministers.

And whereas it is not intended that any trade or intercourse whatever should be carried on betwixt Norfolk Island and the settlements of the East India Company, the coasts of China, or with any of the islands to which any intercourse has been established by any European nation, you will be particularly careful that no craft of any sort is ever built for the use of individuals which may enable them to effect such intercourse.

Boat-
building
prohibited.Strange
ships.

And you are to prevent any ships or vessels which may arrive at the settlement from having any communication with any of the inhabitants residing on the island, without first receiving permission from me for that purpose. And the more effectually to prevent any such improper intercourse being carried on, you are not to permit the building of any decked vessel or boat whatever, nor any boat or vessel that is not decked, whose length of keel exceeds twenty feet. And if by any accident any vessel or boat that is decked, or whose length of keel exceeds twenty feet, should be driven on shore, or left on the island, you are to cause such boat or vessel to be scuttled, or otherwise rendered unservicable, letting her remain in that state until you receive further directions on that head.

Unauthor-
ised boats to
be scuttled.

Given under my hand, at Government House, Sydney Cove,
Port Jackson, this second day of March, 1790.

A. PHILLIP.

LIEUTENANT RIOU TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1790

H.M. ship Guardian,

Sir, Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope, 7 March, 1790.

7 March.

Since I wrote you my last letter, of the 25 Feby., I have been employed in disembarking the stores and provisions on board the ship I have the honour to command, and in the course of another week or ten days I hope to be able to compleat that business. The ship is now fothered, and in that situation requires only one chain-pump to be constantly at work to keep her clear of water. I fear very few of such stores and much of the provisions that were on board on my arrival at this place will be good for anything, but as yet I have not been able to attend to any minute inspection of them. I have given such directions that every means will be taken to preserve as much as possible.

State of the Guardian.

The chief injury the ship has received is abaft. I can see in a calm day the false keel is quite gone about eight feet in length from the sternpost, as also much torn and out of its proper direction further forward. It is also ragged and, as it were, in notches from the lower part of the stem to as far off as the eye is capable of discerning. I have little reason to doubt that the main keel is injured, and that part of the sternpost is torn away, and many other places in the ship's bottom much damaged. The rudder is gone and the after-beam of the upper gun-deck is broken in two pieces. The foremast and mainmast are standing with the bowsprit, jibboom, and fore-topmast, which, with the topgallant masts and two or three studding-sail booms, are the only masts remaining. The fore and main yard, a foretopsail-yard, and the topgallant-yards are the only yards left, and every other spar, mast, or yard has been destroyed and thrown overboard at sea. The sails that were bent to the yards when I was so fortunate as to arrive here were a mizzen-topsail to the fore topsail-yard, a fore topg.-sail, jib and fore topmast-staysail, a mainsail, a foresail, and a main topgallant-sail on the stump of the mizzen-mast. Every other sail in the ship that was in the store-rooms are perfectly rotten and unserviceable—indeed many of them, as well as other things, were in a perfect state of putridity, and those above mentioned so torn and shattered as to have little remaining of their original form. I humbly entreat their Lordships' pardon for giving them so formal a statement of the past melancholy proceedings on board his Majesty's ship during the space of more than two months, as I have been unable to hold a pen or keep any journal that is in its present form legible.

Her injuries not irreparable.

Riou's condition.

I am at present in a state of the utmost anxiety respecting the ship, for should I find it possible to tow her as far as Saldanha Bay, so that she might lay on shore in safety and be heaved down and repaired, I have too much reason to think the cost would be

Repairing costly.

1790
7 March. so immense, together with the refitting her, as to exceed the value of a new ship. And to continue in this bay with the charge of supernumeraries to keep her from sinking until I should receive their Lordships' commands appears to me equally improper. And yet do I not feel myself empowered to (sic) one of his Majesty's ships. In short, I hope their Lordships will forgive my representing to you so freely the present anxious state of my mind, and trust it proceeds entirely from the strong desire I feel in meriting their approbation.

Riou's
anxiety.

I have detained the master, his brother Mr. Trinkler, and the carpenter of his Majesty's armed vessel Bounty, as I found it absolutely expedient to have the assistance of the former to act as master of the Guardian.

Survivors.

Herewith, sir, you will receive a list of such persons that Almighty God of His infinite goodness and mercy was pleased to protect and deliver from the many dangers and difficulties that threatened them.*

Lady
Juliana.

I have the satisfaction to inform you, sir, that the Lady Juliana has been arrived here these six days, all in good health.

I shall suffer no opportunity to escape informing you of my proceedings, as I hope soon to be able to form some determined resolution respecting my future plans.

I have, &c.,

E. RIOU.

LIEUTENANT RIOU TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

His Majesty's ship Guardian,

15 March.

Sir,

Table Bay, 15 March, 1790.

My last letter, which was dated the 7th instant, represented to you the situation of his Majesty's ship under my command at that time, since which I have not been enabled to know more concerning the injury she has sustained.

Guardian

Be pleased to inform their Lordships that I am now preparing to get the ship into Saldanha Bay, by endeavouring as much as possible to stop the leak within board; and that I purpose mooring her there close to the beach at low water, in a cove where no wind or sea can affect her; the which, if I am so fortunate as to accomplish, I mean then to return here myself, in order to preserve as much as possible such provisions and stores as have been landed. It appears to me at present that a great quantity of the salt provisions is still good; but, excepting the ironwork, I fear there is very little of anything else that is not totally destroyed.

Some
provisions
good.

I have reason to think that in my last letter I enclosed an erroneous account of the officers, crew, &c., that were saved in

* The list gives the names of five superintendents of convicts; the daughter of P. Schaffer, superintendent; chaplain's servant, boatswain, purser's steward, carpenter, three midshipmen, surgeon's mate, cook, twenty-two crew, and twenty-one convicts. Total (one added afterwards), sixty-two.

his Majesty's ship. If so, I humbly beg their Lordships' pardon, and transmit to you the following one.* I have, &c.,
E. Rieu.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR ROSS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir, Norfolk Island, 22 March, 1790. 22 March.

It is with the utmost distress of mind that I sit down to acquaint your Excellency of the loss of his Majesty's ship the Sirius, for the particulars of which I beg leave to refer you to Lieut. Ball, Mr. King, and the officers of the Sirius on board the Supply.† What makes this the more particularly unfortunate at this time is that Captn. Hunter was not able to land but a very little of the stores and provisions which were sent for the use of the settlement. And I am afraid that Captn. Hunter's anxiety for the landing of the provisions might have induced him to make such exertions for the relief of the settlement (which at the very moment he was exerting every degree of humanity and benevolence for which his character stands unrival'd) our provision store was publickly known to him to be in a very exhausted state, which must have been known to him from the steps he had taken in embracing every opportunity of putting as much provisions as he could on board the Supply, with orders to Lieut. Ball to use his utmost endeavours to land them, might have in some degree contributed to the unfortunate fate of the Sirius; but on this I beg leave only to offer to your Excellency the opinion of a landman, and not that of a seaman.

Immediately on the ship's striking, I judged it necessary to issue an order forbidding all the inhabitants on the settlement from killing any stock of their own, or plundering any article of stock or provisions belonging to the public or to others, under pain of immediate death by hanging.

The next morning I judged it necessary, and, in our then state, highly proper, to take some steps for the securing of that authority so very necessary in all well-regulated states for the preservation of good order and discipline, to proclaim the law martial to be the only law by which the settlement should be govern'd until further orders; and in consequence thereof did advise with and consult Captn. Hunter, Mr. King, and the officers of marines, whether it might not be necessary for me to have the advice and opinion of Captn. Hunter and all the commission officers of the navy and marines at that place in manner of a council; and, upon their agreeing with me, I gave out the order of which the inclosed No. 1 is a copy,‡ and the next morning we assembled at the Government House, and agreed and assented unanimously to the resolutions of which the inclosed No. 2 is a copy§; and on the morning of the

* This list is not available.

† The Supply was despatched by Ross to Port Jackson with the news of the wreck.

‡ Post, p. 321.

§ Post, p. 322.

1790

22 March.

22nd all the people assembled on the beach under the King's colours, when the law martial was declared to be the only law by which this settlement should be governed until farther orders.

Allegiance.

And after reading the resolutions of myself and Council, I proposed, as there was not time to administer an oath to everybody, that passing under the King's colours at the flagstaff, and between the colours of the detachment—which were taken for that purpose—should be deemed as equal to a voluntary oath of paying a strict obedience to the martial law now in force, Capt'n. Hunter and myself leading the van.

Half-allowance.

And altho' the whole was now at half-allowance, yet, until we could ascertain how much provisions would be saved from the wreck, I judged it might be necessary to make a further reduction in the allowance; and I have great satisfaction in assuring your Excellency that everybody by their ready and chearful compliance with everything proposed to insure to us the most strict and implicit obedience to every order that tends to the good of the whole, which was visible in the countenance of every one present.

Details withheld.

The multiplicity of things to be done, and the state of mind in which everybody is, together with the great desire everybody expresses for the Supply's going to Port Jackson, renders it impossible for me to send your Excellency a true state of the island at this time without wounding your feelings more than perhaps they ever were, or I hope ever will be, in future, and therefore hope you will permit me to offer this in excuse for not being more particular, begging leave to refer you to Mr. King, who will be able to inform your Excellency with every thing that respects the settlement, as far as myself or any of the principal officers can judge, and all my ideas and intention with respect to the settlement he is well acquainted with, which, when he informs you of, I hope will meet your approbation. When I inform your Excellency that

Officers' effects lost.

by the unfortunate fate of the Sirius myself and all the officers of the detachment have lost almost everything belonging to us, even my papers are all lost, you will not wonder at my requesting that whenever your Excellency may have it in your power that you will please to give us such relief as our case requires. I feel myself particularly fortunate in being authorized to assure you that, whatever may happen, all the officers and others in the place seem to have but one idea, which is still more pleasantly felt by an unanimous and determined resolution in all the officers, as well of the sea as the marines, never to despair nor part with that authority which is vested in us; and therefore I hope your Excellency will believe that the only thing to be apprehended on our part is the impossibility you may find in giving us that relief which we shall so very impatiently look for and expect. I shall, therefore, quit this melancholy subject with praying your Excellency to believe that whatever is possible to be done for the good

Making the best of things.

The general good.

of the whole shall be done ; and altho' we have saved but few articles of provisions from the wreck, yet, from the appearance of the weather, and the opinion of Captn. Hunter, I am not without hope but much may be saved ; and, in justice to Mr. Ball, I must inform your Excellency that he is using every endeavour to land as much provision as he can spare. I further beg leave to assure you that the conduct of the convicts in general has been such in saving as much from the wreck as possible that I cannot but take notice of it ; and some of them I shall hereafter take the liberty of pointing out as deserving particular attention and favour.

1790

22 March.

Good
conduct of
prisoners.

The state of the settlement under martial law has made me judge it necessary to order Lieut. J. Johnstone to act as adjutant-general, and Lieut. Ralph Clarke to act as quartermaster-general and keeper of the public stores during the continuance of martial law, or until his Excellency the Governor and Commander-in-Chief shall please to signify his pleasure thereupon.

Appoint-
ments.

I therefore hope your Excellency will do me the honour of approving of what has been done, and that a strict obedience and attention to everything that can be done may induce us to hope that our conduct will be such as to justify your Excellency in pointing us out to his Majesty's ministers for such favour and protection as our case may require ; and when I consider the want of perhaps a sufficient authority for declaring martial law, which nothing but necessity could have induced us to do, being convinced that in our now state it is the only law by which the people can be kept in a subordinate state, we shall therefore trust to his Majesty and the British Parliament for such indemnification as the case may require. I hope and trust your Excellency will authorize us to continue it until we are supplied with provisions, or at any rate that you will not forbid us.*

Martial law
necessary.

[Enclosure No. 1.]

PROCLAMATION.

By Robert Ross, Esq., Lieutenant-Governor of his Majesty's territory of New South Wales and its dependencies, and Commandant at Norfolk Island.

20 March.

WHEREAS, by the unfortunate loss of his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, I find it necessary to require the advice and assistance of all the commissioned officers of his Majesty's navy and marines at this place for establishing such rules and regulations as may be necessary for the good government of the settlement on the present occasion :

Wreck of
the *Sirius*.

The Council are, therefore, required to meet the Lieutenant-Governor at the Government House this day at 12 o'clock.

Given under my hand, at Government House, Norfolk Island,
this 20th of March, 1790.

To Capt. John Hunter, of his Majesty's ship *Sirius* ; Lieut. P.

* This despatch (a copy), as found in the London Record Office, bears no signature, but it is obviously from Major Ross.

1790

20 March.

G. King, late Commandant at Norfolk Island; Lieut. Wm. Bradley, H.M. ship Sirius; Lieut. N. Fowell, H.M. ship Sirius; Lieut. H. Waterhouse, H.M. ship Sirius; Capt. George Johnston, marines; Lieut. J. Creswell, marines; Lieut. R. Kellow, marines; Lieut. J. Johnstone, marines; Lieut. R. Clarke, marines; Lieut. Wm. Faddy, marines.

[Enclosure No. 2.]

NORFOLK ISLAND.—RESOLUTIONS OF OFFICERS.

At a Council, consisting of all the commissioned officers of his Majesty's naval and marine service now at this island, assembled in consequence of an order from Lt.-Governor Robert Ross, dated this 20th of March, 1790, the following resolutions were unanimously judged to be necessary for the safety of the colony:—

Martial law.

Article 1st. That military law be immediately proclaimed.

Court-martial.

2nd. That seven commissioned officers shall compose a general court-martial; any sentence that does not affect the life shall be determined by the majority of voices—but no sentence of death can be pronounced without five of the seven concur in opinion.

The Sirius.

3rd. That the officers and company of his Majesty's ship Sirius, now wrecked on this island, are to be considered as under the immediate command of their captain and officers, agreeable to the naval articles of war; but for capital offences they are amenable to the martial law now established.

Stores public property.

4th. That all provisions now on the island, as well as what may be saved from the wreck of the Sirius, shall be considered as public stores, as well as all Indian corn and potatoes, and also that all live stock of every kind, except poultry, shall be considered as the property of the public; and the whole to be equally divided among all ranks.

Half-allowance.

5th. That the state of the provision stores, as well as the granaries, Indian corn, and potatoes, is such as will not admit of a larger proportion than half-allowance until it is known what can be saved from the wreck of the Sirius

Custody of stores.

6th. In order to shew that no partiality will be used in the distribution of provisions there shall be two locks on the storehouse door; one key to be delivered to such person as Capt. Hunter shall appoint in behalf of the seamen; the other to be in possession of such person as the Lieut.-Governor shall think proper in behalf of the marines.

Stealing, a capital offence.

7th. All marauding or plundering, either of the public or private property, will be deemed capital crimes.

Captains members of Council.

8th. Whenever any of his Majesty's ships or vessels are on this coast the captain or commander of such ship or vessel to be considered as a member of the Council during the continuation of martial law.

NORFOLK ISLAND.—PROCLAMATION.

1790

WHEREAS some people have in a most scandalous and infamous manner broke up the public store-rooms and hold, as well as all such cases, casks, boxes, bales, and bundles, as were secured with locks, nails, lashings, and hoops, or by such other methods as were judged adviseable for securing the property of the public, as well as private individuals, and robbed and plundered the same individuals of many articles which they contained; and as many articles which were saved from the wreck and safely landed, have been secured under pretence of conveying them to the public store-house; and in order that no person on this island may hereafter plead ignorance: it is therefore ordered and declared that every such person or persons as at this time have in their custody or possession any article either of the public or private property saved from the wreck, or of which the wreck has been plundered, shall immediately, on or before the 29th instant, at the hour of 12 o'clock at noon, bring in, or cause to be brought in, the same, and deliver them to the storekeeper of the public stores; after which time, if any such person or persons are known to have in their possession or custody any articles of the above description, they shall be tried by a court-martial for such capital crimes at the hazard of their lives in having acted so contrary to all law and disobeying orders, whereof all persons whatever are, as they tender their own safety and the good of the settlement, to take notice.

26 March.

Plundering stores.

A capital crime.

And as no person whatever is authorized to give away or dispose of any articles which may be saved from the wreck, except Capt'n. Hunter, all applications must therefore be made to him for that purpose.

Done at head-quarters, on Norfolk Island, this 26th day of March, in the year 1790.

ROBERT ROSS, &c.

God save the King!

SURGEON ALLEY TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Lady Juliana, Table Bay,

Sir,

Cap of Good Hope, 29th March, 1790.

29 March.

I hope you will excuse the liberty I take in writing you a few lines, the purport of which is to acquaint Mr. Nepean that on the 1st inst. we anchor'd in Table Bay from Rio de Janeiro. Our passage from England has been very tedious. On our rout, so far, we have lost five women, and we have had seven births. At present we are remarkably healthy. To-morrow is fixed for our sailing from this place. I hope we shall meet with better look [luck] than what the Guardian did. In consequence of her

Voyage of the Lady Juliana.

1790
26 March. misfortune damps the spirits of the people on board the Lady Juliana. Begs [I beg] you will excuse the liberty I take in inclosing a letter to Sir John Jervis.

I wish you health and happiness, and am, &c.,

RICHD. ALLEY.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Government House, Sydney Cove,
April 10th, 1790.

10 April. Sir,

Returns of the detachment of marines doing duty in this colony, and of those officers and men who wish to remain after the three years for which they were embarked shall be expired, are inclosed for their Lordships' information.*

Captain
Shea.

Of the death of Captain Shea, which happened on the second of February, 1789, the major-commandant of the detachment has, I presume, informed their Lordships, as well as of the officers promoted by him on that occasion.

Court-
martial on
Captain
Meredith.

The officer mentioned in the return as unfit for duty is Captain Meredith; he was suspended by Major Ross, who thought his conduct such as made a general court-martial necessary; and that officer has requested that such court-martial may be ordered, as he deems his conduct to have been such as he can justify.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.†

Government House, Sydney Cove,
April 11, 1790.

11 April. My Lord,

Loss of
provisions.

When I had the honor of concluding my letter of the 12th of February to your Lordship, I had been for some time in expectation of ships arriving from England. On the provisions landed to serve the settlement for two years considerable losses had been sustained, and his Majesty's ship Sirius and the Supply tender had been occasionally victualled from the stores, but no ships appearing, those expectations gave place to a fear that they might have met with some accident, and it became necessary to take such steps as appeared best calculated to provide for the immediate support of the people.

The quantity of flour brought from the Cape of Good Hope by the Sirius was less than I expected—four months' flour only for the settlement, and a year's provisions for the ship's company; and it was necessary to give the ship a very considerable repair before she could be sent to sea again, which was not completed before the middle of January. when I had reason to expect ships from England in the course of a few weeks. The sending to the

* The returns are not recorded.

† A duplicate of this despatch was sent to the Admiralty.

islands would have answered as far as procuring live stock to breed from, but which was not immediately wanted, and what the Sirius could have brought for the consumption of such a number of people would have been but a very small relief. Howe Island had been tried several times, and only a very few turtle procured.

1790

11 April.

The goodness of the soil on Norfolk Island, and the industry of those employed there, render'd that island a resource, and the only one that offer'd when, from the time which has passed since my letter might be supposed to have been received in England, there was reason to suppose some accident had happen'd to the store-ships sent out.

Norfolk
Island a
resource.

I therefore ordered two companies of marines to be ready to embark with a number of convicts by the 5th of March, if no ship arrived before that time, and a proportion of what provisions and stores remained in this settlement being put on board the Sirius and Supply, sixty-five officers and men, with five women and children from the detachment and Civil Department, one hundred and sixteen male and sixty-seven female convicts, with twenty-seven children, embarked and sailed on the 6th of March.

Detachment
sent.

The advantages I expected by sending away such a number of people was from the little garden ground they would leave, and which would assist those who remained. and the fish which might be caught in the winter would go the further. At the same time those sent to Norfolk Island would have resources in the great abundance of vegetables raised there, and in fish and birds, which this settlement could not afford them; and it was my intention to have sent more convicts to that island if there had not been this necessity, but I wished first to know the intentions of Government respecting this settlement.

Reasons.

The provisions sent, with what was on the island, and the wheat and Indian corn raised there more than would be necessary for seed, was calculated to last full as long as the provisions in this place; and at Norfolk Island, from the richness of the soil, a man may support himself with little assistance from the store after the timber is clear'd away.

Productive
soil.

The numbers at Norfolk Island, including those now sent, are—Civil, military, and free people, ninety; male convicts, one hundred and ninety-one; female convicts, one hundred; and children, thirty-seven. There remain at this settlement—Civil and military, one hundred and forty-one; women and children, sixty; male convicts, two hundred and ninety-seven; female convicts, seventy; and children, twenty-three.

Strength of
the
settlements

The Sirius was to have proceeded from Norfolk Island to Canton or Batavia for provisions for the colony; but Capt. Hunter informed me that the number of people embarked, with the stores and provisions, did not leave room for the water and

1790

11 April.

The Sirius
to return.

wood necessary for the voyage. I therefore thought it better for the Sirius to return to this port than to lose time in the passage by stopping to wood and water at any of the islands, for there was still a probability of ships arriving in the course of another month, in which case the voyage would be no longer necessary.

Reduced
ration.

The settlement had been at two-thirds of the established rations from the 1st of November, and it was now reduced to something less than half a ration; consequently little labour could be expected from the convicts, and they are only employed for the public in the mornings, leaving the afternoons to attend to their gardens.

Norfolk
Island
promising.

As I wished to send an officer to England who could give such information as cannot be conveyed by letters, and the detachment was now divided, I replaced the officer who was superintendent and commandant at Norfolk Island by Major Ross. The officer I have recalled* having been two years on the island is very capable of pointing out the advantages which may be expected from it, and I think it promises very fully the end proposed by making the settlement. It will be a place of security for the convicts, where they will soon support themselves, and where they may be advantageously employed in cultivating the flax-plant.

Loss of the
Sirius.

I have had the honour of informing your Lordship that the Sirius and Supply sailed the 6th of March. The Supply returned to this port the 5th of April, when I received the following account from Captain Hunter† respecting the loss of his Majesty's ship Sirius. That he made Norfolk Island the 13th, and the next day landed all the people, when bad weather coming on no provisions could be landed till the 19th, when the weather was very fine, and the Sirius was brought to in the bay, and the boats were employed landing of provisions, when, finding the ship dropping fast to leeward, he made sail to get out of the bay, but the wind shifting they could not clear the reef, and the ship having missed stays, tho' the anchors were let go and everything done that was possible, she struck, and was lost on the reef. All the people were safely landed, and Captain Hunter had hopes of getting some of the provisions on shore, and I have the satisfaction of hearing from the officer who commands the Supply, and from the officers who have arrived in that vessel, that when they left the island the weather was such that there was no doubt but that all, or the greatest part, of the provisions and stores would be saved; in which case, by the best accounts I can get, they will have seven months' provisions at two-thirds of the established ration; but I am sorry to say that some of the officers have lost most of their effects.

Cause of the
wreck.

* Lieutenant King. King was recalled by Phillip for the purpose of being sent to England with despatches. After doing this service, he returned to Norfolk Island as Lieutenant-Governor, November, 1791.

† John Hunter, second captain of the Sirius, Phillip being first in command; ante, p. 37; Governor of New South Wales, 1795-1800.

Captain Hunter, with the ship's company (except those who came round in the Supply), must continue on the island till a ship can be sent to bring them off, but their situation with respect to provisions is better than it would be in this settlement. 1790
11 April.

Major Ross informs me that on the loss of the Sirius he had put the island under martial law,* and which I have directed him to continue while he thinks it necessary. That it was will be evident from two of the convicts having set the ship on fire when sent on board to save some live stock after the ship's company had been landed; the fire was very fortunately soon extinguished. Martial law.

It was now necessary to reduce the ration to two pounds and a half of flour, two pounds of pork, and two pounds of rice, for seven people for the day. At this ration, which is served to every one without distinction, the flour will last till the middle of November, the pork till the end of July, and the rice till the first week in September. Most labour is now laid aside, all the boats are employed in fishing, and what is caught goes to the public store, where it is served in lieu of pork; and there is no doubt but that we shall support ourselves till the Supply returns, if no ships arrive before that time. Food scarce at Sydney.

The Supply will be ready to sail for Batavia in a few days, in order to procure what flour that vessel can stow, and one of the lieutenants of the Sirius is to be left to follow in any ship that can be hired, to bring provisions to the colony. The Supply will call at Norfolk Island, as she goes to the northward, if the winds permit it without any great loss of time. Sending for flour.

I have ordered the Supply to Batavia, as I do not think that vessel in a condition to attempt a winter's passage round the South Cape. The Supply.

I beg leave to refer your Lordship for any particulars not mentioned in my letters to Lieutenant King, the officer I superseded by the Lieutenant-Governor, and from his great merit in his perseverance and good conduct while he commanded at Norfolk Island, as well as from his known merit in his corps as the officer, I recommend him with confidence to your Lordship's favour and protection. King commended.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.†

Dear Nepean,

Sydney Cove, April 13, 1790.

13 April.

Lieutenant King will give you this letter, and can inform you particularly of the situation in which he leaves us.

Two years' good conduct and perseverance, exerted for the public good, will, I hope, give him a step in the Navy: and if ever you want to employ an officer where patience and exemplary conduct is requisite you will thank me for pointing him out. I know his merit, and recommend him to your support. You will, King's services.

* See Ross's despatch. Ante, p. 319.

† A private letter.

1790
13 April.

I hope, give him every assistance in your power, and with which, and Lord Sydney's countenance and protection, I make no doubt but that he will get the rank he has well earned.

I have few moments for private letters, as the Supply will be ready for sea on Thursday. This is Monday, and I do not wish to detain her.

You know where every good wish is due. Make them acceptable, and believe me, dear Nepean,—

Yours, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

Dear Nepean,

Sydney Cove, April 13, 1790.

The
Commissary
resigns.

The Commissary† who was appointed for this colony through your friendship has acted so unlike the Commissary that he has lost his health, and in three years has never made three shillings. In truth, my friend, he is obliged to resign his charge, for the warmth of this climate has, in the opinion of the faculty, irrecoverably destroyed his constitution; and I warmly recommend him to your interest with Lord Sydney for some stipend, however small. He has for three years discharged the trust reposed in him with the strictest honor and no profit, for you know his pay was only ten shillings a day. His conduct has merited the character I have given of him, and if he lives to reach England I hope he will meet with your countenance, which will add to obligations I owe you.

That health and pleasure may long attend you is the wish of,—

Yours, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.

14 April.

My Lord,

Sydney Cove, April 14th, 1790.

While I have the honor of assuring your Lordship that I retain a just sense of past favors, permit me to lay myself under fresh obligations.

Lieut.
King.

The officer charged with my despatches to your Lordship has conducted himself with so much propriety and exerted himself during the two years he commanded at Norfolk Island in such a manner that I feel it a duty to request that your Lordship will procure him the rank of master and commander in the Navy.

The Com-
missary.

And the Commissary of this settlement being obliged to resign his charge and return to England on account of his ill state of health, which, in the opinion of the faculty, never will be re-established, I as earnestly request your Lordship to recommend

* A private letter.

† Andrew Miller, Commissary of Stores and Provisions. Died at sea on the voyage from Batavia to England with Lieutenant King, August, 1790. He was succeeded by Mr. John Palmer.

him to his Majesty's bounty, and which I hope his loss of health and the strict honor with which he has discharged the trust reposed in him will be thought to merit.

1790

14 April.

This, my Lord, is asking two favors in one letter ; but I know Lord Sydney to be ever ready to reward merit, and I hope he knows me too well to believe I ever would recommend those I was not confident were deserving of his protection.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD SYDNEY.*

My Lord,

Sydney Cove, April 15th, 1790.

15 April.

Tho' I seldom have an opportunity of assuring your Lordship of my respect, when it offers I embrace it with pleasure. The officer charged with my despatches can give every information which may be desired respecting this settlement, and as the Supply is now ready to sail, I have only time to say that I hope a continuance of that friendship with which Lord Sydney has honoured me, and that my respects and every good wish may be made acceptable to Lady Sydney and family.

Lieutenant King.

As the settlement is now fixed, whenever his Majesty's service permits, I shall be glad to return to England, where I have reason to suppose my private affairs may make my presence necessary ; but which I do not ask in any publick letters, nor should I mention a desire of leaving this country at this moment but that more than a year must pass before it can possibly take place, and I make no doubt but that every inconveniency now felt in this colony will be done away before this letter reaches your Lordship. I am sorry to say that nine-tenths of us merit every little inconveniency we now feel.

Phillip asks for leave.

A deserving community.

A pair of pigeons, for Lady Chatham, will, I hope, live to be accepted.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Dear Sir,

Sydney Cove, 15th April, 1790.

I have to request that the necessary instructions may be sent out respecting those convicts who say their terms of transportation are expired,† of which we already have a great number, very few of whom are desirous of becoming settlers in this country.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

* A private letter. Vide Phillip to Nepean. Post, p. 330.

† A great deal of trouble was caused by the omission of the Home Department to send out lists showing the names of the convicts, and their terms of transportation. Many criminals whose sentences had expired were treated in Phillip's time as convicts, because there was no evidence to support their claim to be released.

1790

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

15 April.

Dear Nepean,

Sydney Cove, April 15th, 1790.

The Supply will sail immediately, and the necessity of sending to Batavia for provisions will I presume be obvious; I do it more from being persuaded that some accident must have prevented the ships arriving.†

Leave of
absence.

In a private letter to Lord Sydney I have expressed a wish to have leave to return to England, when the service permits, a request I should not have made at this moment but that the inconveniencies under which the colony now labours will be done away long before my letters can reach England, and more than a year must pass before I can have any answer. Mrs. Phillip was supposed to be dying when I left England, and whoever the estate goes to some steps should be taken to secure the payment of two annuities for which I gave security, and for which it is probable no provision will be made. *I should have no objection to return here*, but some little change would, I hope, be thought necessary—I mean respecting myself; but how far that may be practicable you can judge. You may mention it to Lord Sydney, if you think it necessary, and whatever he determines I should think best; but to come to England for a twelve month is what I wish, for many reasons.

Willing to
return to
the colony.

You will say that my letters are short, but I have few moments for private letters.

Good
spirits.

Dismal accounts will, I make no doubt, be sent to England, but we shall not starve, though seven-eighth of the colony deserves nothing better; the present want will be done away by the first ship that arrives. Health and happiness attend you; say the same to Mrs. Nepean and to your brother,§ and believe yours, &c.,—

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Government House, Sydney Cove,

15 April.

Dear Sir,

April 15th, 1790.

I have enclosed a copy of the orders given to the officer who commands the Supply [Lieut. Ball] for his proceeding to Batavia, in which I have only directed the procuring six months' provisions for the settlement, more than what the Supply will bring, as I make no doubt but that ships from England will arrive before the time expires for which that quantity of provisions will last.

Supplies
from
Batavia.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

* A private letter.

† The warship Guardian and the transport Lady Juliana. The Lady Juliana arrived 3rd June. The Guardian struck an iceberg, and was taken with difficulty to the Cape, where she was abandoned.

§ Captain Nicholas Nepean, who afterwards went to Sydney with the first detachment of the New South Wales Corps.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

1799

Government House, Sydney Cove,

16 April.

Dear Sir,

April 16th, 1790.

The inclosed account* will shew the provisions remaining in the settlement, and the time for which the different species will last. Some pork will be saved by the fish, but no deduction has been made for the loss on every cask, and which amounts to some pounds. I suppose that the pork may last until the first week in September.

Stock and provisions.

Although the live stock in the settlement is very inconsiderable, I was desirous of what there is being given up for the publick, but the general opinion was that the hogs (which are the principal part of our live stock) were, most of them, so poor that those which would be found fit to kill would not be an object; the Commissary has purchased some, which have been served to the people.

Live stock.

When the pork is expended we shall be able to make some addition to the present ration of flour, and as we shall not be able to get the ground in order to sow all our seed wheat (that is, all we have raised), about one hundred and fifty bushels will be served to the people, when the rice is expended; so that we shall make the provisions last untill the Supply returns, although no ship from England should arrive; and I have observed in a former letter that they will be less pressed for provisions at Norfolk Island.

Economy.

The provisions set apart for the people belonging to the Supply, and to victual that vessel in the spring, if it should be then found necessary to send her to the Cape of Good Hope, being no longer requisite for that purpose, have given to the settlement more provisions than were calculated when the Sirius sailed.

More food than expected.

I have thought it necessary to be thus particular as to the real state of the provisions in the settlement, as I think it probable that report may make our situation more unpleasant than it really is.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

MR. THOS. FREEMAN TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

Sir,

New South Wales, April 16th, 1790.

On account of the unfortunate loss of his Majesty's ship Sirius on Norfolk Island, and from the melancholy prospects and situation of this colony, Governor Phillip is under the necessity of dispatching his Majesty's armed brig Supply to Batavia, by which opportunity I have the honor of acquainting you I am well, and that his Excellency desires me to say he is in hopes by this time that some appointment is fixed on for me from my first landing. I am at present under Mr. Palmer, late purser of his Majesty's ship Sirius, appointed Commissary (until his Majesty's

An unemployed officer.

* The returns are not recorded.

1790
16 April. A miserable situation. pleasure is known) in the room of Mr. Miller, who resigns on account of his poor state of health, and comes home by way of Batavia with Lieutenant King, who is charged with his Excellency's dispatches. I shall forbear to trouble you with a recital of [my] miserable and distressed situation, wanting every necessary, and, from having no appointment, deprived of procuring a single pound of sugar. I have, &c.,

THOS. FREEMAN.

CHIEF-SURGEON WHITE TO MR. SKILL. (Banks Papers.)*

Sydney Cove, Port Jackson,

New South Wales, April 17, 1790.

17 April. Dear Sir,

Norfolk Island.

The Sirius lost.

Distress and misery.

A miserable existence.

His Majesty's ship Sirius and Supply, tender, sailed from hence the 6th of March last, with the Lieutenant-Governor, half the marines, and about two hundred convicts, for Norfolk Island, and landed them safe the 16th. This division of our numbers the Governor thought necessary on account of the low state of our provisions. The ships stood off and on until the 19th, before an opportunity of landing the provisions and stores offered; then the Sirius stood in as close as possible to hasten and facilitate getting the things through a heavy surf, which continually rolls in on the beach, but by a current or some other unforeseen cause she was driven on a reef of hidden rocks and irrecoverably lost. The ship's bow is in a position which will probably make her hold together until everything is got ashore, where all the officers and men are safe, with a greater store of provisions than we have here. Had the Sirius arrived safe, she was immediately to have gone to China for some relief for us, and on her dispatch all depended; but, alas! that hope is no more, and a new scene of distress and misery opens to our view. When the Supply arrived with the melancholy tidings the Governor called all the officers together to consult and deliberate on what was best to be done in our present distracted and deplorable situation. He laid before us the state of the provision store, which contained only four months' flour and three of pork at half-allowance, which has been our station for some time past, every other species of provision being long since expended. We, therefore, determined on the necessity of reducing our half-allowance of those two articles to such a proportion as will enable us to drag out a miserable existence for seven months. Should we have no arrivals in that time the game will be up with us, for all the grain of every kind which we have been able to raise in two years and three months would not support us three weeks, which is a very strong instance of the ingratitude and extreme

* This letter was published in the *Public Advertiser* (London) on the 31st December, 1790, as from "Mr. White, Surgeon-General at Botany Bay." It bore no signature, but was addressed, according to a memo. by Sir Joseph Banks, to "Mr. Skill, dealer in hams, tongues, salt salmon, &c., in the Strand."

poverty of the soil and country at large, though great exertions have been made. Much cannot now be done, limited in food and reduced as the people are, who have not had one ounce of fresh animal food since first in the country; a country and place so forbidding and so hateful as only to merit execration and curses, for it has been a source of expence to the mother country and of evil and misfortune to us, without there ever being the smallest likelihood of its repaying or recompensing either. From what we have already seen we may conclude that there is not a single article in the whole country that in the nature of things could prove of the smallest use or advantage to the mother country or the commercial world. In the name of heaven, what has the Ministry been about? Surely they have quite forgotten or neglected us, otherwise they would have sent to see what had become of us, and to know how we were likely to succeed. However, they must soon know from the heavy bills which will be presented to them, and the misfortunes and losses which have already happened to us, how necessary it becomes to relinquish a scheme that in the nature of things can never answer. It would be wise by the first steps to withdraw the settlement, at least such as are living, or remove them to some other place: this is so much out of the world and tract of commerce that it could never answer. How a business of this kind (the expence of which must be great) could first be thought of without sending to examine the country, as was Captain Thompson's errand to the coast of Africa, is to every person here a matter of great surprise. Mons. Peyrouse and Clanard, the French circumnavigators, as well as us, have been very much surprized at Mr. Cook's description of Botany Bay: the wood is bad, the soil light, poor, and sandy, nor has it anything to recommend it. Accurate observers have surveyed the country without being able to see anything like the meadow land that Mr. Cook and others mention; the Frenchmen declare the same, and that in the whole course of their voyage they never saw a place half so unpromising for a settlement as this. They laid at Botany Bay eight weeks just after our arrival in the country repairing some damages which the Boussole and Astrolabe, under their command, received while at the Navigators Islands.

Before they came to Botany Bay they had been at Norfolk Island, but could neither anchor nor land; they made an observation with respect to it (which from its singularity, propriety, and force, I cannot suppress)—that it was only a place fit for angels and eagles to reside in. The Supply, tender, sails to-morrow for Batavia, in hopes the Dutch may be able to send in time to save us; should any accident happen to her, Lord have mercy on us! She is a small vessel to perform so long and unexplored a voyage, but we rely much on the abilities and active attention of

1790

17 April.

The country
condemned.The settle-
ment
forgottenRemoval
advocated.Explorers'
accounts.Norfolk
Island.Angels and
eagles.

1790 Lieutenant Ball, who commands her. 2d. Lieutenant King, of
 17 April. the Sirius, takes his passage in her to Batavia, and from thence
 Sending for help. to the Cape of Good Hope (in his way to Europe), where he has
 orders to charter a ship and send her to us immediately, should
 no other ships have passed that place in their way here.

Whatever may be my fate and that of my fellow-sufferers, God
 bless you all in England, prays your faithful and sincere, &c., &c.

LIEUTENANT SHAPCOTE* TO THE COMMISSIONERS OF THE NAVY.

Neptune, in False Bay, Cape of Good Hope,

24 April. Honourable Sirs, 24 April, 1790.

I beg leave to inform you I had just time to acquaint your
 honours with my arrival here on the 13th instant with the ships
 Second fleet. named in the margin† on the 16th instant by a vessel bound to
 Holland that was on the point of sailing.

I have further to acquaint you I met nothing material on the
 passage.

On my arrival at Cape Town from this place to wait on the
 Guardian. Governor I found his Majesty's ship Guardian hauled on shore,
 rendered unfit for further service, as reported.

Immediately waited on Lieutenant Riou, who commands her,
 and tendered him every assistance in my power, to which he gave
 no answer.

Copys of letter with his order to me I enclose for your honours'
 Her loss. information, and hope my conduct therein will meet your appro-
 bation. He never communicated to me what stores were saved,
 or how the accident happened to the ship, further than he had run
 foul of an island of ice in 44° 30' south.

The soldiers and convicts, to a very large number, are exceeding
 Scurvy. ill with the scurvy, and as our stay here will be short, I have, in
 consequence of representations from the surgeon's mate of the
 troops and the different surgeons of the ships, ordered the masters
 to issue to them fresh meat every day, with a sufficient quantity
 of vegetables, which I hope likewise will meet your honours' appro-
 bation. The surgeon's opinion I herewith transmit, likewise the
 Mortality. number of convicts that have died‡ since our leaving England.

The masters of three ships reported to me on the 21st instant
 that they were watered and ready for sea. I have given them
 orders to remain here, in hopes of the six hundred tierces and
 barrels of provisions coming by the 28th instant from Lieutenant
 Riou for the use of the colony.

* Naval agent, in charge of transports. He died on board the Neptune on the voyage
 from the Cape to Port Jackson.

† Neptune, Surprise, Scarborough.

‡ Note in MS.—Died in the Neptune, forty-five males, one female; died in the Surprise,
 eight males; died in the Scarborough, fifteen males.

These orders I have given to the best of my judgment for his Majesty's service, which I hope will not be deemed an error in me. I have heard nothing of the Justinian. I am informed the Lady Juliana left Table Bay some time in March. I am, &c.,

1790
24 April.
JOHN SHAPCOTE.

NORFOLK ISLAND.—PROCLAMATION.

By his Honour the Lieut.-Governor and Council.*

At a meeting of the Lieut.-Governor and Council held to consider of the very exhausted state of the provision in this settlement, and to consult upon what measures are most proper to be pursued in order to preserve life until such time as we might be relieved by some arrival from England, of which we have been so long in expectation, but probably disappointed by some unfortunate accident having happened to the ships intended for this country :

The state of the provision having been laid before the Council, and the alarming situation of the settlement having been taken into the most serious consideration, the following ration of provisions was unanimously resolved and ordered to take place on Saturday, the 15th inst.† (viz.) :—

Ration for each person per week—

Flour.	Beef	or	Pork.	Rice.
3 lb.	1½ lb.		17 oz.	1 lb.

Children above twelve months old half the above ration, and children under the age one pound and a half of flour and one pound of rice per week.

In future all crimes which may be considered by any three members of the Council as not capital will be punished by a reduction of the present allowance, at their discretion.

ROBERT ROSS, &c.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO LIEUTENANT KENT.

Sir, 14th May, 1790. 14 May.

Having communicated to my Lords Commrs of the Adm'y your letter of the 8th inst., informing them that the ship in which you had leave to go as master on a voyage to Lisbon and Oporto is upon the point of sailing, but that, as you are desirous of serving in the Navy, you intend to remain at Leith until you know whether or not your services may be required, I am, in return, commanded by their Lordships to acquaint you that they will appoint you to one of his Majesty's ships as soon as they learn from you that you have delivered up the charge of the merchant ship and are ready to serve. I am, &c.,

P.S.‡

* This proclamation is undated, but it was evidently made in the month of May, 1790.

† 15th May.

‡ Philip Stephens. This letter, and others which follow, were copied from the Secretary's Common Letter-book at the Admiralty. Only the initials of the name appear in the letter-book.

1790

20 May,

LIEUTENANT RIOU TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

His Majesty's ship Guardian,

Table Bay, 20 May, 1790.

Sir,

When I last had the honour to write to you I had resolved to proceed with his Majesty's ship under my command (so soon as she could be cleared of the stores and provisions) to Saldanha Bay, where she might lay in safety, to be hove down, and if possible be so repaired as to proceed to sea.

Condition
of the
Guardian.

Be pleased to communicate to the Right Honble. the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that I made all necessary preparations for getting her under sail; and as I had every reason to suppose that could a contrivance be made to put a stop to the leak abaft that the ship would not only be in a condition to proceed to Saldanha Bay in safety, but that there would be no longer any necessity for supernumeraries at the pumps, which were employed at very great expence, I therefore caused to be erected in the bread-room a strong partition, tightly caulked, and let in between the timbers, so as to join very closely to the outside plank of the bottom; and I was happy to find that by these means the water was effectually prevented from running forward, and that the partition fully answered the purpose for which it was intended. But it likewise served to prove that the leak was not only abaft. The pumps a few hours afterwards required more attention than usual, and for which I can only attribute that in clearing the hold the disturbing of the ballast and filth, composed of all sorts of meal and grain collected together in a solid body, gave vent to the water to make its way faster into the ship, as it was then discovered that the water run in fast from forward; at the same time, as the ship was much lightened, we were enabled to see tolerably well the condition of her bottom forward and aft without board.

Survey
of the
Guardian.

Finding my hope entirely frustrated in getting the ship under weigh with any degree of safety, and doubting much of the possibility of repairing so as she might proceed to sea, I thought it advisable to order a survey to be taken of the state of her hull by the officers under my command, and that no assistance that could possibly be obtained at this place might be wanting, I applied to the Governor for the help of such persons as were the best capable of judging on the business. Herewith I have the honour to enclose to you the papers relating to the surveys,* which will as fully inform their Lordships of the state of the ship as anything I can say at present.

Beyond
repair.

Convinced now that no possibility existed of repairing the ship, nothing remained for me to do but to put an end to the useless

* The report of the master, boatswain, and carpenter was to the effect that it would be impossible to put the ship in repair. Two captains of the East India Company's ships and three carpenters, who surveyed the vessel at the request of the Governor of the Cape, made a similar report.

expençe of keeping her afloat. I therefore, after having cleared her and taken out the bowsprit and two remaining lower masts, hauled her on the ground in the most secure part of the bay, that she might serve for the habitation of the officers and crew; but I fear she will not long continue such, as the season is approaching which will render it impossible for anybody to remain on board.*

1790

20 May.

Beached.

Had I, therefore, sir, no other object to consider but the present situation of the Guardian, I should perhaps do well to dispose of her by public sale, and return to England with the remaining part of the ship's company; but the stores and provisions with which she was laden are now lying at a great expence in warehouses in this town, and I know not in what manner to proceed with them, as the ships intended for Port Jackson that have already arrived here have taken away but a very small proportion in comparison with the whole.

Her stores and provisions.

It is impossible for me at present, sir, to give you any exact account of what remains of them. The salt provisions, excepting a few casks which received damage, and thereby became putrid, are perfectly good. I may venture to say that there are also about two hundred casks of flour which are in good condition, as they were stowed on the lower deck. All the bales and cases, consisting of clothes, linnens, leather, and different sorts of cloathing, are more or less damaged; but such as were not absolutely rotten have been washed and taken care of. Almost all the naval stores, excepting two cables for the Sirius, are ruined or have been thrown overboard at sea. A great part of the provisions sent on board by the officers for victualling the Navy, for the use of the Supply, tender, are saved and generally in good condition. But everything that was stowed under the lower deck is more or less injured, as the ship was frequently kept from sinking by the assistance of floating on that deck, and at times the water in the ship was above it. It would, therefore, be unnecessary for me to acquaint you, sir, that such articles as rice, oatmeal, sugar, medicines, and many other things shipped by Mr. Alexander Davison, are perfectly spoilt and useless. The iron and steel sent on board by that gentleman are, I presume, as good as ever. The carts and waggons were thrown overboard at sea, and the artificers' tools are in different degrees good and bad. But the manner in which it was necessary to clear his Majesty's ship made me resolve to cast away nothing that was not absolutely putrid or offensive, but to get all on shore into secure places, and in that state everything remains at present. Little are the remains of the ship's furniture, excepting the rigging belonging to the mainmast, foremast, and bowsprit, some blocks, and ironwork. Anchors and cables I was under the necessity of purchasing here.

Loss of naval stores.

Provisions spoilt.

A few things saved.

* Orders were shortly afterwards given for all on board to go on shore for the preservation of their health.

1790

20 May.

Flour and
wine for
Sydney.

Survivors.

The second
fleet.Riou and
Shapcote.Transports
sail for Port
Jackson.The
surviving
convicts.Their
services.

Nothing is left of the gunner's stores but twelve guns, which were stowed in the main hatchway, and some shot.

By the Lady Juliana, transport, which sailed from this bay on the 30th of March, I sent seventy-five barrels of flour and one pipe of Teneriffe wine consigned to Governor Phillip. I had been so fortunate as to preserve the dispatches which I had received from the hands of Vice-Admiral Roddam for Govr. Phillip, and I delivered them to the care of Lieut. Thos. Edgar, superintendent of the Lady Juliana. In that ship I also sent the five surviving superintendants of convicts which were on board the Guardian.

The Neptune, Surprise, and Scarborough arrived in False Bay the 14th of April, and in them I sent, under the care of Lt. John Shapcote, the agent, twenty convicts, which were all that remained alive of the twenty-five that were sent on board the Guardian at Spithead. I also put on board those ships four hundred tierces of beef and two hundred tierces of pork; and had not a misunderstanding existed between Lieutenant Shapcote and myself, it is my opinion I could have sent many articles which would not have taken up much stowage in the ships under his direction that would have been very acceptable to his Majesty's colony in New South Wales. But as that officer waited my orders for his proceedings, and afterwards persisted in his own resolution of sailing from False Bay on a certain day which he determinately fixed upon, I lost no time to endeavour to acquiesce in his measures, resolving that nothing should be wanting on my part to give all possible assistance to the colony, fearing that it might severely experience the effects of the accident that has befel his Majesty's ship under my command. The Neptune, Surprise, and Scarborough sailed from False Bay on the 29th of April.

Permit me now, sir, to address you on a subject which I hope their Lordships will not consider to be unworthy their notice. It is to recommend as much as is in my power to their Lordships' favour and interest the case of the twenty convicts which my duty compelled me to send to Port Jackson. But the recollection of past sufferings reminds me of that time when I found it necessary to make use of every possible method to encourage the minds of the people under my command, and at such a time considering how great the difference might be between a free man struggling for life and him who perhaps might consider death as not much superior to a life of ignominy and disgrace, I publicly declared that not one of them, so far as depended on myself, should ever be convicts. And I may with undeniable truth say that had it not been for their assistance and support the Guardian would never have arrived to where she is. Their conduct prior to the melancholy accident that happened on the 23rd of Decr. last was always such as may be commended, and from their first entrance

into the ship at Spithead they ever assisted and did their duty in like manner as the crew. I have taken the liberty to recommend them to the notice of Governor Phillip; but I humbly hope, sir, their Lordships will consider the service done by these men as meriting their Lordships' favour and protection, and I make no doubt that should I have been so fortunate as to represent their cases in proper colours that they will experience the benefit of their Lordships' interest.*

1790

20 May.

Reward
deserved.

Since the last letter I had the honour to write to you one of the convicts died, as also Mr. William Fairclough, surgeon's mate, whose mind, I believe, was so much affected by the distress he had been a witness to that he long lingered in a state of insanity.

Deaths.

Having, sir, represented to you, for their Lordships' information, as much as possible the state of his Majesty's ship under my command, as likewise the situation of the stores and provisions, I know not otherwise how to act than wait their Lordships' orders, unless any of his Majesty's ships should arrive here, and the commander think proper to give me directions for my proceedings.

I certainly shall not think of disposing of his Majesty's ship unless I find that she is not capable of remaining entire during the heavy north-west gales that blow into this bay in the winter months.

The severe effects of a gale of wind from that quarter has been lately experienced. In the course of two hours seven ships were stranded had driven from their anchors. The Guardian parted a new cable of twenty inches, tho' she was riding with nothing but the lower masts stripped of the rigging; at the same time it required the two chain pumps and one of Cole's to keep the leak from gaining upon her!

A heavy
gale.

I may presume, sir, that before this time their Lordships have been made acquainted with every particular relating to the Guardian, prior to the 25th of Decr., by Mr. Thos. Clements, master, and Mr. Rich. Farquharson, purser, both of which officers' characters are sufficiently known by the commanders they have served under to render anything I should say to their praise unnecessary. After the 25th of December, never being able to keep any regular journal of the proceedings, I have it not in my power to give you the particulars (at this instant) of the transactions from that day until my arrival in this bay. It may be sufficient for their Lordships to know that never being able to direct the ship in any particular course, it is a matter of the greatest astonishment, though, at the same time, a proof of the gracious effects of Divine Providence, how she could ever have arrived at anchorage in Table Bay.

No journal.

Providence,

I have, &c.,

E. Rieu.

* In consequence of this recommendation, the convicts in question were pardoned on condition that they remained abroad until their sentences had expired. Vide Grenville's despatch to Phillip; post, p. 414.

1790

21 May

DEVICE FOR SEAL.

At the Court of St. James's, the 21st of May, 1790.

Present :—

The King's Most Excellent Majesty.

Archbishop of Canterbury.

Lord President.	Earl of Mount Edgecumbe.
Lord Steward.	Viscount Sydney.
Duke of Richmond.	Lord Amherst.
Earl of Dunleigh.	Lord Mulgrave.

The Secretary at War.

UPON reading this day at the Board a letter from the Right Honourable William Wyndham Grenville, one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State to the Lord President of the Council, proposing that a device for a Great Seal for the use of the Government of New South Wales and islands adjacent in the Pacific Ocean should be laid before his Majesty in Council, it is ordered by his Majesty in Council that the said letter, a copy whereof is hereunto annexed,* be, and it is hereby referred to the Right Honorable the Lords of the Committee of Council appointed for the consideration of all matters relating to trade and foreign plantations, who are to consider of and prepare a device for a Great Seal proper to be made use of within the said Government and islands, and present the same to his Majesty at this Board for his royal approbation.

Device for
Seal.

MR. J. W. HARRIS TO S. W. CLAYTON, ESQ. (Banks Papers.)†

IN my letter from the Cape of Good Hope in January, which I hope you have received, I acquaint you of our safe arrival there in order to bring flour for the settlement. Nothing material happen'd till the 21st of Feby., when being ready for sea sailed from Table Bay, and had a very good wind till we came near the south cape of Van Dieman's Land, when a hard gale of wind came at south, which obliged us to bring to. The 22nd of April, about 3 o'clock in the afternoon, saw the land on the larboard bow, suppos'd by us to be the Mewstone‡ of Van Dieman's Land; wore ship and stretch off under reef courses and ballanced mizen. About 6 o'clock in the evening the land was seen again on the lee bow; our situation began to grow very alarming, as not knowing what part of the coast it was; however, it was resolv'd

Van
Diemen's
Land.The Sirius in
danger.

* The letter is not attached to the Order-in-Council. The draught of the seal was approved 4th August, 1790. Post, p. 389.

† Mr. Harris was one of the non-commissioned officers of the Sirius, wrecked at Norfolk Island, 19th March, 1790. He was sent with other officers and a part of the crew to Port Jackson in the Supply, the tender of the Sirius. The MS. is the copy of a letter from Mr. Harris. The copy bears neither date nor address, but the letter was written, apparently, at Port Jackson, in April or May, 1790, and at the foot there are these words, in Sir Joseph Banks's handwriting:—"To S. W. Clayton, Esq., Peckham, Surrey."

‡ Mewstone Island, 12 miles off the south coast of Tasmania.

to carry as much sail as possible to endeavour to get off the land ; set close-reef'd main-topsail, and finding we could not weather this part of land again, wore ship, and set the fore-topsail. About 9 o'clock the looming of the land was seen on the beam ; however, stood on with a heavy press of sail. Nothing could equal the horror of this night, being very dark and dismal, not a star to be seen, and blowing very hard, with a great sea running, so as to carry away our head and rail. About 2 o'clock land was seen just before the beam ; our only remedy left was carrying sail, which we did, and weather'd it about a mile and a half. The land we had just pass'd was Tasman's Head, and has several dangerous rocks off it. The next day saw the Maria Islands, and on the 8th of May arrived at Port Jackson. Upon examination it was found that the ship could not go to sea before she had a good repair, which took up near the whole year.

1790

A stormy night.

Arrival at Port Jackson.

When this year came, and finding no supplies from England, it was judged necessary to divide the settlement, and send part to Norfolk Island, as everything grew much better than at Port Jackson. Norfolk Island abounds with timber, and has a very rich clay soil, but the island is surround'd by a reef of dangerous coral rocks, so that it is very difficult to land, there being only two places practicable—the one Sydney Bay, where the settlement is, and the other Cascade Bay. The last place the boat's stern must be backed in, and the people jump out on a rock, and this can only be done at half-tide, the rock where they land on being an island at high water. At Sydney Bay there is a passage between the reef only wide enough for a boat to go in, and there is generally such a surf running that makes it very dangerous, especially if the wind is on shore.

Division of forces.

Difficulty of landing at Norfolk Island.

March 7th, having embark'd on board the Supply and Sirius part of the detachment of marines, with the Lieutenant-Governor,* and about 120 men convicts and 70 women, with provision in proportion, we set sail from Port Jackson, and on the 13th arrived at Norfolk Island ; employed till the 19th in standing off and on, embracing every opportunity of landing the people and provision. Had landed all the people and light baggage, and were standing into Sydney Bay, the signal being up for good landing, run into the bay and brought to, hoisted out the boats and began to land them, when the Supply hail'd us and desired us to make sail, we being too nigh in, and made sail herself and instantly tacked, and with great difficulty weather'd us. We made all sail possible for the short time allow'd, and, finding we could not weather Point Ross, hove the ship into stays, which she unfortunately missed instantly ; on the other tack the wind leading in two points, and finding ourselves near the surf, endeavour'd to stay her. She came round, and having sternway before she could fill went on the reef in a great surf. The mast was instantly cut away, and

The Sirius and Supply off Norfolk Island.

* Major Ross.

1790

Wreck of
the Sirius.All on board
saved.The Supply
returns to
Sydney.Goes to
Batavia for
provisions.

in ten minutes the ship was a perfect wreck. All the bread and such of the dry provisions that was at hand, with the timekeeper, were sent away in the boats, when the surf rising and the wreck being alongside no more boats could come to us. However, got a buoy on shore with some whale-line, and made a hawser fast to the end, hove it tight, got a hart as a traveller, and in that manner got all the people on shore safe. Great number of things were thrown overboard, and most came on shore. It was very fortunate for us that the ship went on shore in the only place we could possibly save our lives; had she gone where we first missed stays she would have gone to pieces instantly, but as it is, if fine weather comes on, we are in hopes of getting most of the provision out of her. I had forgot to mention that the anchor was let go, which had this good effect, that it brought the ship's head to the surf. When the tide rose, Monday, the 21st, I was ordered to go on board the Supply with part of the officers and ship's company for Port Jackson. Thursday, 24th, we set sail, and arrived there the 5th of April. Governor Phillip received us with every mark of tenderness, and has us all at his house to live. It was judged absolutely necessary to send the Supply to Batavia, in order to bring a ship with provisions, and the colony is very short, the allowance being only two pounds and a half of flour a week, two pounds of pork, one pint of pease, and one pint of rice. God send the fleet in soon.

JOHN WM. HARRIS.

SIR GEORGE YONGE TO MAJOR GROSE.

7 June.

Sir,

W.O., 7 June, 1790.

Undeserved
liberty.

It has been represented to me by Major-Gen'l Picton that Wm. Jameson, late a soldier in the 12th Reg't of Ft., who, having been sentenced to death, was pardoned on the condition of serving for life in the corps under y'r C. [command], then actually embarked for N. So. Wales, has been seen at large on shore, and has even appeared at the parade of the 12th Reg't, in which he had committed a crime of so heinous a nature as to have forfeited his life.

Grose
reprimanded.

I am sorry to be under the necessity of acq'tng you that the indulgence you have shown to this man in the face of the officers and soldiers of the corps, the discipline of which he had so notoriously violated, is inconsistent with the idea that must naturally be suggested by the terms on which H.M. was most graciously pleased to remit the capital sentence, and cannot but be considered as an insult to good order and of evil example to the Army in general, and to the 12th Reg't in particular.

I am, &c.,

GEO. YONGE.

MAJOR GROSE TO SIR GEORGE YONGE.

1790

Sir,

Portsmouth, June 9th 1790.

9 June.

In reply to your letter of the 7th inst., I beg to assure you that had I not totally misconceived the conditions of pardon granted to Willm. Jamieson, late corporal in the 12th Regiment, the indulgences complained of would not have been shown to him by me. Major Grose explains.

I certainly, as well for the purpose of relieving his own constitution, apparently much injured by confinement, as to prevent those accidents which might happen in the ship by diseases people from close confinement are apt to communicate, did more than once trust him on shore; but before even Jamieson was permitted to leave the ship I requested the adjutant of the 12th Regiment to carry my compliments to the commanding officer begging I might be informed, as from the circumstances of Jamieson's imprisonment I felt it expedient for his safety, and ours, to send him in the fresh air, whether it would or would not be disagreeable to the officers of the regiment to see him on shore, being aware that it might not be pleasant to see a man who has been driven from the corps for so outrageous an offence indulged with such liberty.

Reasons for action.

I receiv'd for answer the compliments of the officer commanding the 12th Regiment, sent by his adjutant, informing me that it was not disagreeable to the officers of that regiment to see Jamieson on shore. Officers acquiesce.

I have only to add that it will give me the greatest uneasiness to meet your smallest disapprobation, and wherever I on this occasion have acted improperly has been as undesignedly as I have given the insult represented by Gen. Picton to the 12th Regiment.

With every respect, &c.,

FRAN'S GROSE, Major Com'g.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE.*

14 June.

Sir,

Sydney, New South Wales, June 14th, 1790.

I am favoured with your letter informing me that his Majesty has been pleased to honor you with the seals of the Home Department.

I have, sir, great pleasure in congratulating you on that appointment; my despatches in future shall be addressed accordingly, and I have the honor to assure you that I am with great respect, &c., Congratulations.

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE.

Sir,

Sydney, June 14th, 1790.

The approbation which his Majesty has been pleased to express of my conduct† can only be merited by an earnest desire of faithfully and successfully discharging the trust reposed in me. A letter of thanks.

* The Right Hon. William Wyndham Grenville, afterwards Lord Grenville. Ante, p. 247.

† See Grenville's despatch. Ante, p. 252.

1790

14 June.

It is, sir, through you that I am honoured with this mark of attention from my Royal Master, and through you, sir, I hope that my grateful sense of his Majesty's bounty will be made known.

The address I received on his Majesty's being happily restored to health I have the honor to enclose ; and faithfully attached to His Royal person, by every tie of duty, gratitude, and affection, I rejoice in the happy event.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

ADDRESS OF OFFICERS ON THE RECOVERY OF KING GEORGE III.

Address of
officers on
the King's
recovery.

The humble address of the officers of the Civil and Military Establishment in the Territory of New South Wales, to His Excellency Arthur Phillip, Esq., Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the Territory of New South Wales and its Dependencies.

A happy
event.

WE, his Majesty's most dutiful and loyal subjects, the officers of the Civil and Military Establishments in New South Wales, filled with the deepest sense of gratitude for the mercies of Almighty God in restoring our most Gracious Sovereign to health from a dangerous and afflicting sickness, most humbly beg to approach your Excellency with our sincere and heartfelt congratulations on that happy and distinguished event, and to declare our unshaken loyalty and attachment to his Majesty's person and government.

Prophetic.

The little community which has now the honor of addressing your Excellency for the first time cannot pass it by without anticipating in idea the many and memorable occasions which will be presented hereafter to his Majesty's faithful subjects of this distant settlement to congratulate him and his illustrious descendants—whether extending the arts and blessings of peace, or covered with the trophies of necessary and glorious war.

Zeal and
fidelity.

Although from remoteness of situation, and want of intercourse with the seat of government, we are the last in his Majesty's far extended empire to testify our joy on this occasion, we trust that our zeal and fidelity to his Royal person will for ever remain unquestioned, as we know them to be pure and unalterable.

Actuated by the warmest wishes to promote the interests of our country, and the increasing splendour of his Majesty's auspicious reign, all which can add to his domestic felicity must ever be regarded by us as sacred and inviolable.

The
Almighty
thanked.

We further beg leave to assure your Excellency that we shall not fail with our unfeigned thanks to offer up our most sincere and fervent prayers to that Being in whom alone are the issues of life for the continued safety, long life, and prosperity of his Majesty and his illustrious House. And that his Royal Consort,

our revered Queen, may conjointly with him continue to receive and enjoy every earthly felicity, is what we do and shall humbly and ardently supplicate of the Dispenser of all Good. 1790
14 June.

Sydney, New South Wales, 14th June, 1790.

DAVID COLLINS.¹

RICHARD JOHNSON.²

JOHN WHITE.³

JOHN PALMER.⁴

AUGUSTUS ALT.⁵

GEORGE BONCHIR WORGAN.⁶

WILLIAM BALMAIN.⁷

THOMAS ARNDELL.⁸

GEO. WM. MAXWELL.⁹

HENRY WATERHOUSE.¹⁰

JAMES MEREDITH.¹¹

WATKIN TENCH.¹²

JAS. FURZER.¹³

JOHN POULDEN.¹⁴

WILLIAM DAWES.¹⁵

THOMAS DAVEY.¹⁶

JOHN LONG.¹⁷

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sydney, Port Jackson,

Dear Sir,

16th June, 1790.

16 June.

By the Lady Juliana*, which arrived here the 3rd instant, I am favored with your letter of the 20th of June, 1789, acknowledging the receipt of my letters down to the 16th of November, 1788, and informing me that I should receive letters from Mr. Secretary Grenville respecting the provisions, stores, &c., sent out, and that care would be taken to forward, from time to time, the necessary supplies, until the settlement shall be in a condition to provide for the support of its establishment; that by the Guardian† I should receive the necessary instructions relative to the granting of lands, with such other information as might be judged necessary for my guidance, together with a remittance for the payment of the artificers of the marine detachment. The Lady Juliana.

I have, sir, received Mr. Secretary Grenville's letters respecting the supplies sent out, and the instructions for the granting lands, but I have not received the remittance intended for paying the marine artificers, nor can I learn from any person on board the Lady Juliana whether it was on board the Guardian or not.

By the unfortunate loss of that ship this colony was deprived of those very liberal supplies ordered by Government, the want of which has thrown the settlement back so much that it will require a length of time to put it in the situation it would have been in at this moment had the Guardian arrived, as she would have done but for that unhappy accident, before I was obliged to Loss of the Guardian.

¹ Judge-Advocate. ² Chaplain. ³ Chief Surgeon. ⁴ Commissary. ⁵ Surveyor-General.
⁶ Surgeon of the Sirius. ⁷ Third Assistant Surgeon. ⁸ Second Assistant Surgeon.
⁹ Naval Lieutenant. ¹⁰ Naval Lieutenant. ¹¹ Captain-Lieutenant of Marines. ¹² Captain-Lieutenant of Marines. ¹³ Quarter-master of Marines. ¹⁴ First Lieutenant of Marines.
¹⁵ Officer of Engineers and Artillery. ¹⁶ First Lieutenant of Marines. ¹⁷ Adjutant of Marines.

* The first store-ship from England.

† Sent out with the Lady Juliana, but wrecked on an iceberg, 23rd December, 1789.

1790

16 June.

send away the Sirius, to give up labour, and destroy the greater part of the live stock. The Sirius did not sail until the 6th of March, and the Guardian would have arrived by the first week in February.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Government House, Sydney Cove;

17th June, 1790.

17 June.

Sir,

Despatches
from
England.

I am honoured with your dispatches by the Lady Juliana, which ship arrived on the 3rd instant; and with the duplicates and dispatches put on board that ship from the Guardian at the Cape of Good Hope.

Land
grants.

The Royal Instructions respecting the grants of land to be made to settlers, and the encouragement to be held out to those non-commissioned officers and privates belonging to the detachment of marines who may be inclined to enlist in the corps by which they are to be relieved, or to become settlers, shall be obeyed*; and a particular attention shall be paid to what relates to the female convicts, the provisions and clothing.

The natives.

The dispatches sent home by Lieutenant King, who sailed for Batavia, the 17th of April, in the Supply, tender, will shew that settlers have little to apprehend from the natives, against whom I have never thought any defence necessary.

No fear of
attack.

When we first landed it was to have been wished, but at that time, and for that time, and for months after that period, the slightest defence could not have been made without neglecting what was so immediately and absolutely necessary—the securing the stores and provisions. I believe there is little reason to think that the natives will ever attack any building, and still less to suppose they will attack a number of armed men; not that I think they want innate bravery—they certainly do not—but they are sensible of the great superiority of our arms. Setting fire to the corn I most feared, but which they never have attempted; and as these avoid those places we frequent, it is seldom that any of them are now seen near the settlement. The cattle, if they find them in the woods, they undoubtedly will destroy, which is all I believe the settlers will have to apprehend. Their attacking stragglers is natural, for those people go out to rob the natives of their spears and the few articles they possess; and as they do it too frequently with impunity, the punishments they sometimes meet with are not to be regretted—they have had a good effect.

Cattle in
danger.The natives
robbed.

The detaching a body of convicts to any distant place, which the soil and other circumstances might render desirable, as pointed out in the letter of the 19th, would at present be attended with many inconveniences. On the borders of the several rivers which have been discovered there are some desirable situations, but

* Ante, pp. 256-257.

superintendants and store-keepers must be sent with convicts who are detached, and stores must be erected. A superintendant at a distance should be not only a good farmer, but a man who would feel himself interested in the convicts labouring successfully for the benefit of the Crown; and barns and houses are works of labour which require time to erect.

1790

17 June.

Superintendents needed,

If settlers are sent out many difficulties will be removed; they may choose those situations to which, for the above reasons, I cannot at this moment detach convicts; and I have had the honor of observing in my former dispatches that settlers appear to me absolutely necessary. If they bring with them people to clear and cultivate the land, and provisions to support those they bring with them, they will want very little assistance from Government after they arrive; but no soldier or other person in this settlement could at present accept of the assistance of convicts in cultivating the land which might be granted them on the conditions pointed out in the instructions—"of feeding and cloathing them." I believe, sir, that it will be little less than two years from the time of granting the lands before those lands will support the cultivators. I may err, but I give my opinion to the best of my judgment.

and settlers.

The sort of men required.

A sanguine view.

At Norfolk Island settlers may be able to support themselves in less time; perhaps one year's support from the Crown may be thought sufficient, for there the soil is very rich, and when the pine-trees are cut down the roots soon rot in the ground; but here the soil, though very good, is less luxuriant, and the roots of the large gum-trees, if not grubbed up, will remain in the ground for years, and the labour of clearing the land of such heavy timber is very great.

Conditions at Norfolk Island.

A settler who has to depend on his own labour will get on very slowly, but as there are some places on which but little timber is growing, such spots shall be selected for those non-commissioned officers and privates who may be inclined to settle; and I shall govern myself by the instructions I have received, unless otherwise directed.

Military settlers.

If the settlers first sent out are, in addition to their knowledge as farmers, possessed of some little property, will it not, sir, act as a security for their industry? Men able to support themselves, if intelligent and industrious, I think cannot fail; but if people come out (and such, I fear, may offer) who are indolent, and having nothing to lose want that spur to industry, they may become a burthen to the settlement, for they cannot be left to starve. Could an hundred of those who have been sent out to form this colony be removed it would be greatly benefitted, since they are as great burthen here as they would be to their parishes if in England.

Settlers should have means.

Indolent settlers a burden.

As it may appear that we have not made that advance towards supporting ourselves which may have been expected, I will, sir,

Slow progress.

1790

17 June.

The reasons
why.

beg leave to observe that in addition to those untoward circumstances, which have thrown the settlement so far back, it never yet has been possible to direct the labour of more than a small part of the convicts to the principal object. A civil and military establishment form a considerable part of our numbers, which is increased by women and children, all of whom are undoubtedly necessary, but are a deadweight on those who have to render the colony independent for the necessaries of life. Stores, barracks, and houses have required time, and we have still stores and barracks to build in the stead of those temporary ones at first erected. Settlers will secure themselves and their provisions in a short time, and everyone they feed will then be employed in cultivation.

No harbour
at Norfolk
Island.

To making Norfolk Island the principal settlement there is one objection, which, I think, renders it impossible to be done until that island is so far cultivated that it can support itself. There is no harbour or good roadstead, and landing provisions is attended with some difficulties. I hope the loss of the *Sirius* will not set the island in a more unfavorable point of view, for which, with the loss of that ship, I see no reason. It was an accident; but, sir, you will be fully informed as to what may be expected from Norfolk Island by the officer who made the settlement—an officer of merit, and who could be ill-spared; but I thought it necessary to send home some person to give that information which could not so well be conveyed in letters, and it was my intention to have detained that officer here until the *Sirius* returned from China, that he might have had more perfect knowledge of the country round this settlement, but which the loss of that ship prevented.

Favourable
situation of
Port
Jackson.

The situation of Port Jackson between two harbours, so that if a ship falls in with the coast in bad weather a few miles either in the northward or the southward she can find immediate shelter, is a great advantage; and I believe it will be found hereafter that the seat of Government has not been improperly placed.

Disadvan-
tages.

We, as first settlers, labour under some inconvenience from not being able to employ the convicts in agriculture on the spot where the provisions and stores are landed, but this is the only inconvenience, as having the convicts at some distance from the the military is attended with many advantages.

A hurried
decision.

I had little time to look round me when I first arrived, for my instructions particularly pointed out that I was not to delay the disembarking the people, with a view of searching for a better situation than what Botany Bay might afford. I was obliged to look farther, but I did not think myself at liberty to continue my research after I had seen Sydney Cove. Had I seen the country near the head of the harbour I might have been induced to have made the settlement there, but we knew nothing of that part

of the country until the creek which runs up to Rose Hill was discovered in a journey I made to the westward three months after we landed; and although I was then fully satisfied of the goodness of the soil, and saw the advantages of that situation, most of our stores and provisions were landed, and it required some little time to do away with the general opinion that such a situation could not be healthy, and which I was inclined to think myself until I had examined the country for some miles round, and was satisfied that there was a free circulation of air, in the goodness of which few places equal it. The number of people who have been settled there on an average for eighteen months exceed one hundred, and in that time we have had only two deaths—a woman who had been subject to dropsy, and a marine who had been there but a very short time before he died.

1790

17 June.

Rose Hill.

A healthy place.

It is, sir, in that part of the country, and which I have endeavoured to describe in my last despatches, that I propose employing the convicts in agriculture, and in the neighbourhood of which I proposed fixing the first settlers who might be sent out.

Convicts and farming.

The impossibility of conveying stores and provisions for any distance inland will oblige me to mark out the first township near Rose Hill, where there is a considerable extent of good land. The sea-coast does not offer any situation within our reach at present which is calculated for a town whose inhabitants are to be employed in agriculture.

Parramatta.

As I thought the first settlers sent out might require more encouragement than those who might come out hereafter, I proposed in my last despatches giving them a certain number of convicts for two years, and supporting them during that time at the expense of the Crown. The number intended to receive that indulgence may be limited to the first fifteen; but I think, sir, much will depend on ensuring the success of the first settlers sent out, and who I presume will be good farmers. The assistance proposed for them will certainly put them at their ease, if they are industrious men, and would not, I apprehend, be any great loss to the Crown.

Convict labour for settlers.

In order to know in what time a man might be able to cultivate a sufficient quantity of ground to support himself, I last November ordered a hut to be built in a good situation, an acre of ground to be cleared, and once turned up it was put into the possession of a very industrious convict, who was told if he behaved well he should have thirty acres.* This man had said the time for which he had been sentenced was expired, and wished to settle. He has been industrious, has received some little assistance from time to time, and now tells me that if one acre more is cleared for him he shall be able to support himself after next

Agricultural experiments.

* James Ruse, the first settler. He received a grant of thirty acres of land at Parramatta, March 30, 1791; grant issued, 22nd February, 1792.

1790

17 June.

An industrious settler.

January, which I much doubt, but think he will do tolerably well after he has been supported for eighteen months. Others may prove more intelligent, though they cannot well be more industrious.

I mention the particulars respecting this man that some judgment may be formed of what an individual will be able to do if no assistance is given him more than the year's provisions.

Instructions awaited.

I am desirous of securing the success of the first settlers, but shall attend to the instructions I have received until I am honored with an answer to my last despatches; and, as I have before observed, if settlers coming out bring people with them, and provisions to support those they bring, the assistance they will want may be given at a very small expence on the part of the Crown.

Hawkesbury settlement deferred.

The river Hawkesbury will, I make no doubt, offer some desirable situations, and the great advantages of a navigable river are obvious; but before a settlement can be made there proper people to conduct it must be found, and we must be better acquainted with the country. Settlers may be sent there hereafter, but then we must have small craft to keep up communication.

The Lady Juliana sent to Norfolk Island.

The Lady Juliana being the only vessel in this country, I am obliged to send her to Norfolk Island, with a part of the provisions we have received: and had not that ship been chartered for China, I should have sent the Sirius's officers and men to England in her, but which I do not, as the master of her says that it would be attended with a loss of more than six thousand pounds to the owners, and consequently might occasion an expence to Government which would exceed what attends their remaining a few months longer in this country, and I am not willing to break through the charter, as other ships are coming out. As the Lady Juliana must go to Norfolk Island with provisions, and one of the superintendants professes himself to understand the cultivation and dressing of the flax-plant, I shall send thither most of the women brought out in that ship. When the ships arrive with the male convicts an equal number shall be sent, and the number of convicts on that island shall be increased in future as directed.

Flax-dressing.

But in addition to the officers I shall be able to send, I presume two or three magistrates will be necessary; if settlers come out for that island, perhaps some amongst them may be found to answer the purpose.

The Norfolk Island command.

As the number of convicts sent to Norfolk Island will require an officer of some experience, you will, sir, please to determine how far the second person in this colony may be the most eligible. I found it necessary to send the Lieutenant-Governor to replace Mr. King, but if the Lieutenant-Governor commands the corps coming

out some difficulties will occur in sending him there, as only one company can be sent to the island, and the head-quarters of the corps should be with the commandant. I have, &c.,
A. PHILLIP.

1790
17 June.

UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS TO MAJOR GROSE.

Sir, W.O., 19th June, 1790. 19 June.

I have the honor in the absence of the S. at War to acq't. you that an order is sent to the comdg. officer of the troops at Portsmouth for disembarking a detachment equal to two comps. of the corps under your command to assist in the duties at Portsmouth until the arrival of the 29th Regt., when it is intended that the detachmt. of your corps shall re-embark. Shore duty.

You will endeavour as far as may be practicable to send such men on shore as can best be depended upon. I have, &c.,

M. LEWIS.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 20th June, 1790. 20 June.

I am honored with your letter, dated the 24th of August, 1789, respecting the provisions, stores, and clothing sent out in the Guardian and Lady Juliana. The utmost attention shall be paid to the instructions contained in that letter for appropriating those articles to the purposes for which they are intended by the Government, and the Commissary shall be directed to make the necessary returns of their expenditure, to which, as I have done hitherto, I shall pay a particular attention. The strictest economy has ever been used, and every exertion has been made, on my part to put the colony in the situation recommended, of the necessity of which I am fully persuaded. Will follow instructions. Economy.

How far the colony may be in such a situation as to be able to support the convicts after we have received those supplies which are intended to be sent out by the ships which are shortly to be expected, with very little further aid from Great Britain, some judgment may be formed from my despatches sent home by Lieutenant King, and from my letter of the 17th instant sent by this conveyance. I shall, sir, give you every information in my power as to the present state of the colony, and what I conceive may be expected; but I must beg leave to observe that this colony, from the day of our landing to the present hour, has laboured under every possible disadvantage, and many obstacles have been met with which could not have been guarded against, as they never could have been expected, and from the nature of which it may rather be a matter of surprise that a regular settlement exists than that it is not in a more flourishing state. Support of convicts. Disadvantages and obstacles.

Of the superintendants sent out in the Guardian for the purpose of instructing the convicts in agriculture five only are

1790

20 June.

Two
gardeners
missing.

arrived in the *Lady Juliana*; and of the five superintendants who have arrived one only is a farmer, two say they were used to the farming business when seventeen and nineteen years of age, but they cannot, from the knowledge they then obtained, be able to instruct the convicts or direct a farm; and we are in great want of a good master carpenter, brick and tile maker. The two gardeners are said to be lost, having left the ship in a small boat after that unfortunate accident which deprived the colony of those supplies which had been so liberally provided by Government.

The settle-
ment thrown
back.

The *Guardian*, but for the accident, would have arrived before I was under the necessity of sending the *Sirius*, with part of the detachment and a number of convicts, to Norfolk Island, where that ship was lost, and would have prevented the settlement from being thrown so far back that twelve months will not put it in the state it would have been at this time if that ship had arrived in February, early in which month it may reasonably be supposed we should have seen her, which was also prior to the time in which we were obliged to kill the greatest part of the live stock, and when, from the smallness of the ration to which the settlement was reduced, the labour of the convicts became what was little better than a cessation from all labour.

Artificers
detained at
the Cape.

The artificers which were sent out in the *Guardian* have been detained at the Cape of Good Hope; and from what the officers on board the *Lady Juliana* says it is probable they will be returned to England. The great want of those people to carry on the necessary buildings will appear from the few artificers now in the settlement, and which are specified in the margin.* Carpenters are most wanted; of the six we have only three merit the name of carpenters. In our present state but little preparation can be made for the accommodation of a thousand convicts which are to follow the *Guardian*. A roof for a store-house, which has been framed several months, still remains on the ground, for it has not been possible to get the walls up; but the provisions sent out in the *Lady Juliana* and the seventy-five casks of flour put on board of that ship at the Cape from the *Guardian*, having enabled me to order the ration issued since the loss of the *Sirius* to be increased to four pounds of flour, two pounds of pork, and two pounds of rice for each person for seven days, a little more work will now be done.

Great want
of
carpenters.Increase of
ration.Skilled
superin-
tendents
necessary.

You will, sir, excuse this detail, by which the necessity of sending out some good artificers will be seen; and should it be judged necessary to send out any more superintendants of convicts, I beg leave to observe that little advantage will arise from them if they are not masters in the business in which the con-

* Belonging to the detachment—1 carpenter, 1 smith. Belonging to the *Sirius*—2 carpenters, 1 smith. Convicts—6 carpenters, 4 smiths, 2 bricklayers, 1 stonemason, 4 men who work with the carpenters, brought up as seamen and servants.

victs they superintend are employed, for I have experienced in myself to how little advantage much time and pains may be wasted in attending to men who are employed as brickmakers, smiths, carpenters, or sawyers when the person attending on those people is not himself master of the business. But, sir, in looking forward, I have the honor to assure you that, as far as my judgment admits, every exertion shall be made to fulfill the intentions of Government, by enabling the colony to support itself; it has ever been the great object I wished to attain.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

MAJOR GROSE TO UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS.

Sir,

Portsmouth, June the 21st, 1790.

June.

I have the honour to inform you that in compliance with your order the detachment of the New South Wales Corps has this day disembarked.*

I have, &c.,

FRAN'S GROSE.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE.

Sir,

Sydney, New South Wales, 25 June, 1790.

25 June.

I have acknowledged the receipt of your letter dated the 24th of August, 1789, and have the honour to assure you that a proper attention shall be paid to the observations contained therein.

The general invoice of what was sent by the Guardian and Lady Juliana I have received, but, unfortunately, only the Lady Juliana has reached this settlement.

I have, sir, observed in a former letter that five of the superintendants have arrived; one is a good farmer, a second says that he understands the cultivating and dressing of flax; as such, he will be a valuable man, and I send him to Norfolk Island; the others will undoubtedly be useful, but you will, sir, excuse me if I repeat what I have mentioned in my letter of the 17th instant — that it is professional men who are wanted as superintendants; we are much distressed for a good master carpenter, a sawyer, and a brick and tile maker, in whom some little confidence could be placed; for this settlement, except for a few weeks only, has never had such a person between the convicts employed in those branches and the Governor. This circumstance is mentioned to point out the great necessity of such people. Carpenters, sawyers, and bricklayers are likewise very much wanted. I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

The Surprise, Neptune, and Scarborough, transports, are arrived since writing the above, with about six hundred casks of beef and pork, which were sent round from the Guardian, and nineteen convicts, who had been sent out in that ship.

1790

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO LIEUTENANT BIGH.

5 July.

Sir,

5th July, 1790.

Having communicated to my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'y your letter of yesterday's date, informing them that as Capt. Macbride has resumed the command of the Cumberland, you had returned to Gosport, where you wait their Lordships' further orders, I am commanded to acquaint you that their Lordships have no immediate command for you.

I am, &c.,

P.S.

No com-
mand for
Bigh.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

10 July.

Sir,

Sydney, New South Wales, 10 July, 1790.

Convicts'
sentences.

I have in my former letters requested the necessary information respecting the time for which the convicts sent out by the first ships were sentenced, and the intentions of Government respecting those convicts who, when that time is expired, may refuse to become settlers, and demand liberty to return to Europe. We have now near thirty under the circumstances, and their numbers will increase, as well as their discontents.*

Able-bodied
men
welcome.

Ships stopping at this port, on their way to China, will always be ready to receive a certain number of healthy, able-bodied men, and those are the men we shall be the most desirous of retaining. You will, sir, be so good as to give me the necessary information on this head, if you have not already done it by the Gorgon. The indentures and assignments received from the Surprise, Neptune, and Scarborough are very clear as to the term for which the convicts sent out in those ships have been sentenced, but no account has been sent out by the Lady Juliana for the women who embarked in that ship; however, the women will give us no trouble on that head.

The women.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE.

13 July.

Sir,

Sydney, New South Wales, July 13th, 1790.

The Second
Fleet.

The Lady Juliana arrived the 3rd of June, as mentioned in a former letter; and the Justinian, Surprise, Scarborough, and Neptune came in the 20th, 26th, and 28th. The enclosed return will show the state of the convicts landed from those ships, and the numbers that died on the passage. I will not, sir, dwell on the scene of misery which the hospitals and sick-tents exhibited when those people were landed, but it would be a want of duty not to say that it was occasioned by the contractors having crowded too many on board those ships, and from their being too much confined during the passage. The convicts having the liberty of the deck depended on the agent and on the masters of the ships; the agent died on the passage, and the

A scene of
misery.

Overcrowd-
ing.

masters say it was granted so far as was consistent with their own safety, and that many of the convicts were sick when sent from the hulks. 1790 15 June.

I believe, sir, while the masters of the transports think their own safety depends on admitting few convicts on deck at a time, and most of them with irons on, which prevent any kind of exercise, numbers must always perish on so long a voyage, and many of those now received are in such a situation from old complaints, and so emaciated from what they have suffered on the voyage, that they never will be capable of any labour. Want of air and exercise.

As I had no vessel to carry provisions to Norfolk Island, the Lady Juliana was cleared, and carpenters sent to refit her for that purpose, but finding that the necessary repairs rendered it uncertain in what time that ship could be got ready, I have discharged her from Government employ; and the Justinian and Surprize will be sent on that service; after landing the necessary stores and provisions, they will proceed to China according to their contract with the East India Company. I shall send some female convicts by these ships, and when the relief is sent to the island a proportion of male convicts shall accompany them. Vessels for Norfolk Island.

The preparations directed to be made in the letter marked No. 6* for one thousand more convicts shall be attended to, but the building of stores and barracks will find full employment for the few artificers in this settlement for some months; and the number of sick will employ all our carpenters for some time in procuring them shelter. 1,000 more convicts coming.

By the surgeon's returns of this day there are 488 under medical treatment; when the ships arrived we had not fifty people sick in the colony. 488 sick.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

RETURN RELATING TO THE SECOND FLEET.

An account of the number of male and female convicts embarked on board the following ships for New South Wales:—

Ship.	Males.	Females.
Neptune	424	78
Died on their passage	147	11
Surprize	256	...
Died	36	...
Scarborough	259	...
Died	73	...
Embarked	1,017	89
Died before leaving England	11	...
Sailed	1,006	89

* Dated 20th June, 1789. Ante, p. 252.

1790 Number returned from the ships previous to their leaving
13 July. England :—

Neptune	...	...	...	...	3
Surprise	...	...	...	...	2
Scarboro'	...	...	...	...	6

Convicts received from the Guardian on board the different ships at the Cape :—

Neptune	...	...	...	...	12
Scarboro'	...	...	...	...	8

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, July 14th, 1790.

The undermentioned persons* are those who have been represented in my former letters as being employed in the public service, and who you are pleased to say shall be recommended for a suitable compensation, if brought forward in my contingent account.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE.

14 July. Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, July 14th, 1790.

I am honoured with yours by the Scarborough, dated the 24th of December, 1789, and marked No. 6, inclosing a duplicate of the letter relating to the Spanish frigates (the original of which was received by the Neptune) and the establishment of the Corps raised for the service of this country.†

New South
Wales
Corps.

I shall, sir, by the next conveyance inform you of the steps which shall have been taken in consequence of his Majesty's having been pleased to permit me to recommend three officers of the marine detachment, holding the rank of captain, first lieutenant, and second lieutenant, whom I may judge most deserving of his Majesty's favour, to be appointed to a company to be raised here from amongst the marines, and to be incorporated in the new corps with the rank of captain, lieutenant, and ensign.

The marines
and the new
corps.

Major
Grose.

The arrival of Major Grose‡ will enable me to answer the question put by those who are inclined to enlist, whether that allowance of spirits which has been issued to the marines is to be continued to the new corps, and whether they likewise are to have their rations gratis.

Marines
to be
relieved.

No time shall be lost after Major Grose arrives in sending home the detachment intended to be relieved, and I presume that the

* The names are not recorded. † The New South Wales Corps.

‡ This officer raised in England a special force, to which the name of the New South Wales Corps was given. He arrived at Sydney in February, 1792, in command of a detachment of the corps, with a commission appointing him Lieutenant-Governor of the colony. Administered the government from 11 December, 1792, to 12 December, 1794. The New South Wales Corps served in the colony until December, 1809, when it was replaced by the 73rd Regiment. The corps left Sydney for England, 10th April, 1810.

corps now raised for the service of this country will be very competent for every service for which they may be wanted.

1790

14 July.

Returns* are inclosed of those officers and privates who have arrived in the *Surprise*, *Scarborough*, and *Neptune*, as likewise of the marines in this settlement.

The directions relative to the ships chartered by the East India Company should have been complied with, and those ships discharged from Government employ immediately after the convicts, stores, and provisions had been landed, but for the reasons pointed out in a former letter. The not having any vessel to carry provisions to Norfolk Island, in consequence of the loss of his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, and the *Supply*, tender, having been sent to Batavia, obliges me to send the *Justinian* and *Surprise* on that service, but which will not be attended with the loss of much time, as after landing the stores and provisions they will immediately proceed on their voyage for China.

The East
India
Company.*Justinian*
and
Surprise.

You will, sir, please to take into consideration the state of Norfolk Island, where the number of convicts will increase, and where at present no punishment can be inflicted beyond what a Justice of the Peace is authorized to direct.

Norfolk
Island.

The Lieutenant-Governor, on the loss of the *Sirius*, put the island under martial law, but against the continuing of which there will be, I presume, a strong objection, as the small military force to be employed there may throw the administration of justice into the hands of a few very young men. When Major Grose arrives one company will be sent to relieve the detachment now on duty there. The captain of the company will relieve Major Ross until Mr. King returns, or until I receive further directions; and I should hope that the power of the civil magistrate will be found quite sufficient to keep good order amongst the convicts until I receive the necessary instructions on that head. I should gladly increase the civil power if I had the means, but which this colony does not afford me.

Fresh
arrange-
ments.

The knowledge I have of Lieutenant King, whom his Majesty has been pleased to appoint Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Island, leaves me no room to doubt but that he will endeavour to render himself worthy of that mark of his Majesty's bounty; and I hope his return to this country will not be prevented by the fear of losing an opportunity of attaining rank in the Navy.

Lieutenant
King.

I have, sir, in a former letter observed that Norfolk Island cannot well be made the seat of Government, not having a good harbour or roadstead, without which ships cannot deliver all their cargoes, having no place in which they can be secure while they take on board a necessary quantity of ballast.

Norfolk
Island has
no harbour.

I presume the Admiralty will replace the *Sirius*, and one or two small vessels are much wanted; they will be useful on many occasions, and give me a necessary knowledge of the coast between

Replace-
ment of the
Sirius.

1790

14 July.

Small
vessels.

this harbour and the South Cape. From what I saw when I came on the coast in the Supply, I make no doubt but that several good harbours will be found, and it would, sir, be a very unpleasant circumstance, after being settled on the coast for such a length of time, to have those harbours first made known by ships of a foreign nation. The circumstances which prevented the Sirius or Supply from having been employed on this service have been pointed out in my former letters. If the small vessels are sent out in frame, shipwrights must be sent out in them; and I see no reason why they may not [make] the voyage; they should be coppered, and I have written to the Admiralty for that purpose.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

NEW SOUTH WALES CORPS, 24 JULY, 1790.*

Captains:—Nicholas Nepean, William Hill.*Lieutenants*:—Sydney, John McArthur, Edward Abbott; Rose Hill, John Townson.*Ensign*:—John Thomas Prentice.*Surgeon's Mate*:—John Harris.*Serjeants*:—Four.*Corporals*:—Four.*Drummers*:—Four.*Privates*:—Ninety-three.

Three privates had died since October 22nd, 1789.

One drummer and six privates had deserted.

MARINES, 24 JULY, 1790.

Captains:—James Campbell and James Meredith.*Captain-Lieutenant*:—Watkin Tench.*First Lieutenants*:—John Poulden, James Maitland Shairp, Thomas Davey, Thomas Timins.*Second Lieutenant*:—William Dawes.*Adjutant Second Lieutenant*:—John Long.*Quarter-master Lieutenant*:—James Furzer.*Judge-Advocate*:—David Collins.

Also 8 serjeants, 8 corporals, 5 drummers, 96 privates.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE.

17 July.

Sir,

Sydney, July 17th, 1790.

State of the
settlement.

Having answered all the letters with which you have honored me, I shall once more advert to the state of this settlement, in order to give, as fully as is in my power, the information required as to the time in which I suppose the colony may be able to support itself without any further supplies from Great Britain.

* The covering despatch, dated the 14th July, was not sent until the 25th.

My letters will, sir, inform you of the stores and provisions we have received by the different ships and of the miserable state in which the convicts were landed. To mark the time it may be supposed the colony will be able to support itself it will be necessary to point out those circumstances which may advance or retard that period. It will depend on the numbers employed in agriculture, who by this labour are to provide for those who make no provision for themselves; those are the civil and military, those who are employed in buildings and other necessary works, the aged, and others who have been sent out incapable of providing for themselves, and the women and children. These people form . . . of the whole number in the settlement, and are the many who are to be provided for by the few. I do not reckon on the little labour which may be got from the women, tho' some are employed in the fields, and their numbers will be increased, as the greatest part will always find employment in making their own and the men's cloathing, and in the necessary attention to their children. The ground which the military may cultivate will be for their own convenience, and nothing from that quarter or from the officers in the civil department can be expected to be brought into the publick account. The providing houses and barracks for the additional number of officers and soldiers, rebuilding those temporary ones which were erected on our first arrival, and which must be done in the course of another year, as well as building more stone houses and huts for the convicts as they arrive, will employ a considerable number of people; and works of this kind will always be carrying on. Temporary buildings, when we first landed, were absolutely necessary; but they should be avoided in future, as after three or four years the whole work is to be begun again; and the want of lime greatly increases the labour in building with bricks, as we are obliged to increase the thickness of the walls, and cannot carry them to any height; at the same time if any heavy rains fall before they are covered in they are considerably damaged.

The inclosed return* will show in what manner the convicts are employed at present, and I have increased the number of those employed in clearing the land for cultivation, as far as it will be possible to do it before next January, except by convalescents, from whom little labour can be expected.

Experience, sir, has taught me how difficult it is to make men industrious who have passed their lives in habits of vice and indolence. In some cases it has been found impossible; neither kindness nor severity have had any effect; and tho' I can say that the convicts in general behave well, there are many who dread punishment less than they fear labour; and those who have not been brought up to hard work, which are by far the greatest part, bear it badly. They shrink from it the moment the eye of the overseer is turned from them.

1790

17 July.

When will the colony be self-supporting?

The women and children.

Nothing expected from officers.

Temporary buildings should be avoided.

Convict employment.

Unpromising material.

* Post, p. 363.

1790

17 July.

Rose Hill
farm.Only one
superinten-
dent a
farmer.

The public farm at Rose Hill goes on well, but the loss of the Guardian, which obliged me to send many of the best men to Norfolk Island, and the little labour which could be drawn from those who remained, when on so reduced a ration, has prevented more than* acres of wheat, and* acres of barley being sowed this year. About* bushels of wheat and barley remain from our last year's crop, and I hope that next year a very considerable quantity of ground will be sown; but, sir, this settlement has never had more than one person to superintend the clearing and cultivating ground for the public benefit, or who has ever been the means of bringing a single bushel of grain into the public granary. One or two others have been so employed for a short time, but removed as wanting either industry or probity; and should the person who has at present the entire management of all the convicts employed in clearing and cultivating the land be lost, there is not anyone in the settlement to replace him. Of the five superintendants sent out one only is a farmer. When he gets his health he will make a very useful man.

Two good
husband-
men
wanted

I do not [wish] for many farmers to be sent out as superintendants, for few farmers will be found equal to the charge of a considerable number of convicts; but if two good men could be found, who, as well as being good husbandmen, had sufficient spirit to discharge the trust which must be reposed in them, they will be of great use. They will be necessary as the number of convicts increase, and the more so as the person who at present has that charge will not settle in the country. It was supposed that a sufficient number of good farmers might have been found amongst the convicts to have superintended the labours of the rest; and men have been found who answer the purpose of preventing their straggling from their work, but none of them are equal to the charge of directing the labour of a number of convicts, with whom most of them are linked by crimes they would not wish to have brought forward, and very few of the convicts have been found to be good farmers.

Inefficient
supervisorsConvicts
cannot be
distributed.

You will, sir, from what I have said, see how impossible it is for me to detach a body of convicts to any distance, as they must have a sufficient person to superintend and direct their labours, and a storekeeper to be charged with their provisions; nor do I at this moment see any necessity for it. The land at Rose Hill is very good, and in every respect well calculated for arable and pasture ground, though certainly loaded with timber, the removal of which requires great labour and time; but it is the same with the whole country as far as I have seen, particular spots excepted, and which, as they cannot at present be cultivated by us, for we cannot make detachments of convicts, I proposed giving to the first settlers who came out, as is mentioned in my

Clearing
land
arduous
work.

letter No. . . ; and if settlers should arrive before I receive any further directions on this head, and they should wish to be placed in such distant and separate farms, I presume complying with this request will not be deemed an improper deviation from my instructions.

1790

17 July.

The consequence of a failure of a crop, when we no longer depend on any supplies from Great Britain, will be obvious, and to guard against which is one reason for my being so desirous of having a few settlers, and to whom, as *the first settlers*, I think every possible encouragement should be given. In them I should have some resource : and amongst them proper people might be found to act in different capacities, at little or no expence to Government, for as the number of convicts and others increase civil magistrates, &c., will be necessary.

Encouragement to first settlers.

The fixing the first settlers in townships will, I fear, prevent that increase of live stock which would be raised in farms at a distance from a great body of people, where the stock will be less liable to suffer from the depredations which may be expected from the soldier and the convict, and against which there is no effectual security. The convicts, if they are to be employed by the settlers, or those people they may bring with them, will be more industrious, and lay under less temptation to be dishonest, if living only twenty or thirty together, and detection will be easier.

Settlers in townships.

Depredations.

I wish, sir, to point out the great difference between a settlement formed as this is and one formed by farmers and emigrants who have been used to labour, and who reap the fruits of their own industry. Amongst the latter few are idle or useless, and they feel themselves interested in their different employments. On the contrary, amongst the convicts we have few who are inclined to be industrious, or who feel themselves anyways interested in the advantages which are to accrue from their labours, and we have many who are helpless and a deadweight on the settlement. Many of those helpless wretches who were sent out in the first ships are dead, and the numbers of those who remained are now considerably increased. I will, sir, insert an extract from the surgeon's report, who I directed to examine these people.

Difference between emigrants and convicts.

Inebriations.

"After a careful examination of the convicts, I find upwards of one hundred who must ever be a burden to the settlement, not being able to do any kind of labour, from old age and chronical diseases of long standing. Amongst the females there is one who has lost the use of her limbs upwards of three years, and amongst the males two who are perfect idiots."

100 useless persons.

Such are the people sent from the different gaols and from the hulks, where it is said the healthy and the artificers are retained. The sending out the disordered and helpless clears the gaols, and may ease the parishes from which they are sent ; but, sir, it is obvious that this settlement, instead of being a colony which is

A bad practice.

1790

17 July.

The sick
list.

to support itself, will, if the practice is continued, remain for years a burthen to the mother country. The desire of giving you a full and clear information on this head has made me enter into this detail. Of the nine hundred and thirty males sent out by the last ships, two hundred and sixty-one died on board, and fifty have died since landing. The number of sick this day is four hundred and fifty; and many who are not reckoned as sick have barely strength to attend to themselves. Such is our present state; and when the last ships arrived we had not sixty people sick in the colony. But, sir, I hope the many untoward circumstances which the colony has hitherto met with are now done away; and I flatter myself that after two years from this time we shall not want any further supply of flour. At the same time, I beg to be understood that various accidents may render a supply necessary after that time. How long a regular supply of beef and pork will be necessary depends on the quantity of live stock which may be introduced into the settlement, and of its increase, of which I can form no judgment. The live stock with which we first landed was very inconsiderable, and has been accounted for in former letters. We have not at present any public stock in the settlement, what swine remained soon after we landed having been sent to Norfolk Island or distributed amongst the convicts.

The
question of
supplies.

Live stock.

Fish no
help.Township at
Rose Hill.Accommo-
dation.A street a
mile long.Convicts
and their
gardens.

Pease and such articles as formed the established ration will of course be expected by the regiment and the Civil Department; but flour, beef, and pork are the only species yet received. It was supposed some saving might have been made by the fish which would have been caught, but I have always found that the established ration was expected while the store was able to furnish it.

I am laying out a town at Rose Hill, in which the principal street will be occupied by the convicts; the huts are building at the distance of one hundred feet from each other, and each hut is to contain ten convicts; in these huts they would live more comfortable than they could possibly do if numbers were confined together in large buildings, and having good gardens which they cultivate, and frequently having it in their power to exchange vegetables for little necessities which the stores do not furnish, makes them begin to feel the benefits they may draw from their industry. The huts now building are for the convicts who came out last, and they will form a street of one mile in length and two hundred feet in breadth. Some little inconveniencies attend the convicts being so much dispersed, but the being indulged with having their own gardens is a spur to industry, which they would not have if employed in a publick garden, tho' intirely for their own benefit, as they never seemed to think it was their own; and I do not find that many of these people who have now been some months in huts, and consequently more at liberty than

they would be if numbers were confined together, have abused the confidence placed in them ; when they have, it has been only by robbing a garden. 1790
17 July.

The convicts who will occupy the huts now building will be removed in a few years to cultivate lands at a distance, and I should suppose that settlers will hereafter be glad to build on the ground, which will remain the property of the Crown, as well as all the lands to a certain distance round the settlement, and increase in its value. The future.

Now, sir, in consequence of what is said in the letter which accompanied the directions for granting lands, I shall take the liberty of offering to your consideration whether it would not be to the advantage of the Crown, and in nowise distressing to those to whom lands may be granted, if, in the room of the fine of one shilling to be paid for every fifty acres of land, a small proportion of grain was to be paid to the Crown, after the expiration of ten or fifteen years, was to be paid for every acre of grain sown. Grain as rent.

The quantity being small would not, I apprehend, be felt by the cultivator of lands not subject to any other tythe, and would hereafter furnish a very considerable quantity of grain for the service of the troops.

There may be objections to a fine of this nature which I do not see, and I only give an opinion on a matter with which I am so little acquainted, as being desired to point out any regulation which might appear to me as tending to the advantages of the colony, and which will, I presume, hereafter support its garrison.

It now only remains for me to assure you, sir, that everything which is possible shall be done to render supplies of provisions from England no longer necessary, and to make this colony answer the intentions of Government, in which I feel myself so much interested, and which has ever been the guide of my conduct, independent of every other consideration. The best will be done.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

GENERAL RETURN OF MALE CONVICTS.

Sydney, 23rd July, 1790.* 23 July.

Forty making bricks and tiles ; 50 bringing in bricks, &c., for the new store-house (N.B.—This is only a temporary employment, these men being intended for agriculture at Rose Hill in a few days) ; 19 bricklayers and labourers employed in building a store and huts at Rose Hill ; 8 carpenters employed at the new store, and in building huts at Rose Hill ; 9 men who can work with the axe, and who assist the carpenters ; 2 sawyers ; 9 smiths ; 10 watch-

* This return, it will be observed, is of later date than the despatch with which it was sent. The discrepancy is explained by the fact that the despatch, though written on the 17th July, was not forwarded until the 25th, when the Lady Juliana sailed. The fact that the Commissary's return (p. 365) is of later date than Phillip's letter to Nepean is accounted for in the same way.

1790 men ; 40 receiving provisions and stores from the ships ; 12
 23 July. employed on the roads—mostly convalescents ; 18 bringing in
 timber ; 4 stonemasons ; 10 employed in the boats ; 3 wheel-
 wrights ; 6 employed in the stores ; 38 employed by the officers,
 Civil and Military Departments, at their farms (these men will
 be employed for the public when the relief takes place) ; 2
 assistants to the provost-martial ; 3 gardeners and labourers em-
 ployed by the Governor ; 3 coopers ; 6 shoemakers ; 4 taylor ;
 5 bakers ; 6 attending the sick at the hospital ; 3 barbers ; 3
 gardeners and others employed at the hospital ; 3 employed by the
 Governor bringing in of wood—316 at work ; 413 sick. Total, 729.

At Rose Hill.

Two employed at the store ; 3 servants to the three superinten-
 dants ; 1 employed in taking care of the stock ; 2 employed at
 the hospital ; 5 men who work with the axe, building huts ; 1
 baker ; 1 cook ; 4 boys variously employed ; 1 assistant to the
 provost-martial ; 3 thatchers ; 1 servant to the storekeeper ; 1
 servant to the assistant surgeon ; 4 overseers ; 25 sick ; 113
 clearing and cultivating the ground ; 12 sawyers. Total, 176.

19 July.

NORFOLK ISLAND—PROCLAMATION.

By his Honour the Lieut.-Governor and Council.

Issue of beef
 and pork
 suspended.

THE Lieut.-Governor and Council having judged it absolutely
 necessary that as long as the birds at Mount Pitt are to be had
 in such abundance, and as the season of the year is approaching
 for the boats to be employed in fishing, that there should not be
 any more salt beef or pork issued from the store until those most
 valuable resources should fail us ; and as it is very possible that
 for some months longer we may find ourselves disappointed of the
 supplies we have so long expected from Europe, and to prolong
 as much as possible some small proportion of animal food to every
 body before it is entirely exhausted, we have therefore ordered
 that the ration of beef and pork should not be issued until further
 orders.

Done at Head-quarters, this 19th July, 1790.

ROBT. ROSS.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

24 July.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, July 24th, 1790.

Wind-mills
 wanted.

As the iron mills sent out for the purpose of grinding
 wheat are easily rendered useless, and destroyed, and will require
 great labor to grind corn for a considerable number of people
 wind-mills will be wanted, and for the sending out of which I am to
 request that you, sir, will take the necessary steps, if it is approved
 of by Mr. Secretary Grenville, to whom I have written on the
 subject.

As we have not any good millwright in the colony, I presume some convicts who have been brought up in that branch might be procured. A miller will be necessary, and as he will have a trust reposed in him he should not be a convict.

1790

24 July.

A miller
necessary.

No butter, oil, or pease have been received for the use of the colony. At present there are not any spirits in the settlement, to continue which for three years a promise was made to the marines when they were embarked; nor will there be any for the officers of the Civil Department until sent out, if intended to be continued.

Deficient
supplies.

I am this moment informed of the following accident: a boat which had been down the harbour fishing, was, on its return, pursued by a whale, who overset the boat, by which accident a midshipman, Mr. John Ferguson, and two marines were drowned.

Boat
accident.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

A return of the number of people in the colony is enclosed.

[Enclosure.]

TOTAL number of people victualled in New South Wales and its Dependencies, the 25th of July, 1790.

25 July.

	No. victuall'd at Sydney.	No. vic- tuall'd at Rose Hill.	Total No. victuall'd.	
Governor	1	1	New South Wales.
Marine Detachment	116	9	125	
Do Wives	26	1	27	
Do Children	40	3	43	
New South Wales Corps	87	16	103	
Women of do	11	....	11
Children of do	12	....	12
Civil	9	2	11	
Women	2	....	2
Superintendants	3	2	5	
Children of do	1	....	1
Lt. Maxwell, invalided from his Majesty's ship Sirius	2	....	2
Lt. Edgar, superintendant, from the Lady Juliana transport				
Surgeon Mr. Alley, from do	1	....	1
Wives of convicts	6	....	6
Children of do	5	....	5
Convicts, Male	729	179	908	
Do Female	316	42	358	
Do Children	41	6	47	
Belonging to the Sirius	44	....	44
Do Supply	1	....	1
Natives	2	....	2
AT NORFOLK ISLAND.			1,715	
Lieut. Governor	1	Norfolk Island.
Marine Detachment .. .. .	....	....	93
Do Wives .. .. .	....	....	4
Do Children .. .. .	....	....	1
Civil .. .. .	....	....	1
Convicts, Male .. .. .	....	....	191
Do Female .. .. .	....	....	100
Do Children .. .. .	....	....	36
Belonging to the Sirius .. .. .	....	....	94
Free Men .. .. .	....	....	3
			524	
			1,715	
Total No. victuall'd			2,239	

JNO. PALMER, Commissary.

1790

CAPTAIN HILL* TO — WATHEN.

Dear Sir, Sydney Cove, Port Jackson, July 26th, 1790.

26 July.

Wathen's
kindness.

Fain would I give you my warmest thanks, and tell you of the great affection I bear you for those genuine, disinterested, and animated exertions of kindness you poured upon me when I wanted your assistance ; but my pen is even incompetent to give you a faint idea how high the pulse of gratitude beats within me. My heart, I hope, is too honest not to look on flatterers in a very despicable point of view, tho' it cannot but approve of eulogy, which is no other than paying a just tribute of praise, and my mind would feel an insupportable burthen were I not permitted to evince to you its sense of love and duty of so worthy a benefactor. I thought it my duty to write to Mr. Wilberforce, giving him the underneath account of our voyage, and the situation of this colony. I meant not to intrude, and hope I have not done wrong ; if I have, I can only lament it, and plead in excuse that I had not you to consult.

Wilberforce.

Voyage to
the Cape.Violent
storm.Dutch
avarice.The
Guardian.

Copy of the narrative part :—" It would be tedious to enumerate thevariableness of the winds and trifling occurrences that happened in our route to the Cape ; I will, therefore, only remark that we sailed from Cowes Harbour the 17th January, and arrived in False Bay, Cape of Good Hope, the 13th April ; that our voyage might be deemed a very prosperous one so far, as we passed the Line with few calms, and those of short duration, nor had we any bad weather till we were in sight of that tremendous promontory. Well might its discoverer, Bartholomew Dioz, name it Cabo de Tormentoso, or Stormy, we met so violent a tempest, which continued for six and thirty hours, that left us no room even to hope an escape from a watery grave. It being the winter season at our arrival was the reason of our anchoring in False Bay as the safest harbour, otherwise Table Bay, in fine weather or in the summer season, is much to be preferred, being contiguous to the Cape Town. We found the Dutch answer minutely the character given of them by travellers ; a change of clime, which is generally believed to produce a change of constitution and disposition, has not abated one tittle of their propensity to avarice. Their governors are merchants, and monopolise the whole stock of the adjacent country, and will not supply the shipping but at an advance of five or six hundred per cent. Here I had some conversation with the unfortunate Mr. Riou, of the Guardian ; the loss of his ship will be severely felt by this colony, and I much fear the Dutch are taking every advantage of his situation, charging enormous sums for warehouse room

* Second Captain in the New South Wales Corps. He went to Port Jackson on board the transport *Surprise*, in charge of a detachment. The gentleman to whom he writes was a friend of Mr. Wilberforce, the philanthropist, to whom the narrative was first sent. In the MS. the name is given as "Wathen" simply. Captain Hill's benefactor was probably Samuel Wathen, of Woodstock, Gloucester, sheriff of the county. He was knighted 16th March, 1803. Vide "Annual Register," vol. xlv, pp. 482, 531. A copy of Captain Hill's letter appears to have been forwarded to the Admiralty.

and fresh provisions for the men, so that the cargo must, ere now, be insufficient to defray the cost. We left the Cape the 29th of April, and anchored in this beautiful harbour the 26th of June. Would I could draw an eternal shade over the remembrance of this miserable part of our voyage—miserable, not so much in itself, as rendered so by the villany, oppression, and shameful speculation of the masters of two of the transports. The bark I was on board of was, indeed, unfit, from her make and size, to be sent so great a distance; if it blew but the most trifling gale she was lost in the waters, of which she shipped so much; that, from the Cape, the unhappy wretches, the convicts, were considerably above their waists in water, and the men of my company, whose berths were not so far forward, were nearly up to the middles. In this situation they were obliged, for the safety of the ship, to be pen'd down; but when the gales abated no means were used to purify the air by fumigations, no vinegar was applied to rectify the nauseous steams issuing from their miserable dungeon. Humanity shudders to think that of nine hundred male convicts embarked in this fleet, three hundred and seventy are already dead, and four hundred and fifty are landed sick and so emaciated and helpless that very few, if any of them, can be saved by care or medicine, so that the sooner it pleases God to remove them the better it will be for this colony, which is not in a situation to bear any burthen, as I imagine the medicine-chest to be nearly exhausted, and provisions are a scarce article. The irons used upon these unhappy wretches were barbarous. The contractors had been in the Guinea trade, and had put on board the same shackles used by them in that trade, which are made with a short bolt, instead of chains that drop between the legs and fasten with a bandage about the waist, like those at the different gaols; these bolts were not more than three-quarters of a foot in length, so that they could not extend either leg from the other more than an inch or two at most; thus fettered, it was impossible for them to move but at the risk of both their legs being broken. Inactivity at sea is a sure bane, as it invites the scurvy equal to, if not more than, salt provisions; to this they were consigned, as well as a miserable pittance of provisions, altho' the allowance by Government is ample; even when attacked by disease their situations were not altered, neither had they any comforts administered. The slave trade is merciful compared with what I have seen in this fleet; in that it is the interests of the masters to preserve the healths and lives of their captives, they having a joint benefit with the owners; in this, the more they can withhold from the unhappy wretches the more provisions they have to dispose of at a foreign market, and the earlier in the voyage they die the longer they can draw the deceased's allowance to themselves; for I fear few of them are honest enough to make a just return of the

1790

26 July.

Port
Jackson.Ship unsea-
worthy.Sufferings
on boardGreat
mortality.Ill-treat-
ment of
convicts.Cruel
fettters.Insufficient
food.Worse than
the slave
trade.Profit out of
the dead.

1790

26 July.

Want of
control.Horrors of
the voyage.A beautiful
climate.Everything
else un-
promising.Narrow
government.Exploration
unsucces-
ful.

The reason.

Depôts
necessary.

dates of their deaths to their employers. It, therefore, highly concerns Government to lodge, in future, a controlling power in each ship over these low-lived, barbarous masters, to keep them honest, instead of giving it to one man (an agent) who can only see what is going forward in his ship. As there will be, generally, officers of the Navy coming out, men disinterested and, it is to be hoped, possessing humanity, and that point of honour which is expected from the profession, that power can nowhere be better lodged than in them. My feelings never have been so wounded as in this voyage, so much so, that I never shall recover my accustomed vivacity and spirits; and had I been empowered, it would have been the most grateful task of my life to have prevented so many of my fellow-creatures so much misery and death.

It is now our winter season, and had I superior abilities to any man that ever wrote it would be impossible for me to convey to your mind a just idea of this beautiful heavenly clime. Suffer your imagination to enter the regions of fiction, and let fancy in her liveliest moment paint an elysium, it will fall far short of this delightful weather. It is well we have something to keep up our spirits, everything else but climate is unpromising, and did the gloomy months prevail here as in England, it is more than probable that the next reinforcement, on arrival, would find a desolated colony. At this moment I am at a loss how to guide my pen; were it honourable, I surely would put the present state of this colony in more than a favourable point of view, because a true and just narration may shew an inefficacy in the government of this isle, may evince that the measures pursued here are on too contracted a principle, and will never answer to the means and intentions of the British Government; and as I am well persuaded, nothing draws on persecution by those in power sooner than the speaking of disagreeable truths, 'tis therefore I would not be particular in stating facts had you not a claim on me for truth. I look upon it as unpardonable, not having a greater knowledge of the country, the same pains that have been taken to explore would, if rightly planned, have been successful. A party is sent out with a few days' provisions on their backs, perhaps as much as they can well carry; this, with other impediments, prevents them from getting over much ground, and they consequently are obliged to return with the knowledge only of a few miles of country; yet there are two or three colts and their dams in the colony that would be the better for gentle work, and to burthen them but slightly with provisions would be a means of penetrating twenty times as far as we already have; but effectually to do so, depôts should have been formed soon after Governor Phillip's arrival, which, had he placed progressively as he advanced on discovery, he might by this period have transmitted to England an ample knowledge of a great part of this territory.

I have been once kangaroo-shooting, and lay in the woods for that purpose: the ground they generally feed on is, apparently, very fine, and not quite so woody, and much to be preferred to that which surrounds our settlement, which is little better than a sandy desert. There can be no doubt that some of this immense tract be free from wood, and has a diversity of soil and country equal to any: yet what we have already seen, even the best, such as the settlement at Rose Hill, that maiden land, will not produce the quantity that is sown after the first year without great quantities of manure, of which all the stock that is in the colony would not make so much as is covenanted to be put on an estate in England of thirty pounds annual value. I have heard (and I beg to remark it only as hearsay, being no politician) that above half a million has been expended already in planting and supporting this colony, and must lament that there are no means used, or even thought of, to remove the burthen from my native country. Had half that sum been laid out in the purchase of cattle this place had now been tenable, and we should have wanted very little, if any, assistance from the British Government: we might by this time have established a market, and improved the lands unincumbered with timber, by manure and culture; as it is, two or three thousand souls are continued to be fed with salt rations, flour, and every other necessary provisions from England, neither can it be otherwise till other steps are taken, and even then it will require great time. That is a melancholy truth, and galls on reflection, that so many should be subsisted without making the smallest return, or even a possibility of it while the same measures are pursued by our chief. All here, the officer, soldier, sailor, and convict, have the same ration allowed by the Governor; and to enter no farther into the detail of our miserable existence, I will give you a just account how I am situated, which is preferable to many by my being second captain in the regiment, consequently entitled to a second choice of quarters. Here I am, living in a miserable thatched hut, without kitchen, without a garden, with an acrimonious blood by my having been nearly six months at sea, and tho' little better than a leper, obliged to live on a scanty pittance of salt provision, without a vegetable, except when a good-natured neighbour robs his own stomach in compassion to me; not a mouthfull of fresh meat to be obtained, and if, rarely, such a thing should present itself, not to be purchased but at an exorbitant price (eighteen pence per lb.). Fish is by no means plenty, at least, they are not caught in abundance—not enough to supply the sick; but, should one be offered for sale, 'tis by far too dear for an officer's pocket. Tho' I have been here so little time, yet, when my salt ration has been set before me unaccompanied by either vegetable, vinegar, or other thing to render it palatable or wholesome, I have felt the contention between hunger, &c., as

1790

26 July.

A sandy desert.

Poor soil.

Cost of the colony.

Cattle wanted.

Dependence upon salt provisions.

All treated alike.

Miserable quarters.

Unwholesome provisions.

Fish scarce and dear.

1790

26 July.

Unnecessary hardships.

High prices.

Living miserably.

No land for soldiers.

A mean policy.

Deceptive accounts.

Unproductive land.

The natives.

described by Sterne of the pannier'd ass. A soldier should endure all hardships chearfully when the service requires it, but when they are occasioned by ignorance, incompetency, injustice, or oppression, he has a right to complain. With a wish to preserve my health as much as possible from the inroads of scurvy, and counteract the effects of the diabolical morsel I am daily obliged to eat, I purchased some wine, being a vegetable juice, and obtained it as a favour—port wine at forty shillings the dozen, and sherry fifty. I had also the offer, a few days ago, of three small pigs, very poor, and not old enough for roasters; my mouth literally watered at the sight of them, but the price of fifteen shillings each was too great for my purse; I therefore had the resolution to withstand the powers of appetite, which were very acute. Soap is from three to four shillings the pound; bad Irish salt butter, eighteen pence; sugar, two shillings; flour, when any can be bought, a shilling; teas exorbitantly dear. So that from a principle of saving, and induced by a laudable motive (I hope), I have journeyed thus far to live miserably and yet to spend every farthing of my income, which would have supported me very comfortably, if not genteely, in England. In America the officers and settlers had grants of land in proportion to their rank; but those of the marines who are now here, and have borne every hardship, have no such thing, neither is there an intention of giving each their portion. In my humble opinion nothing can be more inpolitic. Industry is the first essential to the welfare of any kingdom, consequently all measures that are adopted to promote it are highly commendable; and I am well persuaded Britain will not thank our Governor for acting, not only on a mean, but on an unstable plan, to the great disquiet of every individual in the colony, and the certainty of bringing an endless burthen on the mother country. It rests with you, sir, to give much or little credit to the public accounts of this place: you will know that many in a public character, impulsed, perhaps, by vanity, or other hobby horsical frailties, perhaps the love of governing, have been led, first to deceive themselves, and then impose error on the world. Tho' it may appear to you I write animated, I hope you will consider I write as an honest man; he that adds ought, or diminishes ought, in narrative, can have no pretensions to the gentleman. I have been misled in the opinion of the land at Rose Hill, and here beg to rectify the mistake. It produces the first year nearly sevenfold, the second year not so much, and the third year rather better than the seed sown; afterwards, by sowing a bushell you may probably reap a quart or two. The natives continue to shun us. I have not yet seen one, except a boy and girl we have in the colony, who begin to speak our language, and have no wish to leave us. It must be admitted there are now great obstacles to our establishing an intercourse

with them ; but were we uniform in our plans, and earnest in our wishes to accomplish it, 'tis very practicable. Here is an ample field for the botanist or naturalist, the most beautiful shrubs, and the greatest variety of any in the world. The plumage of the birds is uncommonly beautiful, some of which (as I am informed) are a new species, or rather nondescripts, such as the emu, having no wings, but they run very fast. Seven officers have dined abundantly off the sidesman or sidebone of this creature, which cut up and was in appearance like a loin of veal, such is its immense size. I shall collect various seeds, birds, plumage, and other curiosities of the natives, some of which I shall have the honour of transmitting to you.

1790

26 July.

Beautiful
birds and
plants.An emu for
dinner.

"I am going, on Monday next, in company with Capt. Tench and Lieut. Dawes, of the marines, on a week's excursion, to explore westward ; it is a severe business, as we sleep in the woods without covering, and the mornings and evenings are excessive cold. They are gentlemen whose minds are highly cultivated, and of great scientific knowlege ; I therefore anticipate the mental satisfaction I must receive with them, which I am persuaded will outweigh a few corporeal hardships. If we should make any discoveries worthy of remark, I shall think it an honour being suffered to pen them to you."

An explor-
ing party.

Thus, my dear sir, have I written to your friend. I can convey to your mind no better information on this subject. I will only add that I shall not only feel it my duty, but that I possess every wish to convey the like intelligence and make the same collections for you. I will now, previous to my concluding this tiresome epistle, enquire after your health, which I do most anxiously, tho' I must acknowledge there are many of my acquaintances and friends that I should feel more sorrow at losing, but for this reason only, they are less fitted to depart. I need, therefore, only say I wish you happiness here ; your conduct will insure you it in another world. I also beg, most respectfully, to offer my kindest wishes for Mrs. Wathen's health, as well as your amiable niece's, Miss Coope's ; pray make me remembered to her, as an old Glostershire acquaintance, in the warmest manner. I take the liberty, also, to say I felt interested for the welfare of Mrs. Wathen, your niece, tho' she was the acquaintance only of a few hours ; and amidst the amiable groupe I cannot forget my friend, Mr. Phipps, whose wonderful understanding, as it expands and ripens by years, must be the admiration of the age, and whose soft and happy disposition will be his greatest ornament. I write in the fulness of my heart, and from a warmth of affection which I must ever bear you all. I pray you accept it as such, and believe me, with all possible respect and gratitude.

A duty.

I am, &c.,

W. HILL.

1790

LIEUTENANT FOWELL* TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

30 July.

Sir,

Batavia, July 30th, 1790.

Loss of the
Sirius.

Since I wrote to you last, which was from the Cape of Good Hope, we have had the misfortune to lose the Sirius. It happened at Norfolk Island on the 19th of March, where she went on the rocks in Sydney Bay, in a great surf, and was an entire wreck in less than ten minutes; happily all the people got safely on shore. Captain Hunter, with the greatest part of the ship's company, are still at Norfolk. He sent me with the remainder part of the people in the Supply to Port Jackson with the sad news.

The Supply
sent to
Batavia.

As there was not any relief arrived the Governor dispatched the Supply to Batavia, there to take up a vessel and load her with provisions, and it being thought necessary an officer ought to be put on board her. The Governor sent me in the Supply for that purpose. On the passage to this place we discovered a large track of land extending from $10^{\circ} 50'$ s'h latitude to about $7^{\circ} 30'$, and from $162^{\circ} 30'$ east longitude to about 161° , and two islands, the smallest of which is named Tench's Island; it lays in latitude $1^{\circ} 39'$ s., and in $150^{\circ} 30'$ east longitude: the other is called Prince William Henry Island; it lays in latitude $1^{\circ} 15'$ s. longitude $149^{\circ} 50'$ east.

Islands
discovered.Crossing the
Equator.

We then stood for the equinoctial line, which we crossed in longitude $146^{\circ} 30'$ east. It was intended to have gone through the straits of Macassar, but as we drew near it we found that the westerly monsoon had set in, which rendered that passage impracticable, and obliged us to go to the eastward of Celebes and through the Spice Islands. Nothing particular happened till the 5th of July, when we made the Island of Java, and the next afternoon got safe into Batavia road.

Arrival at
Batavia.Transport
hired

A vessel is hired from the Shebander,† which, he says, is about 300 tons‡; in her, after she is loaded, I am to return to Port Jackson. The Supply will be ready much sooner than it is possible she can be got ready, and Mr. Ball means to proceed for Port Jackson and leave me to follow. My anxiety for returning is very great, as we hear of some vessels leaving the Cape of Good Hope in May bound for Port Jackson; by them I expect to hear whether I am confirmed. I have the satisfaction to say Governor Phillip still continues his kindness to me, and on Lieut. Maxwell being invalided appointed me second lieutenant, for all which I am to thank you as being the occasion of it; and I hope my conduct has been such as to merit your kind attention, and that my future may be such as to recommend myself to your friendly protection.

Anxious to
return.

I am, &c.,

NEWTON FOWELL.

* Second Lieutenant of the Sirius.

† A shebander, according to the Imperial Dictionary, is a "Dutch East India commercial officer."

‡ The Dutch snow, Waaksamheyd.

MAJOR GROSE TO SIR GEORGE YONGE.

1790

Sir,

Portsmouth, July the 30th. 1790.

30 July.

As it will be a matter of great satisfaction to the officers of this corps to get rid of two soldiers we are so unfortunate as to have with us, I write to request your permission to turn them over to the Navy; they are both sailors, and perfectly fit for that service, but as neither indulgence or punishment can bring them to act otherwise than so to make themselves continually troublesome, I hope you will be pleased to direct their being discharged, as it cannot well be conceiv'd how much injury we sustain in our discipline by two ruffians whose greatest study seems to be to excite mutiny and mischief wherever they go. Their names are * and *. They have hitherto been in almost every regiment in the service, from whom they have generally deserted, but when that has not happened they have been drummed out. They are not of those I receiv'd from the Savoy,† but were enlisted as recruits in last August. The men in general conduct themselves since under my command at this place with the greatest propriety, and I am happy to say give constant satisfaction to both Army and Navy that have anything to do with them. With every respect, &c.,

Bad soldiers.

Their discharge asked for.

General good conduct.

FRAN'S GROSE,
Major Com'g N. South Wales Corps.

LIEUTENANT FOWELL TO HIS FATHER.

Dear Sir,

Batavia, July 31st, 1790.

31 July.

My last l^r. was written to you from ye Cape of Good Hope, since which time many things have happen'd, all which I shall relate as they occur'd. After taking in our cargo, which consisted chiefly of flour for ye settlement at Port Jackson, we compleated the provisions for ye ship‡ for ten months, and on ye 20th of Feby., 1789, weigh'd anchor, and left Table Bay. It was above a fortnight before we c'd get to eastward of ye Cape, and all that time blowing a gale of wind. On ye 10th of March, got ye wind from ye westward, stood to ye S.E. till we were between the 23rd and 24th degree of latitude, when we stood to the eastward for the South Cape of New Holland. We had very fine weather, the wind varying from ye N.W. to ye S.W. quarter. On ye 19th of April, we supposed ourselves not far from ye South Cape, shortened sail, and hove too for the night, with ye wind at S.W., intending in the morning to make the land, and stand round it; and if this wind stood, expected to be at Port Jackson in less than a week. During the night the wind shifted from S.W. to S., and blew very hard, which brought us under low sail. At 4 o'clock ye next morning the wind shifted to S.S.E., and very unfortunately

The Sirius leaves the Cape.

Bound for Port Jackson.

* Names omitted. † The Savoy Prison, London, to which military offenders were sent.
‡ H.M.S. Sirius.

1790

31 July.

A gale.

Heavy sea.

On a lee shore.

A dangerous situation.

The sea breaking on board.

Near the shore.

at ye same time all our small sails were split, and it blew too hard even to set our foresail reef, so that at this time we were driving about, having no sail set except our mizen. At this time our drift was two miles an hour directly for the shore, which was on ye 20th at noon only fifty-five miles distant. In the afternoon, finding the gale did not abate, it was thought proper that something should be done to get the ship out of this unpleasant situation. The courses were reefed, and by this time one of the small sails was repair'd (the storm mizen stay-sail) and bent, and the reefed hove sail also. The wind came to the south, and blew so very hard, there was so great a sea running, that she would not keep closer to the wind than abt. eight points. At noon of the 21st, by account (for we had not seen the sun since the 19th, which rendered our situation still more dangerous), Swilly* was only nine miles distant, and the weather so very hazy we could not see it; the wind still at south and blowing as hard as ever. More sail was wanted on the ship. The mainsail was double reefed, and set at half-past 2 in the afternoon; it cleared up a little, when we saw the land bearing N.E. abt. six miles, which was taken for the Mewstone,* and supposing it not possible to weather the South Cape, wore ship in hopes to weather the S.W. Cape, at the same time let the second reef out of the mainsail, the wind from south to S.S.E. At 5 we supposed that we saw land on the lee bow; but the weather being hazy, could not be certain. At 6 we saw it plain, which was very high, close under our lee bow. Finding it was possible to weather it, we wore ship, and at this time, as we had the alternative either to carry a great press of sail or to go on shore, it may be needless to say the former was chose; and altho' at this time the ship had more sail upon her than she ever had before, yet we set the foretopsail, tho' it very much endanger'd the masts. At 8 cd. see the land at some distance under our lee. We were at this time in a very dangerous situation, nor cd. we tell when we sh'd be out of it, as we did not know what land it was we saw at 6 o'clock; but we were certain ye land seen at 2 o'clock cd. not be the Mewstone, as we supposed. At 10 passed a point of land at a good distance. So heavy a press a sail was on the ship that the sea made a fair breach over her, which obliged every person to be very careful in holding fast for fear of being wash'd overboard. Indeed, the fore-castle was constantly under water. At 12 the weather was very dark, and not seeing any land made us suppose ourselves out of danger; but Captain Hunter did not think it prudent to shorten sail till daylight. This was a very lucky precaution, for at 2 o'clock all on a sudden land was seen close on her lee beam. We had not room to ware, so stood on. We thought at this time we were among

* Swilly and Mewstone are two small islands or rocks on the Tasmanian coast, so named by Captain Furneaux, who discovered them in 1773. The latter resembles a small island near Plymouth, whence it took its name. Tench's Narrative, p. 43.

breakers, and several heavy seas were shipped, some of which, I am sure, broke above halfway up the foreyard. When this land was first seen some of the people were much frightened, the man at the wheel in particular, who threw the ship in the wind, and as she payed off again some of the people were heard to say that she was drifting very fast on it. However, by half-past 2 we were clear of the land, when we cd. plainly see it trend to the northward. Here Providence seemed to favour us very much, for we were no sooner round this point of land than the wind came forward two points. Had this happen'd when the land was seen at 2 o'clock nothing cd. have saved us from going ashore. At daylight saw very plainly that the land we saw at 2 o'clock was Tasman's Head, and by the courses steer'd and the distance run during the night proves the land seen at 6 o'clock last night to be the S.W. Cape, and the land seen at 10 o'clock to be the South Cape.

1790

31 July.

The ship
clears the
land.Tasman's
Head.

South Cape.

By carrying such a very heavy press of sail during the night the figure-head was washed away and the head-rails and knees of the head so much damaged that we were obliged to get lashings round the cutwater to secure it to the stem.

The ship
damaged.

22nd.—The weather much more moderate: some of the topmast back stays gave way. Had this happened while so heavy a press of sail was on the ship in all probability the topmasts must have gone, and then, for want of sail, undoubtedly she must have gone on shore. Nothing extraordinary happen'd more during our passage, and on the 9th of May, in the afternoon, arrived at Port Jackson. We appear'd in such shattered condition that at first the ship was not known; but they were, as you may suppose, very glad to see us, for soon after our sailing one pound of flour was stopped from the week's allowance of each person, and on our arrival whole allowance was again issued.

Arrival at
Port
Jackson.

During our absence Capn. Shea, of the marines, died, and Lt. George Johnston was promoted in his room. Six marines belonging to ye batallion were hung for robbing the provision storehouse and cellar. They had keys that fitted the locks. They were discovered by one of the keys being broke in the lock of the cellar door, and they could not get out the broken peice. As soon as it was discovered the lock was taken off and the broken key shown to all the blacksmiths to know if anyone had made such a key, and for whom. One of them immediately recollected the key, and said he made it for one of the marines for his chest. The lock of his chest was examined, and the key was found to fit it. Seven of them were concerned, but one of them turned king's evidence and saved his neck.* He was the greatest villain and the first projector of the scheme. The method they took to robb the stores was: when one of them was sentinel some of the rest came and were admitted by him into the storehouse. This practice had been carried on near ten months before it was discovered.

Capt. Shea's
death.

Robberies.

* See Phillip's despatch. Ante, p. 297.

1790

31 July.
Rose Hill.Fine
vegetables.A native
caught.Ravages of
small-pox.Disappear-
ance of
natives.A boy
saved,

and a girl.

A settlement had been made at the head of the harbour and abt. 40 acres of ground cleared. It is called Rose Hill. The greatest part of it this last year was sown in grain, and yielded about 4-fold. The ground abt. that part is much clearer of wood and the soil much richer than abt. Sidney Cove. Good gardens have been made there, and vegetables grow very fine. Cabbages grow to a large size. On the King's birthday, 1789, a cabbage was cut and sent to the Governor which weighed 27 lb. Several have been cut weighing from 15 to 20 lb. ; but it is the general opinion that potatoes degenerat very much. Melons and pumpkins thrive astonishingly. At Rose Hill a subaltern officer and a small party of marines reside, and are releived every month. It is abt. fourteen miles from Sidney Cove. The Governor had likewise during our absence taken one of the natives by stratagem, as he found it impossible to bring them among us by any other means, and by treating him well he was in hopes to convince them it was not our intention to do them any harm. His name was Arooboonew.* He was a very good-temper'd fellow, and gave much information concerning their manners. Soon after he was taken the small-pox raged among them with great fury and carried off vast numbers of them. Every boat that went down the harbour found them lying dead on the beaches and in the caverns of the rocks, forsaken by the rest as soon as the disease is discover'd on them. They were generally found with the remains of a small fire on each side of them and some water left within their reach. How this disease got among them it is impossible to tell, but it is supposed that they had it among them before any European visited the country, as they have a name for it. When we arrived not a canoe was to be seen, the natives having all left the harbour and fled to the northward. Boats were often sent down the harbour for no other purpose than to bury the dead that were found on the beaches. In one boat a man and his son were brought up, who were found very ill, and tho' every assistance was given the old man died in a few days. The boy recovered, and is still alive, and seems happy in his situation, not having the least wish to return to his former way of life. His name is Nanbarry Bolderry Bockenbaw ; he is always called Nanbarry. He is about nine years old, and it is surprising to hear what particular accounts he gives of their manners and way of living. As for religion, that cd. not be found out. They have an idea of futurity. This was found out by a man who was lately taken, by some questions that were ask'd him when he saw a dead man, which were what became of him and where he went, to which he answered that his countrymen went above, pointing to the sky. The remains of another family were found in a miserable condition—an old man and a girl abt. twelve years old. Her name is Aboren. Her father died, but she recover'd. When she found

* Aranbanoo. Ante, p. 298.

her father was dead she got to him and hugged and kissed the corps for an hour, and after that did not seem to be much, concerned abt. it. Aroobooneew was at this time quite reconciled to his way of living, and assisted the sick children very much, and seemed vastly affected when their fathers died. Soon after our arrival from the Cape he was taken ill of the small-pox, and died on the 18th of May. While he lay ill he suffered himself to be bled, and took all medicines that were offered him with a great deal of confidence. He was much regretted by everyone, as it was supposed he would have been of infinite service in reconciling the natives to us. He was a very good mimic, and was very much attach'd to several particular people. When he was first taken he had a voracious appetite, but as he found he got his meals regularly that wore off. He was very fond of bread and vegetables. On the Christmas Day after he was taken all the officers, as it is usual, dined with the Governor. When they first assembled at his house Aroobooneew was vastly frightened—so much so that his appetite failed him—but after dinner he appeared more chearful, and it was afterwards learnt that he thought they intended to eat him.

1790

31 July.

Death of
Aranbanoo.

His fear.

After carrying that very heavy press of sail off Tasman's Head we found the upper works of the ship very leaky. She was examined and it was found necessary to fix top riders on the inside to strengthen the upper works of the ship. A proper place on the north side of the harbour was fixed on for the purpose, and the ship was taken there as soon as the cargo was landed. Here we built a wharf and saw-pits, and sent carpenters into the woods in search of proper trees for the purpose, which took up some time. At length seven riders of a side were fixed, three opposite the mainmast, three opposite the foremast, and one opposite the mizenmast, which were found to strengthen her very much. This same opportunity was taken to examine the places where she leaked going round Cape Horn. Two streaks of copper were ripped off, and her bottom was found to be in a very sound state. Nothing happened till the latter end of September, when, on examining the storehouse, the provisions were found much reduced by rats, and that only seven months' provisions at two-thirds allowance was left, and as supplies were not expected till the end of December or the beginning of Jan'y, 1790, it was thought proper to reduce the allowance, which took place on the 1st of Nov'r. The principle work being now done to the ship she was towed round to Sidney Cove on the 7th of Nov'r. A very melancholly accident happened at this time to Mr. Francis Hill, one of the midshipmen. He was in the Ardent with Cap'n Hartwell. While the ship was repairing it often happened that a boat did not go to Sidney Cove for three or four days together, and sh'd any person want to go there they

The Sirius
leaky.

Repairs.

Depreda-
tions of rats.

- 1790
31 July. used to walk up abreast of ye cove and call the first boat they saw which w'd bring them over. Mr. Hill had been at Sidney Cove and was returning to ye ship by that way, but did not arrive as was expected, for when we went to Sidney Cove we heard he had cross'd two morpings before. It was supposed he must have lost his way in the woods, and a party was sent out to look for him, but return'd without success. For the two following days parties were sent out in every direction to look for him, guns were fired, and every method that c'd be thought of was taken to recover him, but all proved ineffectual, nor was it ever known what became of him. It was supposed by some that he was killed by the natives, as they were very plenty on that side of the harbour, and he had no firearms. Indeed, the natives were very numerous at this time at all parts of the harbour, and w'd throw a spear at any boat as she passed near a point and then retreat into the woods. On the 25th Nov'r the Governor sent a boat down the harbour on purpose to catch one of the natives. On their landing at the lower part of the harbour two men came on the beach. Some fish was shown them, and they immediately came to the boat for them, and were seized and carried off in less than a minute. As soon as the boat left the beach the whole place was cover'd with them, all armed ; but the boat being out of their reach no mischief was done. On their landing in Sidney Cove, Nanbarry called them both by their names, and he gave us to understand they were two cheifs. The principle one of the two is called Gringerry Kibba Coleby ; the other, Vul-a-a-varry Wogletrowey Benalong.* Two men were appointed to take care of them, and an iron ring with a rope to it was made fast round one of each of their legs. Notwithstanding all this care Coleby made shifts after several attempts to accomplish his escape by drawing the splice of the rope, and his keeper not paying proper attention to him, he was out of sight in less than a minute. Benalong very nearly accomplished his escape at the same time. It happened ab't ten days after they were taken. They were both very sullen, Coleby in particular, but after his escape Benalong became very lively and intelligent. A large vocabulary has been got from him.
- An officer missing.
- His probable fate.
- Natives captured.
- Coleby and Bennilong.
- Coleby escapes.
- Settlement of Norfolk Island.
- Since Norfolk Island was first settled the Supply has been there several times, and such very favourable accounts were received of the fertility of the soil that the Governor thought it a proper place to send half the people of the colony to ; for the ships not arriving left room to suppose that some accident had happen'd to them, and that by seperating the colony they might make the salt provisions spin out much longer by the help of the fish that might be caught. It was likewise proposed that the

* This name is spelt in different ways by different writers. "Bennilong" is the form used by Governor Phillip in his despatches, and by Collins in his "Account of New South Wales."

Sirius should go to some place or other for provisions ; and as the season for going round Cape Horn to ye Cape of Good Hope was past, there was no other place for her to go to than either China or Batavia. China was the place fix'd on, supposing there we might get assistance from some of our Indiamen, and Batavia was likewise thought unhealthy. So it was proposed for us to carry Lt.-Governor Major Ross and two companies of marines to Norfolk Island, and abt. one hundred convicts, being on board in all abt. four hundred. An objection was started to our proceeding on to China from Norfolk Island, for sh'd we have a bad passage there, Capt'n. Hunter was afraid the water might fall short, and it was thought more prudent for us to return to Port Jackson, at which time everything was to have been ready for us, and we did not expect to be detained there above three or four days. I forgot to mention that in the latter end of Decr. Mr. Willm. Maxwell, who was third lieutenant, when we left England, was invalidated on account of his ill state of health ; on which I was appointed second lieutenant, and Mr. Waterhouse was appointed third lieutenant. Dated Dec. 28th. In the beginning of March we were quite ready for sea, having on board a proportion of provisions for the people going to Norfolk Island. On the 7th we went to sea, with the Supply in company. We had a fair wind all the way, and on the morning of the 13th saw Norfolk Island ; but as the winds were from the S.W., it was not possible to land on the side of the island on which the settlement was made, so was obliged to run to leeward of the island into Cascade Bay, where we that day landed most of the convicts and all the marines. From Cascade Bay to Sidney Bay, where the settlement is made, is about three miles, which distance they had to walk, and by that means could not carry their baggage. The next day they landed the rest of the convicts. On the 16th it came on to blow hard from the eastward and N.E. ; this obliged us to run on the other side of the island, which was then the lee side. This day the Supply sent her boats on board, and took out thirty casks of provisions. That night and all the next morning we were carrying sail to beat the ship into Sidney Bay, supposing that landing with this wind was very good. On the afternoon of the 17th it came on to blow hard from the eastward ; stood off shore to ye southward. At 10 it blew so hard that it obliged us to hand our topsails, when we lost sight of the Supply. During the night the ship was wore several times, by which we were so far to leeward that we were out of sight of the island. 18th it moderated, and at twelve we were in close with the island again, about four leagues to leeward of Sidney Bay. By ten o'clock we ed. plainly see the signal on shore that any boat might land. At this time the wind was at S.E., and blowing a moderate breze. This being the first opportunity that offer'd since our first arrival in sight of

1790

31 July.

The Sirius
to go to Nor-
folk Island
and China.

Promotions.

Sailing of
Sirius and
Supply.

Landing at
Cascade
Bay.

Sydney Bay.

- 1790 the island, Captn. Hunter was very anxious to embrace it ; there-
 31 July. fore he stood in and hove to about a mile from the shore, with
 Hunter her head to the sea. At this time she look'd far to windward of
 anxious to Point Ross, which is the westernmost point of the bay. (Off
 land. this point, about one-third of a mile from the shore, lies a bed of
 rocks even with the water's edge). At this time the Supply was
 on our lee bow. Hoisted out boats, loaded them with provisions,
 Boats sent and sent them on shore. Just as the last boat had left the ship,
 ashore. Mr. Ball, the commander of the Supply, was seen waving to the
 ship and hollowing ; but our distance was so great we cd. not
 make out what he said. Both vessels at this time made sail. As
 the Supply passed us on the other tack, Mr. Ball informed us that
 both vessels were much too near in shore, and recommended it to
 Captn. Hunter to get out of his situation as soon as possible ;
 for that while we were lying too the tide had set us in shore very
 much, for we trusted to the making of the eastern tide, which did
 not make till two hours after the usual time. The wind very
 unfortunately at this time (half-past eleven o'clock) shifted to
 S.S.E., by which we could not weather Point Ross. When we
 were close to the point the ship was tryed in stays, which she
 refused. She was immediately wore, which she did in as little
 room as any ship well cd., and then did but just go clear of the
 rocks. All sail was made on her again ; but there was a head
 sea going, which greatly impeded the ship and threw her much
 to leeward, which prevented us weathering the other point of the
 bay. When she was as near the reef as she cd. well go, she was
 thrown in stays again and came round ; but before she payed off
 sufficiently on the other tack she was thrown by the swell on the
 reef, and payed round off with her broadside on the shore in a
 great surf. An anchor was immediately let go on her first strik-
 ing, and in less than ten minutes every mast was over her side
 and the ship an entire wreck. Mr. Ball came in his boat to see
 if he cd. be of any service to us ; but he was desir'd to return and
 take care of his own ship, which was at this time in a very little
 better situation, and it was impossible to be of any service to the
 Sirius. As she lay with her broadside on shore, she made a very
 good breakwater, and boats could easily come under her lee and
 load with bread and flour, which were the principle things to be
 saved, as the salt water would intirely ruin them. The time-
 keeper was sent on shore in the first boat ; but in the hurry it
 was forgot to be wound up, so was let down for the second time
 since our leaving England.
- We were so near the shore as to be able to fasten a hawser
 to a tree. On this hawser was a traveller with a board slung to
 it, and a rope which reached to the shore was made fast to this
 traveller by which all the people got safe on shore without the
 least hurt whatever ; and the clothes that were saved were thrown
- Vessels too
 near the
 land.
- The Sirius
 misses stays.
- Strikes the
 reef,
- and
 becomes a
 wreck.
- Provisions
 landed.
- Everyone
 saved.

overboard, and were very soon washed on shore by the surf. 1790
 Everybody, I beleive, met with some loss, tho' some people were 31 July.
 much luckier than others in saving most of their things. The Effects lost.
 officers who landed in Cascade Bay lost most part of their clothes
 and all their stock. My loss was not very great, as I saved above
 half of my clothes ; but they are all very much stain'd by a blue
 clay that is found on the reef, which the surf must have washed
 into my chest.

The next day a council was held, which was composed of all
 the commissioned officers on the island, and it was thought proper
 to put every person on the island on half-allowance, and likewise Martial law.
 put the whole island under military law, for the better preserving
 good discipline ; and by which means robberies might be punished
 according to their deserts, which, if military law had not been
 proclaimed, no robbery could have been punished but by corporal
 punishment, and tryed only by justices of the peace, whereas now a
 court-martial can take place, and the offenders punished by death.

General court-martials are to be composed of seven commis-
 sioned officers, and if corporal punishment only is to be inflicted,
 a majority of voices is only necessary for the number lashes, &c. ;
 but if it affects life, five out of the seven must concur in opinion.
 For two days after our geting on shore it blew so hard, and the
 surf ran so very high, that it washed the ship much nearer in The Sirius
 shore, and the anchor, which was let go on her first striking, was washed
 now of infinite service, as it brought the ship's bow to the surf, inshore.
 which must have broke her in pieces in a short time as she lay
 on her first striking, and the riders that were fixed in Port
 Jackson were of great service in keeping her together.

As soon as the gale abated we went to work to endeavour to
 save what we could out of the ship ; two convicts likewise went
 on board by the hawser to throw the live stock overboard, which The live
 at this time had been three days without water. And it was stock.
 just as well to give them a chance of swimming on shore, and
 saving their lives, as to stay there and be famished for want of
 water and food. These convicts, instead of attending to their
 errand, got to some liquor and made themselves very drunk ; in Drunken
 the evening we could plainly see they had by some means got a convicts.
 light, which they were called to put out and come on shore,
 which they did not obey. We c'd plainly see from the shore that
 these people were drunk ; and by their having a light there was
 great danger of their setting the ship on fire, which w'd be the
 worst thing that c'd happen to us, as the isl'd chiefly depended on
 the provision that c'd be got out of her for their support. What
 we sh'd have done I know not, had not one of the convicts offered
 to go on board by the hawser, which he did ; and with orders to
 throw the men overboard if they refused to come on shore, and
 afterwards to visit every part of the ship to see that all was safe.

A convict
does good
service.

1790 The two men came on shore that night, but he did not come till
31 July. the next morning, as the surf ran very high ; when he reported
 that in one of the cabbins, where these fellows had been plunder-
 ing, they found a light lying on the deck, which had set it on
 fire, and had burnt quite through to the other deck ; and if he
 had not gone on board then, in all probability the ship must have
 been burnt, which w'd have been a worse accident than her
 going on shore.

Safety of the Supply. We will now return to the Supply, which we left in nearly as
 bad a situation as the Sirius, being, as I before mentioned, much
 too near in shore. However, she continued turning to windward
 a considerable time, and at last got out of the bay, tho' with
 much more difficulty than they ever experienced before, and got
 round to the leeward of the isl'd, where she landed all her pro-
 visions that she could spare, which was but little for so many
 people as were now on the island. Capt'n. Hunter thought it
 prudent to send as many of the ship's company in the Supply to
 Port Jackson as she c'd conveniently carry, and sent me with
 them to tell the dismal news. On Wednesday, the 24th, I
 embarked with Mr. Waterhouse and thirty-two of the people.
She sails for Port Jackson. All the time I was on shore the weather was so very unfavourable
 that it was impossible to save anything out of the ship ; but this
 day the wind shifted to N.E., and was very fine weather, and I have
 no doubt but most if not all the provisions will be got on shore.

Her arrival. We arrived at Port Jackson ye 5th of April without anything
 particular happening. All the boats in the colony were taken
 for the publick use and sent a fishing ; the allowance was reduced
 to two pounds of pork, two pounds and a half of flour, and a pint
 of rice, and a pint of pease for a week ; and when the boats were
 successful in fishing, ten pounds of fish was serv'd in lieu of two
 pounds of pork, all the beef being expended many months ago.
Reduced ration. In order to get a greater quantity of fish two boats were sent
 round to Botany Bay with a seane, and the fish they caught was
 brought at a particular hour to the upper part of the bay where
 were people ready to receive them. From the upper part of
 Botany Bay to Sydney Cove is between four and five miles, a
 good beaten path all the way.

Fishing. The Supply was ordered, on her arrival at Port Jackson, to be
 got ready for sea as fast as possible ; it was intended sending
 her to Batavia, there to hire a vessel and load her with pro-
 vision. Governor Phillip thought it necessary that some person
 who has a knowledge of the coast should return in her, and as
 the Supply had nobody that she could spare for that purpose, I
 was ordered to go in the Supply. She was to have gone to
 Norfolk Isl'd, where the 1st lieutenant was to have been taken
 on board and brought here, and I was to have been landed
 there ; but the wind blowing fresh from the eastward, which was

**The Supply
sent to
Batavia.**

a foul wind for Norfolk, and a fair one to proceed on the voyage, Mr. Ball did not think proper to lose so fair an opportunity of getting to the northward. Mr. King, commandant of Norfolk Island, left it on Major Ross's taking the command there, and is now going to England charged with Governor Philips's dispatches. Mr. Miller, the commissary, was likewise going to England, as his health was very indifferent. On the 18th April we left Port Jackson, and the same evening lost sight of land. Nothing happen'd till ye 27th, in the evening, when we discover'd a shoal lying in latitude $21^{\circ} 24'$, longitude $159^{\circ} 24'$ east. All longitudes are by the timekeeper. To this shoal Mr. Ball gave the name of Booby Shoal, having seen many birds of that name flying towards it. The next morning, on examining the mainmast, it was found sprung abt. halfway between the cap and the rigging. The mast was fish'd, and afterwards answered very well. On the 5th of May, in the morning, the weather was particularly cloudy, which gave us reason to suppose ourselves near land; in the forenoon it was discovered bearing N.N.W. ten leagues; we stood for the N.W. extremity of it, off which lie two small isl'ds, the easternmost of which is named Sirius Isl'd, in memory of the old ship; it lies in lat. $10^{\circ} 52' S.$, longitude $162^{\circ} 30'$ Et. We that night got round the end of it, and found it trend to the westward. We stood along the land to the N.W. at the distance of abt. ten or twelve leagues, so that we could not see any of its productions, nor did we see any signs to give us the least reason to suppose it was inhabited. We lost sight of this land the 10th. It extends as far to the northward as $8^{\circ} 45'$, and to the westward as 161° east. The land in general appeared very high, and well clothed with trees. We saw an appearance of a harbour in lat. of 9° and longitude 162° . After losing sight of this land we stood to the westward, and had very fine weather. On the 19th we discovered two isl'ds. As we drew near the first and smaller of them, we saw several canoes with natives in them coming off towards the ship; they advanced boldly till they were close to her, and then paddled towards the shore as if they were frightened. They stoped at abt. half a mile from the ship and consulted, when they again advanced; but it was but slowly. They came near us again, but we c'd not prevail on any of them to come on board. Hatchets were shewn them, but they could not be prevailed upon to venture. Their canoes were very well finished, and some carried seven or eight men, but they were so very narrow that they are obliged to carry an outrigger to prevent their overturning; their paddles are abt. 6 feet long, and shaped like a plantain leaf. As none of them c'd. be prevail'd upon to come on board, it was not thought proper to lose any time, so made the best of our way to the westward. The next day the other isl'd was abt. three or four leagues off; it is considerably larger than the first, and has near the center of it a high mount. As we drew

1790

31 July.

King goes to England.

The Supply sails.

Islands discovered.

Two more islands.

The natives shy.

- 1790
31 July.
Tench's
Island.

Prince
William
Henry's
Island.

Crossing the
Equator.

Karkolang.

The Spice
Islands.

St. Mat-
thew.
- near it we could see vast crowds of inhabitants on the beach, and canoes, but none in the water. It appeared to have many cultivated spots on it; cocoanut and plantain trees grow in great plenty. The smallest of these islands is call'd Tenche's Isl'd; it lies in lat. $1^{\circ} 39'$ sh., longitude $150^{\circ} 31'$ et.; it is in circumference not above three miles. The other is named Prince Wm. Henry's Isl'd., and lies in latde. $1^{\circ} 15'$ sh., longde. $149^{\circ} 50'$ et., and is abt. twenty miles in circumference; that night we lost sight of it. 22d, in lat. 20 m. sh., longde. $146^{\circ} 50'$, the whole sea was covered with large trees, which had their roots and branches to them; some of them appeared to have been a long time in the water; I daresay they must have come out of St. George's Channel, as it then lay open. That night, at $\frac{1}{2}$ -past 11, we crossed the Line in longde. $143^{\circ} 30'$ et., the variation of the compass $6^{\circ} 00'$ et., the thermometer 83° . It was Mr. Ball's intention to have gone thro' the Straits of Macassar, but as we drew near it we found that the western monsoon had set in. On the 5th of June we saw the islands of Karkolang and Karokalang, and the next morning were close in with them. Some of the natives came alongside of us, and sold some cocoanuts, plantains, and yams, for hatchets, nails, &c. These islands are inhabited by Malays, and by seeing a Dutch flag on the shore leads me to suppose they are tributary to them. After getting round the north end of Karkolang, which lies in latde. $4^{\circ} 28'$ nh., longde. $126^{\circ} 31'$ et., we first felt the western monsoon, and finding that the wind constantly kept at S.W., and that after beating several days gained little or no ground, determined Mr. Ball to relinquish his design of going thro' the Straits of Macassar, therefore stood to the eastward in order to attempt the passage between Celibes and Gilolo, thro' the Spice Islands. After beating a few days along the Gilolo shore, we got among the Spice Islands, the northermost of which is called Heri; it lies in latude. 55 miles N., longude. $127^{\circ} 10'$ et. We now had variable winds, with which we stood to the southward. On the 18th crossed the Equinoctial line in longitude $126^{\circ} 40'$ et., at $\frac{1}{2}$ an hour before noon, the thermometer 86. These islands extend as far as $8^{\circ} 30'$ S., so that till we passed Buro, which is the southermost of them that we saw, we were always in sight of land. 25th, in the morning, saw the islands of St. Matthew, and the same day made the Touchaheilly Islands. When they were first seen we cd. not be certain whether or no it was not the Isl'd. of Bouton; by 11 o'clock cd. plainly see a passage between the islands, thro' which we stood. At 2 that afternoon saw a boat standing athwart us, which, as soon as we came near, lower'd their sail, which was made of mat, and prepared to come alongside. One of the men in her was observed several times to point to the N.W., and at same time address himself to one of our people that went on board her on her coming alongside. What it meant we cd. not tell.

After getting out of her about one hundred and fifty cocoanuts and some few yams, for which four dollars were paid, she went away. She had five Malays on board her. Abt. an hour after she was gone we discovered a large shoal, bearing from W.N.W. as far as the eye cd. reach to the southward. We now plainly saw what the Malay meant to tell us of, on which we haul'd up to the N.W. As we could not see the N.W. extreme of it, Mr. Ball thought it safer to stand off and on during the night, as this shoal is very dangerous, as it lies even with the water's edge, and on it is not the least break, so that in the night you wd. be on it before you cd. possibly see it. The next morning cd. plainly see the shoal, and that it ran a great way to the N.W. At noon on ye 26th our latde. was $5^{\circ} 29'$ south, longitude $123^{\circ} 07'$ et. By four that afternoon we got round the N.W. end of it, which lies in latde. $5^{\circ} 24'$ st., longitude 123° et. Stood for the south end of Bouton, which was distant from us about eight leagues. 27th, by two o'clock in ye morning, were abreast of it, when we stood for the straits of Salayer, which we got through. The 28th, at noon, they lie in latde. $5^{\circ} 44'$, longde. $120^{\circ} 03'$ et. The 1st of July saw the island of Solombo; it lies in latde. $5^{\circ} 31'$ st., longitude 114° et.; it is very small, and, I believe, not inhabited. The next day saw the island of Lubeck, which is much larger than the island of Solombo; it is inhabited, and appeared to be well cultivated; it lies in latitude $5^{\circ} 50'$ st., longitude $112^{\circ} 13'$ et. On ye 5th, in the morning, saw the island of Java, and two vessels at anchor under the land, which were the first strangers the Supply had seen since November, 1787. On the evening of the 6th we got up into Batavia roads; here we found a great number of Dutch ships, and some Americans, but no English. The city of Batavia cannot be seen from the anchoring-place, as there are many trees that stand between it and the waterside. The landing-place is about half a mile up a river, into which a number of canals empty themselves. The houses are very large and airy, the streets wide and well paved. Most of them have a canal running through them, which carries of all dirt and contributes much to the healthiness of the place, which formerly was very unhealthy, owing to the canals not being kept clear, by which mud banks collected, and were very offensive. The healthiness of the place now at this present time cannot be much boasted of. The dews fall very heavy by night, and are very unwholesom to be out in them, as well as the land breeze, which blows very regular every night. Intemperance, I beleive, is the greatest cause of illness, particularly among the lower class of people, who drink the new arrack, which is very unwholesom. When we arriv'd here we had not a sick person on board, since which several of the people have been ill; but I have taken notice that most of them have been drunk before their illness. It is sometimes four or five

1790

31 July.

A dangerous shoal.

Bouton Island.

Lubeck Island.

Batavia.

Climate unhealthy.

Unwholesome liquor.

1790

31 July

days before the liquor takes effect. The town is built on them very low ground ; but at some distance inland are very high mountains.

Governor-General.

There is but one remarkable building here, which is a church that has a cupola of a tollerable height, which is seen from sea before the land on which it stands. Batavia is surrounded with a wall, so that you must pass the gates, at which stands a guard, before you can get into the city. The Governor-General of India (*sic*) resides here ; he has a council which is called *Edile*, and any person who meets one of the Council, although he is in his coach, is obliged to stop and rise from his seat and make his obedience ; and when they pass the Governor they must not only stop, but come out of their coach while he passes ; and no coach whatever is allowed to pass his, let the business be ever so urgent. I have not time to give you so full an account of this place as I could wish, as the packet sails much sooner than I expected, and I am the only person left on board the Supply to get her ready for sea, as Mr. Ball is always on shore, and the master sick. We have got a brigg of about three hundred tons, and I expect to go to sea in her in about a fortnight. The Supply sails before me. I expect to be at Port Jackson about the latter end of September, and shall most likely be in England in about twelve months from this time, and I shall go in the first vessel that sails after my arrival. You may suppose my anxiety to return to Port Jackson is very great, as we have heard of vessels leaving the Cape bound there. It was a very unfortunate thing for us the loss of the *Guardian* ; he* was certainly very far to the southward, but his reasons, I suppose, are best known to himself. I have sent you a slight sketch of the harbour at Botany Bay and Port Jackson. I had them all compleat to send to you, but they were lost in the *Sirius*, together with a very valuable collection of birds, which cost me a great deal of trouble.

A transport engaged.

Loss of sketches,&c.

Love and compliments, &c., &c.,

NEWTON FOWELL.

Mr. King sails to-morrow at daylight.

THE REV. R. JOHNSON TO MR. THORNTON,†

[Extract.]

The Second Fleet.

THE Lady Juliana brought out from England two hundred and twenty-six women convicts, out of which she had only buried five, though they had been on board for about fifteen months. The case was much otherwise with the other three ships.

* Lieut. Riou, commander of the vessel.

† The Rev. R. Johnson, first chaplain of the settlement, wrote a letter to Mr. Thornton, describing the condition of the convicts on board the vessels of the Second Fleet. Although not official, it has been considered worthy of a place in the records. The statements contained in it are confirmed by the despatches of Governor Phillip and the reports of the naval and military officers. The letter is undated, but it must have been written about July, 1790.

There were on board—

		Died on board.	Sick landed.	1790 July.
The Neptune, 520	...	163	269	
The Scarborough, 252	...	68	96	
The Surprize, 211	...	42	121	

The short calculation or account given me will account for what I am going to relate.

Have been on board these different ships. Was first on board the Surprize. Went down amongst the convicts, where I beheld a sight truly shocking to the feelings of humanity, a great number of them laying, some half and others nearly quite naked, without either bed or bedding, unable to turn or help themselves. Spoke to them as I passed along, but the smell was so offensive that I could scarcely bear it. I then went on board the Scarborough; proposed to go down amongst them, but was dissuaded from it by the captain. The Neptune was still more wretched and intolerable, and therefore never attempted it. Some of these unhappy people died after the ships came into the harbour, before they could be taken on shore—part of these had been thrown into the harbour, and their dead bodies cast upon the shore, and were seen laying naked upon the rocks. Took an occasion to represent this to his Excellency, in consequence of which immediate orders were sent on board that those who died on board should be carried to the opposite north shore and be buried. The landing of these people was truly affecting and shocking; great numbers were not able to walk, nor to move hand or foot; such were slung over the ship side in the same manner as they would sling a cask, a box, or anything of that nature. Upon their being brought up to the open air some fainted, some died upon deck, and others in the boat before they reached the shore. When come on shore many were not able to walk, to stand, or to stir themselves in the least, hence some were led by others. Some crept upon their hands and knees, and some were carried upon the backs of others. The next thing to be considered was what was to be done with all these miserable objects. Besides the sick that were in the hospital previous to the arrival of the fleet, there were now landed not less than four hundred and eighty-six sick; but the hospital erected here is not sufficient to hold above sixty or eighty at most; what then must be done with the rest? It was fortunate that a new hospital was brought out in the Justinian. This was set up with all speed; a great number of tents, in all ninety or a hundred, were pitched. In each of these tents there were about four sick people; here they lay in a most deplorable situation. At first they had nothing to lay upon but the damp ground, many scarcely a rag to cover them. Grass was got for them to lay upon, and a blanket given amongst four of them. Have been amongst them for hours, may say days together, going

Shocking condition of the convicts.

Bodies thrown into the harbour.

Helpless creatures.

Dying on deck and in the boats.

Nearly 500 sick.

A new hospital.

No clothing for the sick.

1790
 July.
 Trying scenes.
 Great misery.
 Serious disorders.
 Cruel treatment on board.
 Bitter complaints.

from one tent to another, from one person to another, and you may imagine that what I here beheld was not a little affecting. The number landed sick were near five hundred, most at the hospital, and some few dispersed here and there throughout the camp. The misery I saw amongst them is unexpressible; many were not able to turn, or even to stir themselves, and in this situation were covered over almost with their own nastiness, their heads, bodies, cloths, blanket, all full of filth and lice. Scurvy was not the only nor the worst disease that prevailed amongst them (one man I visited this morning, I think, I may say safely had 10,000 lice upon his body and bed): some were exercised with violent fevers, and others with a no less violent purging and flux. The complaints they had to make were no less affecting to the ear than their outward condition was to the eye. The usage they met with on board, according to their own story, was truly shocking; sometimes for days, nay, for a considerable time together, they have been to the middle in water chained together, hand and leg, even the sick not exempted—nay, many died with the chains upon them. Promises, entreaties, were all in vain, and it was not till a very few days before they made the harbour that they were released out of irons. The greatest complaints by far were from those persons who had come in the Neptune. No wonder that they should be so afflicted; no wonder to hear them groaning and crying and making the most bitter lamentations. Endeavoured to comiserate them under their afflictions, pitied them, encouraged them to hope many of them would soon recover; that every indulgence, every attention would be paid to them; prayed with them, and gave some books amongst those of them that were able to read.

Conduct of the prisoners to each other.
 The weakest go to the wall.

You will, perhaps, be astonished when I tell you a little of the villainy of these wretched people. Some would complain they had no jackets, shirts, or trowsers, and begged that I would intercede for them. Some by this means have had two, three, four—nay, one man not less than six different slops given him, which he would take an opportunity to sell to some others, and then make the same complaints and entreaties. When any of them were near dying, and had something given them as bread or lillipie (flour and water boiled together), or any other necessities, the person next to him or others would catch the bread, &c., out of his hand, and, with an oath, say that he was going to die, and therefore it would be of no service to him. No sooner would the breath be out of any of their bodies than others would watch them and strip them entirely naked. Instead of alleviating the distresses of each other, the weakest were sure to go to the wall. In the night-time, which at this time is very cold, and especially this would be felt in the tents, where they had nothing but grass to lay on and a blanket amongst four of them, he that was

strongest of the four would take the whole blanket to himself and leave the rest quite naked. These three last ships have now been here about six weeks. In this time you may suppose there have been great alterations among the sick ; a good many are so far recovered that they have got to work ; a great number have died ; have buried not less than eighty-six since they landed—

1790

July.

Eighty-six
burials.

DEVICE FOR SEAL.

Court of St. James's, 4 August, 1790.

4 Aug.

WHEREAS there was this day read at the Board a report from the Right Honourable the Lords of the Committee of Council appointed for the consideration of all matters relating to trade and foreign plantations, dated the 3rd of this instant, humbly offering to his Majesty for his royal approbation the draught of a Great Seal to be made use of within the Government of New South Wales and the islands adjacent in the Pacific Ocean, viz. :—

Great Seal.

On one side :—Convicts landed at Botany Bay ; their fetters taken off and received by Industry sitting on a bale of goods with her attributes, the distaff, bee-hive, pick-axe, and spade, pointing to oxen ploughing, the rising habitations, and a church on a hill at a distance, with a fort for their defence. Motto : *Sic fortis etruria crevit* ; with this inscription round the circumference :
Sigillum Nov. Camb. Aust.

Obverse.

On the reverse :—His Majesty's arms in a shield, with the supporters ; garter and imperial crown, with the motto ; and round the circumference his Majesty's titles.

Reverse.

His Majesty, taking the said draught of a seal into consideration, was pleased, with the advice of his Privy Council, to approve thereof. And his Majesty doth hereby order that his Chief Engraver of Seals do forthwith engrave the said seal, according to the said draught, and lay the same before his Majesty at this Board for his royal approbation. And that the Right Honourable Wm. Wyndham Grenville, one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State, do cause a warrant to be prepared for his Majesty's royal signature to the said engraver for that purpose.*

Seal
approved.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir,

Sydney, Aug. 6th, 1790.

6 Aug.

Having answered the public letter, by the Justinian, I have only to inform you that all the transports are now discharged from Government employ, except the Neptune, which ship will be discharged in four or five days.

Transports
discharged.

The Lady Juliana arrived the 3rd of June, was discharged the 2nd of July, and sailed the 25th for China.

The Lady
Juliana.

* The seal was approved by the King-in-Council, 21st January, 1791. Post, p. 431.

1790 The Justinian arrived the 20th of June, and sailed the 28th of July with provisions for Norfolk Island, after landing of which the master has orders to proceed to Canton, according to the contract made by the Commissioners of his Majesty's Navy with the East India Company.

The Surprize. The Surprize arrived the 26th of June, and the convicts being landed, that ship received on board as much provisions as she could stow, with 37 male and 157 female convicts, and sailed for Norfolk Island the 1st of August. After landing the people and provisions the master is at liberty to proceed to China, according to the directions of the owners.

The Scarborough and the Neptune. The Scarborough and Neptune arrived the 28th of June; the Scarborough was discharged from Government employ the 27th of July, and is now ready to sail for China.

The convicts landed. All the convicts brought out in the Surprize, Scarborough, and Neptune were landed within nine days after those ships arrived, and the convicts, sent to Norfolk Island in the Surprize, were put on board that ship the day before she sailed, and were victualled for the passage by the Commissary.

Number of sick decreasing. The number of sick have decreased considerably, the returns of this day being only 220. Deaths since the 27th of June, 89.

I have, &c.,
A. PHILLIP.

NORFOLK ISLAND—PROCLAMATION.

7 Aug. By his Honour the Lieut.-Governor and Council.

Disposal of fish. WHEREAS by our Order-in-Council, bearing date the 19th of July last, we judged it necessary to forbid the issuing any more salt provisions from the store during the time the birds should continue to be had in such abundance at Mt. Pitt. We do therefore by this order and proclamation direct that during the time and as long as the present scarcity of salt provisions shall continue, that whenever any fish is caught by the boats employed for that purpose, that it shall be served by the storekeeper and his assistant in as equal proportions as can conveniently be done without mangling the fish.

Disputes. And if any dispute shall arise between the storekeeper and the person or persons to be served, such dispute or complaint shall be referred to the decision of two officers (one of the naval and the other of the marine corps), who will attend for that purpose, and their determination shall be final.

Reduced ration. It is likewise unanimously resolved and ordered from the 7th inst. that the ration of provision is during the present scarcity to consist of two pounds of flour, one pint of rice, and half a pint of callivances [caravances] per week for each person, in addition to what birds or fish may be procured, this being the largest proportion that can possibly be issued until some supply arrives, or until

the potatoes and corn are fit for use ; and so soon as that happens, the Lieut.-Governor and Council will have the utmost pleasure and satisfaction in ordering an ample allowance of whatever may be in store.

1790

7 Aug.

Done at headquarters in Norfolk Island, the 7th day of August, 1790.

NORFOLK ISLAND—PROCLAMATION.

Proclamation for the more effectually securing to the inhabitants of this island a sure and peaceable means of subsistence.

By his Honour the Lieutenant-Govr. and Council.

WHEREAS the distressed state in which this settlement has been for four months past, and still continues to be in, from there not being at this time more provisions in store at the most reduced allowance that is possible for people to subsist on for more than twelve weeks from this date ; and as there is not the most distant hope of relief from the deplorable state in which we are left, except by our own industry and utmost exertions in getting land ready for the reception of corn, potatoes, and all other vegetable productions which may be judged most fit for us to subsist upon, and as this is a work that for some time past it has been found necessary to employ the troops upon, it cannot reasonably be expected that this settlement should any longer continue any proportion of provisions to any person whatever, either male or female, who does not to the utmost of their power and strength contribute their share of labour to the general clearing and cultivating land so essentially necessary to the good of the whole. It is therefore become an absolute duty, which we owe the public and ourselves, to take such steps as may be found most likely to secure to us that subsistence which we have reason to hope we may enjoy from the fruits of our own labour, and for devising the most effectual and speedy means of freeing the settlement from a set of the most unfeeling and destructive wretches that ever infested any country.

Twelve weeks' provisions.

No work, no food.

Idlers.

We have unanimously resolved and ordered, therefore, that if any person, male or female, shall withdraw or keep from the public work on which he, she, or they may have been ordered, or shall refuse or neglect to perform such work to the utmost of their ability, or shall desert or abscond into the woods, every such person or persons shall be deemed and held to be of the most dangerous and pernicious consequence to the community at large, and therefore be adjudged to suffer death.

Their punishment death.

And in future, should there be any such wretches left among us who may be so lost to every feeling of humanity as well as to their own interest, and on which their subsistence entirely must and does depend, their names will from time to time be inserted in a proclamation for that purpose. These are therefore in his

Outlawry.

1790

7 Aug.

Outlawry.

Majesty's name to require and direct all officers, civil and military, as well as all others his Majesty's loving subjects, as they tender the safety and preservation of the means of life, to use their utmost endeavours to prevent the evil consequences to be apprehended from such people being at large by apprehending them, or any of them, or by putting them to death, or causing them to be put to death, as the only means left for our preservation, and which we conceive to be a measure founded on self-defence, which necessity renders strictly legal both in the eye of God and man.

Harbouring.

And in order that no one may plead ignorance, it is further resolved and ordered that if any person or persons, either male or female, shall knowingly or willingly harbour or conceal, or shall assist such fugitive or runaway convict or convicts with any kind of provisions, clothing, arms, ammunition, tools or implements of husbandry, or any other article or thing which may assist him or them, in order to commit depredations on the inhabitants at large as well as upon the public, such person or persons shall be deemed guilty of a crime deserving death, and shall suffer accordingly.

Penalty death.

A week's grace.

And it is further unanimously resolved and ordered that from and after the date of this proclamation, if any person or persons, either male or female, who shall or may desert or abscond into the woods, and shall not in the course of one week from the time he, she, or they may be called upon by summons placed at the side of the gate going to the Government House, make their personal appearance at the public store on either of the days on which the provisions are generally issued, and demand their ration from the storekeeper, every such person or persons shall in such cases be deemed to be outlawed, and therefore to suffer death by the sentence of a court-martial, which is to be assembled by the Lieut.-Govr. for that purpose, before whom, if the person or persons so offending shall be taken alive, the oath of the storekeeper shall be deemed to be a full and sufficient proof that such offender or offenders did, in contempt and defiance of every authority, continue at large as freebooters and outlaws; or if such offender or offenders should by the authority of this proclamation be put to death, then, in that case, such court-martial as before expressed shall proceed to take the same proofs as if the offender or offenders had been taken alive. Upon due proof of the case they are to acquit the person or persons who have so complied with the spirit of the proclamation.

Proof.

Outlaws may be put to death.

Powers of courts-martial.

That this and all other courts-martial which are or may be assembled by virtue of a warrant under the hand and seal of the Lieut.-Govr., shall have full power and authority to enquire into, and they are hereby authorized to try all causes and complaints or offences mentioned in this or any former proclamation, and proceed to giving judgment in as full and ample a manner as if

the same or every part of it had been expressly mentioned in the rules and articles for the better government of all his Majesty's forces. And in order that every person in this island may have an opportunity of testifying their good dispositions upon this, as well as upon all other occasions, by assenting and agreeing to this and all other rules and orders which have or hereafter may be unanimously agreed to and passed by the Lieut.-Govr. and Council for the good of the whole settlement, it is ordered that this and all other proclamations which may hereafter be issued by the above authority shall, together with the second and third articles of the twentieth section of the Articles of War for the better government of all his Majesty's forces, be publickly read on the open street; and that the inhabitants, as well free people as others, shall be invited to testify their approbation of this, and every part of it, by voluntarily subscribing to this declaration of their assent.

1790

7 Aug

Publication
of orders.

Norfolk Island, 7th day of August, 1790.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 22nd August, 1790.

22 Aug.

My public letters were sent by the *Justinian*, of which I had the honor of informing you by the *Scarborough*.

The *Lady Juliana* arrived in this port the 3rd of June, and was discharged from Government employ the 2nd of July.

The *Justinian* arrived the 20th of June, and sailed the 28th of July, with provisions for Norfolk Island, after landing of which the master had the necessary instructions for proceeding to China.

The
transports.

The *Surprize* arrived the 26th of June, and sailed the 1st of August with convicts and provisions for Norfolk Island, from whence that ship will proceed to China, according to the direction of her owners.

The *Scarborough* and *Neptune* came into this harbour the 28th of June, and anchored in the Cove the 29th; all the convicts were landed from the *Surprize*, *Scarborough*, and *Neptune*, within nine days after their arrival. The *Scarborough* being cleared of the provisions and stores, was discharged from Government employ the 27th day of July; and the *Neptune* being likewise cleared, was discharged the 19th day of August.

I have mentioned to the Navy Board the necessity of two small schooners, and of a barge that would draw but little water, for the purpose of sending provisions, &c., to Rose Hill, where the creek, when the tide is out, has not more than 18 inches water. And in former letters to your office and to the Board of Admiralty the advantages which would attend a ship laying here as a store-ship were pointed out. From that ship the small vessels may be manned, for convicts never can be trusted.

Small
vessels
required.

1790

22 Aug.

Fugitive
convicts.

Several convicts have got away from this settlement on board of the transports, which it will be impossible to prevent, unless the masters of those ships on board of which they may be secreted are prosecuted with severity, for convicts can remain in the woods many days before a ship sails; or they may be secreted on board in such a manner as to render any search ineffectual. — Gilbert, the master of the Charlotte, when he sailed in May, 1788, carried away a seaman belonging to the Supply, and a young man who was an apprentice to the boatswain of the Sirius. Nor do I imagine it would be difficult to prove that Gilbert himself proposed to both these people that they should desert; and I am confident that nothing but prosecuting the masters of such ships as carry away seamen or convicts from the settlement will prevent our losing the best men. The Navy Board have it in their power to know what men are received on board the transports after they leave England.

Landmark
at South
Head.

As ships coming in with the land do not readily discover the entrance of this harbour, a stone building will be erected in the course of a few weeks very near the South Head, which will be a sufficient mark for those who are not acquainted with the coast.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sydney, New South Wales,

23rd August, 1790.

23 Aug.

Sir,

Fugitive
discovered.

Since my letter of yesterday was closed, several convicts being missing, a search was ordered to be made on board the Neptune, transport, Donald Trail, master, and one convict, Joseph Sutton, was found concealed in the hold, where, from the report made by John Bate, a quarter-master of the ship, preparation had been made when the people stowed the hold for concealing convicts. Now, sir, if the master of the Neptune is not prosecuted what I have observed in my former letters will certainly follow—every ship that stops here on her way to China will carry off some of the best convicts, which it will be impossible for any force in this country to prevent, as they may conceal themselves in the woods for a week or a month before the ship sails.

More
convicts in
conceal-
ment.

The convict found on board the Neptune says that he was carried off in one of the ship's boats. There is little doubt but that more convicts are concealed on board; but whether, as I have given my word to the master of the ship that he should be prosecuted, he will venture to carry them to sea, or whether he will land them, is uncertain.

The Neptune sails to-morrow.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

CAPTAIN HUNTER TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1790

Sir,

Norfolk Island, 27th Augt., 1790.

27 Aug.

Altho' it is highly probable that their Lordships will be in possession of the information which this letter is meant to convey long before it can possibly reach England, yet as this is the first opportunity which I have met with since it has been my misfortune to be on this island, I thought it my duty to embrace it, and to inform their Lordships that, in obedience to an order from Captain Arthur Phillip, principal captain of his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, I sailed in that ship under my command from Port Jackson, the 6th of March last, having previously embarked Major Ross and a company of marines, with their proper officers and baggage, &c., and also one hundred and eighty-six male and female convicts, with a proportion of provisions and other stores for this island. His Majesty's arm'd tender *Supply* was also ordered, with one company of marines and as many convicts as she could take on board, and Lieutenant Ball, her commander, directed to put himself under my command. I arrived here the 13th following, and the wind being from S.W., which makes a very great sea in Sydney Bay, where the settlement is fixed, and which is the only place where stores of any weight can be landed, I run to leeward of the island, where, finding the water smooth and not much surf on the shore, I found it practicable to put the people on shore, with such baggage as they could conveniently take with them. In two days the whole of the marines and convicts were landed from both ships. The wind now shifted to the eastw'd, and blew so hard, with thick weather, that I was driven considerably to leeward of the island, a circumstance which gave me much uneasiness, for there were now four hundred people on the island, and a very small quantity of provisions for such a number remaining in the store, and I had not been able to land one cask for their relief. On the 19th, by a slant of wind, I was enabled to get in with the land again, and on standing in found I could fetch Sydney Bay. The *Supply*, which had parted company the preceding night, was observed laying-to in the bay. The signal at this time was flying upon the shore, signifying that boats could land without any danger from the surf. Happy to avail myself of this favourable signal, and to get something landed for the relief of the settlement, I stood in as far as I judged safe, and brought the ship to, with her head off in the S.E. or windward part of the bay—the wind being S.E. by E.; and at this time the ebb tide, which sets very strong to the eastward, was suppos'd to be made about two hours. Before the second boat was completely loaded, observing the ship, to my astonishment, fall fast to leeward, I made sail, got the tacks on board, and order'd the boats away. At this unfortunate juncture the wind shifted several points to the southward, which prevented

The *Sirius*
and *Supply*
sail from
Port Jack-
son.

Off Norfolk
Island.

Marines and
convicts
landed.

Sydney Bay.

The ships in
difficulties.

1790

27 Aug.

The Sirius
misses stays.Strikes a
rock.The crew
saved.Stores and
provisions.A distressing
situation.

my being able to weather a reef which extends some distance from the N.W. point of the bay, and instead of having the usual easterly tide, which had always been found regular, there was a strong westerly current the whole of this day and great part of the next. The Supply, being ahead, endeavoured in vain to weather this reef; she tack'd. The Sirius could not weather it, and was thrown in stays. Here, to add to the danger of our situation, the wind baffled her and she missed stays, but was wore round in very little room and brought to the wind on the other tack, upon which she lay very little better than parallel to the shore, for the wind had now got so far to the southward that it blew dead into the bay. The ship still seem'd to fall to leeward, and shoal'd the water to 5 fathoms; I again threw her in stays, she came up head to wind, but was here so long at a stand that I order'd the anchor to be cut away, people having been placed by it with axes, but she had gathered so much sternway that, before the cable could check her, she struck violently upon a pointed rock, and was instantly bulged. This bay, *we now find*, is full of such rocks, and is wholly a bed of coral. When I found the ship was bulged, and that the water was flowing fast into her hold, I ordered the masts to be cut away, in order to lighten the ship before she was full of water, that the sea might throw her into shoaler water, and give some hope of saving the lives of those on board. This had the desired effect; the ship's company were all saved, being hauled by the people on shore through a very heavy surf and over a coral reef, by which several were nearly dead when landed, but, with proper assistance, were recovered again. To enter into every particular circumstance attending this unfortunate shipwreck would very much exceed the limits of a letter; and as the round this letter must take before it can reach the Admiralty will subject it to the risk of a miscarriage (it goes by way of China) their Lordships, I hope, will pardon me for not being more particular.

Happily, a short time after the loss of the ship the weather became so moderate that we were enabled to get a few of the most expert swimmers on board, by whose assistance we saved a few of the stores and a considerable part of the provisions, otherwise our situation here would have been attended with very fatal consequences.

Two ships have passed this island from Port Jackson for China. Two ships are here now, and have landed about two hundred convicts and some provisions. By those ships I understand I am not yet to be relieved, but to continue some time longer in this distressing situation, with a ship's company almost naked, having lost everything they had in the ship except what they came through the surf in, and no prospect of having their wants relieved until they can be removed from hence, which I find is not to be the case until the arrival of the Gorgon, which I most earnestly hope may be soon. I am, &c.,

JNO. HUNTER.

WRECK OF THE SIRIUS.--LETTER FROM AN OFFICER.

1790

(Banks Papers).*

1790.

Aug.

FROM this time to the latter end of April we never let slip a single Opportunity of working in the Ship, and by the 10th of the above Month had preserved the under-mentioned quantity of provisions, which was all we had to depend upon, and our sanguine Expectation of a relief given up till next Season, or by supposition of the supply bringing Ships from some European Settlement, which, within the Bounds of probability, could not be sooner than six Months.†

State of Provisions in the Public Store of Norfolk Island as per The Survey, April 10th, 1790 :—Flour, 27,006 lbs. ; Rice, 11,496 lbs. ; quantity saved. Callavances, 47 bushels; Beef, 8,375 lbs. ; Pork, 8,077 lbs. ; Spirits, 553 gallons—being the whole of every Specie saved from the Wreck of the *Sinnis* [*Sirius*], including her own proportion, with that of the Settlement, to support 503 Souls till some relief might occur.

Ration issued from April till the 15th of May.—Flour, 4 lbs. ; Ration. Rice, 2 lbs. ; Pork, $2\frac{1}{2}$ lbs. ; Spirits, $3\frac{1}{2}$ pints per Week.

Ration from May 15th till July 19th.—Flour, 3 lbs. ; Rice, 1 lb. ; Beef, $1\frac{1}{2}$ lb., or 17 ozs. of Pork. Children above 12 Months old, half the above Ration, and under, $1\frac{1}{2}$ lb. Flour and 1 lb. Rice p. Week.

N.B.—Spirits were issued till the 30th of May, as above, when Spirits exhausted.

Ration from July 19th till Augt. 4th.—Flour, 3 lbs. ; Rice, 1 lb. p'r Week. No more Meat being issued from the Store since that time, p'r order of the Council, till our Providential resource of Mount Pitt fail'd us ; and had the relief kept back three more Days, our ration of Flour was agreed to have been shortened one Short pound per Week, in lieu of which we were to have half a pint of ration. Callavances [*caravances*].

We had also collected all the Gunner's, Boatswain's, and Carpenter's Stores that could be got together, with all the spare Sails, Haulsers, and the small Bower Cable, the Galley compleat, &c., &c. ; and a survey was held upon them the 25th of April, when they were secured in the Store built for their reception. By stating the above rations altogether, I need not enter into the general Order of those Days, as the occasion and necessity of them are obvious. A store built.

No doubt you will wonder when I tell you that the same Tasks were performed on these very reduced Rations as when on full allowance ; but this was owing to a Divine and providential resource from and about Mount Pitt, which place supplied the whole Settlement with Birds from the latter end of March till the middle of August. The birds at Mount Pitt.

* An extract from a letter written by one of the non-commissioned officers of the *Sirius*, after the wreck of that vessel at Norfolk Island. The copyist, it will be noticed, has written "*Sinnis*" for "*Sirius*." At the head of the MS. the figures "1790," in Sir Joseph Banks' handwriting, appear ; the exact date of the letter is not given, but it was written some time in August. The sketches and plans mentioned in the letter are not among the Banks Papers.

† The *Sirius*, wrecked 19th March, 1790. Relief arrived, 8th August, 1790.

1790

Aug.

The Bird is a specie of the Petrel, which comes to this Island about the beginning of March, when they burrow under Ground for laying. They were at first taken out of their Holes in the Day, but soon after we found Night to be the Time for slaughter, as our whole Horizon (in the Woods) was then covered with them, and there was no walking without kicking them before you.

Birds and
eggs.

The Mould being soft and loose on the Mount, they found no difficulty in scratching their Way. Their holes are about 3 feet long, and on a gradual descent. About the middle of April there were vast numbers of Eggs taken, both from the Holes and Birds, which, if possible, were now thicker than ever. It would be impossible for me to give an account of either the Quantity of Birds or Eggs. I can only say that while the Birds laid them (which was from the middle of May to the beginning of June) there was no scarcity in any part of the Town, and were bartered at a very cheap rate. On the 19th of April the Birds became so very plentiful (and our Store so lean) the Governor issued out a conditional Order that if every person would give up half a pound of his salt Meat a Week they might kill and bring home as many Birds from the Mount as they pleased (as long as it did not interfere with their Work), being before this restricted by allowing only so many Persons to go out at a time, and that quantity issued out by the Store Keeper to every individual. This being agreed to, instantly took place, and the slaughter and nightly havoc is beyond Description. It is worthy of Remark that these Birds were coming in when our sad and melancholy Catastrophe happened, and were very scarce at the arrival of the relief. Nothing could have been better timed, and, though rather paradoxical, everything happened as favourably as could be: the Birds as above; the Ship being cast away in the only spot where there would be the least Chance of saving either our People or the Provisions, all our Men keeping health to the last, and our Crops in a most flourishing State at the relief's arrival. As I have enclosed a drawing of the Bird, I shall give no further description. We had, besides our Friends, the Pittites (the Vulgar Appellation), another very capital resource if the weather would have permitted fishing, which in this Season of the Year is so very unsettled that on an average we have had but 3 fine Days out of 15 fit for fishing. Therefore, our reliance on this very precarious resource was of little note when compared to the Birds, which were to be had in any number for going for. They are very fine eating, exceeding fat and firm, and, I think (though no Connoisseur), as good as any I ever eat.

Providence.

Fishing
precarious.

Gardening.

They are a kind of Snapper [schnapper], and as I am but a poor hand at description I have enclosed a small drawing, which is here much wanted and greatly esteemed. We had given up all hopes of a relief till about November, December, and January, and were all turned gardeners for our own support. We (Mr. Bryan, Mr. Short-

land, and myself), the only three non-commissioned Officers wrecked from the *Simis* [*Sirius*] that Capn. Hunter kept with the remainder of the Crew, the others being returned to Port Jackson in the *Supply* (as before observed), had a most excellent Garden (our Garden of abt $\frac{1}{4}$ of an acre), which, though we did not clear from the Trees, we fenced round, dug up, planted, set and sowed, with the assistance of only one of our Seamen. Besides, one of us had to attend the Duty of the Day in rotation; therefore you may judge we had but very little idle time. However, when the relief arrived, our Crops were flourishing, having a good prospect of digging upwards of 30 Bushels of Potatoes, picking vast quantities of french Beans, and cutting many fine heart Cabbages and Lettuces, &c., &c., and that very day the relief arrived we were going to clear a piece of Ground for Indian Corn. Our Seamen also had begun their Gardens. Our Birds becoming scarce, we were forced to commence Forages; and I assure you at the Relief we were not bad hands at either Birds or Cabbages (the Head of the Palm Tree), and returned from the Woods with our Loads on our Backs with all the *Sans Froid* imaginable. We have great right to remember with gratitude the kindness of our good Friend Major Ross (the Governor), who spared no pains to make us comfortable in our situation, and was ever ready to serve us. He, poor unfortunate Man, lost the most of his Things, and indeed all his Comforts and Papers, by our unfortunate Wreck, since which he has lost upwards of £90 in Articles sent from England in the *Guardian*, and he bears it with surprising magnanimity.

1790

Aug.

Flourishing
crops.

Major Ross.

My being on the Island so long, and having had an opportunity of perusing the Accounts published by Stockdale of this "Paradise of Nature, this Empire of the East," I cannot let slip this Opportunity of making a few Remarks, as the Opinions and Ideas of all Persons here are so very different from the Publication. This Island must be allowed by every impartial Person to be as rich in soil and vegetation as any part of the World. Nothing has been yet planted but what has thrived in a surprising degree. Melons and such other Fruit may be had all the Year round with very little Trouble. Corn of all kinds, and in short everything, grows in a most luxuriant Manner.

Richness of
the soil.

Its only spontaneous production, except a few Berrys is the Banana, which are few, but exceeding good. There are no Esculent Herbs or Flowers worthy of note. It is particularly well watered, having many good runs of sufficient strength to turn Mills, &c., and is of a very good quality. Yet it has its evils, three in number, vizt., Blights, Grubs, and Paroquets. The first is pernicious to a degree at this Season of the Year, comes generally with a S.E. and easterly wind, which droops all Plants before it, which are past recovery if the Winds are at any time in those directions. To convince my speaking from experience, I need look no further back

Produc-
tions.

Evils.

1790

Aug.

A destructive gale.

Ravages of grubs

and paroquets.

Live stock flourishing.

Magnificent pines.

Their size and number.

Unfit for masts.

than the day the relief arrived (Aug. 7th) off this Island, in the Evening of which there was a shift of wind to the S.E., which only lasted a few Hours, laid a great part of our Garden perfectly on the Ground, which it has not yet or ever will recover. Our Neighbors fared much worse, and most of their Plants have since perished. Secondly, the Grubs, whose unlimited Numbers and Mischief are beyond account, and have kept one of us (in our little Spot) continually employed both forenoons and afternoons clearing them away. They spare nothing but Sallads, which are rather too bitter for them, but young sweet plants stand not the least chance; therefore, if they're lucky enough to escape the Blight, they are devoured by these insatiable Insects before they come to the state of Maturity; and when arrived to that State the Paroquets make vast havoc, devouring the Seeds of all Grain, as well as most of the Garden Seeds, and small Spots would be entirely consumed were they not well watched. They fly in great Flocks, and are so tame that with common caution you may knock them down with a stick. Yet, in spite of these Evils (thus far) there is no cause of complaint but by Individuals, the public having such large Stocks that, unless they are considerable, they are not so very materially felt. This Island does not produce a single Blade of Grass, but the Cattle (Sheep and Goats) flourish greatly, and are always in good order upon no other Pasture than Browse.

The Pines are truly stately, and in appearance awfully magnificent. Some of them measure from 160 to 220 feet in Length, from 60 to 120 Feet clear from Branches, and from 20 to 40 Feet in Circumference. The other Trees on the Island, which anywhere else would be thought large, are in appearance only like underwood. They are by far in greater abundance near the Sea Coast than inland, where few are only found here; and then they're, in account of this Island, exalted to a degree confirming them fit for masting the whole British Navy. This I allow in Quantity, but for the Quality I shall here give the Opinion of the only Person in the Settlement that can be accounted a Judge.* He at once affirms them perfectly unfit for such purposes; that they are not in the least like the grain of the Norway Pine (as expressed in the Account); that in that respect its as short as Beech, but of very different Quality; that it snaps like a Carrot, and when cut with the finest two-edged Tools across the Grain it scratches and becomes ragged, instead of being smooth and clear; and in his Opinion it bears a nearer resemblance to the Cypress of America than any other wood, however Worked upon. He allows it to be very fit and very neat stuff for house Building. The turpentine (which is also mentioned) is contained between the Bark and the Wood, seems destitute of any (Bright)

* *Note in MS.*—The person's name alluded to is Levington, the master carpenter of this settlement, and a free man.

Quality, except when mixed with Tallow, which makes an indifferent Coat for Boat Bottoms, &c. The wood contains a sap of delicate white, but has not even the properties of bad Gum. As for the Flax, I can only say there is an abundance of it in all parts of the Sea Coast of this Island (but not inland), and is generally believed here will never be of that importance as supposed in England. The Woods are very thick, and interwoven throughout with a peculiar Vine, so much so in many places as to render it difficult of access. There is some little variety of Birds—a Parrot, Paroquet, Pidgeon, Dove, Hawk, and Owl, with many small Birds. The Parrot is very curious, the Paroquet common with no great share of Beauty, the Pidgeon beautiful, the Dove delicate, the Owl and Hawk quite common. Amongst the small Birds there is but one worthy of note, which is not unlike a Robin, having a rich vermillion Breast. The only Quadrupe is a Rat, and those rather diminutive. For the Position of this Bay, the Islands, &c., I refer you to the Chart, which, though very small, is traced with care and accuracy. I cannot say a single Word in favor of the Roads, being perfectly open, the Tide strong and irregular, the bottom foul throughout, and by no means fit for anchoring. The Winds which bring the Ships here are the same which occasion the high Surfs; therefore it rarely happens that you can have any Communication with them the two or three first Days.

1790

Aug.

Flax.

Birds.

Rats.

Bad anchorage.

The landing is dangerous to a degree at almost all times, and this is the only place where Provisions can be landed with Safety and Convenience. I cannot help taking notice of the ill-natured account of the unfortunate loss of Mr. Cunninghame in this Island. It is not only pointed, but stained with a Tinge of Acrimony, and the whole laid to his Misconduct and Imprudence. Whoever this account is written by, I am sure it is not from Mr. King (that is, if we are to judge from his own Professions), who speaks of him with the greatest respect and seeming regard. The Circumstance runs thus:—A Boat from the Supply coming in one Day when it was bad landing, he was ordered to lay out at the Back of the Reef and close under the Point, to be ready for assistance in case of an Accident; but the current, which constantly sets from the Eastward (and along the reef) drove him unavoidably from his Station, which in trying to regain he was met by some very heavy surfs that took his Boat on her broadside, and sent them with surprising precipitation on the Western Reef, which swamp'd and upset the Boat, and by the numberless holes and Gullies which are irregularly interspersed along the Reefs, with the continuance of some very heavy Surfs and strong undertow, he with three of the Boat's Crew were unfortunately drowned. (The other one Man was saved by luckily hitting the Passage and being a good Swimmer.) And to add to this melancholly accident,

Fatal accident.

A boat swamped.

Three men drowned.

1790

Aug.

Another
accident.

Loss of life.

Disasters.

there were some of his Friends and Shipmates had come on Shore that day to see him [Mr. Cunninghame], who had the mortification to see him drowned within thirty yards of them, without being able to render themselves of the least Assistance. (For further explanation concerning the Reef, *vide* Chart No. 3.) A similar accident unavoidably happened on the 17th of this Month [August], when the landing was not altogether bad; but the Current being so strong and the surfs following closely after the Boat (being our large Cutter saved from the Wreck, 24-feet Keel, which is too long for this place), before she could be swept round for the Eastern Channel was taken up by some very heavy Surfs, and dashed violently on the Rocks of the middle Reef. She had fourteen Persons in her, including her Crew, with four Casks of Salt Provisions, out of which one Man, three Women (Convicts), two Children, with two of our Seamen (the Boat's Crew), were unfortunately drowned and driven out to sea. Some of those that were picked up were perfectly drowned, and many of the People who went off to their assistance were themselves picked up in the same situation, but were all fortunately recovered. Amongst them was one of our Seamen, who at one time had two Women and a Man clinging round him, but their being drowned was a means of saving his own Life. Thus you see the dire Effects of this Heavenly Settlement that must for these many Years be victualled and supplied from Port Jackson. Fourteen People have been drowned already! one Ship and three Boats perfectly lost! and two Ships now in the Roads not half delivered. I fear I dread the Consequences! But this Evil must be borne with patience.

LIEUT.-GOVERNOR ROSS TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE.

29 Aug.

Head-quarters, Sydney Bay, Norfolk Island,
Right Honourable Sir, 29 August, 1790.

Returns.

I cannot suffer the *Justinian* and *Surprize*, which arrived here on the eight inst., with provisions and some convicts, to pass the island without doing myself the honour of enclosing a return of the detachment of marines, together with a state of the settlement* on this island, on the seventh instant, as well as what it is at the present day.

A miracle.

I should have had greater satisfaction in being at liberty to have stated many particulars which respect this island particularly, but by my instructions from the Governor I find myself tied down to make every report of that kind to his Excellency, in order to be by him laid before his Majesty's ministers; however, I think I may venture to say that if Providence had not worked a miracle in our favour there would have been but few of us found alive when those ships arrived to our relief. And further, I think I may venture to assure you, and the rest of his Majesty's

* These returns do not appear to have been preserved.

ministers, that with respect to clearing and cultivating land on this island, I have established such a plan which, if pursued, will render it unnecessary ever to send any flour here. On the contrary, in one year from the first of next January, the island will be able to spare grain for exportation, provided there is not more than seven hundred people kept upon the island.

1790

29 Aug.

Cultivation.

On the eight inst. a man arrived here from Port Jackson for the purpose of managing and dressing the flax-plant; he has begun to clear ground and prepare the plant for the purpose of dressing. I am likewise, by the Governor's directions, cutting down some of the pine-tree spars, in order to be put on board the Gorgon, in order to their being brought to Europe for the purpose of experiments. And as I understand that we are to be embarked for a passage to England on board the Gorgon, I shall wait until I have the honour of explaining many matters which very much concern the territory at large, and this island in particular, all which matters, together with the whole of my conduct since my appointment as Lieutenant-Governor, I trust will be honoured with the approval of his Majesty's ministers. And until that happy and much-to-be-wished period arrives, I have to request that whatever (perhaps false) representations with respect to my conduct may have appear'd before the ministers, that you and them may do me the justice and the honour to suspend passing any judgment upon it until it is investigated.

Flax and timber.

Personal explanation.

Detraction.

R. Ross.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO LORD CORNWALLIS.*

My Lord,

Whitehall, 6th Sept., 1790.

6 Sept.

The expence with which the conveyance of provisions and live stock from this country and the Cape of Good Hope to the settlement in New South Wales has been attended has led his Majesty's ministers to consider of some plan for obtaining supplies from a situation more contiguous and upon more moderate terms.

On consulting several gentlemen who have resided in India on this subject, I have been given to understand that flour, rice, pulse, ghee, live stock, spirits, &c., are constantly to be had at Calcutta in the greatest abundance, and at prices far below the amount which those articles, or others of a similar nature, supplied to New South Wales from hence, have cost to Government. In consequence of this information it has been determined that one of the transports now ordered to be taken up for the purpose of conveying convicts to New South Wales, shall, after landing them, be dispatched from thence by Governor Phillip, who will be directed to apprise your Lordship, or the commander-in-chief of his Majesty's forces in India for the time-being, by her, of the situation of the settlement, and of the particular supplies which may be most wanted there.

Supplies from India.

* Governor of Bengal, and Governor-General of India.

1790

6 Sept.

Prices.

I enclose a calculation* which has been made of the prices at which the several articles therein mentioned can be supplied from hence or from the Cape, from which a judgment may be formed of the articles which can most advantageously be furnished from Bengal, and the transport is, as soon as possible, to be re-dispatched to New South Wales with an assortment of such articles only as can be supplied on better terms from Bengal than from England, unless Governor Phillip should state that the settlement under his command is in immediate and pressing want of any other articles. Your Lordship will direct the person whom you shall entrust with the detail of this business to procure such articles on the most moderate terms, and as soon as you shall have re-dispatched the transport you will draw upon the Lords of the Treasury for the amount of the purchases you shall have made, sending at the same time a particular account of the expence of each separate article, in order that a judgment may be formed of the cheaper mode of supply in future.

Information
asked for.

It will probably be more than twelve months from this date before the transport can reach Bengal. In the meantime, I shall hope to have the honour of hearing from your Lordship, or the commander-in-chief for the time-being, on this subject, and of being furnished with a particular statement of the several articles which in your opinion can be obtained in Bengal, or in any other part of India, for the supply of the settlement upon more advantageous terms than they can be provided from hence or from the Cape.

I have, &c.†

MAJOR GROSE TO SIR GEORGE YONGE.

28 Sept.

Sir,

Portsmouth, September the 28th, 1790.

An offending
officer.Court-
martial.

I am compelled much against my wish to request a general court-martial for the purpose of trying an officer of the New South Wales Corps, whose crime I herewith enclose to you. The repeated neglects and misconduct of this gentleman I have long suffered, hoping by advice I should bring about that reformation which many would have sought by more severe methods. I at length have been obliged to put him in arrest. From this arrest I should have readily released him had he seen fit to acknowledge his errors, but, as if to aggravate his former unmilitary behaviour, he rather chooses to be exposed to the consequences of a court-martial than to apologize or make the slightest concession whatever. To avoid the trouble, as well as disgrace, this unthinking man will bring on the corps, I could wish the matter had been otherwise settled; but as that is not likely, I hope I shall not be considered as acting with severity when I say that it is absolutely

* Not recorded.

† This despatch is not signed; it is apparently from the Right Hon. W. W. Grenville.

requisite that the gentleman of whom I write should for the good of this service, and this corps in particular, be brought to a proper sense of his duty. 1790
23 Sept.

I am, &c.,

FRAN'S GROSE.

UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS TO MAJOR GROSE.

Sir,

W.O., 29th Sept., 1790.

29 Sept.

I am directed to acke. the receipt of your letter of the 28th instant, and to acqt. you that before H. M.'s P. is taken relative to the general court-martial therein desired to be held for the trial of Ensign and Quarter-master Duberly, of the N. So. Wales Corps, under your command, it will be necessary for you to specify the days on which the several offences are alledged to have been committed.

Court-martial.

I have, &c.,

M. LEWIS.

MAJOR GROSE TO UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS.

Sir,

Forton Barracks, September 30, 1790.

30 Sept.

I am honor'd with your letter of the 29th instant. In answer, have to communicate that as much concession has been made by Ensign and Qu'r-m'r Duberly since my application to the Sec'y at War for a court-martial, I could wish, if such desire can now be complied with, again to try him. I am the more anxious to avoid (if possible) his being brought to a court-martial from an idea that, exclusive of this young man's destruction, it will be rather an unpleasant and disgraceful thing to the corps. Mr. Duberly still continues in confinement until such time as I am favour'd with your reply.

The case not pressed.

I have, &c.,

FRAN'S GROSE, N.S. Wales Corps.

UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS TO MAJOR GROSE.

Sir,

W.O., 1st October, 1790.

1 Oct.

Having laid before the S. at War your letter to me of yesterday's date, I am directed to acqt. you that Sir George Yonge consents to your request of withdrawing your late application for a general court-martial on Ensn. and Quart.-master Duberly. Trusting that the lenity shewn to him on the present occasion will have a proper influence on his future conduct,

Court-martial withdrawn.

I have, &c.,

M. LEWIS.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO LIEUTENANT RIOU.

Sir,

9th October, 1790.

9 Oct.

On the 24th of April last I received by Mr. Clements, master of his Majesty's ship Guardian, then under your command, your letter of the 25th of December preceding, giving an account of the very perilous situation that ship was then in owing to her having

Accident to the Guardian.

1790

9 Oct.

struck on an island of ice, in the latitude 44° south, longitude 40° east, and of the hourly expectation you then had of her total loss in consequence.

Arrival at
Table Bay.

On the 28th of the same month of April I had the unspeakable satisfaction of receiving an account of your unexpected arrival with her and the remainder of her crew at Table Bay.

And since that time I have received your several letters, whose dates are mentioned on the other side hereof,* giving an account of your proceedings in order to save the ship (though not attended with the success due to your exertions) and the remains of her cargo.

Riou's skill.

And having communicated the same as they respectively came to hand to my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'y, I have their Lordships' commands to acquaint you that their concern on the receipt of the melancholy contents of the first-mention'd letter cou'd only be exceeded by the satisfaction they receiv'd from the account of your miraculous escape, which they attribute to your skilful and judicious exertions under the favour of Divine Providence. And I am further to acquaint you that their Lordships entirely approve of your having sent on to the settlement at New South Wales, by the transports which touch'd at the Cape on their way thither, such of the convicts and superintendants of convicts as had surviv'd, and of all your other proceedings so far as the same have come to their knowledge.

Approval of
his proceed-
ings.

Their Lordships also approve of your having detained the master-carpenter and other persons whom you mentioned, late belonging to the Bounty, for the reasons you have given; and they have communicated to Mr. Secretary Grenville, for his Majesty's information, your recommendation of the surviving convicts whose conduct, as it has so deservedly met with your approbation, will, there is every reason to hope, entitle them to his Majesty's clemency.

The surviv-
ing convicts.

The Sphinx.

His Majesty's ship Sphinx, by which you will receive this, is sent out to bring to England yourself and those you have detain'd with you at the Cape, together with any of the stores, provisions, or other articles not fit to be sent to New South Wales, as she can conveniently carry, and you shall judge may be more beneficially disposed of that way than they can on the spot. It is, therefore, their Lordships' directions that you leave by inventory, in the charge of the merchants at the Cape whom Governor Phillip recommended, or of such other persons there as you shall have reason to think more proper, all such provisions, stores, and other articles intended for the above-mentioned settlement as may appear to be serviceable and fit to be sent thither, until they shall be call'd for by his Maj's ship Gorgon and other vessels now on the point of sailing for the said settlement, and after disposing of such others as may not be fit to be brought home (as also of the hull of the Guardian) for the best price you can possibly obtain for them,

Instruc-
tions.

* See Riou's letters to Stephens, pp. 317, 318, 336.

put the remainder on board the Sphynx, and embarking in her with such of the Guardian's crew as shall be remaining with you at the time, proceed in her to England, repairing on your arrival to this office, to give their Lordships an account of your further proceedings, and of such other occurrences as may have happen'd.

I am, &c.,

P. S.

MR. SAMUEL ENDERBY, JUN.,* TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

1790
9 Oct.

Dear Sir,

Paul's Wharf, October 13th, 1790.

13 Oct.

Since I had the pleasure of seeing you, a Mr. St. Barbe, who is concerned in the south whale fishery, has apply'd to me about carrying the convicts to Botany Bay. He thinks it may answer to take them all in a joint account with us, and afterwards to prosecute our fishery in those seas; but wishes to have an opportunity of asking you a few questions on the subject. For this purpose I now address you to request you will favour us with a few minutes' conversation on Friday morning next, before 10 o'clock, or as soon after as you can make it convenient. An answer will much oblige.†

Whalers as
convict-
ships.

Yours, &c.,

SAML. ENDERBY, Junr.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO LIEUTENANT BLIGH.

Sir,

15th Oct'r, 1790.

15 Oct.

My Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'y having order'd the Hon'ble Admiral Barrington to assemble a court-martial as soon as possible at Portsmo' to inquire into the cause and circumstances of the seizure of his Majesty's armed vessel the Bounty, under your command, on the 28th of April, 1789, by Fletcher Christian, master of the said vessel, and officer of the watch, assisted by several of the inferior officers and men belonging to her, as represented to their Ld'ps in your letters to me of the 18th Aug't and 16th of Dec'r following, and to try you and the said officers and seamen for your conduct on that occasion; and also to try William Purcell, carpenter of the said vessel (who is now in confinement on board his Maj.'s ship Roy'l William), for the offences with which he is charged in your letter to me of the 7th inst.; and it being necessary that you and such of the officers and seamen mention'd in your letter to me of the 2nd inst., to be now arriv'd in England, should be present at the said court-martial, I am commanded by their Ld'ps to acquaint you therewith, and to signify their direction to you to repair without loss of time to Portsmo', and to order the petty officers and foremastmen mention'd in your aforesaid letter of the 2nd inst. to repair hither also as soon as possible, to be present at the said court; and their Ld'ps

The Bounty.

Court-
martial on
the Bounty
mutiny.

To be held
at Ports-
mouth.

* A member of the firm of Samuel Enderby and Sons, London.

† No further correspondence on this subject has been discovered.

1790 having given directions for the foremastmen to be paid by the
 15 Oct. Clerk of the Checque of his Maj.'s yard at Deptford, the usual conduct money to enable them to travel to the above place ; and it is their Ld's' further directions that you forward the enclos'd letters to the master, boatswain, and gunner, as they contain directions to them to repair thither also for the same purpose.

I am, &c.,
 P.S.

LIEUTENANT RIOU TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

19 Oct. Sir, Cape of Good Hope, 19 Oct., 1790.

Be pleased to communicate to the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that everything respecting his Majesty's ship Guardian remains in the same state as when I last had the honour to write to you.

Ships for Port Jackson. Sir Chas. Oakeley, who stopped here on the 25th of August, gave me the greatest hopes of shortly seeing ships arrive in this bay destined for Port Jackson, which I hope will soon take place, as the expence continually incurring for warehouse hire is great, and more especially as I fear that a great part of the stores and provisions contained will not be worth sending to that colony.

Since I had the honor to write to you on the 11th of July, I have paid to the Treasury of this Government the sum of two thousand two hundred and eighty-four florins for the services of the Dutch East India Company's officers and seamen on board the Guardian.

I have, &c.,
 E. Riou.

CAPTAIN BLANKETT TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

29 Oct. Sir, Leopard, Cape of Good Hope,
 29 October, 1790.

Leopard and Thames. I beg to inform their Lordships of my arrival here with his Majesty's ships Leopard and Thames after a disagreeable rough passage of seventy-nine days. Both ships are very leaky in their upper works, the Thames more particularly so. I shall lose no time to refit the ships and sail as soon as possible in obedience to their Lordships' orders.

Guardian. I found Lieutenant Riou still here, who has by his constant perseverance and attention saved a large part of the provisions and stores of his Majesty's ship Guardian, but unfortunately there is no opportunity at present, nor any likely to offer at this season, of hiring a vessel to carry such provision to Port Jackson, where I apprehend it would be most serviceable, nor is it to be expected that on the arrival of the Gorgon she will be able to receive more provision than she has expended on her passage; and as those provisions have been and still are a great expence to Government I thought it best to compleat the stores and provisions of the two ships from such of the remains as they could

Her stores used.

conveniently store, rather than to make purchases of new here, where everything is raised to an extravagant price. I have therefore given an order to Lieutenant Riou to supply the two ships with such stores and provisions as they could receive, giving him the receipts of the proper officers as his vouchers. 1790
29 Oct.

As this letter comes by a French frigate, I forbear to enter into any particulars.

I have, &c.,

J. BLANKETT.

CAPTAIN BLANKETT TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

Cape of Good Hope,

Dear Nepean,

29 October, 1790.

After a hot, rough, disagreeable passage of seventy-nine days, allowing for my stop at Guernsey and Madeira, I am arrived here in perfect health, not having a single man sick in either of the two ships. I found Lieut. Riou here, whose spirits seem to have suffered from what he has undergone and the irksome situation in which he finds himself, being in suspense and not knowing what to do with the stores and provisions his constant perseverance has saved from the general wreck. It cannot be supposed that the Gorgon will be able to take more provisions or stores than were expended on her voyage, and as there is no possibility of finding a conveyance here for Port Jackson he is much distressed at the expence to which he has already put Government. I have therefore ordered the two ships to complete as much as they can stow from his remains, a practice not very usual at the Cape, but which I conclude it was my duty to do. I have advised Mr. Riou to allow a certain time for the arrival of the Gorgon, and of course to follow any orders he may receive by her, but that failing, to sell all the perishable stores for the payment of his warehouses and other incidental expences, which, with removals, packages, sorting, washing, drying, &c., have already made his bad commodities double, treble, the price of what might have been sent out from England. Riou's sufferings.

Riou awaits instructions.

I think he should put Government to no farther charge, as the stores, &c., become hardly worth saving, and certainly not worth the expense that attends them here, through the various impositions and frauds that are practised. The increasing jealousy of this Government of their colonists has served to stop the usual communication by ships, and the taxes and other fines levied for the maintenance of the military and the carrying on the new works has caused everything to become very dear and the people very dissatisfied, but having increased the military force, things cannot yet come to any overt declaration of their sentiments. Difficulties at the Cape.

I should not have scrupled to have interfered had I seen any mode of conveying these stores to Port Jackson, nor even in the advising the whole to be sold, but for the fear of embarrassing

* A private letter.

1790

29 Oct.

Monopoly.

Mr. Riou; for here there is nothing but paper currency, nor could he get a bill worth accepting, and you may add to this that Government, disposition, and practice all concur to form a most perfect monopoly, so that they are as much masters of the price when they buy as when they sell.

King.

Lieut. King, who will be with you before this, will have informed you fully of the situation of your colony, and as this comes by a French frigate I forbear to speak of that or myself.

War reports.

The accounts here are positive that we have entered into the war with Tippoo, that General Merdon had marched from Madrass, and that Genl. Abercrombie had embarked from Bombay. I could not authenticate the report sufficiently satisfactorily to myself, from the accounts I received from the Governor here, to mention it in a public letter, so that I give it you as a report only.

Make my most affectionate compliments acceptable to Mrs. Nepean, and let me repeat my sincerest wishes for all possible health and happiness to attend you.

Yours, &c.,

J. BLANKETT.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

13 Nov.

Sir,

Whitehall, 13th Novr., 1790.

Power to
pardon.

I transmit you herewith by the King's command a commission which has been passed under the Great Seal, pursuant to an Act passed in the last session of Parliament, a printed copy of which is enclosed, authorising and empowering you, or in case of your death or absence, the Lieutenant-Governor for the time-being of the territory of New South Wales and the islands adjacent, to remit, either absolutely or conditionally, the whole or any part of the time or term for which any felons or other offenders shall have been, or may hereafter be, conveyed and transported to the said territory.

I am, &c.,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

[Enclosure.]

LETTERS PATENT EMPOWERING GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO REMIT SENTENCES.

8 Nov.

[8 November, 1790.]

GEORGE THE THIRD by the Grace of God of Great Britain France and Ireland King Defender of the Faith and so forth. To our trusty and well-beloved Arthur Phillip Esquire our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief in and over our territory called New South Wales and to our Lieutenant-Governor of our said territory for the time being, greeting :

Orders in
Council.

Whereas several orders have been made by us by and with the advice of our Privy Council in pursuance of authority given to us in that behalf by an Act of Parliament passed in the twenty-fourth year of our reign intituled An Act for the effectual transportation

of felons and other offenders and to authorise the removal of prisoners in certain cases and for other purposes therein mentioned declaring and appointing by and with the advice aforesaid that the eastern coast of New South Wales and the islands thereunto adjacent should be the place or places beyond sea to which certain felons and other offenders should be conveyed and transported :

1790

8 Nov.

And whereas several felons and other offenders have in pursuance of the said Act been conveyed and transported to the eastern coast of New South Wales or the islands thereunto adjacent there to remain during the terms or times for which they were respectively sentenced to be transported by Courts in which they were severally convicted :

Felons
transported
accordingly.

And whereas We by and with the advice of our Privy Council may hereafter declare and appoint the place or places aforesaid to be the place or places to which other felons and offenders shall hereafter be conveyed and transported and such felons and offenders may be so transported accordingly :

And whereas by an Act passed in the last session of Parliament intituled An Act to enable his Majesty to authorise his Governor or Lieutenant-Governor of such places beyond the seas to which felons or other offenders may be transported to remit the sentences of such offenders. It is enacted that it shall and may be lawful for us our heirs and successors at all times by our or their Commission under the Great Seal of Great Britain to authorise and empower the Governor or the Lieutenant-Governor for the time being of that part or parts to which felons and other offenders had been or should hereafter be transported and conveyed by an instrument in writing under the seal of the Government in which the place or places aforesaid should be situated to remit either absolutely or conditionally the whole or any part of the time or term for which any such felons or other offenders aforesaid had been or should hereafter be respectively conveyed and transported to such place or places as aforesaid such instrument or instruments as aforesaid having the like force and effect to all intents and purposes as if We our heirs and successors had in such cases respectively signified our or their royal intention of mercy under our or their sign manual:

Act of
Parliament
authorising
remission of
sentences.

Governor
empowered
to remit.

And it is further enacted that such Governor or Lieutenant-Governor as aforesaid shall by the first opportunity transmit to one of our Principal Secretaries of State a duplicate under the seal of the Government of [so in original] oath and every instrument as aforesaid by which the time or term of transportation of any such felons or other offenders as aforesaid hath been remitted or shortened and that the names of such felons or other offenders respectively which shall be contained in such duplicates as aforesaid shall be inserted in the next general pardon which shall pass under the Great Seal of Great Britain after the receipt of such duplicate or duplicates by one of our Principal Secretaries of State :

Governor to
transmit
duplicate of
the
instrument
remitting
sentence.

1790

S Nov.

Expedient to
remit
sentences.

And whereas it would greatly advance the design of such sentences so carried into execution as aforesaid or which may hereafter be passed and carried into execution by transporting felons and other offenders to the eastern coast of New South Wales or the islands thereunto adjacent that the Governor or (in case of his death or absence) the Lieutenant-Governor for the time being of our territory of the eastern coast of New South Wales and the islands thereunto adjacent should have power and authority to remit or shorten the time or term for which such felons and offenders as aforesaid have been or shall hereafter be transported in cases where it shall appear that such felons or other offenders are proper objects of the royal mercy :

Power to
remit the
whole or
part of
sentence.

Now know you that We being desirous to carry into effect the purposes of the said Act have thought fit to give and grant and do by these presents give and grant full power and authority to you Arthur Phillip our said Governor or to our Governor for the time being or (in case of your death or absence or that of our Governor for the time being) to our Lieutenant-Governor of our said territory of New South Wales and the islands adjacent for the time being by an instrument or instruments in writing under the seal of the Government of our said territory and as you or they respectively shall think fit or convenient for our service to remit either absolutely or conditionally the whole or any part of the time or term for which any such felons or other offenders aforesaid shall have been or shall hereafter be respectively conveyed and transported to the eastern coast of New South Wales or the islands thereunto adjacent.

Effect of
remission.

And our will and pleasure is that all and every such instrument or instruments by you to be granted pursuant to the power and authority to you given by these presents shall have the like force and effect to all intents and purposes as if Wee our heirs and successors had in such cases respectively signified our or their Royal intention of mercy under our or their Sign Manual :

Duplicate to
be trans-
mitted.

And our further will and pleasure is that you the said Arthur Phillip or our Governor or Lieutenant-Governor for the time being respectively shall by the first opportunity transmit to one of the Principal Secretaries of State of us our heirs and successors a duplicate under the seal of the Government aforesaid of each and every instrument as aforesaid by which the time or term of transportation of any such felons or other offenders as aforesaid hath been remitted or shortened to the end that the names of such felons and other offenders respectively which shall be contained in such duplicates as aforesaid may be inserted in the next general pardon which shall pass under the Great Seal of Great Britain after the receipt of such duplicate or duplicates by one of the Principal Secretaries of State aforesaid.

Authority
to act.

And these our Letters Patent or the enrollment or exemplification thereof shall be as well unto the said Arthur Phillip or our

Governor or Lieutenant-Governor for the time being respectively as unto all and every other person or persons whomsoever a sufficient warrant and discharge from time to time for all and whatever they shall do and execute in pursuance of our royal will and pleasure. 1790
8 Nov.

And lastly our will and pleasure is and Wee do hereby declare that this our Commission shall be and remain in force only and until Wee shall be pleased to revoke and determine the same. Commission
to remain in
force until
revoked.

In witness whereof Wee have caused these our letters to be made patent.

Witness ourselves at Westminster the eighth day of November
in the thirty-first year of our reign.

By Writ of Privy Seal.

YORKE.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir, Whitehall, 15th Novr., 1790. 15 Nov.

Enclosed I transmit you, by the King's command, an additional instruction, under his Majesty's signet and sign manual, for your guidance in the remission of the sentences passed on felons or other offenders, which shall appear to you to be proper objects of the Royal mercy. Remission of
sentences.

I am, &c.,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

[Enclosure.]

GOVERNOR'S POWER TO REMIT SENTENCES.

George R.

Additional instructions to our trusty and well-beloved Arthur Phillip, Esq., our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief in and over our territory called New South Wales. Given at our Court at St. James's, the fifteenth day of November, 1790, in the thirty-first year of our reign.

WHEREAS we have issued a commission under our Great Seal of Great Britain, in pursuance of an Act passed in the last session of Parliament, intituled "An Act enabling his Majesty to authorize the Governor or Lieutenant-Governor of such places beyond the seas to which felons or other offenders may be transported to remit the sentences of such offenders," authorizing and empowering you our Governor or Lieutenant-Governor for the time being of the eastern coast of New South Wales and the islands thereunto adjacent, by an instrument in writing, under the seal of your Government to remit either, absolutely or conditionally, the whole or any part of the time or terms for which any felons or other offenders shall have been or may hereafter be carried and transported to the said place or places within your Government, in cases where it shall appear that such felons or other offenders are proper objects of our mercy. It is our royal will and pleasure that you do carry the said commission into immediate execution, and that you do by the first opportunity transmit to one of our Principal Secretaries of State a duplicate, Commissioner.
To be
carried into
execution.

1790

15 Nov.

Offenders
not to return
until ex-
piration of
sentence.

under the seal of your Government, of each and every instrument by which the time or term of transportation of any such felons or other offenders, as aforesaid, hath been remitted or shortened, according to the directions and for the purposes mentioned in the said Act : and that it is our further will and pleasure, and we do hereby strictly enjoin you, that in all cases of such conditional remission of the time or term of transportation (unless where such conditional remission shall be granted to any person who shall have made discovery to you our Governor or Lieutenant-Governor for the time being, or to any person authorized by you or him, for receiving such discovery of any attempt or conspiracy, with a view of endangering the safety or disturbing the peace of your Government), you do insert in the instrument a special condition that such felon or offender shall not return within any part of our kingdom of Great Britain or Ireland during the term or time which shall thus remain unexpired of his or her original sentence or order of transportation on pain that the remission, so to him or her granted, shall in such cases be wholly null and void.

G.R.

THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

16 Nov.

Sir,

Whitehall, 16th Novem'r, 1790.

N.S. Wales
Corps.

In my letter to you, No. 6, which was forwarded to you by the Neptune, transport, I gave you reason to suppose that his Majesty's ship the Gorgon with the remainder of the New South Wales Corps would then shortly be dispatched, but from a variety of causes her departure has hitherto been delayed. She will now, however, I hope, proceed to sea in the course of a few days with Major Grose and a detachment of the said corps on board.

The Second
Fleet.

By letters which have lately been received from the Cape of Good Hope, I observe that the Lady Juliana, transport, with female convicts and some provisions and other supplies on board, left that place in the latter end of March, and that the Neptune, with the Scarborough and Surprize, transports, sailed from thence for Port Jackson. Those ships will convey information to you of the unfortunate fate of the Guardian, and by them and the Gorgon you will receive such parts of the stores and provisions taken out of the Guardian at the Cape as are supposed to be serviceable. Lieutenant Riou has, I find, sent on by the Neptune the five superintendents and the twenty-one of the convicts mentioned on board the Guardian on her arrival at the Cape, and I hope they will have joined you by this time.

Loss of the
Guardian.

Convicts
pardoned.

The orderly behaviour of those convicts before the Guardian was disabled, and their good conduct after the accident happened to her, which Lieutenant Riou has strongly represented in his letters,* has induced his Majesty to consent that they shall be pardoned on condition of their continuing abroad, in such parts or

* Ante, p. 339.

places as may hereafter be directed by you, for the terms specified in their several sentences of transportation ; and I am to signify to you his Majesty's pleasure that you are, under the authority given to you, to issue your warrant accordingly, omitting, however, in such pardon, the names of any of the said convicts as may from a subsequent misconduct have forfeited this mark of his Majesty's favour. As all the above-mentioned convicts have either been accustomed to agriculture, or have been brought up to some trade or profession, it is likely that they will be able to employ their time with advantage to themselves ; and the better to enable them so to do, it is his Majesty's pleasure that those whose services are remitted shall be supplied from his Majesty's stores with such tools and implements as are suitable to their several professions, together with such proportions of provisions as you may deem necessary for persons in their situation.

The vessels now ordered to be taken up will be sufficient for the accommodation of at least 1,800 convicts, and will, I expect, be ready to sail with that number, and the remainder of the New South Wales Corps on board, in the course of the next month. They will have on board a suitable quantity of provisions, clothing, &c., for the use of the convicts after their landing, and also an assortment of stores equal to those intended to be conveyed to you by the Guardian, which have either been damaged or destroyed. The quantity and quality of each article is specified in the inclosed list.*

1790
16 Nov.

1,800
convicts
to be sent.

I have already explained to you in my former letter his Majesty's intention with respect to the disposal of the marine corps on the arrival of Major Grose, to which it is only necessary for me to add that Lieutenant Dawes being represented to be an officer who may be usefully employed in the settlement in the capacity of engineer, it is his Majesty's pleasure, in case you should not have nominated him to the proposed company to be formed out of the marines and to be annexed to the New South Wales Corps, that he should be permitted to continue in the settlement, if he should be inclined so to do, and for his services in that capacity it is intended that he shall be placed on the same footing in point of emolument as officers of the corps of engineers of a similar rank.

The
marines.

The Lords of the Treasury have been pleased to appoint Mr. Chas. Grimes, who takes his passage in the Gorgon, to be Deputy-Surveyor of Roads, to be employed on Norfolk Island, or in any other part of your government where you may conceive his services to be most useful ; and in consequence of your recommendation of Mr. Zach. Clarke, he has been appointed Deputy-Commissary of Stores and Provisions. Each of these officers will be placed on the civil establishment, with salaries of five shillings per diem.

Appoint-
ments.

I am, &c.,

W. W. GRENVILLE.

1790

MAJOR GROSE TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

17 Nov.

Sir, Salopian Coffee House, Nov. the 17th, 1790.

Officers' accommo-
dation.

I am to request you will be pleased to represent to the Admiralty that the accommodations allotted to myself and the officers under my command on board his Majesty's ship Gorgon are not such as we consider ourselves entitled to. It is with much reluctance I complain, but as every comfortable situation in the ship seems to be occupied by the naval officers, who profess a positive resolution of messing by themselves, I hope your interference will cause the matter to be so regulated that if we are to live by ourselves an eligible place for our mess may be allotted. I have myself a wife and family, whose comforts may probably cause me to be more anxious than I otherwise should be. If, however, we cannot be better accommodated I shall endeavour to make myself satisfied, although I believe I may say that I am the first officer of my rank who sailed with so few comforts, or who was ever turned into the gun-room of a ship employed for the purpose of transporting troops. Relying that every justice will be done to us, I am, &c.,

FRAS. GROSE,

Major Com't N.S.W. Corps.

An "eligible
place" desired.Turned into
the gun-
room.

Dec.

REMARKS AND OBSERVATIONS ON NORFOLK ISLAND BY MAJOR ROSS.*

The soil.

I AM of opinion that the soil of this island is apparently very good, and I think very fit for the cultivation of grain of any kind; but it is very much infested with caterpillars and other insects, which are very destructive, and every method hitherto used to destroy them has been found ineffectual. I therefore am clearly of opinion that in order to expect corn of every sort to thrive here it will be absolutely necessary that the time for sowing barley and oats should be from the first of April to the middle of May, and that wheat may be sown from the first of May to the end of July, but not later, and that Indian corn (maize) may be planted from the beginning of July to the middle of November, and pease and beans you may continue planting from the month of April to the beginning of October. French beans and carravances† will answer any time from July to February for the purpose of drying for exportation, and for the use of the table you may plant them any time in the year, as well as all other kinds of vegetables for the kitchen.

Sowing of
grain.

Vegetables.

* Written about December, 1790.

† In some of the despatches this word is spelt "caravanseras", in others "callivances". Chambers's Encyclopædia, edition 1888, contains the following:—"Caravances—the common chick-pea, a genus of the vetch tribe of leguminosæ, grown largely in the South American States, and extensively cultivated in Southern Europe." Mr. Charles Moore, F.L.S., Director of the Sydney Botanic Gardens, gives the following information concerning this plant:—"The chick-pea, *cicer arietinum*, is the 'cece' of the Italians, the 'garbarzos' of the Spaniards, and the 'gram' of India. This plant is extensively cultivated in India, where its seeds are used as an article of food, and likewise in the South of Europe. It has from time to time been cultivated in this colony, but has not proved a profitable crop, and I do not think it is now grown here."

My reason for mentioning the time for sowing is that Mr. King was of opinion that all sorts of grain should be sown early, and I have prov'd the justness of this remark by causing some barley, oats, and wheat (of my own) which I brought from Port Jackson with me, and which got wet with salt water in getting it on shore from the wreck of the *Sirius*, to be the first sown, and it throve remarkably well and escaped the blight, the grub, and caterpillar, and produced well, having from two bushels of barley sown on one acre and a quarter saved forty-nine bushels of clean good corn, and from two bushels of oats sown on one acre and a quarter saved only five bushels of very bad oats, and from three bushels of wheat sown upon two acres of land I have got thirty-six bushels of good clean wheat. And here I beg leave to remark that the above is the only land that escaped the blight, grub, and caterpillar, notwithstanding the barley and some part of the wheat was sown on land which had been fresh burnt, nor was any of it cut down when young, as had been practised in Mr. King's time, and altho' the same mode was strongly recommended to me, yet as they did not assign any reason for the practice (except that they had always done it) I did not practice it, and I found it answers very well without cutting.

1790

Dec.

Early sowing.

Good results.

Insect pests avoided.

I am likewise clearly of opinion that it will be of the utmost advantage to this settlement that whenever any land is cleared, and the timber, &c., burn'd on it, that before it is sown with corn of any sort—except maize—that it should be sown with turnips or planted with potatoes or carravances, which are articles that may be given, in a stated proportion, to the convicts in lieu of one-half of their present ration of flour. And as potatoes will not keep good in this country for more than three months there will be a great quantity to spare for the stock.

First crops.

I also affirm that the land on this island will, without the smallest hazard of losing a seed season, produce two crops in the year. That is, after the grain is housed, you may plant carravances and potatoes upon the land that the corn came off from, and long before that land will again be wanted for grain the potatoes will be out of the ground and the carravances ripe and housed.

Two crops a year.

At the time I took upon myself the charge and command of this island I found it necessary, in consequence of the loss of his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, to put every person on this island upon half-allowance until we could get such relief as we might have reasonably expected; but finding ourselves disappointed in the hope, and having received from Captn. Hunter all the provisions and stores which I was to expect him to deliver into the charge of the Commissary for the use of the settlement, including the officers and company of the *Sirius*, and being told by Mr. King that thirty acres of land were all that was clear on the island, I

Half-allowance.

1790

Dec.

Clearing
land.

therefore determin'd, as soon as the convicts could be spared from their attention to the saving of the stores, &c., from the wreck, to employ the greatest force I could muster in clearing land, and in providing every possible means of subsistence for ourselves until such time as the next corn harvest began. And as Mr. King had left what he called three acres of potatoes, I order'd them to be taken up, and found that two acres of which produced only four bushels, and the third acre produced one hundred and sixty-seven and a half bushels; this furnished me with plenty of seed potatoes, and as I know that they are a most excellent succedaneum [succedaneum] for bread, and that many of the poor inhabitants of Ireland have little else to live upon, potatoes being the staff or chief of their subsistence, and yet they work as hard as any men in the world, I judg'd it expedient to plant as many of them as I supposed would last us until we could make the new corn into bread, and therefore had eleven acres planted, and which we began taking up in the month of October, and had the whole out of the ground by the 24th November; and I had the pleasure to find that they answer'd extremely well, having produced at the rate of from two hundred and thirty to two hundred and fifty bushels per acre, and which I had intended for the people, to be issued at the rate of six pounds per man per day; but as we have been so fortunate as to get a supply of flour, I now issue eight pounds of potatoes, together with six pounds of flour for each man per week as the ration of bread; by this means I am sure that, with the flour saved and the corn now in store, together with what the land may be brought to produce, that we may (at two-thirds allowance) have flour, corn, potatoes, and carravances sufficient to last the island for twelve months from the first of January, 1791.

A good
yield.Potatoes in
lieu of flour.Land
cleared.Sailors'
gardens.Convict
labour.

As I have mentioned the quantity of clear land which I found on the island, I shall now mention the quantity now cleared on the island, including the thirty acres left by Mr. King. And here I beg leave to remark that as soon as Captain Hunter judg'd that the ship's company of the *Sirius* had done with the wreck, he ask'd me to point out a place where they might be employed in clearing land for the purpose of making gardens for themselves, which I immediately agreed to, and left the choice of place to Captain Hunter, where he employ'd his people under their own officers, and with every exertion they have only clear'd sixty rods (or perches) of land; and as one hundred of the common run of the male convicts can very well be spared for one year to clear land, I shall esteemate their work agreeable to what they have tasked themselves—at one hundred and seventy-three acres and fifty-five perchs. in the year—so that at the end of one year from this present time the public will be in possession of * acres of clear land. And as I am convinced that two acres of clear land,

properly sown and planted at the expence of the Crown, is sufficient, with a very little industry and attention, to maintain six people, I therefore propose that the convicts, both male and female, may be classed into gangs or messes of six each, and to have two acres of clear land given them, properly stock'd; and as soon as the corn on it is ripe and fit to house they are then to cease drawing any provisions from the public store except animal food, and that only at the rate of half their present ration of meat, for the space of six months after they are put in possession of two sows with pig, and at the expiration of that time they are not to trouble the store for anything but tools and implements of husbandry and clothing, everything else being in their own power to procure. And what makes me suppose this is, that Mount Pitt has for six months in the year supply'd as many birds as all the men on the island could take away with them. I am convinced by my own ideas that this or some plan like it will be the only mode of making those people live independent of the store; for it has been an old remark of mine that while our (I might have said folly) humanity feeds them they will not take the trouble of getting anything for themselves; and I am very sure that if the provision store was left open to them that more than one-half of them would take immediate possession of it, and not quit it until they had destroy'd everything in it, altho' they know that they might in consequence of it starve immediately after; and this they would do, least that if they went out somebody else might take possession and keep them out.

I would likewise encourage them to clear and cultivate some acres adjoining to what they had, and all the land which they may have in possession at the time they may be quitting the island shall be the property of the Crown, unless any of them are allowed to become settlers, and in that case they will have grants of land given them. This mode, I think, will create a desire among them for living better than their neighbours, and that may create industry, and industry, I think, will cultivate a desire of settling for life. But this, I beg leave to observe, I only offer as a groundwork of something to form a plan upon.

From eight grape-vines which I found in his Majesty's garden, and two I found in Lieut. Creswell's, there are six hundred cuttings planted, and all of them are in a flourishing condition; and last August his Excellency the Governor-in-Chief sent two hundred and fifty cuttings from Port Jackson, all of which are thriving equally well with the others, and some of the old stocks have fruit this year, nor have I any doubt but the whole will bear fruit the next year; and in the course of two or three years I can see no reason why we may not have as much wine made upon this island as will supply New Sh. Wales and this place, and I think it very probable that in a short time they may export wine from this island.

1790

Dec.

Working
gangs.Self-
support.The way to
independ-
ence.Improvi-
dence.Land
grants.Vines a
success.

Wine.

1790

Dec.

From the luxuriant state in which the sugar-cane thrives, I am of opinion that from it and turnips a beverage equal to cyder might be extracted ; but as I have never heard that such a thing had been tried, I hope the experiment will be made.

Fruit.

The few orange and lemon plants which are here seem to thrive very well. Straberries thrive but indifferently. Every sort of melon and pompion [pumpkin] thrive well, and I have had very good bananas at my table twice or thrice ; and I have planted young succours [suckers] of the banana-tree at Charlottesfield, as from the fertility of the soil at that place, and their being well shelter'd from the sea winds, I think I have reason to expect that they will thrive very well.

Indigo and
castor nut.

If indigo or castor nut are judged objects of attention, I can answer for their growing here in the highest perfection, and with as little trouble as in any part of the world.

MAJOR GROSE TO UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS.

19 Dec.

Sir,

Portsmouth, Dec'r the 19th [1790].

Reported
mutiny.

Cap'n Harvey having reported to me that it was his intention by this night's post to communicate to the Admiralty that the detachment of the New South Wales Corps embarked on board the Gorgon had mutined, I have to request you will be pleased, should such information be brought to the War Office, to suspend your opinion until to-morrow's post, it being too late this evening for me to recite the particulars. Suffice it to say Capt. Harvey was not on board his ship when the mutiny happened, and that his report is consequently only hearsay. From what I hear it was nothing more than some drunken irregularity committed by two soldiers from the Savoy. I will at once venture to say that his representation will turn out to be frivolous, and that it may be imputed more to personal pique than anything else.

Frivolous
complaint.

I trust we shall not suffer in your opinion to make it appear that the detachment have on s'h occasions behaved with more strict propriety than could be expected, considering what has been done to provoke and excite a different conduct. I have, &c.,

FRAN'S GROSE,

Major Com'g N. S. Wales Corps.

MAJOR GROSE TO UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS.

21 Dec.

Sir,

Portsmouth, Dec'r the 21st [1790].

Dispute on
board the
Gorgon.

I have the honor to communicate to you the particulars of the dispute which happened in the Gorgon, and although I do not write otherwise than from report it may be taken for granted that whatever I relate to you will, if necessary, be proved. On the evening of last Friday two of the soldiers were drunk and fighting between decks, their noise being heard by a serjeant ; he

attempted to part them, when one of them, who was more drunk than the other, saw fit to abuse and strike the serjeant; in this situation a naval officer interfered to enforce the serjeant's authority; the soldiers were both directly put in irons, and so ended the controversy. I am authorized to say, although much abuse was given to the serjeant, there was not the smallest offence or resistance to the authority of any of the naval officers. On the morning of the next day the cook for the soldiers having refused a petty officer the hot water from his coppers which he had the preceding evening with some labour collected, an altercation took place, in which, it is asserted by one and denied by the other, that improper language was given. The cook was in consequence ordered by the lieutenant of the ship to be immediately put in irons. Whether this proceeding was proper or improper I do not know, but I am confident the petty officer could have no business with either the cook or his coppers.

1790

21 Dec.

An altercation.

The cook in irons.

On the morning of Sunday, when the anchor was about to be weighed, the soldiers did not volunteer that assistance they had on all other occasions so cheerfully given; the serjeant, on enquiring the cause of their not coming forward with their usual alertness, was informed that they considered themselves injured by the confinement of their cook; that understanding it was optional with themselves to work or let it alone, they felt no inclination to do anything more than their duty. You are to understand that nothing was said to persuade them by the officer commanding on board; and it has ever been held out to the men by me, being publicly authorized so to say by Capt. Harvey, that they were not considered as doing duty as marines to the Gorgon; that if they chose to assist in working the ship they might; that if they disliked it there was no compulsion, unless to hoist in water or provisions of any sort.

The soldiers displeased.

Their duties.

It has ever been my intention, and I daresay ever will continue so, to avoid altercations if I can, and anxious as Capt. Harvey has been to convey some unfavorable report of my detachment to the Admiralty, I have no wish to retort on him, but for the purpose of defending the conduct of my party, and without the smallest wish of arraigning his. I am forced to say that if Capt. Harvey had been on board when his anchor was weighed, and if he had not brought on shore the officer left in care of my men, this business had probably never happened, or if it had he would have known better than to make so serious a report to the Admiralty about nothing. I have further to say that had Capt. Harvey consulted with myself, by doing of which he would have observed the Admiral's directions (to whom this business was first represented), the officers need not have been plagued with his frivolous representations or the reply I am forced from necessity to make to them.* I have, &c.,

Grose defends them.

Much ado about nothing.

FRANCIS GROSE,
Major-Com'g N.S.W. Corps.

* Captain Harvey was superseded by Captain Parker. Post, p. 427.

1790

21 Dec.

LORD SYDNEY TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

Dear Sir,

Froggnall, December 21, 1790.

Difficulties
overcome.King's
promotion.Phillip's
leave.

I have received two letters to-day from our friend Phillip, dated the 14th and 15th of last April.† He writes in good spirits, and represents the new settlement as having nearly overcome its difficultys. This is a much better account than I could have expected. He has made three requests. The first is for the rank of master and commander for the officer who brings his dispatches, whom I suppose to be Lieutenant King of the Syrias,‡ but he does not name him. The second is some provision for the Commissary, whom he commends much, and represents as a dying man—two strong arguments in his favour—but he does not name him neither. The last is leave to return home for the regulation of his private affairs. He makes his last request with much the least earnestness of any of the three. Probably they may be all contained in his official dispatches, but I trouble you with them for Lord Grenville's§ information, in case he should have omitted them. I should likewise be much obliged to you if you would inform Lieutenant King (as I take it for granted he is, like all other seamen, under your protection) that I shall be very glad to see him whenever he can let me have that pleasure. I shall be in town to-morrow, and will, if it is not inconvenient, avail myself of your obliging offer, and dine with you. If Mr. King could breakfast with me on Thursday, he would oblige me very much.

Present my best compliments to Mrs. Nepean and my little friend Molyneux. All here desire to be kindly remembered to you and yours.

Ever most sincerely yours,
S.

MR. A. CALVERT TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

3 Dec.

Dear Sir,

Crescent, 23 Dec'r, 1790.

I send you, at foot, the ships' names, and tonage of each, that's already taken up for the convicts.|| Yours, &c.,

ANTY CALVERT.

Atlantic	440 tons	.....	220 convicts.
Will'm and Ann.....	370	„	185 „
Salamander	312	„	156 „
Britannia	300	„	150 „
Albemarle	530	„	265 „
Matilda	460	„	230 „
Active	350	„	175 „
Queen	380	„	190 „
Mary Ann	300	„	To bring women.

* A private letter.

† Ante, pp. 328, 329.

‡ Lord Sydney's way of spelling "Sirius."

§ Grenville was created a Baron, November, 1790.

|| It will be seen from a statement of contract made with the Commissioners of the Navy, p. 463, that the number of convicts was increased, and an additional vessel, the Admiral Barrington, engaged.

MEMORANDUM.—THE LADY JULIANA'S CONTRACT.

1790

Whitehall, 27th December, 1790.

27 Dec.

By an instrument dated the 2d February, 1789, William Richards, junr., has engaged to let on freight to the Commissioners of the Navy the ship Lady Juliana, burthen 401 tons, at 9s. 6d. per ton, and to be allowed six weeks' pay after her discharge in New South Wales, with any discounts which may be required on Navy bills when payment of the freight, victualling, &c., shall be made. The said William Richards to be paid sixpence per diem for the victualling of each convict put on board that ship when supplied with sea provisions. Twopence half-penny for each child.

To be paid ninepence per diem for the supply of each convict with fresh provisions, vegetables, &c., previous to their sailing from England, and twopence halfpenny for each child.

To be paid sixpence per diem for the vict'g of each convict when in any foreign port with fresh provisions, fruits, and vegetables, in addition to the sixpence allowed for sea provisions, which are then of course to be stopped.

To be allowed forty shillings for the clothing of each convict during the passage.

And seven shillings per diem for the salary of a surgeon whilst the convicts remain on board.

Contractor's terms.

STATE of the SETTLEMENTS at NORFOLK ISLAND and PORT JACKSON, on a calculation made the 27th December, 1790.

27 Dec.

Time when.	Settlement.	Description.	Men.	Women.	Children.	
25th Mar., 1790..	Norfolk Isld....	Lt.-Governor and Assist. Surgeon..	2	Population.
		Officers and seamen late belonging to the Sirius ..	80	..	..
		Marines ..	93	4	1	
		Convicts ..	191	99	37	
22 Apr., 1790 ..	Port Jackson ..	Governor and Civil Officers ..	10	..	..
		Officers and seamen late belonging to the Sirius ..	52	..	..
		Marines ..	127	27	36	
		Natives ..	1	1	1	
		Convicts ..	297	70	26	
30 June, 1790 ...	do.	Convicts from Lady Juliana ..	..	225	10
31 July, 1790 ...	do.	Detachment N. S. Wales Corps ..	114	16	10	
		Convicts sent out in the Neptune, Scarbro', and Surprise ..	900	70	10	
		Superintendents who had embarked on board the Guardian ..	5	..	..
		Convicts do.	20	..	..
			1,892	512	131	
			512			
			131			
		Persons.....	2,545			

Rations.—Men, full, 1,892; women, $\frac{3}{4}$ ds, 342; children, $\frac{1}{2}$, 65—total, 2,299.

1790

PROPOSAL TO SEND OUT SETTLERS. (Banks Papers.)*

A proposal
to send
out settlers.

THE Governor to allot and send me home a plan of my estate at the public expence.

To give the passage out, and supply each family with 10 convict servants, if they shall demand so many for seven years from the period when they shall make the first demand to be under the same regulations as those employed by the public.

To victual each family for 3 years from the time of their arrival, and their convict servants for 4.

To give me free passage from the Cape for each family, for 1 cow, 2 sows, 2 ewes, and 2 female goats; and in case any die on the voyage to replace them by the next ships and from the public stock of the colony.

To furnish seed corn, &c., of all kinds for 2 years, and tools.

To send out one family at least every year.

4 years no rent, 6 a bushel of corn paid into the store, 10 more a quarter of do. do., 10 more a shilling an acre for all cleared land. In case after 4 years' stay they choose it, to bring them back free, and the lease to be void.

My proposal read to Mr. Nepean.

Dec.

DRAUGHT OF INSTRUCTIONS FOR MR. MENZIES (Banks Papers.)†

THE business on which you are employed by Government, for the due execution of which you will be entitled to the salary you have stipulated to receive, consists of the following articles:—

In all places at which the ship you are on board shall touch and make a sufficient stay you are—

Soil.

1st. To examine into the nature of the soil—whether it is sandy, gravelly, loamy, boggy, &c., &c., and carefully to remark the size of the trees that grow upon it, as well as whether they stand thick and close, or distant and separate one from the other.

Climate.

2nd. The nature of the climate as far as you are able to judge of it from the productions.

Cultivation.

3rd. The probable degree of fertility of the soil; whether, in case it should hereafter be found expedient to send out settlers, the usual grains, pulse, and fruit of Europe are likely to succeed, and if not, what other sort of produce would in your opinion be the most suitable.

Flora.

4th. To enumerate, as far as you may find yourself able, the

* These notes are in Sir Joseph Banks's handwriting. They bear no date, but they were probably written some time in the year 1790. Nothing further has been found in the papers with regard to this proposal to send out families to New South Wales.

† This paper, which is in the handwriting of Sir Joseph Banks, is headed "Draught of Instructions for Mr. Menzies." Mr. Menzies was the botanist sent out with an expedition of discovery and survey to the north-west coast of America, under Captain Vancouver. The vessels selected for the service were the war ship *Discovery*, and the armed tender *Chatham*. (See note to Grenville's despatch, ante, p. 312.) Mr. Menzies was appointed on the recommendation of Sir Joseph Banks, who made the necessary arrangements.

different trees, shrubs, plants, grasses, ferns, and mosses that are found in each country, noting particularly the places where those that are uncommon have been met with. 1790
Dec.

5th. To dig up plants of such as you consider most curious, plant them in the hatch which is under your care, and preserve them to the best of your ability for his Majesty's use on your return. Plants to be collected.

6th. You are from time to time, whenever the ship shall be watered, to acquaint the commanding officer what quantity of water the plants in your hatch are likely to consume by the week or the day, that he may be enabled to make proper provision for their future supply. Water.

7th. You are to collect seeds of all such curious plants as you shall meet with at the season of ripening, and packing them carefully, when fully dry, in paper packages carefully sealed up, send them home by every opportunity that occurs for his Majesty's use. Seeds.

8th. You are to dry specimens of all such plants, &c., as you shall judge worthy of being brought home, and more especially of all those of which you shall procure either living plants or seeds, in order that those who are employed in examining the plants you shall bring home may be assisted in ascertaining their names and qualities; and of these you are to deliver one compleat set to the Sec. of State for the Home Department. Specimens to be collected.

9th. All the seeds of plants and the living plants you shall collect in your voyage you are to consider as wholly and entirely the property of his Majesty, and you are not on any account whatever to part with any seeds, plants, cuttings, slips, or parts of plants for any purpose whatever but his Majesty's use. The King's property.

10th. In all your excursions on shore you are to examine with attention the beds of brooks and torrents and all other places where the natural strata of the earth are laid bare by water or otherwise, and wherever you meet with minerals that bear the appearance of oars [ores] of metals, coal, or limestone, or any other thing likely in your opinion to be usefull, you are to collect and preserve specimens of them carefully, noting the exact places in which each was found; you are also to search for similar substances among the pebbles and sand brought down by brooks or rivers from the inland country, and if you suspect them to contain even the most minute particles of metallic matter, for which you are to search with your microscope, you are to bring home samples of them. Minerals.

11th. You are to inform yourself, as well as you are able, what sort of beasts, birds, and fishes are found in each place where you shall touch that are likely to prove usefull either as food or in commerce; and pay particular attention to the various modes of taking them which the natives or Europeans use. You are to note the places where seals or whales are found in abundance, to pay all possible attention to the natural history of the sea-otter, Fauna.

- 1790 and to learn all you can concerning the wild sheep said to be
 Dec. found on the coast, and, if practicable, procure the skin of one of
 them for your employer.
- The natives. 12th. In all places where you can procure a friendly intercourse
 with the natives you are to make carefull enquiry into their
 manners, customs, ceremonies, religion, language, manufacture, and
 every other thing in your opinion likely to interest mankind. And
 if you find the abominable custom of eating human flesh, which
 they are said to practice, to be really in use among them, you are,
 if you can do it with safety and propriety, to be present at some
 of their horrid repasts in order to bear witness to the existence of
 a practice all but incredible to the inhabitants of civilised countries,
 and discover, if you can, the original motives of a custom for which
 it seems impossible to suggest any probable cause.
- Cannibal-
 ism.
- Journal. 13th. You are to keep a regular journal of all occurrences that
 happen in the execution of your duty, and enter in it all observations
 you shall make on every subject you are employed to investigate,
 which journal you are on your return to deliver to his Majesty's
 Sec. of State for the Home Department, or to such person as he
 shall direct to receive them ; and also one compleat collection of
 all the specimens of animals, vegetables, and minerals that you shall
 have procured, as well as such curious articles of the cloths, arms,
 implements, and manufactures of the natives as you shall deem
 worthy of particular notice.
- A collection
 of specimens
 to be made.

MEMORANDA BY SIR JOSEPH BANKS.

Mr. Menzies
 and his
 duties. FURNISH Mr. M. [Menzies] with such proportion of the trade for
 Indians entrusted to his charge as may enable him to hire the
 assistance [of] the Indians as guides and to carry his luggage, and
 to induce them to give him such information as he may want from
 them.

That the plant-hatch be put under his care and direction, and
 that neither lumber or dogs the property of any person be put
 in it.

That he be allowed his share of the conveniences of the gun-
 room in point of store-rooms, &c., &c.

Assist him with boats when they can be spared from the duty
 of the ship.

Assist him with men and any such heavy luggage as he may
 have occasion to bring on board, particularly earth for his plants,
 as well as the plants themselves.

Take on board water for the plants in such quantities as shall be
 found necessary for the support of the plants on the requisition
 of Mr. M. [Menzies].

Surgeon of
 Discovery. To be appointed surgeon of the Discovery, which he understands
 is intended to bear two mates.

To occupy the cabin on board her which was intended for him as naturalist.

1790

Dec.

To receive £80 a year as a salary.

To have an assistant, who is to receive £20 a year able pay and ship's provision.

To obey such instructions as he shall receive relative to an investigation of the natural productions, comparative fertility, manners of natives of the countries he is to visit, &c.

To deliver his journal to his employers on his return, provided that if it is thought proper for publication he shall be allowed to publish it for his own benefit.

Given to Mr. Nepean, Decr. 15, 1790. 22nd, he told me Ld. G.* had agreed to the whole proposition, and ordered a letter to be wrote to Mr. Martin,† to request the appointment of surgeon for Mr. M.‡

1791

Jan. 1st, 1791.

1 Jan.

Mr. Menzies to receive £150 a year for every charge of salary, mess, servants' wages, &c., &c. Himself and his servant to be entered as supernumeraries for provision only, but his servant to be placed in some situation in which his time as a seaman may go on. His servant was in the President's foretop during the late armament, and is 17 years of age.

CAPTAIN HARVEY TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers.)

Gorgon, Portsmouth Harbor,

My Dear Sir,

2nd Jan'y, 1791.

2 Jan.

Just as I was sitting down to inform you that the Gorgon was changing her provisions, and that when compleated with fresh she would have sail'd for New South Wales in the course of three weeks, when I was visited by a Captain Parker, late of the Ulysses, who informed me that he came to supersede me. At present I can only account for it that the Major-Commandant and I have disagreed. I hope to be in town in a few days, when I will wait on you.

The command of the Gorgon.

I am, &c.,

WM. HARVEY.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir,

London, 5 January, 1791.

5 Jan.

Having received an order from his Excellency Governor Phillip, dated ye 6th day of April, 1790, to receive into my charge his despatches for his Majestic's Principal Secretary of State for the Home Department, and for the Secretary of the Admiralty, I

King's return to England.

* Lord Grenville, Secretary of State for the Home Department.

† Mr. Henry Martin, Comptroller of the Navy. He succeeded Sir Charles Middleton, March, 1790.

‡ Mr. Menzies was not appointed to this position in the first instance, but he undertook the duties subsequently.

1791 was also directed to embark myself on board his Majesty's armed
5 Jan. tender the Supply, and proceed in her to Batavia, from whence I
was directed to make the best of my way to England.

Batavia. The Supply sailed from Port Jackson on April 17th, and arrived
at Batavia July 6th. On the 4th August I left that port, having
taken my passage on board the Snelheid, a Dutch packet. A
putrid fever made its appearance soon after sailing, which in a few
days carried off a part of the crew; and the officers, with the rest
Deaths from of the people, being in a dying state, it was found necessary to
fever. bear up for the Mauritius, where we arrived on the 4th September.
Being in an ill state of health, I staid on shore during the time
the vessel was at this port. On the 17th September the packet
sailed, having entered a new crew, the captain and six men, with
Death of the Mr. Andrew Miller, late Commissary of Stores and Provisions at
Commissary. New South Wales, having died on the passage from Batavia to
the Mauritius.

On the 11th October I arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, and
on the 20th sailed from thence. On the 19th December the packet
was off Beachy Head, when a signal was made for a boat, which
came off and demanded forty guineas for setting me on shore,
which was reduced to seventeen, for which I was put on shore
with great difficulty at Dungeness Lighthouse, and on the 21st I
Arrival in arrived in London and delivered the despatches. Enclosed I have
London. the honour of sending an account of the different sums I have been
necessitated to draw for on the Right Honble. the Lords Commis-
sioners of his Majesty's Treasury, as well as the statement of my
expences and passage, together with different bills and receipts,
by which you will observe there is a ballance due from me of
twenty-five pounds four shillings, which I have to request may be
placed as an imprest against my salary.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

10 Jan. DESCRIPTION OF NORFOLK ISLAND BY LIEUT.-GOVERNOR KING.*
NORFOLK ISLAND is situated in the latitude 29°, and in the longi-
tude of 168° east. Its form is nearly an oblong, and contains
from twelve to fourteen thousand acres.

Topography. The face of the country is hilly, and some of the valleys are
tolerably large for the size of the island. Many of the hills are
very steep, and some few so very perpendicular that they cannot
be cultivated; but where such situations are they will do very
well for fuel. On the tops of the hills are some extensive flats.

Mount Pitt. Mount Pitt is the only remarkable high hill on the island, and
is about one hundred and fifty fathoms high. The cliffs which
surround the island are about forty fathoms high and perpen-
dicular. The basis of the island is a hard, firm clay. The whole
island is covered with a thick wood, choaked up with underwood.

* In Lieutenant-Governor King's handwriting.

The island is well supplied with many streams of very fine water, many of which are sufficiently large to turn any number of mills. These springs are full of very large eels.

From the coast to the summit of Mount Pitt is a continuation of the richest and deepest soil in the world, which varies from a rich black mold to a fat red earth. We have dug down forty feet and found the same soil.

The air is very wholesome, and the climate may be called a very ^{Climate.} healthy one. There has been no sickness since I first landed on the island.

There are five kind of trees on the island which are good Timber. viz., the pine, live oak, a yellow wood, a hard black wood, and a wood not unlike the English beach. The pine-trees are of a great size, many of which are from one hundred and eighty to two hundred and twenty feet in height, and from six to nine feet in diameter. Those trees, which are from one hundred to one hundred and eighty feet in height, are in general sound; from the root to the lower branches there is from eighty to ninety feet of sound timber, the rest is too hard and knotty for use; it sometimes happens that after cutting off twenty feet from the butt it becomes rotten or shakey, for which reason no dependence can be put in it for large masts or yards. The timber of the pine is very usefull in buildings, and is plentifull along the coast; its dispersed situation in the interior parts of the island is well calculated for erecting such buildings as may be necessary. From what I have seen of this wood, I think it is very durable. Two boats have been built of it, and have answered the purpose fully.

The live oak, yellow wood, black wood, and beach are all of a close grain, and are a durable wood.

The flax-plant of New Zealand grows spontaneously in many parts of the island, but mostly abounds on the sea-coast, where there is a very great quantity of it. The leaves of which the flax is made is, when full-grown, six feet long and six inches wide. Each plant contains seven of those leaves. A strong woody stalk rises from the center, which bears the flowers. It seeds annually, and the old leaves are forced out by young ones every year. Every method has been tried to work it; but I much fear that untill a native of New Zealand can be carried to Norfolk Island that the method of dressing that valuable commodity will not be known; and could that be obtained, I have no doubt but Norfolk Island would very soon cloath the inhabitants of New South Wales.*

There are a great quantity of pigeons, parrots, hawks, and Birds. other smaller birds, which are now in a wild state.

* Two natives of New Zealand were captured in 1793, and taken to Norfolk Island. From them the people learned something about the dressing of flax, but King's anticipation that "Norfolk Island would very soon cloath the inhabitants of New South Wales" was not realised.

- 1791
10 Jan.
Grubs. The ground is much infested with different kinds of the grub worm, which are very destructive to the growth of vegetables. They are mostly troublesome about the spring. It is to be hoped that when more ground is cleared away that this evil will cease.
- Rats. There is no quadruped on the island except the rat, which is much smaller than the Norway rat. These vermin were very troublesome when first we landed, but at present there are but very few.
- Fish. The coasts of the island abound with very fine fish. No opportunities were ever lost of sending the boat out, which enabled us to make a saving of two pounds of meat each man a week.
- The coast. The coasts of the island are in general steep, too, and excepting at Sydney, Anson, Ball, and Cascade Bays, they are inaccessible, being surrounded by steep perpendicular cliffs, rising from the sea. Some rocks are scattered about close to the shore.
- Sydney Bay. Sydney Bay, on the south side of the island, is where the settlement is made. Landing at this place entirely depends on the wind and the weather. I have seen as good landing as in the Thames for a fortnight or three weeks together, and I have often seen it impracticable to land for ten or twelve days successively, but it is much oftener good landing than bad.
- Anson Bay. Anson Bay is a small bay with a sandy beach, where landing is in general good, with an offshore wind and moderate weather; but as the interior parts of the island are so difficult of access from thence no ships' boats have ever landed there.
- Ball Bay. Ball Bay is on the S.E. side of the island. The beach is a large loose stone. When landing is bad in Sydney Bay it is very good here, as it also is in Cascade Bay, on the north side of the island.
- Prevailing winds. During the winter months, viz., from April to August, the general winds are the south and S.W., with heavy gales at times. In the summer the S.E. wind blew almost constant.
- Droughts. The spring is visible in August, but the native trees and many plants on the island is in a constant state of flowering. The summer is warm, and sometimes the droughts are very great.
- Climate. All the grain and European plants seeded in December. From February to August may be called the rainy season, not that I think there is any stated times for rain in these months, as it is sometimes very fine weather for a fortnight together, but when the rain does fall it is in torrents. I do not remember above three claps of thunder during the time I was on the island. The winter is very pleasant, and it never freezes.
- Crops. The proper time for sowing wheat and barley is from May to August, and is got in in December. That which has been sowed has produced twenty-fivefold, and I think the increase may be greater. Two bushells of barley sowed in 1789 produced twenty-four bushells of a sound full grain.

The Indian corn produces well, and is, in my opinion, the best grain to cultivate in any quantity, on account of the little trouble attending its growth and manufacturing for eating. 1791 10 Jan.

The Rio Janeiro sugar-cane grows very well, and is thriving. Sugar cane.

Vines and oranges are very thriving; of the former there will be a great quantity in a few years. Potatoes thrive remarkably well, and yield a very great increase. I think two crops a year of that article may be got with great ease. Vines and oranges.

Every kind of garden vegetable thrives well, and comes to great perfection. Vegetables

The quantity of ground cleared and in cultivation belonging to the publick was, on the 13th March, 1790, from twenty-eight to thirty-two acres, and about eighteen cleared by free people and convicts for their gardens. Land in cultivation.

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

London, 10 Jan'y., 1791.

WARRANT FOR SEAL.

At the Court of St. James's, the 21st of January, 1791. 21 Jan.

Present:—

The King's most excellent Majesty.

Lord President.

Lord Amhurst.

Duke of Dorset.

Lord Hawkesbury.

Duke of Leeds.

Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer.

Viscount Falmouth.

A NEW seal for his Majesty's Government of New South Wales having been this day laid before his Majesty in Council for his royal approbation; his Majesty was pleased to approve thereof, and to order, as it is hereby ordered, that the Right Honourable Lord Grenville, one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State, do cause a warrant to be prepared for his Majesty's royal signature, for transmitting the said seal to the Governor of New South Wales, and empowering him to make use thereof within the said Government.* Warrant for seal to be prepared.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO CAPTAIN PARKER.†

Sir,

27th Jan'y, 1791.

27 Jan.

Dr. Maskelyne, the Astronomer Royal, having acquainted my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty by his letter of yesterday's date, that he is desirous of sending to Lieut. Dawes at Port Jackson, for the use of the Observatory there, the nautical almanacks for 1793 to 1796, tables required to be used therewith, and a transit instrument. I am commanded by their Lordships to signify their direction to you to receive the same on board the ship you command, and deliver them upon your arrival at Port Jackson agreeable to their address.

Sydney Observatory.

I am, &c.,

P. S.

* The seal is described in the Order in Council of 4th August, 1790. Ante, p. 339.

† In command of H.M.S. Gorgon.

1791

30 Jan.

MAJOR GROSE TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.
Sir, Forton Barracks, January 30th, 1791.

Convicts' guard.

I herewith send to you the state of the New South Wales Corps as they at present are. Their numbers, you will perceive, are allready insufficient to supply the different detachments required for guarding the convicts. Should any further desertion take place previous to their departure (than which nothing is more likely) I don't know how we shall manage.

The return you desire after our embarkation I will take care to send you (that is to say if I am here); if I am not, the officer who is left will, of course, attend to the business as exactly as myself.

With much respect, I have, &c.,
FRANS. GROSE, Major-Com't.,
N. S. Wales Corps.

[Enclosure.]

30 Jan.

Forton Barracks, January 30th, 1791.

State of the New South Wales Corps, containing the strength of the detachments allready sail'd for Port Jackson; as also the numbers which are now quarter'd at Forton Barracks, and embarked on board the Gorgon, man-of-war.

	Com-missioned Officers.				Staff Officers.				Non-Commis'd Officers.			Private.	Women.	Children.	Waiting to complete.	
	Major.	Captains.	Lieuten'ts.	Ensigns.	Chaplain.	Adjutant.	Qr.-master.	Surgeon.	Mate.	Sergeants.	Corporals.					Drummers.
Sailed on board the Nep-tune, Scarborough, and Surprize, transports, for Port Jackson .. ..	..	2	3	1	..	..	1	..	..	4	4	2	98	14	9	..
On board the Gorgon ..	1	..	1	..	1	..	1	..	..	2	1	2	16	7	9	..
Forton Barracks .. ..	..	1	..	3	..	1	..	..	..	8	7	4	138	21	13	16
Total	1	3	4	4	1	1	1	1	..	14	12	8	252	42	31	16

FRAN'S GROSE, Major Com't,
N. S. Wales Corps.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

1 Feb.

Dear Sir, 18, Craven-street, February 1st, 1791.

As the transports destined for Port Jackson will soon be going, and not having had an opportunity of seeing you this some time past, owing to your business and the number of people you have had with you when I have called at your office, induces me

* A private letter.

to take this method of mentioning a few circumstances respecting Governor Phillip and his wants, which I can assure you are absolutely necessary. 1791
1 Feb.

I am ignorant whether he made any mention in his despatches of the great inconvenience that will attend the vast number of convicts who say the term of their transportation is expired. It is needless for me to say that those who can get a passage expect leave to quit the colony; on this head Governor P——* desired I would speak to you; he does not know for what term of years any of them are sentenced, and this he wishes to have sent him. Expires.

When I left Port Jackson there were no seines there. This is an article that was much wanted. The common seines which are issued to the Navy are not durable, as they are in general rotten before they arrive in that country; the tanned seines would answer much better, and if they cannot be procured in London they can be easily got at Plymouth, where the Atlantic will very soon be. Fishing lines and hooks are also wanted; and coals will be absolutely necessary. Candles there are none. Fishing appliances.
Coals and candles.

I am told that at Deptford yard there is the compleat frame, &c., of a vessell of forty-five tons, which was to have gone in the Discovery, but it was found too cumbersome for that vessell to take. This is a thing that would be of the greatest use to the colony, and what is much wanted, if it could be put on board the transport in the room of the hospital. A small vessel wanted.

There are a number of other articles, of which I gave you a list some time ago, all of which are much wanted.

Should anything in this letter strike you as improper, I hope when you consider the constant recollection I must have of the situation of the colony when I left it, and the gratefull friendship I owe Mr. Phillip, will, I have no doubt, prevent any misconstruction of the intent of this letter, as I can assure you it is only done to remind you of the list I gave you some time ago, as it may have escaped your attention from the multiplicity of your business.

I have not yet seen Lord C——,† as he has not been in town since the last week, and is not expected till the beginning of the next.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

If you have finished with my letter-book‡ I'll thank you for it.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING.

Sir,

Admiralty, 2nd Feb'y, 1791.

2 Feb.

Having laid before my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'y your letter of this day's date, enclosing a paper containing some remarks

* Governor Phillip.

† Lord Chatham, first Lord of the Admiralty. He succeeded Lord Howe in 1788.

‡ This book contained, no doubt, copies of the letters sent to Phillip by King during his term of office as Commandant of Norfolk Island. The letters are missing, but the letter-book containing copies of them is amongst the papers lent to the Government by the Hon. P. G. King, M.L.C.

1791 made by you in your passage to Port Jackson in New South
2 Feb. Wales, I am to acquaint you that their Lordships are well pleased
with your having sent it. I am, &c.,

P. S.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING.

10 Feb. Sir, Admiralty, 10th Feb'y, 1891.

I have received your letter of the 8th inst., transmitting a
traced copy of the coast of New South Wales, and I am commanded
Const chart. by their Lordships to acquaint you that they have sent the same
to Captain Parker, of his Majesty's ship the Gorgon, as it may
be useful to him after his approaching the said coast.

I am, &c.,

P. S.

ANDREW HUME* TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

10 Feb. Sir, Cascade Bay, Norfolk Island, 10 February, 1791.

Flax manu-
facture at
Norfolk
Island.

Machinery
wanted.

Flax seed
sent to
Sydney.

I beg leave to inform you with my progress on the manufac-
tory of the flax plant and my opinion of it. I have had two pieces
of cloath made, specimen of which Major Ross intends to send pr.
the Supply for your Excellency's inspection, together with a speci-
men of the flax; and I have the strongest hopes of making great
improvement, specimen of which I hope to have ready to send to
your Excellency by the next ship; and as I am much in want of
proper materials, as well as proper people for the purpose of
carrying on the manufactory, I hope your Excellency will be pleas'd
to give orders for me to be provided with the following articles,
which are much wanted:—Looms, spinning-wheels, and, in par-
ticular, weavers' bushes, oil, and different sets of stays, from fifteen
to twenty-four score, three quarters and half wide. Spinning-
wheels and looms may be made here. Should your Excellency
find a stay-maker amongst the convicts, he is a person much
wanted here. I have sent a cask of flax seed, directed to your
Excellency, marked A.H., which has been dried in the pod; one
piece of the cloath I have tried to bleach; but, as time will not
permit, it will only serve for your Excellency to form an idea of
what may be made of it.

ANDW. HUME.

P.S.—The piece marked with brown, the first made; the blue,
the second. Catgut and wire wanted to compleat the spinning-
wheels.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR ROSS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

11 Feb. Government House, Norfolk, 11 February, 1791.

YOUR Excellency will not be a little surprised when I acquaint
you that, notwithstanding every exertion that could have been
possibly made here to promote the welfare of the crops of grain,
Insect pests. the pernicious insects with which this island has been infested in

* One of the superintendents sent out by the Home Government.

the months of October, November, December, and January have put it out of my power to send you so favourable a report of the harvest as I could wish, or as might have been expected from so grateful a soil.

1791

11 Feb.

All sorts of grain and all vegetable seeds came up extremely well, and flourished in the highest luxuriance in the month of September, after which time they were attacked by the grub and caterpillar. The latter were so multitudinous in the months of October, November, and December that I had greatly feared there would not have been any wheat, barley, or a cob of maize escape being devoured. Altho' the people were daily employed in picking them from off the maize, yet, however incredible it may appear, we could not perceive any visible decrease, for they still appeared as numerous as ever. The blight also has been very destructive, nor has the fly been less destructive than either of the former, all of which destroy as effectually as fire. Of the crops of wheat there has been better than two acres destroyed by the blight and twenty-one acres by the caterpillar; barley, two acres destroyed by the blight and caterpillar; and maize, thirty-three acres entirely destroyed by the grub and caterpillar; callivances [caravances] French beans, and all other vegetable productions having been attacked by the fly and caterpillar, and so perforated that our first crops were chiefly destroyed. However, as the fly and caterpillar have ceased visiting us, we may expect that this crop will be a good one; I have thirteen acres cropt with callivances and ten acres with potatoes, which will be all out of the ground before it will be wanted for the reception of corn. Potatoes produce well. From ten acres which I had ordered to be planted in the months of June and July I have had in the months of November and December eighteen hundred bushels, two hundred bushels of which, being the refuse, were given to the stock of swine. And as potatoes are an excellent succedaneum for flour, they have been issued to all ranks weekly as part of the ration of flour, by which means a considerable quantity of flour has been saved in store, an account of which from the deputy-commissary will be herewith enclosed. As I have been so fortunate as to find some excellent clay here, which answers the purpose of making bricks, I have therefore employed twelve of the convicts on that necessary business, most of whom were employed on the above work at Port Jackson. The settlement for some months past has been so much distressed for the want of falling axes, steel, iron, and grindstones, that the public works have been greatly retarded. In justice to the detachment under my command, I have to request that your Excellency will please to take into consideration their real distress. With respect to necessaries, not one of them have a shoe to their feet, nor scarce a shirt to their backs; their situation at this juncture is truly deplorable, both men and women having lost almost everything

Grubs and caterpillars.

Blight.

Crops destroyed.

Potatoes a success.

Clay for bricks.

Want of tools.

Hardships.

1791

11 Feb.

by the wreck of the *Sirius*. And as it has been reported to the troops here by some of their comrades at Port Jackson that your Excellency have been pleased to order a pair of shoes and a blanket to be issued to each of them, they have to request that your Excellency will think them no less deserving of favour; and I can assure your Excellency that no troops, perhaps, ever stood so much in need or felt the want of covering; there is not a bed or blanket among them that is fit to preserve the powers which sustain life from being congealed by any degree of cold which they may hereafter be obliged to encounter. I must here beg leave to assure your Excellency that, had there been a sufficient quantity of shoes sent here for the convicts as would admit the issuing of a pair per man to the troops, I would certainly have taken it upon myself to do it; and if shoes, shirts, and other necessaries could have been purchased for them, I should not have given your Excellency the trouble of this application, for I should have ordered them to have been purchased and have drawn on the Admiralty for the amount. I have therefore to request that by the return of the Supply your Excellency will please to direct such things to be supplied the troops serving here as can be spared from the public stores at Sydney, and which, from their present deplorable situation, I hope your Excellency will think renders it essentially necessary to be done. And as the two companies here under my command have been also informed that since the return of the Supply from Batavia the other two companies under the command of Captain Campbell, together with the new troops serving in New South Wales, have been served spirits, and that they still expect to have it while it lasts, they conceive that the small proportion sent to Norfolk can by no means be adequate to their share for such a length of time as the troops at Sydney have been supplied, notwithstanding there has not been a drop of spirits issued at Norfolk since the 29th of last May. I have therefore to hope that your Excellency, having been made acquainted with the circumstances of their case, will please to order an equal proportion for them, to be sent at such time as may appear to you convenient; for, indeed, their distress at present has occasioned more discontent and murmuring among them than ever were observed in their greatest apprehensions of famine. They say they know not how they have been less deserving of favour, or why they should not share in every necessary of life with their comrades at Port Jackson, and that the duties they have had to perform were no less severe than theirs, which is all very true and just; and upon my word I cannot see any impropriety in their claim to an equal share of the necessaries of life with their comrades, as well as an equal share of service. The troops are also in great want of cooking utensils; there are but a few small pots among them all, which had been saved from the wreck of the *Sirius*, which are by

No bedding.

Shoes and shirts.

The situation deplorable.

No spirits.

Discontent.

Dearth of cooking utensils.

no means sufficient for such a number, as there is not a pot to every twelve men, which must make it very inconvenient for them to wait for one another in the use of the pots. It is nearly night before some of them can have cooked their dinners.

Therefore I hope you will see the necessity of sending such utensils as can be spared from the stores at Sydney.

Agreeable to your Excellency's orders with respect to having a proper number of spars in readiness to be put on board his Majesty's ship Gorgon on her arrival here, I have to acquaint you that Captn. Hunter, being the best judge of what spars were necessary to be sent, has taken care to give his carpenters the proper directions on that head, and they are now in readiness laying on the beach, in order to be put on board such vessel as may be sent for them; and, of course, he will give such information as you may think necessary on that head.

Spars for the Gorgon.

Prior to the arrival of Moses Tucker, the carpenters of the Sirius built us a very good coble, under the inspection of Captain Hunter; since then Tucker has built two very good cobs, altho' one of them is not yet quite finished; but I hope it will be prior to his embarkation on board the Supply, according to your Excellency's directions. And here I beg leave to assure your Excellency that since his arrival here Tucker's behaviour has been such as to merit some mitigation in the punishment which he has deserved by behaving in the manner that he had done, for which I beg leave to refer you to Captain Hunter on that head.

Boats.

The superintendant which your Excellency has sent here as being acquainted with the management of the flax I have kept constantly employed on that manufacture, with such a number of the male and female convicts as he thought necessary, and every other assistance which could possibly be procured or made in the settlement. He has so far succeeded as to have wove two pieces of it into a coarse cloth, which shall be sent your Excellency as samples; and as I do not understand myself anything of that manufacture, I shall refer you to his opinion on that head.

Manufacture of flax.

Since writing the above, I understand that Mr. Hume has taken the liberty of giving a piece of the cloth away, which probably will make its appearance at Port Jackson; but had I known his intentions, I would have prevented any such thing to have been done, as I did not wish that any samples should have been committed to the hands of any person until it had been sent for your Excellency's inspection.

A sample of cloth given away.

I have collected some of the flax seed, which is in excellent preservation, and have put it up in an eighteen-gallon keg, addressed to your Excellency, and some of which had been scattered about the yard here promiscuously has immediately grown up. I have some time ago transplanted several of the roots,

Seeds and roots of the flax-plant.

1791

11 Feb.

which I had taken from the seaside, into the interior parts of the country, and I find they thrive as well as in their natural soil and situation.

Land
cleared.

I have likewise to acquaint your Excellency that since my arrival on the island there has been one hundred and fifteen acres of land properly cleared, exclusive of what is in the possession of the convicts, in addition to what I had found clear here on my arrival. And as I have every reason to suppose that the great destruction which happened to our crops of grain would have been prevented could it have been sown and planted at a much earlier period, I have therefore taken care to direct that the wheat shall be sown from the latter end of April to the beginning of June, and maize from the beginning of May to the latter end of August.

Early
sowing.Wheat and
maize.

Agreeable to your directions I have ordered that twenty-five acres of land shall be appropriated for wheat and the rest for maize. I shall likewise, if I am here at the proper season, furnish the convicts, both male and female, with a sufficiency of maize to crop their grounds, which I expect at that time will amount to one acre p'r head with a very few exceptions.

Vines.

The grape vines which came from Sydney last August were immediately planted, and which, together with some cuttings that I had planted just before then, amounts now to between seven and eight hundred, which are all in high perfection, and two or three of the oldest are now bearing.

Bananas.

Since my having ordered the bananas to be thinned by transplanting a very great number of them, many are now fruited, and I have great satisfaction in declaring that some of the fruit is not inferior to any that I have met with in any other part of the world.

Tropical
plants.

Straberries do not thrive here, but sugar-cane grows in the greatest luxuriency, and likewise the castor-nut, indigo, and orange and lemon trees, altho' I have reason to believe that the latter want either grafting or inoculation, as neither of them shew any blossoms.

Plundering.

From my not having a sufficient authority for the more effectually putting a stop to the most shameful, wicked, and abominable practice of marauding and plundering among the most abandoned of the convicts, who, whenever they had thought proper, left the public works and took to the woods in order to make a descent by night upon the houses and gardens of private individuals as well as the public grounds, whereby many of them have supported themselves for several months independent of the store, and living in defiance of such laws as with which we have been invested for their restraint, well knowing that when apprehended and taken, let their offences be ever so capital, that confinement with corporal punishment was all we were authorised to inflict.

Insufficient
power to
punish.

There are now, and have been for some months past, in confinement for capital offences five convicts, most notorious offenders, every one of whom is as great a villain as ever graced a gibbet, exclusive of the two men which set fire to the Sirius. Captain Hunter not having thought proper to direct a prosecution to be carried on against them, and as I had reported them to your Excellency, I did not find myself at liberty to release them from their confinement until I had received your commands how they were to be disposed of, and the very crowded state in which the Supply is in at present renders it necessary still to keep them here.

1791

11 Feb.

Gross offenders.

Your Excellency I hope will pardon the liberty I have again taken in mentioning how much we owe Arscot, the carpenter, for the preservation of our lives, as there can be no manner of doubt but for his great and unparalled exertions the Sirius with all her provisions would have been burned ; but of this Captain Hunter will give you further information.

A valuable man.

The martial law which was proclaimed on the Sirius being wrecked continued in force only until the begining of last August, when we received the supply of provisions from Sydney, during which time there was only one general court-martial took place for the trial of the convicts, whose sentences were only corporal punishment ; and which court-martial, together with such other circumstances as have occurred on that occasion, I hope to have the honour of soon laying before your Excellency, as you have been pleased to inform me that I may soon expect a relief to arrive here.

Court-martial.

The situation of this settlement at present is such that unless some criminal court or martial law is established, it will scarcely be possible to prevent constant robberies, as well as all other capital offences ; and I should hope your Excellency will see it in the same point of view as in which it appears to me ; and should you think fit to order the law martial to be proclaimed here, that you will please at the same time to order a sufficient number of military officers, together with those already here, which you may judge adequate for the composing a tribunal, with full powers to try and determine all such offences as may be brought before them.

Criminal court required.

Could I have found any fresh water on Phillip Island, which I examined for that purpose, I should have been able to have kept those villains in good order, by sending the most notorious of them (for any fresh offences which they may be guilty of) to that island. And as I have been disappointed in that hope, I expect I shall find myself necessitated to send those notorious offenders, as well as all such others who may hereafter deserve it, to Nepean Island*, first taking care to send as much water as will

Phillip Island.

Banishment to Nepean Island.

* An islet, near Sydney Bay, lying between the south part of Norfolk Island and Phillip Island.

1791

11 Feb.

last them two months, and once a week, when the weather will admit, taking care to keep up the stock.

Deprivation
of food.

I did hope that the mode I had taken with the people in confinement would have given a much greater check to villainy than I am afraid it has done, which is that of having ordered the commissary not to issue them more provisions of any species than what the surgeon thought absolutely necessary to sustain life, and by which you will see what has been saved in store.

An
absconder.

Since the arrival of the supplies which were sent us last August, Thomas Stretch, a convict who preferred an idle and abandoned life in the woods to moderate labour and a full ration, did soon after that time abscond into the woods; and as he has not been seen nor heard of for these four months past, there can be no doubt of his being dead; and about a fortnight ago, John Robins, convict, was drowned, having been washed off the rocks near Ball's Bay, where he had been fishing; and since my arrival here the following is a state of the births and deaths, viz.:—
Births, fifteen; deaths, twelve. Of the latter, killed by the fall of a tree, one; drowned, eight; died a natural death, three.

Births and
deaths.

Returns.

You will likewise herewith receive the deputy-commissary's return of the expenditure of stores and provisions, together with an account of what he and myself think is necessary to be sent and most wanted on this island, agreeable to your Excellency's order, by the Supply.*

An
industrious
convict.

I have likewise to inform your Excellency that Richard Philamore, convict, having prior to my arrival here entered into terms with Mr. King, by which he had agreed to become independent of the store at the expiration of one year from such agreement, which period having been elaps'd three weeks ago, and he having reported to me the same, I have agreed to his working for himself untill your Excellency shall please to give directions whether he may be permitted to settle on such terms as Government has held out. He has not only undertaken to maintain himself now independent of the state for provisions, but he has also undertaken to maintain a man and woman which I have given him to assist in clearing more land for him on the above terms; but as he is not yet in possession of a sufficient stock of swine to provide him and the two people with animal food, I have directed the deputy-commissary to assist him with half a ration of salt provisions for himself and two people until he has a greater increase of swine, and for which the Commissary is to stop out of his corn which is now in the public granary as much as may be judged equivalent to the value of the provision which he draws. And I am of opinion that the man will do very well, as he is a very deserving painstaking person. I wish I could say as much for Mr. Smith, for, notwithstanding every encouragement that has been given him by Mr. King, as well as by me

A deserving
man.

since Mr. King's departure, I am clearly of opinion that he never will do any good for himself or anybody else. However, I have still left him upon the same ground on which I found him. 1791
11 Feb.

I shall likewise herewith enclose for your Excellency's information the surgeon's report of the sick and hurt on this island from my arrival until this date, as well as his opinion respecting the state of the people's health*. And altho' I do not expect that there will be many objects here who may require an hospital, yet I have ordered one to be built and which is now in very great forwardness, and will be ready for the reception of patients by the return of the Supply. Public health.
Hospital.

The Supply will not have room at this time for more than fifty boards. She will likewise have a few oars out of twelve dozen which I had ordered to be made on purpose to be sent to your Excellency, together with a thousand axe-helves which are of a superior quality to any wood you can have for that purpose at Port Jackson, which will be delivered by Mr. Blackbourn on his arrival at Sydney. And the things that he has not now had an opportunity of taking together with as much plank as two pairs of sawyers can cut by the time she returns from here again shall be sent with the remainder of the oars. Useful wood.

I feel myself very much obliged to your Excellency for having been pleased to communicate the information you received respecting a war with Spain, and am very much of your opinion respecting it. War with Spain.

I understand that the natives about you have lately been very troublesome, particularly in a most savage attack upon your Excellency, who, I understand, has been dangerously wounded by them†; and am happy that the same information gives me an opportunity of congratulating you upon your recovery from the wound. Phillip and the natives.

And should your Excellency think fit to adopt that (or some other) plan which I herewith enclose,‡ for the convicts maintaining themselves at a certain period independent of the store, that if it can be spared from Sydney this island should be compleated to, at least, one year's beef and pork; but should you think fit to annul the plan altogether, I think we can manage very well with what we have; and by curtailing the present ration to two-thirds, that we shall by no means feel any distress. But at the same time I must observe that the present plan is so very much approved by almost all the convicts here, and has created such a spirit of industry and emulation among them as was scarcely possible to expect. Self-maintenance of convicts.
Industry and emulation.

I have settled the superintendant of the flax-dressers, together with all the people which he had fixed upon, at Cascade, as the Flax-dressing.

* Not recorded.

† Phillip was speared by a native, at Manly, on the 7th September, 1790. Collins, Vol. I., p. 134. The occurrence is not mentioned in the despatches.

‡ Post, pp. 445-448.

1791

11 Feb.

Charlotte-
field.Unacknow-
ledged
despatches.

fittest place in his opinion on this island for the business on which he is employed. There is a small town growing up there, and at this time about seven or eight acres of clear ground.

At Charlottefield there is a very pretty little town building, but as that, nor the town at Cascade, is not named by me, I shall wait your Excellency's commands and directions on that head.

Your Excellency, I hope, will excuse me when I inform you how much I feel myself at a loss with respect to my public letters to you sent by Mr. King, for you have not yet done me the honour of giving me the least intimation of their having been received, nor can I suppose it scarce possible that Mr. King could withhold them, or else copies of them should accompany this.*

R. Ross.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR ROSS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir, Government House, Norfolk, 11 February, 1791.

I have not lost any time in getting the officers and people who accompanied me quartered in the best manner I possibly could; altho' very much crowded by having the officers and company of his Majesty's ship *Sirius* to provide for.

Cultivation
at Norfolk
Island.

When the convicts had done attending the wreck of the *Sirius*, I immediately employed them in clearing and cultivating the land in such manner as appeared to me the best calculated, in the first place, to prevent our being starved for want of sustenance, and in the next to answer the purpose of soon rendering this island independent as far as respects the articles of provisions; but I could not pay any attention to the flax, because there was not any person on the island who knew anything of it, until the middle of August, when a Mr. Hume, one of the superintendants sent out by the Government, arrived here, and as your Excellency pointed him out as a person acquainted with the management of the flax, he was immediately employed thereon with such a number of the people under him as he chose, and provided with everything he wanted, and that could possibly be procured or made in the settlement, in order to get some of it manufactured, to send to England.

Flax manu-
facture.Economy of
stores.

The live stock, stores, and cloathing at my arrival here were so very little, that from absolute necessity I was obliged to observe the most rigid economy in the distribution of them.

Accounts.

Whenever I have found that any part of what has been acquired by the labour of the convicts could be taken into store on account of the Crown, I have in that case ordered it to be done. And I shall be particularly careful that the storekeeper, or deputy-commissary, do transmit to the Commissary at New South Wales an account from time to time of the issues of provisions and expence of stores at this settlement, together with an account of such provision and stores as he may receive, and from whence, &c.

* Phillip received the despatches, 5th April, 1790.

With respect to the employing as many convicts as possible in cultivating and dressing the flax-plant, is answered in the second paragraph. And with respect to the expectations from so fertile a soil, I shall beg leave to refer your Excellency to a plan which I have ordered to be carried into execution for the purpose of rendering the island independent, as far as respects the necessaries of life, and of which the papers herewith enclosed, Nos. 1 and 2, are copies.*

1791

11 Feb.

Plan for rendering the island independent.

From my arrival to the time the first ships arrived we had scarcely anything to give the stock, and therefore were obliged to kill many of them for want of food to give them; what were left I hoped would have done well; but in this I have been very much disappointed, for since the middle of December a very considerable number of swine as well belonging to the public as to the officers and inhabitants in general died; however, I shall hope to be able to leave some swine of my own, in addition to what belongs to Government, and, as poultry thrive well, I shall leave some geese, turkies, ducks, and fowls, as a beginning for a stock for Government.

Loss of stock.

A supply of provisions we have had, but cloathing not a rag, notwithstanding a great part of the slops sent in the Sirius for the use of the convicts were never put into store, particularly the linsey wolsey jackets and blue breeches which were all put into the seamen's store upon a supposition that they were navy board slops for the use of the ship.

Clothing wanted.

In consequence of the very distressed situation in which we were left for such a length of time, I found it necessary to make a considerable deduction from the customary ration, even so much as to stop the salt provisions entirely.

Reduced ration.

There having been no clergyman on the island, I had it not in my power to take any steps for the celebration of public worship, but a due obedience to good order among the convicts has been kept, even to a degree that could scarce be expected among a set of the most abandoned people in the universe who were not subject, let their crimes be what they may, to any law or punishment whatever, except such as any justice of the peace may inflict.

Good order.

The names of such officers, soldiers, and others, who may be desirous of becoming settlers, &c., shall be forwarded by every ship or vessel going to Port Jackson, as well as the names and particulars respecting such convicts as I shall think deserving of favour. If any settlers are established on the island during my command, they shall, as far as the situation of the live stock, stores, provisions, &c., in the settlement will admit, be supplied therewith, and with everything ordered.

Settlers.

I shall be particularly careful that no craft of any sort shall ever be built here which may enable the inhabitants of this island

1791

11 Feb.

No boats to
be built
without
special
permission.

to effect an intercourse with any of the settlements of the East India Company, the coasts of China, or any island to which an intercourse has been established by any European nation; and should any ships or vessels arrive at this settlement from any of the places before mentioned, I shall prevent any communication being carried on between them and the inhabitants residing here without first receiving your permission for that purpose; nor will I permit the building of any deck'd vessel, or boat, or any boat whatever whose length of keel exceed the dimensions given in my instructions.

Salvage
from the
Sirius.

And as the officers and company of his Majesty's late ship *Sirius* are employed in getting the iron ordnance, as well as everything else that can possibly be got from the wreck which may be of use, and which business a few weeks' fine weather may effect, after which time the wreck will be rendered unserviceable for any purpose whatever.

An extensive
valley.

It having been made known to me that a year before my arrival on this island some people who had lost their way in coming from Anson Bay to this place had fell in with an extensive valley without any timber upon it, and as I found that there never had been any person sent to examine if it was fit for cultivation, on the first of June I sent some people in search of it, who made such a favourable report that on the 12th of the same month I went myself, accompanied by some officers, to view and examine it; and from its appearance I judged that it could be cleared with much less trouble than any place I had seen here, and therefore determined to clear, cultivate, and make a settlement upon it.

New
settlement.

And as our then situation required every exertion to be made for the purpose of clearing land for the reception of corn, and it appearing to me to be by far the most beautiful as well as the most grateful soil I had seen on the island, I have done the place the honour of naming it after her Majesty,* *Charlottefield*, and I appointed Captain Lieutenant Johnston, with his company—together with a few emaciated convicts, which were all we could then spare from the work carrying on here—to take post there, and not only keep the convicts at work, but the marines should likewise be employed on this very necessary work of clearing land, and for which I have promised them payment in the like manner that all others of his Majesty's troops are paid when employed on public works.

Charlotte-
field.

The above I hope will be looked upon by your Excellency as having on my part complied with your instructions up to the present time, and shall have great satisfaction in continuing to do the same, and complying with all other orders and commands with which you may please to honour me.

R. Ross.

* Queen Charlotte, consort of George III.

[Enclosure No. 1.]

1791

NORFOLK ISLAND—GENERAL ORDER.*

8 Jan.

By his Honour, Robert Ross, Esquire, Lieutenant-Governor of his Majesty's territory of New South Wales and its dependencies, commandant of a corps of marines serving in the said territory, and commander at the Island Norfolk.

WHEREAS it is necessary and fitting that every endeavour should be used to render the settlement on this island independent as far as possible with respect to the necessaries of life, and as during the course of the last winter and spring it was strongly recommended to the convicts to clear and cultivate some ground for gardens for themselves, and an assurance made them of being supplied with Indian corn, potatoes, caravanseras [caravances], and all other vegetable seeds for their gardens. And as many of the most industrious among them have availed themselves of his offer, and are now in possession of very comfortable lots of clear ground, which supplies them very comfortably with many vegetables, which are a most excellent succedanium for flour. And being of opinion that if one day in each week is allowed them in addition to the time they now have, for the purpose of clearing and cultivating land that most of the convicts on this island may, in the course of the present year, be able to supply themselves with all necessaries (cloathing and animal food excepted). And whenever they can be supplied with at the rate of one sow with pig for every three convicts, that they will in one year from the time such sow shall farrow stop from drawing any article of provision from the King's store.

Major Ross's plan.

And whereas, I judge it fitting and expedient for the benefit of his Majesty's service, to order that the following rules and regulations take place until such time as his Excellency the Governor-in-Chief shall signify his pleasure thereupon.

Rules and regulations.

It is therefore ordered, that every convict who, from a disposition to industry, may be permitted to clear and cultivate a certain proportion of land for their own maintenance, will observe the following orders and regulations on that head.

That every convict so permitted, shall from the date hereof be allowed to work every Friday and Saturday to themselves in order to clear and cultivate as much land as may be necessary for the above purposes, not exceeding one acre per head.

Free work.

At the expiration of the first three months after this date, the ration of flour shall be reduced to six pounds, being the three-fourths of the present allowance.

Reduction of flour ration.

At the expiration of six months from the same date, the ration of flour shall be reduced to four pounds, being one-half of the present allowance.

And on the first day of March, 1792, the ration of flour, or any part thereof, shall not after that period, be issued out of the stores to any such convict or convicts.

Allowance to cease.

* See despatch, ante, p. 441.

1791

8 Jan.

Swine to
take the
place of salt-
provisions.

Whenever the increase of swine will admit the giving, at the rate of one sow to every three convicts (which sow, when given, will be considered to be with pig) in twelve months after she farrows, the said three convicts shall not be entitled to any more animal food, or any other article of provisions from the public stores.

Reward for
industry.

And as a further encouragement to such convicts as wish to become independent for the necessaries of life (clothing excepted), an additional day in each week shall be allowed to such of them as shall for the space of one year continue to supply the market with the greatest quantity of fresh pork, not exceeding sixpence per pound; or the greatest quantity of grown fowls, not exceeding one shilling each; or half grown fowls sixpence each; and small chickens in proportion. This bounty is to continue for one year, or longer as circumstances may require; and the like indulgence will be given to such convict who shall furnish the commissary with the greatest quantity of Indian corn within the said term.

Provision
for the in-
capable.

And whereas there are many of the convicts here who are not able to maintain themselves, and that there may be hereafter many more in the same situation, it is therefore ordered, to prevent them being a charge to the Crown, that each convict possessing land on this island shall deliver into the public stores, at the rate of one bushel of Indian corn per annum, for every acre of land that they have in cultivation, which corn shall be deemed a fund for the above purpose.

Claims of
the public
service
paramount.

Such convicts as allowed on the above terms to maintain themselves are at all times to consider themselves as servants of the public, and to be obedient to all such orders and regulations as any of the other convicts are; and if at any time it may be judged necessary to employ them for the public service on any of the days which are allowed to themselves, they must immediately attend; and when they have performed the work ordered they shall have the same number of days allowed in lieu.

Pine-trees
protected.

It is ordered that the pine-trees shall on no account whatever be cut down, barked, or in any manner damaged or destroyed, but by order of the commandant of the island.

The flax-
plant.

Whenever any thatch is wanted the sedges are to be used for that purpose; and the flax-plant is not in future to be cut for any purpose but that of the cloth manufacture, except by permission first obtained from the commandant.

Firewood.

And as it is imagined firewood will in a short time be very scarce about the town, it is therefore ordered that in future whenever any trees are felled, instead of the heavy timber being burnt on the ground, it shall be cut into convenient lengths and stacked for firewood.

Expires

Such of the convicts, whose term of transportation may be expired, and who have been permitted to live on the above farms, are during the time they stay on the island to consider them-

selves as servants to the public, except in such cases where they may be allowed to become settlers, which service is to be deemed equivalent to the land they hold.

1791

8 Jan.

It is expected that the convicts who are indulged with the privilege of maintaining themselves shall be classed together, and not less than three in a family, women and children included. And for the further encouragement of such male convicts as are desirous to maintain the females, such females shall not be called upon by the public to do any work, except in hoeing the corn upon an appearance of rain, or picking the caterpillars or grub from the corn, or any other work of evident necessity.

Family
arrange-
ments.

All the foregoing rules and regulations are submitted to his Excellency the Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the territory of New South Wales and its dependencies, for his consideration, to be approved of, annul, alter, explain, or amend, as he shall judge meet, and therefore only to continue in force until such time as he shall signify his orders or pleasure thereupon, of which all persons concerned are hereby to take notice.

Regulations
subject to
the
Governor's
approval.

Given under my hand and seal at Head-quarters, Norfolk Island, this eighth day of January, 1791.

R. Ross.

[Enclosure No. 2.]

NORFOLK ISLAND—GENERAL ORDER.*

9 Feb.

HIS Honour the Lieut.-Governor, judging it expedient and necessary that the convicts on this island should as soon as possible be rendered independent of the publick store for animal food, the following articles are therefore to take place until his Excellency the Governor-in-Chief shall please to confirm, alter, or annul the same, to wit:—

First.—That the stock the property of Government will be issued to the convicts after the rate of one grown sow for every three convicts, or one small sow pig to each convict, as far as it will admit.

Issue of
Government
live stock
in lieu of salt
provisions.

Secondly.—That every three convicts receiving a grown sow shall, in twelve months from the time she farrows, or in sixteen months from the time of delivery, cease drawing any animal food from the store.

Thirdly.—Any convict furnishing himself and two others with a grown sow shall, at the time of his ceasing to draw any more provision from the store, receive from the commandant of this island after the rate of £4 sterling for the same, the produce of which sow to be the property of the three convicts specified, for their support, and the sow is to be considered as the property of Government on the possessors thereof quitting the island.

£4 per sow.

Fourthly.—Government not having stock sufficient to supply the whole of the convicts, such convicts as cannot be so supplied shall be obliged to provide themselves with a sow pig not younger

* See despatch, p. 441.

1791

9 Feb.

than two months old, which shall be paid for by moderate deductions from their weekly ration, and which at the expiration of sixteen months from the time he receives the said pig into his possession he shall be deemed to be independent of the public stores, and shall then receive from Government a gratuity of £1 6s. 8d., being the third part of what they pay to each convicts who furnish themselves with a grown sow.

Penalty for
negligence.

Fifthly.—Any three convicts entrusted with a sow from Government for the purpose of raising stock for their own benefit, if on inspection it appears they have been negligent in the care of the same, all and every such convicts shall be subject to such pains and penalties as might be inflicted on such persons as are guilty of killing, robbing, or destroying any of the public or private live stock.

Distribution
of swine.

Sixthly.—The owners of every sow farrowing from the date hereof shall be obliged to part with every sow pig in such litter above two until such time as every male and female convict clearing land on this island shall be supplied with stock, of which future notice will be given.

Accidental
losses to
be made
good.

Seventhly.—In case any sow deliver'd by Government to any of the convicts shall meet with any disorder that may occasion its death, Government shall, if on investigation it proves to have been an accidental cause, make good the same, provided such accident shall happen within sixteen months from the time of delivery; and the said stock shall in no manner be made away with without proper notice given to each person who may be appointed to inspect the same; and every person is to report his increase or decrease of stock weekly to the deputy commissary.

Provision if
agreement
not con-
firmed.

Lastly.—Should this agreement not be confirmed by his Excellency the Governor-in-Chief, and any person in future authorised in consequence thereof to call in the sows the property of Government, the produce of the same sows are to be considered as belonging to the convicts who may have been entrusted with the care of them, except one sow pig from each sow, which is to be returned with the old one.

Norfolk Island, 9th Feby., 1791.

R. Ross.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR ROSS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Government House, Norfolk,

Sir,

11th February, 1791.

I have the honor of enclosing for your Excellency's information a general return of that part of the detachment which is serving with me on this island; together with the names of such non-commissioned officers or private men of the detachment of marines as wish to remain in this country, either as soldiers or settlers, at Port Jackson or Norfolk Island*.

Illness of
Lieut.
Johnstone.

I am sorry to acquaint you that for some past Lieut. Johnstone's state of health has been such as to render him incapable of per-

* Post, p. 450.

forming his duty. I have, therefore, in consequence of the surgeon's advice, signified to me by letter, permitted him to proceed to Sydney in the Supply, and directed him to put himself under the command of Captain Campbell, or the officer then commanding the marines, on his arrival in that settlement.

1791
11 Feb.

I hope he may have his health re-established in time to return with the Supply, or that your Excellency will direct some other officer to join me, in order that I may be enabled to carry on the necessary duties.

Lieut.
Johnstone.

What makes this so necessary to be done is, that notwithstanding the very great favour and indulgence shown to Lieut. Kellow by his brother officers, with whose request your Excellency was pleas'd to comply that he might then be permitted to return to his duty, soon after his arrival here he forgot all his promises on that head, and in the opinion of myself and all his brother officers he has behaved in so very un-officer and un-gentleman like manner as to make it necessary for me to suspend him from all duties until he is tried, or until your Excellency shall please to order in what manner he is to be disposed of.

An officer
suspended.

For the situation of the store after we had received everything we were to get from the wreck of the Sirius, I beg leave to refer your Excellency to Mr. Morley, the late storekeeper, who has all the accounts; only begging to remark that it was the general opinion that we could not have survived so long but for the immensity of birds which we brought in every night from Mount Pitt.

The
settlement
saved by
birds.

Many of the convicts here has signified to me that the term for which they were sentenced has expired, and wish in consequence of the assurance made them by Mr. King and myself, in your Excellency's name, that as soon as you were made officially acquainted with the same, such of the convicts as wish to return to Port Jackson, that you would send for them. They therefore pray that your Excellency will not forget them. I have, &c.,

Expires.

R. Ross.

[Enclosure.]

STATE of the Settlement on Norfolk Island, February the 11th, 1791.

Lieutenant-Governor of the territory of New South Wales and Commander-in-Chief	...	...	...	No.	1
<i>Military.</i>					
Commissioned Officers	...	...	...	...	7
Non-Commissioned Officers	...	...	...	...	8
Drummers	...	...	...	...	3
Privates	...	...	...	...	60
Women	...	...	...	...	4
Children	...	...	...	...	3
<i>Staff.</i>					
Surgeon	...	...	...	...	1
Deputy-Commissary	...	...	...	...	1
Free people	...	...	...	...	5

1791

11 Feb.

STATE of the Settlement of Norfolk Island—*continued.*

<i>Convicts.</i>							No.
Males ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	227
Females ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	245
Convicts' children ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	62
<i>Numbers on different ration.</i>							
Whole ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	313
Two-thirds ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	249
Half ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	25
Quarter ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	39
Whole number victualled ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	626
Whole number victualled on full ration ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	501
<i>Weeks on full ration.</i>							
Flour and rice ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	28
Beef ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	28
Pork ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	42
Spirits—gallons ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	85
Butter and sugar—pounds ...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1,250

N.B.—It appears from the surgeon's returns that only one man, one woman, and one child have died natural deaths since the Island was first settled.

[Enclosure.]

RETURN of the Non-commissioned Officers, Drummers, and Privates of the Detachment of Marines serving at Norfolk Island who wish to stay in the country as Soldiers or Settlers :—

Names.			Quality.	Wish to remain as Soldiers or Settlers.	
John Brown...	...	...	Private	...	As a soldier.
John Woods	...	...	do	...	As a soldier.
John Escott...	...	...	do	...	Settler at Norfolk Island.
Isaac Tarr ..	...	...	do	...	do do
George Plyer	...	...	do	...	do do
James Kirby	...	...	do	...	do Port Jackson.
James Angle	...	...	do	...	do Norfolk Island.
Patrick Connell	...	...	do	...	do do
James Reiley	...	...	do	...	do do
Jonathan Woodman	...	...	do	...	do do

R. Ross.

GENERAL ORDERS.—PORT JACKSON.

February 11th, 1791.

Sale of
rations
prohibited.

ALTHOUGH repeated orders have been given to prevent the convicts from selling or exchanging their provisions issued from the public stores for money, spirits, or tobacco, that practice is still continued; and as those who sell their own provisions must support themselves by stealing from others, it is the duty of every individual to endeavour to put a stop to a practice which

distresses the honest and industrious, whose gardens are robbed, and provisions stolen, by those who sell their rations. No provisions are ever to be purchased or received from a convict on any consideration whatever, and the Commissary is directed to give 30 lbs of flour as a reward for discovering any person who may in future be guilty of a breach of this order.

1791

11 Feb.

LORD GRENVILLE TO THE LORDS OF THE ADMIRALTY.

(Banks Papers.)*

My Lords,

Whitehall, 11th February, 1791.

His Majesty having judged it expedient that an expedition should be immediately undertaken for acquiring a more complete knowledge than has yet been obtained of the north-west coast of America, I am commanded to signify to your Lordships his Majesty's commands that the necessary measures should be adopted for that purpose. The *Discovery* and *Chatham*, brig, being, as I understand, in readiness for this service, it is desirable that no time should be lost in their proceeding to the Sandwich Islands, where the officer commanding those vessels should be instructed to winter.

Expedition
to America.

During the time of his remaining at those islands he is to employ himself in the survey and examination of them; and as soon as the weather is favourable, which may be expected to be in February or at latest in March, 1792, he should be instructed to repair to the American coast for the purpose of his survey.

The
Sandwich
Islands to be
examined.

It having been agreed by the late convention between his Majesty and the Catholic King† that the buildings and tracts of land situated on the north-west coast of the continent of North America, or on islands adjacent to that continent, of which the subjects of his Britannick Majesty were dispossessed about the month of April, 1789, by a Spanish officer, shall be restored to the said British subjects, the Court of Spain have agreed to send orders for that purpose to their officers in that part of the world; but as the particular specification of the parts to be restored may still require some further time, the King's orders for this purpose must be sent out to the Sandwich Islands by a vessel which may carry out a farther store of provisions for the *Discovery* and *Chatham*, and should sail from this country in time to reach the Sandwich Islands in the course of the ensuing winter. If in consequence of the arrangement to be made with the Court of Spain it should hereafter be determined that the *Discovery* should proceed in the first instance to Nootka‡ or elsewhere, in

Convention
between
England and
Spain.Restoration
of land.

* Endorsed: "Copy of a letter from Lord Grenville to the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, dated Whitehall, 11th February, 1791 (two enclosures)." The enclosures are missing. A different plan was proposed in the first instance; ante, p 312. Instructions to Lieut. Menzies; ante, pp. 424-426.

† The King of Spain.

‡ Nootka Sound, on the north-west coast of America. (Vancouver Island.)

1791 order to receive from the Spanish officers such lands or buildings
 11 Feb. as are to be restored to his Majesty's subjects, orders to that effect
 will be sent out by the vessel above mentioned. But if no such
 orders should be received by the commanding officer of the Dis-
 But not to be covered previous to the end of January, 1792, he should be
 waited for after directed not to wait for them at the Sandwich Islands, but to
 after proceed in such course as he may judge most expedient for the
 January, examination of the coast of north-west America comprised
 1792. between lat. 60 north and lat. 30 north.

Objects of the expedition. In the examination of this coast the principal objects which he
 is to keep in view are :—

First.—The acquiring accurate information with respect to the
 Water nature and extent of any water communication which may tend
 communi- in any considerable degree to facilitate an intercourse for the
 cation and purposes of commerce between the north-west coast and the
 commerce. countries upon the opposite side of the continent which are
 inhabited or occupied by his Majesty's subjects.

Secondly.—The ascertaining with as much precision as possible
 European the number, extent, and situation of any settlements which have
 settlements. been made within the limits above mentioned by any European
 nation, and particularly by Spain, and the time when such settle-
 ment was first made.

With respect to the first point, it would be of great importance
 if it should be found that by means of any considerable inlets of
 sea, or even of large rivers, communicating with the lakes in the
 interior of the continent, such an intercourse as I have already
 Commercial mentioned could be established. It will, therefore, be necessary
 intercourse. that for the purpose of ascertaining this point the survey should
 be so conducted as not only to ascertain the general line of the
 sea-coast, but also the direction and extent of all such consider-
 Scope of able inlets, whether made by arms of the sea or by the mouths of
 survey. large rivers, as may be likely to lead to or facilitate such com-
 munication as I have described.

This being the principal object of the examination, as far as
 relates to this part of the subject, it will probably appear to your
 Lordships that a considerable degree of discretion must be left to
 The com- the officer commanding the expedition as to the best means of
 mander's executing the service which his Majesty has in view.*
 discretion. * * * *

But as far as any general instructions can here be given on the
 subject, it seems desirable that, in order to avoid any unnecessary
 loss of time, he should be directed not to pursue any inlet or
 Only river further than it shall appear to be navigable by vessels of
 navigable such burthen as might safely navigate the Pacific Ocean. But as
 waters to be the examination of such inlets, even to the extent here stated,
 examined.

* A blank occurs here. Twelve lines written by the transcriber, which the Minister, pre-
 sumably, did not wish to go out of the office, have been erased.

may possibly require that the officer commanding the expedition should proceed up them further than it might be safe for the Discovery to go, it seems necessary that such officer should be authorised by your Lordships to take the command in person of the Chatham, brig, at all such times and in such situations as he shall judge it necessary or expedient, and that corresponding orders should be given to the officer commanding the latter vessel.

1791

11 Feb.

The
commander
to have
charge of
both vessels.

The particular course of the survey must, of course, depend on the different circumstances which may arise in the execution of a service of this nature. It will, however, be proper that the officer commanding on this expedition should be directed to pay a particular attention to the examination of the supposed Straits of Juan de Fuca, said to lay between 48 and 49 north lat., and to lead to an opening through which the sloop Washington is reported to have passed in 1789, and to have come out again to the northward of Nootka.* The discovery of a near communication between any such sea or strait and any river running into or from the Lake of the Woods, which is commonly laid down nearly in the same latitude, would be particularly useful. If the vessels employed on this service should fail in discovering any such inlet as I have spoken of to the southward of Cook's River, there appears the greatest probability that it will be found that this river rises in some of the lakes already known to our Canadian traders and to the servants of the Hudson's Bay Company. This point it would in that case be material to ascertain with as much precision as the then existing circumstances of the expedition may allow. But the discovery of any similar communication more to the southward, should any such exist, would be much more advantageous for the purposes of commerce, and should therefore be preferably attended to. With respect to the second of the points above mentioned, it is probable that more particular instructions will be given by the vessel to be sent to the Sandwich Islands after the Discovery. But if not, the officer commanding the expedition is to be particularly directed in the execution of this and of every other part of the service with which he is entrusted, to avoid with the utmost caution the giving any ground of jealousy or complaint to the subjects or officers of his Catholic Majesty; and if he should fall in with any Spanish ships employed on any service similar to that committed to him, he is to afford to the officer commanding such ships every possible degree of assistance and information, and he is to offer to him that they should make to each other reciprocally a free and unreserved communication of all plans and charts of discoveries made by them in their respective voyages.

Course of
survey.

Nootka and
Cook's
River.

Communica-
tion to the
southward
more
important.

Keep friends
with Spain.

Interchange
of informa-
tion.

* The passage was found. The land which is separated by it from the American continent is called Vancouver Island, in honour of Captain Vancouver, who circumnavigated it.

1791

11 Feb.

Foreigners
to be treated
as friends.

If in the course of any part of this service his Majesty's ships or officers should meet with the subjects or vessels of any other power or state, they are to treat them in the most friendly manner, and to be careful not to do anything which may give occasion to any interruption of that peace which now happily subsists between his Majesty and all other powers.

Two
summers
allowed for
the work.

The whole of the survey above mentioned, if carried on with a view to the objects here stated, without too minute and particular an examination of the detail of the different parts of the coast laid down by it, may, as I understand, probably be completed in two summers. In the intermediate winter the ships are to be directed to return to the Sandwich Islands, and during their continuance there to endeavor to complete any part that may be unfinished of their examination of those islands.

Return by
Cape Horn.

Western
coast of
South
America.

After the conclusion of the survey in the second summer the commanding officer should be directed, supposing the state and circumstances of his ships should admit of it, to return by Cape Horn, for which the season will then probably be favourable. It seems doubtful how far the time may admit of his making any particular examination of the western coast of South America. But if this should be practicable, he should begin such examination from the south point of the Island of Chiloe, which is in about 44 south latitude; and he should direct his attention to ascertaining what is the most southward Spanish settlement on that coast, and what harbours there are south of any such settlement.

Disputes
with the
natives to
be avoided.

In the execution of every part of this service it is very material that the commanding officer should be instructed to use every possible care to avoid disputes with the natives of any of the parts where he may touch, and that he should be particularly attentive to endeavor by presents and by all other means to conciliate their friendship and confidence.

Presents.

I herewith enclose to your Lordships lists of such articles as have been procured for the purpose of presents. These will be delivered into the care of the commanding officer, to be disposed of by him according to the regulations which have been observed in similar cases.

I am, &c.,

GRENVILLE.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

14 Feb.

Dear Sir,

18, Craven-street, Feb. 14th, 1791.

Illness
of King.

A very severe rheumatic attack has confined me to my room these three days past, else I should have called on you to mention my interview with the person I told you of when I last had the pleasure of seeing you. Many pointed questions were asked, and with great earnestness. Respecting the *principal object*, I could not afford much satisf'n, as my knowledge of it could not

* A private letter.

be very great in the short time I was on that spot; but with what
 respected my own concern and place I gave that description that
 it was deserving of. I dine with him on Wednesday. Whether
 G. P^p [Governor Phillip] mentioned in any of his despatches respect-
 ing his having settled at Rio de Janeiro that all transports laden
 with King's stores, or on the King's account, should be exempted
 from the port duties, I do not know, but he desired me to mention
 it to you. Should any of the transports now stop there, the pro-
 curing some *good cotton seeds* would be a great object for Norfolk
 Island. If I thought any of them would touch there I could write
 to a friend of Gov^r Phillip's to procure some and send him, as well
 as some other articles which w^d be of great service.

1791

14 Feb.

Port duties
at Rio.Cotton seed
for Norfolk
Island.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

Dear Sir,

Feb. 15th, 1791.

15 Feb.

The unlooked-for question that has been asked me, and the
 very short time pointed out for my giving an answer, joined to the
 impossibility of my leaving my room to consult a friend, has made
 me rather more confused than when you left me.

An
unexpected
question.

Under every possible disadvantage occasioned by the shortness
 of the time fixed for my departure,† exclusive of the mortification
 and disappointment I shall feel in going out as I came home, I see
 that my refusal will by no means tend to my interest.

I hope the Gorgon can be detained until I have settled a few
 private concerns, as I have hitherto indulged myself with the
 idea that I should not leave England so soon, and consequently
 have not made any arrangements whatever respecting my private
 concerns, and have a provision to make for my stay on Norfolk
 Island.

Private
business.

I cannot help observing how very forcibly I feel the unpleasant-
 ness of my situation, and I assure you that I shall leave this
 country with far less satisfaction than I expected to.

An
unpleasant
situation.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

I begin to fear that my lameness is the gout, which will be a
 severe stroke upon me.

Gout.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO LORD GRENVILLE.

My Lord,

18, Craven-street, Feb. 17th, 1791.

17 Feb.

An unlooked for indisposition prevents me from doing
 myself the honor of waiting on your Lordship to request a favor,
 which I am compelled to do in writing.

A favour
asked.

My indisposition, and the very short notice given to me by Mr.
 Nepean of the necessity of my immediate departure from England,

* A private letter.

† For Norfolk Island, of which settlement he had been appointed Lieutenant-Governor.

1791

17 Feb.

No time to
provide
necessaries.

has rendered me unable to provide myself as yet with a single article of necessaries to supply me in the distant part of the world I am going to. I have wrote to Major Grose to let me have what necessaries he has provided for himself, which I have no doubt will be arranged between us.

Objections
to convict
ship.

Was it not for my absolute incapacity of putting my foot to the ground, I should, unprovided as I am, be ready to go immediately to sea; but I hope your Lordship will pardon me when I say how very disagreeable and inconvenient it will be to me to go so long a voyage in a convict ship, where I shall meet with every disagreeable circumstance which the caprice of the masters of one of these vessells may subject me to, and as they are all full, I shall not be able to embark my necessaries (small as they are) on board of them.

A passage in
the Gorgon.

May I entreat your Lordship's consideration on the peculiar and disagreeable situation I am in, and which I hope will plead an excuse with your Lordship for my solleciting a passage in the Gorgon.*

Whatever my state of health may be, in ten days from this time I will be on board that ship, if I should be so happy as to obtain her detention for that time by your Lordship's kindness, which will be an eternal obligation conferred on,

My Lord, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

SIR JOSEPH BANKS TO LORD GRENVILLE. (Banks Papers.)†

19 Feb.

My Lord,

S.S., Feb. 19, 1791.

The
American
survey.

Enclosed your Lordship will receive the opinions‡ you did me the honor to require of me concerning the mode of carrying on the survey of the N.W. coast of A., in the most speedy and effectual manner consistent with the degree of accuracy required in an undertaking intended of a general nature. To these I have added instructions for surveyors,§ which are intended to point out the readiest and most effectual modes of doing the work, and also to secure to Government, what they always ought to be possessed of, a series of proofs of the degree of accuracy with which it has been done, to which they may at any future time refer.

Method
of work.

Temptations
of surveyors.

The temptation of substituting conjecture for fact in laying down the shores of an unknown country is so great, especially at times when, from the circumstances of winds and weather, it is difficult to approach near to the land, that I doubt whether any

* The request was granted. King sailed in the Gorgon, March, 1791, and arrived at Port Jackson, 21st September, in the same year.

† Unsigned, but in Sir Joseph Banks' handwriting, and indorsed by him: "To Lord Grenville, February 19th, -91."

‡ These "opinions" are not amongst the Banks Papers.

§ These instructions are applicable to any expedition of discovery, and their publication is therefore unnecessary. The main feature of the instructions is the directions given to officers to keep surveying-books, as a check upon the maps drawn by them.

surveyor has ever wholly visited it. In the present case, as every creek on the coast will be repeatedly examined by those employed in the collecting ferns, and as the merchants, in consequence of the distance and danger of the voyage, find it necessary to employ men acquainted with all the modern improvements of navigation, no error that is made will long remain undetected.

To fulfill the surveying instructions with the utmost minuteness will add little or nothing to the business imposed upon the commander. By his other orders he is, indeed, directed to keep a book in a form different from that he is used to, probably not in a less commodious one, but every remark he is to write in that book he ought to write down in one book or the other, if he or his ship is conducted with any degree of precision.

The benefit Government will derive from this mode of executing the business is that the employment of conjecture will be all but impossible; to make the book and the map agree in their statement of the situation of a part of the coast that has not been surveyed will always be a matter of much difficulty, but as it is impossible that a coincidence can happen by chance, their agreement will preclude all probability of the commander having made a mistake; any difference therefore that is hereafter observed between the chart and the coast will carry with it so clear a conviction of wilfull misstatement as no person who has any regard for his character will choose to run the risk of so easy a detection.

I must apologise to your Lordship for having spent so much time in obeying your orders on this subject, but in truth, as I have not made unnecessary delay, I trust I shall be forgiven; the subject ran into a length I did not in the beginning expect, and as I am not sufficiently versed in the practical part of the business of surveying, I was obliged to obtain the assistance of one of my friends in the matters relating to that business, and which I believe will be found the most valuable; but that which took up the most time was the repeated remarks necessarily to be made under the apprehension some part might be omitted, which I hope will not prove to be the case.

[Unsigned.]

LORD GRENVILLE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Whitehall, 19 Feby., 1791.

By Lieutenant King, who arrived here on the 20th of December, I received your several letters of the dates mentioned in the margin,* and have had the honor of laying them before the King.

I observe with great concern by these letters that, in consequence of the unfortunate disaster which happened to his Majesty's ship the Guardian, and of the delays which appear to have taken place in the voyage of the Lady Juliana, the state of the provisions at

1791

17 Feb.

Book to be kept.

Book and map to agree

A difficult subject.

19 Feb.

* June 5, 1789; Feb. 1, 12, and 13; April 11, 1790.

1791

19 Feb.

The reduced
ration.

the settlements which you have established, rendered it necessary that you should make so considerable a reduction in the ration, and that you should send to Batavia for supplies. The expenses incurred under the latter head appear to have been necessary under the then existing circumstances, and the amount will be discharged whenever the proper vouchers shall be received. I trust, however, that the difficulties which occasioned this measure have long since been effectually removed by the arrival of the Lady Juliana and of the other supplies, which, according to the enclosed calculation* (provided no accident should have happened) must have reached Port Jackson shortly after Mr. King's departure. As the system which is to be adopted in future of sending out the convicts in two embarkations in the course of each year will afford the means of keeping up a regular intercourse between this country and the settlements under your government, there is, I hope, no ground for apprehending inconvenience in future from any accidental failure of the supplies sent from hence; but even if that should be the case, it appears to me that there are now other resources on which a reliance may safely be placed.

Two batches
of convicts
per annum.Norfolk
Island.

The measures taken by you have anticipated the wishes I expressed to you in my letter, No. 6, with respect to the increase of the establishment at Norfolk Island. I understand from Mr. King that the fertility of the soil in that island is such that the last year's crop of wheat, Indian corn, potatoes, and other vegetables would, in his opinion, be nearly, if not entirely, sufficient to supply the colony with those articles, leaving ample provision for seed in the ensuing season; and there seems every reason to expect that, independently of what may be raised in New South Wales, the produce of Norfolk Island will afford in future a sufficient supply of these important articles for the use of both the settlements.†

Supplies
from
Calcutta.

I find by letters which have lately been received from Calcutta, dated in the months of August and September last, that intelligence had reached India of the distress of the Guardian, and of the disappointment you were likely to experience in receiving supplies from hence, and that Lord Cornwallis had acceded to the proposals made to him by some merchants, of sending certain articles from thence for your relief. Although you would, long before the arrival of these at Port Jackson, have received other supplies, yet I hope that the plan has been carried into full execution, and that you have purchased the cargo on the public account.

Low prices.

On a comparative view of the prices specified in the enclosed letter from the person who proposed to engage in that speculation,‡

* Not available.

† This expectation was not realised. Norfolk Island was, after a time, able to support itself, but it was never in a position to furnish supplies for Port Jackson.

‡ Not available.

I find that most of the articles therein mentioned can be supplied from thence at prices considerably less than those at which they can be furnished from this country. 1791
19 Feb.

So long ago as the month of September [1790] I had suggested to Lord Cornwallis the idea of supplying the settlement under your command, either wholly, or at least to a very great extent, from Calcutta.* I am inclined to hope, from the circumstances which I have already stated, that any further supplies of provisions will be principally confined to salted provisions and sugar, after a sufficient quantity of live stock shall have been procured; and if any circumstance should render it expedient for you to make any further purchases of provisions, in addition to the quantities which will be sent out from hence with each embarkation of convicts, you will in such case have recourse to Calcutta, or some other of the Company's settlements in India; and you will give directions that the person sent by you for that purpose should make no purchases of any article the price of which shall not be certified by the commanding officer of his Majesty's forces then at such settlement, or by some person regularly authorised by him to sign such certificate, and the certificate is to be sent home with the other vouchers for the expence incurred. India a
source of
supply.

Calcutta.

In the execution of a plan which is now in contemplation for surveying the north-west coast of America and the Sandwich Islands,† there will be occasion to dispatch a transport to the latter with provisions in the course of the ensuing spring. This vessel, after her supplying the ships engaged in the survey, will join you at Port Jackson, and her commander will be instructed to carry with him, either from the Sandwich, the Society, or the Friendly Isles, as much live stock as that vessel can contain. Live stock
from the
islands.

From the information which I have collected from Mr. King, I am led to expect that in order to replace the Sirius, which you inform me has unfortunately been lost on Norfolk Island, you are likely to purchase the snow‡ which was to be dispatched to you with provisions from Batavia. If it should so happen, that vessel and the Supply, for which an assortment of stores will now be sent out by the Gorgon, will, I hope, be sufficient for the necessary purposes of your Government; but if Mr. King should have been mistaken in the conjectures he has formed on this point, you will consider yourself at full liberty to detain the vessel from the Sandwich Islands, and to employ her as you may think proper, either in procuring live stock, or for any other purpose that may be conducive to the prosperity of the settlement under your government. A vessel to
replace the
Sirius.

The
Sandwich
Island
transport.

I am sorry to learn by your letter to Mr. Nepean that so few of the marines have shown an inclination to continue in the country after they shall have finished their term of duty, and that a similar disposition appears amongst the convicts whose Marines
and
convicts.

* Ante, p. 403.

† Ante, pp. 312-314.

‡ A Dutch vessel, the Waaksandheid.

1791 12 Feb.	<p>sentences have expired. The return of the last-mentioned description of persons to this country cannot legally be prevented, provided they can engage the masters or owners of any vessels arriving in New South Wales to transport them from thence. But as there is little reason to hope that any persons of that description will apply themselves here to habits or pursuits of honest industry, it will be extremely desirable that every reasonable indulgence should be held out to them with a view of inducing them to remain in New South Wales, and that it should be distinctly understood that no steps are likely to be taken by Government for facilitating their return.</p>
Should be induced to remain.	<p>If, in the execution of this instruction, you should deem it necessary, in addition to the lands to be granted to them, and to the tools and implements of labour with which they will be furnished by you, to victual them for a limited time from the public stock till they can by their own labour provide for their subsistence, such a measure would not be objectionable. But it will, of course, occur to you how necessary it will be to limit the time for such assistance, both in order to prevent too great an addition to the public expence, and as an incitement to their own industry. Some distinction should also be made in this respect as to those convicts whose conduct during the term of their sentences may have entitled them to particular indulgence and favour.</p>
Concessions to expirees.	<p>I enclose herewith copies of his Majesty's several Orders in Council for the transportation of the different persons who have been sent to New South Wales, and also of those who are now under orders for embarkation.* You will be enabled by these to ascertain the precise times of the expiration of their respective sentences. You will observe that by law the time which has elapsed since their original sentence or order of transportation, previous to their being sent abroad, but during which they have been in confinement either in gaol or on board the hulks, is to be reckoned as part of the term for which they were sentenced.</p>
Terms of sentence	<p>The proceedings of Major Ross and Captain Campbell, according to your representation,† appear to have been in many instances but ill-calculated to promote that good understanding so essentially necessary for securing the prosperity of the colony. On all services, but particularly of this nature, it is of great importance that persons of all descriptions should accommodate themselves to the circumstances and situation, and that they should most carefully avoid any nice distinctions in point of duty which might tend to occasion embarrassment in the execution of the public service. His Majesty has always in view the proceedings of his officers when placed in those situations, and will judge of their merits by the conduct they observe on such occasions.</p>
Conduct of marine officers.	

* Not recorded. † See Phillip's despatches, 1st and 12th Feb., 1790. Ante, pp. 288-292, 301-304; 15th December, 1791, post, p. 570.

I enclose to you herewith a report of his Majesty's Attorney and Solicitor General,* from which it will appear that military officers serving in New South Wales are bound to perform the duties of members of the Criminal Court whenever they shall be duly summoned for that purpose. As it is necessary that this point should, as soon as possible, be fully understood, it will be proper that you should take an early opportunity of assembling such officers as may, on your receipt of this, be within your government, and that you should explain to them the opinion entertained upon this subject, in order that any difficulties of the nature which have heretofore taken place may in future be prevented.†

1791

19 Feb.

Officers
bound to
serve on
Criminal
Court.

The sending Major Ross to Norfolk Island, under all the existing circumstances, appears to have been a judicious measure, though it had the effect of depriving Mr. King of the authority with which he had been vested, and which he had exercised with so much advantage to the public service. It will, I am persuaded, be a satisfaction to you to know that he will immediately return to New South Wales, and that his exertions for the public service have not passed unnoticed.‡

Norfolk
Island.

I have already conveyed to you his Majesty's pleasure with respect to the return of Major Ross and the officers and men of the marine corps under his command, to which it is necessary for me to add, that it has been judged expedient that the detachment of the New South Wales Corps, originally intended to accompany Major Grose in the Gorgon, should assist in guarding the convicts mentioned in my letter to you, No. 9, which have since been increased by clearing the gaols in Ireland to about 2,050, all of whom will, I expect, be embarked on board the several transports mentioned in the enclosed list,§ and will proceed on their voyage in the course of the present month. It will therefore be proper that you should detain the Gorgon until the arrival of the principal part of those ships, and until the arrival either of Lieut.-Governor King (who will take his passage in the Gorgon, if he can get ready in time, or in one of the convict-ships) or of Major Grose, as, without the assistance of the force which those ships contain, the colony may be exposed to risque.¶

N. S. Wales
Corps.

2,050
convicts
to be sent
out.

Adequate
military
force to be
kept.

I enclose herewith an account of the provisions, clothing, hospital stores, medicines, implements, &c., put on board the transports above mentioned, by which you will also receive such parts of the Guardian's cargo as may be found serviceable, which the Gorgon may not be able to take on board.

Provisions
&c.

The number of troops of which the present establishment of the New South Wales Corps consists appearing to be insufficient

Augmenta-
tion of
N. S. W
Corps.

* Post, pp. 462-463.

† The report was made public by Phillip. Post, p. 537.

‡ This refers to the appointment of King, who was then in London, to the Lieutenant-Governorship of Norfolk Island.

§ Post, p. 463.

¶ Major Grose did not sail till July. He arrived at Sydney in the Pitt, 14th Feb., 1792.

1791

15 Feb

for all the necessary purposes, it has been determined that two additional companies should forthwith be raised. Those companies will, I expect, be completed, and be in a certain state of discipline in the course of the month of April next, by which time the Spring Assizes will have closed, and such convicts as shall then be sentenced for transportation will be sent away. The number, including those who will be left behind on the departure of the ships now under dispatch, who have more than three years to serve, as it is supposed, will amount to about 450, and will be accompanied by Major Grose and the two companies above mentioned.

I am, &c.,
GRENVILLE.

[Enclosure]

THE ATTORNEY-GENERAL AND SOLICITOR-GENERAL TO LORD
GRENVILLE.

My Lord,

Lincoln's Inn, 15th Feb'y, 1791.

In pursuance of your Lordship's letter of the 15th of this instant (February), inclosing despatches from Governor Phillip, dated Sydney Cove, the 5th June, 1789,* desiring that we will take the same into consideration, and report to you for his Majesty's information our opinion whether any six officers of his Majesty's forces by sea or land, being summoned by precept under the hand and seal of the Governor or (in case of his absence or death) Lieut.-Gov'r of New South Wales to convene as members of the Criminal Court of Judicature those ordained and appointed by his Majesty's Royal Letters Patent, they, or any of them, may lawfully refuse to obey such precepts,—

Criminal
court.

We have taken the same into our consideration, and we humbly certify that his Majesty by his Royal Letters Patent has, in pursuance of an Act of Parliament passed in the twenty-seventh year of his reign, intituled "An Act to enable his Majesty to establish a Court of Criminal Jurisdiction on the Eastern Coast of New South Wales and the parts adjacent," willed, ordained, and appointed that the Court of Criminal Jurisdiction (thereby established) should consist of the Judge-Advocate for the time being, together with six officers of his Majesty's sea and land service as the Governor, &c., should, by precept issued under his hand and seal, convene from time to time for that purpose. And we are of opinion that, although from the necessity of the case, military officers alone (excepting the Judge-Advocate) are to exercise the functions both of jurymen and judges, yet that they are not acting in a military capacity, or to be called to that service by military orders, but are performing a duty purely civil as military persons in many other cases do in assistance of the civil magistracy. And we also think that a military officer serving in New South Wales is bound to perform the duty of a member of the Criminal Court when duly summoned for that purpose by precept

The Act
establishing
the court.Constitution
of court.Officers in
their civil
capacity
must act.

under the hand and seal of the Governor, &c.; and will be guilty of a misdemeanor by refusing to perform a duty imposed upon him by the King's authority derived from an Act of Parliament passed for the purpose of giving that authority. We should, however, conceive that persons of the liberal principles which belong to the character of military officers, and who must know that the whole criminal justice of the settlement will stand still if they should refuse to serve in the Criminal Court, would be too much influenced by a sense of the service which they can render to their country by performing this civil function, in addition to their military duty, to render it necessary to remind them of the nature of their duty in this instance, as pointed out by charter and by Act of Parliament.

1791

15 Feb.

Refusal to sit a misdemeanor.

Obligation and duty.

All which is submitted to your Lordship's consideration.

A. MACDONALD.

JOHN SCOTT.

[Enclosure.]

LIST of transport vessels provided by Messrs. Camden, Calvert, and King, agreeably to a contract made by them with the Commissioners of the Navy for the conveyance of convicts to New South Wales, 1st February, 1791.

Transports.

Vessels' Names.	No. Convicts to each.		
	Males.	Females.	Total.
Queen (Ireland).....	175	25	200
Atlantic	220	..	220
William and Ann	158	..	158
Britannia	152	..	152
Matilda	230	..	230
Salamander	160	..	160
Albemarle	275	..	275
Mary Ann .....	..	150	150
Barrington	300	..	300
Active	175	..	175
	1,875	175	2,050

LORD GRENVILLE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Whitehall, 19th Feby., 1791.

19 Feb.

Lord Sydney has transmitted to me a private letter which his Lordship has received from you by Lieutenant King, wherein you have expressed a desire to be permitted to return to England. I am much concerned that this situation of your private affairs should have been such as to render this application necessary at a time when your services in New South Wales are so extremely important to the public.

Phillip's desire to return.

I cannot, therefore, refrain from expressing my earnest hope that you may have it in your power so to arrange your private

Post-ponement suggested.

1791

19 Feb.

Phillip's
zeal.

concerns that you may be able, without material inconvenience, to continue in your Government for a short time longer.

From the zeal which you have at all times manifested for the public service, I am inclined to believe that you will readily accede to this proposal, and I shall therefore only add, that as soon as your presence in the Colony can be dispensed with, you may be assured that everything on my part will be done to contribute to your accommodation.

I am, &c.,

GRENVILLE.

SIR GEORGE YONGE TO MAJOR GROSE.

23 Feb.

Sir,

W.O., 23rd February, 1791.

Two fresh
companies.

I have the honour to acquit you that the King has been pleased to order that the New Soth Wales Corps shall be augmented by the addition of two comp's of the same numbers as those on the present establishment of the corps, except that one of the comp's is to be commanded by a second major, who is to obtain his appointment on the condition of contributing five hundred pounds towards the expence of this levy. The rest of the officers are left to your nomination upon the same conditions and under the same restrictions as were prescribed in your original letter of service.

Payment.

With that aid, and the levy money, at the rate of three guineas per man for each approved recruit, you are to raise both comp's, which must be reviewed and approved by a general (or field) officer at Chatham Barr'ks by the 10th of April next.

The pay of the officers is to commence, and their commissions are to take date, from the completion of the two comp's, and the pay of the non-commiss'd officers and private men will be allowed from the date of their respective attestations.

GEO. YONGE.

23 Feb

WARRANT TO RECRUIT.*

George R.

WHEREAS we have thought fit to direct that two comp's shall be forthwith added to our corps of foot raised for service in New So. Wales, under y^r c., and that each of the comp's shall consist of three serj's, 3 corp's, 2 drum's, and 67 private men (besides comm'd'g off's), these are to authorize you, by beat of drum or otherwise, to raise so many men in any county or part of our kingdom of Great Britain as shall be wanted to complete the said comp's to the above-mentioned numbers. And all, &c.,

Given, &c., 23rd Feb'y, '91, in the 31st year of our reign.

By H.M. command,

GEO. YONGE.

CAPTAIN PARKER TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

25 Feb.

Dr. Sir,

Gorgon, Spithead, 25th Feby., 1891.

Detention of
the Gorgon.

I trust the occasion of this intrusion on your time will admit of sufficient apology; but it is needless to tell you that the

Gorgon's detention is not the most pleasing circumstance in this advanced season, as it not only will be the means of our having a winter's passage from the Cape of Good Hope to New So' Wales, but sho'd we be much later in the season the ship will be obliged to go to Simon's Bay in place of Table Bay, to take in the stores preserved from the Guardian (as the flag is struck the 25th May, a signal for no ship to enter Table Bay),* consequently the above stores will be obliged to be sent fourteen or fifteen miles over land from the Cape Town to Simon's Bay—a loss of time as well as expensive. I sh'd esteem it a very particular favour co'd you oblige me with a line about two days before the ship will be dispatched from your office, as it will be the means of saving that time, for prudence will not admit of the ship's company being paid their wages due them, nor yet their two months' advance, until I am positive she will not be detain'd longer, for fear of desertion, and as I have taken a great deal of trouble in getting my present ship's company, I wo'd not willingly loose any of them, which will be impossible to hinder sho'd any boats be permitted to go on shore after she is paid.

1791

25 Feb.

Transfer of stores.

Desertion feared.

From the reasons above stated, I trust you'll agree with me that the sooner we are gone the better, as well as point out to you that my previous knowledge a day or two prior to the ships meaning to be dispatched will tend to the good of the service.

I have, &c.,

JOHN PARKER.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE
[LORD GRENVILLE].†

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 1st of March, 1791.

1 March.

I had the honour of answering the letters I received by the Lady Juliana, Neptune, and Scarborough. My last letters were dated in June and July, 1790, and duplicates are sent by this conveyance.

The Supply, armed tender, returned to this port from Batavia the 18th of October, but brought only eight months' provisions for her own people; what had been purchased for the colony did not arrive until the 17th of December.

Movements of the ships.

The necessary repairs which the Supply required were of such a nature that she was not ready for sea before the beginning of January; she sailed the 21st, with provisions and stores for Norfolk Island, and carried orders for Captain Hunter, with the officers and seamen who had remained there after the loss of the Sirius, to return to this settlement. They arrived here the 26th of last month [February].

Return of Capt. Hunter from Norfolk Island.

* Table Bay is unsafe for ships during the winter months.

† Phillip was not aware that Grenville had been raised to the peerage until eight months after this letter was written.

1791

1 March.

A Dutch vessel hired.

The vessel that brought the provisions from Batavia* being discharged, was ready to sail for New Guinea, as directed by her owners ; but the master having offered to sell the vessel, or to let her to hire, she was hired the beginning of February, will carry the officers and men late of the *Sirius* to England, and is now preparing for the voyage.

The Gorgon.

This vessel was hired as there was reason to suppose some accident had happened to the *Gorgon*, from the time which had passed since her arrival might have been expected ; and if unfortunately that ship was lost, no opportunity might for some time offer to give the necessary information as to the supplies which this colony will want. The provisions in this settlement will last until the latter end of November next. At Norfolk Island the pork will last until the end of November, and the flour and rice until the middle of September.

The stock of provisions.

Stores of the *Sirius*.

A considerable part of the stores belonging to the *Sirius*, with most of the provisions, and all the guns, except two carronades, were landed on Norfolk Island, and nearly everything which could be saved was got on shore before Captain Hunter came away.

Norfolk Island.

It appears from the Lieutenant-Governor's letters, copies of which are enclosed,† that at the island, as well as at this settlement, the loss of the *Guardian* has been felt ; and from the Deputy-Commissary's account it appears that from the 15th of May until the beginning of August [1790], when the ships sent from hence arrived there with provisions, the weekly ration had been reduced to 3 lb. of flour and 1½ lb. of beef, or 17 oz. of pork ; and that for some time no beef or pork had been issued from the store, the immense quantity of birds (puffins) which resort to that island in April and continue there until the end of July or the beginning of August having supplied them with animal food. These birds burrow in the ground about Mount Pitt, where they deposit their eggs, and are in such numbers that three and four thousand birds have been sometimes killed in one night.

Birds as food.

The marines complain.

As I have, sir, inclosed the Lieutenant-Governor's letters, and it is said in one of them "that great discontents have prevailed amongst the marines under his command on hearing that spirits, shoes, and blankets had been issued to the marines in this settlement, and none sent to Norfolk Island," it may appear that less attention has been paid to that settlement than to the one in which I reside, which is not the case ; for if ever there has been a want which could not be removed it has ever been my wish that it might be where I was myself I will therefore beg leave, to detain you, sir, for a few minutes to explain why spirits, &c., were issued at this settlement, and a proportion not immediately sent to Norfolk Island.

When the Lieutenant-Governor left this settlement, a full proportion of provisions, implements of husbandry, and clothing were

* The Dutch snow *Waaksamheid*.

† Ante, pp. 434-449.

put on board the *Sirius* and *Supply*; what was lost in the *Sirius* was not very considerable; and in June, when the ships from England arrived here, as I judged provisions would be the most wanted, two ships sailed with all possible expedition for Norfolk Island, and carried as much provisions as they could store. The *Supply* followed, and carried provisions, implements of husbandry, and some clothing. By that vessel the Lieutenant-Governor was desired to inform me what articles were most wanted, with which he was told the *Supply* would return.

The spirits brought out for the use of the civil and military had been all expended, and the three years' spirits promised to the marines had not been completed.

The *Justinian* brought spirits for the *Sirius*'s ship's company; and as that ship had been occasionally supplied with spirits from what had been brought out for the marines, I ordered what was now sent out for the seamen to be put into the store, there to remain until the marines and the seamen were to embark for England; for I thought it better for men to drink water on shore than at sea; and it was not probable that the ship which was to carry them home would, on leaving this country, have spirits on board to serve such a number of people to the Cape of Good Hope. These reasons were made public; but in a short time the marines in this settlement made an application through their commanding officer that they might have their share served them, to which I consented. Three months' spirits were ordered to be issued to the civil and military in this settlement; three months to be reserved for the civil and military at Norfolk Island; and three months for the officers and seamen who had remained there after the loss of the *Sirius*. The same proportion was given to the *Supply*. I did not send more spirits by that vessel when she sailed for Norfolk Island than what I thought might be necessary for the use of the surgeon, and to serve on any particular occasion; for that vessel was loaded with what I deemed more necessary, and the detachment's return to the settlement would take place immediately after the first ship arrived.

The marines had been at times greatly distressed for necessaries, and particularly for shoes, being occasionally employed on services which destroyed more than the men could afford to pay for, and shoes had been frequently given to those who were the most distressed. Since the arrival of the ships in June, application was made by the senior officer of marines for a supply of blankets and shoes, for which the Commissary has taken receipts, in order to their paying for what they have received; and I certainly could not have intended to exclude those on duty at Norfolk Island from the same advantage, if necessary. Many of the inferior officers in this colony have had shoes and other articles which were sent out for the convicts, or they must have otherwise been greatly distressed.

1791

1 March.

Provisions
and clothing
sent to
Norfolk
Island.

Spirits.

How the
liquor was
distributed.

Shoes and
blankets.

1791

1 March.

No
landing-
places.Lient.
Bradley's
survey.Maintenance
of the
convicts.Resources of
Norfolk
Island.Concessions
to settlers.Sixty acres
of land.

Captain Hunter, from the time he remained on the island, will be able to give you, sir, some information respecting the landing there, which is made better by the seamen having removed some loose rocks which lay in the passage through the reef. That officer is of the general opinion that when a landing-place is made at Cascade Bay (on the north side of the island) boats will always find a tolerably good landing at one or other of the landing-places, except the weather is very bad.

Lieutenant Bradley* surveyed the island, and will have the honor of delivering you a copy of the survey. It may now be judged what number of people the island will be able to support.

The Lieutenant-Governor's plan for rendering the convicts independent of the store is enclosed.† I fear, from the information I have received from those who have been on the island from the time it was first settled, and from what I hear from the officers of the *Sirius*, that the time to be allowed the convicts will not be sufficient to answer the end proposed; but I have approved of the plan, if it can be carried into execution, and have recommended the Lieutenant-Governor giving more time to those who are willing to accept the proposals he had made them, if he finds it necessary. It is certain, from the information of every one who has been any time on the island, that all vegetable productions are in the greatest abundance, and that the labour of clearing the land is not so great by far as what we find it in this settlement; and nothing prevents the removal of all the convicts to that place but the difficulty of landing provisions. This I had the honour of pointing out in my former letters. The island is small, and it may be supposed that there are nearly as many people in this country as Norfolk Island would maintain if the numbers were not to increase.

Of those who had been some time on the island, and who had cleared land with a view of remaining as settlers, but who are now come to Port Jackson, two marines belonging to the *Sirius*, who went to the island when it was first settled, are to return; and as I am sensible it would be impossible for them to maintain themselves after the expiration of twelve months, as the present season for sowing grain will be passed before they can get any ground cleared and prepared to receive it, I have found it necessary, in order to retain some useful men in the colony, to deviate from the instructions I have received on that head, which I hope will be approved of. What I granted to the two marines I have thought necessary to grant to eight seamen, late belonging to the *Sirius*, as they will be useful men when ships are landing provisions and stores.

Each person is to have sixty acres of land; half an acre is to be cleared, and huts built for them. They are to be maintained eighteen months from the public store, and some cloathing is to be

* First Lieutenant of H.M.S. *Sirius*.

† Ante, p. 445.

given them, with the necessary quantity of grain for seed, tools, and implements of husbandry, with such a proportion of poultry and hogs as the settlement can afford. 1791
1 March.

You will, sir, be pleased to determine the quantity of land to be granted on Norfolk Island to future settlers. From the richness of the soil, and the island's being so very small, I presume the quantity of ground as determined in the instructions to be given to the marines and convicts who may become settlers will be thought too great. Terms of settlement at Norfolk Island.

I suppose, from the information of others, that the island may contain from eight to nine thousand acres of ground that can be cultivated. 8,000 or 9,000 acres of arable land.

Two seamen who are desirous of becoming settlers at this place will likewise be supported from the public store for eighteen months; and from their having been very industrious while on Norfolk Island, I hope they will be able to support themselves at the expiration of that time. Sailor settlers.

I shall not deviate from the additional instructions relative to settlers* in future, unless it should be particularly pointed out as necessary by the Lieutenant-Governor for those marines now at Norfolk Island who wish to settle there; and when the relief takes place it is probable that it may at a season so far favorable to them that a year's support from the public store may be fully sufficient. The necessary instructions relative to such of the marines as might wish to become settlers were sent to the Lieutenant-Governor, and by his returns it appears that seven men belonging to the detachment now on duty on the island wish to remain there. Instructions will be observed.

The crops of corn at Norfolk Island have this year been nearly destroyed by the caterpillar and grub; but I am told that is not the case when the grain is put into the ground at an earlier season, and which the Lieutenant-Governor informs me will be attended to in future. The crops.

I have, &c.,
A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE
[LORD GRENVILLE].

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 4th March, 1791. 4 March.

To the information I had the honor of giving you in my letters by the ships which sailed from hence in July last I have little to add respecting the state of this colony. The supply of provisions brought by those ships enabled us once more to proceed with the public buildings, and in clearing and cultivating the land. Three stores, sufficient to contain two years' provisions for the settlement, are built here and at Rose Hill; they are of brick, and tiled, so that we are no longer under any apprehensions of an accident from fire. State of the colony.

* Ante, p. 256-258.

- 1791** A barrack is likewise finished at Rose Hill for an hundred men, and the officers' barracks will be finished by the end of May, immediately after which barracks for officers and men will be began at this place. The want of limestone still obliges us to confine our buildings to a certain height, for although the clay is of a strong, binding nature, we cannot with safety carry the walls of those buildings more than twelve feet above the ground, as the rains are at times very heavy, and should they come on before the clay is thoroughly dry, the walls would be in danger from the great weight of the roof. In their present state they will, however, stand for a great number of years.
- 4 March.** All the convicts at Rose Hill are now in good huts, and what convicts may be sent out in future will be employed there, those excepted who may be sent to Norfolk Island. At Sydney no more convicts will be kept than what are necessary for carrying on the public buildings, and as servants to those to whom Government grants that indulgence.
- Buildings.** From June until the present time so little rain has fallen that most of the runs of water in the different parts of this harbour have been dried up for several months, and the run which supplies this settlement is greatly reduced, but still sufficient for all culinary purposes. At Rose Hill, although the brook is greatly reduced, the run is sufficient for any number of people, and there are still several large ponds of good water in different parts of the country, where I have proposed fixing settlers. I do not think it probable that so dry a season often occurs. Our crops of corn have suffered greatly from the dry weather, although they turn out better than were expected; but in losing the man mentioned in my last letters as the person who had the directing the convicts' labour at Rose Hill*, and who was the only person in this settlement equal to that charge, the settlement has sustained a great loss. On his death I appointed one of the superintendents in his place, who is a good farmer; but, sir, the directing the labour of the convicts in cultivating a country such as this will seldom be done to any effect but by those who are immediately interested in the labour of those they have under their care. It requires greater exertion and a closer attendance to the convicts to draw any very great advantage from their labour than what every man, though willing, may be capable of, and much more than the generality of men feel themselves bound to give for a salary of forty or fifty pounds a year; and, after three years' experience, I am not only fully persuaded that the sending out settlers, amongst whom the greatest part of the convicts should be distributed and supported by Government for a certain time, on some such plan as proposed in my former
- Distribution of convicts.**
- Drought.**
- Crops suffering.**
- Death of Dodd.**
- Settlers necessary.**

* Henry Edward Dodd. He came out from England as Phillip's servant. He was in charge of the Government farm, and had 100 men under his control. He was the only capable superintendent in the settlement.

letters, is necessary, but I am persuaded that a large body of convicts on the account of Government will not answer any good purpose until the country can support itself. 1791
4 March.

The convict, however, must be fed, and to him it is very immaterial at what expence. The person I have now appointed to direct the convicts' labour will want some assistance—and I have in a former letter requested that a proper person might be sent out to be charged with the cultivation of the ground and the collecting and distributing the grain. Something more than a common farmer will be necessary, if the convicts are to be continued on the account of the Crown. Convicts must be fed.

The Commissary is directed to make the necessary returns of stores and provisions; and I hope the speedy arrival of ships from England will prevent the reducing the present ration, which is far from being so satisfactory as the established ration would be. There are neither pease nor butter in the colony, nor any spirits, except the remains of what was sent out for the use of the Sirius. I know not whether it is the intention of Government to allow spirits to the new corps, raised for the service of this country, and to the civil department, or not. The flour brought from Batavia is full one-sixth bran, though purchased at an excessive price, and the rice is bad. You will, sir, readily conceive that where inconveniences are felt, which are not met with in the common course of service, if despondency and discontent once take place, they spread, and are not easily removed. Stores running short.

The Provost-Marshal appointed in England having never appeared, the necessity of such an officer has made me detain Mr. Henry Brewer, late midshipman of the Sirius. He has acted as Provost-Marshal three years, and I beg leave to recommend him for the appointment. Provost-Marshal.

Two small pieces of cloth, made at Norfolk, are forwarded with my dispatches, and the letter I received from the superintendent who was sent there to attend particularly to the cultivation of the flax-plant, by which it will be seen that there are some articles necessary which we cannot make in this country, the want of which, and not having any oil when the flax was dressed, is, I am told, the reason the cloth is so very indifferent. A quantity of flax-seed is likewise sent home. Norfolk Island cloth.

At Rose Hill, two hundred and thirteen acres will be sown this year. The progress made in agriculture since last June has been considerable; and I hope we shall be enabled, by the arrival of the necessary supplies of provisions, to continue our labours. Farming at Rose Hill.

Black cattle are much wanted, and for the security of which inclosures have been made, and the timber thinned on the ground, so that we shall not in future risk their loss. Black cattle wanted.

His Majesty's ship Sirius will, I presume, be replaced, and the Supply, armed tender, relieved, as the repairs that vessel will soon

1791

4 March.

stand in need of cannot well be given in this country. I therefore beg leave to observe that two ships will be necessary for the station, and that the most useful will be from three to four hundred tons burthen.

Two ships
necessary.

The want of two small vessels has been mentioned in my former letters.

Guard-ship.

The guard-ship mentioned in my former letters would be very convenient; but there is not that necessity for such a ship at present as there was when I made the request.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE
[LORD GRENVILLE].

5 March.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, March 5th, 1791.

Expirees.

In my former letters I have requested instructions relative to those convicts who say that the terms for which they were sentenced are expired, and who, refusing to become settlers, desire to return to England. To compel these people to remain may be attended with unpleasant consequences; for they must be made to work, if fed from the publick store; and if permitted to be their own masters, they must rob, for they have no other way to support themselves.

A difficulty.

The language they hold is, that the sentence of the law has been carried into execution, that they are free men, and wish to return. I have no means of knowing when the sentences of any of the convicts expire who came out in the first ships. Many of these people would find a passage to China in the ships which stop here, if those ships were permitted to receive them on board; but here are many, whose sentences are said to be expired, that no ship would receive, aged and infirm.

Convicts as
soldiers.

Three or four convicts offer themselves as soldiers.

I hope, sir, to receive your instructions on this head by the first ships; for though there has been no very great impropriety in the conduct of any of those who say the time is expired for which they were sentenced, it is more than probable that they will become troublesome as their numbers increase. Since my last letters, two convicts have been emancipated—one from his very meritorious behaviour and the great service he has rendered the colony by his own labour, and by instructing others, in the business of a bricklayer.

Emanci-
pated con-
victs
allowed to
return to
England.

The other was particularly recommended by the Lieutenant-Governor as having been the means of saving the *Sirius* from being burned, after that ship went on shore. Both these men will be permitted to return to England.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE
Sir, [LORD GRENVILLE].*

1791
March.

The increase of people in the colony, and two surgeons being requisite at Norfolk Island, having made it necessary to appoint an additional assistant-surgeon, the surgeon's first mate of his Majesty's late ship *Sirius*, Mr. Thomas Jamison, having acted in that capacity from the time the island was settled in March, 1788, until February, 1791, whose good conduct and knowledge in his profession gave him a claim, is appointed by Commission, dated the 4th of March, 1791, and I beg leave to recommend him for a confirmation of the Commission I have given him as assistant-surgeon to this territory, and for such a gratuity for his three years' attendance to the duty, prior to his appointment, as he may be deemed to merit.

Assistant
Surgeon
Jamison.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

LORD CHATHAM TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)†

Sir, Admiralty, March 9th, 1791.

9 March.

I received the favor of your letter, and in consequence will lose no time in giving the necessary directions for preparing a vessel for the purpose of the expedition to procure the bread-fruit. I have not lately seen Captain Bligh, but I trust his health is enough re-established to undertake this service. I have sent to desire to see him, in order to concert with him what sort of vessel may be best adapted to the object in view.‡

The
bread-fruit
expedition.

The idea you suggest of a tender to accompany him certainly appears highly proper.

I am, &c.,

CHATHAM.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO LIEUTENANT BALL.

Sir, 10th March, 1791.

10 March.

I received on the 20th of Dec'r by Lieut. King, and immediately communicated to my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'y, your letter of the 29th July last, enclosing a journal of your passage from Port Jackson, and an account of the state and condition of the armed tender under your command, together with a copy of the orders you had received from Gov'r Phillip, and informing their Lordships of your arrival at Batavia, of your having obtained an order from the Governor and Council there to freight a vessel with provisions for the colony at Port Jackson, and of your intention to return again thither in eight or ten days; and, in return, I am commanded by their Lordships to acquaint you that they approve of your proceedings, and to observe to you that the

The
Supply.

Lieut. Ball's
proceedings.

* Undated. Written about 5th March, 1791.

† Endorsed by Sir Joseph Banks: "Ld. Chatham, March 9, '91."

‡ The *Bounty*, which was seized by mutineers when in command of Captain Bligh, had been fitted out to carry the bread-fruit tree from the Society Islands to the West Indies. The expedition having failed, another was undertaken, which proved successful. The *Providence*, a 28-gun ship was chosen for the service, and the command given to Bligh.

1791 land you fell in with, and which in your journal is called Ball's
 10 March. Maiden Land, had been before discovered by Messrs. Surville and
 A re- Bougainville, as well as by Lieut. Shortland on his return from
 discovery. New So. Wales. I am, &c.,
 P.S.

MEMO. BY LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING.*

10th March, 1791.

A dormant
commission.

If Governor Phillip should be dead when I arrive at Port Jackson, and Major Ross should not choose to give up the government of Norfolk Island and come home. In that case ought I not to have a dormant commission to superceed Major Ross?

Criminal
Courts at
Norfolk
Island.

A certain number of officers should be stationed at Norfolk Island to compose the criminal courts; and as it will be necessary to have a president, who is to perform that office? and whoever it is, a sett of common-form law books should be furnished.

Clergyman.

If I may hold out any encouragement to a person to officiate as a clergyman untill one arrives?

Live stock.

Cannot the transports be ordered to take on board a proportion of stock from the Cape, or the Rio de Janeiro, if any of them should touch there?

MEMO. BY LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING.

12 March.

12th March, 1791.

Judge-
Advocate.

As the precept for assembling the criminal court on Norfolk Isl'd is to come from Port Jackson, who is to preside at that court as the Judge-Advocate? because the Act says the court is to consist of the Dy. Judge-Advocate and six officers.

Law-books.

Some copies of the Act of Parliament and a sett of law books will be necessary.

Clergyman.

As it will be necessary for someone to officiate as a clergyman, may I hold out any hope of a person officiating as such that he will have any advantage from it?

LORD GRENVILLE TO THE SECRETARY AT WAR.

12 March.

Sir,

Whitehall, 12th March, 1791.

N. S. Wales
Corps.

His Majesty having judged it expedient that the strength of the corps which had been raised for service in New South Wales should be increased in the manner stated in the enclosed estimate,† I have received his Majesty's commands to desire you will take the necessary means for that purpose.

Augmenta-
tion.

The vessels which are intended for the conveyance of the troops composing this augmentation will be ready to proceed with them to New South Wales early in the month of April, by which time it is hoped they will be ready to embark. I am, &c.,

GRENVILLE.

* King was promoted on the 2nd March, 1791, from the rank of Lieutenant in the Navy to that of Commander.

† The enclosure is not available.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1791

Sydney, New South Wales,

14 March.

Sir,

14th March, 1791.

I have the honor to acquaint you, for the information of my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, that the return of the Supply, armed tender, from Batavia, having put it in my power to send for the officers and seamen who had remained on Norfolk Island after the loss of his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, they were sent for accordingly; and as so many months had passed since I had reason to expect the *Gorgon* to arrive, that I concluded the destination of that ship had been changed, or that some accident had befallen her, the Dutch vessel that bought the provisions from Batavia was hired to carry them to England. She was taken into the service as a transport the 7th of February, 1791.

The crew of the *Sirius*.

Transport to England.

The Supply lost five men in the voyage, and left six in the hospital at Batavia. Mr. Newton Fowell, who I had appointed second lieutenant of the *Sirius* (when Lieutenant King was sent to Norfolk Island), and the gunner of the *Sirius*, likewise died on the voyage. Both these officers were to have been landed at Norfolk Island had the Supply made it in her passage to Batavia. The gunner had been left sick when the *Sirius* sailed.

Death of Fowell.

Since the loss of the *Sirius*, the purser, Mr. John Palmer, has been appointed Commissary, and Mr. Thomas Jamison, who was surgeon's first mate of the *Sirius*, to be an assistant surgeon to the colony. Two petty officers remain, the one as provost-marshal, the other as a storekeeper; two marines and ten seamen have been received as settlers, and two remain employed in the colony. They are all discharged from that ship's books. Lieut. George William Maxwell, who my former letters mention having been superceded as being insane, and in which state he still continues, returns to England in the transport; and I beg leave to recommend to their Lordships for a confirmation of the commission he has received, Mr. Henry Waterhouse, who was appointed to act as third lieutenant of the *Sirius*, when Lieut. Maxwell was discharged from that ship.

Palmer and Jamison.

Maxwell.

Waterhouse.

Lieutenant Thomas Edgar and Mr. Richard Ayley [Alley], who were sent out in the *Lady Juliana*, transport, and Mr. John Turnpenny Atree, who came out as surgeon in one of the transports that left England in May, 1787, and who has been since employed at Norfolk Island, returns to England in this transport.

Officers returning to England.

Their Lordships will, I presume, have ordered the *Sirius* to be replaced, and as from the carpenter's report of the Supply's defect, which is inclosed, it is probable that vessel will be ordered to England, I beg leave to observe that two ships will be requisite for the service of this colony, and that the most useful would be ships of from three to four hundred tons burthen, with flush decks.

Two war-ships required.

1791

14 March.

Survey of
Norfolk
Island.

I have in my former letters mentioned how very useful two small schooners would be in this country.

Hunter.

Lieutenant Bradley has surveyed Norfolk Island, and will deliver a copy of his survey to the Board. That officer left England as first lieutenant of the *Sirius*, and as the first lieutenants on the different stations have been promoted to the rank of master and commander, I hope their Lordships will be pleased to think his services in this country deserving that favour which has been shewn to others. Captain Hunter will be able to give their Lordships any information they may desire respecting this and the adjacent harbours or Norfolk Island.

The state and condition of his Majesty's armed tender *Supply*, and returns of the detachment of marines doing duty in this colony, are enclosed.*

The
marines.

Those marines who had belonged to the *Sirius* are added to the strength of the detachment (the two excepted who had become settlers), by which means the number of non-commissioned officers and drummers which were fixed when the detachment left England is increased by one sergeant, one corporal, and one drummer; but which I was under the necessity of doing, as the commanding officer of the detachment thought they would not otherwise be amenable to a court-martial. I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 14th March, 1791.

You will please to inform the Right Honorable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that the purser of his Majesty's late ship *Sirius* having since the loss of that ship been appointed Commissary to this colony,† I have directed Mr. Walker, who acted as captain's clerk on board the *Sirius* from the arrival of that ship in this country, to take charge of the provisions and cloathing put on board the *Waaksamheyd*, transport, for the use of the *Sirius's* late ship's company in their passage to England.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

LIEUTENANT MENZIES TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)

Sir Joseph, Discovery, Falmouth, March 14th, 1791.

Dispute with
Capt.
Vancouver.

I wrote to you a few days before we left Portsmouth, but said nothing relative to my mess, as I was then in hopes that Capt. Vancouver's presence might bring the business to a more favourable settlement. On the contrary, I found he was as averse as any of the rest to submit it to the arbitration of any impartial judge acquainted with the rules of the Navy. In this situation

* Not recorded.

† Mr. John Palmer. He succeeded Mr. Andrew Miller, the first Commissary.

I resolved to mess in my own cabin, but finding that the few utensils and other things necessary to be laid in for so long a voyage would lumber it up so much that the intention of giving me such a good one might be entirely destroyed, I therefore waited on Capt. Vancouver the day we left Spithead, and, situated as I was, submitted the whole business to his own decision (tho' I well knew it would fall heavy upon me unless the Treasury would bear a part). In consequence of this I am admitted into the gun-room mess on being considered as a member of it from its first establishment, and paying an equal share towards it; that is, I paid £20 to the former mess without receiving the least indulgence for it, and £70 to the present mess before I lived a day in it, which is as equal from its first commencement and for the present supplies laid in for the voyage. As this is an imposition which I never expected I should be obliged to countenance, I must now trust my cause entirely into your hands, and hope the Treasury will allow me for that part of the expense incurred in the present mess before I joined the Discovery, which will amount at least to about £20, and may be included in the order for the payment of the arrears of my salary at present in the Treasury, in the same manner as the former was, without much additional trouble, to Mr. Nepean. In so doing you will greatly oblige he who has the honor to be with due respect,

1791

14 March.

Unfair
arrange-
ment.

Yours, &c.,

ARCH'D MENZIES.

ANDREW WAUGH TO THE HOME OFFICE.

Edinburgh, 15th March, 1791.

15 March.

Plan for Supplying Botany Bay with Provisions from Bengal.

I BEG leave to introduce the following proposals for supplying the British settlement at Botany Bay with provisions from Bengal by enumerating the different articles necessary for that purpose, and giving the average price of each distinct commodity at the Bengal market :—

Provisions
from Bengal.

A sina rupee is equal to 2s. 3d. British; a bazar maund is equal to 80 lb., but shall estimate it at $\frac{3}{4}$ cwt. Price of commodities.

Good cargo rice is sold at Bengal at 1 to 1 $\frac{3}{4}$ rupees per maund.

Do. doll (a species of split peas) at 1 $\frac{1}{2}$ to 2 rupees pr maund.

Do. ghee (prepared buffalo's butter) at 10 rupees pr maund.

Do. wheat, at an average, the same price as rice.

Do. peas, at 4 rupees pr maund.

Do. sea biscuit, little inferior to British, 4 rupees pr mdl.

Do. sugar, at 4 to 10 rupees pr md.

Do. arrack, or rum, at 1 rupee pr gallon.

Oil, vinegar, mustard, and wax candles equally reasonable.

Good cattle, at 20 to 30 rupees pr head, stall fed, average £2 16s. 3d.

1791

15 March.

Good sheep, fatten'd, at 40 rupees pr score, or 4s. 6d. each.

Do. geese, do., at 3 rupees pr pair.

Do. ducks, do., at 12 rupees pr hundred, or 4d. each.

Do. fowls, do., at 14 rupees per do., or 4d. each.

Wholesome
food.

That rice, doll, and ghee united, I am thoroughly convinced, make a wholesome and very substantial food, and I would propose the following proportion of each, vizt. :— $1\frac{1}{2}$ lb. of rice, $\frac{1}{2}$ lb. doll, $\frac{1}{4}$ lb. ghee, to make an ample allowance for each person per diem, and can be effected for less than fourpence, which must, of consequence, be a very great saving to Government.

Calculation :

	£	s.	d.
1 bag of rice containing 168 lb. at an average is	0	8	0
42 lb. doll, at $1\frac{3}{4}$ rupees pr md. ...	0	1	$11\frac{1}{2}$
21 lb. ghee at 10 rupees pr md. ...	0	5	$7\frac{1}{2}$
Freight of a bag of rice from Bengal, to Botany Bay, at 6 rupees, or ...	0	13	6
Do. proportionate quantity of doll ...	0	3	$4\frac{1}{2}$
Do. do. of ghee	0	1	8
And making an allowance for accidents of	0	0	$4\frac{1}{2}$

£1 14 6 supplies.

With this wholesome food one hundred and twelve persons, $3\frac{3}{4}$ d. per day. which does not exceed threepence three farthings a day each, and as fish are upon the coasts in great abundance, and can be obtained with little trouble, and at a very inconsiderable expence, I can make no hesitation in saying the inhabitants of Botany Bay would then be supplied with the necessary provisions.

Freight from
Bengal.

It is requisite that I mention the usual mode of freighting ships from Bengal for a distant voyage such as Botany Bay, which is done either by the month, for six months certain, by the voyage completed, or by the packages on board, the freight of which are charged agreeable to the size or value. A ship of six hundred tons burthen must be paid at the rate of forty thousand sina rupees, or four thousand five hundred pounds per month for the whole voyage, or six thousand rupees per month, if agreed for in that manner. So a bag of rice, gross weight one hundred and sixty-eight pounds, will pay of freight from Bengal to Botany Bay six rupees, *i.e.*, thirteen shillings and sixpence English, and with its original cost amounts to one pound one shilling and sixpence per bag.

Opening
for trade.

I am of opinion no difficulty can arise in the navigation, and that it might have the good effect of opening, and in all probability establishing, an intercourse with the inhabitants of the coast of New Holland, as it may naturally be supposed ships in that trade would be unwilling to return without at least attempting

some kind of traffic with the natives, if such thing was found practicable. And should any useful discovery be made in trade, and the navigation render'd more easy, Government would reap the advantage of having their freights there considerably lower, and consequently the colony receive their supplies upon more advantageous terms. 1791
15 March

It is likewise well known that the islands in the Pacific Ocean can afford them many supplies, and it appears beyond a doubt that the settlement will in the course of a very few years be possessed of every necessary of life in the greatest abundance. Supplies
from the
Islands.

If the climate and soil are congenial, I would earnestly recommend the planting two hundred thousand cocconut and palmira trees in the vicinity of the settlement, which would in the space of twenty years afford them drink, oil, vinegar, ropes, sails, fishing lines and nets, mats, and rafters for houses; two hundred thousand plantain, banana, breadfruit, papa, mangoe, and tark trees, all of which in the lifetime of the present generation would produce infinite advantage to the inhabitants. Cultivation
of tropical
food-plants.

I have further to observe, to excite Government to the above plan, that Bengal is not so distant as the Cape of Good Hope from Botany Bay, and the ships have two tracks to pursue, either to the eastward or westward of New Holland, which will make it more easy the performance of the voyage in the different seasons in India. An easy
route.

ANDREW WAUGH.

LIEUTENANT BALL TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

His Majesty's armed tender Supply,
Sir, Sydney Cove, Port Jackson, 15th March, 1791. 15 March.

The multiplicity of business, and being in a bad state of health when at Batavia, prevented my communicating to my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty the state of his Majesty's armed tender under my command.

I therefore beg you will please to inform their Lordships that herewith I have enclosed the state and condition (with the marine returns) of his Maj's said armed tender under my command for their Lordships' inspection, and with all due submission to their Lordships, I beg to say the Supply will be very much worn by the time she can be got to England, should it pleas their Lordships to order her to be relieved. State of the
Supply.

I likewise beg to acquaint you, for their Lordships' further information, that the repairs his Maj's armed tender will require in another year can't possibly be done in this country, there being no shipwrights, as well the very badness of the timber, which is not fit for decks and topsides. She cannot
be repaired
in the
colony.

I am to request you will please to moove their Lordships to [allow me to] return to England for the benefit of my health (having laboured under a violent illness for these several months past, and Lieut. Ball
asks for
leave.

1791

15 March.

my life greatly dispaired of), shou'd it not please their Lordships to relieve the Supply from this station ; and as well to settle some private family affairs which can't be done without my presence.

The officers
and men also
ask to be
relieved.

The violent and shocking putrid fever which raiged on board the Supply at Batavia, and since we were there,* has graity impaired the constitutions of allmost all the officers and men of the Supply, that I much fear they will not get re-established in this country. And pray you will, as well as for myself, pleas moove their Lordships to have them likewise relieved, as I have been petitioned by them all to beg that favour from their Lordships, but with propriety and good decorom.

I am, &c.,

H. L. BALL.

MAJOR GROSE TO SIR GEORGE YONGE.

17 March.

Sir,

Salopian Coffee House, 17 March [1791].

Inspection.

As many advantages will occur by a seperate inspection of the companies raised in augmentation to the New South Wales Corps, I have to hope that you will consent to this arrangement. You will perceive, sir, by it that officers will, then be collected immediately to take charge of the recruits, who will, of course, when under the care of commissioned officers, be more expeditiously trained and put into order for the duty required of them than when left only to the care of serjeants. In addition to this, it will take a great deal of trouble off my hands, and I shall consequently be able much easier to perform my engagements.

I have, &c.,

FRANS. GROSE.

LIEUTENANT MENZIES TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)

20 March.

Sir Joseph,

Discovery, Falmouth, March 20th, 1791.

An
unfortunate
situation.

Insufficient
outfit.

Will the
Captain
assist?

In the dark.

I have this day received my instructions by a messenger, which is just arrived from the Admiralty, and while I report myself ready to undertake them as far as lay in my power, I cannot help lamenting the situation in which they place me in, by not being empowered to ask for a boat at any time from the ship, or the least assistance whatever ; by not being empowered to claim the least article of trade to carry my instructions into execution in uncivilised countries ; and by being instructed, contrary to my expectation, to deliver up on my return whatever collection I may make of animals, minerals, and curiosities, without having that liberal outfit which might enable me to procure and collect them to advantage for my employers and credit to myself. But the captain is, perhaps, instructed to aid and assist me in each of these particulars. How am I to know that ? It would not, surely, be inconsistent with the service to let me have a copy of that part of his instructions which relates to myself, that I might know what latitude I was to have, for at present I have not the

* Lieutenant Fowell, Gunner Ross, and several of the seamen died.—Collins, vol. I, p. 158.

least authority to apply to him in any instance whatever; and what is more distressing, I shall be obliged, probably, to go to sea in this situation before I can receive an explanation on the subject. But be that as it may, I again assure you that no part of my endeavours shall be wanting to accomplish the object of my mission as far as may lay in my own power, and shall confidently look up to you, and you alone, on my return for that liberal indulgence which my situation may merit.

We now only wait the arrival of the Chatham, which is hourly expected from Portsmouth, to join us, and then we shall bid adieu—a long adieu—to the English shore.

I have, &c.,

ARCHIBALD MENZIES.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 21st March, 1791. 21 March.

This will be delivered to you by Mr. John Turnpenny Altree, who came from England in the Lady Penrhyn, transport, with the first fleet. During the passage out he assisted in the attendance of such convicts on board the ship as required medical treatment, and has been since that time employed at Norfolk Island by Mr. King, the late commandant, and by the Lieutenant-Governor as an assistant to the surgeon there, and in clearing and cultivating the land, in which line he conducted himself, as far as I am informed, to the satisfaction of those who employed him, until he left the island, for which services he has never received any compensation except twelve pounds, which, since his arrival here, I have directed the Commissary to pay him.

What his future views are he can best explain. He wishes to return, and the character given of him by Lieutenant King and Captain Hunter inclines me to wish he may succeed. He will, I presume, be thought to merit some little recompence for the time he was on Norfolk Island, and his demands will not, I believe, be very great. He was in the militia as lieutenant and surgeon's mate, and wished to be received here as a subaltern in the New South Wales Corps.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 23rd March, 1791. 23 March.

The bearer, Mr. Roger Morley, came out from England with the first fleet, and has been employed at Norfolk Island as a storekeeper from the establishment of that settlement until the eleventh of February, 1791, for which service he has only received fifty pounds. He no doubt will be thought deserving of some further recompence, and as he is desirous of returning to this country with his family, it may answer the purpose of Govern-

1791 ment to grant him some little advantage as a settler, more than
 23 March. what may be allowed those who have not his claim for past
 services. I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

25 March. Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 25th March, 1791.
 I have the honor to inclose the copy of a letter I have
 this day received from those officers now here who composed the
 battalion court-martial on the 18th of March, 1788, and who
 were put under arrest by Major Ross.*

You will, sir, please to lay it before their Lordships.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

OFFICERS OF MARINES TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Marine Quarters, Sydney, Port Jackson,

Sir, 25th March, 1791.

Three years' arrest. We beg leave to represent to your Excellency that on the
 18th instant the period of three years since the day of our being
 put in arrest by our Commandant, Major Ross, for disobedience
 of orders as members of a court-martial, expired.

The regulations. In pointing out to your Excellency's observation that the Act
 of Parliament for the regulation of his Majesty's marine forces
 while on shore enacts that "no person shall be tried for any
 offence, desertion excepted, committed more than three years
 before issuing the warrant for such trial," we beg it may be fully
 and perfectly understood that we ask the exertion of this law,
 not as culprits conscious of having committed a crime which we
 shrink to have investigated or hesitate to meet, but as soldiers
 indignant at the novelty and disgrace of a situation unexampled
 in the British military annals—the members of a court-martial
 under arrest on a charge which, if proved against them, extends
 not only to the deprivation of their most gracious Sovereign's
 favour and dismissal from his service, but to the forfeiture of
 their lives and honours, doing duty as prisoners, from the neces-
 sity of service, for three years.

Prisoners doing duty. Of the readiness and alacrity we have ever manifested to face
 our accuser we trust it would be unnecessary to adduce instances.
 Anxious for investigation, Your Excellency is fully apprised of the unanimous and deter-
 mined resolution with which we solicited by every legal and
 proper application a thorough investigation of the cause which
 during so long a period of time has held us up to our corps, to
 the British army, and to our country as injurers of the service
 whose prosperity we are bound to promote, and disturbers of the
 harmony of a settlement whose interests we are bound to protect.
 which cannot now take place. While a hope of relief from our situation by the decision of a general

court-martial existed, we were silent, we were patient. That hope is now at an end, and therefore to remain without representation longer in our present degraded situation would argue that we are become insensible of ignominy and familiar with humiliation. 1791
25 March,

There remains yet another motive for our present solicitation. It is possible that a promotion in the corps in which we serve may have taken place since the date of the last dispatches from England, in which case there is but too much reason to dread that our names may have been passed over as prisoners who had forfeited the common claim of service. Dear as promotion is to a soldier, we deem it but a secondary consideration when put in competition with the honour and preservation of our characters in the military profession. May we therefore request, sir, that you will be pleased to release us from a confinement under which we have so long laboured, that we may again be enabled to do our duty in the line with that confidence and security which should ever animate the soldier; and, farther, we entreat that you will have the goodness to transmit a copy of our letter to the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty. Probable
loss of
promotion.

Release
from arrest
asked for.

We cannot close this ungrateful subject without requesting that your Excellency will deign to accept our warm and sincere thanks for the patience with which you have ever listened to our representations, in the course of those frequent and tiresome explanations which a cause long protracted necessarily occasions, and also for the numerous and repeated marks of kindness and attention which you have at all times been pleased to honour us with. Phillip's
patience and
kindness.

It is in the humble confidence of being deemed neither ungrateful for your past or undeserving of your future protection that we beg to express a hope that your Excellency, in your dispatches to the Board of Admiralty, will be pleased to make known to their Lordships that we have not by misconduct forfeited our pretensions to their favour, and to any marks of remuneration which they may intend to confer on the marine battalion serving in this country. Officers not
guilty of
misconduct.

We have, &c.,

WATKIN TENCH, Capt.-Lt. and
President of the Court.

JOHN POULDEN, 1st Lieutenant.

THOS. DAVEY, 1st Lieutenant.

THOS. TIMINS, 1st Lieutenant.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE
[LORD GRENVILLE].

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, March 25th, 1791.

It is not without concern that I find myself obliged to request his Majesty's permission to return to England. Phillip
wishes to
return.

A complaint in the side, and from which, in more than two years, I have been seldom free has impaired my health, and at Impaired
health.

1791

25 March.

times puts it out of my power to attend to the charge with which his Majesty has been pleased to honor me in the manner I wish and the state of the colony requires.

The
settlement
established.

Leave of
absence
asked for.

The settlement is now so fully established that the great labour may be said to be past; and it has, sir, been attained under every possible disadvantage, though it is not in that situation in which I should wish to leave it, for it is not independent for the necessities of life; and, as I feel myself greatly interested in the good of a colony with the establishing of which I have been honored, and to which I should wish to return, if the cause which now obliges me to desire permission to leave it should be removed by the voyage, or by the assistance I may find in London, I therefore only request leave of absence from the Government.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. W. W. GRENVILLE
[LORD GRENVILLE].

26 March.

Sir,

Sydney, New South Wales, March 26th, 1791.

The New
South Wales
Corps.

Number of
officers
insufficient.

In my letter of the 14th of July, 1790 (No. 9), I had the honour of giving you my opinion that the corps raised for the service of this country would be competent to every duty for which they might be wanted. But, sir, I did not at that moment pay a proper attention to the number of officers who will compose that corps when the six companies are completed, one major-commandant, five captains, six lieutenants, and six ensigns,—and as Norfolk Island will require one captain and four subalterns, the number of commissioned officers who will remain in this settlement will not be sufficient to form a general court-martial.

You will, sir, be pleased to take that circumstance into consideration.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Dear Sir,

Sydney, March 26th, 1791.

Phillip's
note-book.

As I have hitherto sent home an account of those little circumstances which I thought might tend to give any information respecting this country or the natives, I have now, as usual, inclosed an extract from a book in which the occurrences of the day are set down. They are such as may not merit the attention of the Minister, and as they never were intended, so they certainly are not calculated, for the eye of the publick, having been put down in haste, and merely for the information of a friend; and so far from having had time to make any correction, they have been more than once, as they will now be, sent away without my having time to read them over.*

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

* The information referred to in this letter is not on record.

LORD GRENVILLE TO THE ADMIRALTY. (Banks Papers.)* 1791
 My Lords, Whitehall, 29th March, 1791. 29 March.

The attempt which was made by Captain Bligh, in his Majesty's ship the *Bounty*, to convey the bread-fruit-tree and other useful productions from the Society Island and other places in that part of the world to his Majesty's West India Islands, in pursuance of his Majesty's commands signified to your Lordships by Lord Sydney in his letter of the 5th of May, 1787, having unfortunately failed, his Majesty has thought it fit that a second trial should be made, and in order as much as possible to ensure its success it is his Majesty's intention that two vessels shall proceed together upon this service. His Majesty has, therefore, commanded me to signify to your Lordships his Majesty's pleasure that your Lordships are to give orders that two vessels of a proper class may forthwith be fitted for that purpose, and as soon as they shall be ready for sea your Lordships are to dispatch them in execution of this service.

The bread-fruit-tree for the West Indies.

A second trial.

Two vessels to be fitted out.

Mr. James Wiles and Mr. Christopher Smith, gardeners by profession, have been engaged for the purpose of selecting such plants as may be found of a proper species and size to be taken on board, and are to be borne in the same manner on the books of the two vessels as the two persons who were formerly sent on the same service. Gardeners.

I transmit to your Lordships herewith a list of the articles of merchandise which have been provided for the purpose of making presents to the natives of the several places from whence the trees and plants are intended to be procured, and also a copy of the instructions which have been given to the gardeners for the regulation of their conduct during such time as they shall be employed upon this service.†

Presents for natives.

I am, &c.,

GRENVILLE.

MAJOR GROSE TO SIR GEORGE YONGE.

Sir, Salopian Coffee House, 31 March [1791.] 31 March.

I have the satisfaction to report to you that the two companies ordered in augmentation to the New South Wales Corps are compleatly raised and ready for inspection—whenever you are pleased to direct it.

I have, &c.,

FRANS. GROSE.

GENERAL ORDER.—PORT JACKSON.

April 4th, 1791. 4 April.

No persons will be permitted to quit this colony, having a child or children or wives incapable of maintaining themselves, without first leaving a sufficient security for their support, to prevent their becoming burthensome to the settlement.

* Endorsed: "Copy of a letter from the Rt. Honble. Lord Grenville to the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, dated Whitehall, 29th March, 1791."

† The enclosures are absent.

1791

8 April.

WILLIAM FERGUSON TO LORD SYDNEY.*

My Lord,

Hoxton, April 8th, 1791.

Having a great desire to go as settler to Botany Bay, I wish to know if Governor Philip's proposals are agreed to by Government; if so, I should be happy in being sent as one. I am thirty years of age, and trust my character will bear strictest scrutiny. Waiting a reply, I am, &c.,

WILLIAM FERGUSON.

Adress to William Ferguson, junr., No. 1, Haberdasher Walk, Hoxton.

GENERAL ORDER.—PORT JACKSON.

9 April.

April 9th, 1791.

No boat is to be built by any individual in this settlement, whose length from stem to stem exceeds 14 feet, without having first obtained permission from head-quarters.

18 April.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.†

Dear Sir,

Gorgon, Teneriffe, April 18th, 1791.

After a very tedious passage of a month from Portsmouth, we arrived here the 15th inst., and I suppose shall sail about the 21st; but as no vessell is yet at this place bound to Europe, it will be some time before you can receive this.

Judicial
proceedings
at Norfolk
Island.

Law-books
required.

I must once more remind you of the necessity of some arrangement being made respecting the judicial proceedings on N. I. I am certain that when you consider the great number of inhabitants on that island, the necessity of that business being arranged will be obvious to you. A sett of common-form law books will be necessary, such as will give necessary information, and not lead one into the maze of law. I should think these books would be Burn's "Justice," Jacobs's "Law Dictionary," and Blackstone's "Commentaries." Should any other be necessary, I should suppose that a list of the books supplied Mr. Collins might be found at some of the offices.

Necessaries.

Coals, seines, fishing lines and hooks will also be great essentials, and absolutely necessary.

We have a great deal of room [rheum] on board the Gorgon, and I am fearfull we shall have as much all the passage.

Flax manu-
facture.

Should the manufacturing of the flax-plant on Norfolk Island be thought an object, which it must be, were it only to cloath those who are now there, two or three New Zealanders would be necessary, to show how the operation of separating the flaxy from the vegetable part of the plant is performed, and without that assistance I do not think we shall succeed, as every method we could devise has been tried already, but without success.

* The writer of this letter was apparently not aware that Lord Sydney had been succeeded at the Home Office by Lord Grenville.

† A private letter.

If there could be a possibility of my being allowed the whole of the salary from my leaving Norfolk Island till I arrive there again, it would make a material sum to me. Major Ross receives his appointment as Lt.-Governor *independent* of N.I., and so I came home *on service*. I refer my claim to your friendship, and if it is customary to make any allowance for expences going out, it will be a little help to me, as my mess to New South Wales will be near £50. Should this be a customary allowance, I hope I shall not be excluded, and have desired my agent to wait upon you. If the first is improper, and the second unusual, no more can be done.

1791

18 April.
Allowances.

The enclosed is a letter for Mr. Davidson, in which is a receipt for some articles sent on board the Gorgon, and which would have been sent from Spithead, but as our departure from Spithead soon followed my getting to Portsmouth, and having much to do, it did not occur to me till too late.

Two English ships, which from their appearance we took to be transports, passed this island on the 16th, standing to the southward. I believe Capt. P. [Parker] intends touching at St. Iago. I beg my respectfull comp'ts to Mrs. Nepean.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS TO MAJOR GROSE.

Sir,

W. O., 22nd April, 1791.

22 April.

I am directed to transmit to you the enclosed charge made by the ordnance department at Forton Barrk's against the corps under your command, and to desire you will defray the same.

I likewise enclose for your information a letter rec'd from the Lt.-Gov'r. of Portsmouth relative to this and some other matters, which letter you will be pleased to return after perusal.*

I have, &c.,

M. LEWIS.

MUTINY ON BOARD THE ALBEMARLE.†

Madeira, 24th April, 1791.

24 April.

On the 9th inst., in latt'd 44° 30' north, longitd. 15° 20' west, a number of the convicts were admitted upon deck early for the benefit of fresh air. In a favourable opportunity (when the principal part of the watch was aloft about the rigging) they made an attempt to take the ship from us, having previously prepared themselves overnight for that purpose. They began with knocking down the sentinels and taking their arms from them, which they easily effected, and were actually making their way aft to the cabin, the

Convicts
attack the
sentinels.Make their
way aft.

* The enclosures are not recorded.

† The MS. has neither address nor signature. It is apparently a portion of the report of Lieut. Young, who was in charge of the Albemarle, one of the transports. See King's letter to Nepean; post, p. 489.

1791
24 April. principal ringleader going to the helm with a cutlass in his hand he had just taken from one of the sentinels to cut down the helmsman and take possession of the wheel ; but, very fortunate for us all, I was upon deck at the time they began the insurrection, and immediately ran to the cabin for my blunderbus, met and shot the ringleader in the right shoulder ; feeling the smart of the wound, he down cutlas and run ; the others seeing their principal hero flying, immediately followed his example, and flew to the prison room and forehold, and left me in possession of the deck. I then muster'd all hands under arms, and sent a party below to search for those that had secreted themselves ; found three of the principals ; the first we got up instantly confessed the whole plot, and that the other two were the ringleaders and the original instigators of this horrid scene ; upon this information, and one of them being the man I had wounded, it was unanimously thought proper for the futer preservation of the ship and our lives, and to strike terror in the convicts, immediately to hang the two last at the fore-yard-arm ; this had the desired effect upon the convicts in general, who immediately sent us a letter confessing all their horrid intentions, and of taking the ship to America.

Are routed by one officer.

Confession.

Two mutineers hanged.

We are now very peaceable, and I am in hopes shall continue so during the remainder of the voyage The Matilda parted company the first night we left Portsmouth, the Active and Britannia on the night of the 3rd, and the Adm'l Barrington on the 7th in hard gale of wind, so that we had no ship in company.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN
Gorgon, Port Praya, St. Jago,

3 May. Dear Sir, May 3rd, 1791.

Although I have but little to say, yet I am certain that a line from every place we touch at must be acceptable. We anchored here this morning, and a French snow that sails this evening gives me an opportunity of writing this. The Britannia, Enderby's ship, came in with us. We met her off the Isle of May. As no boats have yet passed, I cannot inform you of her state, which I may do before this is closed.

At St. Jago

I wrote you from Teneriffe, which I hope you received. At that place I got some fig-trees, orange-trees, and vine-cuttings, which are now thriving, and will, I hope, do well. I also procured a quantity of fresh-gathered cotton seeds and a number of other seeds.

Plants and seeds.

There is an article at Teneriffe which I think will be found a very acceptable thing, and the cheapest thing of the kind, which is small hand millstones. A pair will last a hundred years, and will grind grain enough for the use of a family of ten persons. The price of them is 3s. 4d. a pair. These millstones, which the

Millstones.

Spaniards call *molitoras das mano* would certainly save the expence of the iron mills and prevent the erecting of mills, which will be found a weighty job at present. Any ship touching at Teneriffe might get a quantity; but it would be necessary for them to bespeak some on their first arrival, as I could not get more than four pairs, not knowing there was such a thing till just before we sailed. The Admiral Barrington anchored here this afternoon. This ship and the Britannia were in Mr. Young's division, and parted company with him near Cape Finisterre. As they had a rendezvous for this place they are put in here, but Lt. Young has not arrived with the Albemarle. The convicts, as well as soldiers, have been troublesome on board the Britannia, by the master's account. The Barrington has buried five convicts, and the Britannia three. They are both very healthy. I think, if Mr. Young does not come in here before the Britannia sails, that she will get to Port Jackson a month before the Gorgon, which by no means answers my expectations.

1791

3 May.

The transports.

Convicts and soldiers troublesome.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

May 4th.—The French brig does not sail till to-morrow, and as the Albemarle anchored here this morning, I am enabled to give you the following piece of information, but of course you will receive a fuller information from Mr. Young's letter to the Admiralty and Navy Board. It seems the convicts on board the Albemarle rose, with an intention of running away with the ship to America.* Mr. Young very properly hung two of the ring-leaders, and I believe a third was shot in the insurrection.

4 May.

Mutiny on board the Albemarle.

The Active is a missing ship of Lt. Young's division.†

LIEUTENANT MENZIES TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)

Sir Joseph,

Discovery, Teneriffe, May 5th, 1791.

5 May.

I received your last letter at Falmouth, but delayed writing to you in return until the Chatham should arrive from Portsmouth, which she did by the way of Gurnsey on the 31st of March, and as we left Falmouth early on the next morning, the final hour of our departure was so much occupied that it was not in my power to send on shore the few lines I had wrote to you from thence. The Chatham has been so lumbered on her decks with provisions, &c., that she proved top-heavy, and unable to carry sail sufficient to keep up with us. This, together with a succession of bad weather and contrary winds, occasioned a tedious passage to Madeira, which we did not make till the 24th of April, and a few squalls of wind off the land, with some intervals of calm, was, I believe, the only cause of our leaving the island next day for this place without any further perseverance to gain the intended road of Funchall. We arrived here on the 28th of April, and the fol-

The Chatham and the Discovery.

Madeira.

* Ante, p. 487.

† The Active arrived safely at Sydney.

- 1791 lowing day I waited on the Governor, with Capt. Vancouver, to
5 May. obtain his leave to botanize on the island during our stay, which
 he readily granted.
- Santa Cruz. I went on shore on Saturday, 30th, and examined all the variety
 of soil and situation in the neighbourhood of Sancta Cruz, and I
 cannot say that ever I traversed so much ground with so little
 pleasure, for near the town the country is so very barren that it
 affords but a scanty variety of plants of any denomination. I,
 therefore, proposed on Monday to make a more extensive excursion
 to the inland country, which I am told is a little more fertile,
 had it not been for an accident which happened on Sunday evening,
 and which had nearly turned out to be a very serious one.
 It was as follows :—Being a holy-day, a number of men from both
 vessels were permitted to take the recreation of the shore. Capt.
 Vancouver, with a party of the officers, rode to see the city of
 Laguna, about two leagues off, and returned to Sancta Cruz to
 dinner. In the afternoon the midshipman who went on shore
 for the liberty-men had a scuffle with the Chatham's people on
 the wharf, which induced the Spanish sentinels to interpose, and
 one of them had his musket wrenched out of his hands by one of
 our marines, upon which he immediately ran to alarm the guard.
 At this time Capt. V. and some of the officers came down to the
 waterside, and were endeavouring to get the people into the boats
 when the Spanish guard arrived, accompanied by a numerous
 mob, and began to knock down our men and officers without
 distinction. Capt. V. was thrown from the wharf into the
 sea, and luckily taken up by our boat without being much
 hurt. The attack then became so general that the H^ble Mr.
 Pit* and some others jumped into the sea and swam to the boat
 to save their lives. Mr. Baker, 3rd lieutenant of the Discovery,
 who was, indeed, the only officer armed and in full uniform,
 and had never shown the least sign to draw upon them, was
 knocked on the head in several places and wounded. Many
 of the men were likewise bruised and wounded in several places,
 but none, I believe, dangerously. The next day Capt. Vancouver
 wrote a letter of remonstrance to the Spanish Governor, complaining
 of the rough treatment he and his people had received on the
 preceeding day, and on Tuesday an ans'r was returned by the
 Governor, the purport of which was that he was extremely sorry
 for what had happened, and was then using his utmost endeavours
 to find out the transgressors and bring them to condeign punishment;
 that such of the guard as were concerned in the scuffle were in
 confinement, should be tryed for their conduct, and suffer whatever
 punishment a court-martial should think proper to inflict. But he
 complains much of our being the cause of the quarrel, and laments
 that Capt. V. was not in his uniform, on which the guard would
 certainly have paid him more respect.
- A misunderstanding.
- Officers and men attacked
- and wounded.
- Complaint made.
- Redress promised.

* The Hon. Thomas Pitt, son of Lord Camelford. Collins, vol. i., p. 363.

That the quarrel originated with our people is, I think, pretty evident from every information I can collect; but that the Spanish guard acted very unbecoming soldiers will not, I think, require much examination.

Since I wrote the above I have penetrated into the country a considerable way beyond the city of Laguna, and now entertain a very different idea of the fertility of the island in general, tho' I still think it cannot boast of a great variety of plants; indeed, I met with very few which I had not before seen. The Chatham has taken on board here fifteen or sixteen tons of shingle ballast, which has been the cause of our delay. We, however, leave this place to-morrow for the Cape of Good Hope, from whence you may expect to hear again from me.

I have, &c.,

A. MENZIES.

LORD GRENVILLE TO SIR GEORGE YONGE.

Sir, Whitehall, 18th May, 1791.

18 May.

I have received his Majesty's commands to desire you will give orders that Major Grose and one of the two companies of the corps under his command may embark as soon as possible on board the ship Pitt, now at Gravesend, and proceed in her to New South Wales. The other company is to continue here until the departure of the ships intended to be taken up for the conveyance of such convicts to New South Wales as may, after the summer assizes, be ordered for transportation.

N. S. Wales
Corps.

I am, &c.,

GRENVILLE.

SIR GEORGE YONGE TO MAJOR GROSE.

Sir, W.O., 18th May, 1791.

Having received the King's commands through the Sec'y of State that you, together with one of the comp's of your corps, should embark as soon as possible on board the ship Pitt, now at Gravesend, and proceed in her to New South Wales, I have the honour to signify to you H. M.'s pleasure, that you do embark on board the said ship at Gravesend as soon as she is ready for your reception.* The order for embarking the comp'y is sent to Chatham Barracks. The other comp'y is to remain here until the departure of the ships intended to be taken up for the conveyance of such convicts to N. S. Wales as may after the summer assizes be ordered for transportation.

Orders to
embark.

GEO. YONGE.

MAJOR GROSE TO SIR GEORGE YONGE.

Sir, Salopian Coffee House, May the 19th, 1791.

19 May.

I am honor'd with your letter of the 18th instant, and will take care that one of the two companies now quarter'd at Chatham shall be ready to embark when called on.

* The Pitt, with Major Grose and one company of the New South Wales Corps on board, sailed in July, 1791, and arrived at Port Jackson, February, 1792.

1791

19 May.

I feel it my duty to mention that several of the subaltern officers who were last appointed have not yet joined ; and I have also to request you will cause the captain of the transport to receive an order to victual the wives and children of the soldiers, he having given me to understand that he has not as yet receiv'd any instructions on this subject.

I am, &c.,

F. GROSE,

Major Com'g N.S.W. Corps.

WARRANT FOR ALLOWANCE.*

George R.

Augmenta-
tion of
corps.Allowance
for clothing.

Assignment.

WHEREAS we are pleased to order our corps of foot, serving in New South Wales, under the command of O. T. and W. Maj. Fs. [our trusty and well-beloved Major Francis] Grose, to be augmented by the addition of two companies, each consisting of 3 serj'ts, 3 corp's, 2 drum's, and 67 private men, besides comm'dg off's, and that the establish't of the said add'ns should commence on 24 Feb'y, '91, inclusive : And whereas we have been pleased to direct that the vacant men formerly allowed to the capt's of each bat'll'n of foot should be rendered eff't [effective], and that the allow'ce for their cloth'g should be included in the assignments ; and it appearing that by the above-m'd augmentation the Maj. Com'd't of our said corps is become entitled to an allow'ce for the cloth'g of three private men in each of the said comp's, in addition to the number, above specified, O. W. and P. [our will and pleasure] therefore is, that the general off's of our Cloth'g Board do pass and allow an assignment to be made by the said Maj. Fs. Grose for the cloth'g of the said add'ns, viz., 6 serj's, 6 corp's, 4 drum's, and 140 private men, from 24 Feb'y, '91, to 4 Oct'r foll'g, both inclus'e, for'th [forthwith].

Given, &c., 19 May, '91, in 31st year of our reign.

By his Majesty's command,

GEO. YONGE.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

3 July.

Sir,

Cape, July 3rd, 1791.

The Gorgon
at the Cape.

The Gorgon arrived in False Bay on the 22nd ult., which place was chosen to lye in in preference to Table Bay at this time of the year, when the gales at N.W. are violent, and the Table Bay is quite open to those winds. Immediately after our arrival here Captain Parker,† agreeable to his orders from the Admiralty, applied to Messrs. Petrus De Wit and John Kerstan, merchants, at this place, for any cattle or other stock that they might have ready to send to New South Wales. The answer Captain Parker received from those gentlemen was that they had no orders to get anything of that kind collected or in readiness either from

* War Office copy.

† In command of the Gorgon.

Government or from Governor Phillip ; but Mr. Petrus De Wit (the partnership having been dissolved between him and John Kerstan) having signified that he could in a short time procure any quantity of stock that might be wanted, and Captain Parker not thinking himself authorized to transact the business of paying for any articles that might be purchased by Mr. De Wit, he made application to me, which I have enclosed in the paper No. 2, as well as my answer to it, N. 3.*

1791

3 July.

Live stock.

No other consideration than the knowledge I have of the great want of black cattle, sheep, &c., to breed from, and having every reason to suppose that it was the intention of his Majesty's Ministers that stock should be transported from hence to New South Wales, could have induced me to take the unauthorized step of drawing for the payment on the Right Hon'ble the Lords Commissioners of his Majesty's Treasury ; and I have no doubt but when the prices, &c., are compared with former ones that his Majesty's Ministers will be convinced that no other motive than the good of his Majesty's service has operated with me in undertaking this business. The stock, &c., which I have ordered, and for which I mean to draw bills, are as p. margin.†

Drawing on
the
Treasury.

The Neptune and Lady Juliana from New South Wales by the way of China, and the Active, transport, from England, bound to Port Jackson, anchored in Table Bay on the 26th ult'o. The Neptune's departure being later from Port Jackson than any other ship, and as it is more than probable she will be detained at the Cape of Good Hope for some weeks, as she is in a bad state and wants many repairs, and a packet belonging to the Dutch East India Company being ready to sail for Europe, I thought a part of the publick letters (which were all enclosed in a cover to you) should be sent by this opportunity for the early information of Government. I therefore wrote the master of the Neptune, who is charged with the despatches, the enclosed letter No. 4,‡ and in the presence of Captain Parker and the master of the Neptune I opened the packet and divided the letters, part of which I put in another cover, and after sealing it delivered it to the master of the Neptune, and the others accompanies this, which, I hope, will meet with approbation. After a very minute enquiry of the master of the Neptune and Lady Juliana, and from a midshipman belonging to the Sirius (who is second mate of the Neptune), and finding that there is a great probability that every pound of salt provisions that can be sent to New South Wales will be very acceptable there in case any accident has happened to the Supply, Captain Parker wrote the enclosed letter No. 5 to the master of the

Transports
at the Cape.

Despatches.

* Not recorded.

† Bulls, year old, two ; do., two years, one ; cows, one year, nineteen ; sows, one year, ten ; ewes, fifty ; rams, three ; hay and barley in proportion for the above ; seed wheat, 14 bushells ; garden seeds, 5 baskets ; rabbits, tame pigeons.

‡ Not available.

1791

3 July.

Provisions
for Port
Jackson.Heavy
charges.The
Guardian's
stores.Sailing
arrange-
ments.Sale of the
Guardian's
stores.Business
arrange-
ments.

Active, who can take on board twenty tierces and thirty barrells of salt provisions, which Capt'n Parker has ordered Messieurs Kerstan and Adrianson (who Lieut't Riou left in charge with the Guardian's stores and provisions) to deliver the above number of casks to Mr. Peter De Wit, who will cause them to be sent from hence to False Bay, where the Active lyes, and take the master's receipts for them, to be delivered to the Commissary at Port Jackson, one of which receipts will be transferred to you by the next vessell from hence. The price of carriage from hence to False Bay will be found very great (twenty-five rix dollars for four casks); but exorbitant as it is, it will be very advantageous to Government, as the Gorgon cannot take above fifty casks. If the other transports that comes here can take the rest at the same terms, as the storehouse hire is very great, and the meat, which is now three years old, may be in a few months in a perishable state, in case of any transports coming in to False Bay before our departure from hence, I shall direct Mr. De Wit to send what quantity the commanders of the transports can receive on board. Two storehouses are hired for the Guardian's stores, &c., as by the inventory No 6,* each of which stands Government in thirty rix dollars a month, Capt. Parker intends clearing one storehouse, which will then contain the articles mentioned in the inventory.

The expence of transporting provisions, stores, cattle, and every article from hence being so excessive, and the season being a very good one (three Indiamen having lay'd in Table Bay all the winter), Captain Parker, after being fully assured from every person here that no danger can attend the Gorgon's lying in Table Bay, purposes bringing the ship round when everything is collected together, and after receiving them on board to sail immediately, which from every present appearance will be in about three weeks.

Captain Parker has received from Messrs. Kerstan and Adrianson eight thousand rix dollars, being part of the money that arose from the sale of a part of the Guardian's provisions and stores, which Lieutenant Riou left in the hands of the above merchants, to be applied to his Majesty's use by the commanders of any men-of-war that might touch at this place; after what the Gorgon's expences here amounts to is paid, the remainder will be applied to the payment of the stock, &c., for the use of the settlement.

Having in a former part of my letter mentioned the partnership being dissolved between Messrs. De Wit and Kerstan, it may require an explanation on account of De Wit being employed in preference to Kerstan, who with three other associates are charged with the stores by Lieut't Riou. I have known Mr. De Wit for years, and Governor Phillip, from a persuasion of his integrity, employed him alone when the Sirius arrived here in 1787, but at Mr. De Wit's request Mr. Kerstan was joined with him. I need only refer you to Governor Phillip's expences at this place as a

* Not recorded.

proof of Mr. De Wit's reasonable charges, considering the situation of this place; and as he has always been looked on as the acting and active person by Governor Phillip, and as that propriety of conduct stands unimpeached, a proof of which is his being employed alone by Captain Blanket, while Lieut. Riou was here, and after the partnership was dissolved, which were I thought sufficient reasons to induce me to recommend him to Capt. Parker, in preference to Mr. Kerstan and his associates.

Should any part of my conduct in interfering in the above business be disapproved of I shall be much concerned; but I can assure you, sir, that no other motive than the good of his Majesty's service, guided by honourable principles, has operated with me in undertaking a transaction which I had no authority for.

I have, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

N.B.—The Kent, East Indiaman, sailed from hence on the 26th June, and the Lord Camden, Indiaman, this day. The troops all in good health.

The regiment of Wirtemberg is gone from hence to Batavia, and the only regular troops here is the regiment of Gordon, which is about 800 men. The Governor is ordered to Europe, and all the fortifications which were erecting here are put a stop to, and the Company selling off their estates and a great part of their property to individuals.* There is no certain accounts from India.

Since writing the above and making a rough calculation of what the expences will be, I think the 8,000 rix dollars will discharge both ship and settlement's demands, which will prevent any bills being drawn.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.†

Dear Sir,

Cape, July 3rd, 1791.

3 July.

As my publick letter to you contains everything I have to say on the business I have undertaken, I can have little more to remark than that I am fully persuaded, if opinions and order could have been received and conveyed, that my conduct would be approved of. If it is not, I shall only have the satisfaction that with respect to pecuniary advantages drawn from those things that my hands and heart will be as clean as my friend Phillip's, whom I shall always imitate. Had I not interfered in the business, the Gorgon would have gone without a single head of stock, and as it is, I think she should have stowed more, but I have gone far enough to risque a censure.

Respecting the business of De Wit and Kerstan, I must say that I think, and know, that the whimsical caprice of a crack-brained man has occasioned the separation, which has arisen from such a cause that I am ashamed to employ a word about it. If there is any charge of dishonesty or negligence against De Wit, I think

* The Cape of Good Hope was at this time in possession of the Dutch. † A private letter.

1791

3 July.

The good of the service.

Affairs at the Cape.

The live stock.

De Wit and Kerstan.

1791

3 July.

Quarrelling
at Norfolk
Island.Judicial
affairs.

Mr. R. [Riou], as an officer, ought to have informed Capt. Blanket [Blankett] of it, who employed him alone after the partnership was dissolved, and Riou here—but it appears by a letter from B——t [Captain Blankett] to Commodore Cornwallis that De Wit's conduct was very different. I hope, after the first accounts are arrived in England, that I shall be gratified with learning that my officiousness is not disapproved of. By a mid., belonging to the Sirius, who is second mate of the Neptune, I find the quarrelling and jangling is transferred from P.J. [Port Jackson] to N.I. [Norfolk Island], where they distinguish themselves by different partys. Governor P. [Phillip] and your brother* was in good health. I am much surprized that there were no letters either for you or Mrs. N. from the latter. I made particular enquiry but could not hear of any. From the present state of Norfolk Island, I hope you will see the very great necessity there is for some regulation in judicial matters—for much punishment may be necessary, but if possible will be avoided, and without some regular mode things must fall into confusion. Should I be named president, or any other character in the court, I should hope you would consider my present small stipend. That and every other consideration I must leave to your friendship.

Yours, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS† TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

5 July.

Sir,

Whitehall, 5 July, 1791.

The Pitt.

Agreeably to the intimation which was made to you by Lord Grenville in his letter, No. 10, of the 19th of February last,‡ the ship Pitt has been taken up, and will proceed with three hundred and fifty-six male and fifty-six female convicts to Port Jackson the first fair wind.

Useful
convicts.

In selecting the convicts who compose the present embarkation care has been taken that no persons but such as are likely to be useful in the settlement will now be sent out. It will, I am afraid, be impossible, unless the Pitt should be detained longer than is expected, to furnish you by her with copies of the several Orders of Council for fixing the destination of these people; but, as another vessel will be dispatched to you in the course of the autumn with a further number of convicts, I shall avail myself of that opportunity of forwarding them to you.

A vessel in
frame.

Provisions.

You will receive by the Pitt a vessel in frame, which, when set up, will, I have no doubt, be found extremely useful to you; and also a proportion of salted beef and pork for four hundred convicts for twelve months. The supply was confined to these articles on the idea that, with the grain produced in the settlements, the flour already sent from home, the quantity purchased

* Captain Nicholas Nepean.

† Afterwards Viscount Melville. He succeeded Lord Grenville at the Home Office in June, 1791, Grenville going to the Foreign Office.

‡ Ante, p. 461.

at Batavia, and the supply intended to be forwarded to you from Calcutta, you would not, at least for the present, be in want of flour or rice. I shall, however, before the departure of the next ship, endeavour to form the best opinion I can from your communications of the exact state of the settlement in this respect, and shall then make such preparation as may appear requisite for furnishing you with such further supplies as you may be supposed to stand in need of. The tonnage taken up in stowing away the vessel in frame has prevented your receiving by this opportunity some articles, particularly the clothing for the convicts now embarked, which could not, from the want of room, be taken on board.

1791

5 July.

Further supplies.

The ship *Dædalus* will proceed in the course of a few days to the north-west coast of America, to receive possession of the several places there which, in consequence of the late convention between his Majesty and the King of Spain, are to be restored.* This vessel, after the performance of that service and delivering to Captain Vancouver (employed in surveying the said coast) such stores and provisions as he may be able to take on board, will, agreeably to the intimation made to you by Lord Grenville in his letter before referred to, repair to New South Wales, where she may be expected early in the year 1793, and her commander will then follow your orders, either for going to Calcutta or elsewhere, for the purpose of procuring supplies. It is probable, however, that Captain Vancouver will not be able to take on board so much of the cargo of the *Dædalus* as may be sufficient to enable him to execute the orders he has received; if it should so happen, he will apply to you to order the *Dædalus* to rejoin him at the Sandwich Islands during the following winter with the remainder of her cargo; and on receiving such application you will comply therewith, or send some other vessel, which may then be with you, with those supplies, and any others he may stand in need of, which the settlement under your government may, without inconvenience, be able to furnish. Major Grose proceeds in the *Pitt* with one company of his corps; the other will follow in the next ship. The disposition which has in many instances been shown by the convicts to mutiny during the passage appears to render a military guard at all times indispensably necessary.†

North-American possessions.

Captain Vancouver's instructions.

Dædalus.

Major Grose.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.‡

Dear Sir,

Cape, July 6th, 1791.

6 July.

As I find the *Juliana* will sail in two or three days, I have a little more time than when my letters by the Dutch packet were despatched, and which I hope have come to your hands long e'er now.

* Ante, p. 451.

† This despatch is unsigned, but it is obviously from the Right Hon. Henry Dundas.

‡ A private letter.

1791

6 July.

Cattle.

The Gorgon will be round here about the fifteenth, and I hope the weather will be so favourable to us in embarking the cattle, &c., that we shall get away from hence before the end of the month.

As the cattle are all strong, and have been kept up at dry feed this fortnight past, I hope the major part of them will survive the length of our passage, which I hope will not be more than five weeks, and at the time you receive this I hope to be on my way to Norfolk Island from Port Jackson.

American
enterprise.

Application has been made by an American to be freighted with the Guardian's provisions and stores, and to have 1,500 guineas for the run, but as that is a step too delicate for such subalterns as Parker and myself to have anything to do with, we declined it. There is a Whitehaven man who, on his own head, intends going immediately to America and carrying out two vessells—one of 100 or 120 tons, a Marble Head schooner, and the other a brig of 150 tons—both which he means to load with salt beef and pork, which he can afford to sell in the colony for 7d. a pound. He wished encouragement from me; but anything of that kind being out of my power to give him, he has taken a decided part, and means to run the risque. I mention this that you may know what is meant. From a calculation which I have made, and being assisted by the accounts I have got from the masters of the Neptune and Juliana, I think there is about six months' provisions in the colony at whole allowance from August, making sure of the Supply and the snow she carried with her being arrived at Port Jackson, and including what the Gorgon may be able to land. Should any ship be sent here with a view to carrying out stock to New South Wales, I should think the summer will be the best time, as we must expect much boisterous weather, and which will, of course, hurt the stock; and the kind of cattle that ought to be taken from hence is what is here called the "bastard European cow." This kind would have been taken in the Gorgon, but the price being so much more than the common kind that, when compared with Gov'r Phillip's and Riou's account, it would naturally have the air of peculating. The stock we take from hence are very healthy and strong, and I do hope they will continue so. When the last accounts are closed I shall send duplicates of the letters I sent from hence, dated July 3rd, by a Dutch packet.

Six months'
provisions.

Live stock.

State of
Norfolk
Island.

I beg once more to recommend to your attention the state Norfolk Island must be in if there is no mode of inflicting punishments with some appearance of legality. You know the critical situation I was once in, and I must say that I am conscious that the whole originated in the knowledge the people on the island had of my incompetency to inflict severe punishments; and now there is so great an addition to their numbers a decided and firm line of conduct must and will be adopted by me, and I shall only

have reason and equity to apologize for any violent measures that I may find it necessary to adopt. The distance from N.I. to Port J—— is great, and the irregularity of communication between these places is so very uncertain that I can assure you if I had a necessity I shall not hesitate a moment in inflicting the last and most dreadfull of punishments rather than suffer things to fall into disorder and to neglect the trust reposed in me. If I have said too much on this head I ask your excuse, and can assure you that I have a heart as susceptible of humanity as most people ; but still my wish and endeavours to promote industry and preserve peace shall not for the future expose me and the island to those risques which I have once escaped, and I hope the necessity of having some legal court of justice, and some ostensible character in judicial matters being vested in me (which must create respect to authority), will be obvious to you.

1791

6 July.

Violent measures may be necessary.

Court of justice required.

I beg to offer my best wishes for your health and Mrs. Nepean, to whom I beg my respects.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS TO THE LORDS OF THE ADMIRALTY. (Banks Papers.)*

My Lords,

6th July, 1791.

6 July.

I transmit to your Lordships herewith the duplicate and translation of a letter from Count Florida Blanca,† signifying his Catholic Majesty's orders to the Spanish officer commanding at Nootka to cause such officer as may be appointed on the part of his Majesty to be put in possession of the buildings and districts or parcells of land therein described, which were occupied by his subjects in the month of April, 1789, agreeably to the first article of the late convention ; and also to deliver up any persons in the service of British subjects who may have been detained in those parts.

The *Dædalus* transport having, I understand, taken on board the provisions and stores demanded by Capt. Vancouver for the supply of the *Discovery* and *Chatham*, tender, it is his Majesty's pleasure that your Lordships should order Lieut. Hergest, her commander, the moment she is ready for sea, to proceed with her to the Sandwich Islands, and on meeting with Captain Vancouver to deliver to him the letters above mentioned relative to the restitutions, and to put himself under his direction for the execution of this service, in order that Capt. Vancouver may be impeded as little as possible in the progress of his intended survey ; but as the season is now so far advanced, it appears extremely probable that Captain Vancouver will have left the Sandwich Islands before the

The *Dædalus*.

Instructions.

* Unsigned, but endorsed in Sir Joseph Banks's handwriting, "Dra't to the Admiralty about the *Dædalus*." This letter is obviously from the Right Hon. Henry Dundas.

† A Spanish statesman and political economist. When this letter was written Count Florida Blanca was First Secretary of State. "Annual Register," 1790, p. 292.

1791

6 July.

arrival of the *Dædalus*, and if it should so happen, Lieut. Hergest should be directed to make the best of his way to Nootka, where he may expect to be met by a Spanish officer, to whom he is to deliver Count Florida Blanca's letter, and to receive from him, on the part of his Majesty, possession of the buildings and districts or parcells of land of which his Majesty's subjects were possessed at that port, as well as at Port Cox and any other places on that coast; and having so done he is to wait at Nootka until he shall be joined by Capt. Vancouver, who, as your Lordships will see by an extract of a letter from him, may be expected there in the course of the next summer.

To wait at
Nootka.

To make
friends with
the
Spaniards

and the
natives.

During Lt Hergest's continuance at Nootka or elsewhere on the American coast, he is to avoid with the utmost caution the giving any ground of complaint to the subjects or officers of his Catholic Majesty whom he may meet with, and to treat them in the most amicable and friendly manner; and if he should fall in with any Spanish ships employed on the said coast, he is to afford to the officer commanding such ships every possible degree of assistance and information, and he is to offer to him that they should make to each other reciprocally a free and unreserved communication of all plans and charts of discoveries made by them during their respective voyages. He is also to be particularly enjoined to treat in the most friendly manner the subjects or vessels of any other power or state or any of the native Indians which he may happen to meet with, and to be careful not to do anything which may give occasion to any interruption of that peace which now happily subsists between his Majesty and all other powers.

Not to go
southward
of lat. 30° N.

Your Lordships will likewise instruct Lt Hergest on no account whatever to touch at any port on the continent of America to the southward of the lat. of 30° No., unless from any accident he should find it necessary for his immediate safety to take shelter there, and in case of such an event to continue there no longer than may be absolutely necessary. This restriction should also be strongly enforced on Capt. Vancouver, in order to prevent his having any communication with that part of the coast comprised within the lat. above mentioned and that part of South America where on his return home he is directed to commence his intended survey, that any complaints on the part of Spain upon this point may, if possible, be prevented.

Contingen-
cies.

From the nature of the service on which Capt. Vancouver is employed, a variety of circumstances may occur which may prevent his reaching the port of Nootka during the ensuing summer. If it should so happen, or that he does not arrive there before the month of November, it will be proper that Lieut. Hergest should be directed to proceed from thence to Karahoa Bay, and endeavour to fall in with him there or elsewhere in the Sandwich Islands, where Capt. Vancouver proposes to pass the winter.

As the *Dædalus*, after this service shall have been performed, is intended to be employed in N. S. Wales under the orders of Governor Phillip, it will be proper that your Lordships should direct Capt. Vancouver not to detain her at Nootka or at the Sandwich Islands any longer than may be absolutely necessary, but to dispatch her to Port Jackson with such live stock and other refreshments as may be likely to be of use in the settlement there, directing L't Hergest to touch at New Zealand in his way and endeavour to take with him a flax-dresser or two, in order that the new settlers may, if possible, be properly instructed in management of that valuable plant. Previous, however, to his dispatching the *Dædalus* he will consider whether, in case of his not being able to take on board the whole of her cargo, any future supply of those articles will be necessary to enable him to continue his intended survey, and, if so, that he will be careful to send notice thereof to Governor Phillip, who, on the receipt of such application, will be directed to redispach the *Dædalus* or to send some other vessel to him with the remainder of those supplies, and any others which he may be able to furnish to such rendezvous as Capt. Vancouver may think fit to appoint.

1791

6 July.

The
Dædalus to
go to Port
Jackson
with live
stock.

Supplies.

I enclose to your Lordships herewith a sketch of the coast of America, extending from Nootka down to the latitude $47^{\circ} 30''$, including the inlet or Gulph of Juan de Fuca, referred to in my former dispatch.* The surveys from which this sketch was compiled are said to have been made by one of the ships under M. de Martinez, in the year 1790, and will probably be found to be of use on the intended expedition. This sketch was obtained by Lord St. Helens from Count Florida Blanca, and I have the satisfaction of informing your Lordships that from the declarations which have lately been made by that Minister there appears to be the strongest disposition on the part of his Court that every assistance and information should be given to his Majesty's officers employed upon that coast, with a view to the enabling them to carry their orders into full execution.

The coast of
America.

If either Capt. Vancouver or Lieut. Hergest during their continuance on the American coast should meet with any of the Chinese who were engaged by Mr. Meares and his associates, or any of his Majesty's subjects who may have been in captivity, they are to be directed to receive them on board, and to accommodate them in the best manner they may be able, until such time as opportunities may be found of sending them to the different places to which they may be desirous of being conveyed.

Captives to
be released.

[Unsigned.]

SIR JOSEPH BANKS TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

(Banks Papers.)†

Dear Sir,

July 8th, 1791, Friday, 3 o'clock.

8 July.

As I am not now resident in London, I have it not in my power to pay the same attention in calling at the office repeatedly

* Ante, p. 453.

† A private letter.

1791 as I can do when I am here. I shall be glad, therefore, of a
 8 July. specific appointment for to-morrow if you cannot see me to-day,
 as I go into the country on Sunday.

Instructions for gardeners. With this you receive instructions for the gardeners employed on board the *Providence**, which Mr. Stephens tells me must originate in your office, as the letter which serves as a foundation for the voyage refers to them. I shall be glad to assist the clerk who is employed to copy them, as from a lameness in my right thumb I fear they will be less legible than my hand usually is. I conclude I shall be indulged with a copy of them when finished, or the return of my original.

You will recollect that I have not yet been furnished with the copies of Menzies' instructions, and those given to Vancouver on his account, which were promised me when the ship sailed.

Yours, &c.,

J^H BANKS.

LIEUTENANT MENZIES TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)

10 July. Sir Joseph, Cape of Good Hope, July 10, p.m., 1791.

My last letter to you was dated at Teneriff, on the 7th of May, giving some account of the *fracas* which happened us there.

The Discovery at Simon's Bay. We have this moment come to an anchor in Simon's Bay, after a passage of nine weeks from Teneriff, and learning that the Lady Juliana, Botany Bay transport, is upon the eve of sailing for England, I embrace that opportunity to acquaint you of our having so far advanced on our voyage safe and in good health.

Excursions. I am so charmed with the romantic appearance of the mountains which now surround me that I promise myself some pleasant excursions during our stay, and shall write you more particularly before I leave this place with some of the homeward-bound East Indiamen, which still remain in the bay.

The Gorgon. The Gorgon arrived here about a fortnight ago, and I am told parted with three other outward-bound Botany Bay transports at St. Jago, neither of which are yet come in here.

Mr. Harris is well, and enjoys every comfort and assistance respecting his professional studies which is in my power to give him.

I have, &c.,

ARCHIBALD MENZIES.

SIR JOSEPH BANKS TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

(Banks Papers.)†

11 July. My Dear Sir, S.S. [Soho Square], July 11, 1791.

I expected to have found among the papers you gave me the other day one at least of those you promised me, but on perusing them I could not see any trace of either. One, you know,

* The vessel selected for the second bread-fruit expedition. Ante, pp. 473-485.

† Private letter in Sir Joseph Banks's handwriting, but unsigned.

is Menzies' instructions; the other those given to Vancouver for the guidance of his conduct towards Menzies*. The last interests me particularly, as he writes to me almost in despair that nothing has been communicated to him by which he is enabled to know what assistance he has a right to expect from the ship.

1791

11 July.

Menzies and
Vancouver.

If the hurry of your business at present does not allow leisure to the clerks to copy them, I will readily call and do it myself. I shall be in town on Friday and Saturday, if you will give me a line informing me the time when you are likely to be least engaged, and will come to the office for that purpose. I grow anxious to get them as soon as possible, because I ought to write by the *Dædalus*, which must now be on the point of her departure.

Papers
wanted.

I received the original, and copied instructions for the gardeners on board the *Providence*, and I have given the letter to Mr. Ibbetson, as also a copy of the letter in which that business originated. I conclude, therefore, that you will have no more trouble on the subject of that voyage, unless, perhaps, when my bills come to be paid, which, however, I believe the Admiralty will settle when they have from you the times of the gardeners' engagements, &c.

No more
trouble.

I wish we could tempt you and Mrs. Nepean to come and spend a day with us in the country. We shall after next Saturday be wholly settled, only ten miles off, from whence you might return on horseback to your office by the usual time you arrive at it in the morning from St. James's.

Yours, &c.

[No signature.]

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Dear Sir,

Cape, July 16th, 1791.

16 July.

As Capt. Campbell, by whom I send this, leaves the Cape to-morrow, I have little to say, except that the *Gorgon* sailed yesterday from False Bay, and I hope she will anchor here to-morrow or next day; and if bad weather does not happen, I hope the 24th will see us clear of the Cape.

The Gorgon.

The *Discovery*, *Chatham*, *Barrington*, *Albemarle*, *Britannia*, *Queen*, and *Active* are now in False Bay. The two latter will sail in a day or two. They take 150 barrells of the *Guardian's* pork. As Capt. Vancouver is at False Bay, I have requested him to ask how many casks can be received on board the other three ships. With what they take and the *Gorgon*, I hope most of the provisions will be shipped off, and then nothing but mere refuse will be in the store-houses, which stands Government 80 rix dollars a month. I think it will be best to order the remaining stores that the *Gorgon* and *Discovery* does not take to be sold. I think they are now at a very reduced allowance at P.J., for by the masters of the *Neptune* and *Lady Juliana's* account there was

Vessels in
port.1 *Guardian's*
stores to be
sold.

* The instructions to Lieutenant Menzies are printed, pp. 424-426. Those given to Captain Vancouver are not among the Records.

1791

16 July.

not more than six months' provisions in August, 1790, and no ship has gone from India. It is true the Supply was not arrived from Batavia ; but it must be remembered that she carried six months' provisions for 1,100 people, and since then the numbers have been increased considerably by those who went out in 1790. I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

I have desired Capt. Campbell to look at the store-houses, who will give you every information about them that you may wish to ask him.

CAPTAIN VANCOUVER TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Discovery, in Simon's Bay,

Cape of Good Hope, 17th July, 1791.

17 July.

Sir,

Voyage of
the
Discovery
and
Chatham.

I have the pleasure to inform you that on the tenth of this month we arrived in this bay in perfect health. Indeed, the whole of our people seem to enjoy that blessing in an infinite superior degree than on our departure from England. We have found the Discovery to answer in every respect equal, and in some instances beyond, our expectations. In the Chatham we have not been so fortunate, as she is neither so comfortable at sea, nor doth she sail at all equal to what was expected, being much inferior in those points to the Discovery. We are recruiting our provisions and refitting the vessels with all possible dispatch, and I trust in about a fortnight shall be able to proceed on our voyage. I shall, however, at that period do myself the pleasure of again addressing you ; I only now take the opportunity of the departure of the Warren Hastings of informing you of our arrival, and that I had the pleasure of finding here the Gorgon, with Captain Parker and Captain King. The former sailed on Friday from this bay, and, I believe, to-day arrived in Table Bay, in order to take in the live stock and such of the Guardian's remaining stores as she could conveniently stow, in order to save the expence of transporting them from Cape Town hither, which is very exorbitant. The Active, Queen, Albermarle, Barrington and Britannia Port Jackson transports, are here, and will be able to take with them all the remaining part of salt meat of the Guardian's cargo. The Gorgon takes her cable and such of the refuse of stores as will remain. It is at present in contemplation to settle and close the accounts of that unfortunate business.

Refitting.

The Gorgon.

Transports
for Port
Jackson.

At the eve of our departure I shall write you fully respecting ourselves, until when I beg leave to say, I have, &c.,

GEO. VANCOUVER.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

29 July.

Dear Sir,

Gorgon, Table Bay, July 29th, 1791.

As I hope my former letters from this place has reached you, I can have but little more to say on a subject which I may

* A private letter.

be greatly censured for in the part I have taken* ; and as I have only my own integrity and the good of his Majestie's service to apologize for me, I must leave the rest to you, and shall be much obliged to you to inform me by the first conveyance to our side of the world whether I have done right or wrong. The Gorgon is now as full as she can well be stored, and I do sincerely hope she will arrive and carry her contents in safety, which I am certain will be a happy circumstance for our friend Phillip and the colony.

1791

29 July.

Purchase of live stock.

Entre nous, I am rather fearfull of the Barrington, as she is in a very leaky state, which, added to her being a very old ship and infamously found in standing and running rigging, and the heavy gales she must encounter, makes me apprehensive about her ; but I hope my fears will be groundless.

The Admiral Barrington leaky.

The convicts on board the different ships have behaved extremely well, and Mr. Barrington† is now a religious convert. He performs service, and gives a sermon twice on Sundays.

The convicts behave well.

May I remind you once more of our situation on Norfolk Island with respect to judicial matters. As a civil Governor, I cannot approve of the martial law. I hope the next vessells will set us to rights in that business.

Norfolk Island.

If it should be thought worth while De Wit will furnish salt meat at 5 styvers a pound,‡ and if a ship could be kept in New South Wales, and be kept going between Port Jackson and the Cape, I think it would be a cheap way of supplying the colony with salt provisions. As Parker§ has transacted everything respecting the Guardian's business, I may perhaps have said too much in my publick letter about it ; but I can assure you that everything has been done for the best. As I am but young in matters of this kind, I hope you will be able to assist me in getting over any informalities in bills, &c., as my £250 will not enable me to keep a secretary.

Provisions from the Cape.

I yesterday received three packets (each of which was superscribed "Grenville") from the master of the Albemarle, transport, directed for Governor Phillip, with a note from you to Messrs. Calvert and King, desiring them to be put on board any ship of theirs and delivered to me, if they should fall in with the Gorgon during the voyage. The packets are very dirty, and the seals scarcely legible. A circular one, and which from its weight I judge to be some kind of metal, appears to be broken. Mr. Bowen, the master, had an opportunity of delivering these packets at St. Jago, and why he did not do it I cannot conceive. Immediately on receiving them I sealed the whole up, and shall deliver them in the state I received them to Governor Phillip.

Despatches.

* In buying live stock without authority. Ante, p. 493.

† A noted adventurer and pickpocket. After his arrival at Port Jackson he was employed as a superintendent of convicts.

‡ Stiver (Stuiver in Dutch) an old Dutch coin, value about one penny.

§ Captain Parker, of H.M.S. Gorgon.

1791

29 July.

Contraband
goods.

Whether the Naval Agent, Mr. Bowen, has deceived Government, or whether the masters of the ships have deceived him, I know not; but I am credibly informed that each transport has upwards of 200 tons of iron, copper, and lead in them, besides other articles. I hope Governor Phillip can seize it, as so much more beef and pork would be acceptable to the colony.

Care of live
stock.

You will in the bill find a charge for coops for keeping the pigeons and rabbits in, also boxes for putting trees and other plants in. Taking those things or any other article of stock without a means of preserving them alive is only throwing away money and destroying the animals themselves. There is a very poor man called Masson,* who is employed by Sir Joseph in collecting, and has hardly enough to keep him alive. He has been of great service to me here, and the 30 dollars I have charged in the bill has been but a very poor recompense for the trouble he has been at. As Captain Parker has transacted every business respecting the Guardian, he has of course informed the proper Boards of his proceedings.

Cattle, &c.,
from the
Cape.

I think the articles that any future ship may take from this place should be black cattle, sheep for breeding, and hogs. Goats would be a desirable article, but they are so dear that I did not hazard the purchasing them.

I will thank you to send the enclosed letters, which are in a packet by themselves, to the post office. I have just said to the two great men that the Gorgon is fully stowed and on the point of sailing.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

My very best respects to Mrs. Nepean.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

29 July.

Sir,

Cape Good Hope, July 29th, 1791.

Purchase of
live stock.

Having informed you of the part I have taken in ordering and purchasing stock, &c., for the use of his Majestie's colony in New South Wales, to be shipped on board his Majestie's ship Gorgon, and my reasons for so doing, by my letter to you dated July 3rd, and sent by the Fluyt, Dutch packet, under cover to his Majestie's Ambassador at the Hague, as well as a duplicate of the same sent by Capt. Campbell.

The Gorgon
ready to sail.

The stock, &c., being collected here, and in readiness to be embarked, Capt. Parker sailed from False Bay on the 15th instant, and on the 17th instant the Gorgon anchored in this bay, from which time till this date the greatest expedition had been used in shipping the stock and other stores; and everything being now completed, and the Gorgon quite full, Capt. Parker intends sailing to-morrow if the weather permits.

* Francis Masson, a botanist, who devoted many years to the study of the flora of the Cape. He corresponded with Sir Joseph Banks, but the subjects on which he wrote have no relation to New South Wales.

Enclosed is one sett of bills, vouchers, and receipts for the payment of the stock, &c., purchased for the use of the colony, together with the master of the Gorgon's receipts for the same, which, with the papers sent by the conveyances before named, will, I hope, meet with approbation. 1791
29 July.
Bills.

The very great charge for the hay is occasioned by its great scarcity, and the unavoidable necessity there was to send it by land from Chapman's Bay to False Bay. As it required some time to press it, which from the uncertainty of the weather (at this season) could not be done in Table Bay without risking the consequences of bad weather, by the Gorgon's making a long stay in this bay, I have caused the hundred and fifty canvas bags to be numbered and marked. They will, with every other article, be delivered to Governor Phillip. Had casks been bought instead of bags they would have cost three times as much, and besides breaking stowage they would have been useless in the colony, whereas the bags will be of the greatest service in handling the grain. Hay.

The charge of rabbit and pidgeon pens may not be customary ; but taking these things, which are absolutely necessary, and not getting means to keep them alive, would be destroying the animals, which must be usefull. Rabbits and
pigeons.

The charge for fruit-trees, &c., as well as the boxes which were made for containing them in, and the money paid a gardner for collecting and planting them, will, I hope, be approved of. This expence (as nothing can be got here without purchasing) I should not have put Government to if I had not known the utility of those things in the colony, and Capt'n Parker having given up a great part of his cabbin to stow them in, which almost ensures their success. Fruit-trees.

Goats being very scarce and dear, and not of a good kind, induced me to neglect that article. Goats.

As the horses have multiplied in New South Wales, I thought it unnecessary to take any. Horses.

The poultry being of a very poor kind and excessively dear, with the certainty of their dying on the voyage, has prevented me from taking any for the colony. Poultry.

I hope every other article of stock, &c., taken will meet with the approbation of his Majesty's Ministers.

As the Gorgon and the transports have taken the whole of the provisions contained in the inventory left by Lieut. Riou, and the Minerva, Gorgon, Chatham, and Discovery having taken the greatest part of the most usefull stores, and the cloathing in the bales being quite rotten and unfit for any use, and the remaining stores not being thought worth the storehouse hire, Capt'n Parker (with the advice of Capt. Vancouver, myself, and Lieutenants Broughton and Gardner) has ordered the remaining stores to be sold by publick auction, leaving nothing but the anchors, which are not perishable, and may be of use to King's ships coming this way. Useless
stores to be
sold.

1791

29 July.

Drawing on
the
Treasury

Captain Parker not having received the whole of the money which was left in the hands of the people that Lieut't Riou left in charge of the provisions and stores, and what arose from the sales, he has made the whole over to Capt. Vancouver to pay the Discovery and Chatham's expences here, which has obliged me to draw on the Right Hon'ble the Lords Commissioners of his Majestie's Treasury for the amount of the bills, an original set of which are enclosed.

As there was a conveniency for two cows on board the Admiral Barrington, and six ewes, and as Capt'n Paterson had offered to take charge of them, they are received on board that ship, and enclosed is Capt'n Paterson's receipt for them.

The
transports.

The Active, Queen, and Brittainia will sail in a day or two from False Bay, under Lieut't Blow's orders, and the Albemarle and Barrington will follow them in the course of a week after with Lieut't Young. The Barrington is in a very leaky state.

Death of
convicts.

The number of convicts dead on the voyages on board the above ships is 39. Executed two on board the Albemarle, and one soldier is dead.

As there is every appearance of sailing to-morrow, I have, &c.,
PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

WM. RICHARDS, JUNR., TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS. (Banks Papers.)

8 Aug.

Sir, Queen's Row, Walworth, 8 August, 1791.

Conveyance
of convicts.

Your kindness in permitting to be laid before you the few ideas that occurred to me respecting the conveyance, as well as the supplying on shore, of the convicts sentenced to New South Wales is the reason that emboldens me to trouble you with this for the purpose of enclosing them.

Provisions
and stores.

Many other remarks of a more trivial nature have occurred to me in the method of loading and packing the provisions and stores; but should I be fortunate enough to procure the supplying them, I should make it my business to attend to which, tho' trifling in themselves in regard to expense, may be the means of the preservation and delivery of great part of a cargo in a better condition than it otherwise might be if such trifling circumstances were not attended to.

Rations and
clothing.

I hope, sir, you may find that some of the remarks will be worth attending to, especially the alteration of the ration of provision and the clothing for the passage, as also that of spruce beer for the convicts on shore. I should esteem myself much honored if I were permitted, after your perusal of the enclosed,* to point out to you the reasons that induced me to think that those are necessary from the present mode of conveyance, as well as to inform you the sum that I would undertake to perform the whole of this business for.

I remain, &c.,

WM. RICHARDS, JUNR.

[Enclosure.]

1791

A PROPOSAL and plan for the regulating, maintaining, and care of the convicts under sentence of transportation.—By William Richards, junr., Queen's Row, Walworth.

8 Aug.

Proposals and plan for the regulating, maintaining, and care of convicts under sentence of transportation.

Plan for maintaining convicts.

Drawing the line at 2,000 convicts (as there is near 4,000 under that sentence now in the different hulks and gaols) will be but a fair statement, and if there is either more or less the saving will carry its proportion. A great sum for their care and maintainance has always been paid, and his Majesty has found the ships for the contractor, and whose last offer to Government (which is a very considerable annual sum under what has always been paid him) is to find shipping for 270 convicts for £140 p. month, and to cloathe and maintain them for eleven-pence p. head p. day, viz. :—

	£	s.	d.
2,000 convicts divided by 270 will be 7 vessels at			
£140 p. month	11,760	0	0
2,000 victualled and cloathed at eleven-pence pr.			
head pr. day	33,458	6	8
Present charge to Government	45,218	6	8
Now, I am willing to provide for the same number			
of convicts, say 2,000, at thirteen-pence p. head			
p. day, and to find everything	39,541	13	4
Certain saving to Government, first year	5,676	13	4
I will reduce the price the second year one penny p.			
head p. day	3,041	13	4
Saving to Government second and every year after	8,718	6	8

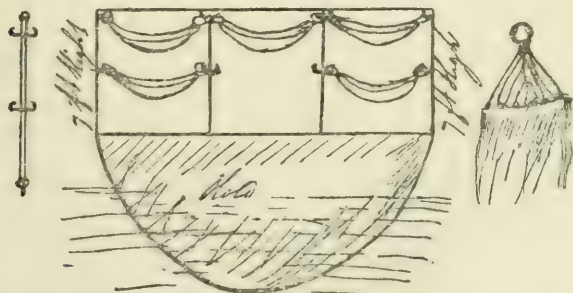
Cost under the Government system.

Mr. Richards' terms.

The mode of fitting the ships for convicts by building births, &c., cannot, where such numbers are kept, be wholesome, as no free circulation of air can possibly get to them, especially where the births are built below the second deck, which I am credibly informed is the case with the last ship fitted. The mode I intend to fitt the ships, provided I have the care of them, is thus :—

Fitting the ships.

18 Inches between each Hammock Bree



By letting them lye in hammocoes they will be all seperated at night from each other, which will hinder them from quarreling, as when they lye four

1791

8 Aug.

Sleeping
accommo-
dation.

in a birth continual jarring is the consequence. The stanchions where the hammock is hooked to being removable, the whole space between decks is free either for work in case it rains, or to sweeten and clean, which shall be the daily labour of a certain number. The whole ship once a month will be fumigated, and every day anointed, after scraping, with oil of tar in the crevices and between the beams, which will prevent all possibility of infection, and will kill all kind of vermin. No interruption to the circulation of air is given, the whole of the air-ports on each side being open; the only smell that can be will be that of the oil of tar, which will always be predominant. The manner of their being birthed and accomodated on board of the present hulks is not at all healthy for the people, as disorders must arise from the mode of having births fixed, as both filth and disorders must get into the very wood. The convicts lye on barrack beds stuff'd with shavings, and not much covering—I have been informed a blankett between two people.

Hammocks
and straw
beds.

My manner of accomodating them is that every man shall have his hammock and straw bed, with one blankett and a rug, and that those beds shall be changed and clean straw given them once a month; the bed case and hammock also changed, and the dirty one be washed for the next month, and be kept sweet and wholesome; and as when all the hammocks are up the people can get at every part of the 'tween decks, and clean and scrape, which shall be at least 7 feet high, for two reasons: 1st, for room and air; 2nd, for security, as they cannot so readily jump on deck in case of mutiny.

Receiving
ship.

Having a number under my care will enable me to set them apart on board of a receiving ship as they come from the gaols, that they may be inspected by the surgeon, and not be suffered to mix with the rest till they are free from any disorder they may bring with them, and the cloathes they bring from gaol shall be burnt (for fear any infection should be in them, which is often the case), and be properly clad in the uniform dress previous to their being put on board the other ships, with the rest of the people.

The following is the quantity of cloathing that will be allowed the convicts yearly, and if more should be necessary it will be given them:—

Cloathing for Male Convicts.

Clothing for
male con-
victs.

1 upper jackett, green; 1 under jackett, green; 1 pair of drawers, blue and white striped; 4 shirts, blue, large stripe; 2 pair of trowsers, blue, large stripe; 3 pair of stockings, blue, large stripe; 1 nightcap, woollen, blue, large stripe; 1 cap for day wear, black; 1 canvas frock, tanned; 3 pair of shoes, tyed with leather thongs and stamped, yellow buttons, common, with strong shanks.

Cloathing for Female Convicts.

For female
convicts.

1 jackett and coat, green; 2 flannell peticoats, red; 3 shifts, white; 2 pair leather shoes, tyed with thongs; 2 aprons, blue and white striped; 2 caps, white; 1 round hatt, black; 1 handkerchief, white; 2 handkerchiefs, blue and white striped; 3 pair stockings, white, $\frac{1}{2}$ foot blue, and an inch at top blue.

The cloathing that will be allowed by William Richards is such as he thinks will give satisfaction, the good effects of which will soon be felt, all being clad alike. No quarrells can be the consequence, no upbraidings that one is better clad than another, as is the case now; nor such wretchedness and misery be seen as can be every day at Woolwich, &c.—no order and regulation in their cloathing, some with one stocking, some none, some with trowsers, some only drawers, and almost all ragged. One good effect will arise from W.R.'s mode of cloathing them, which is, that an escape can hardly be made, as their dress will be so much remarked; it is intended to be green.

No person shall be suffered to be on board any ship under my care without the uniform of a convict, and that not only their jackett but every part of their dress, not excepting their shoes, shall bear some mark of their situation that all persons knowing that will be able to detect anyone should an escape be made. 1791
8 Aug.

The following ration is that which is intended the convicts is to be fed on, which is better calculated for their healths than that which they are now provided with. The broth in which the meat is boiled shall be heated the next morning, and thickened with their oatmeal and pease, for their breakfast on those days set apart as banyan days. In this mode I let them have the whole ox fair through. At present their principal food is shins of beef and ox cheeks, which in themselves are of no substance:—Ration for six convicts per day or week. Sunday—5lbs. bread (biscuit), 4lbs. beef, 18 pints beer; Monday, 5lbs. bread (biscuit), 2 pints pease, 2 pints oatmeal, $\frac{1}{2}$ lb. butter, 1lb. cheese, 18 pints beer; Tuesday as Sunday; Wednesday as Monday; Thursday as Tuesday; Friday as Wednesday; Saturday, ox head and shin for broth, 1 pint Scotch barley, 5lbs. bread (biscuit), 18 pints beer. Ration.

The ration of their provision has been set forth. The following comparison will shew the difference between the ration intended to be allowed and that now given them:— A comparison.

Weekly ration of provision now allowed
on board the hulks for six convicts.

42 lbs. bread.
5 half ox cheeks.
14 pints pease.
 $2\frac{1}{2}$ lbs. cheese
42 pints beer.

Weekly ration of provision intended to be
allowed by W.R. for six convicts.

35 lbs. bread.
12 lbs. beef.
6 pints pease.
6 pints oatmeal.
 $2\frac{1}{2}$ lbs. butter.
3 lbs. cheese.
 $\frac{1}{2}$ an ox cheek.
1 pint barley.
126 pints beer.

The ration as stated to be given them by W.R. will cost him for 2,000 convicts, as before mentioned, the sum of £2,097 15s. 8d. per annum more than the ration they are now fed on as stated above cost the present contractor. It is not possible that so much offal provision can be either healthy or good, and they can never be reclaimed; being always fed on such meat makes them desperate.

As it is intended to employ them, the method shall be in any branch of business I think them capable of, among others that of picking oacum, &c. Employment.

All that I desire of Government is that they will take the whole of the oacum that may be made at a fair price, agreeable to its value (provided it is fit for his Majesty's service), and to have the junk, &c., from his Majesty's yards at a fair price in return.

In order to encourage the poor fellows to work a proportion of their labour will be given them, which will enable them to buy necessaries, such as sugar, books, &c.

It is likewise intended in case a number of convicts are put under my care that separate ships shall be provided, and the refractory be put on board one ship, the middling in another, and the good (as no doubt a great number are so in the comparison) in another, the Roman Catholics in another, and the women by themselves, and seperated in the same mode that opportunity may be given them to become useful members to society. Classification.

The ships shall all be provided with a proper guard, and sufficient for the number and disposition of the men on board, as the dividing the refractory from the middling, and the middling from the better-behaved, will require a large or smaller number of men for the purpose.

1791

8 Aug.

Guard.

The refractory will require forty men, the middling thirty, and the better sort twenty, which will bring it to the average of thirty to each ship, besides the men on board the storeship and hospital, which will be ready on all occasions. They shall be properly armed and taught the manual exercise as far as it is necessary that they may be never taken by surprize. The number of men for each ship, as well as storeship, will be as follows :—

Ship for Refractory.

1 Commanding officer.
1 mate.
2 boatswain's mates.
36 men.

Ship for the Middling.

1 Commanding officer.
1 mate.
2 boatswain's mates.
26 men.

Ship for Better-behaved.

1 Commanding officer.
1 mate.
2 boatswain's mates.
16 men.

Ship for the Women.

1 Commanding officer.
1 mate.
2 boatswain's mates.
16 men.

Storeship.

Storeship.—1 superintendant, 1 captain, 1 chief-mate equal to the officer in the other ships, 1 second mate, 1 clergyman, or two if necessary, 1 steward, 1 boatswain, 1 surgeon, and as many mates as are necessary, 1 clerk, 10 men and boys.

Where to
keep the
convicts,

I propose taking all of them to Milford Haven, either in West Langan Bay or Costraster Bay, and which I think will be attended with the most beneficial consequences to themselves and the publick, and for many reasons. First, it will be a kind of a short transportation. Secondly, it will be impossible that any of their former companions can ever see them, and which may during their sentence die. Thirdly, it will be a solitary confinement (being at so great a distance), which has always been recommended as the best mode of punishment. Fourthly, keeping them constantly employed will keep their minds amused, and keep evil thoughts from them of their being seperated in the manner intended will, it is hoped, reclaim a number of them that may still make usefull members to society, and by that means ease Government of a great annual expence to transport them to Botany Bay, as only those need go that no punishment can affect. Fifthly, it will be no additional expence to Government, as the contractor will send for the convicts to the next seaport town and convey them to Milford. Sixthly, it has been usual to grant the former contractor some of the old hulks from his Majesty's yards, and to transport them at his Majesty's expence to the place where they were intended to lye and receive the convicts. And he has been supplied with ropes, sails, &c., for that purpose, likewise free of expence, which amounts to a considerable expence in addition. I do not require anything of the sort from Government except the use of sails, ropes, &c., to transport my ships with, which will be returned to his Majesty's stores again at my expence and properly accounted for. An additional saving must be the consequence. Government have provided the former contractor with shipping for the convicts, and not only that but have repaired the hulks for him, as been the case with the Dunkirk at Plymouth, which cost fitting and repairing upwards of £3,000, and when they have been to be transported from place to place have done it with their people, which must be an expence, tho' not so much felt, as no specifick charge has been made for it, but will be found if people were hired for that purpose to amount to a large sum. W.R. does not want any assistance of that sort from Government, he having enough people of his own for that purpose.

Saving of
expense.

Another saving would be if Government chose to accept it, and as seperating them is intended as a groundwork to a reformation in their morals, so the good and numbers of the middling sort, as they will be with W.R., taught to splice, knot strap-blocks, and other things necessary for their

employment, so that in case on any emergency that Government may want a number of hands to man their ships of warr at least one thousand men might be drafted from the above specified sort that would be more carefull on board his Majesty's ships than numbers that possibly could be impressed, and being kept on board the ships would understand so much as to make themselves usefull. The impress money for such a number would be saved, and the men ready at an hour's notice, and none but good quiet men would be sent, timely notice being given that they may be assorted.

No doubt but great expectations may be formed as to their becoming usefull members to society from the mode intended to be pursued by W.R. in seperating the good from the bad and the men from the boys. All the boys at present are confined in the same prison with the men, many of them not fifteen years of age, where they must be taught all sorts of wickedness and initiated in all manner of vice, which only tends to enflame their young minds against the laws of their country, and make them ten times worse than before.

Besides the above benefits, one will accrue by W.R.'s. mode, which is, as many of them have been brought up in idleness, and have no way whatever of getting their bread if they were willing to work, and of course from that and bad company were brought to their sentence, some method of employ will be taught them, that when their sentence expires they may get an honest livelyhood by, if they chuse, which no doubt numbers will follow; and by the time their sentences expire, as they will have been so long weaned from their former companions (being at so great a distance), and proper care taken, as before mentioned, of their morals, there will of course numbers take to usefull employ and become usefull members to society. The bad consequence arising by their being confined on board the hulks at Woolwich, Portsmouth, and Plymouth is very evident. All persons indiscriminately may visit them and converse with them; or give them anything they want, such as cloathes, &c., and they may get clad as the circumstances of their friends will admit. Therefore they not being put on an equal footing serves only to irritate them and make them worse. W.R. does not think it proper. No difference in either their dress or food should be permitted, the contractor being paid by Government for all of them.

W.R. conceives that the meaning and intention of the sentence they are ordered to is to punish them for their former deeds, to wean them from their idle and bad companions, and work a reformation in their morals that they may not return to the same crimes again. W.R. again repeats that the present mode pursued is not capable of doing it, and so far from reclaiming one it makes all worse and more abandoned. Should he have the care of them, he means to make their morals a leading principal; and if he succeeds in getting it he intends to leave London and live on the spot, that he may be an eye-witness of the conducting it agreeable to the plan proposed.

W.R. hopes that on a proper comparison that Government will find that the charges he puts himself to in regulating them more than any former contractor ever did, they will find that the additional expence to him by the mode proposed will be found nearly as much as the real advantage reaped by Government, and the poor wretches will have to thank the laws of their country in sending them to such a place to reform them and wean them from their companions and crimes that might have ended more fataly to them hereafter if it had not been so conducted.

It is likewise intended to have a regular clergyman of the Established Church to read prayers to them every morning, and do other duty twice every Sunday, and likewise a schoolmaster, with other assistants, to teach the youths to read and write, that by reading and attending the publick service they may know that there is a Being that hereafter will call them

1791

8 Aug.

Recruits for the navy.

Separation of the good from the bad.

Industrious habits to be taught

Reformation a leading object.

Advantage to Government.

Religious and secular instruction.

1791

to an account for their actions, which at present, it is to be feared, that too many of them do not know.

8 Aug.

Discipline.

As proper discipline in all great undertakings tends to promote their object, so keeping the people under the extremity of that discipline will forward the intention of this plan, as well as to make usefull members of society, many of the poor wretches that are too often lost from bad example arising from an improper mixture with the worthless ; it is necessary for that purpose that proper regulations should be made for their government.

Regulations.

The following, therefore, are to be paid the strictest attention to by all the officers and men placed over the convicts, as well, as the convicts themselves :—

The superintendent to inspect into all the provisions, &c., regularly on each day, and if found not good and fit for use (agreeable to contract) to return it again to the tradesman.

To have a regular account every morning from each ship of the proceedings and labour done on board her, and what each separte person has done, and of all complaints, both from the officers and men, as well as from the convicts.

The clerk to keep a regular book for each ship, and the name of each person be set down, and what labour he may do be entered to him, that what may be allowed him for it may appear clear.

To inspect into the conduct of each officer, and learn whether he pay proper attention to his duty and watch.

To attend divine service on board the ships on Sundays, and observe if the clergyman does his duty with proper reverence and respect, as the proper attendance of the officers to that particular will tend to reclaim the morals of the convicts in a great degree and farther the object of this plan.

The clergyman shall divide his time on Sundays agreeable to the number of vessells employ'd, and read the prayers and give them a discourse suitable to their condition on board each ship.

A prayer shall be made fitting for the occasion and condition of the convicts, and shall be pasted up in various parts of the vessells, which shall be regularly read every morning and evening on board each ship ; and one person from among the convicts shall be appointed to read the same aloud. The commanding officer of each vessell shall attend and see it performed.

A printed form of prayer shall be pasted up in various parts of the vessells, and shall not be defaced or torn down or scribbled on, on penalty of two dozen lashes at the gangway.

The books that shall be given to each mess (viz., two bibles and two prayer-books) on Sunday morning shall be returned to the commanding officer again at night, to be kept till the next Sabbath.

As cleanliness is most commendable in ships where such numbers are kept, it is ordered that every man shall keep himself as clean as his situation will admit, and to regularly every day wash and comb himself. The barber shall shave them twice a week, and to have a clean shirt, stockings, and shoes greased every Sunday, and appear decent and respectfull in their behaviour in their attendance at publick worship on that day, on pain on being put to half-allowance.

All dissolute, immoral, and disorderly behaviour shall be severely punished.

No person shall be suffered to ill-treat any of the convicts whatever, and if complaint is made to the superintendent it shall be heard on both sides with strict impartiality, and justice be administered.

The ration that they shall be fed on shall be printed and pasted up in various parts of the vessells, that the convicts may know if they have had their allowance regular.

Any person neglecting to perform the task of work set him to do, or refusing to work at all, shall not only be punished at the discretion of the superintendent, but shall be put on half allowance during his pleasure.

The superintendant shall observe if the surgeon pays proper attention to the sick, and whether he administers his medicines with discretion.

No person of any description shall be suffered to come on board any ship without a written order from the commanding officer of the store-ship, and no friends permitted even to speak with any of the convicts in a boat alongside without an order, and no person (when permitted by order) shall converse with them but in the presence of a centinel. Any monies that may be left by strangers for the convicts to be brought to the store-ship and accounted for for the good of the whole. Should the friends of any particular convict leave or send anything for them they shall have it delivered them when thought convenient or deserving by the superintendant. All letters to or from the convicts shall be inspected (previous to their either being delivered them or put in the post) by the superintendant. Should any of the convicts behave in the least manner impertinent to any officer, centinel, or other person belonging to the vessel, or any stranger that may be induced to visit the ship, or even to one another, they shall be punished at the discretion of the superintendant. No officer or centinel or any person shall punish without the superintendant's order, but they may put the offending party in irons till such pleasure is known.

[Enclosure.]

A PROPOSITION for conveying Convicts to New South Wales.

Clothing for the passage : 1 waist-coat with sleeves, 1 canvas frock, 1 pair woolen drawers, 1 pair stockings, 1 pair shoes, 1 worsted cap, 1 round hat, 2 pair duck trousers, 2 shirts.

Clothing to be landed for each convict, and delivered into his Majesty's stores : 1 upper jacket, 1 under do., 2 pr. woolen drawers, 2 pr. duck trousers, 2 shirts, 2 pr. stockings, 2 pr. shoes, 1 worsted cap, 1 round hat, 1 bag for the double set.

These articles were never allowed the convicts before. They are supposed to be sufficient for wear on the passage, and at the same time will not cost Government much more than half the expense of the articles they allow them, as the convicts would make away with, sell to the seamen, and otherwise destroy the clothing allowed them, which was more than is necessary for the passage.

These were the articles of clothing that have been hitherto usual to allow the convicts, and delivered to them at their coming on board the ship, which is too great an allowance, as they do destroy and make away with the greatest part of the articles not immediately for the purpose of wearing, and in no one instance has it yet appeared that they have brought many of their extra articles on shore with them. This alteration would have another good effect (besides the saving of the clothing) which is that on their coming on shore the clothing would all be ready to put on, and in case of any sickness or distemper on the passage they could be cleaned, and their old clothes (which would be nearly worn out) might be destroyed for fear of communicating any infection independent of the credibility of their appearance when landed.

1791

8 Aug.

Regulations.

Clothing for the voyage.

On landing

1791

Bed and bedding.

8 Aug.

Arrange-
ments for
the voyage.

Cabin and bulkheads.

Irons and handcuffs.

Soap : 2 lbs. per month for each
mess of six convicts.

Surgical
attendance
and
medicines.

Surgeon with medicines, oil of tar,
essence of malt, vinegar, wine, &c.,
&c., 50 galls. oil of tar, 120 galls.
vinegar, 2 cwt. essence malt, 3 cwt.
sugar, 5 cwt. oatmeal, 4 cwt. Scotch
barley, some spices, 1 hhd. red port
wine. A medicine-chest proper for
the number of people on board. A
certificate to be produced to vouch
this fact.

Rations.

Ration of provisions supplied the
first embarkation of convicts : For
six convicts, per week, 23 lbs. bread,
9 lbs. flour, 10 lbs. beef, 8 lbs. pork,
1½ lbs. butter, 12 pints peas, 2 lbs.
rice.

Ration of provisions allowed by
Government to the convicts in the
first embarkation : For six convicts,
per week, 16 lbs. bread, 12 lbs.
flour, 14 lbs. beef, 8 lbs. pork, 12
pints peas, 2 lbs. rice, 1½ lbs. butter.

The same bed and bedding as has
been usual to be allowed is sufficient,
and which may be taken on shore with
the convicts on their arrival. This
would be a saving to Government.

These articles being only for the
use of the convicts on the passage,
remain in the ship.

These being only for securing the
convicts on board on the passage,
remain in the ship.

This has been found to be fully
sufficient for the purpose, but if
issued to them once in every fort-
night it would be better.

Care should be taken that a
gentleman that understands his pro-
fession should be employed, and
that his qualifications should be
exhibited for the satisfaction of
Government, and that he should
(particularly if any women go in the
ship) understand midwifery. The
quantity of the articles of wine, &c.,
to be provided are fully sufficient
for 230 to 250 persons.

This ration is thought to be much
better for the convicts on the passage
than the one mentioned on the
other side allowed by Government.
Very little, if anything, is different
in the cost of it, but it is thought
that the quantity of salt provisions
mentioned is fully sufficient. On
comparing the two rations it will be
observed that 4 lbs. of beef and 3 lbs.
of flour is taken from the allowed
ration by Government, and 7 lbs. of
bread given in lieu. The reason for
thinking this alteration better is that
such a number of people together,
without employment, living on too
much salt food, might create the
scurvy and other disorders on such a
passage. The same quantity of food
is given, which it is thought will be
the better. It is likewise proper, and
should be insisted on by Government,
that eight months of every species of
provisions should be laid in in case
of accidents or delay in getting into
calm latitudes. It is my intention
not only to lay in that quantity, but
to give Government the surplus of
the provisions that may be left. A
careful agent should be employed
to see that the provision of every
species is good and wholesome.

Shipping : Two tons to each man or woman convict.

This is a full and ample allowance. Ten tons to six persons is full sufficient, but not less. However, that in a great measure must depend on the build and construction of the ships, and its height in the 'tween decks for air, &c. The whole of the remaining tonnage, after the ten tons for six convicts and the necessary room for the ship's company and stores is taken up, to be for the use of Government.

1791

8 Aug.

Tonnage per head.

Respecting fitting the ship, the days for loading and unloading, the demurrage, the mode of payment, entering into the necessary bonds and contracts for the security of the convicts, and producing the proper vouchers for the satisfaction of Government is very proper, and ought to be insisted on.

Guard.

As it will be necessary to have a guard for the security of the convicts, the sum for that purpose, either per head for the guard or per head for the convicts (guard included, and to be either found by Government or the contractor, as may best suit the purpose of Government), can easily be settled by them while the ships are equipping for service. The provision for the guard to be the same as has been heretofore allowed by Government, with the alteration in the salt food agreeable to the mode and in the same proportion as the convict rations.

The convicts to be served with fresh provisions on the passage at one or more ports that they may touch at on two days in the week. The other days as per the salt ration.

As it is very necessary that the convicts should touch at one place at least on their passage out, it appears likewise as necessary that they should be served with fresh provisions of vegetables every day during their stay at such place, which would tend to strengthen and recruit them, and enable them to withstand the gales of wind and heavy seas they must meet with in their passage from the Cape of Good Hope.

The advantages that arise to Government by this mode, independent of the regulations, are :—The clothing for the passage ; the beds and bedding given them ; the remaining provision that may be left of the eight months laid in, as the passage may be performed in six months. The amount of the whole of these articles may be computed at 62s. each person. Observations which it is supposed may tend to the comfort of the settlement, as well as to the advantage of the public.

As the convicts have no kind of beverage to drink, would it not be to the advantage of Government to send them some essence of spruce and molasses for the purpose of brewing into beer, which may be served out to them twice or oftener in the week, as may be thought necessary ? It is universally

Spruce beer.

Advantages of the plan.

1791

8 Aug.

Tobacco and
liquor.

allowed to be an excellent anti-scorbutic, and the expense would not be worth mentioning. A few hogsheds of tobacco would be very acceptable, and might be distributed by the Governor's order as a reward and stimulus for the convicts to perform their labour with pleasure and cheerfulness. Some essence of malt would be found very acceptable, if not already provided. Some rum and other spirits, and some wine, which may be purchased with advantage to Government at Teneriffe.

Implements
and tools.

The implements for agriculture and tools should be inspected previous to their being shipped by a proper person who understands that business. A list of them and the prices for which I could provide them I am ready to exhibit.

Ready-made
clothing.

Would it not be cheaper and better to send out the clothing for the convicts ready-made, and which may be contracted for at per set? One reason may operate against it, which is the slight manner in which all slop-work is executed; but should I have the supplying them, I am convinced that I could employ such people (under my own eye) that would effectually do away with that. Some pieces might be sent out for the purpose of mending; but I am certain that to have the clothing made here would be a considerable saving. I beg leave to mention an instance. When the Navy Board were contracting with me for the child-bed linen for the women convicts sent out in the *Lady Juliana*, the directions they received from the Treasury were to provide yards of linen and yards of flannel for that purpose, and which the convicts were to make up. I pointed out to the Board that, in my opinion, the articles had better be made for them ready, as the linen when given to the convicts might not be converted to the purpose the Government humanely intended, and that if they thought proper (the sum to be allowed in linen and flannel having been previously agreed to) I would make a set of articles necessary for the purpose, and exhibit them for their approbation, which I did, and not only provided such articles as were meant to be supplied by the linen and flannel, but other articles for the infant, as well as two or three for the poor woman, and the whole ready-made came to sixpence less than the cost of the linen and flannel.

Convicts as
soldiers.

As no doubt a great sum is expended not only in raising, paying, and keeping (till the transports are ready) the corps of rangers intended for the protection of the settlement, as well as the cost of transporting them, would it not be better to complete that corps from among the convicts whose times have expired, or from the better behaved of those whose times may not be out? Would it not operate as an encouragement to them to do well? The men raised for that purpose are not better disposed, nor can the officers have the opportunity of observing the disposition of their men previous to enlisting them, as they may in this mode. This certainly, together with the expenses to be saved, would be very eligible.

Supply of
stores.

I should be glad to have the supplying the settlement, not only with the clothing, tools, and implements of husbandry, but likewise the provisions that may be wanted for the use of the settlement, which might be done *pro rata*, as may be agreed on and thought fit by Government for that purpose. It might be agreed for in two ways—one provided Government found shipping, the other for the contractor to find all; which last method is the best, as in that case Government will have no trouble. The contractor to keep always a sufficient quantity in store of each species that nothing but unforeseen accidents may produce any short allowance in the settlement. The provision should be new and good, carefully packed up. The customary way of packing up provision will not answer where it has to be conveyed so far and through such alteration of climate.

If it was reduced to a certainty that the contract should be continued to me (during such time only as I fulfilled it agreeable to my engagement), I should immediately provide two ships, large, convenient, and properly fitted for such service, and on the sailing of them to provide two more for

the purpose of the next embarkation, and continually keep them going backwards and forwards with convict stores and provisions that might be wanted for the settlement, and not to suffer it to experience such distress as they have of late. And I shall be ready to give ample and sufficient security for the performance of the whole of this business.

Would it not likewise be necessary to keep a small vessel, say about 250 tons, but for the purpose of going to and from Norfolk Island or the Friendly Islands, or even to Madagascar, for the purpose of bringing live stock or any other articles of provision, plants, &c., &c., in the South Seas that may be wanted to be sent to Europe or to the West Indies, and which may be sent pr. the return of the annual ships from Port Jackson? This may save some expenses for that business, and for which a reasonable allowance may be made to the satisfaction of both parties.

And further, if any stores, timber, or articles of any description should be directed to be brought home, the annual returning ship for a reasonable compensation may do it; as, for instance, some of the pine-trees on Norfolk Island have been described very fit for the purposes of masts, &c., for the Navy, or, at least, they may be rendered very useful as spars for yards, &c. Some of the convicts, as many of them as are carpenters, might be continually employed in squaring them and making them fit to be brought home; and as no timber need be sent but such as will absolutely do for that purpose, I should think Government may find it answer to employ some of the convicts on this business, and pay the ships a reasonable freight for bringing them home. The ships may be constructed with rafts for that purpose previous to sailing.

1791
8 Aug.
Communi-
cation with
the islands.

Norfolk
Island
timber.

CAPTAIN VANCOUVER TO LORD GRENVILLE.*

Discovery, Fals [False] Bay, Cape of Good Hope,

My Lord,

August ye 9th, 1791.

9 Aug.

Since receiving my instructions at Falmouth for the prosecution of our voyage I have much regretted not being fortunate enough in a farther interview with your Lordship to have gained your final opinion respecting the examination of that extent of coast of the S.W. side of New Holland, which in the present age appears a real blot in geography, particularly when we reflect on the many vessels that in this improved age of navigation have passed the meridians; we have every reason to suppose it occupies not more than 150 leagues to the south of it without endeavouring to bring home any farther information respecting that extensive country. And as it is my wish as well as my ambition through the course of this voyage that the whole of our time should be usefully occupied in acquiring every knowledge of the distant regions we are to visit, and on considering that Captain Cook's chart of the Sandwich Islands has left me but a small field to occupy two winters in their farther examination, therefore, as the depth of winter in this hemisphere is passed over and the spring fast advancing, and likewise as when I had the honor of communicating my wishes to prosecute such an examination your Lordship seemed highly to approve of the idea, it is my intention to fall in

A blot in
geography.

Proposed
exploration.

* Captain Vancouver was not yet aware that Lord Grenville's seat at the Home Office had been taken by the Right Hon. Henry Dundas.

1791

9 Aug.

New
Holland and
Van
Diemen's
Land.

with the S. W. Cape of New Holland, and should I find the shores capable of being navigated without much hazard, to range its coast and determine whether it and Van Diemen's Land are joined, which from all information at present extant appears somewhat doubtful. I should be exceedingly sorry to lose this opportunity of throwing some light on the above subject, having sufficient time to do it and reach the Sandwich Islands, refresh, &c., &c., prior to proceeding on the American coast agreeable to my instructions.

Caution.

I shall, however, prosecute this designe with the utmost caution, and should I find it attended with intricacy and danger, ever having the object of our voyage in view, abandon it and proceed into the Pacific Ocean.

Presents for
the
Sandwich
Islands.

I have taken this liberty of informing you of my intentions, judging it not unlikely that an opportunity may shortly offer of informing your Lordship how far I have been able to put them in execution. And have only to beg a few moments intrusion farther on your leisure to say—Mr. Menzies having applied to me for some spirits for the preservation of the different natural curiosities he may fall in with, I have thought proper to add to the bill some breeding sheep, garden seeds, &c., &c., which I intend as presents to the different chiefs of the Sandwich Islands. I shall likewise, as there are plenty of goats at Otaheite, which lays on my route to the northward from thence, procure a stock of those animals for the Sandwich Islands. The amount of the things purchased here being about 334 rix dollars, I have taken the liberty of drawing on the Treasury; for which with a letter of advice have transmitted them attested vouchers, and your Lordship's giving directions for the same to be paid will oblige him who has the honor to be, &c.,

GEO. VANCOUVER.

SIR JOSEPH BANKS TO LIEUTENANT MENZIES (Banks Papers).*

10 Aug.

Dear Sir,

Soho Square, August 10, 1791.

Vancouver's
instructions.

I am as much grieved as you can be that I was not able to provide you with a copy of the instructions given to Capt. Vancouver to regulate his conduct towards you, but in truth the hurry of the political business at the time you sail'd† was such that, tho' it was daily promised to me, I have not to this day been able to get it from Mr. Nepean. I will still continue my efforts, and if I am able before the *Dædalus* sails you may be sure I will enclose it to you.

Their
purport.

The heads of the proposal I gave in for his orders respecting you were that he should assist you with boats to carry you and your baggage ashore and bring you off, and with men to carry about

* Unsigned, but in Sir Joseph Banks's handwriting. It is marked, "Sent by the *Dædalus*."

† Lieut. Menzies sailed with the *Discovery* from Falmouth on the 1st April. When this letter was written he was at the Cape.

your necessaries as often as the duty of the ship would allow him, and that he should furnish you with such articles of trade as would enable you to obtain from the Indians in the different places you were to visit such information and assistance as are wanting towards your fulfilling the objects of your mission, by which I mean he should give you the most valuable kinds of goods at each place if necessary, in which case you will demand them.

How Capt. Vancouver will behave to you is more than I can guess, unless I was to judge by his conduct towards me, which was not such as I am used to receive from persons in his situation; but as there was no imprudence in his being civil to me, and it would be highly imprudent in him to throw any obstacle in the way of your duty, I trust he will have too much good sense to obstruct it. If he does, the instances, whatever they are, will, of course, appear as they happened in your journal, which, as it will be a justification to you, will afford ground for implicating the propriety of his conduct, which, for your sake, I will not fail to make use of.

1791
10 Aug.
Vancouver's attitude.

It is not in your interest alone, even on the subject of your voyage, that the political hurry the Minister has been and still is in has produced effects different from those that would have taken place had the outfit happened, as such outfits always ought to do, in profound peace. I conclude from what I have seen that it will be felt in every part of the business. It is, nevertheless, the duty of you all to make the best you can of the circumstances in which you are placed, and that I doubt not you will fully do.

Political hurry.

[Unsigned.]

LIEUTENANT MENZIES TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers).
Discovery, Simon's Bay,

Sir Joseph, Cape of Good Hope, Aug. 10, 1791.

10 Aug.

We are now preparing to leave this place after about a month's stay, during which I have enjoyed much pleasure in my botanical pursuits through this apparently dreary country, but to me richer than any garden in the vast variety of its vegetable productions, for whether I traversed the sandy scorching plains, or clambered up the craggy ridges of mountains, every situation afforded to my mind something new or rare; for even many genera with which I was before acquainted but by name, here presented themselves to my view in full perfection. In these excursions the cryptogramic class was not neglected, for I have made some additions to it by several new species. I have dried but few of the other plants, as I daresay Mr. Mason [Masson] whose study it has been for many years, has already collected everything new and rare in that way on this promont.

The Cape as a field for the botanist.

I am afraid I shall be short of paper for drying plants before the voyage is finished, and therefore request that you will be kind

Paper scarce.

1791

10 Aug.

enough to send me a rim [ream] or two more by the store-ship which is to come out after us, or by any other conveyance that may offer, and, if the new genera and species plantarum are published, be so good as send them also.

Departure of
the Gorgon.

The Gorgon left Table Bay about ten days ago, with a large cargo of live stock for Botany Bay,* and two transports have sailed from here since, and the three remaining ones here are to sail either to-day or to-morrow. I met Governor King at the Cape Town. He was well, and desired me to present his compliments to you.

Excursions.

I likewise saw Mr. Mason; he enjoys his health, and was good enough to accompany me in some of my excursions up Table Mountain and in the neighbourhood of False Bay, where we were joined by Capt. Paterson. If Capt. Roberts' expedition should take place, I think Mr. Mason would be the best hand to accompany him, as he is so well acquainted with the African plants, and I have his leave to tell you that he would most willingly do it, if Capt. Roberts should call here for him per your order.

As I am deep in your debt, as well as my agent's, owing to an expensive outfit (my mess alone having now cost me £120), I trust you will assist Mr. Wilson in procuring my wages to the date of this letter, and in so doing you will much oblige,

Yours, &c.,

ARCHIBALD MENZIES.

We sail, I believe, to-morrow morning.—A. M.

A field for
botanising.

I believe it is intended to touch on some part of the west side of New Holland previous to our rounding the south point. If so, I shall have a fine field for botanizing!!!—A. M.

SIR JOSEPH BANKS TO MR. W. RICHARDS, JUNR.†

18 Aug.

Sir,

August 18, 1791.

Proposals
for
conveying
convicts.

I have read over with care your proposition for conveying convicts, &c.,‡ and am satisfied the means you propose are sufficient, as far as provisions and clothing, to supply them properly on their voyage out in as economical a manner as Government can find the means of doing, unless, as they have lately done, they submit them to the contractors, whose principal objects are to be fulfilled after they are on shore, and who, therefore, regard the care of them as a secondary consideration.

Cleanliness
and order.

It appears, clear, however, from the remarkable healthiness of the crews that went out with Governor Phillip, and from the as remarkable unhealthiness of some transports that have arrived since, that the good sense and personal attention of the commander to enforce cleanliness and order among the unfortunate

* Port Jackson.

† Not signed, but in Sir Joseph Banks's handwriting--evidently the draft of a letter. Ante, p. 50s.

‡ Ante, pp. 509-519.

people is the principal cause of the success with which they can be carried out. Government is always ready to allow the necessary expence, but not always able to find out proper people to take charge of the ships.

1791

18 Aug.

J. JOHNSTONE TO J. BERTERET (Banks Papers).*

Cape of Good Hope, August 22, 1891.

22 Aug.

THE Chatham† was, without a doubt, the most improper vessel that could have been pitched upon. She draws 12½ feet of water, and is scarcely the burthen of 120 tons; she has neither breadth nor length in the least reasonable proportion; where then is the fitness for rivers and shallows, which they say we are to explore. As you may conclude, we are very tender, and for sailing we have not been a match for the dullest merchant vessel we have met with. The Discovery sails much better, and she is stiff from her good bearings, and by her projecting sides affords great convenience and room for working. She has answered so far as to please those belonging to her.

The Chatham and Discovery.

We could have anchored at Funchal in an hour or two, but the Discovery, having acted with much more caution in respect to the land, was not able to come to us, and therefore made us a signal to join her.

Funchal.

We anchored at Teneriffe in Santa Cruz Bay on the 29th of April, and here we took in 25 tons of stone ballast, finding our own—which was 25 tons of and 4 of iron pigs—too little.

Teneriffe.

On the Sunday after our arrival we dined with an Englishman, and both ships had liberty, in consequence of which all hands got drunk, and insulted everyone, even the Spanish centinels. The Spanish guard was called out, and some of our men were forced down to their boats rather roughly, when the capt., who heard of the attack just as he had finished his coffee, came down, and was instantly thrust by the butt end of a musket into the sea.

Affray with the guard.

The capt., when he came on board, lamented that he was not decked in his uniform, as he could in that case have made a national affair of it; he wrote, however, to the Spanish Governor, resting his charge on there having been a lieut. in uniform among those who were beaten, and received an evasive answer. I dare-say the Governor thought him in the wrong.‡

Complaint to the Governor.

July 10, we came into False Bay and found the Gorgon, with five transports for New S. Wales. If you were to see the broils on board those ships you would think with me that duty and command are not sufficiently defined. There is a naval lieut. as agent, but between him and the master of the ship is a daily con-

Naval disputes.

* MS. in Sir Joseph Banks's handwriting, endorsed, "Extract and abstract—J. Johnstone to J. Berteret."

† The armed tender selected, in place of the Gorgon, to accompany the Discovery on Vancouver's expedition to the north-west coast of America. Ante, p. 312.

‡ See Lieutenant Menzies' letter; ante, p. 490.

1791
22 Aug. tention. The officer of the troops also thinks he has a command, so that on board of them regularity and subordination are out of practice.

Our astronomical quadrant is of Bird, vamped up by Roweden. We young astronomers take upon us to condemn its exactness, and find it awkward in the adjustment.

MR. W. RICHARDS, JUNR., TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS.
(Banks Papers.)

12 Oct. Sir, Queen's Row, Walworth, 12 October, 1791.

Cost of
provisions
and
clothing.

Transport
charges.

Ration.

Your kind favour of the 16th August last* I duly received, and was happy to find that on your perusal of the propositions, &c., they met your approbation. I have to assure you, sir, that on providing the provision, cloathing, and other matters, as they ought to be for such a passage, and with good ships, British built and properly fitted, such as I think is the intention of Government to have provided, they cannot be transported under £24 5s. p. man, Government receiving the benefit of the remaining provisions (eight months' being laid in for the passage), as well as the compleat suit of cloathing, beds, &c., which it is intended by these propositions to be given them, and which will amount to 65s. each person, and is included in the above sum; but to convey them with the articles as they were before allowed, and the remaining provisions, &c., to be the property of the contractor, I can transport them at the sum of £21 p. head, and it is impossible for any person doing justice to perform the contract for less, which I should have been happy to have convinced you of, from the price of freight, provision, &c., with the remaining gain arising to me.

As I expressed a wish that I should be glad to supply the whole of the demands for provision for the settlement, I can undertake to supply Government with the following ration for each person p. week, viz. :—

Seven pounds of flour,
Four pounds of pork,
Two pounds of beef,
Three pounds of rice,

at the sum of eightpence three-farthings p. head p. day, or five shillings and one penny farthing for the above ration, freight and insurance included, and to be delivered at Port Jackson free from all charges whatever, and as I include insurance in case of loss, the amount received from the insurers to be the property of Government. I can also deliver the same ration, free from all charges, on board any ships in the river Thames, at sixpence p. head p. day, but, in this case, neither freight or insurance is included; or at eightpence one-farthing p. head p. day, including the freight to Port Jackson, but not any insurance.

No extra
charges.

* Ante, p. 522. The correct date is 18th August.

The provision to be the newest that can be procured in the market, to be properly packed, the beef and pork filled with pickle, and properly iron-hooped for so long and tempestuous a passage. I will engage to keep always six months' provision in store (the dangers of the sea excepted), and give proper security for due performance; and as I took the liberty of mentioning that I thought it would be attended with a saving, as well as a great convenience to Government, to send out the cloathing ready made. The price I would deliver it on board ship at is as follows:—

1791

12 Oct.

Provisions
and
clothing.

Cloathing, agreeable to the pattern exhibited by the Navy Board, for every male convict, 40s. p. sett.

Cloathing, agreeable to the pattern exhibited by the Navy Board, for every female convict, 39s. p. sett.

Prices.

The cloaths to be well and substantially made, full-sized, and not as slop-work is generally done.

The implements for agriculture of good quality, and approved by proper inspectors, the accounts for which to be exhibited, and the usual commission paid for purchasing these articles, as well as any others that may be thought necessary to be sent out.

I am fearfull that I have presumed too much on the liberty you have been pleased to allow me, but I hope, sir, that my zeal to conduct this business in a manner different from what it has hitherto been performed, and without the dreadfull calamities that has been experienced by the deaths of so many poor wretches, as well as to guard against the wants of the settlement, will plead my excuse; and if, sir, you think my proposals reasonable, such as to deserve your kind attention, I hope I may flatter myself to have your interest in putting them into execution.

Previous
calamities.

It is my intention to make these proposals to the Lords of the Treasury on the first meeting of a Board. I am, &c.,

W. RICHARDS, JUNR.

MAJOR GROSE TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir,

Rio de Janeiro, October the 22nd, 1791.

22 Oct.

I have the honor to enclose you a return* of the detachment of the N.S.W. Corps, by which you will perceive how much we have suffered from a fever that has raged with great violence amongst the soldiers and seamen of this ship.

Losses from
fever.

You may probably recollect that for the purpose of giving air to the convicts in the orlop deck a grating was made on both sides the ship. Over these gratings the soldiers and convicts slept, and although it was a matter of great comfort to the

* Post, p. 526. The return shows that 13 private soldiers, 5 women, wives of soldiers, and 1 child had died up to 20th Oct. The number of deaths amongst the seamen is not stated. According to Captain Manning, who was in command of the Pitt, 27 persons died in 14 days, including seven seamen. Post, p. 527. The total deaths on the voyage, exclusive of children, amounted to 49; and 129 of the convicts were sick when landed. See Phillip's despatch to Dundas, 19th March, 1792.

1791
22 Oct.
Cause of the fever.

The convicts well.

Good behaviour.

Wine necessary.

convicts the fresh air being so conveyed to them, the stench that arose from them was so dreadfully offensive as to bring on the fever with which we have so much suffered. The officers of this ship are all in good health, Mr. Theed, one of the mates alone excepted; and it is very remarkable that amongst the convicts who are confined there is not a sick man, and of those who were released for the purpose of working the ship when the sailors could do their duty no longer, not any have been so severely afflicted as to lose their lives. Eleven of the sailors are already dead, and the crew at this time mostly in the sick list.

The convicts behave themselves with great regularity, and but for the melancholy scenes this fever has occasioned I never before had so pleasant, although so tedious, a voyage.

The necessity of giving port wine to the convalescents is so strongly recommended that I have endeavoured to procure it at this place, and for the payment of which, should I succeed, I shall be forced to draw on the Treasury. I have nothing particular to communicate at this time. The sick soldiers are recovering fast, and my surgeon's mate gives me great hopes that I need not expect any more of them to die of this disorder.

I shall not omit any opportunity that occurs of writing to you. I am, &c.,

FRANS. GROSE.

[Enclosure.]

The Marines on board the Pitt.

RETURN of the Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, Drummers, Privates, Men, Women, and Children of the New South Wales Corps on board the Pitt. Rio de Janeiro, October 20th, 1791.

Commis'n'd Officers.		Staff.							Effective Serjeants, Drums, Rank and File.				Effective Women, and Children.			Alteration since the Ships left England.								
																Died.								
Majors.	Captains.	Lieutenants.	Ensigns.	Chaplain.	Adjutant.	2nd Master.	Surgeon.	Mate.	Serjeants.	Corporals.	Drums.	Private.	Total Effective	Women.	Children.	Total.	Serjeants.	Corporals.	Drums.	Private.	Total.	Women.	Children.	Total.
..	1	1	1	..	1	..	..	1	3	3	2	54	62	11	6	17	..	..	..	13	13	5	1	6

FRANCIS GROSE, Major Comt., N. S. Wales Corps.

CAPTAIN MANNING TO ALDERMAN MACAULAY.*

The Pitt at Rio.

It is with great concern that I have to acquaint you of being obliged to put into this place for another fresh supply, not

* Captain Edward Manning, in command of the ship Pitt, which took out soldiers and convicts to the settlement at Port Jackson, wrote a letter to Alderman Macaulay, of London, from Rio de Janeiro, on the 24th October, 1791. Extracts from it, as given here, were published in the *Public Advertiser* (London) on the 9th February, 1792.

doubting, if you have received the account which I had the pleasure to write you from Port Praya, but that you have despatched us, before this time, from the Cape of Good Hope. From St. Jago hither, however, I have experienced nothing but adversity—attributing the groundwork of our misfortunes to the lateness of the season when we left England. At St. Jago the season was bad and the heat of the sun almost intolerable. We left it about the 20th of August, and were nearly a month in a very distressed situation—almost calm the whole time, with incessant rain—sometimes a few miles to the southward of the sun, and sometimes a few miles to the northward, most frequently without the smallest breath of air, but frequently very heavy squalls, with the severest thunder and lightning I ever was witness to in the whole course of my life. * * * A continuation of such weather, with so many confined in so small a space, brought forth a most malignant epidemical fever, which spread so rapidly among the sailors and soldiers, and in a degree so alarming, that for some time we were almost afraid to approach each other. There were very few on board who escaped its fury. Mr. Theed was among the first likely to fall a victim, but is providentially recovered. For a considerable time our scene was truly melancholy. In fourteen days we buried twenty-seven seamen, soldiers, their wives and children. Scarcely a person escaped death who was watering on shore at that d— place, St. Jago.

1791

24 Oct.

An
unfortunate
passage.Bad
weather.Fever breaks
out.Twenty-
seven
deaths.

But extraordinary as it is to tell, it is not more extraordinary than true, that the fever never touched the convicts, among whom, one might naturally have concluded, that it would have been most fatal; we have not buried one since we left Praya! But though they appear to have been proof against the fever, yet they have in other instances not been exempt from affliction. The flux and scurvy attacked them without mercy. Never were seen, I believe, such ulcers and ulcerated legs in the world. The smallest appearance on the flesh in a day or two spread broader than your hand, and soon made its way to the very bone, and many of the soldiers experienced equal calamity.

The convicts
escape the
fever,but suffer
from scurvy.

These misfortunes were succeeded by adverse winds, which drove us so far to the westward that we were not able to cross the line under 32 degrees of longitude west; and when that was accomplished we met with such continued hard gales from the south, and with a very heavy sea, that we fell in with the coast about the latitude of 8 south, and then were compelled to bear as far as this place before we could expect any change of wind.

Adverse
winds and
hard gales.

From these hardships combined, I can assure you that we had serious faces, and, though driven very near the land, my people were so weak and so much relaxed that we were almost afraid to venture in with it, or make even the attempt for harbour with any degree of safety. All the sailors we could muster were only

Driven near
the land.

1791

24 Oct.

The crew
exhausted.The ship
gets into
Rio with the
help of the
convictsKindness of
the Viceroy.The sick
sent ashore.

Recovery.

Four con-
victs lost.

five in a watch, and many of them not able to go aloft. From such unexpected delay and misfortune I was desirous of getting in anywhere, and the crew being so much exhausted, I was compelled to liberate many of the convicts and trust to their assistance to relieve the ship. Our joint efforts were then effectual, and you can form no conception of the joy that appeared in each person's countenance when we entered the harbour. It is the finest in the world—everything plentiful, and everything cheap.

The Viceroy, and all the officers in the place, have paid us every possible attention. Immediate orders were given for us to receive as much beef as we could desire, with all the fruits with which the country abounded.

They gave directions also that the sick should be received at their hospital, and many were sent immediately on shore. The sick convicts also were sent under proper care to an island which was very near the ship, whither I sent them daily provisions, and Mr. Jameson attended them with his usual care and punctuality. We have been here now nearly three weeks, and are ready for sea. My people are returned a different class of men from the state in which they were landed, and I think I may add with safety that we are nearly recovered.

I am sorry to tell you that we have lost four of the convicts. I was under the necessity of permitting them to go on shore with the boats, from whence they did, or at least attempted to make their escape. I rather think they were drowned in making the attempt, or if not, they must have been secreted in a convent of the Friars. I applied to the Viceroy, and every step was taken that was possible for their recovery without effect.

Inclosed you have a list of the number we have unfortunately lost. Under the pressure of misfortune and disease, fortunate it is that we did not lose more. * * * * *

There are some on board, I believe, who would rather stay at Rio six weeks than three; but as my commission is important, and I am desirous, as soon as possible, to give up my charge to Governor Phillips, wind and weather permitting, to-morrow I go to sea.

The sick.

Average number of sick between the 21st of August and 9th of October was between 50 and 60.

Deaths.

Died.—Seamen, 7; soldiers, 13; soldiers' wives, 5; soldiers' children, 5; convicts (since we have left England) of the small-pox, 15; convict children, 2. Total, 47.

LIEUT.-GOVERNOR KING TO THE MARQUIS OF BUCKINGHAM.*

Extract from a letter from Lieutenant-Governor King to the

Right Hon'ble the Marquis of Buckingham, dated Sydney,
New South Wales, 24th Oct., 1791.

From the
Cape to
Sydney.

OUR voyage from the Cape of Good Hope can by no means be called a bad one. Many gales of wind happened, and the seas were

* Lord Lieutenant of Ireland. He was Lord Grenville's brother.

in general very high ; but in a ship like the Gorgon those inconveniences are not much felt, and was it not for the extreme cold (the thermometer being, on an average, below 40°) and the wet state of the ship, which made us unfortunately loose a part of our stock, the voyage, altho' in the depth of winter, and running 5,000 miles in the parallel of 43° and 44°, might be called a very good one.

The general run of all the transports and the Gorgon from the Cape of Good Hope to this port was eight weeks.

Out of 25 cows, 3 bulls, 62 ewes, 4 rams, and 11 swine taken on board at the Cape we lost 8 cows, 3 bulls, 8 ewes, 3 rams ; but to make up in part for those losses a very fine bull calf, 17 cows, and a cow calf are in very good condition, and grazing at Parramatta with about 60 ewes.

Very great exertions have been made here, and a vast tract of land cleared. A number of people have become settlers, one of which has been some months independant, and the rest are making great advances towards it. From present appearances, I think there is every reason to expect a plentiful crop of Indian corn. The wheat has suffered very much from the great droughts ; for sixteen months scarce any rain ; but some late rains has given it a more promising appearance. Poultry, swine, and goats would have been in great abundance had there been corn to support them, and which there will be in plenty when the crops are got in.

Respecting Norfolk Island, we have the most flattering accounts (both publick and private) of the appearance of a very plentiful harvest. A person sent there some time ago has made considerable improvements in dressing the New Zealand flax found on the island, from which he has made some very good coarse canvas.

There is a circumstance which will add greatly to the consequence of this settlement, which is the whale fishery. Most of the whalers which were destined for the west coast of America have altered their plans, and are now going to fish on this coast. The most experienced master of those ships declared on his arrival here "that in one day he saw more spermaceti whales on this coast than he had done on the coast of Brazil in six years." In the Gorgon we passed through a shoal of fifty. It is needless for me to point out the very obvious advantages which will accrue to the colony if this fishery succeeds, and which I think there is very little doubt of. Four of those [whaling ships] sailed yesterday to fish on the coast.

1791

24 Oct.

Average length of passage.

Loss of live stock.

Harvest prospects at Sydney.

Good harvest at Norfolk Island.

Whale fishery.

Whales numerous.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, Oct'r 25th, 1791.

25 Oct.

I have to acquaint you with my arrival at this place in his Majesty's ship Gorgon on the 22nd Sept'r. We sailed from the Cape of Good Hope on the 30th July, and after much cold and

Arrival at Port Jackson.

1791

25 Oct.

blowing weather (but constant fair winds) we made the South Cape of New Holland on the 8th Sept'r, after which contrary winds retarded our arrival here till the 22nd Sept'r.

Loss of live
stock.

It gives me much concern to inform you of the ill-success which has attended the live stock that I purchased at the Cape of Good Hope for the use of the colony, an exact statement of which, together with the Commissary's receipt, I herewith enclose.* When the extreme coldness of the weather, the wet state of the ship (and particularly the main deck, where the cattle were stowed) from rain and the seas which were often shipped, the inactive state of the cattle, and the violent motion of the ship is considered, I cannot help thinking it fortunate that a greater number did not die. The bulls are certainly a great loss; but the bull calf is strong and very thriving, and there is every appearance of its doing well.

Fruit-trees
and plants.

The fruit-trees and other plants were all in a very good state on our arrival here, a proportion of which has been landed, and the remainder Governor Phillip has permitted me to take to Norfolk Island.

King's
movements.

As the Atlantic, transport, is ordered to land me at Norfolk Island on her way to Calcutta, I hope to arrive there about the 16th November.

I am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.†

Sydney, New South Wales,

27 Oct.

Dear Sir,

27th October, 1791.

The live
stock.

By the publick letter you will observe our good and bad luck with the stock; but I think we have been fortunate on the whole, and should have been still more so if the Gorgon had been properly fitted, which might have been done at a very small expence in England, and would have ensured the safe arrival of every head put on board at the Cape.

Black cattle
and sheep.

Should a forty-gun ship be sent for the purpose of bringing cattle to this colony, I think a hundred black cattle, two hundred sheep, and a quantity of stores might be landed here very safely; but to effect that desirable purpose the ship must have a spar-deck, and no other guns than on the quarter-deck and forecastle. Stalls, with bottoms raised six inches off the deck, should be fitted fore and aft on the main deck and on a part of the lower deck, in the midship parts of which very convenient sheep-pens might be built for containing two hundred head of sheep; but, as I before observed, carrying cattle must be the principal object of the voyage, as the quantity of hay and barley necessary for the support of so many animals would occupy a great part of the ship,

How to send
live stock
and food.

* Not available. The information is given in King's letter to Nepean; post, pp. 531, 532.

† A private letter.

and certainly it would be a very considerable saving to Government if the hay and barley was laid in in England, and more than half the expence saved. The hay should be pressed in casks, and the barley also stowed in cask ; a proportion of good bran or pollard would also be necessary, and eight or ten convicts accustomed to cattle. I think, with those precautions, every cow and sheep put on board at the Cape would in eight weeks be grazing at Parramatta.

I hope you will not think the above observation improper, as it is only an idea of my own, founded on a conviction of its being attended with success from what I observed in the Gorgon, nor do I think a fitter man could be found for the purpose than Parker.

I hope that everything which Governor Phillip has mentioned respecting Norfolk Island will be attended to and taken into consideration. I need not urge you any more respecting the very great necessity there is of some form of justice being established in that island, nor is there a less necessity for a clergyman, as the numbers now on that island are about 1,800, and neither law nor gospel to punish or direct them.

Might not a court on that island be established, consisting of the Lt.-Governor as Judge and five officers. The precept must, of course, come from the Governor-in-Chief, and no sentence of death should be put into execution untill the Governor-in-Chief approves or disapproves of the sentence. You will, I hope, excuse my pointing out those things ; but as I may hereafter be in certain situations that may make me wish for some regular mode of justice, I hope you will pardon any impropriety in thus mentioning things which ought to come through Gov'r Phillip.

The accounts from Norfolk Island are such that upwards of 30 marines are going there as settlers, and as they are all good characters I hope everything will be conducted in the manner that I wish, and which I have no doubt will be highly satisfactory to his Majesty's Ministers ; at least, no pains or assiduity shall be wanting on my part to gain their approbation of my conduct.

I think it would be a great object if transports and King's ships bound to this colony, and that touched at Teneriffe, to bring a quantity of quearns from thence. They are small hand mill-stones, which will last a number of years, "till windmills can be erected," and are bought for 3s. 6d. a pair. A breed of asses from thence would also be very usefull, as none can be got at the Cape.

I beg my best respects to Mrs. Nepean, and am, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

Cape, July 26, '91 ; stock, &c., Capt. King, on Gorgon : —

Bought : 3 males, 25 females, black cattle ; 4 males, 62 females, sheep ; 1 male, 10 females, swine ; 8 males, 8 females, rabbits ; 10 males, 10 females, pigeons.

1791

27 Oct.

Norfolk
Island
wants.

Court of
Justice.

Marines as
settlers.

Millstones.

The live
stock.

1791

27 Oct.

Remain, P. Jacks., Sep. 23, '91: 1 male, 17 females, black cattle; 3 males, 56 females, sheep; 1 male, 4 females, swine; 10 male, 10 females, pigeons.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD GRENVILLE.*

Sydney, New South Wales,

5 Nov.

My Lord,

November 5th, 1791.

By the Mary Ann transport, which arrived here the 9th of July, I had the honor of receiving your Lordship's letter, marked No. 10, in triplicate, and dated the 19th of February, with inclosures numbered from 1 to 22. The letter marked No. 7, and dated the 13th of November, 1790, with the commission for remitting the whole or any part of the time for which felons or other offenders may be sentenced,[†] and No. 8, dated the 15th of the same month, with the royal instructions[‡] on that head, and the warrant for using the seal of this territory,[§] were received with the seal by his Majesty's ship Gorgon the 22nd of September.

Power to
remit
sentences.

No. 9, dated the 16th of November, 1790, containing an inclosure, specifying the quantity and quality of the stores sent out, the circular letter, with his Majesty's most gracious speech, and your Lordship's separate letter of the 19th of February, 1791, were received by the Albemarle the 13th of October. All the transports were arrived by the 16th, as mentioned in the inclosed list.||

Stores.

Two batches
of convicts a
year.

The system to be adopted of sending out the convicts in two embarkations in the course of each year, as mentioned by your Lordship,[¶] must be attended with many advantages to the colony; and from the reports made by the masters of the different ships I have reason to hope that a whale fishery may be established on this coast. The master of the Britannia has assured me that he saw more spermaceti whales between the South Cape and this harbour than he saw on the Brazil coast in six years; and three of the whalers are now on the coast. Probably one or more of them may return before my dispatches are closed, which may enable me to give your Lordship further information on this subject.

A whale
fishery.

No grain
from
Norfolk
Island.

With respect to the supplies of wheat and other grain which it was supposed this settlement might have received from Norfolk Island, your Lordship will observe from the numbers sent there during Lieutenant-Governor King's absence, that what he calculated as likely to be sent off the island will now be consumed by its inhabitants; and although I am sensible that great inconveniency attends having so many people on that island while no punishment can be inflicted beyond what a magistrate may feel

* Phillip now addresses Lord Grenville by his proper title. See note, ante, p. 465.

[†] Ante, p. 410.

[‡] Ante, p. 413.

[§] Ante, p. 431.

[¶] Not recorded. The transports were the Active, Atlantic, Queen, Albemarle, Britannia, Admiral Barrington, William and Ann, Salamander, Matilda, Mary Anne.

^{||} Ante, p. 453.

himself authorised to direct (a circumstance which I presume will be taken into consideration), still I think the numbers sent will be for the general good. The sooner the whole island is in cultivation the better; as great a number of people as that spot can support will undoubtedly be supported much better there than they could be if they remained here and drew their support from thence, which could only be done at an expense and risque; and at Norfolk Island the labour of the convicts is most to the advantage of the colony, for there the soil makes the best return.

In proceeding with my answer to your Lordship's letter, which mentions the resources of this settlement, I am led to assign a reason for having sent the *Atlantic** to Calcutta, in order to procure a supply of flour and pease, as my letter of the 17th of July, 1790, No. 10†, gives reason to suppose two years from that period would put the colony in such a state that a further supply of flour would not be necessary, if no unforeseen accident happened.

Our crops of last year greatly failed us from a long drought, very little rain falling from the beginning of July, 1790, to August, 1791; and the crops now in the ground, although they promise to be much better than we had reason to expect, have suffered very much from the seed having lain so long in the ground before it vegetated. The great want of a proper person to be charged with the cultivation of the ground has been mentioned in my former letters, and from the consequence the person sent out for that purpose will be of to this colony, I am induced to trespass on your Lordship's patience by repeating what has been already observed in former letters. That it will require not only the good

practical farmer, but a man who is calculated for the situation in which he will be placed; he will have to direct the labour of a great body of convicts, at present about fifteen hundred (very few of whom will feel themselves any ways interested in the success of their labours, or who will ever do more, or better, than what they find absolutely necessary to avoid punishment from the overseers under whose eyes they work; and very few of those overseers will be found men on whom much dependence can be placed); he will be charged with the grain and pulse to be raised for the support of several thousand people, and with all the public live stock, from which, nor from enforcing the labour of the convicts, is he to find any private advantage. I shall be pardoned for this digression. When the provisions brought out with the convicts, and what has been received of the *Guardian's* cargo, and the surplus of the *Gorgon's* provisions, were added to what we have in the colony, it only gave us five months' flour, ten months' beef and pork, twelve days' pease, and twenty-three days' oatmeal, for the colony, reckoning from the 12th day of October; I therefore thought it prudent to take the *Atlantic* transport into his Majesty's employ, and send her under the direction of Lieutenant

1791

5 Nov.

More
cultivation
desirable.

Sending to
Calcutta.

Failure of
crops.

A farmer
superinten-
dent.

Insufficient
provisions.

* One of the transports.

† Ante, p. 362.

1791

5 Nov.

The
Waaksam-
heyd.

Richard Bowen (who came out in that ship as naval agent) to Calcutta, in order to purchase flour and pease for the use of the colony. His orders and instructions are inclosed.*

I see by your Lordship's letter that it was thought the snow† which brought the provisions from Batavia, and which has been hired to carry home the officers and men after the loss of the Sirius, would be purchased; but she was not calculated for the service of this colony, nor could I have found officers to put in her had she been purchased.

Absconding
feared.

The transport mentioned by your Lordship, as to be expected from the north-west coast of America,‡ shall be employed as directed; but I much fear some bad consequences may attend employing such vessels for any length of time in this country, where there are several hundred men, many of whom are seamen, who would at any hour risque their lives, if they saw the least probability of escaping. Two boats have been carried away; and as there is a probability that one of those boats may get to a Dutch settlement, the names and descriptions of the people are inclosed. The getting back any of those men is much to be desired.

Men of war
necessary.

As boats capable of going along the coast, and which I should gladly have employed, have been laid up for many months, and my only security in going betwixt Sydney and Parramatta, before the Gorgon's arrival, depended on the boat I used being unfit to go out of the harbour, your Lordship will judge if a ship, with only one King's officer on board, can be under that discipline which a ship should be under that is to be employed on this station. The colony should never be without two ships; and I feel it my duty to say that I think no ships can with safety be employed on this station unless they are King's ships, that is, ships having commission, warrant, and petty officers on board them; and I think that more than one commissioned officer should be on board such ship.

Settlers.

Of those convicts whose sentences are expired, some who are seamen or carpenters will be carried away by the transports; but by far the greatest part of those people must remain, discontented and desirous of seizing the first opportunity which offers of escaping. Amongst the many great advantages which would attend settlers coming out who had some property of their own, their finding employment for this class of people would be one, for such settlers would separate them from the convicts, which cannot well be done while they are employed by the Crown, and probably most of them would soon be reconciled to remain in the country.

Discharged
prisoners.

Of the convicts whose terms of transportation are expired, or who, from their very meritorious behaviour, have been emancipated, there is one whose time is expired, and whom, in consideration of his remaining here a few months longer, I have

* Not recorded.

† The Dutch vessel Waaksamheyd.

‡ The Dædalus.

promised to send home by the next ships. He is the only carpenter at this place who is capable of acting as a master carpenter, and while he remains here I have promised to allow him one shilling per diem. 1791
5 Nov.

The master carpenter, who is mentioned in my letter No. 4, is Master
to return to Norfolk Island, where stores and other buildings are wanted. carpenter.

The first convict who was emancipated had been bred to surgery, and merited from his exemplary conduct what has been done for him; he acts as an assistant to the surgeons, who find him a very useful man. He is inclined to remain in the country. For him some allowance will be necessary, and for which he was recommended when the inconveniences which the superintendents and others laboured under, from there not being any money in the colony, was represented to your Lordship. A convict
surgeon.

The second convict who was emancipated had well earned his emancipation by his good conduct, and the pains he had taken to teach others the business of a bricklayer; this man has likewise my promise to be sent home before I leave the country; and as he continues to carry on the public works with great diligence will expect some little allowance. The time for which he was sentenced will be expired before he returns to England. Another
emancipist.

The third convict was emancipated on the recommendation of the Lieutenant-Governor, for extinguishing the fire on board the Sirius after that ship went on shore. This man went to Calcutta in the Atlantic, and it now appears that his term of transportation had expired prior to his emancipation. A third.

One woman has been emancipated on her marrying a superintendent. Emancipa-
tion and
marriage.

The distinction directed to be made with regard to those convicts who have behaved well before they became settlers has been attended to; and I hope the necessity there has been of deviating from the royal instructions respecting settlers will appear to have been sufficient to justify what I have done on that head. My letter to Mr. Nepean undoubtedly gave little reason to suppose that many of the marines would be inclined to remain when the relief took place, and the opinion I formed when that letter was written was drawn from the great anxiety so many expressed of quitting a country which was said to be incapable of furnishing even the common necessaries of life; the people who were to become settlers were men who had not been in the habit of judging for themselves, and the fears and apprehensions of some to whom they had been accustomed to look up with respect, had their effect, and there was some difficulty in persuading any man on whose judgment some dependence might be placed to think for himself; but I have now the pleasure of informing your Lordship that most of those fears and apprehensions are done away, and Well-
behaved
convicts. Obstacles to
settlement.

1791

5 Nov.

Eighty-six
settlers.

that we have now eighty-six* settlers here and at Norfolk Island — that is, thirty-one from the marines, eleven seamen, and forty-four from those convicts whose sentences have expired; there are, likewise, more marines who have desired to be received as settlers when the detachment is to be embarked. No man of bad character has been received as a settler.

The first
settler.

The first settler was a convict whose time being expired, an hut was built, and one acre and an half of ground cleared for him at Parramatta; he entered on his farm of thirty acres the 21st of November, 1789,† and was supported from the public store until the 25th of February, 1791, when he declined receiving any further support, being then able to maintain himself. He has since married, and has a child, both of whom he wishes to take off the public store next Christmas.

Settlers
doing well.

A superintendent who was sent out in the *Guardian* has likewise become a settler; he was not calculated for the employment for which he came out, but as a settler will be a useful man. His salary as a superintendent is to cease from the first quarter-day after he became a settler, and which he did the 30th day of March, 1791. All these people are doing well, and I hope will be able to maintain themselves when the time expires for which they are to be supported from the public stores. The times on which the settlers entered on their lands, the conditions, &c., are mentioned in the inclosed return‡; and as we are at some loss respecting the form of grants, I write to Mr. Nepean on the subject.

Modification
of
instructions.

It was my intention not to receive any settlers after the marines and seamen late of his Majesty's ship *Sirius* had been received but according to the instructions, which pointed out the maintaining such settler from the public store for twelve months only; *but* had I adhered to that determination, I must have given up all thoughts of procuring any settlers from the detachment; and any convict who might have been admitted as a settler to be supported by the Crown for one year only would have passed that year under the apprehensions of not being able to support himself at the expiration of that time, and would probably have been induced to have given up his ground before half the year was expired.

Dangers of
isolation.

The placing the settlers with allotments of land for the Crown betwixt every two settlers was done§; but being, in consequence of that disposition, surrounded with timber, out of sight and out of hearing of each other, they were exposed to a tribe of natives, who, living in the woods, and seldom coming on the sea-coast, have never mixed with us, and always have been hostile; by these people the settlers were several times alarmed, and as they were single men, or at most a man and woman, in the little hut they

* The official return gives 87. Post, p. 541.
 † According to the return (p. 540), the
 farm was granted, 30th March, 1791.
 ‡ Post, pp. 539-541.
 § Vide Phillip's additional
 instructions. Ante, p. 258.

had reared, I found it necessary to let subsequent settlers occupy all the ground which had been set apart for the Crown. The Royal Instructions respecting the division of land may be carried into execution when large allotments of land are made, and several men are to be employed in the cultivation; but when the allotments are small, and occupied by only one person, independent of the risque the settler runs from the natives, many inconveniences attend that disposition; they cannot so readily assist each other in moving heavy timber; the labour of fencing in their grounds is greatly increased, and every man is obliged to watch his own grain, on which, from being surrounded with a wood, depredations are more likely to escape detection. I have directed Lieutenant-Governor King not to promise in future more than ten acres of land at Norfolk Island (until instructions are received on that head) to any convict who is to be admitted as a settler, and none are to be received as settlers on the island but for very meritorious behaviour.

1791

5 Nov.

Isolation
inconvenient
as well as
dangerous.

Here your Lordship will permit me once more to observe how much we stand in need of a few honest, intelligent settlers. The vicious and the idle are not easily reformed while they are incorporated in one body. Precept has little effect, but example will do much, and although I can still say with great truth and equal satisfaction that the convicts in general behave better than ever could be expected, and that their crimes, with very few exceptions, have been confined to the procuring for themselves the common necessities of life, crimes which it may be presumed will not be committed when a more plentiful ration renders those little robberies unnecessary; still we shall want some good characters to whom these people might look up. Having them will be attended with every advantage, and it is to be remembered that the business of cultivation is at present in the hands of few who ever turned their thoughts that way before they came to this country, and very few indeed have more than a very superficial knowledge in agriculture.

Need of
superior
settlers.

The opinion of his Majesty's Attorney and Solicitor General* has been made public.

Opinion of
law officers.

His Majesty's ship *Gorgon* arrived the 21st of September, and Captain Parker, having represented to me that the ship required repairs which would take some time, and the *Atlantic*, already mentioned to your Lordship as being taken into the service in order to bring a further supply of provisions from Calcutta, being ready to sail, the 26th of October, with provisions and stores for Norfolk Island, Lieutenant-Governor King went on board that ship, and took with him Captain Paterson, who will have one company for the service of the island.

The *Gorgon*.

The *Atlantic*
sent to
Calcutta.

For the notice which has been taken of Mr. King's services, and the part your Lordship had in procuring him the rank he now holds in his Majesty's navy, I feel myself much obliged, and from

King's
promotion.

* Ante, pp. 462, 463.

1791

5 Nov.

Transports
for Norfolk
Island.

the knowledge I have of that officer, am confident that his future conduct will merit the honor he has received.

It had been necessary to send two of the transports to Norfolk Island with convicts, stores, and provisions before his Majesty's ship *Gorgon* arrived. In my letters to Mr. Nepean the inconveniences attending the masters of those ships not being informed that it might be necessary for some of them to deliver their cargo at Norfolk Island will be pointed out.

Major Ross
expected.

The *Gorgon*, notwithstanding the assistance given by the shipwrights belonging to the colony, which could be spared from the Supply, armed tender, not being likely to be ready for sea before the beginning of December, the *Queen*, transport, which sailed from hence the 2nd instant with stores and part of a company of the New South Wales Corps, was ordered to receive Major Ross, with the officers and men under his command. They may be expected to arrive here* by the time the *Gorgon* will be ready to sail, and which will enable that ship to sail for Europe some weeks sooner than if she had gone to Norfolk Island.

The Third
Fleet.

199 deaths.

Bad state of
the convicts.

Of the convicts mentioned by your Lordship to be sent out, 1,695 males and 168 females have been landed, with six free women and ten children. It appears by the returns from the Transports that 194 males, 4 females, and 1 child died on the passage; and, although the convicts landed from these ships were not so sickly as those brought out last year, the greatest part of them are so emaciated, so worn away by long confinement, or want of food, or from both these causes, that it will be long before they recover their strength, and which many of them never will recover. Your Lordship will readily conceive that this addition to our numbers will for many months be a deadweight on the stores. The surgeon's returns of this day are: "Under medical treatment and incapable of labour, 626—576 of whom are those landed from the last ships."

Charge
against the
master of
the *Queen*.

The examination of the master and mate of the *Queen*, transport,† having been referred to me by the magistrates who took it, I have the honor of transmitting an attested copy to your Lordship, for I doubt if I have the power of inflicting a punishment adequate to the crime.

The
Guardian's
cargo.

The Commissary's return, which is inclosed, will show the few articles received from the Cape of Good Hope, and which are the last of the Guardian's cargo. I should have hoped that iron pots, and many articles of husbandry, would have been saved, and of which the colony stands in great need, but nothing of that kind has been received. The iron pots in the colony before the last 1,800 convicts were landed amounted to no more than what were barely sufficient, and none came with those people.

* From Norfolk Island, where Major Ross had acted as Lieutenant-Governor.

† The proceedings before the magistrates are not on record. According to Collins's "Account of New South Wales," vol. i, p. 180, the master of the *Queen* was accused by the convicts on board of withholding their provisions, and the charge was in substance proved.

The Commissary is directed to make a return of those articles most wanted in the colony. 1791

A return of the quantity of land in cultivation at Parramatta is enclosed. The town, which I have named Parramatta, extends from the foot of Rose Hill for one mile to the eastward along the creek, and I have named it Parramatta, that being the name given by the natives to the spot on which the town is situated. 5 Nov. Cultivation at Parramatta.

I have, &c.,

[Enclosure.]

A. PHILLIP.

Ground in Cultivation at Parramatta, November, 1791.

a.	r.	p.	
351	2	5	In maize.
44	1	8	„ wheat.
6	1	30	„ barley.
1	0	0	„ oats.
2	0	3	„ potatoes.
4	2	0	Not cultivated; but cleared.
4	2	15	Crescent mostly planted with vines.
6	0	0	The Governor's garden partly sowed with maize and wheat.
80	0	0	Garden ground belonging to individuals.
17	0	0	Land in cultivation by the N. S. Wales Corps.
150	0	0	Cleared and to be sowed with turnips.
91	3	2	Ground in cultivation by settlers as per return of settlers.
28	0	0	Ground in cultivation by officers of the civil and military.
134	0	0	Enclosed and the timber thinned for feeding cattle.

Cultivation at Parramatta.

[Enclosure.]

ENCOURAGEMENT TO SETTLERS.

THE following is the encouragement given to the settlers named in the list which accompanies this :—

To James Ruse.—One acre and an half of ground, broke up, assisted in clearing the heavy timber off five acres, cloathed and supplied with the ration issued from the public store for fifteen months, an hut built, grain for sowing his ground the first year, with the necessary implements of husbandry. Two sow pigs and six hens given him. Ruse.

Robert Webb and William Reid, to be supported and cloathed from the public stores for eighteen months; to have huts built for them, and to receive the necessary quantity of seed, grain, and implements of husbandry requisite for sowing the ground the first year; two sow pigs, one cock, six hens. The above two settlers likewise were assisted in clearing two acres of ground. Webb and Reid.

Philip Schaffer, himself and daughter, to be supplied with a daily ration as issued from the public stores for eighteen months; an hut to be built on the premises, two acres of ground to be cleared by cutting down the timber and burning it off the land; to have the labour of four male convicts for eighteen months, during which time they are to be victualled and cloathed from the public store; to receive the necessary tools and implements of husbandry, seed grain for sowing the ground the first year, and two sow pigs. Schaffer.

1791

Marines and
seamen.

The marines and seamen who have become settlers on Norfolk Island to be clothed and victualled for eighteen months, to be supplied with a proportion of grain and a proper assortment of such tools and implements of husbandry as may be necessary for clearing and cultivating the land, as well as with such a proportion of hogs and poultry as may be necessary and can be spared from the general stock of the settlement, not to be less than two breeding sows, one cock and six hens, to have half an acre of ground cleared of timber, and the necessary assistance given for building a hut sufficient to shelter the settler from the weather and secure his property.

The same encouragement will be given to those marines who may become settlers on the embarkation of the detachment for England.

Convicts.

Those convicts whose sentences of transportation expired and have been permitted to become settlers at or near Parramatta, are to be supported and clothed from the public store for eighteen months, to receive two sow pigs with the necessary implements of husbandry and grain for sowing the ground the first year.

Those who have wives or children are to support them at the expiration of the above eighteen months.

Return of Lands granted in his Majesty's territory of New South Wales and its dependencies.

No.	Names of settlers.	Time of becoming settlers	No. of acres of land granted.	Place where.
		1791.	acres.	
1	James Ruse	Mar. 30....	30	Parramatta.
2	Robert Webb	" 30....	60	On the north side of the creek leading to Parramatta.
3	William Reid	" 30....	60	" "
4	Phillip Schaffer.....	" 30....	140	" "
5	Robert Watson	April 5....	60	Norfolk Island.
6	John Drummond	" 5....	60	" "
7	James Proctor	" 5....	60	" "
8	Peter Hibbs	" 5....	60	" "
9	Owen Cavanaugh	" 5....	60	" "
10	James Painter	" 5....	60	" "
11	William Mitchell	" 5....	60	" "
12	William Hambly	" 5....	60	" "
13	Charles Heritage	" 5....	60	" "
14	Samuel King	" 5....	60	" "
15	Charles Williams	July 18....	30	South side of the creek leading to Parramatta.
16	James Stuart.....	" 18....	20	" "
17	George Lisk	" 18....	30	4 miles to the westward of Parramatta.
18	William Kilby	" 18....	50	" "
19	William Butler	" 18....	50	" "
20	John Nichols	" 18....	30	" "
21	John Ramsey.....	" 18....	50	At the Ponds, 2 miles to the N.E. of Parramatta.
22	Mathew Everingham..	" 18....	50	" "
23	John Summers	" 18....	30	" "
24	John Richards	" 18....	30	" "
25	William Field	" 18....	50	" "
26	Joseph Bishop	" 18....	50	" "
27	Curtis Brand	" 18....	30	" "

Return of Lands granted—(continued).

1791

No.	Names of settlers.	Time of becoming settlers.	No. of acres of land granted.	Place where.
		1791.	acres.	
28	John Silverthorn	July 18....	30	4 miles to westward of Parramatta.
29	Thomas Martin	" 18....	30	" "
30	Samuel Griffiths	" 18....	30	" "
31	James Castles	" 18....	30	" "
32	Joseph Morley	" 18....	50	" "
33	William Hubbard	" 18....	50	At the Ponds, 2 miles to the N.E. of Parramatta.
34	John Anderson	" 18....	50	" "
35	William Elliott	" 18....	30	" "
36	Joseph Marshall	" 18....	30	" "
37	Edward Vardell	" 18....	30	" "
38	Simon Burn	Aug. 17....	50	At the northern boundary; farms 2 miles from Parramatta.
39	John Brown	" 17....	60	" "
40	William Moulds	" 17....	30	" "
41	John Baffen	" 17....	50	Employed as a carpenter.
42	John Williams	" 17....	50	" "
43	Edward Pugh	" 17....	70	4 miles to the westward of Parramatta.
44	William Parish	" 17....	60	" "
45	William Mitchell	Not known	60	Norfolk Island.
46	Thomas Bramwell	" "	60	" "
47	Thomas Bishop	" "	60	" "
48	John McCarthy	" "	60	" "
49	Lawrence Richards	" "	60	" "
50	John Munday	" "	60	" "
51	Thomas Chipp	" "	60	" "
52	William Strong	" "	60	" "
53	James McManus	" "	60	" "
54	Thomas O'Brien	" "	60	" "
55	Richard Knight	" "	60	" "
56	Abraham Hand	" "	60	" "
57	William Dempsey	" "	60	" "
58	Thomas Sculley	" "	60	" "
59	John Barrisford	" "	60	" "
60	James Redmond	" "	60	" "
61	William Tonks	" "	60	" "
62	Thomas Halfpenny	" "	60	" "
63	William Standley	" "	60	" "
64	John Gowen	" "	60	" "
65	Thomas Dukes	" "	60	" "
66	James Williams	" "	60	" "
67	Daniel Standfield	" "	60	" "
68	John Roberts	" "	60	" "
69	William Simms	" "	60	" "
70	John Foley	" "	60	" "
71	Patrick Connell	" "	60	" "
72	John Redman	" "	60	" "
73	Thomas Spencer	" "	60	" "
74	John Scott	" "	60	" "
75	Robert Forrester	" "	10	" "
76	James White	" "	10	" "
77	William Cross	" "	10	" "
78	James Walbourne	" "	10	" "
79	Benjamin Fentum	" "	10	" "
80	Peter Woodcock	" "	10	" "
81	Edward Kimberley	" "	10	" "
82	John Welsh	" "	10	" "
83	William Bell	" "	10	" "
84	John Turner	" "	10	" "
85	Thomas Kelly	" "	30	At the Ponds, 2 miles north-east of Parramatta.
86	William Parr	" "	50	At the northern boundary farms, 2 miles from Parramatta.
87	John Herbert	" "	60	4 miles to the westward of Parramatta.

1791

7 Nov.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD GRENVILLE.

Sydney, New South Wales,

7th November, 1791.

My Lord,

The
Guardian's
convicts.

In answer to your Lordship's letter, marked No. 9, and dated the 16th of November, 1790, I have the honor to inform your Lordship that his Majesty's pleasure respecting the convicts who returned to the Cape of Good Hope in the Guardian has been made known to those people, and the conditional pardon will be made out for them.* I understand by the words "pardoned on condition of their continuing abroad in such parts as may hereafter be directed by you for the terms specified in their several sentences of transportation," and connected with what follows relative to their being supplied with tools, &c., to mean that they are to remain in the colony.

Officers
wanted.

As Major Grose, with the officers who have remained in England, are much wanted for the service of this country, I hope they will leave England by the time your Lordship mentions; but from the great uncertainty as to the time in which they may arrive, I am induced to detain one company of the marines, and send the rest of the detachment home in the Gorgon, under the command of Major Ross, and which I think more for his Majesty's service than detaining the whole detachment until Major Grose and the officers of the New South Wales Corps arrive. The company which will remain shall be sent home in the Atlantic, when that ship returns from Calcutta, and which will be no additional expence to the Crown, as the ship could not have been hired but on condition of her remaining in the pay of Government until her arrival in England.

A company
of marines
detained.Captain
Paterson.

It was necessary to have three subalterns at Norfolk Island with Captain Paterson,† otherwise he could not have assembled a battalion court-martial, and which leaves of the New South Wales Corps only two captains, one lieutenant, and two ensigns for the duty of this place and Parramatta.

Failure of
military
plan.

The raising a company from the marines to be annexed to the New South Wales Corps was not effected; and I believe it failed from no other cause than the doubt the men had as to receiving any allowance of spirits, and the fear of being obliged to pay for their rations. Had the company been raised, it would have been given to Captain Lieutenant George Johnston. The officers to whom I felt myself at liberty to offer the lieutenantancy declined it, as being old lieutenants in the marines, or wishing to return to England on account of their private affairs. No information has ever been received from the Secretary at War respecting the raising of this company, as I had reason to expect from your Lordship's letter numbered 6.‡

* Ante, p. 414.

† Of the New South Wales Corps. Afterwards Lieutenant-Colonel and Lieutenant-Governor of New South Wales. Administered the Government from 13th December, 1794, to 1st September, 1795.

‡ Ante, p. 286.

The Deputy-Surveyor* arrived in the Gorgon, and is gone to Norfolk Island. Mr. Zachariah Clark,† who your Lordship informs me is appointed Deputy-Commissary, continues to act under the Commissary. I presume his warrant will be sent out, as likewise Mr Brewer's, as Provost-Marshal, who, I understand, is appointed to that office.

1791

7 Nov.

Officers for
Norfolk
Island.

Of those persons recommended to your Lordship for salaries in a former letter, Henry Edward Dodd (charged with the cultivation of the ground at Parramatta), died the 28th of January, 1791; and Walter Broady (who acted as master-smith) went home in the Sirius,‡ to which ship he belonged.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD GRENVILLE.

Sydney, New South Wales,

My Lord,

7th November, 1791.

In obedience to his Majesty's pleasure, respecting Lieutenant Dawes, as signified to me in your Lordship's letter, No. 9,§ a written message was sent to that officer, of which, with his answer and subsequent letter, copies are inclosed.

Lieut.
Dawes.

Whatever reason I had to be displeased with the conduct of Lieutenant Dawes, I was desirous of retaining him in the colony, provided he had seen his error, for although not immediately necessary as an engineer, his services were wanted in surveying and marking out allotments of land for settlers; and having often found that the peculiar situation this colony has been in made it necessary to pass over improprieties which could not otherwise have passed unnoticed, so on this occasion I should gladly have reconciled this officer to a proper sense of his duty; but as he returns to England, and thinks his conduct justifiable, it becomes necessary to inform your Lordship on what grounds I was displeased with Lieutenant Dawes, who, from being an officer of his Majesty's Marine Forces, was not amenable to a general court-martial in this country.

The
Governor
displeased.

I have, &c.,

[Enclosure.]

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LIEUTENANT DAWES.

*Copy of the Message delivered to Lieut. Dawes, on Saturday,
the 5th Nov'r, 1791.*

5 Nov.

As it has been his Majesty's pleasure that Lieutenant Dawes should be permitted to remain in this country as an engineer, with the same emoluments as are enjoyed by an officer of the corps of engineers of a similar rank, the Governor is willing to forget the impropriety of Lieut. Dawes's conduct;

In purchasing the convicts' ration contrary to repeated orders on that head;

Charges.

* Mr. Charles Grimes.

† Subsequently employed at Norfolk Island.

‡ The Sirius only went as far as the Cape.

§ Ante, p. 415.

1791

5 Nov.

In the declaration made by Lieut. Dawes respecting the general order of the 13th of last December* ;

And in his unofficerlike behaviour to the Governor in the presence of Lieut. and Adjutant Long.

Conditions
of reinstatement.

If Lieut. Dawes is desirous of remaining in this country, and declares himself convinced of the impropriety of his conduct on the above occasions, and acknowledges it in such a manner as may leave no reason to suppose that anything similar will happen in future.

[Enclosure.]

ANSWER FROM LIEUT. DAWES.

Charges
denied.

At present I cannot think that I was guilty of any impropriety whatever in purchasing provisions from a convict, as I had no reason whatever to suppose that it was any part of his ration.

Neither in my declaration of the 13th of December, 1790, which I do not by any means wish to have forgotten, nor in what I said to his Excellency in the presence of Lieut. and Adjutant Long ; it being an answer which I thought it incumbent on me to make to what his Excellency had been pleased to say to me just before.

Final
answer
deferred.

These are my present sentiments ; but as I wish to act with as much deference and respect as possible to his Excellency's opinion, I would choose to defer giving a final answer until to-morrow, and of course do not wish this to be considered as such.

[Enclosure.]

LIEUTENANT DAWES TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

6 Nov.

Sir, Marine Quarters, Sydney, 6th November, 1791.

In compliance with my assurance of yesterday, in answer to your message by Captain Collins, I now beg leave to state fully to your Excellency my sentiments on the occasion.

A charge
explained.

I confess it does not appear to me that I was guilty of any impropriety in purchasing provisions from a convict, as I had every reason to suppose it was no part of his ration ; it being at that time publicly known to all the officers that he, in his situation of baker to the garrison, gained weekly a very considerable quantity of flour, as the just perquisite of his business, which I therefore presumed became his property, and as such was deemed by every one to be entirely at his own disposal. To this I presume your Excellency alluded in the first part of your message, as I never have bought any other article of a convict's ration from any person of that description whatever.

Opinion
unchanged.

With regard to my declaration of the 13th December, 1790, I beg leave to state to your Excellency, that after so long a time having elapsed, and repeated reflections on the subject, I feel at this instant no reason to alter the sentiments I then entertained.

In respect to what I said to y'r Excellency in the presence of Lieut. and Adjutant Long, I have to observe that it was far from

* Post, p. 546.

my intention to express anything, either in word or manner, in any degree improper or disrespectful, I conceived what y'r Excellency had said to me just before amounted to a direct charge of leaving the Observatory without sufficient cause; and I then thought, and still think, it was but justice to myself to deny such charge in terms sufficiently clear and expressive to leave no possibility of misconception.

I confess I was exceedingly pained to find your Excellency entertained such an idea; and from the distress which a discovery of it could not but occasion, it is possible something might have escaped me, which might appear to your Excellency improper or disrespectful; if so, I very readily acknowledge that I am exceedingly sorry for it, but think it necessary again to disclaim any intention of the kind.

I have, &c.,

WILLIAM DAWES, Lieut. of Marines.

[Enclosure.]

COMMENTS BY GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

REPEATED orders had been given to prevent the convicts from selling any part of their ration, but which they continued to do, and carried on that trade with those, who from their situation were not likely to be suspected, consequently detection was not very practicable. Robberies were too frequently the consequence, and it was not possible that it should be otherwise, for every man could eat his ration, and with which very few of those people were satisfied; at the same time they made a practice of joining together a part of their ration of flour, and giving ten pounds of flour for a bottle of rum, and thirty pounds of flour for a pound of tobacco. This was at a time when the ration was only four pounds of flour for a man for seven days.

A convict being detected, who, it appeared on his examination before the magistrates, had made a practice of receiving flour and other species of provision from the convicts, and exchanging them for spirits and other articles, he declared that Lieut. Dawes was one with whom he had made such exchanges, having given forty pounds of flour for twenty pounds of sugar to that officer.

It does not appear that Lieut. Dawes could know to whom the flour belonged, as the man of whom the purchase was made (a blacksmith) carried on that trade for a variety of people; nor can the Governor admit that Lieut. Dawes never purchased any other species of provisions, as his Major-Commandant had been some time before desired to point out to him the impropriety of his purchasing pease from convicts.

Extract from the General Orders of the 13th of December, 1790.

"Several tribes of the natives still continuing to throw spears at any man they meet unarmed, by which several have been killed or dangerously wounded, the Governor, in order to deter the

1791

6 Nov.

No
disrespect
intended.

Traffic in
convicts'
rations.

Lieut.
Dawes
accused.

Previous
purchases.

Attacks by
natives.

1791

6 Nov.

An example
to be made.No person
to fire upon
natives
except in
self-defence.Natives to be
punished
for bad
behaviour.Six natives
to be
captured or
killed.Lieut.
Dawes
refuses duty.Obeys, but
regrets
having done
so.Improper
expressions.

natives from such practices in future, has ordered out a party to search for the man who wounded the convict in so dangerous a manner on Friday last, though no offence was offered on his part, and to make a severe example of that tribe. At the same time the Governor strictly forbids (under pain of the severest punishments), any soldier or other person not expressly ordered out for that purpose, ever to fire on any native, except in his own defence, or to molest him in any shape, or to take away any spears or other articles which they may find belonging to those people. The natives will be made severe examples of whenever any man is wounded by them, but that will be done in a manner which may satisfy them that it is a punishment inflicted on them for their own bad behaviour; and of which they cannot be made sensible if they are not treated with kindness while they continue peaceable and quiet.

"A party consisting of 2 captains, 2 subalterns, and 40 privates (with a proper number of non-commissioned officers) from the garrison, with three days' provisions, &c., to be ready to go out to-morrow morning at daylight, in order to bring in six of those natives who reside near the head of Botany Bay, or if that should be found impracticable, to put that number to death.

"Every possible attention is to be paid not to injure any women or children; and nothing belonging to the natives is to be brought away, but all their spears and other weapons are to be destroyed and left on the ground."

On this order appearing, Lieut. Dawes, whose tour of duty it was to go out with the party, refused that duty by letter to the senior officer of the detachment (Capt. Campbell), who, finding it impossible to persuade Lieut. Dawes to obey the order, brought the letter to the Governor, who likewise took great pains to point out the consequence of his (Lieut. Dawes) being put under an arrest. Late in the evening Lieut. Dawes informed Capt. Campbell that the Revd. Mr. Johnson thought he might obey the order, and that he was ready to go out with the party, which he did; but after the service was over, informed the Governor that "he was sorry he had been persuaded to comply with the order," and very clearly shewed that he would not obey a similar order in future.

Lieut. Dawes's expressions when Lieut. and Adjutant Long was present were such as would have subjected him to a court-martial had he been amenable to one.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD GRENVILLE.

8 Nov.

My Lord,

Sydney, November 8th, 1791.

In answering your Lordship's letters, the having been obliged to send some of the transports to Norfolk Island, and to take the Atlantic, transport, into his Majesty's service, for the pur-

pose of procuring flour and pease for the colony, has been mentioned. Some inconveniences having followed the masters of the ships not understanding that they were to land any part of their cargo at Norfolk Island, and which some of them were directed by their owners not to consider themselves as bound to do by their charter-party, it will be pointed out to the Navy Board; and I beg leave to observe, that if some terms could be made with the owners in case a ship should be detained in this country, it might prevent an excessive hire being demanded when they arrive here. The Atlantic was taken up on the best terms that ship could be procured, 15s. 6d. per ton per month; but if the ship is lost before the owner have received information of her destiny being changed, the loss in that case falls on the Crown. The ship is valued at £4,000. Copies of the agreement entered into for the Queen, transport, being paid for going to Norfolk Island, [as she] is not bound to proceed thither by her charter-party, and for the hire of that ship while employed in bringing Major Ross and the detachment to this settlement, are transmitted to the Navy Board. The expense of the detachment returning in the transport will be small; the ship only to be paid on that account from the time she has landed the stores and provisions she carried to the island until her return to this settlement at the rate of 15s. 6d. per ton per month.

1791

8 Nov.

Difficulties
with cargo
ships.Return of a
detachment.

Having pointed out to your Lordship the necessity of sending to Calcutta for provisions, I have to speak of the great quantity of provisions and stores which the transports might have received over and above what they had brought for the colony. Information having been received that the Admiral Barrington, Albermarle, Active, and Queen, transports, had on board a very considerable quantity of copper, lead, iron, and cordage, the masters of those ships were sent for, and they acknowledged having received on board the quantities of copper, &c., specified in a list which the master of the Albermarle delivered, and of which a copy is inclosed.*

Contraband
cargo.

They say that most of those articles were received on board after they had taken in what stores and provisions Government had to send, that they never declared their ships full, and that it was known they had those articles on board, which were received publicly and intended for a Portuguese settlement in India. They could not, I should suppose, have been put on board unknown to the agent employed by the Navy Board. A copy of the attestation made by the masters of the Admiral Barrington, Active, and Albermarle, whose ships still remain in the harbour, is inclosed.*

Excuses.

Your Lordship will readily conceive of how much consequence it would have been to the settlement had two or three hundred tons of limestone been sent out, and which might have been done, if those ships found it necessary to bring so much shingle ballast; for the limestone might with little trouble have been changed for the stone of this country. The inconvenience which would

* Not available.

1791

8 Nov.

Hiding the
truth.

attend unloading the ships will be seen, and without which it is impossible to say what they really have on board; but there is every reason to suppose that the account given in of copper and lead makes but a small part of what they have brought out. Of the cordage no account can be got; the quantity is supposed to be very considerable.

State of the
Supply.

His Majesty's armed tender Supply, after having been under repair from the beginning of June until the middle of September, was then found on a survey to be in so bad a state that she could not be properly repaired in this country; and that the best repair which we could give would only render her serviceable for six months longer.

I have, therefore, thought it most for his Majesty's service to send her home, for in a few months she would be useless in this country.

The Gorgon.

The Gorgon will, I apprehend, sail early in December, and not any vessel will then remain on this station. My reasons for not detaining the Gorgon will be obvious to your Lordship, and of such ships as appear to me necessary for the service of this colony I have taken the liberty of giving your Lordship an opinion in my letter No. 1.*

Superinten-
dent and
carpenter.

A master carpenter, who was employed as such at Norfolk Island, and who has acted in that capacity in this settlement since the ship's company of his Majesty's late ship Sirius were sent home, will, I presume, be put on the establishment and paid as such. A superintendant likewise remains from that ship, to whom I have promised the same salary as is paid to the superintendant sent from England.

The names and employments of those people are in the inclosed list.

Artisans

The great want of a master carpenter and master bricklayer has been mentioned in my former letters. Those two men who now act in that capacity will shortly leave this settlement. The master carpenter is wanted at Norfolk Island, and the master bricklayer returns to England.

The convict I wished to retain as a master carpenter for a short time, and who has been mentioned to your Lordship, is, I find, received on board the Admiral Barrington. The time for which he was sentenced is expired.

Loss of
cattle.

Lieutenant-Governor King made returns of the live cattle brought from the Cape of Good Hope. The loss of all the bulls is an unfortunate circumstance, as it may be a considerable time before any can be procured.

Jervis Bay.

It appears from Lieutenant Bowen's journal, who came out as naval agent in the Atlantic, transport, that there is a good harbour on the coast, and which he named Jervis Bay. He makes its latitude to be 35° 6' south. He did not land.

A sketch of the harbour is inclosed.

* See Phillip's despatch. Ante, p. 534.

The Commissary's return of provisions, and the state of this colony, with that of the publick live stock, are inclosed.

1791

8 Nov.

Having mentioned the town of Parramatta to your Lordship, it may be necessary to observe that I have given that name to the town which is building at Rose Hill. It extends from the foot of the hill along the banks of the creek, for one mile to the eastward. Parramatta is the name by which the natives distinguish the spot on which the town stands.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

Return of Public Live Stock in the Settlement, 10 November, 1791.

Stallion	...	...	...	1	Ewes	...	...	...	50
Mare	...	...	...	1	Lambs	...	...	...	6
Colts	...	...	...	2	Boar	...	...	...	1
Cows	...	...	...	16	Sows, old and young	...	...	...	14
Calves	...	...	...	2	Pigs...	...	...	...	22
Rams	...	...	...	1					

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE COMMISSIONERS OF THE NAVY.

Gentlemen, Sydney, N. S. Wales, 9th November, 1791.

9 Nov

I have to acknowledge the receipt of your letters, with a copy of the contract made for bringing out the convicts.

The enclosed will show the time at which the ships arrived, were cleared, &c.

The masters of the Albemarle, Active, and Queen, transports, not thinking themselves bound by their contract to carry any part of the convicts or stores to Norfolk Island, has given much trouble; they grounded their objections on letters which they received from their owners before the ships sailed. You will see the obligation entered into with the master of the Queen, a duplicate of which is enclosed,* and I presume, in future, the masters of transports will know that they may have to deliver their cargo at Norfolk Island, and they should likewise know that the ship while delivering her cargo is to be kept in sailing trim.

Trouble with transports.

Their leaving their cargo here for the purpose of re-stowing their holds is attended with great loss of time and trouble; and as nothing larger than a small beef-cask can be conveniently landed at Norfolk Island, the contractors should make their bales small, and the largest casks or packages should never exceed the size of a hoghead. If the Board will be so good as to give the necessary directions on this head, and likewise order that nearly an equal proportion of the different articles sent out are put on board the different ships, it will save great trouble and loss in packing and re-packing what must be sent to Norfolk Island.

Re-stowing inconvenient.

Having been informed that there were great quantities of cordage, copper, lead, and iron on board the Albemarle, Active, Admiral Barrington, and Queen, transports, the masters of those

* Not available.

1791

9 Nov.

Cargo
shipped
privately.

ships were sent for, and from the master of the Albemarle an account was received of what they admitted to have been put on board by the owners, which they say was done after Government had sent all the stores and provisions which were intended for the colony, and that they never had declared their ships full. A copy of the account received from the master of the Albemarle is enclosed, but which can be but a very small part of what those ships have brought out; a copy of the masters' declaration as to their having never declared their ships full is likewise enclosed.*

Limestone
as ballast.

The great inconvenience attending the want of limestone has been pointed out; and if it was necessary for those ships to bring ballast, limestone might have been put on board, and would have been easily changed for the stone of this country, and which I hope the Board will order to be done on any future occasion.

The Atlantic
sent to Cal-
cutta for
supplies.

As all the provisions in the colony, after receiving what those ships brought out and what was landed from the Gorgon, made no more than five months' flour, twelve days' pease, twenty-three days' oatmeal, and ten months' beef and pork, from the 12th day of October last, the Atlantic was taken into Government employ and sent to Calcutta for flour and pease. Of butter or oil the colony has only had accidental supplies for a few weeks for some time.

Lieutenant Bowen having been appointed naval agent by your Board, he is continued in that employ.

The Supply
ordered
home.

His Majesty's armed tender Supply, after having been under repairs for some time, was found on survey so very bad that the best repair which could be given that vessel in this country would only render her serviceable for six months longer. She is ordered home, and Mr. Stephen Donovan, midshipman, and John Harris, seaman, will appear lent on her books.

The midshipman is sent to Norfolk Island in order to be put on board any ship that may hereafter be sent there with stores or provisions, in order to give the necessary information respecting the tides and the dangers ships have to guard against while delivering their cargo.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

Arrival of
transports.

Arrivals—Mary Ann, 9th July, '91; Matilda, Aug. 1; Atlantic, Aug. 20; Salamander, Aug. 21; William and Ann, Aug. 28; Queen, Sep. 26; Active, Sep. 26; Albemarle, Oct. 13; Britannia, Oct. 14; Admiral Barrington, Oct. 16, '91.

SIR JOSEPH BANKS TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN. (Banks Papers.)†

10 Nov.

My Dear Sir,

Nov. 10, 1791.

As I find by the refusal I met with from your servant when I called at your house the other day that I have no more

* Not available.

† Draft of a private letter to Nepean in Sir Joseph Banks' handwriting.

chance of seeing you before your departure for the West Indies than any other of your common acquaintances, and that you look upon visiting from persons who have no particular claim to your intimacy as interrupting only, and guard against them accordingly, I am under the necessity of troubling you with this to remind you that on the 20th of August last I left with Mr. Pollock bills of £150 18s. 4½d., for moneys paid by me on account of the outfit of the Providence, and another of £15 18s. 3d. for plants purchased for the Guardian, which last bill I had before delivered to yourself on the 24th of August, 1789 ; as also that the papers relative to the outfit of the Discovery, viz., the instructions given to the botanist, and those that were given to the commander respecting his conduct towards, and the proportion of assistance he was requested to give to, the said botanist, have never been given to me, tho' you promised I should have them, which will be essentially usefull to me if the difference which existed between these gentlemen before they went to sea should continue during their voyage.

1791

10 Nov.

The
Providence
and the
Guardian.

I am, therefore, to request that you will be so good as to leave a line upon the subjects at the office, which I conclude you will not think unreasonable, for, as the money was advanced with your sole authority, you only can be my voucher for its repayment, and as you only know the share I have had arranging the outfit of the ships you can only estimate the goodness of the claim I make to these papers, and are also the only person privy to the repeated promises you made me that they should be given to me.

Repayment
of advances.

I sincerely wish you a good voyage and a thorough re-establishment of health, which I think very likely to take place, as relaxation does seem to me the thing wanting to restore you to your friends. I shall look in upon you on your return to find whether, as I suspect, your ill-health alone was the cause of my being struck off the list, in which I shall, if I find my opinion justified, be ready to reassume my state, as I am, with real esteem and regard,

[Unsigned].

P.S.—You have a letter of mine of the 11th July on the subject which you have never answered.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD GRENVILLE.

My Lord,

Sydney, 15th November, 1791.

15 Nov.

I have the honour to enclose your Lordship a copy of a letter which I have received from Mr. Alt, the Surveyor of Lands.

Alt's
resignation.

The immediate want there is of such an officer in this colony will be obvious ; and as Mr. Alt has no other support but what he draws from his appointment, your Lordship will permit me to hope that his case will be taken into consideration when he is superceded.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

1791

[Enclosure.]

15 Nov.

SURVEYOR-GENERAL ALT* TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 14th November, 1791.

Wishes to
retire.

I beg leave to represent to your Excellency that my present state of health is such that through various bodily infirmities I find myself left without any speedy hopes of relief at so advanced a period of life as mine, and feel that I can no longer carry on the duties of a surveyor with that satisfaction to myself which I could desire. I have, therefore, to request your Excellency will state my situation to his Majesty's ministers, and you will be pleased to point out at the same time that in superceding me I trust it may be thought worthy of notice that I have been honoured with his Majesty's commissions since the year 1755, and have always made the service of the Crown my chief object. I have, &c.,

AUGUSTUS ALT.

W. RICHARDS, JUNR., TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers).

Walworth, 15th Nov., 1791.

Richards'
proposals.

WM. Richards, jun'r, most respectfull compliments, waits on Sir Joseph Banks, and takes the liberty of informing him that he has sent in the proposal to the Treasury,† as he informed Sir Joseph in his last, and that it was read at that Board on Thursday, the 3rd instant, and that Mr. Ramur has informed W.R. since that Mr. Pitt had taken his offer into consideration, but W.R. has noheard anything yet respecting it. W.R. assures Sir Joseph Banks that it is founded equally as to justice as well as humanity, and that no person can (doing justice) perform it cheaper. Should it lye in Sir Joseph Banks' channell to promote W.R.'s interest, he may rest assured that no fault of any kind will arise to regret his kind offices. W.R. hopes Sir Joseph will excuse this liberty.

The draft of a reply is written on the fly-leaf in Sir Joseph Banks' handwriting, as follows :—

Approved
by Sir
Joseph
Banks.

Sir,—If any opportunity offers in which I have it in my power to recommend your proposal for sending out convicts, I shall not fail to give it the preference to every cheaper mode I have yet heard of. As I am of opinion that economy ought not in the case of so long a voyage be run into the extreme, and tho' I do not believe that the dreadfull mortality among the convicts in the last ships was owing to any want of a proper provision of necessaries in the agreement for their outfit, I conclude that the public, when they are made acquainted with the particulars, will attribute it to that cause, if they discover the least bias towards saving in the contract with the owners.‡

[Unsigned.]

* Augustus Theodore Henry Alt, Baron of Hesse Cassel. Served in the British Army. First Surveyor-General of New South Wales. Died 9th January, 1815.

† Ante, p. 525.

‡ Mr. Richards proposals were accepted.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1791

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 16th November, 1791.

16 Nov.

By Captain Parker, who arrived here the 21st of September, with his Majesty's ship Gorgon, I received your letter dated the 10th of March,* containing such information as the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty were pleased to direct you to communicate.

Arrival of the Gorgon.

You will, sir, please to inform their Lordships that I have great satisfaction in hearing that any part of my conduct has met with their approbation.

That their orders relative to the stores and provisions brought out in the Gorgon, have been complied with.

That his Majesty's armed tender Supply, after having been under repair from the beginning of June until the middle of September, was then found to be in want of a thorough repair, which, in the opinion of the carpenters, could not be given in this country; and as such repairs as could be given, would in their opinion, only enable that vessel to run for six months longer, I thought it [best] for his Majesty's service, to order her to England, as her remaining here could not have been of any service to the colony. A report of the survey is enclosed.

The Supply ordered to England.

That it being necessary that there should be some person at Norfolk Island who was acquainted with the set of the tides, and those dangers to which ships are exposed while landing their cargo, I have ordered Mr. Stephen Donovan, midshipman, to be lent from the Supply for that purpose; and as he greatly distinguished himself when the Sirius was lost, and qualified himself for being an officer before he left England, I beg leave to recommend him to their Lordships' notice. He will return to his duty in the Navy, on board the first ship which comes on the station, it being intended that a proper person on the island shall be qualified to act as a pilot. I have likewise found it necessary to detain a seaman, who has the care of the boats employed in landing stores and provisions from the transports, and who also stands as lent on the Supply's books.

Norfolk Island dangers.

I have, sir, also to acquaint you, for their Lordships' information, that the great number of spermaceti whales seen on this coast give reason to hope that a fishery may be established here, and several of those ships intended for the north-west part of America are gone to the southward in search of fish, the master of the Britannia having declared that he saw more spermaceti whales between the South Cape and this harbour than he saw in six years on the Brazil coast. Lieut. Bowen, who came out as an agent on board the Atlantic, discovered a good harbour† in the Latitude of 35° 06', an eye-draught of which is inclosed, and I apprehend the whalers are now on that part of the coast.

Whales.

A good harbour.

Having been obliged to take the Atlantic into the service, for the purpose of procuring a supply of provisions from Calcutta,

* Not available.

† Jervis Bay.

- 1791
16 Nov.
Movements
of trans-
ports.
- Lieut. Bowen is continued on board that ship as the naval agent, Captain Parker having informed me the Gorgon could not be got ready for sea before the latter end of November. That no time might be lost by sending that ship to Norfolk Island for Major Ross, and the officers and men now on the island, they are to return in the Queen transport, which went there with stores. I apprehend that the Gorgon will be ready for sea, by the time Major Ross arrives.
- Marines.
- That part of the New South Wales Corps which is arrived not being sufficient for the service of the colony, obliges me to detain three officers and forty privates of the marines; the rest of the detachment will be embarked on board the Gorgon, those excepted who are desirous of becoming settlers. The enclosed list contains the names of twenty-nine non-commissioned officers and privates from the marines, and one seaman from the Supply, who are become settlers on Norfolk Island*; there are several more marines who have requested to be received as settlers here and at Norfolk Island when the detachment is to embark.
- Returning
soldiers.
- The officers and men of the marine corps who remain will be sent home in the Atlantic when that ship returns from Calcutta, and which will not be attended with any expence, as that ship is by the charter party to be continued in the pay of Government until she arrives in England.
- King and
Bowen.
- Lieutenant-Governor King went to Norfolk Island in the Atlantic, and Lieut. Bowen, who commands that ship as naval agent, had orders after having landed what he had on board for that settlement, to proceed immediately for Calcutta. He sailed from hence the 26th of last month.
- Men-of-war
wanted.
- The great inconveniences which may attend the not having a vessel of any kind on this station will be obvious to their Lordships; and it appears to me that the great number of seamen there are amongst the convicts will make the employing any other than King's ships on this station very dangerous. By King's ships, I mean ships having on board commission, warrant, and petty officers.
- Native
timber.
- Specimens of the timber of this country are put on board the Gorgon. The natives so very frequently setting the country on fire. is I apprehend the reason we find so little timber that is sound, It must injure the very young trees which it does not destroy, and so very scarce is the sound timber, which is proper for masts, that there has been some trouble to get the Supply masted.
- Creswell.
- First-Lieutenant John Creswell, of the marines, embarks on board the Supply, and is charged with my despatches for their Lordships. It would not be doing him justice to omit saying that as the officer, and as the civil magistrate, in which capacity

* These men sailed from Port Jackson 26th October, 1791. Four were married. Two had three children each, and two two children each.

he has acted here and at Norfolk Island, he has discharged his duty with great propriety.

1791

Returns of the detachment of marines on duty in this settlement are enclosed.*

16 Nov.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sydney, New South Wales,

18th November, 1791.

18 Nov.

Sir,

You will see by my public letter to Lord Grenville† that a considerable quantity of copper, lead, &c., has been brought out in the transports;‡ and the reason assigned by the master for its being put on board by the owners. You will, sir, be so good as to give me some information as to the notice which it may be necessary to take hereafter of ships coming out under similar circumstances. The situation we are in with respect to the Vice-Admiralty Court will be obvious. The Judge, now at Norfolk Island, and about to return to England§; the Registrar dead||; and not a second person will remain in this colony, after the departure of the Supply and Gorgon, by whom those who have already returned could be replaced.

The contraband cargoes.

Vice-Admiralty Court cannot sit.

The form in which grants of land are made out is inclosed,¶ and which probably may not be so regular as could be wished. The necessary information on this head, will, I hope, be sent out, and the wax used with the seal on those occasions. No person is appointed by whom the grants of land can be registered.

Form of land grants.

The necessity of informing the masters of the transports that they may have their cargo to deliver at Norfolk Island has been pointed out to the Navy Board; and the still greater necessity of some steps being taken to prevent those ships from carrying away carpenters and other artificers, who, if not tempted by the masters, might be satisfied to remain in the colony, after the time for which they have been sentenced is expired. Some of those ships do not bring out the number of seamen they ought to do by their charter-party, depending on procuring convicts when they arrive here, to navigate them for the remainder of the voyage; and if the whale-fishery is established on the coast, unless some clause is introduced in the license those ships receive to fish in these seas, every carpenter and seaman will be lost to the colony.

Troublesome shipmasters.

Desertion feared.

The Britannia has returned, after having been out for fifteen days. The master says he saw a great number of fish, and had many in sight for nine days, during which time the badness of the weather prevented his putting a boat into the water. The day after he left this harbour, in company with the William and Ann, seven fish were killed by the two ships, but a gale of wind then coming on, only one fish was saved by each.

Whalers.

* Not available. † Ante, p. 547.

‡ Admiral Barrington, Albemarle, Active, and Queen.

§ Lieutenant-Governor Ross. || Commissary Miller. ¶ See grant to Ruse, post, p. 592.

1791

18 Nov.

Sealing.

The Mary Ann and Matilda have likewise returned to this harbour, the former on having her coppers washed down. Those ships had run to the southward in search of seals, where they met with an heavy gale of wind, and did not see any fish. The Matilda having put into Jervis Bay to stop a leak, a copy of the eye-draught made by the master is inclosed. He says there is exceeding good anchorage, and room for the largest ships to work in or out with great safety. He speaks well of the soil.

No oil or butter.

You will, sir, observe that the Atlantic is ordered to be loaded with flour and pease only; and that there has not been any oil or butter in the colony for a considerable time, except very small accidental supplies.

New South Wales timber.

Some specimens of the timber of this country are put on board his Majesty's ship Gorgon.

Traffic in convicts' clothing.

The impossibility of preventing the convicts cloathing and necessaries from passing into the hands of those for whom those articles are not intended, makes me wish that every article intended for the convicts should be marked. Their linens and woollens might, I think, without any additional expense, have stripes of a different colour wove in them. The iron pots and every other article should likewise be marked; and this is absolutely necessary, for a convict will sell for a pint of spirits the necessaries which should serve him for months, and there always will be those who will purchase them.

Many wants.

The Commissary will make a return of such articles as are most immediately wanted, a copy of which is inclosed.* And I beg leave to observe that bad tools are of no kind of use. For cross-cut saws, axes, iron pots, and combs we are much distressed. You will see by the return that there are now 2,570 male and 608 female convicts, with 161 children, to be cloathed. Nothing was sent out proper for shirts or shifts for the convicts. Two or three hundred iron frying-pans will be a saving of spades.

Boundaries of Parramatta.

The publick letter to Lord Grenville speaks of the town of Parramatta.† It begins at the foot of Rose Hill, and extends along the banks of the creek to the eastward for one mile. The name I have given this town is that by which the natives distinguish the spot on which it stands. It is there, and for two miles to the westward, that the convicts are now employed in agriculture. Of those who have been received from Ireland in the Queen, transport, from fifteen to twenty have taken to the woods, and though several of them have been brought in when so reduced that they could not have lived a second day, if they had not been found, some of those very men have absconded a second time, and must perish.

Convicts in the woods.

In search of China.

Such is their ignorance that some have left the settlement to go to China, which they suppose to be at the distance of only one hundred and fifty miles. Others, to find a town they supposed to

* Not recorded.

† Ante, p. 549.

be a few days' walk to the northward. As these people work daily in the woods, the preventing such desertions is impossible ; but this is an evil which will cure itself.

1791

18 Nov

My former letters have pointed out the great necessity of a few intelligent good settlers, who would have an interest in their own labour and in the labour of those who might be employed under them, but to which I have not received any answer. The great advantage of a few such people to this colony, where of the few settlers we now have the greatest part have been brought up as soldiers or as seamen, must be obvious. I have had to establish this colony [with] people who have been bred in peace and indolence, noways interested in the success of their labours, but, on the contrary, their immediate ease and convenience could only be attained by slighting or neglecting the labour they had to perform, and scarce an individual who felt himself interested in the task necessarily imposed on them. The colony is now in such a situation that a few honest settlers, who have been bred to agriculture, being sent out may in a very short time be the means of taking off the heavy expence which Government has hitherto been at for supplying this colony with provisions, and preventing those inconveniences which the colony has hitherto sustained, and which we still feel, from unavoidable accidents. We are again at a reduced ration.

Want of good settlers.

An indolent people.

Reduced ration again.

The great increase of people and publick business cause the expence of paper to be very considerable. The supplying the Commissary with what may be judged necessary will do away the difficulties that officer labours under, as stationary is not to be procured in this place.

Stationery required.

If the fishery draws an American vessel on the coast, in what manner are they to be received?

American vessels.

The landing of spirits without having a permit has been prohibited in the Port Orders, in order to prevent the convicts procuring any ; but if some duty was laid on all spirits landed in the settlement it would more effectually answer the purpose. The duties so collected would, of course, be applied for the benefit of the Crown. You will, sir, favour me with your opinion on that head.

A spirit duty proposed.

In appointing a person for registering the grants of land it is necessary to observe that such a person must be sent from England, and that any one person who holds two employments increases the inconveniences we labour under, for want of people capable of acting as magistrates, and for various other purposes.

Registration of land grants.

The inconveniences attending the not having any money in the colony still subsist, and this I observe as one of your letters mentions an intention of sending money by the Guardian to pay artificers, &c.

Absence of money.

Iron mills and querns for grinding Indian corn are very much wanted, and a windmill is now become absolutely necessary.

Mills wanted.

Barracks for the military and houses for several of the Civil department are still to build at Sydney, and at Parramatta there

Barracks

1791

18 Nov.

Much building to be done.

are still houses and barns to build. I have only one master carpenter in this settlement, who cannot be in both these places; and he is wanted at Norfolk Island, for the convict who has hitherto directed the works there has signified his desire of returning to England, as the time for which he was sentenced is expired.

The carpenter gone.

The convict whom I wished to retain, and mentioned in my letter to Lord Grenville as being promised one shilling per day if he would remain for a few months longer, and who is the only one amongst those people capable of acting as a master carpenter, is gone on board the Admiral Barrington. Unless the owners forbid their masters receiving any of these people, we shall never keep a carpenter, cooper, or any valuable man, for they tempt those who would be willing to remain if left to themselves.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Sir,

Sydney, 18 November, 1791.

Whaling.

You will be pleased to inform the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that the *Britannia*, intended for the southern fishery, as mentioned in my former letter, has returned to this port after being out fifteen days, during which time the master says he saw a great abundance of spermaceti whales, but, from the badness of the weather, was not able to put a boat into the water for nine days that the fish remained in sight. The day after the ship left the harbour in company with the *William* and *Ann* seven fish were killed; but the gale of wind then coming on, only one fish was saved by each ship.

Jervis Bay.

The *Mary Ann* and the *Matilda* have returned to this port, being driven in as well as the *Britannia* by the badness of the weather. Those ships had run to the southward in search of seals, but did not see any fish. The *Matilda*, having run into Jervis Bay in order to stop a leak, the master made an eye-draught of that harbour, a copy of which is inclosed. By his account the anchorage is exceedingly good, and the largest ships may turn in or out of the bay.

Whale fishery.

The *Mary Ann* and *Matilda* are now going out of the harbour, and mean to try for fish on the coast. The two other whalers, the *William* and *Ann* and the *Salamander*, are on the coast to the northward. The *Britannia* sails in a few days, and, from the information I have received from the masters of these ships, there is every reason to suppose that a fishery will be established on the coast.

Officers commended.

The very officer-like conduct of Mr. David Blackburn as master of the *Supply*, and during the time he commanded that vessel while Lieut. Ball was sick on shore, makes it a duty incumbent on me to point him out as an officer deserving of their Lordships' notice. And I likewise feel it a duty to say that the service owes much to the abilities of Mr. Robinson Reid, the carpenter of that vessel.

Lieutenant Robert Parry Young, who came out as Naval Agent in the *Albemarle*, has, I presume, informed their Lordships of the convicts having mutinied on board that ship during the passage, and the necessity he was under of executing two of the ringleaders.* From the information I have obtained of that business, Lieutenant Young appears to have conducted himself with a great deal of propriety and in a very officer-like manner. I am, &c.,
A. PHILLIP.

1791
18 Nov.
Mutiny on the *Albemarle*.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD GRENVILLE.

My Lord, Sydney, 21st November, 1791. 21 Nov.

I am honoured with your Lordship's letter of the 19th of February in answer to mine to Lord Sydney, and beg leave to assure your Lordship that I should not hesitate a moment in giving up my private affairs to the public service; but from a complaint which so very frequently puts it out of my power to use that exercise which my situation requires, and the present state of this colony, in which I believe every doubt respecting its future independency as to the necessaries of life is fully done away, I am induced to request permission to resign the Government that I may return to England in hopes of finding that relief which this country does not afford. I have, &c.,
A. PHILLIP.

Phillip repeats his request to resign.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD GRENVILLE.

My Lord, Sydney, November 22nd, 1791. 22 Nov.

The commander of the armed tender *Supply* has an animal in charge which is known in England by the name of kangaroo, and which I hope will live to be delivered to your Lordship for the purpose of being sent to his Majesty. I have taken this liberty, as it is not known that any animal of the kind has hitherto been seen in England. I have, &c.,
A. PHILLIP.

A kangaroo for the king.

COMMISSARY PALMER TO UNDER SECRETARY KING.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, the 23rd November, 1791. 23 Nov.

Agreeable to directions I have received from his Excellency Governor Phillip I have herewith inclosed an account of the numbers of every description of persons in his Majesty's settlements at Port Jackson and Norfolk Island, and the time the species of provisions will last at full ration†; I have likewise inclosed an account of such articles as are most wanted in the settlements, with observations made on the qualities of the stores received. I am also directed by his Excellency to inform you that there has been no pease or butter served in the settlement except a small quantity which was sent out for the use of his Majesty's late ship *Sirius*, and what has been received from the *Gorgon*. I have, &c.,
JNO. PALMER, Commissary.

Official returns.

No pease or butter.

* Ante, pp. 487, 489.

† Post, pp. 560, 561.

1791
Nov.

[Enclosure.]

STATE of the Settlements at Port Jackson and Norfolk Island, the 18th of November, 1791.

Settlements.	His Excellency Governor Phillip.		Lieut. Governor of the Territory of N. S. W.		Lieut. Governor of Norfolk Island.		Military.							Civil.											
							Commissioned Officers.	Non-commissioned.	Surgeon.	Chaplain.	Drummers.	Privates.	Women.	Children.	Judge-Advocate.	Commissary.	Principal Surgeon.	Chaplain.	Assistant Surgeon.	Surveyor-General.	Deputy do.	Acting Provost-Martial.	Deputy Commissary.	Storekeeper.	Superintendents.
							18	31	1	1	11	209	37	63	1	1	1	..	1	1	1	1	1	1	5
							7	10	..	..	3	76	9	12	..	..	..	..	2	..	..	..	1	..	2
							1	2	..	..	..	2	11	6	10	..	..	..	1	1	..	1	..	..	..
	1	..	..	..	..	..	1	4	..	..	..	41	4	3	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..
Sydney and Parramatta..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Norfolk Island ..	..	..	..	..	1	..	7	10	..	..	3	76	9	12	..	..	..	..	2	..	..	..	1	..	..
On their passage to do. in the Atlantic tran't	..	..	..	..	..	1	1	2	..	..	2	11	6	10	..	..	..	1	1	..	..	..	..	..	..
Do. do. Queen do.	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	4	..	..	..	41	4	3	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..

POPULATION.

561

1791
18 Nov.

JNO. PALMER, Commissary.

STATE of the Settlements at Port Jackson and Norfolk Island the 18th of November, 1791—continued.

Settlements.	Convicts.												Number at diff't rations.				Whole number victualled.	Weeks on full ration.							
	Men.	Women.	Free people become settlers.		Free women wives of convicts.		Male convicts become settlers.		Male.	Female.	Children.	Natives.	Whole.	Two-thirds.	Half.	Quarter.									
Sydney and Parramatta...	6	5	3	12	35	2,013	345	77	6	2,348	405	58	76	2,887	2,666	18	3	6	3	36	0	1	3	3	1
Norfolk Island	1	..	9	..	..	506	242	80	..	618	252	41	50	961	819	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
On their passage to do. in the Atlantic tran't	2	2	30	..	10	32	13	3	..	93	22	7	5	127	112½	16	3½	9	0	38½	0	..	..	..	..
do. Queen do.	..	..	1	1	..	19	8	1	..	67	13	2	2	84	77	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
	43	13	45	2,570	608	161	6	3,126	692	108	133	4,069	3,674½	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..

1791

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

23 Nov.

Dear Sir,

Norfolk Island, 23 November, 1791.

Discord and
strife.

After a week's pleasant passage, I landed here on the 4th instant, when I found discord and strife in every person's countenance, and in every corner and hole of the island, which you may easily conceive would render this an exact emblem of the infernal regions.

Ross's
account.

The accounts you will receive of this island from Ross (if he does not find it his interest to depart from the language he now holds) will be the most favourable and flattering, and, as far as I can observe at present, with great reason, for the crops, both publick and private, wear a most promising aspect.

Discontent--
the "acre
plan."

On my landing here a general murmuring and discontent at Major Ross's conduct assailed me from every description of people on the island. The acre plan† was represented to me by a representation signed by 158 convicts as a compulsive measure of Major Ross's, and the impossibility of their being able to maintain themselves within the prescribed time, viz., to be clear of the publick store in March, '92. I am convinced that Major Ross's ideas in setting that plan on foot was the most laudable, and an end much to be wished for; but, from what I can at present observe and understand, I do not imagine more than twenty men at the farthest can possibly maintain themselves for three months independent of the stores. This, with the loss of a very material book of the accounts, in consequence of the plan, and the discontent that prevailed, induced me to call in the swine, and to declare the plan done away, on condition of the time given them for the above purpose being made up in publick work at the expiration of their future tasks, and I have no doubt but it will prevent much misunderstandings and great discontents.

The
"acre plan"
abolished.Settlers at
Norfolk
Island.The area of
land granted
to them.

Forty marines and seamen and thirty-five convicts are settled here; twenty-four marines more are returning to Port Jackson with Major Ross to get their discharges, and will return here to settle, which will make the number of settlers, soldiers, and seamen sixty-four, who will have three thousand eight hundred and forty acres (each man has sixty acres); that doubled, for the intermediate Crown land, as pointed out by the instructions,‡ will make it seven thousand six hundred and eighty; thirty-five convicts will have on an average twelve acres each, and, with the intermediate Crown land, will make the whole quantity of ground to be granted to the above people eight thousand four hundred and twenty acres. Now, I do not think that there is more than that quantity of ground fit for cultivation on the island when the space the buildings stand on and a quantity of ground is left for the flax; but you will observe that the Crown land will still remain at the

* A private letter.

† Ante, pp. 445-447.

‡ Ante, p. 258.

disposal of the Crown, and which I should apprehend must be cleared and cultivated for the support of the great number who are not, nor cannot, be admitted as settlers, as there are upwards of * invalids who cannot work, exclusive of the civil and military, who must be provided for.

1791

23 Nov.

Provision
for others.

The terms of the marines and convict settlers is as follows:—

Terms.

The marines are to be independant of the publick stores in eighteen months, and the convicts in twelvemonths; they each take a woman, who they are to maintain independant of the stores in a twelve-month, viz., when their first crop is got off the ground, which will be in Decr., '92. Each settler will also take a convict after their first crop is got off the ground, and maintain him. From the hogs which will be delivered out to the settlers (and which could not have been done if the acre plan had not been abolished), and these swine which will be purchased from the convicts going from hence to Port Jackson and the marines, I hope there will be nearly enough to supply the whole of the settlers, so as to make them independant of animal food at the prescribed time. I have been thus far explicit in the acre plan, settlers, &c., that you may be informed of the real state, which may be much misrepresented.

Swine given
to settlers.

I am told there are upwards of one hundred acres in wheat and sixty in Indian corn, which, from the appearance, will certainly produce well, and be of some assistance to us; but it will be necessary to reduce our ration soon after the departure of the ship that is conveying Major Ross away, and which I shall take upon myself.

Reduced
ration.

Had I remained here, and no more people had been sent after January, '90, I am certain this island would now have been nearly independent for flour. Our numbers were then one hundred and sixty in all. Only twenty-two months has elapsed since that time, and the numbers have increased to one thousand men, women, and children; still less, therefore, it cannot be wondered at, if the independancy of this island is still removed to a greater distance of time. The time of our being independant for animal food is at a greater distance from the small quantity of stock on the island in proportion to the number of people to be supplied: and as for cloathing, much cannot be expected from the flax until we can get a native of New Zealand. Specimens will be sent home of what has been done with it.

Influx of
population.The island
not yet inde-
pendent of
supplies.

Flax.

You will excuse me when I again remind you of the great necessity there is for some regular and authorized mode of distributing justice. You will easily conceive that among such a sett of miserable and lawless wretches some mode should be adopted and put in force; there is not one among them that does not know how confined the power of a justice of the peace is, and when it is necessary to send a prisoner to be tried at the criminal

A court of
justice
necessary —for trial of
capital
crimes.

1791

23 Nov.

court at Port Jackson, it may, and has happened, that the most usefull people here are taken away as witnesses. If a court could be established here for the trial of capital crimes, consisting of the Lieut.-Govr. as judge, the Depty.-Surveyor and two assistant surgeons (or the chaplain in the room of one of them), and those military officers which might have power to try and pronounce judgement; and in case of death being adjudged, not to be put into execution untill the Governor-in-Chief has signed or authorized the sentence. In this case it would be necessary to furnish the island with the same law books that are in possession of the Judge-Advocate of N.S. Wales. The clergyman who came out in the first fleet* accompanied me hither, and has been very usefull in marrying, christening, &c., but as he returns with Major Ross we shall be left to work over our work (*sic*), but I hope one will be sent out.

Law books.

A clergyman wanted.

Complaints and revilings.

I have made a great effort in writing this long letter, as I am pestered with complaints, bitter revilings, backbitings, and almost everything to begin over again.

I hope you enjoy a good state of health, and shall be glad to be informed of it by the first ship you may send to our part of the world. I beg my best respects to Mrs. Nepean, and am

Yours, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD GRENVILLE.

Sydney, New South Wales,

24 Nov.

My Lord,

November 24th, 1791.

How is land to be given?

Several officers of the civil and military departments being desirous of having grants of land, which they would cultivate for their own advantage while they remain in the country, and convey the property to children or other persons when they return to Europe, I am to request your Lordship will furnish me with such information on this head as your Lordship may judge necessary for my guidance.†

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD GRENVILLE.

25 Nov.

My Lord,

Sydney, November 25th, 1791.

The transports and their cargoes.

In addition to what I have already had the honour of informing your Lordship relative to the copper, &c., brought out by the transports,‡ I beg leave to observe: That the ships appear to have regular clearances from the Custom-house for copper, lead, iron, and steel; that I have never received the late Acts of Parliament relative to the southern fishery, nor have I any

* The Rev. R. Johnson.

† This despatch is replied to by Dundas in his despatch of 14th July, 1792.

‡ Albemarle, Active, Admiral Barrington, Queen. Ante, pp. 547-550.

precedent to go by. This settlement is not mentioned in any Act that I have seen, and it does not appear to me that while the ships are riding in this harbour I have a power as Governor or Vice-Admiral of this territory to take out the copper, lead, iron, and steel they have on board, altho' I have not any doubt but that the ships would be seizable at sea.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

1791

25 Nov.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sydney, New South Wales,

Sir,

14th December, 1791.

14 Deco.

I inclose a list of those convicts, whose times being expired, have left the settlement in the different transports, also of those whose times are not expired but who have absconded; and some of them are supposed to have been secreted on board the ships and carried from the settlement.

It may be very difficult to prove that the masters of any of those ships knew such men were on board; but the necessity of some steps being taken to prevent those people being received on board the transports with the connivance of the masters, mates, or seamen, without which it could seldom happen, will, I hope, appear to you to be absolutely necessary, for it cannot be prevented by any steps which can be taken here at present.

The masters of those ships who have sailed last from hence, have orders to deliver up any convict who may be found secreted on board their ships after they leave this harbour to the Governor or commanding officer at the first port they may put into; and it will not, I presume, be very difficult for the Navy Board to have a clause inserted in the contracts, which would oblige the masters of the transports to enter the names of all those who may be received on board such ship from the time they come on this coast to their return to England; the fear of an heavy penalty on the master or mate who receives a convict on board, and does not register him, may have the desired effect. You, sir, may see some better method; and I only mention this from the great necessity there is of some step being taken in this business, otherwise we shall lose all the able men: and those ships who come on this fishery must be guarded against in the same manner.

I have also inclosed the copy of a letter received from the surgeon of the New South Wales Corps,* who left England as the surgeon's mate, is unacquainted with the service, and has not any kind of necessary for the use of the sick. Orders have been given to the surgeon of the colony to furnish him with whatever he may demand, either necessaries or medicines, and to receive all such soldiers into the hospital as may be sent to him from that corps; but it will appear by his letter that he fears an heavy expense may be brought against him, and declines having an hospital for

* Not available.

1791

14 Dec.

Sundry
wants.

the use of his own corps from not having any kind of necessaries. You will, sir, be so good as to let some information be given on this head, although it may not be official to address you on the subject, for I am quite a stranger to this business.

The want of a corn-mill, tools, implements of husbandry, and sundry articles which have been mentioned by the Commissary will, I hope, be supplied by the first ship.

Settlers.

No answer has yet been received with respect to settlers being sent out, and which is to be so much desired—I allude to settlers who are farmers or planters, and who are possessed of some property.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD GRENVILLE.

My Lord,

Sydney, December 14th, 1791.

I had the honour of informing your Lordship in my letter of the 22nd of last month that an animal known in England by the name of kangaroo had been put on board the Supply, as I presumed that so uncommon an animal might not be judged improper to be sent to his Majesty.

Another
kangaroo
for the king.

I have now the honour of informing your Lordship that another of those animals is put on board his Majesty's ship Gorgon, for the same purpose.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD GRENVILLE.

Sydney, New South Wales,

16 Dec.

My Lord,

16th December, 1791.

Warrants of
emancipa-
tion.

I have the honor to transmit the duplicates of four warrants of emancipation under the seal of the Government of this territory, pursuant to his Majesty's commission under the great seal for that purpose.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Sydney, New South Wales,

15 Dec.

Sir,

15th December, 1791.

Civil List.

I am to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 3rd of July, 1790, by the Albemarle, transport, inclosing a copy of the estimate upon which the grant for defraying the charge of the civil establishment in this colony for the year 1791 is founded, for my direction in the application thereof.

Timber.

A receipt signed by the master of his Majesty's ship Gorgon, for the plank sent home in that ship, as specimens of the timber of this country, is inclosed.

I have likewise inclosed a general return of the troops serving in this country

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

1791

13 Dec.

GENERAL Return of his Majesty's forces employed on the continent of New South Wales and its dependencies, December the 13th, 1791.

MARINE CORPS.

Officers' Names.	Present.		At Norfolk Island.		Embark'd.	At Parramatta.
	Fit for duty.	Unfit for duty.	Fit for duty.	Unfit for duty.		
Major Commandant—						
Robert Ross .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
Captains —						
James Campbell .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
James Meredith .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
Captain-Lieutenants—						
Watkin Tench .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
George Johnston .. .. .	..	1	..	..	..	..
First Lieutenants—						
John Creswell .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
Robert Kellow .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
John Poulden .. .. .	..	1	..	..	..	..
John Johnstone .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
James Maitland Shairp .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
Thomas Davey .. .. .	..	1	..	..	..	..
Thomas Timmins .. .. .	..	1	..	..	..	..
Ralph Clarke .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
Second Lieutenants—						
William Dawes .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
William Faddy .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
Alexr. John Ross .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
Adjutant, 2nd Lieutenant—						
John Long .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
Quarter-master, 1st Lieutenant—						
James Furzer .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1	..
Judge-Advocate, Captain—						
David Collins .. .. .	..	1	..	..	..	..
	5	..	..	..	14	..

Rank.	Present.		At Norfolk Island.		At Parramatta Fit for duty.	Embark'd on board his Majesty's ship George, and Supply, and other vessels.	Total.
	Fit for duty.	Unfit for duty.	Fit for duty.	Unfit for duty.			
Major-Commandant .. .. .	..	..	..	..	..	1	1
Captains .. .. .	..	..	..	..	..	2	2
Captain-Lieutenants	1	..	..	..	..	1	2
1st Lieutenants	3	..	..	..	..	6	9
2nd Lieutenants .. .. .	..	..	..	..	..	3	3
Adjutant .. .. .	..	..	..	..	..	1	1
Quarter-master .. .. .	..	..	..	..	..	1	1
Judge-Advocate	1	..	..	..	..	..	1
Serjeants	4	..	..	..	..	9	13
Corporal	4	..	..	..	..	..	12
Drummers	2	..	..	..	..	6	8
Privates	50	..	..	..	..	51	101

1791

[Enclosure.]

13 Dec.

GENERAL Return of his Majesty's forces employed on the continent of New South Wales and its dependencies, December the 13th, 1791.

NEW SOUTH WALES CORPS.

Officers' Names.	Present.		At Norfolk Island.		Embark'd.	At Parramatta.
	Fit for duty.	Unfit for duty.	Fit for duty.	Unfit for duty.		
Captains—						
Nicholas Nepean .. ..	..	..	..	..	..	1
William Hill .. ..	..	..	..	..	..	1
William Paterson .. ..	..	..	1	..	..	..
Lieutenants—						
John McArthur	1	..	..	..	..	..
John Townson .. ..	..	..	1	..	..	..
Edward Abbott .. ..	..	..	1	..	..	..
Ensigns—						
John Thomas Prentice .. ..	..	..	1	..	..	..
William Beckwith .. ..	..	..	..	..	..	1
William Cummings .. ..	..	..	..	..	..	1
Chaplain—						
James Bain .. ..	..	..	..	..	..	1
Quarter-Master—						
Thomas Laycock .. ..	..	..	..	..	..	1
Surgeon—						
John Harris .. ..	..	..	..	..	..	1
Total	1	..	4	..	..	7
Lieutenant John Long, acting Town Adjutant .. ..	..	..	..	..	1	..

Rank.	Present.		At Norfolk Island.		At Parramatta.		Total.
	Fit for duty.	Unfit for duty.	Fit for duty.	Unfit for duty.	Fit for duty.	With leave.	
Captains .. ..	..	..	1	..	2	..	3
Lieutenants	1	..	2	..	..	..	3
Ensigns .. ..	..	..	1	..	2	..	3
Surgeon .. ..	..	..	..	..	1	..	1
Chaplain .. ..	..	..	..	..	1	..	1
Quarter-master.. ..	..	..	..	..	1	..	1
Serjeants	3	..	3	..	6	..	12
Corporals	3	..	3	..	6	..	12
Drummers .. ..	..	..	2	..	6	..	8
Privates	63	..	64	..	102	..	229

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD GRENVILLE.

1791

My Lord,

Sydney, December 15th, 1791.

15 Dec.

I have the honour to inform your Lordship that Major Ross arrived here the 5th instant,* and embarked the 13th with the detachment of marines under his command on board his Majesty's ship Gorgon, those excepted who have become settlers or who remain for the service of the colony until the remainder of the New South Wales Corps arrive, as will appear by the inclosed return. I have also the honour to inclose your Lordship a return of the numbers who have become settlers here and at Norfolk Island up to the present time.

Arrival of
Ross.

As your Lordship may expect me to mention the period at which it may be supposed further supplies of flour will be unnecessary, I having given my opinion on that head in a former letter, and the time being not very distant when I had supposed the colony might have been able to have supplied itself with that article. I must beg your Lordship's permission to refer—for those causes which have prevented the colony's being in the situation I expected, and which I have no doubt but that it otherwise would have been in—to those parts of my letters in which I have pointed out the loss of the man on whom I placed great dependance, and who was charged with directing the labour of all the convicts employed in agriculture, the very long drought, the reduced ration, and which, when not so very low as to render the people incapable of labour, serves as a too well-founded excuse for their doing but very little work, and must be always attended with great discontent amongst such people—the miserable state in which two large bodies of convicts have been landed, who are a burthen to the colony, and who when they regain their health are not in general calculated for hard labour—and the want of a proper person to be charged with the cultivation of the ground, and to have the direction of the convicts who are employed in agriculture. If I have too often adverted to this subject, I trust that the cause will excuse me to your Lordship, and for observing, that it now only wants one month of four years since I first landed in this settlement, during which time all the publick live stock which has been received is not more than what would be necessary for one good farm; nor has that been received till within these three months. This I mention to shew how very distant that period must be in which the settlement will be able to supply its inhabitants with animal food; and in addition to what has been observed respecting ships, which are not King's ships, being employed for the service of this colony, as some dependance may be placed on the ship to be expected from the north west coast of America,† I beg leave to observe, that it must be very uncertain in what state that ship may arrive here; she may probably want repairs, and the number of carpenters in this settlement are still very inconsiderable.

Flour
supply.

Hindrances.

Why the
colony is
not self-
supporting.Want of live
stock.Uncertainty
about
supplies.

* From Norfolk Island.

† The Dædalus.

1791

15 Dec.

The Gorgon.

Captain Parker has informed me that he proposes sailing the 18th. The attention that officer has shewn to everything which appear'd to tend to the advantage of the settlement, and the great want of a King's ship on the station, makes me regret that I cannot detain the Gorgon; but the ship is too large, and I have not any other in which I could send home the detachment of marines.

Further reduced ration.

Immediately after the Gorgon sails it will be necessary to reduce the present ration of flour, and which I defer till after that ship has sailed with those of the detachment who are returning to England, as it might occasion some little uneasiness amongst those who remain; but I have not any other reason for saying this than knowing that the soldier being so frequently on a reduced ration must feel it. I am at the same time very confident that not any complaints will be made on that head.

Norfolk Island.

When the last ship left Norfolk Island the crops of corn promised well; and as I have to return to the island those marines who have been discharged to become settlers there, but who Major Ross found it necessary to bring with him in order to settle their accounts before he discharged them, an addition will be made to the salt provisions on the island, and which will be sent with the settlers in one of the ships going to Bombay, or in one of the whalers. It will be an expence to the Crown of about one hundred and fifty pounds; but which, as the men have been brought here, is unavoidable.

Harvest prospects.

The frequent showers of rain which we have had lately gives reason to expect that our Indian corn will be good; and the wheat and barley have turned out better than was expected.

Major Ross and Captain Campbell.

As your Lordship's letter of the 19th of February, 1791,* marked No. 10, has the following words, "The proceedings of Major Ross and Captain Campbell according to your representations," I beg that your Lordship will permit me to say that the representations I have made of the conduct of those officers are just and impartial, and which do not admit of a doubt. I believe Major Ross's or Captain Campbell's friends could not have represented their conduct in a more favorable point of view, without having deviated from truth; and the representations I made appeared to me to be necessary for the good of his Majesty's service.

The Criminal Court and the night-watch.

Your Lordship's letter, I presume, alludes to the business of the Criminal Court and to the night-watch. Some proofs are before your Lordship, and most of the officers are now returning to England with Major Ross and Captain Campbell. I am distant, no ways connected with the corps, and am sensible that offrs. may not readily stand forth to support a charge brought against one of their own corps, and by a commanding officer of whom some of them may think they have reason to complain.

* Ante, p. 460.

Still I beg leave to say that I have sufficient confidence in those officers to submit every representation I have made regarding Major Ross or Captain Campbell being determined on in my absence; and have only to add that Major Ross and Captain Campbell were officially informed that their conduct on the above matter, and on every occasion when their names have been mentioned, would be laid before his Majesty's Secretary of State.

I have, &c.,
A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

Return of Settlers at and near Parramatta.

Settler, late superintendant of convicts	1	Settlers at Parramatta.
Settlers, late of the marines	...	...	...	...	8
" seamen, late of his Majesty's ship Sirius	...	...	...	...	2
" convicts whose sentences of transportation have expired	...	...	...	...	34
					45	

At Norfolk Island.

Settlers, late of the marines	...	...	...	...	31	Settlers at Norfolk Island.
" seamen, late of his Majesty's ship Sirius	...	...	...	...	8	
Settler, seaman, late of his Majesty's armed tender Supply	...	...	...	...	1	
Settlers, convicts whose sentences of transportation have expired	...	...	...	...	39	
" from the marines ready to embark	...	...	...	...	23	
					102	

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Sir, Sydney, Dec. 16th, 1791. 16 Dec.

You will please to inform the Right Hon'ble the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that the detachment of marines under the command of Major Ross are embark'd on board his Majesty's ship Gorgon, as directed by their Lordships, those excepted who remain for the service of this settlement until the remainder of the New South Wales Corps arrives, as mentioned in my letter by the Supply, No. 1, and those marines who have desired to be received as settlers, and who I have directed Major Ross to discharge, pursuant to the orders I have received on that head, and conformable to their Lordships' letter of the 8th of August, 1788, made public at the head-quarters of the three divisions of marines.

The inclosed return will shew the numbers embarked, who remain for duty, and who are become settlers.*

As Major Ross has expressed a doubt how far the marines who are become settlers are legally discharged, no orders having been received for that purpose from the Admiralty, I beg leave to observe that if their Lordships' pleasure is signified it may prevent any uneasiness on that head amongst the men discharged.

* Not available.

1791

16 Dec.

Return of
the Supply.

His Majesty's armed tender Supply sailed from hence on the 26th of November. First-Lieutenant Creswell, of the marines, was embarked on board that vessel and charged with my letters for their Lordships.

The marine
settlers.

Major Ross having found it necessary to bring those marines from Norfolk Island who are to become settlers there, in order to their signing their accounts, they will be returned to the island by the Queen, transport, that ship being intended by the owners to proceed to Bombay, and will be ready to sail in the course of twelve or fourteen days.

Timber.

Some specimens of the timber of this country being put on board the Gorgon, the master's receipt is inclosed. Captain Parker intends to sail the 18th, and to go round Cape Horn.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR KING TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

29 Dec.

Sir,

Sydney, Norfolk Island, Dec. 29th, 1791.

The William and Ann appearing off this island on the 23rd, and the master of that ship thinking he may call at Port Jackson, has induced me to send this letter by him.

Harvest at
Norfolk
Island.

By the 10th all the wheat was got in and put into ricks, which are well thatched and secure. I apprehend the whole quantity may be about 1,000 bushels. The very dry and excessive hot weather which we have had here, and which I am told has prevailed here since July last, has materially reduced the crop of Indian corn, which has had two great checks—first, the want of rain and the very great heat, and afterwards the fly, which is very destructive to its growth. The same reason has prevented our having any quantity of garden vegetables; but as wet weather may soon be expected, I hope to see everything thrive as usual.

Poor crop
of Indian
corn and
vegetables.

Store-house.

I found a store-house in frame near the sea-shore. Its dimensions were 80 ft. long, 24 feet wide, and 17 feet high, the upper part of which was designed for a granary, and the lower part for a store-house. Its detached situation from the barrack, and the small military force I had on the island not permitting another guard to be detached for the protection of that store-house (in its then situation), and its being too large for a store-house alone, or for a granary, and if put to both these purposes the upper part would soon be filled with weevils, which reason alone, without considering the former, and the great distance the grain must be brought, made me resolve on taking the frame down and building a granary of 40 ft. long by 24 feet wide on the terrace which Major Ross had ordered to be cut in the side of Mount George, where it will be in a cool place and contiguous to the different grounds in cultivation, and from its situation will not require an additional centinel. From the frequent daily and nightly robberies

Granary.

in gardens and other property, I have found it necessary to build a jail, well spiked and framed, which will, I hope, have its good effects. The jail is opposite to the barrack-yard, and under the eye of the guard on duty. Its dimensions are 24 feet by 14. A similar jail is also built at Queensboro'. A very good and spacious road is made to the landing-rock in Cascade Bay, where anything may now be landed in the greatest safety, which will be still better in a few months, as people can be spared from other work, when a wharf or pier will be made, which, from the natural situation of the rock, will be effected without much trouble.

1791

29 Dec.

Gaols.

Road to
Cascade Bay.

As I found a number of useful things might be got out of the Sirius's wreck, I ordered Mr. Donovan to attend and get whatever could be got out of her at low water. The cables being jambed by the beams which had fallen on them, and their being in a decay'd state, I ordered them to be cut into convenient lengths for getting on shore. One cable is now on shore, as well as the other articles, as p'r margin,* a great part of which I shall direct the D'y Commissary to send to Port Jackson by the first opportunity, and no time will be lost in getting the other cables, &c., out of her, as I think there is every appearance of her going to pieces in the winter.

Salvage from
the Sirius.

Enclosed is a list of marine and convict settlers, who are all settled in the places marked against their respective names,† which is the best description that can at present be given of their lands, owing to the impenetrable thickness of the woods. The ten settlers late belonging to the Sirius are doing very well ; but I much fear that a great part of the marine settlers, when the novelty of the change is gone off, will have neither ability or inclination to get on. They have been extremely troublesome, insomuch that I have found it necessary to try two of them before myself and another justice. The charge against the first was for beating the watch and using the most inflammatory language against the Government, and the other for cruelly beating a convict overseer when employed about his work. As these charges were fully proved, the only punishment I thought myself at liberty to inflict was to oblige the first to find security for his good behaviour for twelve months, and the other to pay eighty pounds to the King and five pounds to the person whom he had beaten.

Settlers.

Some of
them
trouble
some.

Punish-
ments.

As these people have no other property than their lands, &c., I do not think myself warrantable in inflicting corporal punishment on them. I have to request your Excellency will direct the Judge-Advocate to inform me in what manner these people are to be punished, as at present they have no other idea than that of being soldiers let loose in the island and unsubjected to any laws.

Contentment
of the law.

* 18 copper bolts, 6 do. sheets, 2 cables of 16-inch, 200 lbs. of lead, 1 fish-tackle fall, 20 lbs. of chalk, 3 rudder-chains, 2 top chains, some iron of various sorts.

† Not available.

1791

29 Dec.

Want of
labour.

From the great number of settlers who are all in want of houses, which the terms specified they were to be assisted in building, it will not be in my power to supply them with carpenters, having so very few; but as they conceive it a right, I have given each settler the assistance of two convicts for three weeks to build their houses.

Question of
boundaries.

As all the settlers here now are placed on the only runs of water that are on the island, it will be extremely difficult to fix any more as yet untill the island is further cleared, as I am apprehensive that many of the present settlers' lots, and which it has been impossible to avoid from the reasons before given, will come into each other, or interfere with Government's lots. The convict settlers are all doing very well, and are quiet, attentive, and orderly.

Your Excellency will observe by the list that I have increased the convict settlers to forty.

Another
house for the
Lieutenant-
Governor.

The house I am now in being very badly framed and hardly tenable, and its size being very small, viz., 24 feet by 12, I intend employing the remaining part of the store-house, as far as it will go, in building another house for myself, which I shall frame behind the house I am now in, and fill the spaces between the framing, &c., up with bricks.

It gives me great pleasure to inform your Excellency that the lime has answered far beyond my expectation.

Lime.

Soon after my landing here a quantity of coral and other testaceous substances, with some different kinds of stones, having been collected together, a kiln was made to burn them in, which after burning 48 hours produced a very fine white lime, and which is said by those more conversant in these things than myself that it excels any lime made of chalk. Some of it has been tryed in chimneys and a kitchen, and proves to be a very tough cement. Eighteen convicts, under the direction of an overseer, who is a settler, are employed making bricks, which have every present appearance of turning out well, which, together with the lime, will enable us to erect substantial and durable buildings; but the loss of a bricklayer will be felt, as there is only a very indifferent person of that description among the marine settlers. The bricklayer that was coming here in the Queen died on the passage.

Brick-
making.

Store-house.

It is my intention, as soon as houses are built for myself and some of the officers who are now without one, to begin a spacious brick store-house.

Reduced
ration.

From the quantity of provision now on the island (a return of which, signed by the D'y Commissary, is enclosed*), I have thought proper to order a reduction to be made in the allowance to $\frac{2}{3}$, letting the women and children remain at their usual allowance, to commence on New Year's Day, which I hope will meet your Excellency's approbation.

* Not available.

1791

29 Dec.

Finding it necessary to reprimand Mr. Doidge, the superintendant of convicts at Queensboro', for some very improper behaviour, he wrote me two letters, desiring to resign his place as superintendant of convicts, and to return to Port Jackson before June next, to ask your Excellency's permission to return to Europe; his thorough ignorance and incapacity for the place he was in, and the insolent tenor of his letters, induced me to grant his request; and as Mr. D'Arcy Wentworth,* doing duty at Queensboro' as assistant-surgeon, had always behaved with the greatest propriety and attention, and having every reason to be persuaded that he will acquit himself of the charge with fidelity, I gave him an order (a copy of which is enclosed) to act as superintendant of convicts, and to have the direction of them at Queensborough untill I may receive your Excellency's orders respecting him; he also continues doing his duty as assistant-surgeon at the same place, and has as yet fully answered the expectations I formed of him.

D'Arcy
Wentworth
appointed
as superin-
tendent.

The D'y Commissary having represented to me the necessity there was for a storekeeper at Phillipsburgh, where there are now (and will always be when ships come here) a quantity of provisions and stores, which we require a person to take charge of them, in whom a greater confidence can be placed than in any convict, I gave an acting order to Mr. Wm. Neale Chapman, who came out with me, and I beg to recommend him to your Excellency's notice as a trusty and well-disposed person, and whose education and propriety of conduct are such as induced me to give him the order (a copy of which is enclosed) untill I may receive your Excellency's further orders respecting him.†

Storekeeper.

Two houses are built on a commanding eminence which overlooks Queensboro', one of which was occupied by the superintendant, and the assistant-surgeon the other. As both these employments are performed by one person, I have made a barrack of the other house, in which is stationed a corporal and six privates, with a good garden adjoining to their house.

Barrack.

A sergeant and ten privates are also stationed at Phillipsburgh in a similar situation.

Respect being had in fixing those guards to keep the soldiers as separate from the convicts as possible.

The detached situation of the above two guards, and the necessity of having a particular officer to give out orders and inspect into the state of the barracks, palisades, &c., has induced me to order Lieut't Edw'd Abbott to execute that duty. I have put him in orders as town adjutant and inspector of outposts, and which will I hope meet your Excellency's approbation.

Inspection.

As I found it necessary to establish certain rules and regulations for the observance of every person on the island, I ordered the

* Father of W. C. Wentworth.

† Mr. Chapman was afterwards appointed secretary to Governor King at Sydney.

1791

29 Dec.

enclosed to be read, together with the rules for regulating a patrol by night and day, since which the robbing of gardens, &c., is less frequent.*

I have ordered Fred'k Mankett, a convict, to do duty as D'y Provost-Martial. He has as yet acquitted himself very well of the charge, and in that situation I find him useful and very necessary.

Wheelwright
wanted.

If a good wheelwright could be sent here he would be a very useful person, as we have not a man here of that description. I think a mill might be erected here if we had a millwright and stones, as the streams of water in different parts of the island are fully sufficient to turn any number of mills.

The master of the William and Ann, South Sea whaler, having represented to me by letter his being much distressed for some junk studding sail booms and blocks, I directed the D'y Commissary and Mr. Donovan to value a quantity of the junk and blocks, saved from the wreck of his Majesty's late ship the Sirius, and to value in return a proportionable quantity of oil and other articles which will be useful to the colony, a copy of which I enclose, and which, I hope, your Excellency will approve of.

I have, &c.,

PHILIP GIDLEY KING.

[Enclosure.]

PROCLAMATION.

10 Dec.

By his Honour Philip Gidley King, Esq., Lieut.-Govr. of Norfolk Island, in the Pacific Ocean, &c., &c., &c.

Regulations
for the pre-
servation of
property and
maintenance
of order.

WHEREAS it is highly necessary to establish certain permanent rules and regulations for the preservation of property and the maintaining of good order, the following are to be observed by all and every of his Majesty's subjects stationed or resident on this island, viz. :—Every person will regularly attend publick worship, which will begin at ten o'clock on Sunday mornings. The Commissary is directed to stop two pounds of meat from every overseer, and one pound and half from any convict, male or female, who does not attend divine service, unless prevented by sickness or other sufficient cause.

The sick and
incapable.

Such convicts as are incapable of doing a day's work, as well as such who are sick, are in future to receive no more than two-thirds allowance of provisions; this regulation to take place on Saturday, the 10th day of december, 1791.

Clothing not
to be bought
or sold.

As all the slop cloathing is the property of Government, both before and after it is issued to the convict, every person, whether civil, military, or settler, are strictly forbid buying any article of slop cloathing from a convict, on pain of being prosecuted for buying stolen goods. If any male or female convict will give information to the Provost-Martial of the person to whom he has sold his cloaths they will be returned to him, and he will be

allowed to keep whatever was given for them, and no punishment will be inflicted on him for selling them. Should the person who buys any slop cloathing be a free man (of any description) he will be prosecuted; if a male or female convict, they will also be prosecuted, and deprived of any slops for such a lenth of time as may be thought proper.

1791

29 Dec.

Convicts not to buy from soldiers.

No cloathing will in future be supplied to any convict, whether male or female, that shall be convicted of theft.

Any convict who shall purchase any wearing apparel, or any necessary belonging to a soldier, will be punished with the utmost severity.

In order to prevent as much as possible robbery's on publick or private ground, which are in a great manner occasioned by convicts, who sell their provisions, and support themselves by stealing from others, it is the duty of every individual to endeavour to put a stop to a practice which distresses the honest and industrious, whose grounds are robbed by those who sell their rations. It is therefore ordered that no provisions (which is served as rations) are ever to be purchased or received from a convict on any consideration whatever, and the Commissary is directed to give twenty pounds of flour as a reward for discovering any person who may in future be guilty of a breach of this order.

Provisions must not be purchased from convicts.

No person will be permitted to leave this island having a wife or child incapable of maintaining themselves without first leaving sufficient security for their support to prevent their becoming burthensome to the settlement.

Incumbrances.

Any convict or convicts who being privy to any felony or intended felony and shall not immediately or as soon after as possible give information thereof to the civil magistrate or officer in command where he or they may be at the time will be considered as an accessory and punished as such.

Accessories.

If any convict is found stragling or lurking about any of the cultivated grounds, or out of their houses after tap-too beats, they will be fired on by the patrole.

Stragglers.

Every person is strictly forbid employing any convict during the hours of work without leave being obtained from the Lieut.-Governor.

Convicts and their work.

Every overseer or other that has any convicts under their care, and who suffer them to be absent from their respective work, will receive such punishment as shall adjudged, and turned out of his trust. If the overseer is a free man he will be prosecuted.

Absentees.

Any person who will convict any overseer of lending out men or any person hiring a convict during the time of work will receive two compleat suits of slop cloathing, which will be stopped from the offender.

Penalty for taking convicts from their work.

No pine-trees are to be barked or cut down, nor is any of the flax-plant to be used for any other purpose than for the manufactory.

Trees must not be injured.

1791

No fowls or fish to be cleaned in or near the houses, but at the sea-side.

29 Dec.

Care of
property.

Great care is to be taken of the tools. Any person who is convicted of secreting any tool or utensil will be severely punished.

If any man or woman has the venereal disorder and does not immediately make it known to the surgeon such person shall upon the first discovery be put upon short allowance of provisions for six months and receive corporal punishment.

God save the King!

[Enclosure.]

GENERAL ORDER.

Dec.

By his Honour Philip Gidley King, Esq., Lieut.-Governor of Norfolk Island, in the Pacific Ocean, &c., &c., &c.

Regulations
for night
watch.

WHEREAS robberys are frequently committed in the publick and private grounds, to the great prejudice and loss of the Crown and many individuals, in order to prevent which the following regulations are to be observed and put in force by the night watch now appointed for the more effectual preservation of publick and private property, and for preventing or detecting the commission of nightly depredations:—

People to be
at home by
8 p.m.

It is hereby ordered and directed that all the inhabitants of every description do regulate their business so as to be in town by eight o'clock every evening, and if seen after that hour, either in or near their own or any other person's ground, they will be put to death by being fired on by an armed patrole, who is ordered to protect all the publick and private property within the following limits, which are all comprized within Sydney township:

Town
watchmen.

The four watchmen for the town, Charles Cavenagh, Thomas McQueen, George Kerr, and Benjamin Graves, armed with staves, are to be divided into watches of four hours, and to patrole the streets as watchmen, calling aloud every half-hour the time of the night; they are to prevent any person leaving their hutts, or lurking about after eight o'clock at night, and to see all fires out in their different rounds; and in case of any person being riotous or noisy they are to command silence, which, if not complied with, they are to apply to the serjt. of the guard, who will assist them in apprehending offenders, and lodge them in the guard-house until the next morning. The guard has orders to attend to the watchmen being alert; that they do not neglect noticing the hour, and that they repeat it in different parts of the town during their watch.

Their
duties.

Duty of the
guard.

Duty of the
watch.

Willm. Connolly, George Whitaker, Noah Mortimer, and William Brown, armed with staves, are to be divided into watches of four hours each, and to be stationed at the narrowest pass between the beach of the middle bay and the stream of water abreast of the gate leading to the causeway. They are during the night, viz., from eight o'clock until daylight, to stop by force

any person who attempts to pass either of those places, and to deliver them to the serjt. of the guard. The gate leading to the causeway will be kept by an invalid during the day ; and the person whose turn it is to guard the pass leading to Chimney Hill will be supplied with a list of those who are working at the brickfields, or the sawpits by Turtle Bay ; and any other persons passing by in the daytime are to be stopped and delivered to the Provost-Martial : people passing with bags, or anything secreted about their cloathing, are to be searched, and if suspected of theft, are to be delivered to the Provost-Martial : the above guards will also stop every person who is suspected of leaving their work.

1791

Dec.

Suspected
persons to
be stopped.

Mr. Nathaniel Lucas, constable, Edward Gaff, Ralph Dixon, Joshua Peak, John Anderson, John Rice, Wilhm. Blackall, and John Harris will divide themselves into a watch by night, and patrol Grenville Valley from Lucas's farm to Government's farm, and stop every person by force during the night. John Anderson and John Harris, as well as the others, will also stop everyone in the daytime that is of a suspicious character, and examine them. If the person examined is suspected of theft, or has no sufficient reason for his being in the valley or on the ground where he is detected, he is to be delivered to the Provost-Martial.

Grenville
Valley.

Mr. Saml. Stussey, constable, George Legge, Edward Westlake, Thomas Eccles, and John Emmerson, will form themselves into a watch of four hours each during the night, viz., from sunsett till daylight, and patrol from the stump of a tree by Capt. Patterson's garden to the Governor's garden, and are to be particularly attentive in visiting the barn-yard, which they are to do at least twice during their watch. Any person whatever passing thro' the vale, or in the cultivated grounds, or near the barn, is to be fired on with an intention not to miss.

The
Governor's
garden and
barn-yard.

The different watches will patrol from eight o'clock in the evening untill daylight in the morning, and will not upon any account quit their different grounds, as it will endanger their being fired on by the centinels.

Hours of the
watch

Saml. Stussey has the direction of Arthur's Vale patrol ; Nathl. Lucas, of the Grenville Valley patrol ; Thos. Crowder, of the town patrol and watch.

All reports are to be made to the Lieut.-Govr. every morning at nine o'clock. The patrols and watches are never to receive any fee or gratuity or reward from any individual to engage their exertions in the execution of the above trust, nor are they to receive any stipulated encouragement for the conviction of any offender ; but their diligence and good behaviour will be rewarded by the Governor, and for which purpose their conduct will be strictly attended to by those in authority over them, and any negligence on the part of those who may be employed in this duty will be punished with the utmost severity of the law.

No fee or
gratuity.

Diligence
and good
behaviour
rewarded.

1791

Dec.

Authority of
the watch.

The aforesaid patrols and watchmen are fully authorized to visit all such places as may be deemed necessary for the discovery of any felony, trespass, or misdemeanor, and for the apprehending and securing for examination any person or persons that may appear to them concerned therein, either by entrance into any suspected hut or dwelling, or by such other means as may appear expedient.

Four
districts.

The township will be hereafter divided into four districts, which different districts Thos. Crowder, Fredk. Markett, Geo. Kerr, and Thos. Barnsley will be accountable for in mustering the people at different hours during the night, and to inform themselves of the business connections and acquaintances of those in their districts.

Mr. Saml. Stussey, constable, of Arthur's Vale, will also inform himself of every circumstance respecting those who live in Arthur's Vale.

Mr. Nathl. Lucas, constable, will also inform himself of the conduct of those in Grenville Valley, where two constables are authorized to keep peace and good order by force of arms if it should be necessary, as it becomes a constable to do.

W. RICHARDS, JUNR., TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers).

31 Dec.

Queen's Row, Walworth, Dec., 31st, 1791.

A proposal
to the
Treasury.

WM. Richards, jun'r, takes the liberty of addressing Sir Jos. Banks, to inform him that he has heard Government intend sending out convicts, provisions, and settlers immediately to Port Jackson. As W.R. has not yet heard of the proposal he offered to the Lords of the Treasury, the terms of which he assures Sir Jos. Banks no person can (with justice) execute for less, he is apt to think the report may not be true. W.R. will be very much obliged to be informed if Sir Jos. Banks has heard anything of such an embarkation. If such an embarkation should take place, W.R. would be happy in Sir Jos. Banks' recommendation, being satisfied that Sir Jos. Banks would find everything conducted to the satisfaction of the publick.

Information
asked for.

W.R. hopes Sir Jos. Banks will excuse this liberty.

Sir Joseph Banks wrote upon the fly-leaf of the above letter the following draft of a reply :—

Sir,

Soho Square, Dec. 30th [31st], '91.

The reply.

I really cannot inform you whether there is at present any immediate intention of sending out convicts or not, having since Mr. Nepean left the office of Under Sec. of State no acquaintance in that department. I cannot, I fear, unless I am consulted on the subject, be of any service to you.

[No signature.]

JOHN SUTTON TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.*

SEVERAL persons haveing it in contemplation to settle in New South Wales, if such incouragement and assistance will be given

by Government as will appear effectual, will Government be at
 expense of conveying settlers to the colony of New South Wales, 1791
 either in ships provided by Government or allow to the subscriber Free
 or his assigns the sum of £25 for every free person landed in the passages for
 colony? Will Government find tools and implements of hus- emigrants,
 bandry and utensils necessary for the settlers on their arrival, Tools, seeds
 with seed to sow and plant, and fruit-trees of all kinds suited to and live
 the climate, with a supply of hogs, sheep, and cattle and poultry stock.
 necessary for a stock? Give the settlers such a number of convict Convict
 servants, free of all expence, as they shall be able to manage, such servants.
 servants to be continued in succession to the settlers for life, and
 not less than ten servants to each family or settler who shall be of
 full age to act for him or herself, and to maintain compleatly every
 such settler and their servants for two years at least after the
 arrival of such settlers in the colony, and grant, free of all expence
 and quit-rents and charges, not less than five hundred acres of Land grants.
 land, of which so much to be near the seat of Government as the
 Gov't can reasonably allow; and also a further grant of larger
 tracts of land in such other places as the settlers may locate for
 themselves, equally free of expence and quit-rents?

Will Government allow the subscriber or his assigns £20 for Bonuses on
 every head of cattle imported into the colony, £5 for every sheep, importation.
 and £20 for every ass so imported; also £2 2s. for every barrel
 of American fine flour, and £5 for every barrel of pork imported
 into the colony for public use? The money to be paid in Spanish
 mill'd dollars, at 4s. 6d. each, or by bills on the British Treasury,
 at the option of the person receiving.

Government to assist the settlers in putting up a house for each Assistance
 family, and also to assist the subscriber or his assigns to build a in building.
 grist and saw mill, dig the race, and grant such a situation and
 tract of land free as will be suitable for that purpose.

JOHN SUTTON.

N.B.—Will Government give six shillings sterling pr. bushel for Further
 any quantity of Indian corn imported into the colony, or Indian bonuses.
 corn meal, well dried to keep, or pr. hundred pounds weight
 of ship biscuit, and to accept the delivery of all and every article
 as compleat as soon as the vessels conveying the same shall come
 to anchor in the harbour of the settlement, the landing to be
 intirely at the risk and expence of Government.

JOHN SUTTON TO UNDER SECRETARY KING.

THOU being so busy, it is not likely I can see thee to-day. Have Proposals
 inclos'd a paper similar to that given to Evan Nepean,* only it restated.
 is more specific. I hope thou will give it a proper sanction, and
 it will obviate any future disappointments. And if it be agreeable
 to let me have any terms to carry persons, or provisions live or

† And to Mr. Dundas. Ante, p. 530.

1791

dead, I believe I can do it as low and more beneficial to the colony than it has hitherto been done. I will call in two or three days for thy opinion.

I am, &c.,

2nd day of the week.

JOHN SUTTON.

[Enclosure.]

JOHN SUTTON TO UNDER SECRETARY KING.*

Land and
convict
servants.Two years'
mainten-
ance.Tools, seeds,
fruit trees.

Live stock.

Salt.

Reward for
discoveries.Temporary
accommo-
dation.

JOHN SUTTON proposing, with others, to settle at New South Wales, it is agreed that himself and all other persons whom he may take with him, or send there as settlers, shall be taken at the expence of Government, shall have not less than five hundred acres of land granted and laid out free of all expence or quit-rent whatever, and each family or person to have as many convicts given them for servants, free of expence, as they can properly manage; John Sutton and each of his sons to have not less than thirty of those servants, which they shall chuse, for and dureing the term of their lives, the said servants to be supplied by others in succession as their terms may expire. All the said settlers and their servants to be maintain'd by Gover'ment for at least two years after their arrival at the said colony of New South Wales, or for a longer term if, from any accident, crops sho'd fail for that time. Government shall supply the settlers with all utensals and tools needfull for the settlement and cultivation of the ground; also with sufficient seeds of all kinds suitable to sow or plant, all sorts of trees suited to the climate, especially, apple, pear, peach, vine, olive, white mulberry, leman, orange, and cotton seed; also a stock of fowls and other poultry to begin with, two sows, one boar, six sheep free of expence, two or three cows and two horses, at the price they may cost where taken from, to be paid for at the option of the settlers in the course of six years in specie or produce at the price such produce may sell for at the time of payment. Government is to supply the settlers with salt gratis untill a market shall be established to procure it by exchange for the produce of the colony. Government shall further grant to said settlers such further tracts of land as they may respectively discover, survey and lay out, free of expence and quit-rent, the same, not exceeding twenty thousand acres in one tract. The intended settlers shall be convey'd in the first ships which shall sail for that colony after three months' notice shall be given of their intention to migrate to the said colony, such notice to be left at the Secretary of State's office. Government shall also provide the settlers when they arrive at the colony with sufficient shelter untill each family shall be able to put up a temporary house for their accommodation. And in case John Sutton, or any of the settlers jointly with him, shall undertake to erect any mill or mills for

* The questions submitted to Mr. Dundas in the previous letter were embodied, with some modifications, in the form of a draft proposal which was sent by Sutton to Under Secretary King, who had taken Nepean's place at the Home Office during the latter's visit to the West Indies.

grist, sawing timber, or other purposes, Government shall assist with labourers, in order to forward and compleat the same, and him or them shall have liberty to locate and hold in fee-simple any quantity of land and any stream of water he or they may think suitable which may not be previously located or dispos'd on by grant otherwise. 1791
Land grants.

JOHN SUTTON TO UNDER SECRETARY KING.

Fr'd. King,

Inclosed is names of persons mentioned. Some of them, from some causes which has arisen, I wo'd dis'prove of sending, and certainly nothing ought to be allowed to any except they go. As many impediments has come in the way of this business, I will to-morrow (if not prevented) submit a paper to thee which will put it in a clearer way, without future difficulty on any side or risk of loss, and hope thou will give me in writing (as thou promis'd) what will be allow'd to me on my orders for each settler landed in the settlement. I am, in truth, thy friend,
6 day of the week at noon. A paper to be submitted.
JOHN SUTTON.

MEMORANDUM REGARDING SUTTON'S PROPOSALS.*

As it may be expected the persons who may be willing to migrate to New South Wales can in general only be persons possessing little property, it will therefore be needful for Government to take the first settlers (say† families) to that country, and grant them lands free of cost, at least 500 acres for each person, to give them support in provisions until such time as a crop can be got in (or say for two years after they arrive there), Government to give seed to the settlers, particularly Indian corn, as it is the most proper grain to cultivate in that climate, especially in a woody country and sandy light soil, each family to be furnished with a certain number of tools, as hoes, spades, axes, &c.; each family to have the assistance of such a number of convicts as may be thought consistent with the situation and ability of each family to govern and employ properly, the convicts to be supported by the rations of Government until such time as the crops be got in sufficient for the settlers to support them. The first settlers to have the use of convicts as they may arrive there to replace in succession those whose times expire during such settlers' lives. Duty of Government.
Convict servants.

From the impossibility of the new settlers procuring stock of their own, it will be necessary to give each settler one sow and boar at least, with three sheep, and such fowls as may be needful to put them in stock. Also, it will be needful for Government to Live stock.

* This memorandum, explaining and justifying the proposals which had been made by Sutton was submitted to the Government. It was written apparently by someone on Sutton's behalf.

† Blank in MS. The number was afterwards fixed at 15. See Dundas to Phillip post, p. 589.

- 1791 procure horses and cattle to supply the settlers with at reasonable prices, to be paid in cash or grain, at the option of the settlers, in three years. And it would be quite necessary for Government to give assistance for putting up log houses for the immediate accommodations of the settlers at their respective settlements to prevent that sickness they might otherwise be liable to.
- Log houses.
- Mills. As mills are absolutely necessary, it will be incumbent on Government either to build a grist and saw-mill, to be as convenient as possible to the settlers, or to give effectual assistance toward the immediate execution of such mill to some one or more settlers as are willing and able to take from hence materials for that purpose.
- Salt. Salt being an indispensable article, it will be necessary for Government to supply the settlers therewith until it can be procured plentifully by other means.
- Seeds and plants. The settlers should be supplied with seeds of different kinds and trees for food such as are suited to the climate, more particularly apples and peaches, with vines and olives and the white mulberry.
- Constitution. Government should establish such a constitution in civil matters for the use of free settlers as may prevent any arbitrary proceeding in the Governors or anarchy in the governed, and to fix its principles so as to grow into use as the country may settle, which will make the minds of the settlers familiar therewith, and prevent uneasiness at any new regulations.
- No slavery. It will also be necessary for the prosperity of the colony to prevent for ever the introduction of slavery, or holding of innocent men and women and their innocent descendants in perpetual bondage, by having it established that no person shall continue bound as a servant unto a greater age than twenty-one years without his or her consent being publicly given after the servant attains the age of fourteen, and then for not more than ten years after such consent being given; and also that no person (not a convict) imported into that colony shall be a servant for a longer time than ten years after they arrive, or until they arrive at the age of twenty-one, if they should not be at that age after ten years' service, except a valuable consideration shall appear to have been received by the servant for a longer term.
- Limited service. It will always be expected by the persons who migrate to that country that in case they or any of them should find out any suitable tracts of lands, they are to have further grants of such lands so discovered in such large tracts as may be of use to the future settlement of their families or friends, whom they may expect to arrive in that country.
- Rewards for discoveries.
- Conditions. *Recapitulation.*—Conditions* on which Mr. Sutton engaged to go out to New South Wales with his associates, consisting, as he

* These conditions are much less exacting than those originally proposed. They appear to have been agreed to by the Government, but owing to the delay which took place in getting a ship ready and other causes, the arrangement was not carried out.

supposed, of about fifteen families:—Passage to be provided by Government; lands to be granted free of expence; to have an assortment of tools and implements out of the public stores; to have two years' provisions; the service of convicts to be assigned to them free of expence; such convicts to have two years' rations and one year's clothing.

1791

Dec.

THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP. 1792
Sir, Whitehall, 10 January, 1792. 10 Jan.

Your letters to Lord Grenville of the date and numbers mentioned in the margin,* forwarded by the way of China, have been received,† and with their several inclosures have been laid before the King.

His Majesty's servants cannot but be aware of the unpleasant effects experienced in the settlements from the accident which happened to the Guardian, and how much that unfortunate disaster must have retarded the progress of the settlements. It will, however, be a satisfaction to you to know that considering the inconveniences with which you have had to struggle, they are perfectly satisfied that everything has been done by you which could, under such circumstances, be reasonably expected. The settlement at Rose Hill promises soon to make a return for the labour which has been bestowed. From what you represent of its fertility, I perfectly agree with you that it would have been the most eligible spot for the first settlement; but circumstanced as you originally were, disappointed in your expectations respecting Botany Bay, and without any sort of information of the nature of the country, it could hardly have been expected that you would have made a more judicious choice than you have done, especially when the advantages which must always be derived from a port so capacious and secure as Port Jackson are considered.

Loss of the Guardian.

Rose Hill.

A good choice.

With respect to the officers, non-commissioned officers, and such convicts as propose to become settlers, the time for which they were transported being expired, his Majesty's servants do not think it either advisable or necessary to limit you to any given number of convicts to be assigned to individuals so widely differing in situation of life, character, and description; but from the opinion which they entertain of your prudence and discretion, they leave you to decide upon a point which must in a great degree be governed by your knowledge of the character and ability of those to whom convicts are to be assigned.

Settlers.

Assignment of convicts.

The more convicts that can be properly disposed of in this manner, I am inclined to think, the better. In like manner the quantity of provisions necessary to be granted to persons becoming

Provisions for settlers.

* 1—June 14, 1790; 2—June 14, 1790; 3—June 17, 1790; 4—June 20, 1790; 5—June 25, 1790; 6—July 2, 1790; 7—July 13, 1790; 8—July 14, 1790; 9—July 14, 1790; 10—July 17, 1790.

† Nearly eighteen months after they were despatched.

1792

10 Jan.

settlers, and the cases wherein such quantity ought to be given at once, or retailed, must be left to your own judgement and discrimination.

Allowance of provisions.

One year's clothing.

Rent.

Provisions from Calcutta.

From the experiments which you have very properly made, it appears to his Majesty's Ministers, that in the present state of the settlement, one year's provisions for each settler and for each of the convicts to be assigned to each settler, exclusive of their respective rations, is not sufficient for their maintenance until they may become able to support themselves by their own industry. But as to such settlers or convicts as may wish to establish themselves in Norfolk Island, I take it for granted from what you state of the fertility of its soil and other advantages, that one year's provisions will be sufficient; in your decision however, upon this point with respect to such persons as become settlers, you will, I have no doubt, advert to what Lord Grenville has so strongly recommended to you, in his letter No. 10,* of weighing maturely the conduct of such convicts, and of apportioning the bounty of Government to them according to their deserts. One year's cloathing I should imagine would do, either in New South Wales or in Norfolk Island, but you are at liberty to increase that proportion if absolutely necessary; and respecting the necessity of such increase, you must naturally be more competent to determine than any person here. The payment of the fine specified in his Majesty's instructions by persons to whom lands are to be granted, or for compromising for such fine by a quantity of grain, is a point not necessary to be decided upon at this moment, it will, however, be thought of hereafter when matters of the same nature become the subject of discussion.

It is not known here with any degree of certainty, whether Messrs. Lambert, Ross, and Biddulph, of Calcutta, have carried their designs into execution of sending to you from Calcutta a cargo of provisions. If that could be depended upon there would be little occasion to send from hence for the present any further supply, particularly of flour; but in order to guard against accidents which possibly might happen to the ship (if she should have been sent) during her passage to New South Wales, or from the failure of the crops either there or in Norfolk Island, a supply is herewith sent out, together with some beef and pork; the quantity of each article is specified in the inclosed return.†

Your omitting to forward to me with your last dispatches an account of your stock of provisions prevents my forming an exact calculation on that head. I trust what is now sent, and which is exclusive of what may have been raised, will prove adequate to your exigencies.

By a letter which I have received from Major Ross, dated the 29 August, 1790, I had the pleasure of hearing, that from the state of the cultivation on Norfolk Island, it was probable that

* Ante, p. 460.

† Not available.

the crops of the present season would enable him to export some grain to New South Wales. If that should be the case, and you should not be disappointed in the expectations you have formed, and which appear by your letter No. 10, there seems to be a fair prospect of easing this country in a short time of a considerable part of the expence of that establishment. A constant supply of grain being once secured, it will be necessary that you should turn your thoughts towards the means of obtaining such other supplies as are indispensably necessary, particularly horned cattle, goats, and hogs, the moment the Supply tender, or any other vessel you may have under your orders can be spared for that service. The ships which last touched at the Cape of Good Hope will carry you a small supply, and occasionally some few may be expected from hence: but unless these supplies can be obtained nearer at hand, it will be a long time before the settlement will be sufficiently stocked, and till that happens a constant expence for provisions must be incurred.

It is to be hoped that some assistance will shortly be derived on the spot in the article of clothing, as I observe by Major Ross's letter that the flax-dresser had already made some progress towards it on Norfolk Island, and implements will be provided and sent out to you with a view to the manufacture of that article there.

The want of a port at Norfolk Island is, as you justly observe, a material objection to its becoming the principal settlement, but in whatever degree it may be considered, it seems advisable from its superior fertility that as many people as can properly be accommodated should be placed there, at least until some further progress is made, and supplies are more abundant than at present in New South Wales.

Captain King, who has been specially appointed Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Island will, I hope, have arrived long before this letter can reach you.* His presence will remove any difficulties which you seem to have anticipated from an expectation of your being obliged to detach the Lieutenant-Governor and Commandant of the Corps to that island. The presence of Captain King, and the assistance he will derive from the military will, I trust, for the present enable him to provide for the due administration of justice, until such settlers may arrive as may be of a proper description to be vested with a magisterial authority there.

The persons who have been employed by you in public situations will be compensated for their services.

It was understood here that the principal duty under the Commissary had been executed by Mr. Zachy Clarke, and under that idea, the appointment of Deputy-Commissary of Stores and Provisions on Norfolk Island has lately been given to him: but as Mr. Freeman's services appear to be equally necessary in the

1792

10 Jan

Grain from
Norfolk
Island.Flax
dressing.No port at
Norfolk
Island.King
appointed
Lieutenant-
GovernorCommissary
Stores.

* King arrived at Sydney 21st September, 1791, and sailed for Norfolk Island, 26th October.

1792

10 Jan.

Allowances.

same capacity in New South Wales, the Lords of the Treasury have consented that he shall have a similar allowance for his services there from the time he was first employed.

Super-
intendent at
Rose Hill.

It is much to be lamented from the description you have given of Mr. Dodd, that he cannot be prevailed upon to continue at Rose Hill to superintend the cultivation there. If by increasing his appointments from three to five shillings per diem it can be effected, you are at liberty to hold out that encouragement to him for any specific time. Three years might perhaps be sufficient, by which time a proper person might be found for a successor.

As you are of course apprized of the extent of the services rendered by Mr. Murphy, there will be no objection to your rewarding them. For that and other purposes a remittance will be sent you by the Kitty, which you will apply with as much economy as possible.

Unqualified
Super-
intendents.

At the time the letters were written by you which I have now noticed, it appears that three or four of the superintendents had not arrived. I fear, however, that none of them will be found to answer the description which you seem to require, but if any one or two persons proper for that service can be engaged here, I shall take care to send them out to you by the first opportunity.

Convicts'
sufferings.

The distresses to which the convicts sent out in the three ships were exposed during their voyage to New South Wales, is a subject into which the strictest enquiry will be made, in order to the bringing to punishment the persons who have been the cause of that shocking calamity. I am also happy to inform you that such steps will be taken as will, I hope, in future effectually prevent the secreting and carrying away convicts or others from the settlement. The party so offending will be made liable to forfeit his contract or charter-party, and I request you will transmit to me every intelligence of such an offence, should it be committed, with proper affidavits authenticating the same.

Absconders.

New South
Wales
Corps.

The men composing the corps which has been raised to serve in New South Wales under Major Grose have, as a condition of their enlisting, been promised the usual ration, except spirits, without any deduction from their pay.

This will be explained to you by Major Grose upon his arrival, and will, I have no doubt, operate as a strong inducement to some of the marines to enlist in the additional company.

Beer.

When the cultivation of the settlements is somewhat farther advanced, the means of supplying the deficiency in the ration with beer will, I have no doubt, be one of the objects of your consideration.

The Sirius
not to be
replaced.

The Lords of the Admiralty have not yet determined on sending any ship to New South Wales to supply the loss of the Sirius, but as my predecessor has already informed you, that circumstance will not occasion any decrease of the pecuniary emoluments with which it was understood by you that your situation was to be attended during your continuance abroad.

I have the satisfaction of informing you that the address of the officers of the Civil and Military Establishments to his Majesty on his happy recovery,* which accompanied your letter No. 2, was received in the most gracious manner. 1792
10 Jan.
Address to
the King.

Exclusive of the provisions and other articles which will be sent out in the Britannia, agreeable to the invoice herewith transmitted, you will receive by the ship Kitty, who is now taking in part of her cargo and I expect will sail in the course of this month, about three hundred tons of provisions, forty or fifty tons of cloathing and stores, together with thirty female and ten male convicts, the latter being such artificers and handy-craftsmen as are stated in your letters to be most wanted in the settlement. The Kitty.

Provisions
and con-
victs.

At the same time I take this opportunity of acquainting you that a ship of about four hundred tons is already taken up in consequence of my directions for that purpose, in which it is intended to ship with all convenient speed such further articles as you have more particularly required in several of your letters, and which are proposed to be sent, conformable to the inclosed list marked A, together with a year's cloathing for the settlement, and other articles, the particulars of which are contained in the List B.†

At the same time every encouragement will be given to induce certain settlers (who are Quakers, to the amount of fifteen families, and who have made proposals to Government) to embark by the same conveyance. Quaker
families as
emigrants.

Exclusive of the convict artificers as above-mentioned, terms have been offered for a master carpenter and a master miller, but as yet have not been accepted by any persons of sufficient character and reputation to be relied on. I have, however, no doubt of obtaining such persons before the Kitty sails from hence.

I am, &c.,

HENRY DUNDAS.

UNDER SECRETARY KING TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Whitehall, 10th January, 1792.

Mr. Nepean being gone to the West Indies for the recovery of his health, it is become my duty (having had the honor of being appointed Under Secretary of State in this department) to acknowledge the receipt of your letters, sent by way of China to Mr. Nepean, Nos. 1 to 5 inclusive, with three others dated the 6th, 22nd, and 23rd of August, 1790. Nepean gone
to West
Indies.

In the dispatch which has been written to you by Mr. Secretary Dundas you will find that many of the points to which these letters relate have been fully answered; the rest I shall now reply to in the order in which they stand.

The remittance which has now been made to you, in consequence of your application, will enable you to discharge any arrears of pay that may be due to such marine artificers as remain in New South Wales. The amount of the several sums due to those who Remittance.

* Ante, p. 344.

† These lists are not recorded.

1792

10 Jan.

Specie.

may return will be liquidated here. It was intended that a certain quantity of specie should have been sent to you by the Guardian for this purpose, but circumstances interfered to prevent its being done.

Orders-in-Council.

You will receive by the ships which have lately sailed most of the orders of his Majesty in Council which relate to the convicts already sent to New South Wales. Those which remain will be sent to you by the Kitty, and will explain to you the terms or times for which the said convicts have severally been sentenced to be transported.

Oil instead of butter.

The accounts received of the rancid state of the butter sent out by the first ships, and the little utility with which that supply was attended, led to a supposition that an article of that sort might be dispensed with. It is, however, determined that, in consequence of your representation, a quantity of oil shall be sent out, which will answer most of the purposes of butter, and can be longer preserved.

Spirits for the marines.

It is not altogether clear how far the marines were led to expect a supply of spirits for three years after their landing, but as Major Ross may be expected in the course of a few months, any doubts upon that subject may be cleared up, and there can be no question but that satisfaction will be made for any actual engagements on the part of Government which have not been compleatly fulfilled. The commanders of ships hereafter to be dispatched will be apprized of the landmark you have erected to direct their passage into Port Jackson, which, on a coast so little known, appears to have been a measure extremely necessary and proper.

Recovery of sick.

The decrease of the number of sick landed from the Neptune, Scarborough, and Surprize has afforded great satisfaction, and it is hoped that by the care and attention which they have received since their arrival the speedy recovery of the rest will soon be effected.

Inhuman treatment of convicts.

Several affidavits have been taken since the return of the Neptune respecting the inhuman treatment said to have been offered to these people, with a view to the prosecution of the persons who were the cause of it, and in consequence of which the master, it is reported, has absconded.

I am, &c.,

J. KING.

G. MATCHAM, ESQ., TO ALEX. DAVISON, ESQ.

21 Jan.

Sir,

Lower Grosvenor-place, Jany, 21st, 1792.

Free settlers.

The proposals made to free settlers in New South Wales have induc'd me to request a grant of land on condition of my sending one or more families. A skilful farmer has offer'd to go there with his family (on my account) by the first ship, and I make no doubt of being able to send more colonists by the other vessels which are going this year. My view is to make a provision in that country for my younger son, and as I shall send him some

years hence with three or four thousand pounds, I could wish for such an extent of country as to make it an object of attention to me; ten or twenty thousand acres—two or three hundred acres between Rose Hill and Sydney Cove, or on the opposite shore between Rose Hill and the mouth of the harbour (where, I understand, there are no settlers), and the remainder in a direct line towards Broken Bay. I shall allow my settlers money to purchase such articles at the Cape as may be thought necessary to begin with, and an annual supply for progressive improvements. Government will perhaps not think me presumptuous or unworthy their attention on this occasion when they are inform'd that I have inclos'd fourteen hundred acres of waste land in England, which I purpose intirely planting. You will greatly oblige me, sir, if you can procure me an speedy answer, as I wish to prepare the farmer to go by the first ship.*

I am, &c.,

G. MATCHAM.

1792

21 Jan.

A capitalist's proposal.

Supplies.

THE CLERK OF THE PRIVY COUNCIL TO UNDER SECRETARY
KING.

Sir, Council Office, Whitehall, 22 January, 1792.

22 Jan.

Mr. Secretary Dundas having transmitted to the Lord President the two inclosed lists, the one of convicts sentenced to be transported from England to parts beyond the seas, the other of convicts sentenced to be banished from Scotland,† in order to be laid before his Majesty in Council, I am directed by his Lordship to transmit the said letter and lists to you, and to request that you will be pleased forthwith to prepare the draughts of two Orders-of-Council, appoint'g the eastern coast of New South Wales, or some one or other of the islands adjacent, to be the place to which the said convicts shall be conveyed. In the hope of saving you some trouble, I have made out the draught of an order for the convicts sentenced in England, from a similar order issued in June last,† and herewith enclose the same for your perusal and correction.

New South Wales as a place for convicts.

The act relative to offenders in Scotland was passed in the 25th of his Majesty's, cap. 46, and as no order has hitherto issued appointing the place to which persons sentenced to be banished from Scotland shall be transported, I am to desire that you will be pleased to recite as much of the act above referred to as you may judge necessary for the order to be issued on this occasion, as I do not find upon the slight examination I have been able to make that this Act has been continued in force in the same manner as the Act for the transportation of offenders from England has been. I beg leave to draw your attention to this circumstance.

Offenders in Scotland.

W. FAWKENER.

* Post, p. 615.

† Not recorded.

1792

THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

10 Feb.

Sir, Whitehall, 10th February, 1792.

Stores.

Having written so fully to you by the *Britannia*, I have at present nothing further to add than that you will receive with this letter by the ship *Kitty* the several articles specified in the inclosed bills of lading, numbered 1 and 2.

Convicts.

There will sail at the same time in the *Kitty* the male and female convicts particularised in the list No. 3,* wherein the respective occupations of the former are inserted opposite to their names.

Settlers.

Such further articles as you have particularly required, together with a year's cloathing for the settlement, will be forwarded to you by a ship which I expect will be despatched in about six weeks, and on board which such settlers as have determined to go will embark, with a master miller and carpenter. What the number of the settlers may amount to I cannot at present ascertain, but I think it will fall short of that stated in my last letter, No. 2, as having made proposals to Government.† I also inclose you a copy of the Order-in-Council (No. 4) respecting all the convicts now sent (those from Ireland excepted), and concerning whom the Orders-in-Council have not yet been transmitted to me from that kingdom.

I have, &c.,

HENRY DUNDAS.

THE FIRST LAND GRANT.‡

By his Excellency Arthur Phillip, Esq., Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief in and over his Majesty's territory of New South Wales and its dependencies, &c., &c., &c.

22 February.

Powers of the Governor.

WHEREAS full power and authority for granting lands in the Territory of New South Wales to such persons as may be desirous of becoming settlers therein is vested in me, his Majesty's Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief over the said territory and its dependencies, by his Majesty's instructions under the Royal Sign Manual, bearing date respectively the twenty-fifth day of April, one thousand seven hundred and eighty-seven, and the twentieth day of August, one thousand seven hundred and eighty-nine.

Grant to James Ruse.

In pursuance of the power and authority vested in me as aforesaid, I do by these presents give and grant unto James Ruse, his heirs and assigns, to have and to hold for ever, thirty acres of land, in one lot, to be known by the name of Experiment Farm, laying on the south of the Ponds, at Parramatta, the said thirty acres of land to be had and held by him, the said James Ruse, his heirs and assigns, free from all fees, taxes, quit-rents, and other acknowledgments, for the space of ten years from the date of these presents. Provided that the said James Ruse, his

* Not recorded.

† Ante, p. 589.

‡ A certified copy of the original deed of grant in the Registry of Deeds Office, Sydney.

heirs or assigns, shall reside within the same, and proceed to the improvement and cultivation thereof, such timber as may be growing or to grow hereafter upon the said land which may be deemed fit for naval purposes to be reserved for the use of the Crown, and paying an annual quit-rent of one shilling after the expiration of the term or time of ten years before mentioned.

1792

22 Feb.

Quit rent.

In testimony whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and the seal of the territory, at Government House, Sydney, in the territory of New South Wales, this twenty-second day of February, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and ninety-two.

A. PHILLIP.

Signed and sealed in our presence,—

GEO. JOHNSTON.

JNO. PALMER.

JOHN WHITE.

L.S.

By command of his Excellency,

DAVID COLLINS, Secretary.

MR. ROBERT BIDDULPH TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Calcutta, February 28th, 1792.

28 Feb.

Tho' circumstances that Mr. Bowen may perhaps take an opportunity of explaining to your Excellency have prevented me from taking any part in the supply of provisions at present shipping for the colony under your command, I have by no means given up my intention of offering my services to you and his Majesty's ministers at home. By the letter which you did me the honour to write me in conjunction with Messrs. Lambert and Ross, I considered the Atlantic as consigned to us, as did those gentlemen also; the affair took another turn, and after much consultation and speculation on the subject an offer was made by Messrs. Lambert and Ross, entirely unknown to me, which has been accepted.

Provisions
from India.

The present supply is so small an object that I mention it for no other reason than to give me an opportunity of observing that my exclusion has not been voluntary, as the business upon the grounds it has been concluded was never made known to me. Had it been so I should have taken my part in it under the expectation that it would have been continued to more favourable times. I beg, therefore, to tender my services to your Excellency and the colony, and it is my intention to offer them to his Majesty's ministers in Europe, being now about to return there.

Offer of
services.

The offer I have now the honour to make is on my own account, and on the same terms as my joint offer with Messrs. Lambert and Ross, and any orders in consequence which your Excellency may

Terms.

1792

28 Feb.

please to address to me in Calcutta will be duly attended to by my attornies, Messrs. King and Johnson, who are regularly authorized to act for me in such cases during my absence.

An explana-
tion.

I beg leave to trouble your Excellency with an explanation of one part of my conduct, which may perhaps be construed to exclude me from any future claim, "that I refused to enter into any warrantee." Delivering the articles required at prices to be certified by the commanding officer, I certainly did so, as did likewise Messrs. Lambert and Ross; but as the terms of the original offer was never suggested to me, I hope it will not be supposed that I have declined adhering to them.

Samples
forwarded.

Mr. Bowen does me the favour to carry a sample of cloathing of various kinds, which I will deliver at New South Wales at the following rates, viz. :—Shirts, 1s. 4½d. (one shilling and fourpence half-penny); trowsers, 3s. 5d. (three shillings and fivepence); shoes, 3s. 6d. (three shillings and sixpence); frocks, 4s. (four shillings).

I have, &c.,

ROBT. BIDDULPH.

THE REV. R. JOHNSON TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

29 Feb.

Extract from a letter received from the Rev. Richard Johnson, chaplain at Botany Bay. Dated, Sydney, Feb. 29, 1792.

Neglect of
public
worship.

THERE is another thing which I beg leave to relate to your Excellency, and that is the manner in which the holy Sabbath is observed. I have often lamented, and not seldom complained, of the thinness of the congregation; sometimes not one-half, one-third, and sometimes one-fourth of the convicts (especially the women) present. Many of the officers, both civil and military, and I may add of the naval and merchant line, too, have frequently apologised for their non-attendance, and have assigned as the cause the want of a convenient place of worship.

Service in
the open air.

We have been here now above four years, and the first time we had public service at Port Jackson I found things much more comfortable for myself and for the congregation (for whom I would ever feel as for myself in such circumstances) than I did last Sunday, for then we had the advantage of the trees to shelter us from the sun; but now we were wholly exposed to the weather; first to the rain, which I was fearful would have made me dismiss the people, and afterwards to the wind and sun. On this account, sir, it cannot be wondered at that persons, whether of higher or lower rank, come so seldom and so reluctantly to public worship. I have, not seldom, found very great inconveniences attending it myself. I have, which I must in a great degree attribute to this, contracted a deafness which I am very apprehensive I shall never get the better of, and repeatedly for a day or two after I have been thus exposed I have been very unwell, and quite unfit and unable to attend to my duty.

Injury to
health.

I neither wish or mean to interfere with any thing that does not concern myself; but as the clergyman of the colony, and as intrusted with the spiritual charge of those unhappy people around us, I submit it to your Excellency's own consideration whether, before the approaching winter, some place should not be thought of and built both here and at the new settlement for the purpose of carrying on public worship.

1792

29 Feb.

Churches
should be
built.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

Sir,

Sydney, March 19th, 1792. 19 March.

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter marked No. 1, and dated the 5th of July, '91,* by the Pitt, in which ship Major Grose arrived with the company of the New South Wales Corps. The Pitt arrived here the 14th of last month, had been very sickly on the passage, and buried thirteen soldiers, seven seamen, twenty male convicts, and nine women.

Arrival of
Major Grose.

One hundred and twenty male convicts were sick when landed, but I have the satisfaction of finding those who have been received from the Pitt less emaciated, and in appearance fitter for labour, than most of those who have been hitherto received.

Sick
convicts.

In proceeding to answer your letter, I have, sir, to beg leave to refer to mine by the Supply, armed tender, and by his Majesty's ship Gorgon; they will show the state of the colony, the necessary articles of which we stand in need, my reasons for sending the Supply to England, and the Atlantic store-ship, to Calcutta; also what may be expected from this settlement respecting the raising a sufficient quantity of flour and maize for the support of its inhabitants. The great necessity of sending out a proper person to be charged with the culture of the ground and with the grain which is raised, until it is deliver'd to the Commissary, has also been mentioned in those letters, there not being any person in this settlement properly qualified for that charge.

State of the
colony.

Returns have been made by the Commissary of what provisions have been rec'd from the different ships and from Batavia; but none have ever been received from Calcutta, and from the length of time since a supply from that quarter was mentioned, I had given up all expectation of it before the Atlantic was sent from hence.

Provisions
received.

The vessel sent out in frames has been landed, and I hope that we shall be able to set her up; but for doing which we have only three or four ordinary shipwrights, and it is much to be regretted that the Navy Board did not judge it necessary to send out one or two good shipwrights; and all vessels intended to remain for any time in this country should be coppered, as wooden bottoms will be destroyed by the worms in less than two years.

Small vessel
for the
station.

When this vessel is set up, she must remain until proper people can be found to man her. I have, sir, in my former letters given

No crew.

1792

March.

Want of
ships.

an opinion as to the necessity of the ships employed on this station being commanded by King's officers, and from them small vessels may be manned; but no dependance can be placed on convicts.

Many great inconveniences attend our being without any ship on this station, and I should have retained the Supply until that vessel had been relieved; but the carpenters who were on the survey were of opinion that after her going once to Norfolk Island repairs would be necessary which could not be given in this country; consequently the Supply, if not sent home, must have remained useless in the harbour, and I had not any use for her seamen.

Debilitated
convicts.Many
deaths.

The Gorgon sailed from hence the 18th day of December, since which not any material change has happened; and I am very sorry to say that most of the convicts who were received by the last ships* still continue in the same debilitated state in which they were landed, and of whom, in less than seven months, two hundred and eighty-eight men have died.† In the seven months prior to the arrival of those ships, the deaths were nineteen. The returns of sick this day is—civil and military, eighteen; male convicts, three hundred and ninety-four; and females, seventeen.

Want of
clothing
and tools.

The want of cloathing and of many articles which the Commissary has demanded makes me anxious for the arrival of the ship which was to follow the Pitt. We have not tools sufficient for the people, and the cloathing which has been rec'd for the use of the convicts is so very slight that most of the people are naked a few weeks after they have been cloathed.

Difficulties
of the settle-
ment.

The Commissary's return will show the quantity of provisions remaining in store, and you will, sir, easily conceive how much this colony must have been thrown back, and still suffers, from having been for such a length of time at a reduced ration. I am very sensible that the colony would have been liberally supplied with every necessary but from events which could not have been foreseen; still, sir, the inconveniences are felt, and people are dispirited, particularly the settlers, for whom live stock is much wanted, in order to enable them to support themselves at the expiration of the time for which they are to be supported from the public store (eighteen months). The publick live stock is not sufficient for those settlers to whom I have already granted land; what may be expected by the *Dædalus* is, I fear, very uncertain, and, at any rate, not to be looked for this year. It is also to be apprehended that the *Dædalus*, after so long a voyage, may stand in need of considerable repairs, and the best carpenters we have had in this settlement have left it.

Live stock
wanted.

I have, sir, long hoped to see a ship, or a couple of ships, sent from England for the purpose of bringing live stock to this colony,

* Atlantic, Matilda, Active, Queen, Britannia.

† The mortality continued. From 1st January to 31st December, 436 convicts died—418 males, 18 females.

and beg leave to observe that if such a ship as the Gorgon was to be properly fitted in England, with only half-a-dozen guns mounted, she would be able to bring ten times more live stock than the colony has hitherto received; but then I suppose no live stock to be on board such ship when she leaves the Cape of Good Hope but what is on the public account and intended to be landed in the settlement.

A few draft horses, and from fifteen to twenty asses, with two or three English rams, are much wanted, and the English ewes would do better in this country than the Cape ewes, which grow too fat to breed. The above animals, with cows, ewes, swine, and a couple of bulls, are the only stock wanted. What we received from the Gorgon thrives well, but unfortunately all the bulls died on the passage, and we have not one in the colony.

I have, sir, in all my letters pointed out the great advantages which would attend our having a few intelligent farmers as settlers. They would do more for the colony than five hundred settlers from soldiers or convicts, very few of whom are calculated for the life they must necessarily lead in this country, where they are so entirely cut off from the gratifications in which most of them have always placed their happiness; but I do not think that so great an encouragement is necessary to be given at present to settlers who may be sent out as there was at first. I think those who are to be supported from the public store should not receive that support for more than eighteen months, in the room of two years, as I find proposed, and that at the expiration of the eighteen months they should return all the convicts they may have been allowed, or pay for their hire (*in grain*) if they retained them any longer.

What I feared from the kind of settlers I have been obliged to accept has happened in several instances. They have grown tired of a life so different to that in which they had been brought up, and wish to give up their grounds, or have sold the little live stock they had raised to procure articles from which they do not reap any real benefit, and which they find means of getting from the ships. But, of fifty-eight settlers who have been placed round Parramatta, only half-a-dozen have hitherto come under this description, and four convicts, whose times being expired, became settlers, now support a convict each, who works for them.

One settler went away when the last ships sailed, and two more have left their grounds and gone on board the Pitt, and I have just received an account of twenty-two men and nine women who are received on board that ship, the terms for which they had been sentenced being expired. Thus will the best people always be carried away, for those who cannot be received on board the ships as seamen or carpenters pay for their passage.

The maize, which is now getting in, turns out much better than could have been expected from the dry weather and the late season in which it was put into the ground. Mills for grinding

1792

19 March.

Horses,
asses, and
sheep.Farmers as
settlers.Support
from the
public store.Unsatisfac-
tory settlers.The best
people
carried
away.Corn mills
an urgent
want.

1792

19 March.

this grain are much wanted. The iron mills which have been sent out are very soon rendered useless ; they are said to be not of the best kind, and the people who use them cannot be supposed to be the most careful. A windmill will save an infinite deal of labour.

Maize,
barley, and
wheat.

The wheat of last year (about four hundred bushels) has been issued to the people ; the wheat of this year's growth, which is estimated at five hundred bushels, and seventy bushels of barley, will be kept for seed. I suppose that about nine hundred acres of ground will be sowed this year with maize and wheat ; but little labour is done at present, for the people are in general very weak. The ration now issued is, to a man for seven days, five pounds of flour and four pounds of pork ; at which ration we have flour for fifty-two days and pork for one hundred and forty-seven days.

The reduced
ration.

At Norfolk Island, from a mistake made by the storekeeper, they did not receive their full proportion of beef and pork when the last supplies were sent to the island ; but seven weeks' beef and thirteen weeks' pork (at the established ration), with what stores and cloathing can be spared, are now shipped on board the Pitt, and that ship will sail for the island in a few days. The owners of the Pitt are to be paid six hundred and fifty-one pounds freight for the provisions, &c., which the ship carries ; and the master having offer'd to proceed to Calcutta, and take his chance of being hired to bring the provisions to this settlement which have been ordered by the Atlantic, if from any accident that ship should have been prevented reaching Calcutta, I have availed myself of his offer, it not being attended with any expence to the Crown. He proceeds to Calcutta immediately after landing what he has on board for Norfolk Island, and I have sent duplicates of my letters which went by the Atlantic to Lord Cornwallis and Messrs. Lambert & Co., from whom the provisions were to be purchased, so that we may be pretty certain of receiving the flour and pease which have been ordered ; but I shall not think it necessary to send for any further supplies, as I understand by your letter that another ship was to follow the Pitt, and that the colony would be furnished with what might be judged requisite.

Supplies for
Norfolk
Island.

Pressure of
circum-
stances.

If it should appear that I have too frequently adverted to our wants, my being probed by the wants of every individual, and what I feel still more, the knowing how much might have been done in the time I have been in this country, and in how very different a state it would have been had we been more fortunate in receiving the necessary supplies and a few intelligent men, so very requisite in a young colony, will, I hope, plead my excuse.

The extraordinary accounts which have been given of this country have induced me frequently to enter into little details wch. I thought might lead to the forming a just opinion of it.

And I now, sir, inclose the copy of a letter* which does not, I believe, give a more favorable account of the soil than what it deserves, for when I ordered the ground to be examined I particularly directed the report to be made with such caution that on any future examination the soil might appear in every part to be to the full as good as it should be represented.

The person who has examined the ground was sent out in the Gorgon as a superintendant, was brought up a gardener, and has been for several months employed in surveying and marking out allotments of land for the settlers, and he is a very steady man, and may be supposed to be a much better judge of the good or bad qualities of the ground than any of those persons who have hitherto given their opinions.

I have, &c.,

[Enclosure.]

A. PHILLIP.

Parramatta, February 24th, 1792.

In obedience to your Excellency's directions, I have attended to the land at and round Parramatta, and it is my opinion that where the thirteen settlers are, at the foot of Prospect Hill, the land is excellent. It is a black rich light soil, in depth from fourteen to twenty inches, and for a considerable distance to the southward, westward, and eastward of those settlers the land is very good.

Where the four settlers at the northern farm are, and for several miles to the northward and to the eastward of them, the ground is very excellent. It is a fine rich clammy light loam, from fifteen inches to two feet in depth.

Round the fifteen settlers at the Ponds, at the Field of Mars, where the eight marine settlers are placed, and where the nine eastern settlers are, the land is a very good light loam of a middling depth. Ruse's, Williams's, and Stewart's grounds are exceeding good; Schaffer's, Webb's, and Reid's allotments are of a middling quality, inclining to a loamy sand.

It appears to me that all the above settlers will succeed very well, excepting two at Prospect Hill—John Silverthorn, who employs his time chiefly in working for the other settlers, and Thos. Martin, a person entirely ignorant respecting agriculture; and at the Ponds, Thos. Kelly, Jos. Marshall, and Edward Elliott; they are persons who cultivate their ground in a very slovenly manner, and are very dilatory.

The above five named have complained that their ground is bad, and will produce nothing. I have carefully examined into it, and I find it to proceed from the before-mentioned causes, and not from sterility in the soil.

I likewise have attended to the nature of the ground at the new farms, where I find several hundred, yea, some thousands, of acres of very good land fit for cultivating.

* From Mr. David Burton, Superintendent at Parramatta. He died from a gunshot wound received accidentally while shooting, 13 April, 1792.

1792

19 March.

Report on
the soil.

A good
judge.

Rich light
soil.

Fine loam.

Light loam.

Good
prospects.

No excuse
for failure.

Plenty of
good land.

1792

19 March.

The ground in cultivation at Parramatta is good, inclining to sand, and the greatest part of what is enclosed for cattle is of a middling quality, very fit for pasture.

Proper
working
necessary.

I beg leave to observe here that where the different species of red gum-trees grow the earth has a great portion of oils mixed with it, and unless the ground is properly worked and turned over to meliorate and dissolve those oils, the first crop will come to little account.

DAVID BURTON,

Superintendent.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

20 March.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 20th March, 1792.

Provost-
Marshal for
Norfolk
Island.

I have the honour to inform you that I have appointed Mr. Fane Edge, who has for some time done the duty of Town Adjutant at this place, to be Provost-Marshal of Norfolk Island, until his Majesty's pleasure is known; such an officer being much wanted on the island, and the person I have appointed being properly qualified for that office, I beg leave to recommend him for a confirmation of the appointment, with such salary as may be judged proper.

Registrar
of Vice-
Admiralty
Court.

I have, sir, also appointed Mr. Richard Atkins* to be Registrar of the Vice-Admiralty Court, in the room of the late Commissary Miller, deceased, who held that office, and beg leave to recommend him likewise for confirmation.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO LORD CORNWALLIS.

My Lord, Sydney, New South Wales, 20th March, 1792.

Supplies
from India.

I had the honour of communicating to your Lordship the instructions I had received from his Majesty's Secretary of State for the Home Department, respecting any supplies which might be purchased in India for the use of this colony by Lieutenant Bowen, a naval agent, who sailed from hence in October, 1791, with orders to proceed to Calcutta in the Atlantic, store-ship, for the purpose of purchasing flour and pease for the use of this settlement. Since the departure of that ship the Pitt has arrived at this port, and after landing her cargo was to have gone to Madrass and Bombay on the owners' account; but her commander having offered to proceed first to Calcutta, at the risk and expence of the owners of the ship, in order to take his chance of being hired by Messrs. Lambert, Ross, and Biddulph, to bring provisions to this settlement if, unfortunately, any accident should have happened to the Atlantic in her passage from hence, I have availed myself of that offer, and have the honour to inclose your Lordship a copy of my former letter, and the instructions given the agent for procuring the necessary quantity of provisions.

Instructions
for the
agent.

A. PHILLIP.

* Afterwards Judge-Advocate.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO MESSRS. LAMBERT, ROSS, AND BIDDULPH.

1792

Gentlemen, Sydney, New South Wales, 20th March, 1792.

20 March.

I wrote you by the Atlantic, store-ship, which sailed from hence the 26th of last October, under the orders of the Naval Agent, Lieutenant Richard Bowen, who was instructed to apply to you on his arrival at Calcutta for the provisions which were wanted for the use of this colony, the quantity and quality of which were pointed out in his instructions, copies of which, as well as of my former letter, are enclosed.

Provisions wanted.

Since the Atlantic sailed the Pitt has arrived here, and having landed her cargo was to have proceeded, on the account of her owners, to Madrass and Bombay; but her commander having offered to proceed first to Calcutta, in order to offer the ship for the purpose of bringing the provisions to this settlement which have been ordered by the Atlantic, if that ship should unfortunately have met with any accident in her passage from hence, which may have prevented her arrival at Calcutta, I have availed myself of that offer; but in that case would wish to receive the provisions wanted, on the conditions proposed by you in a letter to Lord Sydney, dated from Calcutta, the 19th of August, 1790, that is at a stipulated price, the freight and risk being on your account.

Conditions.

You will see by what I have already said, that no kind of engagement or promise has been made which any ways binds you to give the preference to the Pitt, if unfortunately the Atlantic has not arrived, but in which case I have to request that no time may be lost in forwarding the supplies which have been demanded, and if the Atlantic has left Calcutta, unless you have received directions from England for sending provisions to this settlement, nothing more is immediately wanted, but what has been ordered by the Atlantic, as I presume further supplies will be sent from Europe.

No time to be lost.

A. PHILLIP.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO CAPTAIN HUNTER.

Sir,

22nd March, 1792.

22 March.

I received on the 26th of June last your letter of the 27th of August preceding, giving an account of the loss of his Majesty's ship Sirius, late under your command at Norfolk Island, and of your proceedings in consequence thereof, and I am to acquaint you that I lost no time in communicating the same to my Lords Commrs of the Adm'y.

The Sirius

I am, &c.,

P.S.

THE REV. R. JOHNSON TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Extracts from Letter from the Rev. Richard Johnson, dated Port Jackson, March 23rd, 1792.

22 March.

As to my habitation I am very well satisfied; it is pretty commodious and convenient—few better provided for in this

The Chaplain's house.

1792

23 March.

Dear
provisions.

respect in the colony than myself. My principal family complaint is, that I cannot better provide for them. We are now eight in number, and Mrs. J. at this time far gone with child. Our allowance at present is scanty, and is likely to be still less. 'Tis seldom we can get a fresh meal, and then in general it is at a dear rate. Fresh pork, one shilling per lb. ; a moderate size fowl, three, four, or five shillings, and sometimes more ; Indian corn, ten shillings a bushel. Everything else, whether from on ship or on shore, in the same proportion. Have frequently asked to have the privilege of a man to shoot for me now and then ; this favour I never have been granted.

No labour.

Upon the arrival of the *Juliana* in June, 1780 [1790], his Excellency told me that four hundred acres were to be measured out as church ground. This was measured out at that time, but to this day he has not been able to let me have any help to cultivate it, neither has there been so much as a tree fallen upon it. I cannot suppose Government meant for me to use axe or spade myself, but this I have done day after day ; otherwise, bad as my situation is, it would have been still worse. I mention this circumstance, being aware that the sound of four hundred acres will appear great. But what, sir, are four hundred or four thousand acres full of large green trees, unless some convicts be allowed to cultivate it ?

Duties of
Chaplain.

I did not come out here as an overseer or as a farmer. I have other things more, much more important, to attend to. My duty as a clergyman fully takes up all my time. Neither will my constitution admit of it—this is much impaired since I came into this country, and at this very time I feel such rheumatic pains and weakness that I can scarcely go through the duties of my office. This brings me to mention another circumstance. I have to perform divine service at three different places, vizt., at Sydney, Parramatta, and at a settlement about three miles to the westward of Parramatta, and at never a one of these three places is

No places of
worship.

there to this day any place of worship erected, nor so much as talked of. The last time I preached at Sydney was in the open air. On the 11th instant we could not have service at all, because of the rain. Next Sunday, if the weather will permit,

An old boat-
house.

we shall assemble in an old boat-house close by the water-side, the sides and ends quite open. I declare to you it is a place not fit or safe for a stable or a cow-house, and I declare further, owing to the violent pain I this moment, and have all this day felt in my temples, &c., I dread Sunday coming, aware of the danger and the consequences I have to expect. By the grace of God, however, I am resolved to go on in the discharge of my duty till I can hold out no longer, and then I must give up and leave this miserable people to spend their Sabbaths in a manner wholly like heathens.

Last spring there was the foundation of a church laid at Parramatta; before it was finished it was converted into a jail or a lock-up house, and now it is converted into a granary. I have had this place to perform divine service in for several Sundays; but now are again turned out, and must again turn field-preacher there also. I go up to Parramatta as usual once a fortnight—the distance by water about fourteen miles. Generally go up on the Saturday—sometimes four, five, six hours upon the water. On Sunday morning early I now ride up to the new settlement; preach in the open air about seven o'clock to about six hundred convicts; at ten and four in the afternoon I preach at Parramatta. I fear, however, I shall not be able to continue this much longer, especially as the winter is now approaching, unless some places be erected for the purpose. Besides my public duty I have to visit the sick, which at present both at Sydney and at Parramatta are a great many; numbers dying every day. Last month above sixty died, and I fear before this expires there will be again near the same number.

1792

23 March.

A field-preacher.

Buildings necessary.

The sick and dying.

In different letters which I have lately received, my friends seem to intimate that I meant to return home soon. I know not for what reason they have formed such conjectures. I do not know that I have ever given them any reason to think so. I have not so much as thought of returning, at least as yet; but this I must be free to tell you, that if things are not made more comfortable for me in those matters that I have above complained of, I shall certainly think it my duty to write home to be relieved, as I am pretty well aware I cannot stand it many years longer, as things are at present conducted.

A change indispensable.

GENERAL RETURN, New South Wales Corps, March 26th, 1792.

26 March.

	Major.	Captains.	Lieutenants	Ensigns.	Chaplain.	Adjutant.	Qr.-master.	Surgeon.	Mate.	Serjeants.	Corporals.	Drummers.	Privates.
Present—													
Fit for duty ..	1	2	1	3	..	1	1	..	1	12	0	6	154
Unfit for duty ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
At Norfolk Island—													
Fit for duty ..	..	1	3	..	1	..	..	..	..	3	3	2	67
Unfit for duty ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
At Parramatta—													
Fit for duty ..	..	1	1	1	..	..	..	1	..	3	3	2	57
	1	4	5	4	1	1	1	1	1	18	15	10	278

1792

RETURN of New South Wales Corps, March 26th, 1792.

26 March.

	Present.		At Norfolk Island.		At Parramatta.
	Fit for duty.	Unfit for duty.	Fit for duty.	Unfit for duty.	
Major-Commandant—					
Francis Grose	1	..	..	..	..
Captains—					
Nicholas Nepean .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1
William Hill	1	..	..	..	..
William Paterson .. .. .	..	..	1	..	..
Joseph Foveaux	1	..	..	..	..
Lieutenants—					
John McArthur	1	..	..	..	..
John Townson .. .. .	..	..	1	..	..
Edward Abbott .. .. .	..	..	1	..	..
William Beckwith .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1
John Thomas Prentice .. .. .	..	..	1	..	..
Lieutenant and Adjutant—					
Thomas Rowley	1	..	..	..	..
Ensigns—					
William Cummings .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1
John Clephan	1	..	..	..	..
John Piper	1	..	..	..	..
Neil McKellar	1	..	..	..	..
Chaplain—					
James Bain .. .. .	..	..	1	..	..
Quarter-master—					
Thomas Laycock	1	..	..	..	..
Surgeon—					
John Harris .. .. .	..	..	..	..	1
Surgeon's Mate—					
Edward Laing	1	..	..	..	..
	10	..	5	..	4

A. PHILLIP.

LAMBERT ROSS AND CO. TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

28 March.

Sir,

Calcutta, 28th March, 1792.

Stores for
New South
Wales.

His Excellency Governor Phillip having thought proper in conformity to the recommendation of his Majesty's ministers, to send the Atlantic, store-ship, to this place, for a supply of provisions for the colony of New South Wales, under the direction of Lieut. Richd. Bowen of his Majesty's navy, as naval agent, and his Excellency having been pleased to address the said ship to us and Mr. Robert Biddulph, in consequence of our joint letter and proposals to his Majesty's ministers for the Home Department, dated August, 1790,* which we have been given to understand had been approved of. We now presume to address you, sir, upon the subject, tho' we doubt not but Lieut. Bowen hath fully informed his Majesty's ministers on the steps which have been taken for carrying into effect the instructions and orders of his Excellency Governor Phillip. We shall beg leave, therefore, briefly to state that on the arrival of Lieut. Bowen in the

* Not available.

Atlantic, and being honoured with the commands of his Excellency Governor Phillip, we communicated with Mr. Biddulph on the subject (whose connection with us had for some time before ceased) and were concerting measures for carrying them into effect, when we received a letter from Lieut. Bowen informing us that his Majesty's ministers had instructed this Government in what manner the supplies for New South Wales were to be furnished, and that the orders of his Excellency Governor Phillip were, in consequence, superseded.

Immediately upon this the Government here advertised for proposals of contract, to be tendered for supplies of the different species of provisions wanted for the colony; but none having been offered that were thought advisable to be accepted, Lieut. Bowen found himself very unpleasantly situated; for, after applying individually to every mercantile house in town, none of them would undertake to furnish the supplies. Chagrined as we had been by the supersession of that confidence, we flattered ourselves it had been the intention of his Majesty's ministers and of Governor Phillip to repose in us, we yet felt for the disagreeable predicament in which Lieut. Bowen found himself, and for the necessities of the colony; prompted therefore by our zeal for the public good, we made a proposal to Lieut. Bowen, founded upon the principle of those we had the honour of submitting jointly with Mr. Biddulph to the consideration of his Majesty's ministers; adhering as nearly to the spirit of them as circumstances would admit, and undertaking to furnish the supply on the same terms we before offered, tho' from the present enhanced price of grain in consequence of a failure of the crop and existing embargo, we could have little hope of benefiting ourselves in any degree adequate to the trouble and risk we must necessarily run, and would, therefore, have fairly warranted a deviation.

Our proposals having been approved both by this Government and Lieut. Bowen, an agreement was drawn up betwixt Lieut. Bowen, on behalf of his Majesty, and us, under the sanction of the honourable Company's law officers, an attested copy of which Lieut. Bowen transmits to his Majesty's ministers by this opportunity, and to which we beg leave to refer you for the particulars.

The accounts which accompany the agreement will shew that it hath been punctually fulfilled on our part, and we trust in such a manner as will prove highly satisfactory to his Majesty's ministers, and also to his Excellency Governor Phillip, having reason to believe it hath been to Lieut. Bowen, who hath witnessed our strenuous exertions, in not only completing the terms of our engagements, but also in procuring whatever was thought would prove useful and beneficial to the colony, and which, we trust, will recommend us to the future favour of his Majesty's ministers, to be employed in furnishing such supplies as may be hereafter required, and can be supplied from hence.

1792

28 March.

The Indian Government.

Tenders invited.

No offers.

A proposal made.

Agreement.

Efforts of contractors.

1792

28 March.

Advantages
of Indian
trade.Salt pro-
visions.Future
supply.

Salt pork.

Clothing.

Shoes and
blankets.

The advantages which are likely to result to the infant colony at Port Jackson and Norfolk Island, by a frequent communication with this country, and the readiness with which supplies can be sent from hence in the proper season, are too obvious to require being pointed out here, and will we presume induce his Majesty's ministers to depend principally for supplies of grain from hence. But, with a view of rendering this intercourse still more beneficial, we have turned our thoughts towards curing beef and pork, in which we have no doubt whatever of succeeding, provided we meet with encouragement from Government, and that a contract be entered into for a fixed period, and for specific quantities. And we have the honour to enclose a paper, No. 1,* stating the terms we are willing to undertake to furnish the whole supply of the above articles, and also the terms on which we are willing to supply a species of butter made in this country called ghee, and sugar, if it should be thought advisable to substitute that article in lieu, musters of both which we have sent to his Excellency Governor Phillip; the whole to be delivered at New South Wales, free of expense to Government, at the prices therein mentioned. And should our proposals meet the approbation of his Majesty's ministers, we will give such security for the fulfillment of our engagements, as we doubt not will be satisfactory. We beg leave to add that so strongly was Lieut. Bowen impressed with the expediency and practicability of supplying pork from hence, that he ordered about two tons to be sent on the Atlantic by way of experiment; and altho' the season for curing was past, we have little doubt but it will turn out satisfactory. Observing that if a contract is entered into, as we shall have the advantage of the cold season—from November until March—to feed and cure it, there is every reason to suppose we could furnish it of a still better quality; and we presume to think the low rate at which we propose will induce his Majesty's ministers to countenance the undertaking.

The cloathing with which the male and female convicts are supplied, we conceive, might also be furnished from hence at as cheap, if not a cheaper rate, than they are from home, besides having a decided superiority in point of quality, provided the woolen articles could be dispensed with, and from all the accounts we can learn of the climate, there does not appear to exist a necessity for them. We allude particularly to the outside and under jackets, flannel drawers, and worstead stockings. At present we cannot point out what manufacture of this country would best answer as substitutes for the jackets, but we shall inform ourselves on the subject; and in the meantime we have got made musters of shirts and trousers, of the same size as those supplied the convicts, and have sent them to Governor Phillip, together with three muster pairs of shoes and a blanket, mentioning to him the prices

* Not available.

we can supply them for, and which we have the honour also to state to you in a separate paper, number 2,* accompanied with patterns of the cloths and blanket.

On the subject of grain, we have further to observe that in the event of our being honoured with the commands of his Majesty's ministers, or the Governor of New South Wales for the time-being, to furnish supplies (meaning to adhere to the prices first proposed) we must stipulate that the following proportions of the different species be demanded, vizt. :—

Soogee, in lieu of flour.....	1
Wheat	2
Peas or Dhol	3
Rice	5

And at the same time we would beg leave to recommend that flour or soogee should be rejected altogether, and an increased proportion of wheat substituted in lieu thereof, it being the universal practice throughout India to export the wheat only which is found to be fresher, and always makes better bread than flour that has been long kept. In the present instance (tho' at an expence of nearly 50 p. cent. upon the price) we have furnished soogee in lieu of flour, the latter not having been approved of by Lieut. Bowen. And it is for this reason we are under the necessity of stipulating the proportions, for otherwise we cannot possibly afford to supply soogee in the lieu of flour unless the price is advanced to 26s. p. cwt. And this points out more strongly the expediency of sending wheat, and rejecting flour or soogee altogether, and the peas and rice to be supplied in the proportions, and at the prices, as before mentioned. But if two-thirds flour or soogee is demanded, and one-third peas (as his Excellency Governor Phillip wished), the former cannot be supplied for less than 26s. p. cwt., nor the latter at less than 16s.

And we beg leave further to recommend that we may be furnished with orders for the full supply of grain wanted in time to be able to dispatch the same from hence by the beginning of the month of December, all grain being in the greatest perfection about that period, and it being the most favourable season for ships to make a quick passage down the Bay of Bengal.

For the payment of such supplies as may be furnished by us, we beg leave to propose that we should have a credit upon this Government, to be paid at the exchange of one shilling and elevenpence per current rupee, or be authorised to draw bills on the Right Honble. the Lords Commissioners of his Majesty's Treasury at the usual date of ninety days' sight, under the sanction of the Governor-General in Council, by way of imprest (when they are satisfied certain proportions of the supplies are actually shipped) and for the balance, when the supplies are completed, accompanied by authenticated accounts of the whole.

* Not available.

1792

28 March.

Resources
of India.

We must now crave your excuse, sir, for having trespassed so long upon your time, which must necessarily be wholly occupied by the weighty affairs of state, and other momentous concerns; but conceiving it to be of great importance, as well to the interests of the nation as to the infant colony settled in the southern hemisphere, that a competent idea should be formed of the capacity of this country to furnish the necessary supplies that may be required, to foster them until they are in a condition and capable of supporting themselves, we have been induced to enter thus largely into detail upon the subject; and we presume to assure you, sir, that no private individuals in this country have it more in their power, or can better execute the orders of Government in sending supplies from hence to the new colony.

We have, &c.,

LAMBERT, ROSS, & Co.

LAMBERT, ROSS AND CO. TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Calcutta, 28th March, 1792.

We have the honour to acknowledge the receipt of your Excellency's letter, dated the 24th October, 1791, addressed to Lambert & Ross and Robt. Biddulph, which was delivered to us by Lieut. Richard Bowen on the 3d. of last month.

Supplies for
New South
Wales.

His Majesty's ministers having done us the honour to acquaint you with the proposals we made to them jointly with Mr. Biddulph in October, 1790, for supplying New South Wales from hence with different articles of provision, and in consequence thereof you have been pleased to address us on the subject, we signified to Mr. Bowen our readiness to undertake the providing of the supplies as far as we could, and at the same time acquainted this Government of the application made to us; but Lord Cornwallis, expecting a vessel to arrive here from the colony, having directed that the supplies should be provided by publick contract, an advertisement was issued by Government for proposals, but none were offered such as could be accepted.

Proposals
accepted.

Mr. Biddulph being at that time on the point of departing for Europe, declined having any further concern in the business. We therefore proposed to Mr. Bowen to provide a cargo as nearly as possible on the same terms offered by Lambert & Ross and Mr. Biddulph to his Majesty's ministers to land the different articles at New South Wales, which he submitted to the supreme board, and our proposals having met with their approbation, he determined on accepting them.

Cargo.

We have accordingly provided a cargo agreeable to an invoice, &c., delivered to Mr. Bowen, who carries with him a copy of an agreement entered into betwixt us, and of a bond executed by us for the due performance of our engagements which have been approved of by the hon'ble Company's Council here, as we trust they will by your Excellency.

Mr. Bowen will fully explain to your Excellency the impossibility of procuring any considerable quantity of flour or soogee without timely notice, as it has never been an article of exportation from hence, and consequently there is very little to be had in the market ; and we regret that it has not been in our power to send a greater proportion of soogee, which we have preferred sending to flour, conceiving that it will keep better, and at the same time better answer the purpose for which it is required.

1792

28 March.

Flour
scarce.

The other articles of wheat, rice dholl, and pease are always to be had in abundance, tho' from the failure of the crops lately the price of them has been very much enhanced.

Grain
abundant.

Encouraged with the hopes that these supplies may arrive at New South Wales in good condition, and that the terms on which we have furnished them may be considered reasonable, we flatter ourselves that you may be induced to recommend to his Majesty's ministers that the colony should in future be supplied from hence with all kinds of grain ; and with that expectation we have renewed our proposals to his Majesty's ministers, extending them to all kinds of supplies which may be required, and inclosed we take the liberty of sending your Excellency a copy of our letter on the subject to the Secretary of State for the Home Department, and we presume to hope that you may be inclined to recommend it to their attention.

Future
supplies

We beg leave to observe to your Excellency that we have provided the supplies now sent under every disadvantage, both on account of the high price of grain owing to the failure of the crops, and the consequent embargo, as well as on account of the season of the year, when no new grain is to be had.

Disadvan-
tages.

Under these circumstances, it will appear evident to your Excellency that if a contract was entered into for any length of time, we should have the advantage of providing every article of supply at their proper seasons, and by that means securing everything of the best quality, whereas in the present instance we were obliged to take the best we could get.

Long con-
tract.

At the request of Mr. Bowen, we have sent by way of experiment about two tons of pork cured here, which, we doubt not, will prove to be very good, altho' it has been prepared at an unfavourable season, when the weather was getting hot.

Salt pork.

We have also sent samples of ghee, which we should conceive would be a good substitute for butter, and of sugar and molasses, the prices of which you will see stated in the papers accompanying our letter to the Secretary of State : as also of the different articles of cloathing, musters of which, and of different manufactures of cloth of this country, we have likewise the honour to send to your Excellency.

Samples of
ghee, sugar,
and
molasses.

We have, &c.,

LAMBERT, ROSS, & CO.

1792

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

23 March.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 28th March, 1792.

Alleged
pillage of
stores.

Major Grose having informed me that while the Pitt lay at the Cape of Good Hope he was told by Mr. David Wather, late captain's clerk of the Sirius, that the master of the snow Waak-samheyd, on board of which he was then a passenger, declared to him that he could at any time have purchased whatever he wanted from the stores at Port Jackson, during his stay there, from those who were entrusted with them, or who had the issuing them, producing at the same time some articles which he said he procured from the stores; and as two of those people, since her departure, have left the settlement, their times being expired, I have sub-joined their names, and the places where they were convicted, in order that they may be taken up, and such enquiry made as may discover if any person now employed at the stores was concerned with them in such nefarious practices.

Officers have
said nothing.

I have not received any information from Captain Hunter or any other officer of the ship on this head, which I rather wonder at, as it must occur to every one that such an evil might exist for a long time undiscovered, and could not be too soon pointed out.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

William Hubbard, tried at Kingston, 24th of March, 1784, and was employed here in writing under the Commissary. John Parker, tried at the sessions for Middlesex, 21st April, 1784, and was, from his landing here in 1788, employed in issuing stores.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

29 March.

Sir, Sydney, March 29th, 1792.

Stores taken
for King's
ships.

I have had the pleasure of receiving yours by the Pitt, dated 12th of March, '91, informing me that the necessary steps would be taken to replace the provisions and stores intended for this settlement which Captain Blankett had caused to be appropriated to the supply of his Majesty's ships Leopard and Thames, and for furnishing this colony with the necessary supplies of provisions.

Awaiting
supplies.

I am now, sir, anxiously waiting the arrival of those supplies and what I expect by the Atlantic from Calcutta, for very little labour is to be got from men who are not amply supplied with food; still less when those men have not been used to regular labour, and are worn out by want and long confinement before they are landed in this country. At present the hours of labour for those who are employed in clearing and cultivating the ground are only from five till nine in the morning, and from four till half-past five in the afternoon. You will, sir, readily conceive that the work cannot be very great which men will perform in the above time, who are complaining of hunger when called forth to labour.

Hunger.

What wheat was grown last year has been issued to the people ; what has been raised this year is kept for seed, from five to six hundred bushels. It is supposed that the maize grown this year will be about five thousand bushels when housed ; but a very great quantity has been stolen. What is not necessary for seed will be issued to the people, so that if no accident happens to the Atlantic, or the ships expected from England, the present ration, which is 5 lb. of flour and 4 lb of pork for a man for seven days, will not be lessened, as the maize will, for a time, supply the want of flour ; and any apprehensions of wanting bread in this colony will be done away very soon, after a proper person to superintend the convicts employed in agriculture and a few settlers arrive. But no idea can be formed as to the time in which supplies of salt provisions will be no longer necessary ; we have very little public live stock in the settlement, and little is to be expected from the *Dædalus*, nor that little for a twelvemonth to come, and it is more than probable that the *Dædalus* will have to return to the Sandwich Islands ; nor do I understand that any black cattle are to expected, and which I presume would be much less expence to Government if brought from the Cape of Good Hope in a forty or fifty gun ship properly fitted for such a service than if procured by any other means.

The Commissary's return of the provisions remaining in store (in which what has been received from the Pitt and what has been purchased from the commander of that ship are included) and of the number of people in the colony is inclosed in my letter to Mr. Secretary Dundas, and by which it will appear that our numbers here and at Norfolk Island amount to three thousand two hundred and seventy-seven males, six hundred and ninety-one females, and two hundred and twenty-four children. A great quantity of provisions are consumed daily by such a number of people, and nine or twelve months' provisions brought by the transports for the three or four hundred convicts they are bringing out last but a short time when divided amongst such numbers.

The beef and pork brought out in the Pitt is only sufficient to last the colony forty days.

When the stores may permit the issuing the established ration, the weekly expence, according to our present numbers, will be : of flour, 30,560 lb. ; of beef and pork, 21,010 lb. ; of pease, 179 bushels ; and of butter, 1,432 lb ; and our numbers will be increasing. Of the last two articles, no supply has been received since the settlement has been made, except the small quantity sent out for the *Sirius*. Butter may be dispens'd with ; but for people who live the year round on salt provisions pease are a very necessary article, and they make a very considerable part of the established ration.

1792

29 March.

Wheat and
maize
harvest.Little live
stock.Provisions
in store.Numbers of
the people.The food
received is
soon con-
sumed.Forty days'
beef and
pork.The estab-
lished
ration."

1792

29 March.

It is impossible to say what quantity of flour and pease may be brought in the Atlantic. I should hope full sufficient to serve the colony seven months.

Dependence
of the
colony.

For salt provisions, I depend intirely on the necessary supplies being sent from England, and as I am informed by the letters which I have received by the Pitt that the colony will be furnished with such further supplies as we may be supposed to stand in need of, and which may be expected very shortly to arrive, I shall not send to India or elsewhere for any further supplies, unless I should receive directions for that purpose. If any supplies have been sent from Calcutta, and which Mr. Secretary Dundas supposes by his letter, the ship must have met with some accident; and from the distance this settlement is from any relief, and not being at present able to support its inhabitants, the distress which must follow the loss of a store-ship can only be guarded against by having a certain quantity of provisions in store.

Narrow
escape of
transports.

After the loss of the *Guardian*, we were very near losing the greatest part of what provisions have been received since that time. The *Lady Juliana* in standing into the harbour with a strong southerly wind got so close to the North Head that nothing saved that ship but the set of the tide; and the *Justinian* unexpectedly saw the land under her lee, in a gale of wind, and was obliged to anchor on the coast, very fortunately so near the rocks that the return of the sea prevented her riding any great strain on her cable. Had those two ships been lost, the colony must have suffered very severely indeed.

The people
alarmed.

I hope that the Atlantic, and the ship which was to follow the Pitt, will arrive safe, for people are alarmed at thinking that if a single ship fails they have no resource; and when the length of time this settlement has been made, and its being still dependant on the mother country for the necessaries of life, are adverted to, I hope the causes will be recollected; and amongst others, that it has been on a reduced ration since November, '89; rice was served for a short time to make up for a deficiency of other articles, but

Bad rice.

it was rice which was too bad to have been issued but in a case of necessity. I should not, sir, return to the subject, but that the settlement does not get forward, as it otherwise would do, and the necessity of continuing to send out provisions is likely to be continued to a much greater length of time than would otherwise be necessary. I am obliged to send the Pitt to Norfolk Island, where they must have been on a very short ration for some time; and was I to send that ship to procure supplies, either from India or the Cape, after she leaves the island, we should not receive them before November.

Short ration
at Norfolk
Island.

Whale
fishing.

The information given in my former letters respecting the prospect there was of establishing a spermacetic whale fishery on this coast was drawn from the accounts I received of the great

number of fish which had been seen by two of the whalers. None of those ships remained out but for a very short time; but when the *Britannia* sailed, the master of that vessel told me he intended to remain three months on the coast, in order to give it a fair trial, that he had no doubt of seeing fish, but feared the currents. From some information which I have received since that ship sailed, I fear that the fur trade on the north-west coast of America and the trade amongst the islands is too great an object to those who are employed in the fishery ever to admit their giving this coast a fair trial, and apprehend that all the ships have left it. Should a fishery ever be established on this coast, and which I should suppose likely to answer as well as the one which has been established many years in the Brazil (at *Sta Catharina* and *Rio de Janeiro*), I think it would be found to answer best if carried on in small vessels, as it is from *Rio de Janeiro*; and with respect to the currents, I believe they are neither more frequent nor stronger than what they are on the Brazil coast. I have, &c.,

1792

29 March.

The coast to have a fair trial.

Small vessels best.

A. PHILLIP.

Copies of my letters by the Pitt, to Earl Cornwallis and to Messrs. Lambert & Co., are inclosed.*

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

Sir,

Sydney, March 31st, 1792.

31 March.

I have the honour to inclose a triplicate of my letter to Lord Grenville†; and as my bad state of health continues, without any hopes of a change for the better, have to request that you, sir, will move his Majesty to be graciously pleased to grant my request, if it has not been complied with before the receipt of this letter.

Phillip renews his request for leave.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

MAJOR GROSE TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.‡

My Dear Friend,

Sydney, 2 April, 1792.

2 April.

I am at last, thank God, safely landed with my family at this place, and, to my great astonishment, instead of the rock I expected to see I find myself surrounded with gardens that flourish and produce fruit of every description. Vegetables are here in great abundance, and I live in as good a house as I wish for. I am given the farm of my predecessor,§ which produces a sufficiency to supply my family with everything I have occasion for. In short, all that is wanting to put this colony in an independent state is one ship freighted with corn and black cattle. Was that but done, all difficulties would be over.

A prolific country.

Corn and cattle wanted.

Everybody at Home seems to have an unfavourable opinion of this place, and I am certain no one could possibly be more prejudiced against it than myself. I am glad to have it in my power to change my opinion, and be able to assure you that since I have

* Ante, pp. 600, 601.

† Ante, p. 559.

‡ A private letter.

§ Major Ross.

1792
2 April.
Favourable impressions.

left England I have seen no place I like better than this, for the country neither about Rio de Janeiro or the Cape of Good Hope is in the state of cultivation the land is here; and where it is cultivated I do not think, from the little observations I have made, that it seems to yield such abundant crops.

Seeds.

Your brother* and myself continue in good health; he, of course, writes to you by this ship. We have collected for our friend, Mr. McHay, several seeds, the which are well dried. I have given them to the care of Captain Manning†; they are packed in one large parcel, and sealed with the seal of the corps. Whenever they are delivered to you, I have promised Captain Manning that you should give him the half of them. I thought this the most likely means of conveyance to you, and I hope they will please the person they are sent for. For fear of accidents, I shall collect some more for him, which shall be sent by the next ship.

I believe I have nothing further to say, excepting to request you to remember me to Mr. Merry Windus, Mr. George, and the rest of my friends.

I am, &c.,

F. GROSE.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

5 April.

Sir,

Sydney, 5th April, 1792.

Auxiliary
company of
the New
South Wales
Corps.

In my letter of the 7th of November, 1791, to Lord Grenville, I mentioned that the raising of the company to be annexed to the New South Wales Corps had not been effected. I have now, sir, the honour to inform you that most of those marines who were selected to remain until a sufficient force arrived for the service of this country have offered to enlist and form a company annexed to the New South Wales Corps, under the command of Captain-Lieutenant George Johnston, whom I have nominated to the command of the company, conformable to his Majesty's pleasure signified to me by Lord Grenville, and which officer was intended to have been nominated to the command of the company in the first instance, if it had been then raised.

Picked men.

The men who will form the majority of this company are men who were picked from the detachment of marines as good soldiers, and I beg leave to assure you, sir, that the officer whom I have nominated to the command of the company is in every respect deserving of the bounty which his Majesty has been graciously pleased to authorize me to bestow.

The officers.

The lieutenantancy and ensigncy will of course remain vacant until officers are appointed from England, and Major Grose has requested that I wd recommend the eldest ensign, William Cummings, for the lieutenantancy, and Quarter-master Thomas Laycock, as an officer of merit, for the vacant ensigncy.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

* Captain Nicholas Nepean.

† In command of the Pitt.

G. MATCHAM, ESQ., TO MAURICE NELSON, ESQ.

1792

Dear Sir, Ringwood, Hants, April 11th, 1792. 11 April.

I should have wrote you sooner, but I have been very much indispos'd. Whatever settlers go out on my part will be farmers, but as there is a first expence, and an annual expence afterwards, the number must be determin'd by the quantity of land recommend'd to be granted me, for the recommendation I consider as tantamount to the grant, and shall, therefore, be perfectly satisfied with a letter from Mr. Dundas. I hope Mr. Dundas will agree with me that twelve thousand acres are the least that can make it an object to me, but as it would be unreasonable to expect all these on the banks of the river leading from Rose Hill to the sea, I only request about two hundred acres on any part of the banks, and the rest in a straight line towards Broken Bay, where we are confident there can at present be no settlers establis'd. If Government think proper I am very ready to purchase the land.

Proposals for settlement.

12,000 acres wanted.

A land buyer.

I mention'd some time since my intention to send out a younger son should the settlement continue to be foster'd by our Government. You thought my scheme visionary,* but I augur of my son's future sentiments by my own feelings. I had much rather enjoy the abundance of a country life under a fine sky in a distant part of the British Government than hazard the precarious profession of a merchant in the city, and an attachment to our Empire and Government has alone prevented me from buying land in the new settlement of Kentucky. I purpose sending my son, well educated, with three or four thousand pounds or more, which in New Holland will enable him to become a considerable and an useful man. I afford him the means, and must, of course, leave him to use them. You see the cause of my earnestness to know whether I can have a grant to answer my expence.

A settler with means.

Pray let me know the particulars in respect to the extent. Mr. King† behav'd with infinite civility to me, but he could not specify the quantity of land to be granted. If you will be so good as to let me know as soon as possible, I will prepare the people and send you their names, &c.

Others prepared to go.

I repeat, should Government be dispos'd to sell the land, or to charge a quit rent on it, I am ready to comply with either stipulation. I shall be anxious to hear from you soon. I am, &c.,

G. MATCHAM.

LIEUTENANT BALL TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

His Majesty's armed tender Supply,

Plymouth, April 21st, 1792. 21 April.

I beg to inform you of my arrival at this port from Port Jackson, for the information of my Lords Commissioners of the

* Nelson's letter to Matcham is not amongst the transcriptions.

† Mr. John King, Under Secretary for the Home Department, during the absence of Mr. Nepean. There is nothing to show what action was taken.

1792

21 April.

Admiralty, with his Maj's armed tender Supply under my command, which place I left on the 27th of Nov., 1791, as will appear from the inclose journal.

Short
passage.

I have the pleasure to observe to there Lordships our very extraordinary and very short passage from that.

St. Catherine's.

There Lordships will likewise see by the inclosed of my putting into St. Catherine's (for refreshments) and that my stay there was only ten days, and which place I left on the 1st of Feby., 1792.

The officers and ship's company are all well. I hope to make my excuse to there Lordships for not inclosing a weekly account, as I gave two to Admiral Corby.

I have, &c.,

H. L. BALL.

LIEUTENANT BRADLEY* TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Monday, 23d April, 1792,

23 April.

Sir,

Waaksamheyd, Portsmouth Harbour.

Survey of
Norfolk
Island

Having had an opportunity of making a more accurate survey of Norfolk Island during my stay there after the ship was cast away, I am desired by Governor Phillip to transmit the same for their Lordships' information, which I have done by Lieutenant Edgar, who is charged with the dispatches from New South Wales. I beg leave to assure their Lordships that it would be highly flattering to me could I be thought useful in any way to that colony, and am with the greatest respect, &c.,

WM. BRADLEY,

1 Lieut. of his Majesty's late ship Sirius.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO CAPTAIN HUNTER.

Sir,

23rd April, 1792.

La Perouse.

Mr. Aust, secretary to Lord Grenville, one of his Maj's Principal Secretaries of State, having in his letter of the 18th inst. transmitted to my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'y a copy of a paper received from Lord Gower, his Maj.'s ambassador at the Court of France, relative to Monsr. de la Peyrouse, I am commanded by their Lordships to send you herewith the said paper,† and to desire you will let me know whether there is any foundation for the report therein contain'd, or any other information upon the subject you may be in possession of, in order that it may be transmitted to Lord Grenville.

I am, &c.,

P.S.

CAPTAIN HUNTER TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Waaksamheyd, transport,

23 April.

Sir,

Portsmouth, 23rd April, 1792.

You will be pleased to inform their Lordships‡ that upon my arrival from Norfolk Island at Port Jackson (26th February,

* First Lieutenant of the Sirius.

‡ The Lords of the Admiralty.

† This paper is not available.

1791) I found that Governor Phillip had contracted with the master of a Dutch snow, which had arrived at that port from Batavia with a cargo of provisions purchased there for the use of the settlement, for a passage to England for the remaining officers and company of his Majestie's late ship the *Sirius*, under my command, in consequence of which agreement I was directed to embark, and we sail'd from Port Jackson on the 27th March, virtuell'd for sixteen weeks, and with fifty tons of water on board. We were, in all, on board 123 people, including those belonging to the vessel. The master was directed, in his last instructions, to call at Norfolk Island, and there to receive on board the dispatches of Lieutenant-Governor Ross; but from the prevalence of easterly winds he was unable to execute that part of his orders. We steer'd to the northward, and made New Caledonia 23rd April, and passed to the westward of it, as the master did not feel himself qualified to navigate a ship in these unknown seas. He had, upon our leaving Port Jackson, requested my assistance, which he had. In sailing to the northward we fell in with several islands and shoals, the situations of which we determin'd, and which, as it is my intention, if their Lordships will permit me, to lay a short account of this northern passage before the Board*, those discoveries will be particularly mention'd. No ship that I have heard of having sail'd between New Britain and New Ireland since that passage was discovered by Captain Carteret in his Maj. sloop *Swallow*, I was the more desirous to take that rout from his having found two very accessible harbours in New Ireland, where we hoped to get a supply of water; for the particulars of our passage thro' that chanel I must refer their Lordships to the narrative, which shall be delivered as soon as I can reach town; it will therefore be unnecessary to trouble their Lordships farther at present than to say that we passed thro' the Strait of Macassar, and arrived at Batavia on the 27th of September, after a most tedious and distressing passage of twenty-six weeks, during a great part of which time we had been upon a very small ration of provision. We buried on the passage, Lt. George William Maxwell and one seaman of the *Sirius*, with one belonging to the snow. My transactions at Batavia will be fully seen in the narrative. I left that place on the 20th October, and arrived at the Cape on the 17th December, but being unable to reach the proper anchorage, I was on the 20th driven to sea again, with the loss of two anchors and cables. On the 22nd we again reach'd the bay, with a signal of distress flying, and thro' the exertions of Capt. Bligh who was there in H.M. ship *Providence*, we were got into safety, and receiv'd anchors and cables from the shore. My people being very sickly, the effects of that destructive place Batavia, their slow progress in recovery detained me at the Cape longer than I intended to have staid. I sailed from Table Bay 18th January, but

1792

23 April.

A Dutch vessel chartered.

The crew of the *Sirius* on board.

Unable to reach Norfolk Island.

The northern passage.

New Ireland.

A distressing passage.

Troubles at the Cape.

The Batavian fever.

* The Navy Board.

1792

23 April.

Court-
martial on
the loss of
the Sirius.

left five sick behind me, anchored at St. Helena 4th February, to complete our water, left that island the 13th, and arriv'd here late last night. I have now, sir, to request that you will be pleas'd to move their Lordships for an order, that the usual court-martial be assembled to enquire into cause of the loss of his Majestie's late ship the Sirius*, as soon as it may be convenient to their Lordships.

I am, &c.,

JNO. HUNTER.

P.S.—Enclos'd I have sent for their Lordships' perusal a copy of the order from C. [Captain] Phillip, by which I embarked in this transport.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO CAPTAIN HUNTER.

24 April.

Sir,

24th April, 1792.

The Sirius.

I have received your letter of yesterday's date, giving an account of your arrival at Portsmouth with the remaining officers and company of his Majesty's late ship the Sirius in the Waaksamheyd, Dutch transport, of your proceedings during the voyage, and enclosing copy of the order given you by Governor Phillip for your return to England in the said transport; and I have communicated the same to my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'y.

Court
martial.

Their Lordships command me to acquaint you that the order for assembling a court-martial to enquire into the loss of the Sirius was sent to Vice-Admiral Roddam, commander-in-chief of his Majesty's ships at Portsmouth, by this last post. I am, &c.,

P.S.

CAPTAIN HUNTER TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Waaksamheyd, transport,

Sir,

Portsmouth, April 24th, 1792.

Wreck of the
Sandwich.

Be pleas'd to inform their Lordships that soon after my arrival at the Cape of Good Hope the master of an English ship employed on the southern whale fishery made application to me to be relieved from the burthen of a ship's company whom he had taken up at Delagoa Bay in very great distress from shipwreck. The wrecked ship belong'd to the port of London, was called the Sandwich, and owned by Saml. Enderby and Sons, merchants there. The master of the unfortunate ship informed me that a certain number of his men were in a very deplorable situation from sickness, and that he was at a loss what to do with them. The only assistance which in my situation I cou'd give this poor man in his distress was, that as there were several English whalers in the bay, to desire the men in health might distribute themselves amongst those ships if they cou'd receive them, such as remained I wou'd take with me to England, and with respect

* A court-martial was held in due course. According to the Naval Chronicle, vol. vi, p. 365, "Captain Hunter, his officers and crew, were honourably acquitted."

to the sick, I gave an order to Mr. P. J. De Wit of that place to provide them with quarters and food and such other assistance as their miserable condition might require, and that immediately on their recovery they should be embark'd in the first English ship which might touch at the Cape, and cou'd receive them on board either as a part of their crew or for a passage to England.

1792

24 April.

Assistance given.

I must farther beg leave to mention to their Lordships, that having received information that there were a few British seamen confin'd in the prison of the Cape Town, who had been taken up by the Fiscal's people without having been accus'd of the commission of any crime whatever, and as I thought this method of smuggling his Majesty's subjects from the service of their country was unjustifiable, and highly oppressive to the individual, I wrote a letter to the Lieut.-Governor who commanded at that time, of which the following is a copy:—

Seamen in prison.

“Sir,—I am inform'd that there are several British seamen confin'd in the prison of this town, and that they were taken up and secur'd by order of the Fiscal without having trespassed against the peace, or in any other way offended the establish'd rules and regulations of the settlement; that unless either Capt. Elphinstone (who was in the bay in the Swan), or me will pay the debt which has been incur'd by this extraordinary and unjustifiable imprisonment, it is intended the men shall be sent to Batavia. This debt, I must beg leave to observe to you, sir, is not a debt voluntarily contracted by the men themselves; it is a debt forced upon them, and appears design'd as a pretext for the intention of sending them to Batavia. I have to request that you will be pleas'd to give directions that the men be immediately set at liberty, in order that they may have it in their power to provide for themselves in case his Maj.'s ship in this road or the transport I am embark'd in shall have no occasion for them. I am much inclined to think, sir, that the Fiscal's people have in this instance exceeded and abus'd their powers, and that you have not been made acquainted with the particulars of this strange and unaccountable attack upon the liberty of a few inoffensive people, who, from being strangers here, may be suppos'd to be ignorant of those rules which the police of this place may have judged it necessary to establish. I have, &c.”

Wrongful imprisonment.

Demand for release.

Liberty attacked.

To this letter I received a verbal answer by the Govr's. Private Secretary (for those gentm. do not always give written answers to letters on public service), assuring me that the men having deserted an English ship in Saldanah Bay had come to the Cape Town and were found without any visible means of subsistence. They were therefore consider'd as vagrants, a description of people not permitted to remain at liberty in the town, but that if C. Elphinstone or I would receive them they should be sent on board; that I had been misinformed in the account I had receiv'd of an

Seamen detained as vagrants.

1792

24 April.

To be sent on
board ship.

intention of sending them to Batavia ; that as I disapproved of their being confined in prison, they shou'd be put on board a ship which was to remain in the road, and that they shou'd be offer'd to every English ship which might touch at the Cape. This the secretary assur'd me he was authorised by the Lt.-Governor to give me his word of honor should be done. I cou'd therefore do no more at that time for the men. I desir'd the secretary would assure the Lt.-Govr. that I had the most perfect confidence in his promise that the men shou'd not be forc'd to Batavia, but be dispos'd of in the manner he had mention'd. This business I was the more particular in, from knowing that the Dutch Compy's ships when I left Batavia had buried most of their European seamen and were in want of men ; and the men above mentioned, in my own private opinion, were designed for their use.

Men wanted
for Batavia.Seamen
entrapped.

I have troubled their Lordships with these particulars merely to shew what means are frequently made use of to force or betray British seamen into a service which when they once enter and reach this part of the world they may be consider'd as lost to their country, for they are seldom, if ever, permitted to return. C. Elphinstone received some of the men before he left the bay, and such as he cou'd not take I have brought home with me.

I am, &c.,

JNO. HUNTER.

ALEX. DAVISON, Esq., TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

25 April.

Sir,

Harpur street, 25th April, 1792.

Stores for
officers.

The friends and relations of the officers serving in New South Wales having repeatedly applied to me to ship for them a few necessaries and clothing for their private use, I beg leave to humbly submit to your consideration the expediency of allotting a proportionable quantity of tonnage for that purpose on board of the Royal Admiral.

Shipping
facilities.

The officers in that quarter having no means of being supplied but in ships from hence, it is strongly solicited by their relations and connections that permission be granted and direction given to the Royal Admiral to appropriate the tonnage necessary, and I have reason to suppose about fifteen tons will be sufficient for the whole. The agent of Governor Phillip is one of the number who has applied to me.

I have, &c.,

ALEXR. DAVISON.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO CAPTAIN HUNTER.

-28 April.

Sir,

Admiralty, 28th April, 1792.

Having laid before my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'y your letter of the 24th instant, informing them that soon after your arrival at the Cape of Good Hope application was made to you by the master of an English ship employed in the southern whale

fishery to be relieved from the burthen of a ship's company which he had taken up in Delagoa Bay in great distress from shipwreck, of the steps you had taken in disposing of them, and also of some English seamen who were confined in the prison of the Cape Town, —I am, in return, commanded by their Lordships to acquaint you that they approve of what you did upon those occasions. I am, &c.,
P.S.

1792

2^s April.

Ship-
wrecked
crew.

UNDER SECRETARY KING TO UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS.

Sir, Whitehall, 11th May, 1792. 11 May.

Having laid before Mr. Secretary Dundas a letter transmitted by the Lords of the Treasury from the Commissioners of the Navy, enclosing extract of a letter from Mr. Brown, on behalf of the owners of the Royal Admiral, representing the necessity of a guard, to consist of a serjeant and 12 soldiers, to sail with the convicts to New South Wales, I am directed by Mr. Dundas to enclose the said extract and letter to you, to be laid before the Secretary at War, with Mr. Dundas's opinion that the request of the owners of the Royal Admiral should be complied with on the conditions mentioned in Mr. Brown's letter. I am, &c.,

Soldiers for
Royal
Admiral.

JOHN KING.

UNDER SECRETARY KING TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir, Whitehall, 15th May, 1792. 15 May.

Inclosed I transmit you copies of agreements made with Wm. Peat, the master carpenter, and Thomas Allen, the master miller, mentioned in Mr. Secretary Dundas's letter to you of this date.

Agreement
with
carpenter
and miller.

A settler of the name of Jameson, a farmer, with his wife and child, accompanies them in the Royal Admiral.

The observations made by the Commissary respecting the articles which have already been sent out will be attended to in the future purchase of articles for New South Wales. I am, &c.,

JOHN KING.

[Enclosure.]

AGREEMENT WITH MASTER MILLER.

AN agreement entered into and made the fourteenth day of May, in the year one thousand seven hundred and ninety-two, between Alexander Davison, of Harper-street, in the county of Middlesex, and Kingdom of Great Britain, esq're, in virtue of a letter or authority to him from John King, esq're, one of his Majesty's Under Secretary's of State for the Home Department (on behalf of Government) of the one part, and Thomas Allen, now belonging to or employed in the King's mills at Rotherhithe, in the said county of Surrey, miller, of the other part, as follows:—

First the said Thomas Allen doth agree with the said Alexander Davison that he will embark on board of the Royal Admiral for New South Wales to act as a master-miller in his Majesty's service in mills in that country, for the space of four years, com-

Four years
service.

1792
15 May. mencing from the day of his embarkation to the said country, when he shall be called upon for that purpose. And in consideration of which the said Alexander Davison doth promise and agree that he will find, or cause to be found, for the said Thomas Allen, good and sufficient clothing and provisions during the whole of the said term of four years, commencing as aforesaid, and will also pay, or cause to be paid to the said Thomas Allen, as a salary for such his service, the annual sum of fifty-two pounds ten shillings, by even half-yearly payments during the said term of four years, the first payment thereof begin and be made at the expiration of half a year after his embarking for the said country, and shall and will pay, or cause to be paid, the expences of conveying the said Thomas Allen to the said settlement. And in case the said Thomas Allen shall, during the whole of the said term, serve in the capacity and place aforesaid, that he, the said Alexander Davison, will pay all his expences of returning to England at the expiration thereof, or otherwise occasion a free passage to him. And the said Alexander Davison doth hereby require, authorize, and empower Arthur Phillip, esqr'e, Governor of the said colony, to provide for the said Thomas Allen such good and sufficient clothing and provisions as aforesaid during the said term, and to pay the said salary, as the same shall become due for such service, as aforesaid, to the said Thomas Allen, his executors, administrators, or assigns, and also to pay such eventual expences of the voyage of the said Thomas Allen from the said colony as aforesaid. And the said Thomas Allen doth hereby

Clothing and provisions. further covenant, promise, and agree that he, the said Thomas Allen, will well and truly conduct, demean, and behave himself in his said business or employ of a master-miller in his Majesty's service as aforesaid, for and during the full term of four years, commencing as aforesaid. And, lastly, the said parties do agree with each other that in case either of them shall not well and truly perform this agreement, and carry it into execution as aforesaid, that the party non-performing the same shall and will forfeit and pay to the other of them the sum of one hundred pounds as soon as may be after such default.

Salary. Free passage to England. Contract. Forfeit for non-performance.

In witness whereof we have hereunto set our hands and seals at London, the day and year first above written.

ALEXR. DAVISON.
THOS. ALLEN.

Sealed and delivered (being first duly stamped) in the presence of,— Witness—JOHN CLARKE.

THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.
Sir, Whitehall, 15th May, 1792.

I have received and have had the honour of laying before his Majesty your letters of the numbers and dates mentioned in

the margin,* by the Waaksamheyd and the Supply, tender, which, notwithstanding the different periods they set out at from New South Wales, arrived here at the same instant.†

1792
15 May.

As the Royal Admiral, East Indiaman, which carries this dispatch, sails immediately, the shortness of the time will not allow me to answer you so circumstantially as I otherwise should do as to the several particulars you have communicated to me.

Of these, the treatment of the convicts on board the Queen, and the conduct of the transports in carrying out copper, iron, and such other articles as you have mentioned, are the most material. As to the first, I highly approve of the examinations you have taken and transmitted to me.‡

Ill-treatment
of convicts.

I shall, in consequence, take care, whenever the persons concerned return home, that justice be done.

I have, on the same principle, thoroughly investigated, and have taken the necessary steps to bring forward the conduct of the parties concerned in the treatment of the convicts on board the Neptune, Scarborough, and Surprize.§

The Second
Fleet.

The articles clandestinely carried out by the transports and not delivered in New South Wales, in point of fact, are to be considered as belonging to the Navy Board, and therefore, altho' I recommend your caution, yet I should have been better satisfied with your having made a seizure of them.||

Contraband
goods.

It is proposed, for the future, to transport both the convicts and such articles for the settlement as shall be sent from hence by ships in the service of the East India Company, and I trust that by this means the evils which have hitherto subsisted will be put an end to.

Indiamen.

The quantity of spermaceti whales found on the coast may eventually become an object of great consequence to the settlement, and be a means of extending the communication betwixt it and this country (as well as others) much beyond that necessary degree thereof which attains at present. It may, therefore, in future become expedient to make such local regulations as to the admission of certain commodities, such as spirits, &c., as may be found requisite, but for the present I should apprehend that the port orders, carefully executed, will be sufficient.

Whaling.

Imports.

Such remaining articles as the colony may stand in need of, and such settlers as are inclined to go (and to induce whom all reasonable encouragement has been held out) will be sent in another East Indiaman, orders for taking up which have already been given to the Navy Board.

Supplies.

* No. 1—1st March, 1791. No. 2—4th March, 1791. No. 3—5th March, 1791. No. 4—15th March, 1791. No. 5—25th March, 1791. No. 6—26th March, 1791. No. 1—5th November, 1791. No. 2—7th November, 1791. No. 3—Ditto. No. 4—8th November, 1791. No. 5—15th November, 1791. No. 6—22nd November, 1791. No. 7—24th November, 1791. No. 8—25th November, 1791. Separate—21st November, 1791. Ditto—22nd November, 1791.
† The Waaksamheyd sailed 27th March, 1791. The Supply sailed 27th November, 1791.
‡ Ante, p. 538. § Ante, pp. 354, 355, 367, 368, 387, 388. Ante, pp. 547, 549, 550, 555.

1792

15 May.

Shipping
arrange-
ments.

In recurring to the articles intended for the Pitt and comparing them with those contained in the list now transmitted by you and Mr. Palmer,* I observe that many of them are of the same kind. I hope therefore, as all those articles shut out of the Pitt will arrive by the Britannia, Kitty, and Royal Admiral,† that your immediate wants will be supplied. I have nevertheless taken the proper steps to procure immediately an assortment of the different articles contained in the Commissary's list above-mentioned, and if by any means the same, or any part thereof, can be put on board the Royal Admiral, it shall be done. At all events, they shall be sent by the next Indiaman.

Stores.

I take this opportunity of desiring that in future the Commissary's list of articles wanted may contain, for the information of his Majesty's Secretary of State, the number, or quantity, of each article opposite the same.

State of the
Colony.Grain and
live stock.Supplies
from India.

The accounts you give of the general state of the settlement, and of the conduct of those that compose it, are extremely satisfactory, and I trust a short period will render it, in a great measure, independent of this country, as to the mere articles of subsistence. The two great and primary objects are grain and live stock. Until a sufficient quantity of these can be raised for the use of the settlement, the real amount or effect of its exertions cannot be ascertained. To obtain these on the most reasonable terms, and with the greatest expedition, I am of opinion that recourse must be had to the settlement of Fort William.‡ The various species both of grain and live stock from thence must, I conceive, be well adapted for New South Wales. I propose, therefore giving such directions on this point as to lead to your receiving from them a supply of those articles from time to time.

I shall enclose in this letter an account of the different articles of cloathing, stores, and provisions, which accompany it, as also a list of the convicts, with the times for which they are respectively transported.§

Carpenter
and miller.

A master carpenter and a master miller are hired for the service of the settlement, and will sail in the Royal Admiral, if they can be received on board, if not, certainly in the next Indiaman.

Wine and
tobacco.

There will likewise by this or the next opportunity be consigned to you, a certain quantity of port wine and tobacco, to be disposed of by the Governor for the time being to the civil and military officers, and to others, at prime cost, according to his discretion; at the same time will be sent an allowance of rum for the non-commissioned officers and privates.

Artificers.

I am happy to find that by the Kitty, such convict artificers were sent as you have stated the settlement to be most in want of.

* The Commissary.

† The Britannia arrived 26th July; the Kitty 18th Nov.; the Royal Admiral 7th Oct.

‡ Calcutta. § Not recorded.

In consequence of the observations of Mr. Palmer on the articles which have been purchased for the settlement by Mr. Alexander Davison, I have thought proper to give directions for the inspection of such articles as are intended for New South Wales previous to their being put on board.

1792

15 May.

Inspection of stores.

I cannot conclude this letter without assuring you how much I lament that the ill state of your health deprives his Majesty of your further services in the Government of New South Wales, and I have only to hope that, on quitting the settlement, you will have the satisfaction of leaving it in a thriving and prosperous situation.

Phillip's retirement lamented.

HY. DUNDAS.

P.S.—Considering the small number of acres capable of cultivation in Norfolk Island, and at the same time their fertility, I think it expedient that the allotments to settlers in that island should not exceed fifteen acres.—HENRY DUNDAS.

Settlement at Norfolk Island.

WM. RICHARDS, JUNR., TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers).

Sir, Queen's Row, Walworth, 21st May, 1792.

21 May.

I hope your kindness will excuse the liberty I take in addressing myself to you; but being fully convinced that, provided Government did but contract for providing the settlement at Port Jackson in the mode and manner which I took the liberty some time back of mentioning, it would be attended with the best consequences. The idea, which is entertained, of being supplied from India is by no means an economical one, and I am fully persuaded that the article supplied from thence will cost the publick nearly as much more as if it was supplied from hence; and let me assure you, sir, that whatever offers Government may have, none can be more beneficial to them than that which I did myself the honor to lay before them and you. No honest man can supply provisions of the proper quality, and packed in an eligible way for so long a passage, for less than at that ratio which I pointed out, and which I understand is the allowance that Governor Phillip would always wish to have in store to be issued to the soldiers and convicts, &c.

Supplies from India undesirable.

There are many reasons why Government should adopt such a mode of supplying the settlement independent of economy.

The last accounts from the settlement are very far from flattering, and in consequence of an apparent want, Gov. Phillip, I understand, has dispatched two vessels—one to Calcutta, the other to China—for a supply. Depend on it, supplies from such places will never answer. Concerned as I am for the improvement of the settlement (having been the first who undertook that business, and which was quite a new one, and meeting with great opposition in chartering ships, &c.), I cannot, without being affected, hear the

Foreign supplies will not answer.

1792
21 May.
Transport
of convicts.

Terms.

Proposal to
open a store.

Trustworthy
agents.

An
"eligible"
offer.

continual murmurs against it, and which might in a great measure be done away by an agreement similar to the one I proposed. I must remark that I have, in the conducting of the business, as far as I was concerned, acquitted myself in such a manner as to have given general satisfaction, tho' I am sorry to say that from the conducting of it since Government have rather themselves to blame, for it cannot but be supposed that they are fully capable of knowing at what price contractors can afford to convey them [convicts] at. I have now before the Treasury a proposal (provided the India Company will load my ships home at £10 per ton), to take the convicts out at £18 per head, which is much lower than that now paid for those going out in the Royal Admiral. I only have one further proposition to make, but not having any friends who could mention me and point out the advantages of the offer to the Minister, I have no hope in succeeding in. It is, provided Government would choose to enter into such a contract as I have offered them for the supply of the settlement, and would also sanction the keeping a store at Port Jackson for the sale of other necessaries, such as groceries, soap, &c., to such of the officers, &c., as may chuse to become purchasers, at a fair and reasonable profit, and also give a grant of land, I would become a settler at Port Jackson, and take out my family with me, and I make no doubt but my example would be followed by many others.

The contract I should enter into should be placed in such hands, for my benefit, as have been tried by Government, and have conducted themselves with satisfaction, credit, and reputation, and also be under their inspection.

Should, sir, these ideas meet your accord I should be happy, tho' I dare not hope, that you would lay them before Mr. Pitt. I shall esteem your answer a great favour conferred on me, and should you require me to explain to you my private reasons why I think the offer may be considered an eligible one, I shall think myself much honoured in receiving your commands to wait on you for that purpose.

Yours, &c.,

WM. RICHARDS, JUNR.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO CAPTAIN HUNTER.

23 May.

Sir,

Admiralty, 23rd May, 1792.

The Sirius.

I have received your letters of the 10th and 12th inst., transmitting a list of the names of the petty and warrant officers who served with you on board his Maj.'s late ship the Sirius, with your opinion of their respective merits, together with your narrative and sketches relating to it, and also copies of the surveys done by you during the time you served in New South Wales, and I have laid the same before my Lords Comm'rs of the Adm'y.

I am, &c.,

P.S.

WM. RICHARDS JUNR., TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers).

1792

Sir,

June 5th, 1792.

5 June.

I took the liberty on the 21st ult. to address myself to you respecting furnishing the settlements in New South Wales with a permanent supply of provisions, &c., at a given ratio and price, and to always keep six months' provision in store at that ratio for the number of people in the settlement, and to decrease the supplying them as the colony may increase in the means of rendering itself independent. At the same time I stated to you, sir, that if Government would enter into such a contract with me, give me a grant of land, and also sanction the keeping of a store to supply the officers and settlers that may be induced to fix their abode there, with other necessaries at a fair and equitable profit, I would become a settler, and take my family with me. I am still of the same opinion, and I make no doubt but that many others would be induced to follow my example. Being in a situation of hearing the sentiments of every party respecting the colony, the conclusion which I have drawn is this: That many people would go to New South Wales if they were sure of not coming to want the necessaries of life, and, if they possessed any property, could purchase what they call necessaries, and untill Government make some contract similar to the one proposed by me they will never have proper persons go out as settlers. Governor Phillip, in all his letters, points out the necessity of sending out such persons as settlers whose interests will lead them to forward the views of Government. No thinking man possessed of any independent property will go to a place to live without in some measure he can feel himself assured from coming to want; nor can he think of going to a country where the price of articles (when he declares himself independent of the King's store) are of such a magnitude as they must be if the idea of being supplied from India is pursued. I can assure you, sir, that such a proposition as I have mentioned will be the only means of quieting the minds of the people at present there, and also of furthering the establishment of the colony by easing the minds of those here who may wish to become dwellers in that country. It would likewise be attended with this benefit: As on every occasion when Government intend to send out any supplies to New South Wales the contract is publicly advertised, the expence of which is held out by the disaffected to the colony thro' the medium of the publick prints as very enormous, in the mode proposed it would be quietly done, and not the least notice of such ships being intended for that place would be known, beside other advantages to the publick independent of its being the cheapest and most economical.

A permanent supply of provisions.

A store.

Reasons why persons will not go out as settlers.

Fears for the future.

How they may be allayed.

Another advantage.

I should be very happy, sir, to have your opinion on such a plan, and to know your sentiments respecting it. I should have lain it before Mr. Pitt*; but as my letter must go thro' the Treasury

1792

5 June.

previous to reaching him, I am too apt to think (from experience) that propositions similar to mine would be proposed before mine could reach his hand. But, sir, should you approve it, I will endeavour to procure interest to have it delivered him.

Yours, &c.,

W. M. RICHARDS, JUNR.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

26 June.

Sir,

Sydney, New South Wales, 26th June, 1792.

Samples of
clothing
from India.

I have forwarded the samples of shoes, blankets, shirts, trousers, frocks, handkerchiefs, and cottons which have been received from Messrs. Lambert and Ross, also "two shirts, one frock, and one pair of trousers, received as samples, from Mr. Biddulph, of Calcutta." His shirts, the frocks, and the trousers, which are distinguished by a seal, and packed separate from the rest, appear to me likely to answer; and I beg leave to observe that most of the cloths and the osnaburghs which have been sent out are by much too slight to answer the purpose for which they were intended. I have directed the Commissary to put up samples of the osnaburghs that they may be compared with the cottons which we have received from Calcutta.

Some
unsuitable.

For shirts, the osnaburghs are very badly calculated, and when made into frocks or trousers have not a month's wear in them. It is also necessary to observe that many of the bales of clothing have been greatly damaged, and the Commissary informs me that he has opened but few bales of osnaburghs which have not had several damaged pieces in the middle of the bale, probably from having been damp and heated. If a contractor in India will furnish this colony with trousers, frocks, and shirts as good as those which have been before-mentioned as marked with a seal, and packed separate, at the prices affixed to each of these articles, I think it would be a great saving to Government, as they would be delivered here at the expence and risk of the contractor; but in that case they must be made of a proper size, the samples being much too small.

Damaged
goods.

Contract
proposed.

Ready-made
clothing.

I would wish to receive the clothing ready made, as we can now find full employment for all the women as hutkeepers, or at labour in the fields; and to which other reasons might be added; there are many little abuses in the cutting out and making up of clothing which cannot be done away until a proper building is erected for that purpose, and a proper person found to superintend it. The women in general marry, and if their husbands are employed in the fields, their attendance in their huts is necessary, and most of them have children; and the quantity of clothing immediately necessary whenever the store-ships arrive is now become so very considerable that I find it impossible (having the clothing to make) to supply the convicts regularly at stated periods.

The supply
defective.

Frocks, trousers, shirts, shifts, gowns, and petticoats might, I presume, be made in India for this colony, and by introducing one stripe of a different colour from the rest, prevent what is intended for the convicts from being sold to the soldier or the settler; and such distinguishing mark should be put on everything intended for the use of the convicts.

1792

26 June.

Clothing might be made in India.

A copy of Mr. Biddulph's letter to me is inclosed.* To what Messrs. Lambert, Ross, & Co. might have had to offer on that head I am a stranger, as Lieutenant Bowen was obliged to sail without having received his letters, or a copy of the contract made on purchasing the provisions for this colony, and for which he had waited at the mouth of the river as long as he judged it prudent.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

SECRETARY STEPHENS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Admiralty, 29th June, 1792.

29 June.

Having laid before my Lords Commrs of the Adm'y your letter of the 26th March, 1791, requesting that the want of the books and papers therein mentioned may be dispensed with, they having been lost when his Majesty's ship *Sirius* was wrecked, to enable you to pay your accounts for the said ship, I am commanded by their Lordships to acquaint you that they have given you an order for that purpose.

Books and papers lost.

I am, &c.,

P.S.

SIR GEO. YONGE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

War Office, 4th July, 1792.

4 July.

I have had the honor of laying before the King your dispatch of the 15 Decr., 1791,† with the letters and papers accompanying it from Capt. Nepean and Lieut. McArthur, both of the New South Wales Corps, and at the same time I informed his Majesty that Major Grose and other officers of his corps (among them Capt. Foveaux, whose absence alone appears to have prevented your bringing Mr. McArthur to a court-martial) must have arrived at Sydney a few weeks after the date of your letter.

Nepean and McArthur.

His Majesty thinks it most likely that the arrival of those officers will have occasioned you to take some further steps in the affair, the result of which must, of course, be waited for before his Majesty can attempt to form a judgment thereupon.

His Majesty is sensible of the inconveniences which, in the present state of the colony, must attend the assembling of a general court-martial in New South Wales; and an additional difficulty is created by the return of the marine officers of this country, whose depositions could not be admitted in evidence

Obstacles to investigation.

* Ante, pp. 593, 594.

† This despatch and its enclosures are not among the transcriptions. The matter to which they relate is not mentioned in Phillip's despatch to Grenville of the same date.

1792

4 July.

against Captain Nepean without his express and spontaneous consent : on the other hand, the ordering the parties home with their respective witnesses (most of whom, if not all military persons) would be productive of at least equal inconvenience to your Government, and so much time might elapse before the trial could be brought on here as to exceed the limits of a military prosecution prescribed by the Military Act, the facts alleged against Lieut. McArthur being understood to have taken place a considerable time before he left Europe.

Information
required.

Under these difficulties I am ordered to acquaint you that nothing will be more satisfactory to his Majesty than to find by a subsequent report from you that you have been able, in some proper way or other, to ascertain the real circumstances of the difference between Captn. Nepean and Lieut. McArthur, and to supply such information thereupon as may afford to his Majesty the means of deciding upon the respective conduct of these officers, and of disposing finally of the business without prejudice to the honor of his service, and without giving either of the parties just cause to complain that they have not been allowed full opportunity of justifying themselves upon the several matters in question.

I have, &c.,

GEO. YONGE.

9 July.

WM. RICHARDS, JUNR., TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers).
Sir, Queen's Row, Walworth, July 9th, 1792.

Proposals
for supply-
ing the
settlement.

I took the liberty of writing you on the 21st May and the 5th ultimo respecting an idea which occurred to me to provide the settlement in New South Wales with provisions, &c., and offered on certain conditions to become a settler there. I must own that tho' these suggestions occurred to me, yet my presumption in requesting your opinion on the propriety of such a measure was presuming too much on your kindness, but as you have been pleased on former occasions to favour me with answers to letters which I have taken the liberty to trouble you with, I have thought that those letters mentioned above have not come to your hands. If my addressing myself to you has given offence, I sincerely beg your pardon ; nothing could have induced me to have done it but the desire of having the opinion (if you had condescended so far) of that of the only person in this country that was anyways capable of giving one.

I beg you will not attribute this to anything but the respect which always has emboldened,

Yours, &c.,

WM. RICHARDS, JUNR.

10 July.

Attached to the above letter is a draft reply, in the handwriting of Sir Joseph Banks, as follows :—

July 10.

It was not from any disrespect to you or disapprobation of your plan for providing the settlement of New South Wales with pro-

visions, of which I have a very good opinion, that I have delayed answering your letters. I waited for the return of Mr. Nepean, not being able in his absence to gain any good information concerning the present state of affairs, and ever since his return I have unfortunately been laid up by the gout, which still confines me from taking any active part in business. Whenever I am released I will look into your business, and if I am likely to be able to promote it effectually I will not fail to give you notice. I am, &c.

1792

10 July.

Business
delayed.

[Unsigned.]

THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Whitehall, 14 July, 1792.

14 July.

In my last letter of the 15th May, I stated that the remainder of the articles left out of the Royal Admiral, together with such settlers as should be willing to embark on the conditions held out to them (which is contained in the enclosure No. 1) would be sent by another Indiaman,* to be forthwith taken up for that purpose. On account of some temporary difficulties which occurred, but which will for the future, I hope, be removed, it was judged necessary, to avoid delay, to send by the *Bellona*, transport,† which conveys this letter, as many of the above articles as she could carry, together with a millwright, eleven settlers, and ten female convicts. I am sorry to add that the above settlers are as yet all that have offered themselves. A list of those articles; of the settlers, with their particular occupations annexed to their names; and of the female convicts, with their respective periods for which they are transported, and enclosed in Nos. 2, 3, and 4.‡

The *Bellona*
transport.Few
emigrants.

From the description you have given of the settlement at New South Wales, it appears that the difficulty which attends the clearing of the ground stands much in the way of its being cultivated to any considerable extent.

Difficulty in
clearing the
ground.

This leads me to view the increase of live stock as a primary object. I have some hopes that you may receive a few sheep or horned cattle, or both, by the Royal Admiral from the Cape. At the same time, as I observed in my last, it is to Bengal that I chiefly look for an efficient supply of that nature. As soon, therefore, as the arrival of the *Discovery* [*Dædalus*] shall give you an opportunity of procuring such a supply, I strongly recommend your despatching her to Fort William for that purpose. In so doing, I conceive it will be expedient in the outset to confine the species of live stock chiefly to sheep and horned cattle, as they will

Importance
of live stock.India a
resource.

* Ante, p. 624.

† The *Bellona* sailed 8th August, 1792, and arrived 16th January, 1793. Collins in his *Account of New South Wales*, vol. i., p. 262, says: "The Quaker families which had been expected for some time past had engaged to take their passage in the *Bellona*, but it was said that they had been diverted from their purpose by some misrepresentations which had been made to them respecting this country."

‡ The enclosures are not available.

1792

14 July.

support themselves on the herbage alone, whereas hogs, poultry, &c., must occasion a considerable deduction from the quantity of grain and pulse, where it is raised only in small quantities.

Grants of
land to
settlers.

Your recommendation of several persons for certain salaries or allowances to be made them has been complied with. Under the circumstances you have stated, I approve of your having exercised your discretion with respect to the allotments granted to the late settlers.* In so doing, your conduct appears to have been adapted to the exigency of the case.

Grants to
officers.

In answer to the request made by several of the military and civil officers to have grants of land made them, which they may dispose of at their departure, I do not foresee that any inconvenience can arise from your complying with their requisitions, provided the allotments are made not with a view to a temporary but an established settlement thereon; that is, comprehending such portions of land, and in such situations as would be suitable for a *bona fide* settler should it ever come into the hands of such a person.

Despatches
received.

Since writing the above I have received your despatches of the dates and number mentioned in the margin,† by the Gorgon, and have had the honour to lay them, with their several enclosures, before his Majesty.

Live stock
from Bengal.

The causes you have related as retarding the progress of the settlement are certainly to be taken into consideration in referring to the calculations you have made of the probable time when it might be able to support itself. But those causes more strongly incline me to recommend the greatest attention to the increase of live stock, as mentioned in the former part of this letter, and the procuring of them from Bengal, whenever an opportunity offers, for that purpose.

Trial of
offenders.

Until an Act of Parliament can be prepared in the course of next session, I trust that the authority of the magistrates in Norfolk Island, reserving the trial of capital offenders for the court at New South Wales, will be found sufficient for the preservation of order or the purposes of justice.

Wine and
tobacco.

For the benefit and convenience of the settlement, I have directed that a certain quantity of port wine and tobacco (specified in enclosure No. 2) shall be consigned to you, in order that you may at your discretion furnish at prime cost, the former to such of the civil and military officers, and the latter to such of the men as may be desirous of purchasing the same. I am, &c.,

HENRY DUNDAS.

P.S.—You will grant permission to Mr. Dennis Considen to return to England should his health still continue to require it. It is hardly necessary to suggest to you the propriety of placing under the millwright two or three of the most intelligent convicts, being carpenters.—H.D.

* See Phillip's Despatch, ante, p. 536.

† 8th December, 1791. 14th December, 1791. No. 9—15th December, 1791. 16th December, 1791. 17th December, 1791.

WM. RICHARDS, JUNR., TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers).

1792

Sir,

Walworth, 17th July, 1792.

17 July.

I should not have presumed to trouble you again, but having had the pleasure of seeing you on Friday at the Treasury, and mentioning limestone, which Gov. Phillip always has mentioned in his letters of being much in want of, induced me (as I went to Dorking on Saturday last to see my father) to enquire the price, which I find, including carriage, waterage, &c., &c., will not exceed from 16s. to 18s. pr. ton, delivered alongside a ship at Deptford, which is so trifling an expence compared to the magnitude of the object for which it is wanted, viz., for building, and to lay on the ground, where it will effectually kill the grub and other insect, which destroy the vegetation as soon as it appears. Dorking limestone is superior to every limestone in this country, and one ton will go nearly as far as two tons of any other. The ships may ballast with this, consequently the expence of conveying it would be saved.

Limestone for building purposes.

May be used as ballast.

Should you, sir, trouble yourself so far as to speak in my favour respecting the supplying the colony, you may be assured that every possible way which I can serve the colony in (independent of that which concerns my particular interest) I shall exert; and should any particular species of provision not be wanted (that is mentioned in the ratio) I will cheerfully deduct that with its prime cost and charges from the rest. It is my only wish to permanently supply the colony to secure ease to the minds of those already there, as well as those who would be induced to go there, and to promote the views and interests of Government in forming the settlement. I should be as happy to decrease the supply (according to the contract I might enter into) as the colony increases in cultivation, as to continue supplying the full ratio. One great object with me is to bring about a trade there, which will act as a spur to the industry of the settlers when they find that they can procure necessities and little luxuries such as tea, sugar, soap, &c., &c., for the products of the country. The settlement, in time, by that means, may become usefull and independent, and to me it appears clear that no other method but such a one as this will ever be of service to it. I hope, sir, you will excuse this liberty.

Proposals for supplying the colony.

Encouragement of trade.

I remain, &c.,

WM. RICHARDS, JUNIOR.

W. WILBERFORCE, ESQ., TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.*

My Dear Dundas,

Near Bath, August 7th, 1792.

7 Aug.

You see by the date of my letter that I have obeyed your instructions in returning to Bath, which I did the instant I found I was not to be call'd into Yorkshire. 'Tis an unnatural sort of potation, hot water, when the thermometer stands at 72°, but the medical men all recommend it. Ever since I spoke to you in the

* A private letter.

1792

7 Aug.

A second
chaplain for
New South
Wales.

Mr. Porter.

The call of
duty.Importance
of religious
instruction.Society in
New South
Wales.Two minis-
ters insuffi-
cient.Teachers
wanted.Solicitude
for the
people.

chaise, as we were coming from Wimbledon, I have been looking out for some fit clergyman to go out as a chaplain to N. S. Wales, and the Archbishop of Canterbury, to whom I mention'd the matter immediately after, has been doing the same. I began almost to despair of success (for you know I am rather difficult to please in this line), when I heard of a clergyman of the name of Porter, who, tho' reluctantly, had consented to accept the situation, and who was every way qualified for it. I wrote without delay to the archbishop, thinking it right so to do before I should apply to you, and I have this morning receiv'd his answer, which I now enclose. Let me be authorized, therefore, to inform Mr. Porter that he may have the appointment,* and the sooner he can be got out the better, not only lest he should change his mind, but because of the extreme want of ministerial assistance in that country. I assure you most solemnly that I believe this man consents from the same principle of a sense of duty on which a soldier encounters the heats of India or the woods of America.

Tho' you and I perhaps (I will not be so insincere, and therefore so unfriendly as not to leave out the perhaps), tho' you and I do not agree on these topics of a religious nature, as from my heart I wish we did, yet I am sure you will acknowledge the propriety of endeavouring for the happiness of every community to introduce and keep alive amongst the bulk of the people such a sense of religion as will make them temperate and orderly, and domestic and contented. Now, as I remember, you remark'd this holds with peculiar force in the case of such a society as that of N.S. Wales; and yet, I am sorry to tell you that amongst the higher, as well as the lower ranks, a degree of open profligacy and vice is allowed if not encouraged there which exceeds what we suffer to appear in broad day in this country. Two clergymen, one at each settlement, are altogether unequal to the task of watching over such large societies in that attentive way that is to be desir'd; I wish you would send out another or two; and what is of still more importance, and what I have been for some time turning in my mind, I wish you would send out a few persons with small salaries to take on them the office of schoolmasters; I say small salaries, because if you were to give large ones improper people would accept the situations; if you would let me look out for a few persons fit for the purpose I should be greatly obliged to you; and I trust you know me well enough to believe me, with't asseverations, that I make the proposal, not because I have four or five people that I wish to do jobs for, but because I am desirous of promoting the temporal and eternal happiness of the people who are in question. I have written in

* The appointment was not made. Subsequently the position of assistant chaplain was given to the Rev. Samuel Marsden, who arrived at Sydney by the ship William, 10th March, 1794.

great haste, but was unwilling to let a single post slip off after hearing from the archbishop without writing to you. I know you will excuse the freedom with which I have written, because you are always kind to me, and I am always, my dear sir,

W. WILBERFORCE.

[Enclosure.]

THE ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY TO W. WILBERFORCE, ESQ.

Dear Sir,

Scarboro', Aug't 4, 1792.

4 Aug.

I am just honoured by the receipt of your letter of the 1st instant, respecting a clergyman to be sent to Botany Bay, and it gives me much satisfaction that one is at last found who will undertake that difficult and important mission: and that you have the respectable testimony of Mr. Hey, of Leeds, in favor of him; under these circumstances I shall withdraw my inquiries, which have hitherto been unsuccessful. I hear, with great concern, of a complaint in your eyes, but hope the mildness of the weather at present will aid your endeavors, and contribute to a speedy removal of it.

I am, &c.,

J. CANTUAR.

Chaplain for
Sydney.

CAPT. VANCOUVER'S EXPEDITION.—NOTES BY SIR JOSEPH BANKS
(Banks Papers).

1791.—*Chatham*.

August.—Left the Cape; went to Dusky Bay; remained there three weeks; on the night of departure from thence parted company with the *Discovery*.

The
Chatham
and the
Discovery.

December 27.—Arrived at Metaire [Mattavai] Bay four days after the *Discovery* parted company.

1792.

Stayed a month at Otaheite; were six weeks going to the Sandwich Islands; stayed ten days.

April 17.—Made the coast of America.

Aug. 28.—Anchored at Nootka, where the store-ship the *Dædalus* had arrived before. Mr. Hergest, Mr. Gooch, and one seaman had been cut off at Wohakoo.* Two years more will scarce complete the research to be done on the coast. Don Quadra, commandant of the Spaniards, is†; he this day departs for New Spain, leaving a frigate in charge of the port. Vessels of all nations are in the port.

1792.—*Discovery*.

March 1st.—Arrived at Sandwich Islands. 16.—† and wrote this letter from anchor. Explored the south-west side of New Holland from the *Chatham's*, lat. 35° 63' N., long. 116° 35½' E. to termination; † Island, lat. 34° 22' S., long. 122° 08½' E. Discovered an excellent port in 35° 05' 30", 118° 14' 13", consisting of a spacious and well-sheltered sound with two harbours—King George III Sound. Sailing round the

* See Lieutenant Menzies' account, post, p. 638-639.

† Blank in manuscript.

1792
August. south promontory of New Zealand, discovered a cluster of small rocky islands, seven in number, extending about three leagues, bearing from S. Cape S. 40, W. 19 leagues, lat. $48^{\circ} 33' S.$, long. $166^{\circ} 20' E.$, called the Snares. Discovered an island, named Oparo, lat. $27^{\circ} 36' 30''$, long. $215^{\circ} 57'$, inhabited by South Sea people. The Chatham discovered an island, $43^{\circ} 48' S. l.$, $183^{\circ} 2' E.$, and sailed nearly in an E. direction for 12 leagues along the north side of it; called it Chatham Island. Discovered another in lat. $23^{\circ} 42'$, long. $212^{\circ} 54'$; called it Broughton's Isle. From Owhyhee they called at Woaho, and on their arrival at Altowai did not find the store-ship. At Altowai were three Englishmen left by an American vessel to collect sandalwood and pearls. During their absence of twenty months the natives treated them well, but they told C. Vancouver that Trassa had captured Metcalf's schooner and killed all the men but one, who is believed to be residing at Owhyhee, and that Oio, King of Altowai, had attempted an American brig. The letter was left with these men. Every person on board the vessels, except Neal Coyle, a private marine, who died 8th Sept. last, are well.

JOHN DILKES TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

19 Sept. Sir, Upper Seymour-street, 19th September, 1792.
Having heard for certain some time past that Captain Phillip had applied to be superseded in his Government of New South Wales, and understanding from general report that it was a command wish'd for but by very few, I took the liberty of writing to Mr. Dundas to offer my service.*

Applicant
for the Go-
vernorship.

Understanding that there is not anybody yet appointed, and still hearing it more decried by my brother officers, I presume to request the favour of you to state the very anxious wish I have of going to that country for some years, which wish and thirty-six years' service is all the merit and interest I can venture to boast.

I am, &c.,

JOHN DILKES.

Could I have been certain Mr. Dundas received my letter I should not have given this trouble.

WM. RICHARDS, JUNR., TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS
(Banks Papers).

20 Sept. Sir, 20th Sept., 1792.

Conveyance
of convicts.

I took the liberty, on the 2nd July last, to propose terms to convey the convicts to Port Jackson, New S. Wales, such as I hoped would meet your accord. As the season is now approaching when more will be sent out, I take this liberty of renewing my offer, having endeavoured to make it meet the wishes of Government by being paid for those that are landed.

* The offer was not entertained.

Limestone being mentioned by Gov. Phillip as much wanted in the colonies, the expence of sending it out will amount to merely a trifle. The best Dorking limestone can be procured and delivered alongside a ship at Deptford (time being allowed to collect it) at not more than from 16s. to 18s. per ton. Any ship that loads for that place must take ballast, and limestone will be as good ballast as anything, also a barge may lay alongside the ship when loading, and limestone may be put away in places where no package can be put, consequently there will be no expence in conveying it, and its consequence to the colony is very great, as it not only will serve for building, when made into lime, but also for manure, as well as destroy the grub and other insects which hinder vegetation.

1792

20 Sept.

Limestone
as ballast.

Other uses.

I did myself also the honor, some time back, to propose to supply the colony with a regular ratio of provision at p. head p. day, to always keep six months' provision in store, and to continue the supply untill the colony could be capable of maintaining itself, as also to decrease the supply in any particular article as the settlement rendered itself independent.

Provisions.

It suggested to me that a contract of that nature, not being entered into by Government, only hindered proper persons from offering themselves to go out as settlers, such as are mentioned by Gov. Phillip in his letters to be much wanted, "people whose interest it will be to forward the views of Government." Many such of small independencies would be induced to go out were they assured (by a contract to be made similar to that I proposed) that they could always procure from some store subsistence should their own crops fail them. Should Government be induced to enter into such a contract with me (and which I am confident is the most economical way of supplying the settlement with provisions), sanction my keeping a store at Port Jackson for supplying the officers and others with necessaries such as tea, sugar, soap, &c., as a return for the articles of the country, &c., and give me a grant of land, I would become a settler, and I am certain that numbers would follow my example in a very short time. Confident as I am that such a step would contribute more to establish the colony, to open a trade for anything which the country would produce, and to act as a spur to the industry of the colonists, emboldens me to trouble you with this. Should it need your accord you may rest assured that I shall conduct myself with satisfaction to all parties, and give proper security to the publick for the business being conducted to meet the wishes of every individual.

Obstacles to
settlement.

Proposal to
open a store.

I take the liberty of subjoining the price of flour at Bengal on the 9th January last, compared to the price of the same article at present in London, which proves that the colony can be served much cheaper from hence with every article (rice excepted) than

Bengal and
London
prices.

1792 can be procured from India, freight, commission and charges I
20 Sept suppose alike, tho' I think the India charge would be most.

I have, &c.,

WM. RICHARDS, JUNR.

Calcutta, 9th January, 1792.

Flour, 7 sicca rupees p. mound of 82 lb. (The current rupee at the Compy.'s Exchange is 2s.) 16 per ct. on do. is a sicca rupee, which makes the sicca rupee 2s. 4d., which is 16s. 8d. per mound or per cwt.	£1	1	2
Best kiln-dried 2nd flour at the present price in London is p. cwt.	0	15	6
Difference in price	0	5	8

THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS TO W. RICHARDS, JUNR.
(Banks Papers).

26 Sept.

Sir,

Whitehall, 26th Sept., 1792.

I have received your letter of the 20th instant. The subjects to which it relates will very shortly be under the consideration of Government, when the proposals contained in your letter will be duly weighed.*

I am, &c.,

HENRY DUNDAS.

LIEUTENANT MENZIES TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers).

Sir Joseph,

Nootka Sound, Sept. 26th, 1792.

I was favoured with your letter by the *Dædalus*, store-ship, on our arrival here about twenty days ago. This ship has been about eleven months on her passage from England. On this side of Cape Horn she touched at the Marquesas, and in a few days after leaving them at a cluster of islands, where they found a fine harbour, and received good refreshments and much civility from the inhabitants. Though these were a new discovery to them, we have since learned that the Americans claim a priority.

They afterwards touched at the Sandwich Isles, where they unfortunately lost Lieut. Hergest, Mr. Gooch the astronomer, and one seaman at the Island of Woahoo, on the 10th of May last. The manner in which this fatal accident happened (they say) was thus:—The vessel was laying off and on in Whyteetee Bay, on the south side of Woahoo, while they were procuring water and refreshments. Lieut. Hergest conceiving that this business was going on rather dilatory, ordered a few empty casks into the boat, and he and Mr. Gooch went on shore unarmed, to see the duty forwarded. While the casks were filling they both took a short walk back into a

From
England to
Nootka.

Massacre
at the
Sandwich
Islands.

* Under contract with Mr. Richards the Boddingtons and Sugarcane were sent out in 1793 with 300 convicts from Ireland.

neighbouring plantation, and in the meantime a scuffle happened on the beach between the boat's crew and the natives, in which one seaman was killed before they could get to the few arms they had in the boat. Some of the boat's crew afterwards landed, and saw at a distance a group of the natives surrounding Messrs. Hergest and Gooch, hustling them back into the mountains, and stripping them, as they thought, of their clothes. The natives now arming themselves on all sides, with clubs, spears, and stones, obliged them to retreat to their boat for safety and join the ship, which soon after came to an anchor, and on the following day sent an armed boat on shore to demand the two gentlemen, when they were informed of their being both massacred on the preceding evening, and could procure no part of them, as the natives were all armed on an adjacent hill, where it was not in their power to use any compulsive means. Thus situated they left the Sandwich Island, and arrived here about the beginning of July.

I shall now proceed to give you a short account of our own progress since the date of my last letter to you from the Cape of Good Hope. We left that place on the 27th of August, 1791, and afterwards experienced a series of tempestuous weather until we passed the meridian of the east end of Madagascar. On the 26th September we made the coast of N. Holland, in the lat. of 35° south and long. $116^{\circ} 15''$ east. We coasted on to the eastward for about 33 leagues, when we entered a harbour which obtained the name of King George Sound, in lat. $35^{\circ} 5''$ south and long. $118^{\circ} 16''$ east. Here we remained for about a fortnight, which gave me an opportunity of examining the country in various excursions round the south, making a copious collection of its vegetable productions, particularly the genus BANKSIA, which are here very numerous. The climate appears to be exceeding favourable. The soil tho' light is good, and productive of a vast variety of vegetables, particularly inland, where the country appears chiefly covered with wood, diversified with pleasing pasturage and gentle rising hills of a very moderate height, well watered in many places by small rivulets. Whatever grains grow at the Cape would, I am certain, flourish here in greater perfection; in short, it is a delightful country, and well worth a more particular investigation from Government on account of its nearness and easy access to our settlements in India. We saw no natives or quadrupeds of any kind during our stay, tho' some recent traces of the former were very evident in two deserted villages at the head of the Sound.

After leaving it we traced the coast about sixty leagues further to the eastward, and quitted it on the 15th of October, in the latitude of $34^{\circ} 22''$ south, and about the longitude of 122° east, shaping our course for Van Diemen's Land, which we made on the 26th, and passing round it on the following day entered Dusky Bay, N. Zealand, on the 2nd Nov., where we remained twenty days, and where I was

1792

26 Sept.

A seaman
killed.Lieutenant
Hergest and
Mr. Gooch
carried off

and killed

Course of
the voyage.King
George's
Sound.Climate
and soil.A delightful
country.New
Zealand.

- 1792 particularly entertained among a vast variety of cryptogamic plants,
 26 Sept. of which I have made a tolerable good collection, and added a new
 genus to the order of Musci. Next day, after departing from Dusky
 Bay, we discovered, in a violent gale of wind which separated us
 The Snares. from our consort, a cluster of dreary barren rocks and islets, which we
 called the Snares, off the south-west end of N. Zealand, in lat. $48^{\circ} 3'$
 south and long. $166^{\circ} 20'$ east; and in our passage we discovered a
 small inhabited island, about eight or nine leagues in circumference,
 in the lat. of $27^{\circ} 36'$ south and long. $215^{\circ} 57'$ east from Greenwich.
- We anchored in Mattavai Bay on the 30th December, where we
 The joined our consort,* who arrived about a week before us. Here the
 Chatham. natives informed us of the departure of Capt. Edwards in the
 Pandora, frigate, with 13 of the Bounty's people, but we are now
 sorry to learn of her being since lost in the Endeavour Straights.
- We left Otaheite on the 24th January, 1792, and made Owhyhee
 on the 1st of March, where we left Tooworero with his friend
 Tianna, the hero of Mears' voyage. We continued among these
 islands till the 16th, when we directed our course to the N.W.
 New Albion. coast of America, and made New Albion on the 17th of April, in
 lat. $39^{\circ} 20'$ north, and longitude $236^{\circ} 18'$ east. We continued tracing
 the coast to the northward without being able to find a harbour
 or inlet till we entered the Straits of Juan de Fuca† on the 29th, in
 lat. $48^{\circ} 24'$ N. From this to Cape Mendocino, in lat. $40^{\circ} 30'$ N.
 and long. $235^{\circ} 48'$ E., the coast preserves nearly a south direction,
 and affords in many places, particularly to the southward, most
 Beautiful beautiful prospects of hills and dales, varied with woods and ex-
 views. tended pastures mounting up their sides, presenting to the eye
 delightful rural landscapes, and to the mind the idea of a mountainous
 country in a high state of cultivation, which I could not pass
 without often regretting my not being able to land and examine
 it more particularly. We understand at present the Spaniards
 have no settlement to the northward of Port St. Francisco excepting
 Nootka, and one lately established at the entrance of De Fuca
 Straits. It may appear curious that on the day we made the Straits
 of Juan De Fuca we should fall in with the very same Capt. Gray,
 Captain which in Mears' voyage is said to perform that wonderful interior
 Gray. navigation in the sloop Washington. I accompanied one of the
 officers on board his vessel, the Columbia, and he positively averred
 to us that he was never above 50 miles up the Straits, and came
 back the same way he entered, and Mr. Duffin, who is in this port
 at present waiting to carry our despatches to China, says that he
 himself was not above 14 leagues up. On comparing this to Mr.
 Conflicting Mears' assertions you will see the difference. A little within the
 reports. straits, which is about 4 leagues wide, we passed a small port on our
 right hand, where the Spaniards have since established a settle-

* The Chatham. Lieutenant Menzies was on board Captain Vancouver's ship, the Discovery.

† See Lord Grenville's despatch, ante, p. 451.

ment, and continued our course in an easterly direction for about 80 miles. Here the straits widens to about 7 leagues and divides out in various directions; some branches out in a south and south-easterly direction for about 50 or 60 miles into a fine level country, which obtained the name of New Georgia, abounding with extended lawns and rich pastures, not unlike in beauty of prospect the most admired parks in England. Others branch out to the northward and north-eastward, but the principal branch leads to the north-westward, which, after examining all the others attentively to their terminations, we pursued, passing behind Nootka, about 20 leagues inland, and came out to the sea on the 9th of Aug., about the latitude of $51^{\circ} 10' N$.

1792

26 Sept.

New
Georgia.

After this we again resumed our interior examination, keeping the continental shore aboard to the latitude of $52\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$. Here a series of dirty rainy weather obliged us in some measure to relinquish our northern pursuits for this season, and being informed by one of the traders of the store-ship* being at Nootka, and the catastrophe that befel her, we again came out to sea about the lat. $51^{\circ} 40'$ on the 20th of Aug., and arrived here on the 28th, where we found Don Quadra, Governor of St. Blas, and commander-in-chief of the royal navy of Mexico and California, an officer to whose liberality and friendly hospitality we are all ready to testify our sincerest gratitude. He had his broad pendant on board a brig laying in the cove, the rest of his vessels, to the number of six, being at this time out examining different parts of the coast, two of which we had left in De Fuca's Straits behind Nootka.

Nootka.

Hospitality
of the
Spanish
Governor.

He lived on shore at a very decent planked house, considering the situation, where he kept an open table, I may say, for the officers of every vessel that visited the port, and supplied them on board with greens and milk daily.

On our arrival he told Capt. Vancouver that he would put him in possession of this territory and port,† agreeable to his orders and the wish of his Catholic Majesty, giving up all the houses, gardens, &c., &c., as they stood, and that he would haul down the Spanish colours before he went away, and on our hoisting the English colours that he would salute the British flag. But on the arrival afterwards of an American trader, Capt. Inghram, he wonderfully prevaricated from his first intentions, as we believe by the advice of this man (Inghram), and would not give up any part excepting a small nook of the cove, about 100 yards wide, where Mr. Mears had his house and built his vessel, which could not be accepted of.

He promises
to surrender
the territory.Afterwards
offers only a
portion.

Don Quadra left this place a few days ago in the brig for St. Blas, parting with us in the most friendly manner, and leaving Don Coamano and a frigate to command here in his absence, but we expect to see him soon again on our way to the southward at the port of Monterey in California. He put himself under my care

1792
26 Sept.

as a patient on our arrival here for a severe head-ache of which he complained, he said, for upwards of two years, and I was extremely happy that my endeavours proved serviceable in the re-establishment of his health before he went away.

Menzies
appointed
surgeon of
the Dis-
covery.

The surgeon of the Discovery is to return to England in the store-ship by the way of Botany Bay on account of the ill state of his health, and Capt. Vancouver's earnest solicitations has induced me to accept his place, with this proviso, that he will take care it will not interfere but as little as possible with my other pursuits; indeed I have in some measure attended the surgeon's duty since we left the Cape of Good Hope, on account of Mr. Cranston's indisposition, and constantly prescribed for Capt. Vancouver himself since we left England, so that the difference now of attending the duty wholly will be very little, as I have two assistants, and the ship in general healthy; besides, I have by this change got an additional cabin, which will be very serviceable in preserving my collections, so that I trust it will meet with your approbation, as I can assure you that my endeavours will suffer no abatement in consequence thereof in executing the object of my mission.

Seeds for
the King's
gardens.

Mr. Mudge, 1st lieu't of the Discovery, goes home by the way of China with dispatches for the Admir'y, under whose care I send this and a box of seeds directed to you for his Majesty's gardens; and as it is said that the Chatham will sail in the course of a few days for England by the way of Cape Horn I will embrace that opportunity to send duplicates.

I am also happy to acquaint you that Mr. Johnstone is lately promoted to the rank of lieutenant, and I have, &c.,

ARCHIBALD MENZIES.

1 Oct.

WM. RICHARDS, JUNR., TO SIR JOSEPH BANKS (Banks Papers).

1st Oct., 1792.

Proposals
for convey-
ance of
convicts.

WM. Richards, jun'r, most respectfull compliments wait on Sir Joseph Banks, takes the liberty of enclosing him a copy of a letter W.R. sent to Mr. Dundas on the 20th ult'o, with Mr. Dundas answer. Should Sir Joseph Banks deem the proposals sufficient to meet his patronage and support, W.R. shall esteem himself highly honored, and will most gratefully acknowledge Sir Joseph Banks' kindness in speaking in his behalf to Mr. Dundas.

Sir Joseph Banks may rest assured that should Government think proper to engage with W.R. in the proposals that every matter shall be conducted so as to give full satisfaction.*

W.R. hopes Sir Joseph Banks will excuse this liberty, and be pleased to give him a reply. .

* The proposals were accepted, with some modifications. See memorandum of contract, post, p. 671.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

1792

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, October 2nd, 1792.

2 Oct.

I am honoured with yours of the 10th of January, 1792,* by the *Britannia*, which ship arrived the 26th of last July; and I am happy to find that my services have met with approbation. I will not, sir, trouble you with a recapitulation of the wants of this colony, as duplicates of my letters by the Pitt go by this conveyance, further than to say what may point out the necessity of an immediate and adequate supply.

Approval of
Home office.

With respect to those articles of which the colony stands so much in need, I beg leave to observe that all those wants which have been pointed out in my different letters from time to time still exist, or with very few exceptions; and for iron pots in particular, however trifling the article, we have been nearly as much distressed as for provisions: cross-cut saws, axes, and the various tools for husbandry are also much wanted; many of those articles are now made here, but the demand for them is greater than can be supplied, as most of what have been received from England are worn out.

Wants still
exist.

With respect to the cloathing, the osnaburghs sent out are in themselves ill calculated for the cloathing of men who work in the woods. Many bales which have been received, though not rotten, have been so much injured from the damp that they have scarcely borne washing a second time, and one-third of what was sent by the *Britannia* was totally destroyed, and several bales of cloth, and other articles, much injured.

Clothing
damaged
and
destroyed.

I have, sir, in a former letter, wished to have the men's cloathing ready made, as many inconveniences attend our receiving the materials, as I had first desired.

Clothing
should be
ready made.

"The having between three and four thousand people, who are generally in such a state when the supplies arrive that a considerable time passes before they can be clothed, and from the difficulties attending the making up of cloathing for such a number of people."

The *Atlantic* returned to this port from Calcutta on the 20th of last June, and one-third of every article received by that ship, as well as what was received by the *Britannia*, has been sent to Norfolk Island by the *Atlantic*, which returned from thence the 30th of last month, and will, I hope, sail for England by the middle of November next. Nothing will detain her a moment after the ship is ready for sea.

Sending to
Norfolk
Island.

There remains at present in this colony of flour and rice, as bread sufficient for ninety-six days, at two pounds of flour and five pounds of rice per man for seven days, salt provisions sufficient for seventy days at a full ration, and of pease and dholl sufficient for one hundred and fifty-six days, at three pounds per week for each man.

Stock of
supplies.

In Norfolk Island their provisions will last for a longer time. You will, sir, naturally suppose that I anxiously look for the

* Ante, p. 585.

1792 arrival of those ships by which we expect a further supply of
 2 Oct. provisions, and I am very sorry to be under the necessity of
 advertising to the observation I have so often made, that the colony,
 Insufficient having been almost constantly on a reduced ration, is a great
 food. check on the public labour, as well as the cause of many very
 unpleasant circumstances. Men who are inclined to be discon-
 tented find an ample source, and the convicts an unanswerable
 excuse, when pressed to labour. Nor are these the only evils
 Other evils. which attend the untoward circumstances which have kept this
 colony in such a state for nearly four years. When the Atlantic
 arrived from Bengal, this settlement had only thirteen days' flour
 and forty-five days' maize in store at the ration then issued, which
 was one pound and a half of flour and four pounds of maize per
 man for seven days. And when the Britannia arrived, we had
 only salt provisions for fifty-three days at the then ration, which
 was only two pounds of pork per man for seven days.

The arrival of the above ships put it in my power to increase
 the ration, and which, though at present little inferior to the full
 ration, is, from the nature of some articles, and the deficiency of
 others, very far from being satisfactory; nor can the present ration
 be continued many days longer if the Kitty does not arrive.
 The expences attending the supplying the colony with the provisions
 received from Calcutta by the Atlantic will be seen by the accounts
 which accompany this letter*; and I have only to observe that the
 different articles are very inferior to those of a similar nature
 which are furnished from Europe.

Eight casks of salt provisions which were sent from Calcutta
 on speculation, though used as soon as landed, were very bad, but
 the small quantity of provisions in store obliges me to order it to
 be issued. It is, sir, also necessary to observe that the beef
 received from the Britannia is bad in kind; it has been surveyed
 by two officers, a lieutenant and a master of the Navy. Their
 report states, after weighing and examining a considerable number
 of casks: "That the average loss on the hogsheads agreeable to
 the contents marked on them is thirty-six pounds and one-third,
 and on the tierces twenty pounds and one-third. And that the
 whole of the beef appears to be lean, bony, and very coarse, and
 inferior in quality to any we have ever seen issued in his Majesty's
 service."

In addition to the provisions received from Messrs. Lambert,
 Ross, & Co., a merchant, the Hon. John Cochrane, sent eight casks
 of the finest, and of the second sort of flour, and soojee,† and which
 he offered to warrant for a twelvemonth, but when landed it was
 in such a state from being heated, and from the weevil, that it was
 necessary to cause it to be immediately issued. The enclosed
 extract from Mr. Cochrane's letter‡ contains his proposal for
 furnishing this settlement with those articles.

* Not available.

† A kind of flour.

‡ Post, p. 649.

With respect to the cattle purchased at Calcutta, viz., two bulls, 1792
one cow, one calf, two rams, eighteen ewes, and twenty goats, one 2 Oct.
calf, eight ewes, and thirteen goats died on the voyage; and the
bulls being of the buffalo breed will not connect themselves with
our cows, which are of the European breed. The only cow received
from Calcutta was so weak when landed that she has been since
lost by falling into the water when going to drink. We have,
however, three very fine bull calves, which promise well. These stock
consequently
live.

You will, sir, observe by this detail that the period at which
the colony will supply its inhabitants with animal food is nearly
as distant at present as it was when I first landed in this country. Local great
supply un-
promising.
I have in my former letters mentioned the means which appeared
to me to be the readiest and most certain to stock this country
with cattle; merchant ships will do but little, and I fear that
little will be done at a very great expence.

Of the present state of this settlement, I have the satisfaction of
assuring you that the soil and its produce more than answer the
expectations which I have formerly given. Our last year's crop of
maize, notwithstanding the long drought, was 4,844½ bushels, of A good
harvest.
which 2,649½ bushels have been issued as bread for the colony, 695
bushels reserved for seed and other purposes, and not less than
1,500 bushels were stolen from the grounds, notwithstanding every The fields
pillaged.
possible precaution was taken to prevent it.* From the time the
corn began to ripen to the time it was housed, the convicts were
pressed by hunger, and great quantities were stolen and concealed
in the woods; several convicts died from feeding on it in its crude
state, when carrying the grain to the public granary. But in
speaking of these people, it is but just to observe that I can
recollect very few crimes during the last three years but what have
been committed to procure the necessaries of life. Thefts in-
duced by
want.

One thousand acres of ground are in cultivation on the public
account, of which 800 are in maize, the rest in wheat and barley,
at Parramatta and a new settlement formed about three miles to
the westward of Parramatta, and to which I have given the name
of Toon-gab-be,† a name by which the natives distinguish the spot. Toongabbe.
The soil is good, and in the neighbourhood of this place there are
several thousand acres of exceeding good ground. The quantity
of ground in cultivation by the settlers is 416 acres, and they have
97 acres more ground cleared of timber.‡ By the land in cultiva-
tion some judgment may be formed as to the corn, which may next
year be carried into the store towards the support of the colony.
And I flatter myself that the time now approaches in which this

* *Note by Governor Phillip.*—383 bushels of wheat and 50 of barley are sown in the public grounds, and 255 bushels of wheat have been issued in lieu of bread.

† *Phillip* divides the words into syllables, but it was afterwards spelt Toongabbe. The place became a valuable settlement.

‡ *Note by Governor Phillip.*—Acres of land in cultivation, on the public account, 1,000; garden ground, 190; settlers' ground, 415; whole quantity of ground in cultivation, 1,605.

- 1792 country will be able to supply its inhabitants with grain ; but no dependance must be placed on a crop while it is in the ground, consequently regular supplies of flour, &c., from Europe will be necessary until there is a sufficient quantity in store to serve the colony for one year at least. The grub, as in all new grounds, is very destructive. The crop may fail from a dry season, or be lost from fire or other accidents, and to which it may naturally be supposed the crops in this country are more exposed than in Europe.
- 2 Oct. My letters by the Supply, Gorgon, and Pitt will have shewn that Grain raised almost enough for consumption. I look to England for the necessary supplies, of which we still stand in great need, and which I doubt not are now on their passage ; but the great length of time in which this colony has remained in its present state takes away hope from many, and the consequences must be obvious. It has, sir, been my fate to point out wants from Contingencies. Looking to England for supplies. Wants of the colony. Did those wants only respect myself or a few individuals I should be silent ; but here are numbers who bear them badly ; nor has the colony suffered more from wanting what we have not received than from the supplies we have received not arriving in time.
- Settlers. What is observed respecting the officers, non-commissioned officers, and such convicts as propose to become settlers, in yours of the 10th of January marked No. 2,* shall be made the subject of a separate letter.
- Returns. It is, sir, observed in the above letter that no return was made of the stock of provisions in my dispatches sent by the Justinian, consequently that no exact calculation could be made on that head. I had, sir, particularly directed the Commissary to make that return, and which, as far as his memory serves him, was sent to the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury.
- Major Ross. The information given by Major Ross, in his letter of the 29th of August, 1790, will be adverted to when I come to speak of the present state of Norfolk Island, as will also what relates to increasing the number of people and the administration of justice in that settlement.
- The live stock difficulty. It has long been my wish to stock this country with cattle, as recommended ; but it has never been in my power to take any step towards obtaining that desirable end. And here I must beg leave to refer to my former letters, which will point out how utterly impossible it has been for me ever to employ a ship on that service. The *Dædalus* has been pointed out as a vessel to be employed for that purpose when she returns from the north-west coast of America, if not wanted at the Sandwich Islands, by the vessels employed on a survey. How far the *Dædalus* may arrive here in a state fit to proceed to sea again in any time after a voyage of such a length must be very uncertain, and it will require a great length of time, and I fear be attended with very great expence, if this country is to be stocked with cattle through Expenses of importation.

* Ante, pp. 585, 586.

the means of one or two hired transports, where the interests of the owners are so directly opposed to the interests of the Crown, and every possible pretence is made use of to create delays : but, sir, I have to beg your pardon for obtruding my opinion on this subject, having so often done it in my former letters, and I shall follow the directions I have received on that head.

Mr. Z. Clarke, having been appointed Deputy-Commissary of Stores and Provisions on Norfolk Island, will relieve the person now charged with that duty,* and who will be employed at this settlement. When the description of people who form this colony is considered, I presume the necessity of having storekeepers at the different settlements on whom some dependance can be placed will appear, and I have been under the necessity of adding one to the number at Sydney, and one is also appointed at Norfolk Island ; but no more has been promised them than what is paid to the superintendants, and with which they are satisfied, in hopes of being placed in better situations hereafter.

The one whom I have appointed at Sydney was a sergeant of marines, and the one at Norfolk Island came from England with Lieut.-Governor King. The expence attending these appointments is, I am sorry to say, very trifling when compared with what has been hitherto lost from the public stores.

The remittance to be expected from the Kitty† will be applied for the purposes pointed out, and that with the strictest economy.

If people for superintendants of such descriptions as have been pointed out can be found they will be very useful. Of those which have already been received, one is become a settler, and is doing well ; a second has been discharged as useless in every respect ; and a third, who can be well spared, will be discharged, as wishing to become a settler.

The steps which you are pleased to inform me have been taken to prevent the ships from carrying away the convicts will, I doubt not, answer the purpose‡ ; and the necessary proofs against the master of any ship who may offend in future will be transmitted.

The information respecting the promise made to the New South Wales Corps respecting their receiving the usual ration, spirits excepted, without any deduction being made from their pay,§ has been communicated to Major Grose, who, on his arrival, was totally unacquainted with the intentions of Government on that head.

With respect to some of the marines inlisting in the additional company, forty-seven have already entered with Captain George Johnston, the officer who was left with the command of the marines when Major Ross embarked, as will be explained in a letter which accompanies this.

The supplying the deficiency of spirits with beer may be done hereafter, but the former part of this letter will show that that time is distant.

1792

2 Oct.

Store-keepers and superintendents.

Small expense.

Economy.

Superintendents as settlers.

Absconders.

The soldiers' ration.

Extra company of marines.

* Mr. Roger Morley.

† Ante, p. 589.

‡ Ante, p. 588.

§ Ante, p. 588.

1792

2 Oct.

Quaker
families.

As a ship of four hundred tons is taken up for the purpose of bringing out such articles as have been required, I hope her speedy arrival, and that the fifteen families of quakers will come by that conveyance.*

Why more
ships were
asked for.No
personal
object.

You have, sir, observed in your letter, that "the Admiralty had not determined on replacing the *Sirius*, but that that circumstance would not occasion any decrease of the pecuniary emoluments with which I understood my situation was to be attended." I beg leave to say that the opinion I gave as to the necessity of employing King's ships on this station—that is, as I explained in my letters, ships having the officers requisite for keeping a proper discipline on board, and deterring the convicts from making any attempt to escape by seizing on the ship—did not proceed from any view of pecuniary advantage to myself, and to which I never adverted. That object never drew my attention, and the advantages I derived from the *Sirius*—*a captain's pay for a sixth rate*—being by the royal instructions of the twenty-fifth day of April, 1787,† directed to be continued, although there should not be any of his Majesty's ships employed on this station, rendered it totally unnecessary for me to wish for a King's ship under any other idea but the one pointed out in my letters. As that proposition does not appear to meet their Lordships' ideas, I have prepared for the safety of such ships as may be employed here, as far as depends on me, by sending to Norfolk Island those whom it might be presumed would be the ringleaders, should the seizing of any transport be ever determined on.

Spirits
welcome.

In the enclosure containing a list of the articles to be sent out, marked A,‡ I observe that "two thousand three hundred and nineteen gallons of rum, being an allowance of half a gallon for each person per annum," was to be shipped, and it is with great satisfaction I observe from the words which I have quoted that Government has included the convicts, for it is a bounty which many of those people well deserve—and to the undeserving it never will be given. At the same time, I fear that the soldiers not receiving the customary allowance of spirits as in other garrisons will be the source of great discontent.

More provi-
sions
wanted.

The quantity of provisions necessary to serve this colony for twelve months is enclosed‡; and I presume a more considerable quantity of provisions than what is mentioned as shipped on board the *Britannia* and the ships which were taken up when your letter was dated will immediately follow. Salt provisions, which will keep good for any time in this climate, can only be procured from Europe. The badness of what was brought from other parts has been already mentioned.

* The determination of the English Government to send to New South Wales a number of Quaker families had its origin in the proposal of Sutton, ante, pp. 580-585. It was not carried into effect owing to the delay that took place in making arrangements.

† Ante, p. 89.

‡ Not recorded.

The Commissary being obliged to purchase various articles out of the Pitt, where the private property sold in this settlement amounted to upwards of four thousand pounds, may serve in some measure to point out what might be brought by a ship loaded wholly on the account of Government. Many of the most necessary articles which had been put on board that ship were afterwards landed, and yet the stowage of those articles would not have taken up one-quarter of the stowage which the private trade took up. It is not, sir, to reflect on the person who commanded the Pitt that I make this observation, but from feeling the obligation of pointing out a circumstance which may prevent a similar evil, the effects of which are at this moment severely felt in the colony.

A copy of the return of those convicts who died, or run from the Pitt, as sworn to by the naval agent, is enclosed*; and some restrictions to prevent the convicts being permitted to go on shore for the convenience of individuals, by which means I understand several were lost from the Pitt, will, I apprehend, be thought necessary.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

THE HON. JOHN COCHRANE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Extract from a letter from the Honble. John Cochrane, dated Calcutta, 18th March, 1792.

“ON the arrival of the Atlantic, store-ship, I tendered my services to the gentlemen to whom the ship was recommended to supply a considerable quantity of flour on the same terms as I lately supplied the East India Company for their troops on the coast of Cromandel and Malabar, and to guarantee its keeping. But as Messrs. Lambert & Ross have taken the whole contract, they have not thought proper to apply to me for any. Lieutenant Bowen has been so obliging as to allow me to send you eight casks of flour of my own manufactory, two casks of the finest flour bolted on cloth No. 1, two casks of second quality fine flour, two casks of fine soojah, or what the French call roulon, and two casks of second quality of soojah. The flour you will find on inspection to be as fine as any English flour, but not so white in colour; the reason is this: that the red wheat in this country is more plentiful than the white wheat.

If you approve of what I now send as a trial, by the time your orders can come back I will be able to furnish you with any quantity. The second flour now sent, and which in fact is equal to fine, and the second soojah is what I would recommend for your cargo. Flour—two-thirds to be flour and one-third soojah. I will furnish you with flour and soojah of the above qualities, either in jars or casks, at the rate of fifteen shillings sterling per cwt. of 112 lb., and be answerable for its keeping good for twelve months, or I will supply it to you at the fair market price of Calcutta, or the

1792 price at which flour or soojah of the same quality sells for in the
 2 Oct. market, to be ascertained by the clerk of the market, or by any
 person you may appoint."

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Sydney, New South Wales,
 4th October, 1792.

4 Oct. Sir,

The
 Atlantic.

You will please to inform the Right Honorable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that the Atlantic, store-ship, which returned to this port the 20th of last June from Calcutta, under the command of Lieut. Bowen, naval agent, is now fitting for sea, and will sail for England with the remainder of the detachment of marines now on duty in this settlement by the middle of next month.

An extra
 company
 raised
 from the
 marines.

You will, sir, also inform their Lordships that, pursuant to his Majesty's pleasure, communicated to me through the Lord Grenville, when Secretary of State for the Home Department, that a company was to be raised from the marines, to be annexed to the New South Wales corps, and that his Majesty was graciously pleased to permit me to recommend the officers for that company from the marines. I have recommended Captain George Johnston for the command of the company, and that forty-seven men from the marines having inlisted with that officer are discharged from that corps. Sergeant Thomas Smith is also discharged from the marines, being appointed a storekeeper under the Commissary for this territory.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY KING.

Sydney, New South Wales,
 4th October, 1792.

Sir,

I am favoured with yours of the 10th of January, 1792, and which I have barely time to acknowledge.

Substitutes
 for butter.

With respect to what I had formerly observed, relative to the butter, and which led to a supposition that that article might be dispensed with in future, I did, sir, think that butter which does not keep good for any length of time in a hot country, and of which there is always a great waste, might be better supplied by some other article; oil, as you observe, or sugar, are undoubtedly to be preferred.

The
 Neptune.

An inquiry into the conduct of the master of the Neptune* will, I make no doubt, have a good effect, and which I believe to have been highly necessary, for the convicts were certainly very ill-treated; but no specific charge was ever brought against him here, and the first knowledge I had of some circumstances, which, from the affidavits that have appeared in the public papers, it is said I censured, was from these papers themselves.

It may not be unnecessary to observe that it will be some time before a sufficient quantity of pease can be raised here for the use of the garrison, and by whom every article customary in other garrisons is expected.

1792

4 Oct.

Pease.

I am sorry to observe that iron pots are not included amongst the articles to be expected by the next ship, and which are even more necessary than cloathing. They should be from one to five gallons ; about six hundred pots from one to three gallons, and four hundred of from three to five gallons will be necessary.

No iron pots.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

Sydney, New South Wales,

Sir,

4th October, 1792.

The inclosed letter from the major-commandant of the New South Wales Corps, and which is accompanied with my answer, will serve to show the necessity of this colony's receiving a regular supply of provisions, and the opinion formed of those supplies which have been received from India.

Regular supplies necessary.

I am sensible that the officers and men want conveniences which are found in garrisons long established ; but here are some advantages to the officer and soldier not to be found elsewhere, and when the ration is regular, and the means of providing necessaries for the soldier is in a proper channel, I believe there will be no complaints of this country.

Advantages and disadvantages.

The *Britannia* was at anchor in the lower part of the harbour, ready to sail for New Zealand, when I was informed that the officers had come to a resolution of hiring that ship to go to the Cape of Good Hope, and in the same evening I saw Major Grose on the subject ; but being of a very different opinion as to the propriety, as well as of the necessity of such a measure, I wished to prevent what may be supposed to affect the interest of the East India Company, by opening a door to a contraband trade : at the same time, as I could not prevent it, and do not believe that the *Britannia* goes to the Cape with any such view, I beg leave to say that I do not think his Majesty's service will suffer, if the reasons assigned in Major Grose's letter should be deemed sufficient for the step which has been taken, and which being admitted may prevent much discontent.

The *Britannia* hired by officers.

Phillip disapproves.

In my letters by the last ships I have requested that the acts relative to the southern fishery may be sent, and such instructions as may be deemed necessary on that head, for I have no lawyer to consult, and it will probably be the same with the person who is to supply my place when I leave this country, which my state of health obliges me to hope I shall be at liberty to do after the arrival of the first ships, and I believe my returning to England

The southern fishery.

1792

4 Oct.

will be the greatest service I can render this colony, independent of every other consideration, for it will put it in my power to shew what may, and what may not, be expected from it. I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

MAJOR GROSE TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Sydney, October 4th, 1792.

The rations
unwhole-
some.

Measures for
relief.

The situation of the soldiers under my command, who at this time have scarcely shoes to their feet, and who have no other comforts than the reduced and unwholesome rations served out from the stores, has induced me to assemble the captains of my corps for the purpose of consulting what could be done for their relief and accommodation. Amongst us we have raised a sufficient sum to take up the *Britannia*, and as all money matters are already settled with the master, who is also an owner, I have now to request you will interest yourself in our favour, that you will, by representing the necessities of my soldiers, protect this ship from interruption as much as you can, and that you will assist us to escape the miseries of that precarious existence we have hitherto been so constantly exposed to. With every respect, &c.,

FRANS. GROSE,

Major-Commandant New South Wales Corps.

[Enclosure.]

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO MAJOR GROSE.

Sir,

Sydney, New South Wales, October 4th, 1792.

The
Britannia
chartered
by officers.

East India
Company
may inter-
fere

The ration
defended.

In answer to your letter of this day's date, requesting that I would interest myself in favour of the ship *Britannia*, which you inform me is taken up by yourself and officers, and that I would protect that ship from interruption as far as depends on me, I can only observe that the opinion I gave on the subject on the 2nd instant, when the business was first mentioned, must have pointed out that any interruption which that ship might meet with, if the master acted contrary to the tenor of his license from the East India Company, did not by any means depend on me, and I am still of the same opinion with respect to this ship's going to the Brazil, or the Cape of Good Hope, as I was at the above time. I am sensible that the garrison suffers many inconveniences from the necessary supplies not arriving, and which I should gladly do away by any means in my power, yet I cannot acquiesce with you in thinking that the ration served from the public stores is unwholesome; I see it daily at my own table; I am sorry to see that it is neither so good nor in that quantity as I would wish it; and every means in my power has, and will be, taken to remedy the evil. I offered to write to the Cape of Good Hope, and direct all the ships coming to this settlement to receive on board such necessaries as you might order to be purchas'd, and

which I still think would be the best way of procuring them, or to employ the Atlantic, or either of those ships which are expected to arrive from day to day, in procuring the necessaries of which you stand so much in need, if, when those wants are stated officially, such a step appeared necessary; but with a ship lying in the harbour, already in the public employ, and others expected, I saw no necessity for taking up the *Britannia*, nor can I form any judgement how far that ship's going to the Cape will do away all the distresses you have mentioned, as only shoes and the ration are pointed out in your letter. With respect to shoes, the corps has received as many as were demanded, while there were any in store, and the Commissary, as he ever has done, will supply the quarter-master with leather, as long as any remains. As to the nature of the ration, it is, I believe, nearly as good as what is issued to the army and navy in India, and I think that there can be little doubt but that an ample supply of provisions from Europe will arrive before the *Britannia* can return to this port; and there is every reason to expect that a very few months will remove the inconvenience the colony labours under, of which you may form some judgement from what you have seen of my letters by the *Gorgon* and *Supply*, which ships may be supposed to have arrived in England by the latter end of last June.

1792

1 Oct.

A special
ship was
necessary.Better times
coming.Officers'
privileges.

When the *Atlantic* was sent to Calcutta, every officer was permitted to send for such articles as he wanted, and which will always be allowed, and everything else done for the accommodation of the officers and men under your command which the public service admits.

I am sorry that I cannot, with propriety, take any official step in this business.

I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 4th October, 1792.

In answering that part of your letter (No. 2) which respects the number of convicts to be given to officers and others who may become settlers being left to my discretion,* I have the honor to assure you that, in granting that indulgence, I shall particularly attend to the intentions of Government; every year will of course lessen the assistance necessary to be given to settlers, but to those who have not the means of hiring men to assist them in building their huts, and in clearing some ground to begin with, some assistance from the Crown will always be necessary. Experience has shown that a less number of convicts than what I had at first deemed necessary, and that fifteen or eighteen months' support from the store, instead of two years', will be very sufficient to put a settler in such a situation, that he may do very well without any further assistance from the Crown

Convicts
settlers.

* Ante, p. 585.

1792	Experience has also pointed out many inconveniences attending the receiving men as settlers who only look to the convenience of the present moment. With some the sole object in becoming settlers is that of being their own masters, and with others the object is to raise as much money as will pay their passage to England, and then assign their lands to those who take them with the same view. There are many of this description at Norfolk Island, as will appear by the enclosed extract from Lieutenant-Governor King's letter to me on that subject ; but, as they have not received their grants, the necessary steps will be taken to prevent this im-
4 Oct.	position by removing some from the island, and by granting leases of only five or seven years to others, for one or two of these people have attempted to dispose of their grounds as soon as their huts were built, and they had received that assistance which had been promised them.
Selfish settlers.	
How they are to be dealt with.	As all the settlers have been on a reduced ration, it will be necessary to keep them on the public store longer than was intended ; but none of them will exceed two years. It has not been possible hitherto to supply all those people with the live stock promised them on their becoming settlers ; but as hogs and poultry are now increasing very fast, those promises will be made good to them.
Reduced ration.	I have not received any instructions respecting the quantity of land which may be intended to be given to an officer on such officers becoming a settler, nor under what circumstances an officer might be permitted to settle. This is mentioned as an ensign in the New South Wales Corps has been desirous of becoming a settler if he could have been permitted to retire on his half pay.
Officers as settlers.	It is, sir, likewise necessary to observe that the officers in the New South Wales Corps have supposed, on coming to this country, that lands might be granted them, with indulgences similar to those which have been granted to settlers ; and I am very far from wishing to throw the smallest obstacle in the way of officers obtaining grants of land ; but in the present state of this colony the numbers employed on the public buildings in procuring the materials, and in other occupations equally necessary, does not leave more than four hundred and fifty for agriculture, and from that number those convicts must be taken who are to be given to officers or settlers, which will increase the number of those who do not labour for the public, and lessen those who are to furnish the colony with the necessaries of life. At present fifty-one convicts are allowed to the Major-Commandt. of the New South Wales Corps, and those under his command in this place, and convicts in proportion are allowed those on duty at Norfolk Island. The officers, civil and military, have land which they cultivate ; but as the grounds which they have chosen are mostly within the limits of what is marked out for building on hereafter, or on the land which is to remain as common land for the town-
A labour problem.	
Allowance of workmen to the military.	
Occupation on sufferance.	

ship, no lease or grant has been given with such grounds, and the officers understand that they are to give them up when wanted for the public service.

1792

4 Oct.

There is also a superintendant who wishes to settle, when he can be spared from his present employment; but as a settler he will expect land in proportion to what will be granted to those families coming from England. The person in question is a most useful man, and the settlement at Toongabbe is under his direction; increasing his salary might retain him for some time, and which I should promise him, but that the consequence would be every superintendant would expect the same; and whatever their merits may be, they are a set of men who cannot be well spared at this moment. If I was at liberty to grant a greater quantity of land (to the superintendant in question) than I am empowered to grant to the non-commissioned officers, I should propose his becoming a settler, and that a certain quantity of ground should be cleared for him at the public expence, in proportion to the length of time his services as a superintendant may be wanting.

Superintendants as settlers.

What is recommended relative to the cloathing will be particularly attended to, and the necessary implements for manufacturing cloth will be forwarded to Norfolk Island as soon as they arrive.

Clothing.

The inconveniences which attend the want of a criminal court at Norfolk Island are very great, and increase with the number of people; the most daring robberies are committed, and frequently with impunity, for sending the party accused to be tried here is so distressing to the witnesses who must be sent also, and are in general settlers, or men who have ground in cultivation on their own account, which they are obliged to leave, with all their little property, to the care of those in whom they cannot place any great confidence, and their grounds being neglected during their absence, however much the individual has suffered by the robbery, the prosecuting the criminal would distress him still more, and consequently many crimes are never brought forward. I presume that if an offender could be tried on the island, no capital sentence to be carried into execution until confirmed by the Governor of the territory, numerous evils would be prevented.

A criminal court at Norfolk Island necessary.

Offenders escape punishment.

It is, sir, from the accounts which I have received from Lieutenant-Governor King that I am induced to advert to this subject, which has been mentioned in a former letter, and I shall apply the only remedy in my power, that of directing the most notorious characters to be sent to this settlement, and replace them by those of a better description; but this will not, I fear, effectually remove the evil, for the numbers of those whose sentences being expired are free men will increase, and they are a description of men who give infinitely more trouble than the convicts, nor can the number on the island be increased to such an extent as might be wished.

King's Reports.

Removal of criminals to Sydney.

1792

4 Oct.

Poor crops
at Norfolk
Island.

It does not appear that the crops on the island by any means answered the expectations formed by Major Ross, and the people were all so much dissatisfied with the plan laid down for their becoming independent of the store,* and which they pretended to say they were forced into, that Lieutenant-Governor King would have been obliged to give it up, as he has done, had the probability of its answering been ever so great.

Church and
school lands.

In marking out the grounds for settlers, the necessity of deviating from the royal instructions has been mentioned in my former letters; but in the allotments made for the Church and for a school a quantity of ground equal to the largest allotment has been retained for the use of the Crown; and such land being permitted to be leased for fourteen years, and the Lieutenant-Governor having been desirous of having 30 acres of ground in the 400 reserved for the Crown, for the purpose of building a house, presuming that he might hereafter obtain a grant for that ground (the 30 acres), I have complied with his request, and granted him a lease for fourteen years, for which he is to pay two shillings per annum for each acre, the rent to commence at the expiration of the fifth year. As similar leases may be granted in future, a proper form of a lease is much wanted; and here, sir, I beg leave to advert to the question asked in my letter of the 24th of November, 1791, by the Supply, respecting the granting a certain quantity of land to officers, which they would leave, on quitting the country, to children or other persons. A form of a grant of land, with such a clause as might prevent the immediate disposing of the property, is also much wanted. I am sensible that it is easy to introduce a clause which would answer the purpose; but a grant drawn up by an official person would be more regular than anything which has been done here.† I have, &c.,

Grant for the
Lieutenant-
Governor.

Form of
lease.

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

Extract from a letter to Governor Phillip from Lieutenant-Governor King, dated Sydney, Norfolk Island, Sept. 19th, 1792.

“As many of the fifty convicts whom I settled have applied to the master of the Pitt to take them off the island, I found it necessary to take some steps with respect to these people, and to endeavour to prevent many evils and misunderstandings that will necessarily happen if these people get their grants and afterwards leave the island, which inconveniences to the public will be more aggravated if they are permitted to make over their grants, together with their lots, to those women whom they have married, or to sell them to any one they please. If it should happen to be a deserving man or woman that gets it, it may be well; but I much

Trafficking
in land.

* Ante, pp. 445-448.

† The only form of grant in use at this time was apparently that adopted in the case of the first settler. Ante, p. 592.

fear it would in general go to people of a very different description. Soon after the Pitt's departure I took an opportunity of sending for the above fifty settlers, and pointed out to them the necessity there was for my understanding their several intentions, and to inform them that if any of them endeavoured to leave the island before or soon after the twelve-month might be expired for which they were to be victualled from the public stores they would be stopped until that twelve-months' provisions should be made good to the public. I also informed them that those who had any idea of leaving the island could not plead ignorance of this regulation, and that I knew it to be the intention of many of them to gain what they could from their grounds, and when they had realized enough to carry them off the island, to leave their families, which would be a great burthen to the public. Some of them hoped that if they cleared their ground they might be permitted to make their grants over to their wives or their friends, by which the industrious individual would suffer greatly, as fifty of the best and most desirable lots would, in time, become the property of abandoned women, burthened with children.

"Several thefts have been committed during this month, which have in general received slight punishments, as they were mostly occasioned by hunger. On the 23rd, after receiving their provisions, five convicts went into the woods, where they joined a convict (named James Clarke) who had been out a fortnight : they continued plundering the grounds of settlers and others, and were so daring as to make an attack on the stock in the farm-yard, and had succeeded so far as to cut the throat of a fine goat, but on being discovered they left the carcass behind them : having just before plundered my garden, and those of other officers of everything they could take. These daring outrages made it necessary for me to publish a proclamation declaring those fugitives to be outlaws, and for every person to use their utmost to take them, dead or alive, at the same time offering a reward to those who might apprehend them. Four were taken on the night of the 29th, and as the next day (Saturday) was the day the provisions were issued, the justices having found them 'guilty,' they received 100 lashes each, in part of 300 to which they were sentenced, and also to be kept at hard work and in irons during the remaining part of the transportation. On the night of the 30th another man was brought in, who was the principal confederate of the convict who had been out so long, and avowed himself the person who had killed the goat, saying he did it in hopes he should be hung. This hardened wretch is not more than 18 years of age, and has made two attempts to murder people. The principal still remains in the woods, notwithstanding the greatest search is made for him. The next day being Sunday I forgave the first four, as they came in the Pitt, and as the tales which had been told them of the woods affording a livelihood was a strong inducement.

1792

4 Oct.

Restriction on settlers who consent to leave.

Daring offenders.

Outlaws.

Punishment.

1792	"As the settlers have been so frequently robbed by the runaway	
4 Oct.	convicts, they applied to me for arms, which I granted to them.	
Indian corn.	"About 100 acres of Indian corn have been planted, many acres	
	of which we have been obliged to replant three different times,	
	owing to the destructive effects of the ground grub, which have	
	destroyed the whole of the corn growing on the flats, but the	
	greatest part of the hundred acres is very thriving, and has a	
Harvest	promising appearance of doing very well ; the Indian corn, wheat,	
prospects.	&c., planted by the different settlers also looks well, and everything	
	at present promises ample returns. The new ground is not at all	
	infested by the ground grub, which gives the settlers a very great	
	advantage over the public grounds, which are greatly infested	
	with them, and occasions great loss of seed and labour.	
Population	"The following is an exact statement of the numbers now on	
of Norfolk	the island :—	
Island.	Officers, civil and military, non-commissioned officers, }	
	and free people, with their wives and children. }	121
	Settlers from the marines, seamen, and convicts	123
	Wives, women, and children belonging to the above	179
	Convicts taken off the store by settlers, and convicts }	
	who have served their time of transportation, and }	men..... 59
	who provide for themselves. }	women.. 17
	Servants to officers, overseers, watchmen, under the	
	Provost-Martial, hospital cooks, barbers, taylors,	
	bakers employed at the stores, shoemakers, and }	101
	assisting the surveyor. }	
	Clearing half-acres, &c., for settlers.....	60
	Average number of sick during the month, including }	
	invalids. }	91
	Women who do not work from being incapacitated, }	
	living with officers as washing-women, having }	137
	young children, and children. }	
		888
Non-	"Deduct 59 men and 17 women off the store, remains 812 persons	
workers.	on the island, who do nothing towards maintaining themselves.	
Workers.	"The whole number of souls on the island is 1,115, from which	
	number taking 812, there remains 303 convicts (including 22	
	females), to carry on all the works, namely, sawing, carpenters, boat-	
	building, blacksmiths, shingle-makers, charcoal burners, masons	
	and labourers, quarrymen, lime-burners, lath-makers, paling,	
	barrow-men, bringing stones for building, and the cultivation of	
	the ground for the public use, thatchers, thrashers, &c. ; 158 of	
	the above are constantly employed in cultivation, consequently	
	145 remain to carry on the other works. I have made the above	
	statement in order to give your Excellency an idea of the small	
	progress we have made since being on a reduced ration.	
Robberies.	"The robberies, both on public and private property, having	
	for these some months past been of so daring a nature, and the	
	situation of the island, and those upon it, requiring some examples	
	to prevent the growing property of the settlers and the public being	

plundered, I do not doubt but that your Excellency will see the great necessity of stopping these practices which strike so deeply at the peace and property, as well as the public security. 1792
4 Oct.

"James Clarke, a convict who has been for some time past a fugitive in the woods, and has constantly plundered the grounds of several people, was shot at by Leonard Dyer, whose ground he was robbing at the time he shot him. A chief shot.

"This unhappy wretch, who was killed, has been constantly in the woods these four months past, and has been a terror to every settler. Every patch of potatoes or cabbages were plundered by him, and notwithstanding the greatest exertions were made by the different settlers to detect him, he always succeeded in robbing them, and got off with his booty. His crimes.

"The quantity of ground sowed, belonging to the public, is nearly as follows, viz. :—In and about Arthur's Vale, one hundred and six acres of wheat, and seventeen acres of maize; at Queensborough, twenty-six acres of wheat, and ninety acres of maize; at Phillipburgh, fourteen acres of maize, all which is very thriving, and I have a great pleasure in informing your Excellency that there is every appearance of a plentiful crop from the quantity of ground sowed, which would have been much greater but from the work being carried on so very slowly, owing to the shortness of the ration, and the weak state of the labouring part of the convicts, and a quantity of ground originally cleared for the Government, which has unavoidably fallen into settlers' lots. Excepting a few, the settlers in general do very well; most of them have a good space of ground cleared on their different lots, and their crops are in great forwardness. Land under crop. Short ration.

"The seamen and marines late belonging to the *Sirius* are all doing very well, and will in a few months be in very good circumstances, as their crops are likely to be good. Settlers from the *Sirius*.

"I am sorry to say that no amendment is made in manufacturing the flax of this island. I am confident that a native of New Zealand would in a short time enable us to make a great progress in cloathing; but till then I fear we shall not be able to improve on the pattern now sent. Your Excellency may depend on my doing my utmost to promote that, as well as every other improvement. Flax manuf-
facture.

"Respecting Mr. Chapman's appointment as storekeeper at Phillipburgh,* the necessity of that appointment will be very obvious, as two-thirds of the Atlantic's cargo is landed there, and where provisions are issued. Storekeeper.

"J. T. Doidge, late superintendant of convicts, is become a settler. I have to request being informed what are the encouragements and conditions on which the superintendants settle. A settler.

"The quantity of ground now in cultivation for the use of the public, and which I have mentioned in a former part of my letter, is two hundred and fifty-three acres, and I hope ten or Cultivation.

* Mr. W. N. Chapman, afterwards Secretary to Governor King at Sydney.

1792

4 Oct.

Good
harvest
prospects.

twelve acres in addition will be cropped by the middle of November. Everything at present appears likely to yield a good return, which may be estimated at upwards of five thousand bushels; much may also be got from the different settlers, and other individuals, if I receive orders to purchase it.

Disturbing
influences.

"I think it highly probable that the store will be eased of two hundred people if the crops belonging to private persons turn out good; but the whole of the above statement must depend on the continuation of the present favourable aspect, for the time is not past when a great part of our crop may be hurt by the grub and caterpillar, many acres of maize have been planted thrice.

Reduced
labour and
short ration.

"The unavoidable reduced labour, in consequence of the short ration and the other reasons which I have had the honor of pointing out to your Excellency in a former part of my letter, have prevented that quantity of ground being cleared which would have enabled us to become every year more independent; but I am sorry to say that our labour these nine months past (from the above causes) has not been so great as might be expected; but as these difficulties will in a part be done away very soon, I hope next year, or after this crop, to answer that part of your letter wherein you wish to know the time when further supplies may be no longer necessary with more certainty than I possibly can now. But it is my present opinion that we shall be independent for grain and flour after the next year's crop, if this and the succeeding one turn out well. Respecting animal food, that will be some time longer necessary, particularly for the civil and military, although there will be a great quantity of swine on the island next year if our crops don't fail.

Good land-
ing places
made.

"Having with infinite labour made an opening on the stone beach at Cascade Bay for landing, I found after a gale of wind from the northward that it was filled up with large stones. I therefore turned my attention to erecting a crane on the landing-rock, at the east end of Cascade Bay, which is connected with the road by a strong and well-framed bridge, and some rocks that were under water, and have been blown to pieces, have rendered the north side of the island very accessible, and have removed every obstacle respecting landing safely and conveniently on this island, which now can be always easily effected either in Sydney or Cascade Bay, as they reciprocally become the lee side of the island. But artificers are much wanted."

Landing
safe and
convenient.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, October 4th, 1792.

Assistant-
Surgeon
Arndell.

In the return of settlers which I have the honour to transmit herewith, you will observe the name of Arndell to a grant of sixty acres of land. He is an assistant surgeon, who wishes to

become a settler, and who has with that view got about ten acres of land in cultivation at his own expence; and as I understand that some encouragement was given to the surgeons, to expect being put upon the staff, and to receive half-pay after a certain time of service, I am induced, from the good conduct of the assistant surgeon, Mr. Thomas Arndell, and his attention to his duty, to beg leave to recommend him as deserving of some reward for his past services. He continues to do his duty at Parramatta, where he has had the direction of the hospital for near three years, and will be continued in that charge until he receives permission to retire, and which he has requested by letter, a copy of which I have the honour to enclose.

1792

4 Oct.

His services.

From particular circumstances not immediately necessary to trouble you with, I signed the grant for the sixty acres of land, and which, as the colony will be benefited thereby, I hope will be approved of: although, as holding a place under the Crown, Mr. Arndell does not immediately come under the description of any of those to whom I have been directed to grant lands.

A grant of 60 acres.

As an assistant surgeon will be necessary when Mr. Arndell is permitted to retire, I beg leave to recommend Mr. Edward Laing, who is at present surgeon's mate to the New South Wales Corps, to be one of the assistant surgeons to this colony. I have, &c.,

New appointment.

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

Return of settlers and persons to whom lands have been granted: 8 Oct.

At and near Parramatta.

Settler, late superintendent of convicts	1	Parramatta.
Settlers, late of the marines	...	...	8
Do., seamen late of his Majesty's ship Sirius	...	...	2
Do., convicts whose sentence of transportation have expired	...	...	53
An assistant surgeon (Mr. Thos. Arndell)	...	...	1
An emancipated convict, who acts as assistant surgeon	1	

At Norfolk Island.

Settlers from the marines	46	Norfolk Island.
Do. from his Majesty's late ship Sirius (seamen)	...	...	8
Do. from the Supply, armed tender (do.)	...	...	1
Settlers from convicts, times expired	...	...	3
Desirous of becoming a settler, J. T. Doidge, late superintendent of convicts	...	...	1
Desirous of becoming settlers, convicts whose times are expired	45	

Sydney, 8th October, 1792.

A. PHILLIP.

[Enclosure.]

Mr. THOS. ARNDELL* TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Parramatta, 10th July, 1792.

Finding myself advancing in life, and wishing to provide for a family who depend upon me for a support, I take the liberty to request that your Excellency will be pleased to move his

Wishes to retire.

* Second-Assistant Surgeon.

1792

4 Oct.

and become
a settler.

Majesty's Ministers to permit me to retire from the service, with such part of my pay as my services in this country may be thought to merit; and that the land, which I have began to cultivate, with a view to becoming a settler, may be granted me for that purpose.

I have, &c.,

THOMAS ARNDELL.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, October 4th, 1792.

Extra com-
pany of
marines.

The desire I had of securing to his Majesty's service in this country those marines who had been selected to remain here when the rest of the detachment was embarked, induced me to nominate Captain Lieutenant George Johnston* to the company to be annexed to the New South Wales Corps, until his Majesty's pleasure should be known, pursuant to Lord Grenville's letter of the 7th of November, 1791, which informed me that his Majesty had been graciously pleased to permit me to recommend such officers as I deemed deserving of the royal favour.

Good
soldiers.

I have thought that the opportunity of retaining a certain number of soldiers who had distinguished themselves by their good conduct for more than four years was not to be lost, although their numbers were not sufficient to form a compleat company; and most of them offered themselves on condition of their serving with the officer under whose command they had been left when the rest of the detachment was embarked for England, and who I beg leave to recommend as a deserving officer, who is very properly qualified for the company.

Necessity of
immediate
action.

I hope that my not having waited for further directions from the Secretary of War will be justified by the necessity of immediately accepting the offer made by those men of inlisting; for had I waited for the arrival of a ship from England, it was more than probable that, on their seeing themselves at the eve of returning home, few of them would have been willing to have remained in the country.

Enlistment.

Of the fifty-nine non-commissioned officers and privates of the marines thirty-eight have inlisted; and four men, whose sentences had expired, and who since their arrival in this country had conducted themselves properly, have been permitted to enlist.

A contingent
appoint-
ment.

I have, sir, to beg leave to explain that my saying in my former letter of the 5th of last April that I had nominated Captain Lieutenant George Johnston to the company proceeded from the hurry in which I then wrote, the ship by which that letter was sent having at that time left the cove and then going to sea. My meaning was, that he was charged with the command of the company until his Majesty's pleasure should be known, and I only

* He became Captain on the death of Captain Shea, and was afterwards Major of the New South Wales Corps. He placed Governor Bligh under arrest in 1808.

meant to recommend him for the company, and for which his conduct during his service in this country has given him so good a claim. 1792
4 Oct.

Of the marine settlers at Norfolk Island, nine have also given up their lands and enlisted with Captain Johnston, so that the strength of his company is three serjeants, three corporals, two drummers, and forty-six privates, of which number forty-seven are from the marines, two drummers, soldiers' sons, one private from a transport, and four from men whose sentences were expired. Strength of the new company.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 8th October, 1792. 5 Oct.

I have the honor to enclose a list of the superintendants and others who are employed at this settlement, and at Norfolk Island, as also the names of those superintendants who have died, or been discharged.*

The present number of superintendants, and those classed under that denomination, exceed the number provided for in the estimates, but there is a necessity of having a master carpenter at Norfolk Island, as well as at this settlement, and as the one who now acts in that capacity here cannot be removed without some inconvenience to the individual, the master carpenter who came out in the Royal Admiral goes to Norfolk Island, and the convict whose term of transportation being expired, now acting there in that capacity, will be otherwise disposed of. Superintendents.

Mr. Donovan, late midshipman of his Majesty's ship Sirius, and who has been usefully employed in Norfolk Island, is said to be appointed a lieutenant in the Royal Navy, and will therefore be discharged on the first ship's going to the island, in order for his returning to England. Lieutenant Donovan.

John Davis will be discharg'd as soon as the Atlantic is ready to sail, as two convicts now employed in the stores, and to whom emancipation at a future period has been promised, provided they remain faithful to the trust reposed in them, will supply his place: and Andrew Hume will be permitted to become a settler, which will reduce the number to the limits prescribed by the estimate. Emancipation.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 9th October, 1792. 9 Oct.

A person to discharge the duty of Provost Martial being indispensibly necessary on my arrival in this country, and the person who was appointed in England, Mr. George Alexander, having thought proper to remain on shore when the ships sailed, I appointed Mr. Henry Brewer, then a rated midshipman on board The Provost-Marshal.

* Not available.

1792 his Majesty's ship *Sirius*, to act in that capacity, which he has
 9 Oct. continued to do from the 26th of January, 1788, the date of my
 warrant; and having had very sufficient reason to suppose that it
 never was Mr. Alexander's intention to come to this country, I
 detained Mr. Brewer to fill that office, and having recommended
 him to the Secretary of State for the appointment, I was given to
 understand by Mr. Nepean that my request would be complied with;
 but Mr. Brewer's agent now writes that no pay could be received
 for him as Provost-Martial, as he was not confirmed in that office.

I therefore beg leave to lay the whole of his case before you,
 and as no fee nor any kind of emolument attends the office of
 Provost-Martial, and the person in question has done the duty
 near five years, he will be involved in difficulties from which he
 never will be able to extricate himself, unless he receives the
 appointment annexed to the office he has filled; and I also beg
 leave to recommend him for a confirmation of the appointment of
 Provost-Martial to this territory.

William Broughton, who has acted as storekeeper from the
 20th of February, 1789, and who is now employed in that character
 at Parramatta, is also informed by his agent that no money could
 be received on his account. This person has been included in the re-
 turns sent home, and has been promised the same salary as is allowed
 to a superintendant, and for which, and for an order being given for
 his salary being paid in England, I beg to recommend him. He
 is greatly distressed by the disappointment. I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

COST OF GOVERNMENT.

10 Oct. AN Account of the charge and expence of the Civil and Military
 Establishments in the Settlements of New South Wales from
 the first establishment of the Colony to the present time* :—

CIVIL ESTABLISHMENT.

	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
To the 10th of October, 1790	13,190	17	8			
To do. do., 1791	4,558	7	8			
To do. do., 1792	4,726	0	0			
				22,475	5	4

MILITARY ESTABLISHMENT.

Pay of marines to 1st January, 1791, about...	18,784	0	0			
Charge of the New South Wales Corps from 5th June to 24th Dec., 1789, including levy money, the allowance for cloathing and accoutrements, and contingencies. }	4,751	8	11			
The charge of the said corps for the year 1790; according to the establishment. }	6,134	7	3			
For the establishment, 1791	6,134	7	2 $\frac{3}{4}$			
For do., 1792	8,915	6	8			
				44,719	10	0 $\frac{3}{4}$
				£67,194	15	4 $\frac{3}{4}$

* 16th October, 1792

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY KING.

1792

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 11th October, 1792. 11 Oct.

I have received your letter, dated the 15th of May, by the Royal Admiral, inclosing the copy of an agreement made with the master carpenter and master miller. The settler, Jameson, with his family, arrived in this ship. The Royal Admiral.

I have, sir, also to acknowledge the receipt of the estimates from October, 1792, to October, 1793. Estimates.

The Royal Admiral arrived here the 7th instant. When that ship left the Cape of Good Hope, which was on the 30th of August last, the Kitty had not then arrived there. I am, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 11th October, 1792.

I am honoured with your letter by the Royal Admiral, dated the 15th of May last, which ship arrived here the 7th instant. The Royal Admiral.

Of the convicts embarked on board that ship, ten men and two women died on the passage, and four children were born, one of whom died; one male convict escaped at the Cape of Good Hope, and seventy-two men, eleven women, and five children have been landed sick. I have no doubt but that strict justice has been done them, and hope the sending out convicts and stores by ships employed in the service of the East India Company will answer the end proposed by Government; but, sir, if I was to give an opinion, I think the people have been too much crowded on board this ship. Many convicts sick.

That there are great numbers of spermacetic whales on this coast is confirmed by all the whalers; but, I believe, not one of them gave the coast a fair trial, nor can I suppose that they left it solely on account of bad weather and strong currents. The weather on the coast of Brazil is not better than it is on this coast, nor have the whalers there those advantages of harbours which ships employed on this fishery would have: as to the currents, they are pretty much the same on both coasts. Over-crowding.

The permitting of spirits amongst the civil and military may be necessary, but it will certainly be a great evil. Whaling.

The want of a place in which the copper and other articles on board the Barrington and other transports would have been secure had it been seized, until the legality of that measure had been determined, and the not having the last Acts of Parliament relative to the southern fishery, were amongst the reasons which induced me to let the transports proceed on their voyage, and for which I am now very sorry.* Release of transports.

The Commissary is directed to mark the quantities of every article wanted when he makes demands: he will also inform the Treasury that no further supplies of thread, yarn, or stills will be necessary for three or four years.

* Ante, pp. 547, 550, 555.

1792

11 Oct.

Minor
matters.

What relates to live stock and the culture of the ground will be seen in my letter marked No. 2.

The master carpenter and miller are landed, as is the person sent out to become a settler, or to be otherwise employed in the colony.

The port wine, spirits, and tobacco which are to be furnished the officers and others at prime cost, will be a matter of great conveniency to those persons.

Official
recognition.

You are, sir, pleased to express your regret at my being obliged to return to England on account of my health,* and I feel much satisfaction from the manner in which that circumstance is mentioned.

An obscure
despatch.

How far that part of your letter to which the above alludes may have been intended to convey to me his Majesty's permission to return, I am doubtful, and although I am inclined to think it has been written with that intention, and feel how necessary it is for me to give up, at least for a time, the charge of this Government, which is very far from what I wish to do at the moment the colony is approaching to that state in which I have so long and anxiously wished to see it; still, sir, I fear there is a possibility of its being expected that I should remain until permission to quit the Government is more fully and clearly expressed; and as there appears to be a wish that I should remain in this country some time longer, I shall wait the arrival of the next ships.†

Phillip's
return post-
poned.

I have, &c.,

A. PHILLIP.

LORD GRENVILLE TO THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL OF INDIA.

My Lord,

Whitehall, 11th Octo., 1792.

Supplies
from India.

The supplying his Majesty's colony of New South Wales as well with live stock as with Indian corn and the seeds of vegetables from Bengal is conceived to be a measure which must be highly advantageous to that colony, and I have in consequence received his Majesty's commands to desire that your Lordship will take such steps for carrying the same into execution as shall appear to you to be most advisable.

Live stock
from India.

It is deemed expedient for the present to confine the live stock which may be sent to sheep and a proportionate number of cows and bulls, as being best adapted to the present state of cultivation there.

I forbear to mention any precise number, as that must depend on the size of the vessel best adapted for such service, as well as on other local circumstances.

Mode of
supply.

The Governor of New South Wales will be made acquainted by the first opportunity with the mode of supply herein adopted, in order that he may make such preparation for its reception as may be necessary.

GRENVILLE.

* Ante, p. 625.

† Phillip sailed for England in the Atlantic transport on the 11th December, 1792. On the 23rd July, 1793, shortly after his arrival in London, he wrote to Mr. Dundas resigning the governorship on account of ill-health.

GENERAL RETURNS of the Marines doing duty at Sydney, New
South Wales, Oct. 12th, 1792.*

1792
12 Oct.

					1st Lieutenants.	Orderly Sergeant to the Governor.	Sergeants.	Corporals.	Drummers.	Private s.
Present —										
Fit for duty	..	..	..	..	3	1	2	..	..	15
Unfit for duty	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1
Total..					3	1	2			16

1st Lieutenants : John Poulden, Thomas Davey, Thomas Timmis.
Judge Advocate : David Collins, Esq.

A. PHILLIP.

CAPTAIN VANCOUVER TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir, Discovery, at sea, 15th Oct'r, 1792. 15 Oct.

Agreeable to the order and directions transmitted to me from my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, I herewith dispatch the *Dædalus*, hired transport, under the command of Lieutenant James Hanson, by whom your Excellency will receive this, and who is directed to put himself under your command, and to follow your orders for his farther proceedings. The *Dædalus*.

You will also herewith receive a list of the remaining part of the said transport's cargo, which his Majesty's ship *Discovery* and armed tender the *Chatham*, under my command, have not in the present instance been able to take on board ; as likewise a list of such part of the said cargo as under the present circumstances I do not deem essential to me in putting into execution his Majesty's commands entrusted to my care. The remaining part is, however, absolutely necessary for that purpose, and, agreeable to their Lordships' directions, I am to request your Excellency will cause the same to be forwarded to my address, and to arrive at the port of Nootka about the month of August following, where, on my return from pursuing my examination of the coast of N.W. America, I shall call in order to take the said stores and provisions on board. We are now on our passage to some of the Spanish ports on the south part of the coast of New Albion, where I intend putting on board the *Dædalus*, for the use of his Majesty's colony under your Excellency's government, so many breeding cattle and sheep as she can conveniently take, which breed, inur'd to countries but slightly cultivated, have at Nootka succeeded to a very high degree with scarce the smallest care and attention. I therefore trust they will be found useful in New Her cargo.

Stores for Nootka.

Cattle and sheep for New South Wales.

* The marines had been replaced by the New South Wales Corps. Only a small detachment of the former remained on duty.

1792

15 Oct.

South Wales. Lieutenant Hanson, as you will observe by his orders, has likewise directions to pay attention to lose no opportunity of procuring such live stock and refreshments as may be useful at Port Jackson, from the different places he may fall in with during his passage across the Pacific Ocean.

Supplies for
the expedi-
tion to be
kept up.

And as there is a probability on my arrival with the store-ship at some of the Spanish ports aforesaid I may find it convenient to take on board some further supply of provisions, I beg leave to inform your Excellency that in that case it will be necessary for the deficiency so occasioned to be made up, as likewise any that may be caused by leakage, decay, or other unforeseen accidents, that quantity being absolutely necessary to enable me to perform that part of my orders which still remain unexecuted.

New Albion.

De Fuca's
Straits.

A cluster of
islands.

King
George's
Sound.

Lieutenant Hanson will, I trust, be able to satisfy your Excellency's curiosity respecting the general proceedings of our voyage, so far as it is at present extended; under which circumstances I shall not intrude on your leisure further than observing that we fell in with the coast of New Albion on the 17th of April, and passed Cape Mendocino in lat. $40^{\circ} 28\frac{1}{2}'$ N. and $235^{\circ} 50'$ E. longitude; from whence we traced the shores at the distance of one, two, or three leagues, circumstances so concerning, without finding any port or opening in the land until we reached, on the 29th of April, the south entrance of De Fuca's Straits, situate in $48^{\circ} 23'$ N. lat. and $235^{\circ} 38'$ E. long., which inlet we pursued up several arms of the sea, determining the extent of each, and keeping the continental shore always in boats, as far east as the long. $238^{\circ} 0' 2''$, in the lat. of $48^{\circ} 0' 0''$ N., from which station we coasted the continent in an irregular N.-westerly direction to the lat. of $51^{\circ} 45'$ N. and $232^{\circ} 0' 4''$ E. long., whence it again winds to the eastward to the long. of $235^{\circ} 0' 5''$, in the lat. of $52^{\circ} 15'$ N., which station ended our present northern campaign, on the 18th of August, and where we shall recommence an examination in the ensuing spring. The direction of the continent here pointed out leaves the land in which Nootka is situated, an island, or rather a cluster of islands, of considerable extent, caused by the junction of Queen Charlotte's Sound and De Fuca's entrance, not very badly delineated in Arrowsmith's charts, leaving a very disagreeable and intricate navigation between them and the continent.

On my passage into this ocean I visited a small part of the S.W. coast of New Holland, and there discovered one very excellent port, which I have honored with the name of King George the Third's Sound. As I think from its situation, the fertility of the country, with Oyster Bay Harbour, seas, &c., it may be worthy some further attention, I have sent you my survey thereof with the adjacent coast, and some views of the surrounding country, which,

though not executed with any degree of neatness, the positions of the different harbours, &c., as also the different head-lands, &c., as also their appearance [are given], without, I believe, any material error. We likewise, made two other discoveries, which, belonging to your neighbourhood, I shall beg leave to communicate, the first being a very dangerous cluster of barren rocks, being seven in number, extending in a direction about N. 70° E. and S. 70° W. true, occupying the space of about 3 leagues, which, from their situation, I have called the Snares; the largest, which is the N. easternmost, and about a league in circumference, is in the lat. 48° 03' S. and 166° 20' E. longitude, bearing from S. Cape of New Zealand S. 40° W. true, 19 leagues distant, and from the southernmost part of the Traps S. 62½° W. true, 20 leagues distant: the largest, which is the highest, may be seen in clear weather about 8 or 9 leagues, the other is an island discovered by the Chatham, after being separated from us the morning we discovered the Snares, by a very violent storm, and which, in honor of His Lordship who presides at the Admiralty Board, obtained the name of Chatham Island: along the N. side of which he sailed about 12 leagues: it is situated in lat. 43° 48' S. and 183° 02' E. long., its inhabitants much resembling the indians of New Zealand, who were found on the N. side, which was the only part they saw, and where they anchored and took possession: they, however, discovered no port.

Knowing of no other information that can be worthy your present attention, I beg leave to assure you I have the honor to be with best wishes for your welfare, and that of his Majesty's colony under your Excellency's government. Yours, &c.,

GEO. VANCOUVER.

GOVERNOR PHILLIP TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

My dear Nepean,

Sydney, 16th October, 1792.

The Britannia going to the Cape, although very much against my inclination, gives me an opportunity of forwarding the despatches, and of saying that I most sincerely hope your voyage has restored your health.

The Atlantic will sail about the middle of next month, and most probably my letters by that ship will be the first you'll receive. As to myself, I have still to wait the arrival of another ship, and every day tells me that my return to England, for a time at least, is more and more necessary.

The manner in which Mr. Dundas speaks of my leaving this country is very handsome†; but I do not well understand that part of his letter. I fear that it may have been supposed I would remain until His Majesty's permission was clearly expressed; and I should be sorry, after all my labours, to have it said on my return that I was not expected. The ship which was to follow the Royal Admiral

* A private letter.

† Ante, p. 625.

1792

16 Oct.

Awaits
definite
instructions.

will, I hope, clear up the doubt, and not only leave me at liberty to quit the Government, but also put the means of doing it in my power; otherwise I do not see how I am to get home after the Atlantic has sailed, unless it is by the way of China or the north-west coast of America, neither of which would be very agreeable to a man going in search of health. That you may long enjoy yours is the wish of a very sincere and faithful friend.

A. PHILLIP.

I suppose you'll hear from your brother, but as he has some doubts of writing by this ship, he is well and much better than he has been for some time.

MR. W. RICHARDS, JUNR., TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.*

Sir,

16 October, 1792.

Carriage of
convicts.

Agreeable to your request I enclose you the terms whereby I am ready to engage for the convicts from Ireland which are as reasonable as it is possible to be done, doing that justice which Government have a right to expect. Should you think it necessary I am ready to go to Ireland and settle the time, &c., of this conveyance with Mr. Hobart as well as to superintend their embarkation.

WM. RICHARDS, junr.

Terms.

To lay in eight mo's provision for the passage.

To go to Dublin and Cork and remain twenty days at both places for embarking the convicts. Demurrage after that time as usual.

To supply two tons of shipping for each convict agreed for.

To be paid for the no. agreed for.

To be victualed every day in one port in the passage with fresh provisions, &c., and to be paid as usual.

To have three pounds p. ton for all stores, &c., put on board after the convicts, &c., are accomodated.

Twenty-six pounds p. head for each convict landed.

Twenty pounds p. head for each convict embarked and not landed—which is the cost of ship hire, cloaths, bed and bedding, surgeon, medicine, &c., and sixpence p. head p. day for every day victual'd till the day of death. The remaining provision of the eight mo's lain in together with the cloathing, bed and bedding of such convict to be deliver'd into his Majestie's stores free from charge, which are the only articles by which a contractor can be benefitted in the case of the death of any one.

N.B.—In the above charge is £2 14s. p. head alowed for an additional number of seamen which the contractor must have as a guard for the convicts.

Dangers of the seas and mutinies excepted.

* Nepean, who went to the West Indies for the benefit of his health in December, 1791, had now resumed duty as Under Secretary at the Home Office.

Payment as follows:—£10 p. head on all being ready and the vessels leaving their moorings.

£10 p. head on leaving Ireland.

The remainder on final settlement.*

1792

16 Oct.

Payment.

WM. RICHARDS, junr.

MEMORANDUM OF CONTRACT.

Heads of a contract to be made with Mr. Richards for transporting convicts from Ireland to New South Wales:—

To transport, victual, and clothe two hundred and seventy convicts and stores. Terms of contract.

To put on board eight months' provisions, a proportion of necessaries for preserving their health, and a surgeon to attend them.

To supply them with beds and bedding.

Two tons allowed each convict and soldier, in which is includ'd their lodging room, provisions for the passage, and provisions and clothing for nine months after their arrival.

Convicts to be supplied with fresh provisions in foreign ports four days in a week.

Soldiers to be victualled according to the establishment of the navy for one shilling per day for each soldier.

£17 to be paid for each convict embark'd.

£5 in addition for every convict land'd in New South Wales. Payment.

To be paid in the following manner, viz:—

£7 per head when the cabins and bulk heads are built.

£10 per head when all the provisions, water cask, stores and necessaries are on board and the ship's complete and ready to receive the convicts, being certified by the naval agent at Deptford.

£20 per day demurage for 1,000 tons, and 6d. per day for each convict victualled.

Demurage to commence after the usual lying allowed for embarking and disembarking the convicts.

Bulk heads, cabins, gratings, air scuttles, windsails, &c., &c., to be found by the contractor.

The convicts to be cloth'd and victualled by the contractor in the same manner as the convicts sent in the Royal Admiral.

The ships to go to Norfolk Island, if the Governor requires it.

Obligation on the contractor for due performance, £2,000.

CONDITION OF NORFOLK ISLAND.

Extract from a letter from Mr. C. Grimes† to Mr. Grimes, dated on board the Gorgon, Sydney Cove, Port Jackson, New South Wales, October 21st, 1792.

“It is a happy circumstance I got those necessaries there (at the Cape) or I should have been in a very disagreeable situation, for

* The proposals contained in this letter were not accepted, but terms were agreed upon as shown by a memorandum in the Home Office papers, which follows.

† Engineer and Surveyor at Norfolk Island.

1792	you can have no conception how wretchedly they are off here for the little comforts of life. I am now awkwardly situated for kitchen utensils, and I cannot get a plate here. I am in hopes now the worst is over in this colony, indeed, I make no doubt of it, but they have been dreadfully in want.
16 Oct. — No comforts.	
Contentment.	"Norfolk is represented as a paradise almost, at least everything that is sown produces abundantly. I do not know what I shall do for stock, as it is dear, and it's impossible to live on the scanty allowance allowed; we have no spirits served. For my own part I have not the most distant idea but of spending my time extremely happy, and of coming home much benefitted by the trip; you may almost insure yourself good health. I have been very ill on the voyage here, and some time prior to my leaving the Cape, but I am now much better and fatter than when I left England. There is every expectation of a whale fishery being established on this coast; if so it may in time become a valuable settlement, for those ships to wood and water, and by throwing cattle on the island make it very fruitful, which at present it is not, for want of manure. Grapes grow extremely well, that in the course of five years we shall not want for wine. There are near forty men, belonging to the marine corps, who are to stay behind as settlers for Norfolk. They are to have a certain number of acres of clear ground, and provisions for eighteen months from their landing, then they are to be entirely on their own bottom; the last letter from Major Ross, who is there, which arrived three or four days since, says that they will have two thousand bushels of corn to dispose of to Government, so great has been the last produce; every settler will have two hundred bushels. It is a pleasing prospect to go to so fine a country; the island is so small, or it would be a valuable settlement."
Whaling.	
Grapes.	
Settlers.	
A good harvest.	

MAJOR GROSE TO UNDER SECRETARY LEWIS.

22 Oct.	Sir,	Sydney, 22 October, 1792.
Soldiers' grievances.	I think it requisite to request your interference in behalf of the officers and soldiers who are doing duty at this place. Unwilling as I always shall be to complain, I, but with little reluctance, set about the subject of this letter, being confident that the Secretary of State will be better pleased to remove the grievance than to hear it has happened. I need not inform you that the necessaries of life are not often to be purchased, and that the ratio allowed by Government is the soldiers' chief and almost only support. Now whenever it happens that a short allowance is issued to the felons the soldiers' ration is also reduced, and that without the smallest difference or distinction—the captain of a company, and the convict transported for life, divide and share and share alike whatever is served out. Our numbers are too much reduced by unwholesome food and bad quarters to make the saving a matter	
Reduced ration.		

of much moment, even in the greatest scarcity—nor can I imagine it was intended we should so equally partake of whatever miseries assail the colony; and what makes our situation the more unpleasant is that the Governor does not feel himself authorized to indulge with grants such as would wish either for comfort or amusement to cultivate a small quantity of ground. I have frequently applied to Governor Phillip on this business, who, in answer to my representations, assures me he has more than once written to the Secretary of State, that unfortunately he has never received any reply whatever. One-half the ground allotted a convict, who becomes a settler, would be a matter of more accommodation to the officers than may be supposed; but until some further directions are communicated to the Governor we shall be precluded this advantage, which is absolutely the only chance of comfort that I know of.

The great necessity of making the soldiers as respectable and as comfortable as the nature of the service will admit of, is too obvious to make any commentaries from myself at all necessary. I rather hope the Governor has not forgotten by this packet to make some representations in our favour,* for I am convinced he both perceives and laments the difficulties that perplex the officers as much as I can, but for fear of accidents, I have ventured to solicit your protection, in hopes of which I have, &c.,

FRANS. GROSE.

J. BOWEN TO UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN.

Dear Sir,

Deptford, November 14th, 1792.

14 Nov.

I am inclined to think your information respecting the difficulty of Mr. Richards getting ships is too true; the owners of the Mary has positively refused to hire her to him, and the owners of the William has done the same, but have told him if he will purchase her, they will sell. This, I am told, he is about doing, but am afraid he will not accomplish it. The people who appear active in this business (by-the-bye he is himself in the background) don't seem to be very responsible; if you allow him time he will name half the ships in the river, and I may dance attendance after him until he has found somebody that will go, and if he does we will shall have a vast deal of trouble to get him to do it properly, and I am afraid, in the end, gain but little credit. A business of this sort cannot be done well but by people who have great concern in shipping, and in good credit with the principal tradesmen along shore, neither can there be any dispatch without it.†

I have wrote to him to meet me to-morrow at the Navy office, and have told him the service will not admit of any longer delay. After I have seen him, I will let you know what he says. I am, &c.,

J. BOWEN.

I have been all this morning on the river looking for his agent, but could not find either of them.

* See Phillip's despatches to Dundas, ante, pp. 651, 654.

† The arrangements referred to were completed in due course.

1792

22 Oct.

Unwholesome food and bad quarters.

No land.

The only chance of comfort.

Perplexing difficulties.

Transport difficulties.

1792

14 Nov.

A volunteer.

MR. JOHN THOMSON TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

[London] November 22nd, 1792.

Hearing that superintendants of the agriculture at Botany Bay were needed, and having had a good deal of experience in various parts of S. and N. Britain, I offer myself for that service, if in other respects it can be made agreeable; if the state needs such a servant, one of your secretaries or clerks may find me at Burford, Oxfordshire, where any letter directed to me by name, will find me.

I am, &c.,

JOHN THOMSON, A.M., ED.

LIEUTENANT BALL TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

4 Dec.

Lieut. Ball.

Sir,

Tenderden, December 4th, 1792.

The state of my health on my arrival in England from my late long voyage from New South Wales being much impaired, and having a great deal of private business to transact, has made me trespass on their Lordships' patience so long in not soliciting to be employed.

I therefore am to request you will pleas to lay my letter of this day's date before the Board [Navy Board] and hope the above signification will meet their Lordships' approbation. That being greatly reinstated in my health, I beg to offer my services for employment, and that on any service their Lordships may think proper to order me. I am, &c.,

H. L. BALL.

Ready for service.

JUDGE-ADVOCATE COLLINS TO THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS.

5 Dec.

Sir,

Sydney, New South Wales, 5 Dec., 1792.

Some very urgent private and family affairs requiring my presence in England, I have to request you will be pleased to grant me permission to return from this country for the purpose of attending to them.

I have the honour of assuring you, sir, that this application entirely meets the concurrence of Governor Phillip, and that nothing but the most pressing motives would induce me to relinquish my further services in this country, in which I have now resided within a few weeks of five years, during which time I have been in the constant execution of my duty—a circumstance that will of itself, I hope, be allowed to operate in favour of my present application.*

DAVID COLLINS.

Collins applies for leave.

JUDGE-ADVOCATE COLLINS TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Sydney, 5 December, 1792.

Your Excellency having assured me that the public service does not admit of my returning by this opportunity to England, as I have always considered it my duty to devote myself to the good of his Majesty's service, by rendering every possible aid that was within my power or ability, I submit to the necessity and propriety of remaining, notwithstanding the urgency of the reasons which

* Owing to the exigencies of the service this application could not be granted. Collins did not return to England until Sept., 1796.

have induced a wish to quit this settlement; I have, therefore, to hope and request of your Excellency, that you will, on your arrival in England be pleased to lay my solicitation for leave to return on account of my private affairs before the Secretary of State; and that your Excellency will at the same time point out, that until the present hour I have enjoyed the benefit of two appointments under the Crown, one of which, by the departure this day of the last of the marine detachment serving in this country, I no longer possess*; and that I sustain this diminution of the pecuniary emoluments of my situation at a time when, from the increasing numbers of the colony, the business of it is considerably augmented, and every article of comfort or convenience which arrives here for sale, bears a price most disadvantageously adapted by the seller to our necessities.

1792

5 Dec.

Asks Phillip to help him.

Loss of income.

I have not my own ill-health to offer as a further reason for my wishing to return; but the letters which I have lately received from my connexions have advised me of the extreme ill state of health and expected dissolution of my father, General Collins, who is much too far advanced in life to support a long struggle with disease.

His father dying.

Permit me, sir, to hope that you will add to the weight of these reasons your voice in favour of my application to return; and suffer me to subscribe myself, with every mark of respect, &c.,

DAVID COLLINS.

CHIEF-SURGEON WHITE TO SIR A. S. HAMOND.†

Sir, Sydney, New South Wales, 11th December, 1792.

11 Dec.

Thro' Governor Phillip, who returns to Europe for the recovery of his health, I have made application for leave of absence; or if that cannot granted me, permission to return to England on my half-pay, in order to adjust the deranged state of my affairs, which are made so by the failure of my agent, who had large money transactions with Mr. Jellicoe, the late deputy-paymaster of the Navy, whose misfortunes are too well known. Fearful that his Excellency's bad health or business might make him forget to lay my letter before his Majesty's Principal Secretary of State, I am constrained thus to urge my pretensions to an indulgence, which I trust the length of time I have been in this colony and my services will give me some claim to. I might with great propriety claim the indulgence I now solicit on account of bad health, but would rather ground my pretensions on my services and the justice which always actuate those in so exalted a situation as you have the honour to fill.

Leave of absence.

Grounds of application.

Should my prayer be complied with, I trust and hope Government will order me a passage home, as paying for it by the circuitous route of China, which, from the convicts being sent out in Indianmen, is the most likely made, would ill suit my circumstances. I have, &c.,

JOHN WHITE,

Principal Surgeon to the Territory.

* Collins was Captain in the Marines as well as Judge-Advocate.

† One of the Commissioners of the Navy.

STATE of the Settlements at Sydney, Parramatta, and Norfolk Island—continued.

Time.	Settlement.	People not used from the store.			Free people.			Settlers from			Emancipation.			Convicts.			Numbers on the different rations.				Whole number at full ration.	Number in the settlements.	Weeks provisions in Store at the establish'd ration.				
		Men.	Women.	Children.	Men.	Women.	Children.	Men.	Women.	Children.	Men.	Women.	Children.	Whole.	Two-thirds.	Half.	Quarter.	Numbers victual'd from the Public Stores.									
8 Dec., 1792.	Sydney.. .. .	38	1	..	7	10	..	6	..	503	194	86	5	772	236	52	62	1122	968	1161	..	22	13	294	114	174	
"	Parramatta and Teongahbe ..	31	2	1	2	12	11	53	6	3	1389	241	47	..	1559	264	10	37	1870	1749	1906	..	..	..	..	..
"	On the passage to Norfolk Island in the Philadelphia brig.	..	..	..	..	..	2	..	..	7	..	3	..	8	3	1	3	15	114	15	..	d'ys day	11	24	..	..
19 Sept., 1792.	Norfolk Island, as per return ..	40	..	..	1	6	54	60	..	488	249	119	..	690	265	56	70	1081	913	1121	25	54	25	39	..	..
		..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1203	..	..	..	..	..	..

JNO. PALMER, Commissary.

1792

5 Dec.

1792

UNDER SECRETARY NEPEAN TO SURGEON KENT.

12 Dec.

Sir,

Whitehall, 12th Decr., 1792.

The
Boddingtons.Assistant-
surgeon and
superin-
tendent.

Having, in pursuance of instructions from his Excellency the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, engaged the ship Boddingtons to take on board some convicts at Cork and to convey them to New South Wales, and it having been thought necessary that a person of your profession should be sent out in the said ship in the capacity of superintendent, not only with a view of assisting the surgeon of that ship in the necessary attendance on the sick, but to enforce a compliance with the several stipulations made with the contractor, Mr. Richards, for the maintenance and supply of the convicts and guard during their continuance on board; and the Navy Board having granted you leave of absence for that purpose, I am to desire that you will as soon as possible repair on board the Boddingtons and execute the several duties attached to that situation.

Medicines.

Previously to your embarkation you will see that a proper proportion of medicines and necessaries be provided by the contractor, and that during the passage they are duly and properly administered to the said convicts, as well as to the troops intended to be put on board for their security, whenever their situation shall require it.

Provisions.

You will also be careful that the allowance of provisions specified in the contract, a copy of which I inclose, be regularly issued at sea, as well as in the several ports you may happen to touch at.

The sick.

You will keep a regular return of the sick, and of such as may die during the passage, and transmit accounts thereof to me from time to time; and upon your return you will deliver into this office a general statement of your proceedings, together with your opinion how far the contractor shall have properly fulfilled his engagements.

Directions
from the
Governor.

Upon your arrival at New South Wales you will report to the Governor every occurrence which may have happened, and be governed by his advice as to the mode of your return, either in the ship in which you are to embark or by some more expeditious opportunity.

Pay.

You will be allowed for your services at the rate of 12s. per diem from this date until the time of your return to England, unless that period shall be unnecessarily protracted by you. This allowance is to be looked upon by you as a satisfaction for your services and to cover all expenses whatsoever, including your victualling to New South Wales and on your return from thence.

I have only to add that your care and attention in fulfilling the duties of your station will be a means of recommending you

in case any further service of the like nature should hereafter occur; and in expectation that you will fulfil it with satisfaction to your employer and credit to yourself.

1792
12 Decr.

[No signature]*

THE RIGHT HON. HENRY DUNDAS TO THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL OF INDIA.

My Lord,

Whitehall, 19th Decemr., 1792.

19 Decr.

Since Lord Grenville's letter to your Lordship of the 11th of October last respecting the supplying of New South Wales with live stock from Bengal, I have received from Messrs. Lambert, Ross, & Co. an account of the provisions shipped on board the Atlantic, transport, for that colony.

Supplies
from India.

It appears from the contents of that letter that they have made proposals for supplying it with almost all the articles which are requisite, and that they have in consequence sent samples of such articles by Mr. Bowen, with the prices annexed, in order to decide upon the expediency of a future permanent and regular supply from Bengal, so long as the same shall be necessary. If, therefore, from the representation of his Majesty's Government of New South Wales it should be found that, agreeably to such samples, the articles themselves are such as are suitable to the nature of the settlement, it will probably be the ultimate determination of his Majesty's servants that the entire supply thereof shall be from Bengal. In that case, and in order to carry such a system into effect, it will be necessary for the Presidency to consider of the best and cheapest mode of providing such supply, and that the same may keep pace with the progressive increase of the colonists, regular returns of their numbers, of the articles of provisions and stores in hand, and of such as they stand in need of, must be duly transmitted to Bengal.

Proposals.

Stores from
Bengal.

In the meantime, I am to desire that in freighting a vessel with live stock, agreeably to the above-mentioned letter from Lord Grenville, your Lordship will take that opportunity of sending such a quantity of salted beef or pork, especially of the latter, as the vessel adopted for that service can conveniently carry, without too much interfering with the original purpose for which she is to be taken up.

Salt meat.

I have more particularly instanced salted pork because I observe that two tons of it have already been sent as a sample by the Atlantic, and from the accounts transmitted I expect that it will succeed and become a regular article of supply.

Your Lordships will likewise take into consideration what mode of payment will be most in favor of Government, whether by

Payment.

* A letter similarly worded, but for the ship *Sugarcane*, was sent to Mr. Alexander Jamison, and signed "Evan Nepean."

1792
19 Dec. navy bills or by bills on his Majesty's treasury, either of which, as a channel of remittance to Europe, must, of course, bear a considerable premium.

Population of the settle-
ments. The numbers now in New South Wales and Norfolk Island, on a rough calculation, may be estimated at about five thousand.

I am, &c.,
HENRY DUNDAS.

CAPTAIN VANCOUVER TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

29 Dec. Sir, Discovery, Monterrey, 29th Dec'r, 1792.

Shipping stores. Since writing my letter, dated 15th Oct'r,* which accom-
panies this, we have experienced a very tempestuous and boisterous
passage to this place, which we reached about a month ago ; and,
agreeable to my intentions as stated in that letter, I have taken
on board the Discovery and Chatham a very considerable quantity
of the stores and provisions which remained in the Dædalus on
our departure from Nootka ; the whole of which I had requested
should be returned to me ; that, however, in consequence of having
made a material alteration in my engagement since that period,
is by no means sufficient for the purpose of executing the remaining
part of his Majesty's service entrusted to my care. I have, therefore,
in addition to the above-mentioned remaining stores and provisions,
sent your Excellency a list of such as will be necessary to complete
our stock for the time I conceive we must yet be employed in
prosecuting that part of my order which still remains unexecuted.

More
provisions
required.

Store-ship. The lateness of my despatching the Dædalus, occasioned by
adverse winds, &c., will, I fear, prevent the returning those stores
and provisions, as I have before requested, by the month of August
following ; it may, however, so happen that I may not quit Nootka
before September or probably late in that month ; it will, therefore,
be proper that the vessel so charged should be despatched so soon
as possible for the purpose of meeting me at that place ; but should
I sail from Nootka before that should happen, I shall leave suf-
ficient instructions for the guidance of the officer commanding such
vessel, and in case there is a probability of his arriving very late
on the coast, it would be necessary he should call at the Sandwich
Rendezvous. Islands, where, though we should not meet, there is yet a great
probability of gaining some information respecting us. The other
object of the Dædalus accompanying me to this port, I have like-
wise been able to accomplish to my satisfaction by putting on board
12 cows and 6 bulls, with an equal number of male and female
sheep ; these are at present in good condition, in which state, I
trust, they will arrive safe, and prove highly serviceable to his
Majesty's colony under your Excellency's government.

Store-ship.

Rendezvous.

Live stock
for Sydney.

Spanish
sailors.

The Dædalus, from accident and desertion, being short of comple-
ment, Sr. Quadra has made a promise of using his efforts to prevail
on some of the people under his command to undertake this voyage

* Ante, pp. 667-669.

in the *Dædalus*, on my promise that they should be returned to Nootka by that vessel or such other as may be charged with the before-mentioned stores and provisions for the use of his Majesty's vessels under my command, to which conditions I have acceded and taken the liberty of asserting that your Excellency would cause the same to be put into execution, and by complying with this further request, should such a circumstance take place, you will highly oblige him who has the honor, with the most sincere wishes for the welfare of yourself and his Majesty's colony under your Excellency's government,

Yours, &c.,

GEO. VANCOUVER.

P.S.—I have been under the necessity, much against my wishes and inclinations, of discharging Mr. Willm. House, late boatswain of the *Discovery*, who, whilst in that situation, so far as his abilities enabled him to act, conducted himself as a sober, diligent officer, having been afflicted with a violent rheumatic complaint which rendered him incapable of performing that service for many months past. I therefore beg leave to recommend him to your Excellency's notice, together with the three valuable seamen and one marine whom I have been under the very disagreeable necessity of parting with for similar reasons, who equally deserve every clemency and attention the nature of his Majesty's service will admit of. These people I have thus discharged, because we have not the power of affording them relief, and the service we have yet to perform being of a long and arduous nature. I am in hopes of its being shortly in your Excellency's power of providing them a passage to England, in which case I trust they will find relief from the severe maladies under which they at present labor.

GEO. VANCOUVER.

CAPTAIN VANCOUVER'S INSTRUCTIONS TO LIEUTENANT HANSON.

By George Vancouver, Esquire, Commander of his Majesty's sloop *Discovery*, &c.

WHEREAS the *Dædalus* transport under your direction has deliver'd to his Majesty's vessels under my command, such part of the cargo she was charged with as they can conveniently stow: you are with the remaining part of the said cargo, in pursuance of his Majesty's pleasure, communicated to me by the Right Honourable the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, hereby required and directed to proceed without a moment's loss of time, taking also under your charge and particular care, the breeding cattle and sheep as per margin,* which I have caused to be put on board the said transport, for the use of his Majesty's colony at Port Jackson, New South Wales, to which place you are immediately to make the best of your way, observing the following route:—

From this port you are to proceed to the islands that were discovered by the *Dædalus*, when under the command of the late

1792

29 Dec.

Spanish
sailors for
the
Dædalus.

Invalids.

Instructions
for the
Dædalus.

Route.

* 6 Bulls, 12 cows, 6 rams, 12 ewes.

- 1792
29 Dec. Lieutenant Hergest; and in the most convenient port in those islands to cause such refitting and other necessary services to be performed as the said transport may stand in need of; and, having executed that service, you will endeavour to take from them such live stock and other refreshments as may be likely to be useful to his Majesty's colony at Port Jackson, for the effecting which you have my permission to appropriate such of the articles of traffic on board the *Dædalus*, consigned to me, as may be absolutely necessary for that purpose, taking care to note the number and contents from out of the cases, or casks, they are taken, with the quantity, and to what purpose they have been expended, to be transmitted to me on the return of those articles hereafter; and then to proceed from thence to a bay lately visited and surveyed by the French in the northern part of New Zealand, called by Captain Cook, Doubtless Bay, in which passage you are to act with the utmost caution to prevent falling in with, in the course of the night, any of the many low islands that are thickly distributed to the southward of the Marquesas, so far as the 20th or 22nd degree of S. latitude, in which navigation your keeping nearly in the parallel of the Marquesas, until you arrive in the 212th or 210th degree of E. longitude will be your safest route to the southward. Otaheite will be in that track; therefore, winds and weather permitting, it will be proper you should touch at that island, and you are hereby required and directed to do so, where, should you meet with any of the crew belonging to the ship *Matilda*, said to have been lost on a shoal in lat. 22° S., and 138° 30' W. long'de, and after which accident they, in their boats, reached that island, you are to take them on board, and give them a passage to Port Jackson, they being British subjects, and wishing to return to their native country by such mode of conveyance; victualling them as the persons on board the said transport are victualled. Their numbers said to be remaining at Otaheite are twenty-one, among which is one convict that made his escape from Port Jackson in the said ship *Matilda*.*
- Cargo. At Otaheite you will endeavour to take on board such hogs, goats, fowls, &c., with provender for them, as may be likely for the purpose of being serviceable to the said colony, procuring them by the means above pointed out.
- To call at Doubtless Bay. From Otaheite you will proceed to the before-mentioned Doubtless Bay, a sketch of which is herewith inclosed for your information.
- The crew of the *Matilda*. I have pointed out this port as the one in that island most likely to answer the purpose for which you are required to revisit New Zealand, particularly from its situation so near the north
- Live stock.
- Doubtless Bay.
- From New Zealand to Port Jackson.

*The *Matilda* transport sailed from Sydney in company with the *Mary Ann* for Peru, December, 1791. Collins in his *Account of New South Wales*, vol. i, p. 172, says:—"These ships had some convicts on board, who were permitted to ship themselves with the masters." The convict referred to in Vancouver's instructions to Hanson was apparently a stowaway.

extremity of that country, round which is the most proper route you should pursue to Port Jackson; at which or any port near the north extremity of New Zealand, should necessity prevent your gaining the above-mentioned, you are from thence to use your best endeavours to take with you one or two of the natives of that country versed in the operations necessary for the manufacture of the flax-plant of which their garments are mostly made, for the purpose, if possible, of instructing the new settlers at Port Jackson in the management of that very valuable plant,* and this being a subject of no small importance you are to pay particular attention to the effecting it, in the execution whereof the native of the Sandwich Islands you have on board may be essentially serviceable from his speaking nearly the same language, you will therefore endeavour to attach him as much as possible to your interest by attention and civil treatment which conduct is essentially necessary you should, and you are likewise hereby required and directed by all possible means to pursue with all the inhabitants of the South Sea Islands you may from time to time fall in with.

You are also hereby most strictly enjoined to treat in the most friendly manner the subjects or vessels of any power or state you may happen to meet with, and to be in every respect careful not to do anything that may interrupt that peace which now happily subsists between his Majesty and all other powers; nor are you on any account to put into any of the ports on the continent of America to the southward of the 30th degree of N. latitude, unless by accident you should find it necessary for your immediate safety to take shelter there, and in case of such urgent event to continue no longer than may be absolutely necessary.

These being the principal objects entrusted to your charge, you are hereby required and directed to proceed forthwith agreeable to the foregoing instructions to Port Jackson aforesaid, and deliver the packet you will receive herewith to Commodore Phillip, or in his absence to the commanding officer, putting yourself under his command, and following his orders for your further proceedings.

For which this shall be your order.

Given on board his Majesty's sloop *Discovery*, in Monterrey Bay, the 29th December, 1792.

GEO. VANCOUVER.

UNDER SECRETARY KING† TO GOVERNOR PHILLIP.

Sir,

Whitehall, 31st December, 1792.

I avail myself of the opportunity of a ship's sailing from Ireland for New South Wales to forward to you copies of two

* This direction was carried out. See Appendix B.

† Mr. John King, Under Secretary at the Home Office. He succeeded Mr. Evan Nepean, who was afterwards appointed Secretary of the Admiralty, vice Mr. Philip Stephens.

1792

31 Dec.

Live stock
and pro-
visions.More
convicts.

letters which Mr. Secretary Dundas has written to the Gov'r-Gen'l of Bengal [India] on the measure of supplying the colony of New South Wales with live stock and provisions. Your opinion on this subject will of course be highly acceptable to Mr. Dundas.

I also forward to you three packets, which were received in the course of last month from Calcutta, on the same subject, two of which with flying seals Mr. Dundas has perused.

As an additional number of convicts will most probably be sent out early in the ensuing year, Mr. Dundas will write to you by that opportunity.

I am, &c.,

J. KING.

APPENDICES.

APPENDIX A.

CAPTAIN BLIGH AND THE BOUNTY.

CAPTAIN BLIGH TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

1788

Sir,

Bounty, at Tenariff, Jan'y 9th, 1788.

9 Jan.

I request you will be pleased to inform the Lords Commis- The Bounty at Tenariff.
sioners of the Admiralty that I arrived here on the 6th instant to
take in wines for the ship's company, which will be completed this
day, and some damages done to my boats in a heavy gale of wind
on the 27th Dec'r, and also the ship being repair'd. I shall sail
to-morrow and proceed on my voyage with the utmost dispatch,
according to their Lordships' directions. I have, &c.,

WM. BLIGH.

CAPTAIN BLIGH TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Bounty, Cape of Good Hope,

Sir,

False Bay, May 24th, 1788.

24 May.

You will please to acquaint the Lords Commissioners of Cape of Good Hope.
the Admiralty that, after experiencing the worst of weather for
thirty days between the latd. of 58° 00' So. and 61° 00' by constant
gales of wind from S.W. to N.W. off Cape Horn, I have been Cape Horn
under the absolute necessity of bearing away for this place, as I found the passage impracticable.
found it totally impracticable to get round the land and make the
passage to Otaheite, agreeable to their Lordships' first orders.

I hope their Lordships will observe that it was not possible to
make more of the season than I have done. I left Spithead on
the 23d of December; Tenariff on the 10th Jan'y; doubled Staten
Land on the 23d of March, from which time the weather was ex-
ceedingly tempestuous, particularly the last three weeks, when the
snow-storms became so violent we were scarce ever doing better at anchor.
than lying to and drifting before the wind. In this situation my
people at last began to be affected with severe rheumatisms, and I
had three accidents from the violent motion of the ship—two men
fell and dislocated their shoulders, and one broke a rib. The ship The ship leaky.
began to be leaky, but in all other respects as good a vessel as

1789

24 May.

The route
altered.

Refitting.

could possibly be ; this increased our labour, and seeing no prospect of success, I conceived it would be hazarding the object of the voyage, and my conduct reprehensible under the discretionary orders I was honored with, to persist any longer, as I had not a moment's time to spare to proceed and refit at the Cape of Good Hope, and to be in time to pass the intricate parts of the voyage and to secure a completion of it. From these considerations I bore away on the 22d of April, repassed Staten Land on the 23d, and, without ever being in any port from the time of leaving Tenariff, I arrived here this day, with every man and officer in as good health as when they left England, notwithstanding for these last three months we have never been able to have our hatches open for six hours together.

I shall refit with the utmost despatch, and proceed on the voyage by New Holland and New Zeland.

I have informed their Lordships by letter of this date of my proceedings by a Dutch ship ; and an opportunity offering by a French packett, Havre de Grace, I thought it my duty to take that conveyance also [to] send a duplicate of my first letter.

I have, &c.,

WM. BLIGH.

CAPTAIN BLIGH TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Bounty, in False Bay, Cape of Good Hope,
June 20th, 1788.

20 June.

Sir,

This is the third letter since my arrival at this port that I have transmitted to you of my proceedings hitherto in the voyage* ; the former ones were fully on the cause of my coming here. I therefore beg you will acquaint the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that his Majesty's ship under my command requiring much caulking and refitting has rendered it not practicable, consistent with the good of the service, for me to sail before the 26th instant, when I shall proceed on my voyage to Otaheite. As the conveyance of letters from this to England in foreign ships is very uncertain, it may not be improper (having had no other opportunity) to acquaint their Lordships that the reason of my bearing away for this place is occasion'd by my meeting with very tempestuous weather off Cape Horn, where I remain'd thirty days endeavouring to perform my passage that way. I left it on the 22d of April, and arrived here the 24th May.

I have, &c.,

WM. BLIGH.

CAPTAIN BLIGH TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Bounty, in False Bay, Cape of Good Hope,
June 28th, 1788.

23 June.

Sir,

You will please to acquaint the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that I am now ready for sea, with his Majesty's ship

Ready for
sea.

* One of these letters, apparently written between 24th May and 20th June, is absent.

under my command, and shall sail and execute their Lordships' directions with the utmost dispatch. My route will be by the south part of New Holland and New Zealand. My people are in perfect health, and ship thoroughly refitted. This is the fourth letter I have had the honor to write to acquaint their Lordships of my proceedings.

I have, &c.,

WM. BLIGH.

1789

28 June.

THE MUTINY OF THE BOUNTY.

CAPTAIN BLIGH TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.*

Sir,

Coupang, in Timor, 18 August, 1789.

18 Aug.

I am now unfortunately to request of you to acquaint the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty that his Majesty's armed vessel *Bounty*, under my command, was taken from me by some of the inferior officers and men on the 28th April, 1789, in the following manner:—A little before sunrise, Fletcher Christian, who was mate of the ship and officer of the watch, with the ship's corporal, came into my cabin while I was asleep, and seizing me, tied my hands with a cord, assisted by others, who were also in the cabin, all armed with musquets and bayonets. I was now threatened with instant death if I spoke a word. I, however, called for assistance, and awakened every one; but the officers, who were in their cabins, were secured by centinels at their doors so that no one could come to me. The arms were all secured, and I was forced on deck in my shirt, with my hands tyed, and secured by a guard abaft the mizen mast, during which the mutineers expressed much joy that they would soon again see Otaheite.

The *Bounty* taken by mutineers.

Bligh seized.

The officers secured.

I now demanded of Christian the cause of such a violent act, but no other answer was given but, "Hold your tongue, sir, or you are dead this instant," and holding me by the cord which tied my hands, he as often threatened to stab me in the breast with a bayonet he held in his right hand. I, however, did my utmost to rally the disaffected villains to a sense of their duty, but to no effect. The boatswain was ordered to hoist the launch out, and while I was kept under a guard, with Christian at their head; abaft the mizen mast, the officers and men not concerned in the mutiny were ordered into the boat. This being done, I was told by Christian, "Sir, your officers and men are now in the boat, and you must go with them," and with the guard they

Bligh ordered to be silent.

Officers and men ordered into the launch.

* A brief account is here given of the seizure of the *Bounty* by mutineers, and the homeward voyage from Tofea to Timor. Captain Bligh sent a fuller account from Batavia, 18th October, 1789, beginning with the arrival of the *Bounty* at the Cape of Good Hope on the outward voyage, 24th May, 1788. Post, pp. 693-704. The account forwarded by Bligh to Sir Joseph Banks was enclosed in a letter dated Batavia, 18th October. It explains the mission upon which the *Bounty* was sent, gives an account of the voyage from the beginning, and describes the mutiny and the subsequent adventures of Captain Bligh and the loyal portion of the crew. Ante, pp. 268-278.

1789

18 Aug.

carried me accross the deck, with the bayonets presented on every side. When attempting to make another effort, one villain said to the other, "Blow his brains out." I was at last forced into the boat, and we were then veered astern, in all nineteen souls.

Off Tofoa.

I was at this time 10 leagues to the S.W. of Tofoa, the N.W. most of the Friendly Islands, having left Otaheite the 4th April, with 1,015 fine bread-fruit plants, and many fruit kinds, in all 774 pots, 39 tubs, and 24 boxes. These plants were now in a very flourishing order. I anchored at Annamocha, 24th April, and left it on the 26th.

No arms allowed.

The boatswain and carpenter, with some others while the boat was alongside, collected several necessary things and water, and with some difficulty a compass and quadrant was got ; but arms of no kind, or any maps or drawings, of which I had many very valuable ones.

Provi-sions.

The boat was very deep and much lumber'd, and in this condition we were cast adrift, with about 28 gallons of water, 150 lbs. of bread, 30 lbs. pork, 6 quarts rum, and 6 bottles of wine.

Attack by natives of Tofoa.

Quarter-master Norton killed.

The day was calm, attended with light breezes, and I got to Tofoa by 7 o'clock in the evening, but found no place to land, the shore being so steep and rocky. On the 30th I found landing in a cove on the N.W. part of the island, and here I remained in search of supplies untill 2nd May, when the natives discovering we had no firearms they made an attack on us with clubs and stones, in the course of which I had the misfortune to loose a very worthy man, Jno. Norton, quarter-master, and most of us hurt more or less. Our getting into our boat was no security, for they followed us in cannoes loaded with stones, which they threw with much force and exactness. Happily night saved the rest of us.

The natives not to be trusted.

Bound for Timor.

I had determined to go to Amsterdam in search of Paulehow, the king ; but taking this transaction as a real sample of their natural dispositions, there was little hope to expect much from them ; for I considered their good behaviour hitherto owing to a dread of our firearms, which now knowing us to have none would not be the case, and that supposing our lives were in safety our boat and every thing would be taken from us, and thereby I should never be able to return. I was also earnestly solicited by all hands to take them towards home, and when I told them no hopes of releif remained for us but what I might find at New Holland, untill I came to Timor, a distance of 1,200 leagues, they all agreed to live on one ounce of bread a day and a jill of water. I, therefore, after recommending this promise for ever to their memory, bore away for New Holland and Timor, accross a sea but little known, and in a small boat, deep loaded with 18 souls, without a single map of any kind, and nothing but my own

recollection and general knowledge of the situation of places to direct us. Unfortunately we lost part of our provisions. Our stock, therefore, only consisted of 20 lbs. of pork, 3 bottles of wine, 2 quarts of rum, 150 lbs. bread, and 28 gallons of water. 1789
Is Aug.
Part of the
provisions
lost.

I steer'd to the W.N.W., with strong gales and bad weather, suffering every calamity and distress. I discover'd many islands, and at last on the 28th May the coast of New Holland, and entered a break of the reef in latitude about 12° 50' So, and long'd 145° 00' E't. The
Australian
coast
sighted.

I kept on in the direction of this coast to the northw'd, touching at such places as I found convenient, refreshing my people by the best means in my power. These refreshments consisted of oysters and a few clams: we were, however, greatly benefited by them and a few good nights' rest. On the 4th of June I past the north part of New Holland, and steer'd for Timor, and made it on the 12th, which was a happy sight to every one, particularly several who perhaps could not have existed a week or a day longer. Timor.

I followed the direction of the So. side of the island, and on the 14th in the afternoon saw the island Rotty and west part of Timor, round which I got that night and took a Malay on board to shew me Coupang, where he described to me the Governor resided. On the next morning before day I anchored under the Fort, and about 11 o'clock I saw the Governor, who received me with great humanity and kindness. Necessary directions were instantly given for our support, and perhaps a more miserable set of beings were never seen. At Kupang.

Thus happily ended through the assistance of Divine Providence without accident a voyage of the most extraordinary nature that ever happen'd in the world, let it be taken either in its extent, duration, or so much want of the necessaries of life. An extra-
ordinary
voyage.

The people who came in the boat were:—

Jno. Fryer, master.	Peter Linkletter, qr.-mr.	The boat
Wm. Cole, boatsn.	Jno. Norton, do. (killed at	
Wm. Peckover, gunner.	Tofoa).	
Wm. Purcell, carpenter.	Geo. Simpson, do's mate.	
Thos. Dr. Ledward, acting	Law'ce Libogue, sailmaker.	
surgeon.	Robt. Tinkler, Ab.	
Wm. Elphinstone, master's	Jno. Smith, Ab.	
mate.	Thos. Hall, Ab.*	
Thos. Hayward, midshipman.	Robert Lamb, Ab.	
Jno. Hallett, midshipman.	David Nelson, botanist (since	
Jno. Samuel, clerk.	dead).	

No., 18.

* Died at Batavia. Post, p. 794.

1789

The people who remained in the ship were :—

18 Aug.
The disloyal.

Fletcher Christian, master's mate.	Jno. Sumner, Ab.
Geo. Stewart, acting do.	Jno. Williams, Ab.
Peter Heywood, midship'n.	Matw. Thompson, Ab.
Edwd. Young, do.	Thos. Ellison, Ab.
Chas. Churchill, corporal.	Wm. Mickoy, Ab.
James Morrison, boat'n mate.	Jno. Millward, Ab.
Jno. Mills, gunn's do.	Richd. Skinner, Ab.
Chas. Norman, carp's mate.	Mattw. Quintal, Ab.
Thos. M'Intosh, do. crew.	Mich'l Byrne, Ab.
Josh. Coleman, armourer.	Hen'y Hilbrant, Ab.
Thos. Burkitt, Ab.	Isaac Martin, Ab.
	Alex'r Smith, Ab.
	Wm. Muspratt, Ab.
	Wm. Brown, botanist's assistant.

No., 25.

Secrecy of
the mutiny.

The secrecy of this mutiny was beyond all conception, so that I cannot discover that any who were with me had the least knowledge of it, and the comparative lists will shew the strength of the pirates.

Eligh
purchases a
vessel.

I found three vessels here bound for Batavia, but as their sailing would be late, I considered it to the advantage of his Majesty's service to purchase a vessel to take my people to Batavia before the sailing of the fleet for Europe in October ; as no one could be hired but at a price equal to a purchase, I therefore gave publick notice of my intent, and assisted by the Governor I got a vessel for 1,000 Rix dollars and called her the Resource.

Death of
Nelson, the
botanist.

We have not yet our health perfectly established. Four of my people are still ill, and I have had the misfortune to loose Mr. Nelson, the botanist, whose good conduct in the course of the whole voyage, and manly fortitude in our late disastrous circumstances, deserves this tribute to his memory.

Orders to
detain the
Bounty.

I have given a summary account of my proceedings to the Governor, and have requested in his Majesty's name that necessary orders and directions may be given to their different settlements to detain the ship wherever she may be found.

Departure
for Batavia.

There is but little chance that their Lordships can receive this before I arrive myself. I therefore have not been as particular as I shall be in my letters from Batavia. I shall sail in the morning without fail, and use my utmost exertions to appear before their lordships and answer personally for the loss of his Majesty's ship.

Kindness of
the Dutch
officials.

I beg leave to acquaint their Lordships that the greatest kindness and attention has been shewen to us while here by the Second Governor, Timotheus Wanjon, whose zeal to render services to his

Majesty's subjects has been unremitting during the sickness of the Governor, Willim Adrian Van Este, who now is at the point of death. 1789
18 Aug.

The surgeon of the fort, a Mr. Max, has also been ever attentive to my sick people, and has daily and hourly attended them with great care.

I have, &c.,

WM. BLIGH.

CAPTAIN BLIGH TO SECRETARY STEPHENS.

Sir,

Batavia, Octr. 15th, 1789.

15 Oct.

I beg you will present the enclos'd account of my transactions and of the loss of his Majesty's ship *Bounty* under my command unto the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, by which their Lordships will please to observe I have begun the account from the arrival of the ship at the Cape of Good Hope after my return from Cape Horn. Loss of the
Bounty.

I left at Timor, to be sent by the first vessel that sailed, other accounts for their Lordships' inspection. I have, &c.,

WM. BLIGH.

[Enclosure.]

I arrived at the Cape of Good Hope on the 24th May, 1788, from whence I fully acquainted their Lordships of my proceedings, and being completely victualled and refitted I sailed on the 1st July. Arrival at
the Cape.

On the 20th August I arrived at Van Diemen's Land, and completed wooding and watering in Adventure Bay by the 4th Sept., when I sailed for Otaheite. Van
Diemen's
Land.

On the 19th September, having pass'd the south part of New Zealand, I discovered a very dangerous cluster of rocky islets (never known before). They extend $3\frac{1}{2}$ miles east and west, and $1\frac{1}{2}$ north and So., and lie from the Traps (off the south end of New Zealand) S. 89° E., distance 146 leagues. Their latd. is $47^{\circ} 44'$ So., and longitude $179^{\circ} 09'$ Et. New
Zealand.

On the 26th October I anchored in Matavai Bay, Otaheite, but the season of the year render'd my situation not safe, and I therefore sailed on the 25th December into Toahroah Harbour, 3 miles from Matavai. I remained here untill the fourth of April, 1789, when I sailed with 1,015 beautyfull bread fruit plants, and many fruit kind, in all 774 pots, 39 tubs, and 24 boxes. The
Bounty
sailed with
bread fruit
plants.

I found this harbour to be in the latitude of $17^{\circ} 31'$ So., and longitude $210^{\circ} 31' 37''$ east, variation of compass $5^{\circ} 31'$ E.

I left these happy islanders in much distress, for the utmost affection, regard, and good fellowship was among us during my stay. The king and all the royal family were always with me, and their good sense and observations, joined with the most engaging dispositions in the world, will ever make them beloved by all who become acquainted with them as friends. The
islanders
Attendant.

1789

15 Oct.

An island
discovered.

On the 12th April I discovered an island called Whytootackee, whose chief was named Comackeiah, as I was informed by people who came off to us in a canoe. Their language seemed to prove them nearly the same people as at Otaheite. The island is about 10 miles round, in latitude $18^{\circ} 52'$ So. It has eight small keys* lying joined by a reef to the S.S.E. of it and one to the W.S.W. The southernmost key lies in latitude $18^{\circ} 58'$ So., and longitude obsd. $200^{\circ} 19'$ Et., varian. compss. $8^{\circ} 14'$ E. On the 18th April I saw Savage Island in $19^{\circ} 02'$ So., $190^{\circ} 18'$ east.

The
Friendly
Islands.

On the 21st April I made the Friendly Islands, and on the 23rd following I anchored in Annamoka Road. On the 26th April, having completed my water and got on board some wood, I sailed. Annamoka lies in $20^{\circ} 16'$ So., $185^{\circ} 30'$ east.

Tofoa.

On the 28th April, in the morning, the north-westernmost of the Friendly Islands, called Tofoa, bore N.E. 10 leagues, and I had directed my course to the W.N.W., with a ship in most perfect order, and all my plants in a most flourishing condition, all my men and officers in good health, and in short every thing to flatter and insure my most sanguine expectations. But I am now to relate one of the most atrocious and consummate acts of piracy ever committed.

The mutiny.

Capt. Bligh
seized and
bound.

At dawn of day, Fletcher Christian (officer of the watch), Chas. Churchill (ship's corporal), Thos. Burkett (seaman), John Mills (gunner's mate), came into my cabin, and, while I was asleep, seized me in my bed, and tied my hands behind my back with a strong cord, and, with cutlasses and bayonets fixed at my breast, threatened instant death if I spoke or made the least noise. I, nevertheless, called out so loud for help that every one heard me and were flying to my assistance, but all my officers, except those who were concerned, found themselves secured by armed centinels.

I was now haul'd upon deck in my shirt, without a rag else, and my hands tyed behind my back held by Fletcher Christian, and Chas. Churchill w'h a bayonet at my breast, and two men, Alexr. Smith and Thos. Burkitt behind me, with loaded muskets cocked and bayonets fixed. Under the guard I was put abaft the mizenmast.

The launch
hoisted out.

The different hatchways were all guarded by armed men in the same manner, and those who were to be sent out of the ship and some of the mutineers who could be spared hoisted the boat out. Among these were the boatswain and carpenter, who, with some others, got sails, twine, rope, grapnel, and a small cask of water into the boat, about w'ch there were many altercations among the mutinous crew.

Bligh
threatened
with death.

When I exerted myself in speaking loud to try if I could rally any with a sense of duty in them, I was saluted with, "Damn his eyes, the — ; blow his brains out", Christian threatening me with instant death if I did not hold my tongue.

* Rocks forming small islands. From *Cayos* (Sp.).

Being confined, and kept apart from every one, Mr. Samuel,* 1789
with great resolution, exerted himself and secured to me a quadrant and compass, some cloaths, my journals, and material ship papers; but all my valuable instruments, and a timepiece of Mr. Kendal's make of great value, with a valuable collection of books, maps, and drawings, and money, with all my remarks and observations for 15 years past, were kept from me. He also secured 150 lbs. of bread, which proved of more value than every thing besides. Bligh's property kept from him.

The officers and men being now drove into the boat one by one, I was told by Christian: "Come, Capt. Bligh, your officers and men are now in the boat, and you must go with them; if you attempt to make the least resistance you will instantly be put to death." I was then taken hold of, under a guard of armed ruffians, and forced over the gangway into the boat, which waited only for me, and, untying my hands, we were veered astern by a rope. A few pounds of pork were now thrown to us. We were 19 in number, and some began to solicit a few of their little valuables that were left behind. I asked for firearms, and even at last solicited two, but we received insolence and were told we should have none. Four cutlasses were, however, thrown into the boat, and we were cast adrift in a most miserable situation. Bligh thrown into the boat.
No firearms allowed.

The size of the boat was 23 feet from stem to stern, and rowed six oars. We were so deep and lumbered that it was believed we could never reach the shore, and some of them made their jokes of it. We, however, by seven o'clock in the evening got safe under Tofoa, but the shore being steep and rocky could find no anchorage or landing. I therefore kept the boat under the land all night, paddling with two oars to preserve our station. Arrival at Tofoa.

April 29th.—This day was spent in searching for a landing place, and at the N.W. part of the island, in lat'd. 19° 41' S., I found a small cove, where with some difficulty I got a few of my people on shore to look for supplies. The weather proved stormy, which prevented me from going to sea, otherwise I should have proceeded to some of the principal islands in quest of the chiefs. This night we all slept in the boat at a grappell in the cove, and shared a few cocoanuts for subsistence, as I determined not to touch any thing that we had brought from the ship. Looking for supplies.

30th.—The weather continued so stormy that I could not proceed to sea. I therefore went off with a party to see what could be got, but in the end we all returned miserably fatigued, without discovering anything but a little water in holes, the whole of which was not sufficient for one day's expence. As every one was now more or less jaded and wanted sleep, I took about one half on shore for the night, and in a cave at the upper part of the cove they got tolerable good sleep, and those in the boat having more room became vastly benefited by it. Waves breaking.

* Note in MS.—Clerk.

1789

15 Oct.

Supplies
obtained
from the
natives.

May 1st.—The weather continued so windy that I could not proceed to sea. Sent a party away at dawn of day to take another route in search of supplies. They found out the residence of the natives, who brought us a few bread-fruit, cocoanuts, and a few shells of water, which I bought for buttons of our jackets. At sundown they left us with a promise to bring larger supplies in the morning.

Spent the night as before.

The natives
muster.

2nd.—The weather continued windy. In the morning the natives came to us with bread-fruit, &c., as yesterday, and also two chiefs, Eegyeefou and Maccaaccabou. Soon after two cannoes came in from a distant part of the island, and the natives were hourly increasing. The chiefs became acquainted with our situation—that the ship had sunk and we only were saved, and that I intended to go to Paulehow, their king. This seemed to give them pleasure, and Eegyeefou agreed as soon as it moderated to go with me. The readiness with which this man appeared to consent to go with me to Amsterdam gave me reason to think we should remain on good terms with these people, but unhappily I had soon cause to know the contrary. The natives began to

They
become
hostile.

be very troublesome, and made signs of hostilities towards us. I, however, thought they would go off at sundown, as they had done before, and that then I could leave the place without risk; but the reverse was the case. Three cannoes were now come in, and places fixed on for their residence during the night.

Prepara-
tions for
departure.

I therefore determined to do our best while it was light, and directed some of the provisions I had bought to be put into the boat. The chiefs now desired me to remain on shore for the night, notwithstanding they perceived that I saw all their people arming with clubs and stones. The things being put into the boat, we were all on the go, when an inferior chief* took me by the hand, pressing me to stay. I kept hold of this man, and with my people now proceeded down the beach amidst a silent degree of horror on both sides. Nageetee left me, and all except one man got into the boat, who, while I was getting in, observing the stemfast not cast off, ran up the beach to effect it, notwithstanding I heard the master and others calling to him to return, while they were hauling me out of the water. The attack now began, with a shower of stones that flew like shot. The unfortunate poor man on shore† was killed instantly, and we were all more or less bruized and wounded. As I hauled out to our grapnel, I hoped they could

Attacked
by natives.Pursued and
stoned.

no longer annoy us; but here I was mistaken, for they launched their cannoes and stoned us until I got a league from the land. We could not close with them, because it was not in the power of men to do it with so heavy a boat; they therefore took their distance to throw their shot, which they did with such execution that but a short time longer would have rendered us incapable of

* Note in MS.—Nageetee.

† Quartermaster Norton.

rowing, when they would first have stoned us to death and then taken the boat. I therefore, as the only thing left to save our lives, exhorted every one to persevere in rowing: and throwing overboard some cloaths which beguiled them and they lost time in taking up, together with the night coming on, we very miraculously escaped.

Taking this as a real sample of their natural dispositions, there were little hopes to expect much where I was going, for I considered their good behaviour hitherto owing to a dread of our fire arms, which now knowing us to have none would not be the case: and that supposing our lives were safe, our boat, compass, and quadrant would all be taken from me, and, thereby, I should not be able to return to give an account of the transaction. I was solicited by all hands to take them towards home, and when I told them no hopes of relief for us remained, but what I might find at New Holland, untill I came to Timor, a distance of 1,200 leagues, where was a Dutch Governor, but that I could not recollect at what part of the island he resided, they all agreed to live on one ounce of bread per day and a jill of water. I therefore, after examining our stock of provisions, which I found to consist of 150 lbs. bread, 28 galls. of water, 20 lbs. of pork, 3 bottles of wine, and 5 quarts of rum, and recommending for ever to their memory the promise they had made, bore away for New Holland, and from thence to Timor, a distance of 1,200 leagues, across a sea where the navigation is dangerous and but little known: and in a small boat deep loaded, and with 18 souls, without a single map, and nothing but my own recollection and general knowledge of the situation of places, assisted by an old book of latitude and longitude to guide me.

The secrecy of this mutiny was beyond all conception, and surprising it is that out of thirteen of the party who came with me, and lived always forward near the people and among them, no one could discover some symptoms of their bad intentions. With such deep-plann'd acts of villany, and my mind free of any suspicions, it is not wonderfull that I have been got the better of. I slept always with my cabin door open for the officer of the watch to have access to me on all occasions, for the possibility of such a catastrophe was ever the farthest from my thoughts.

To assign the cause of such a resolution we can only imagine from the huzzas of the mutineers that they have promised themselves greater pleasure and advantages at Otaheite than they were likely to meet with in their native country. To this land of gule they are certainly returned—a land where they need not labour, and where the allurements of dissipation are more than equal to anything that can be conceived. For particulars I must beg leave to refer their Lordships to my journal.

Christian was the officer of the deck, and the whole watch being concerned, except the two midshipmen, who had no suspicions of

1789

15 Oct.

Escape.

No hope
know the
mutines.Short
Abstinence.Bored for
Timor.Secrecy of
the mutiny.Cause of the
mutiny.The whole
watch
concerned.

1789

15 Oct.

what their officer was about, it is not surprising that the buiness was speedily done, all the able men being concerned, as also the greatest number, as may be seen by the description list.*

The people who accompanied me were :—

[Here follow lists previously transcribed.]†

Stormy
weather.

1789, May 3rd.—To return to my proceedings in the boat. I steered to the W.N.W., as I formerly had heard from the Friendly Island people that land lay in that quarter. The weather continued very stormy and the sea run so very high that we had reason to expect to founder every instant. Unhappily we were obliged to throw many of our necessities over board to lighten the boat, and we underwent great fatigue in bailing, and were miserably cold and wet in the nights.

Islands
discovered.

May 4th.—On this day I discovered an island W.S.W., 4 or 5 leagues from me when I was in lat'd $18^{\circ} 58' S.$ $182^{\circ} 16' E't.$

6th.—On to-day I discovered ten other islands, and at noon was in the lat'd $17^{\circ} 53' So.,$ $179^{\circ} 43' E't.$

7th.—This day I discovered other islands, and at noon was in lat'd $16^{\circ} 33' So.,$ $178^{\circ} 34' E't,$ when I was chased by two large cannoes. Storms of thunder, lightning, and rain ; caught 6 gallons of water.

9th.—Fair w'r ; kept steering to the W.N.W. and west.

10th.—Very heavy rains ; hard gales and a high sea unto the 14th, constantly bailing, and suffering every degree of distress.

14th.—Discovered 5 islands, and was at noon in $13^{\circ} 29' So.,$ $169^{\circ} 21'.$

15th.—Discovered an island, latd., noon, $13^{\circ} 4' S.,$ $167^{\circ} 35'$ East. Hard gales and a high sea with thunder, lightning, and rain, and very dark dismal nights, not a star to be seen to steer by. Keeping the boat before the sea, constantly wet and suffering every calamity and distress.

May 21st.—Most dreadfull weather, and the rain fell so heavy that we could scarce keep the boat from filling.

Sufferings
from wet
and cold.

24th.—To the 24th the weather and sea continued very bad. We now dreaded the nights, for we were all benumbed with cold, being constantly wet. To act against the evils attending such a situation, I could only order every one when our cloaths became filled with water to strip naked and wring them, and when only wet by the rain to dip them first in the sea, so that this was the only resource we had for dry cloaths.

The
Australian
coast
sighted.

28th.—To the 28th the weather became better, when at midnight I fell in with the reefs of New Holland, the sea broke dreadfully high ; I stood off shore for the night ; at dawn of day stood in for the reefs again to search for a passage within it. At 9 in the morning I saw the reef again, and soon after standing along it to the northward, I discovered an opening which I safely

* Post, pp. 704-706.

† Ante, pp. 691, 692.

entered, and happily got into smooth water. Lat'd of the channel 1789
 12° 50' S., 145° 08' E't. At $\frac{1}{4}$ past 5 in the afternoon I got into a bay on an island about $\frac{1}{4}$ of a mile from the main, and finding it uninhabited, I determined on searching for supplies. Night prevented us from doing more than gathering a few oysters which we found on a bed of rocks near the boat; it was, however, a great relief to us. As our boat was only large enough to admit one-half of us to rest at a time, I directed that one party should sleep on shore, so that every one was to be ready to go in search of supplies at dawn of day. Inside the rest.

May 29.—After a quiet and undisturbed night's rest we began to employ ourselves about what was to be done, and in an half hour I heard the joyfull tydings that fine fresh water was found. Oysters were plenty, but it was with much difficulty we could break them from the rocks. However, a sufficient quantity was got to give us a good meal. I had great difficulty in getting a fire, but at last effected it by a small magnifying glass. Water and oysters.

I found no other supply to be expected here, except a few berries which were eat by the birds, and, therefore, every person had ventured to take as many as their stomachs would bear.

Weakness, with a dizziness in the head, and an extreme tenesmus, were our only complaints. Sickness.

We discovered signs of the natives having been here, but the marks did not appear to be very recent. I was therefore not apprehensive, and permitted one-half of us to sleep on shore at night, as I had done before.

30th.—In the morning I found every one vastly benefitted by their being here. I sent the parties out to gather oysters, and others filled our water-casks and got the boat ready for sea. Mr. Nelson found some fern root that I thought wholesome and very condusive to prevent thirst. For that reason I ordered a quantity of it into the boat. Prepared for sea.

Birds could have been easily got here if I had had arms. On that account every one we saw recalled to us our miserable situation; but Providence has been graciously kind to us, for we frequently caught with our hands sea fowl, which made great addition to our dinner of bread. As a supply of water the rain was a great blessing to us, but I had not vessels to contain a sufficient quantity. It therefore happened that two gills, or a half pint of water, was what each person received in the course of the day, issued at 8 in the morning, at noon, and at sunset, with $\frac{1}{4}$ of a lb. of bread at breakfast and the same at dinner, sometimes giving an allowance for supper. Birds caught.

I found the lat'd. of this place 12° 39' S., 144° 44'. The main appeared with a variety of high and low land interspersed with wood, and the more interior parts mountainous. I called it Restoration Isl'd. The abundance of water.

1789

15 Oct.

Natives.

31.—At 4 in the afternoon, after having performed prayers, I sailed. About 20 natives came down on the opposite shore, armed with spears. They were black, and waved to us to come to them.

Inhabited islands.

I steered along shore to the N.N.W. and N.W. b. N. in the direction of the coast. Saw several islands, and at 8 in the morning passed through a cluster, and saw more natives armed in the same manner, and made the same signs as those I had seen before. I, however, did not land.

The appearance of the country is totally changed, being very low, and mostly sand hills.

Shell-fish and water.

Landed on an island, and gathered (shell fish) oysters and a few clams. Found fine rain water in a hollow of rocks, which again enabled us to fill up our sea store. From the heights of this island I saw a small key to the N.W. b. N. As my situation was too near the main, having discovered at this place the natives to have large cannoes, I again prepared to sail, so as to reach the key before night. At noon dined on oysters and clams, and found the latit'd. of the isl'd $11^{\circ} 58' \text{ S.}$, long'd., $144^{\circ} 29' \text{ E.}$

Illness.

June 1st.—This evening I landed, and spent the night at the key above mentioned. Got a few clams. Some of my people were taken ill with vomitings and dizziness in their heads, besides a most dreadfull tenesmus afflicted those who had not been to stool since they left the ship, and others since they left Tofoa.

At noon I found the latitude of this key $11^{\circ} 47' \text{ So.}$, long'd. $144^{\circ} 24' \text{ Et.}$

A gale.

June 2nd.—This afternoon it came on a strong gale, and my people being still ill I preferred giving them a good night's rest to going to sea. At dawn of day I found them much better. Sailed. Passed several isl'ds. The coast sandy and barren. At noon lat'd. $11^{\circ} 18' \text{ So.}$, $144^{\circ} 20' \text{ Et.}$

Cape York rounded.

June 3rd.—At night I again stopt on an island, the lat'd. of which is $10^{\circ} 52' \text{ So.}$, long'd. $144^{\circ} 03' \text{ Et.}$, and at dawn of day I again sailed and followed the direction of the coast to the N.W. Saw many islands. At noon I was in the lat'd. $10^{\circ} 31' \text{ So.}$, long'd. $143^{\circ} 43' \text{ Et.}$ I now found I had passed the north part of New Holland. Land woody.

Steering for Timor.

4th.—At 5 o'clock this evening I left New Holland and steered for Timor, the exact lat'd. of which I was not certain of, but I determined to steer for it in the lat'd. of about $9^{\circ} 30' \text{ So.}$

Timor sighted.

12.—At 3 o'clock this morning, to the great joy of every person, we discovered Timor bearing W.N.W. At daylight I found I was on the S.E. part of it, and therefore determined to run down on the south side, and to lay to at night lest I might pass any settlement, for I was not certain where the Dutch Governor resided.

14th.—This afternoon, after having passed through a heavy breaking sea and shoal water, I discovered an opening, into which I sailed and anchored at 3 o'clock. Since found to be a bay on the west part of Timor, opposite to Palo Samon, in the south entrance. The island Rotty being in sight to the S.W. b. S. Saw some Malays. Sent two men after them, who brought several Malays to me, one of whom agreed to show me Coupang and conduct me to the Governor. This being settled, we sailed and rowed along the east shore, and in the morning, a little before day, I anchored off the town and waited for leave to come on shore.

1780

1800

Arrival at
Kupang.Kindness of
the people.

At daybreak I was desired by a soldier to land, and I was conducted to a gentleman's house, a Capt'n Spikerman, who upon my application requested I would order all my people up to his house that they might receive some nourishment. The town surgeon was sent for (Mr. Max), who gave us every kind assistance in dressing our sores, and all who saw us were ready to contribute to the relief of such poor distressed creatures, one-half of whom could not have lived a week longer, and perhaps not a few days.

The Governor from extreme ill-health was not able to see me just at this time, but he became anxious, and I had it in my power to see him by eleven o'clock. He received me in a most affectionate and peculiar manner of kindness. Orders were instantly given for our accommodation, and I had full power to see my people taken care of.

The
Governor ill.

Thus ended happily, through the assistance of Divine Providence, without accident, a voyage of the most extraordinary nature that ever happened in the world, let it be taken in its extent, duration, and so much want of the necessaries of life.

An extraordinary
voyage.

For any one to conceive the picture of such poor miserable beings as we were, let him fancy that in his house he is in the moment of giving relief to 18 men, whose ghastly countenances (but from the known cause) would be equally liable to affright as demand pity; let him view their limbs full of sores and their bodies nothing but skin and bones habited in rags; and at last let him conceive he sees the tears of joy and gratitude flowing o'er their cheeks at their benefactor. With what a mixture of horror, surprise, and pity will his mind be then agitated. So felt the people of Timor on giving us relief.

Miserable
beings.

The Governor's* ill health occasioned my transactions to be with a Mr. Timotheus Wanjon, the second in power at this place. Of him I was supplied with whatever I was in want. The surgeon, Mr. Max, attended daily our sick, our own surgeon being incapable, and in a short time our health began to improve.

All want
supplied.

I found in the road three vessels that were to sail for Batavia about the latter part of September, but their loading became so unexpectedly tedious that it amounted to a certainty, if I

Sailed
at Batavia
1800.

* Note in MS.—Wm. Adrian Van Este.

1789

15 Oct.

remained to go with them, I should be too late at Batavia to sail for Europe in the October fleet, in which case I must remain there untill January in the most unhealthy time of the year to get a passage in some of our China ships. I therefore determined to hire or purchase a vessel to take us away, and gave publick notice of my intention. Several offers were made to me, the lowest of which was that they stated the voyage to them to be equal to seven months, and therefore their price was 850 dollars, because they could not return before the west monsoon set in. As this was the case, I considered a purchase to be vastly preferable, and on the 1st July I bought a vessel for 1,000 rix dollars, and called her the Resource.

A vessel
purchased.

Financial
arrange-
ments.

I now presented a short account of my voyage to the Governor, Mr. Van Este, with a description list of the pirates, and requested, in his Majesty's name, that orders might be given to all their settlements to take them if they appeared. I also made application for certain sums of money, or for the Governor to take upon him to pay my accounts, for which I would give bills on the Commissioners of his Majesty's Navy and Victualling; but a great demur now took place. However, Mr. Wanjon,* at last took it upon himself and paid or advanced the money out of his private fortune, which the Governor did not like to advance on the East India Company's account.

Death of Mr.
Nelson.

On the 20th July.—This day died of an inflammatory fever Mr. David Nelson.† He had just recovered strength sufficient to go about the country, when, by laying aside some warm cloathing he had worn for a considerable time, he caught a severe cold.

A faithful
officer.

As a tribute justly due to him, I have to say he was ever diligent in his busyness, and it always was his desire to forward my directions for the good of the service we were on. He was also equally serviceable and spirited in my voyage here, in the course of which he always gave me pleasure by conducting himself with resolution and obedience to my orders. I regret his loss very much.

On the 19th August I was ready for sea, and having finished all my busyness and informed the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty of my proceedings, I waited only for the tide to get out of the river.

Departure
for Batavia.

On the 20th I sailed. I left the Governor, Mr. Van Este, at the point of death.

I beg leave to acquaint their Lordships that the greatest kindness and attention has been shown to us while here by Mr. Timotheus Wanjon, who seconded every friendly wish of the Governor with real services, and will ever deserve our gratefull thanks.

The kind-
ness of the
town
surgeon.

The surgeon of the town, Mr. Max, has also been ever attentive to my sick people, and has daily and hourly attended them with great care, for which I could not get him to render me any account or other answer than that he thought it his duty.

* Note in MS.—Second here.

† Botanist to the expedition.

I find the situation of the Fort of Coupang to be $10^{\circ} 12' S.$, longd. 1780
 $127^{\circ} 09' E.$; by the Dutch, $10^{\circ} 11' S.$, $121^{\circ} 51' E.$ of Greenwich. 1780

On the 30th August I passed through Streights Mangaryue, on the west end of the Island Flores, $4^{\circ} 00'$ west of Coupang, latitude south part Streights $8^{\circ} 50' S.$, and of the north $8^{\circ} 30' S.$

On the 7th Sept'r passed the N.E. part of Java, and I deter- Java.
 mined to touch at the different principal settlements of the Dutch along the north side of this island.

On the 10th, after some little difficulty, I found out the settle-
 ment of Passourwang, and here I received great civility and
 refreshment from a Captain Van Reyck, the Resident, who told
 me he could not allow me to be longer there than one day.

On the 12th I sailed for Sourabya.

On the 13th anchored in Sourabya Road. Received great Sourabaya.
 civility and refreshment here from Mr. Anthony Barkay, the
 Premier of this town, who, fearfull of my meeting with pirates,
 ordered me four prows to see me safe to Samarang.

On the 17th sailed from Sourabya.

On the 23rd anchored at Samarang. Here I was obliged to get Samarang.
 a new mainmast, and, being refitted, I sail'd on the 26th for
 Batavia, with one prow in company to defend us against piratical
 vessels which, it is said, the coast is very much infested with. At
 this place the Governor of Java resides.

On the 2nd October I anchored in Batavia Road, and I landed Arrival at
Batavia.
 about 4 in the afternoon. At 5 the Governor-General received
 me with much politeness and civility. I presented to him an
 account of the loss of his Majesty's ship, with a description of
 the pirates, and requested in his Majesty's name that directions
 might be given to their different settlements to take them if they
 appeared. I requested leave to sell his Majesty's schooner that I The
Schooner to
be sold.
 commanded by publick sale; that I might have my people and
 officers taken care of while here; and that his Excellency would
 direct and give orders for me to be received on board the first ship
 that sailed for Europe. I received the fullest assurances that
 every thing should be done that possibly could for my accomo-
 dation, and that my petition would be presented in the morning
 to the Council. In the morning my request was granted, and I
 ordered the vessel to come into the river. I had now one man ill
 of fever and flux, and two invalids, who I directed to be sent to
 the country hospital, about 4 miles from town.

It was with great difficulty I got through what I had to do for
 those who were with me, when I was attacked with violent fever and Fever.
 headache, and my life became in imminent danger. On the 7th I was
 removed out to the Physician-General's house, and the fever abated.

On the 9th I applied to the Governor-General to allow me and
 my people to depart for Europe in the packet that was to sail in the Sailing
at Batavia
on the 9th.
 course of a week or ten days, when I was informed his Excellency

1789

15 Oct.

could not send us all in one ship ; but that as the physician had informed him of the risk I run by remaining at Batavia being very great, he consented for me, with two others, to have a passage, altho it was contrary to orders that the packet should carry any passengers.

The schooner sold.

The 10th Octr. the schooner was put up at publick sale, and sold only for 295 rix dollars. Died, Thos. Hall.

On the 11th I was charged in an account as a tax for sale of the schooner, but I refused paying any tax ; it was therefore no longer demanded.

I now found myself so debilitated that I determined to sail in the packet. My people and officers were to be put into different ships. It therefore only rested whether I was to sail first or last.

Examination as to the mutiny.

The Sabandar* brought me word on the 12th that the Governor and Council had considered it absolutely necessary to their being possessed of full powers to detain the ship and men belonging to his Britannick Majesty† ; that my officers and men should be sworn and examined as from a requisition on my part. I could have no objection.

On the 15th the officers and men attended at the Stadt House and were examined and sworn to the cause and loss of his Majesty's ship, a copy of which was sent to me.

News sent to India.

As it is impossible to say where a set of piratical people may go, I thought it proper to acquaint his Excellency Lord Cornwallis‡ with the loss of his Majesty's ship, and sent him a description list of the pirates.

I now gave the master written orders how to proceed, and left with him the amount of the sale of the schooner, with orders to give in advance one month's pay to every one except himself and surgeon ; and to see that such money was laid out in warm clothing, to pass the Cape with. Mr. John Samuel (clerk) and John Smith (seaman) I directed to go in the packet wth me.

Departure for the Cape.

On the 16th October I embarked on board the Vlydt packet, Peter Couvret, commander, and sailed.§

WM. BLIGH.

Description list of the pirates remaining on board his Majesty's armed vessel Bounty, on the 28th April, 1789.

List of the mutineers.

Fletcher Christian, mas'r mate ; aged 24 years ; 5 feet 9 inches high ; very dark complexion ; dark-brown hair ; strong made ; a star tatowed on his left breast ; backside tatowed ; a little bow-legged ; he is subject to a violent perspiration in his hands, so that he soils any thing he handles.

George Stewart, mid. ; aged 23 years ; 5 feet 7 inches high ; good complexion ; dark hair ; slender made ; narrow-chested and long neck ; on his left breast is tatowed a star, and also one on the left

* Shebender. Ante, p. 372.

† The Bounty and her piratical crew.

‡ The Governor-General of India.

§ For the Cape of Good Hope, en route to England.

arm, on which likewise is tatowed a heart with darts; tatowed on the backside; very small features.

1789

1804

Peter Heywood, mid.; aged 17 years; 5 feet 7 inches high; fair complexion; light-brown hair; well proportioned; very much tatowed, and on the right leg is tatowed the legs of Man, as the impression of that coin is: at this time he had not done growing; he speaks with the Isle of Man accent.

Edward Young, mid.; aged 22 years; 5 feet 8 inches high; dark complexion, and rather a bad look; dark-brown hair; strong made; has lost several of his fore teeth, and those that remain are all rotten; a small mole on the left side of the throat, and on the right arm is tatowed a heart and dart through it, with E.Y. underneath, and the date of the year 1788 or 1789, we are not sure.

Charles Churchill, ship's corporal; aged 30 years; 5 feet 10 inches high; fair complexion; short light-brown hair; bald-headed; strong made: the fore-finger of his left hand crooked, and the hand shows the mark of a severe scald; tatowed in several parts of the body.

James Morrison, boatswain's mate; aged 28 years; 5 feet 8 inches high; sallow complexion; long black hair; slender made; lost the use of the 1st joint of the fore-finger of his right hand: tatowed with star under his left breast, and a garter round his left leg with the motto: "Honi soit qui mal y pense": has been wounded in one of his arms with a musquet ball.

John Mills, gunner's mate; aged 40 years; 5 feet 10 inches high; fair complexion; light-brown hair: a strong raw-boned man; a scar in his right armpit occasioned by an abscess.

John Millward, A.B.; aged 22 years; 5 feet 5 inches high; brown complexion; dark hair; strong made; tatowed under the pit of the stomach with a Taoomy or breast-plate of Otahite.

Matthew Thompson, A.B.; aged 40 years; 5 feet 8 inches high; very dark complexion; short black hair; slender made; has lost the joint of his great toe of his right foot; is tatowed.

Wm. Mickoy, A.B.; aged 25 years; 5 feet 6 inches high; fair complexion; light brown hair; strong made; a scar where he has been stabbed in the belly; a small scar under his chin; is tatowed.

Matthew Quintal; aged 21 years; 5 feet 5 inches high; fair complexion; light brown hair; strong made; very much tatowed; tatowed on the backside and other places.

Jno. Sumner; aged 24 years; 5 feet 8 inches high; fair complexion; brown hair; slender made; a scar upon the left cheek, and tatowed in several places.

Thomas Burkitt; aged 26 years; 5 feet 9 inches high; fair complexion; very much marked with small pox; brown hair; well made, and very much tatowed.

Isaac Martin; aged 30 years; 5 feet 11 inches high; sallow complexion; short brown hair; raw-boned; tatowed on his left breast with a star.

1789
15 Oct.

Wm. Muspratt ; aged 30 years : 5 feet 6 inches high ; dark complexion ; brown hair ; slender made ; very strong black beard ; scared under his chin ; tatowed in several places of his body.

Henry Hilbrant ; aged 25 years ; 5 feet 7 inches high ; fair complexion ; sandy hair ; very strong made ; his left arm shorter than the right, having been broke ; is an Hanoverian, and speaks bad English. He is tatowed in several places.

Alexander Smith ; aged 22 years ; 5 feet 5 inches high ; brown complexion ; brown hair ; strong made ; pitted with the small pox ; very much tatowed ; scar on his right foot.

John Williams ; aged 25 years ; 5 feet 5 inches high ; dark complexion ; black hair ; slender made : a scar on the back part of his head ; is a native of Guernsey, and speaks French ; is tatowed.

Richd. Skinner ; aged 22 years ; 5 feet 8 inches high ; fair complexion ; light brown hair ; very well made ; scars on both ankles and on his right shin : is tatowed : and by trade a hair dresser.

Thos. Ellison ; aged 17 years ; 5 feet 3 inches high ; fair complexion ; dark hair ; strong made : has got his name tatowed on his right arm, and dated Oct'r 25th, 1788.

Wm. Brown, botanist assistant : aged 27 years : 5 feet 8 inches high : fair complexion : dark brown hair : rather slender made : a remarkable scar on one of his cheeks, which contracts the eye lid and runs down to his throat, occasioned by the King's Evil : is tatowed.

Michl. Byrne ; aged 28 years : 5 feet 6 inches high ; fair complexion, and is almost blind ; plays the fiddle ; has the mark of an issue in the back of his neck.

Joseph Coleman, armourer ; aged 40 years : 5 feet 6 inches high ; fair complexion ; grey hair ; strong made : a heart tatowed on one of his arms. This man declared to me publickly when I was in the boat that he knew nothing of the transaction, and begged of me to remember he told me of it, and that he was kept against his consent.

Thos. M^cIntosh, carpt's crew ; aged 28 years ; 5 feet 6 inches high ; fair complexion ; light brown hair ; slender made ; pitted by the small pox.

Charles Norman, carp. mate : aged 26 years ; 5 feet 9 inches high ; fair complexion ; light brown hair ; slender made ; pitted by the small pox, and has a remarkable motion with his head and eyes.

These two last, M^cIntosh and Norman, declared as Coleman had done. Michl. Byrne, I was told, had no knowledge of what was doing.

WM. BLIGH.





PLATE 1.—NEW ZEALAND AND NORFOLK ISLAND FLAX-PLANT.

(*PHORMIUM TENAX.*)

APPENDIX B.

FLAX-PLANTS OF NEW SOUTH WALES AND
NORFOLK ISLAND.

IN his "Proposal for Establishing a Settlement in New South Wales" Mr. J. M. Matra suggested that important results might be obtained from the cultivation of "the New Zealand hemp or flax-plant" (*Phormium tenax*), which appears to have been well known at the time to English manufacturers.* Having dwelt on the fitness of the soil of New South Wales for the growth of semi-tropical plants, Matra says:—

New
Zealand
flax-plant

I must not omit the mention of a very important article, which may be obtained in any quantity, if this settlement be made the proper use of, which would be of very considerable consequence, both among the necessities and conveniences of life. I mean the New Zealand hemp or flax-plant, an object equally of curiosity and utility.

The same idea was made prominent in Sir George Young's "Plan,"† and in the "Heads of a Plan"; and in the Royal Instructions given to Phillip he was enjoined to pay particular attention to the cultivation of the flax plant.‡ Phillip seems to have thought that the plant grew wild in New South Wales, and was disappointed at not meeting with it, for in his despatch from Sydney, dated 15th May, 1788, he speaks of a sample of native flax that he is sending to England, and adds: "But the flax plant described by Captain Cook I have never met with, nor had the botanists that accompanied Mons. La Perouse found it when I saw them, and which was some time after I arrived." The plant described by Captain Cook is the *Phormium tenax*, which is not indigenous to Australia. It was found, however, at Norfolk Island growing abundantly.¶ In a letter to Nepean, dated 5th

New South
Wales flax

* Ante, p. 2. † Ante, p. 11. ‡ Ante, p. 19. § Ante, p. 89. || Ante, p. 148.

¶ According to the *Botanical Magazine*, the New Zealand flax and the Norfolk Island flax are identical. Cook, in his "Voyage to the South Pole," vol. II, p. 148, says: "We observed many trees and plants common at New Zealand, and in particular the flax plant, which is rather more luxuriant here [Norfolk Island] than in any part of that country."

July, 1788, Phillip returns to the subject: "Every possible attention will be paid to the cultivation of the flax-plant when circumstances permit, and on our arrival in this port it was frequently met with; but when I judged the seed to be ripe and ordered it to be collected, very little was found, and none in those places where it had been seen in any quantity, which I impute to the natives pulling up the plant when in flower to make their fishing-lines.*" There can be little doubt that the plant referred to in this letter is "*Gymnostachys anceps*," commonly known as the native flax. Mr. Charles Moore, F.L.S., Director of the Sydney Botanic Gardens, writes:

Seed collected with difficulty.

Mr. C. Moore's description.

The only plant known to me as native flax is that called botanically *Gymnostachys anceps*, which belongs to the family *aroidæ*. This plant has long flag-like leaves, which are extremely tough. At one time its leaves were used by both blacks and settlers for tying purposes. When the fibres of the leaves have softened by being drawn over a fire and twisted they become as strong as any flax rope of the same size. It grows plentifully in shady situations within the coast range. This plant has no affinity whatever to the New Zealand or Norfolk Island flax.

The giant lily or flax lily.

Other native fibre plants have a resemblance to flax, notably the giant lily, *Doryanthes excelsa*, sometimes called the flax lily. This plant grows freely in the National Park, and it was found in the neighbourhood of the George River a few years after the settlement was formed at Sydney, but north of that river it is not met with until Gosford is reached. *Gymnostachys*, on the other hand, is common to all parts of the coast. As stated by Phillip, the natives used it in making their fishing-lines, and they employed it for other purposes as well. The fibre of the native flax is stronger than that of any other Australian plant. It has been thoroughly tested, and Mr. Moore states that in one instance a thread not more than one-tenth of an inch in diameter sustained a weight of 60 lb. Samples were sent by Mr. Moore to the London Exhibition of 1862, and to other Exhibitions, but the plant does not appear to have attracted much attention. Whatever its value may

The native flax.

Strength of fibre.

Flax-plants in the Botanic Gardens.

be, it is less suitable for manufacturing purposes than the *Phormium tenax*, which occupies an important place in the exports of New Zealand. *Gymnostachys* is, moreover, a slow-growing plant, and is not so easily cultivated as the *Phormium tenax*. Specimens of both may be seen in the Sydney Botanic Gardens. The native flax is small and poorly developed, while the New Zealand plant grows vigorously, and presents a handsome appearance. The giant lily, or flax lily, grows fairly well in the Gardens. The Port Jackson and Illawarra natives made use of it for various purposes, and it was thought at one time that it might be used for paper-making. It was tested many years ago by the Sydney Paper Mills Company, Liverpool, with unsatisfactory results. The fibre was found to be unsuitable for the manufacture of white paper, although brown paper of excellent quality could be made from it.

* Ante, p 143.



PLATE 2.—NATIVE FLAX-PLANT OF NEW SOUTH WALES.

(GYMNOSTACHYS ANCEPS.)

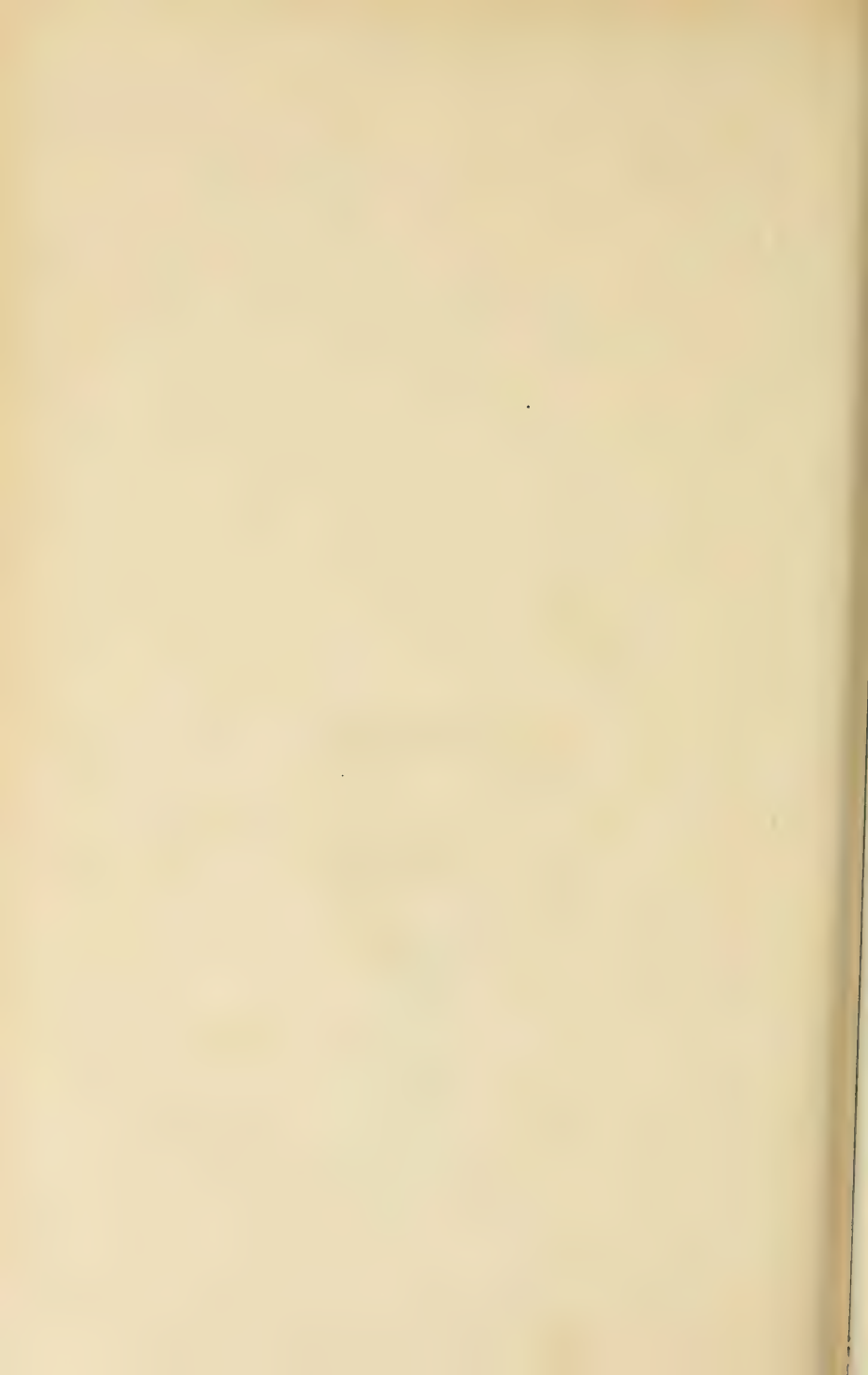






PLATE 3.—GIANT LILY, OR FLAX LILY, OF NEW SOUTH WALES .

(*DORYANTHES EXCELSA*.)

The illustrations which accompany the Appendix are from drawings of the flax-plant growing in the Botanic Gardens, Sydney. No. 1 is the New Zealand and Norfolk Island flax (*Phormium tenax*); No. 2, the native flax (*Gymnostachys anceps*); No. 3, the giant lily or flax lily (*Doryanthes excelsa*). The drawings were made towards the end of January when the plants had gone out of bloom, but the flower stems and faded blossoms are shown.

No effort seems to have been made in Phillip's time to turn the New South Wales flax-plant to account. The *Phormium tenax*, Cook's flax-plant, was plentiful at Norfolk Island, and it promised better results than the flax that had been found near Sydney. When King was sent to Norfolk Island as Commandant with the first batch of convicts (February, 1788), he took with him written instructions from Phillip, which contained this direction: "You are immediately to proceed with the cultivation of the flax-plant, which you will find growing spontaneously on the island."^{*} King, in his first despatch to Phillip, mentions the flax-plant, which, he says, "is found very luxuriant all over the island, growing to the height of eight feet"; but the flax-dresser he took with him was unable to do anything with it, "as this plant requires a different treatment in the dressing to what the European plant does." In 1790, Andrew Hume, a superintendent of convicts, and an expert in flax manufacture, arrived at Norfolk Island. In February, 1791, he sent specimens of coarse cloth made from the flax-plant to Governor Phillip; but he represented that he was "much in want of proper material, as well as proper people, for the purpose of carrying on the manufactory." English flax-dressers were unfamiliar with the Norfolk Island plant, and it was decided to make use of the knowledge possessed by the New Zealand natives. Acting under instructions from Captain Vancouver,[†] two men, named Woodoo and Tooke, were captured by Lieutenant Hanson at the Bay of Islands, taken to Port Jackson in the *Dædalus*, and delivered to Lieut.-Governor Grose, who immediately sent them to Norfolk Island, where they arrived on 2nd May, 1793. Lieut.-Governor King says, "The information they possessed turned out to be very little, as this operation is the peculiar occupation of women, and as Woodoo is a warrior and Tooke a priest, they gave us to understand that dressing of flax never made any part of their studies; but the little information which they did give us was sufficient for us to improve on, both in quality and quantity." At the end of six months these men were taken back to their own country. On the arrival of the transport *Britannia* at Norfolk Island, in November, 1793, King left the island in charge of Capt. Nepean, and embarked on the *Britannia* with the New Zealanders, landing them on the 13th November, 1793, at the Bay of Islands, and returning to Norfolk Island on the 18th.

Norfolk
Island
flax.

Observations on
the
flax-plant.

Captain of
New
Zealand
natives.

They are
sent back to
their own
country.

* Ante, p. 137.

† Ante, p. 685.

APPENDIX C.

TREES ON THE NEPEAN RIVER.

Trees on the
Nepean.

A tree like
the walnut.

The red
cedar.

WHILE exploring the country about the Nepean, Phillip took particular notice of some trees which were found on the banks of the river, probably because they reminded him of what he had seen in England. In a despatch to Lord Sydney (ante, p. 306) he says: "The banks of this river, which most probably empties itself into the Hawkesbury, are high; the soil a good light mould, and covered with trees: the wood of some of these trees is very light; they are about the size of large walnut-trees, which they resemble: they shed their leaves, and bear a small fruit, which is said to be very wholesome." Phillip was not a careless observer, but this description does not properly apply to any tree indigenous to New South Wales. The red cedar (*Cedrela Australis*, F. Von Mueller) is not unlike the walnut in foliage and general appearance, and is also deciduous, a characteristic which belongs to only one other of our native trees, viz., *Melia composita* (Willd.), or white cedar. But it bears no fruit, and in this respect it differs radically from the tree described in the despatch to Lord Sydney. Phillip's account is irreconcilable with botanical facts, but it is capable of explanation. Phillip saw a tree which reminded him of the walnut, and gave his impressions as to its appearance, but he did not describe the fruit it was supposed to bear. It is probable that on this point he accepted the statement of some person who had noticed fruit growing on a tree of a different kind but having some resemblance to the one mentioned in the despatch. A specimen of the red cedar may be seen in the Sydney Botanic Gardens.

APPENDIX D.

THE HAWKESBURY.

IN his despatch to Lord Sydney of 13th February, 1790,* Phillip says :—"The high rocky country which forms Broken Bay is lost as you proceed up the Hawkesbury, and the banks of the river are then covered with timber, the soil, a rich light mould, and, judging from the little we saw of the country, I should suppose it good land to a very considerable extent." This passage is open to misconception. The writer, according to the apparent meaning of the words, noticed a change in the aspect of the country soon after leaving Broken Bay on his exploring trip up the Hawkesbury, the fact being that the course of the river is marked by "high rocky country" for many miles from the mouth. The description of its banks in the sentence quoted applies to the upper part of the river; it can have no relation to the lower part. In March, 1791, a year later than the date of Phillip's despatch, Lieutenant Dawes, of the Marines, prepared "A map of all those parts of the territory of New South Wales which have been seen by any person belonging to the settlement at Port Jackson in the said territory." In this map, which is published in Vol. I. of the History from the Records, the course of the river is shown, and the chief features of the country indicated. The Hawkesbury is thus described: "The banks of the Hawkesbury are very steep, rocky, and difficult of access till within the distance of about 10 or 12 miles of Richmond Hill." No doubt it was to the upper part of the river that Phillip referred when he spoke of the change in the character of the country.

* *Ants.*, p. 295.

INDEX.

Abbott, Lient.

adjutant and inspector of outposts at Norfolk Island, 575.

Aboren

recovery of from small-pox, 376.

Absconders

outlawry of, at Norfolk Island, 391.
carried away by the Charlotte, 394.
discovered on board the Neptune, 394.
others in concealment, 394.
death of, at Norfolk Island, 440.
from the Pitt at Rio, 528; from Sydney, 565.
theft of boats by, 534.

Absconding

fears of, 534, 555.
of convicts from Sydney, 565.
prevention of, suggested by Phillip, 565.
steps for prevention of, taken by English Government, 588.

Accidents

boat upset by whale, Port Jackson—Mr. Ferguson and two marines drowned, 365.
boat swamped at Norfolk Island—Mr. Cunningham and three men drowned, 401.
boat cast on the rocks at Norfolk Island—eight lives lost, 402.

Active

tonnage of, &c., 422.
arrival of, at Sydney, 489 (note), 532, 550.
arrival of, at Table Bay, 493.

Admiral Barrington

convicts sent by, 463.
leaky state of, 505, 508.
arrival of, at Sydney, 532, 550.

Admiralty

requested to assist in equipment of First Fleet, 20-22.

Phillip's instructions from, 28.
asked for cost of equipment, 32.
estimate given, 32.
warrant of, for Judge-Advocate Collins, 43.
Phillip not subordinate to, after landing, 47-49.
orders of, to Phillip, 94.

Letters from—

to Lord Sydney, 23, 29.
to Navy Board, 36, 44, 46, 55, 58, 60, 61.
to Nepean, 47.
to Phillip, 48.
to Captain Marshall, 56, 60, 61.

Letters to—

from the Treasury, 25.
from Phillip, 28, 35, 40, 60, 94, 103, 105, 114, 118, 165, 193, 214.
from Lord Sydney, 20, 94, 230.
from Grenville, 248, 266.
from Ross, 78, 104, 144, 156, 165, 169, 194, 215, 219.
from Hunter, 224, 225, 227.
from Riou, 286.

See also "Vice-Admiralty."

Africa

transportation to, 6.

Agriculture

See "Cultivation."

Albemarle

tonnage of, &c., 422.
mutiny on board of, 487, 488, 489, 559.
arrival of, at Sydney, 532, 550.

Alexander

transport-ship, 44, 45, 86, 121.
number of convicts on board of, 34, 42, 79.
alterations to, 45, 78, 79.

Alexander

- health of passengers, 55, 78, 107, 111.
- victualling of, 55.
- sickness on board of, 78.
- marines on, 79.
- arrival of, at Botany Bay, 121 ; at Sydney Cove, 122.
- return of, to England, 178, 182, 193, 226.
- disabled, 226.

Alley, R.

- arrival of, at Table Bay, 323.
- return of, to England, 475.
- letter from, to Nepean, 323.

Allowance

- warrant for N.S.W. Corps, 492.

Alt, Augustus

- surveyor, salary of, 33.
- a member of court for trial of pirates, 81.
- a member of Vice-Admiralty Court, 98.
- resignation of, 551, 552.
- letter from, to Phillip, 552.

Altree, J. T.

- return of, to England, 475.
- services of, 481.

America, North

- expedition to, 451.
- despatch of Dædalus to, 497.

American Colonies

- loss of, 1.

American Loyalists

- N. S. Wales an asylum for, 2, 8, 9, 12.

American Traders

- intention of, to send provisions to Sydney, 498.

Ammunition

- none sent with First Fleet, 107, 108, 111.

Animals

- native, 180, 192, 220, 222, 283, 371, 559, 566.

Anson Bay

- situation of, 430.

Anti-scorbutics

- required for marines and convicts, 57, 58.
- "sweet-tea," 220.

Aranbanoo

- capture of, at Manly, 298, 376.
- death of, from small-pox, 298, 308, 377.

Arden, R. P.

- letter from, to Lord Sydney, 10.

Ariel

- ship under Lieut. Moorson, 117.

Arms and Ammunition

- supply of, 28, 33, 45, 106, 108, 111, 112.

Arndell, T.

- services of, 661.
- land granted to, by Phillip, 661.
- letter from, to Phillip, 661.

Arrest

- of officers forming court-martial, 139, 157 *et seq.*

Arscot

- services of, 439.

Articles of War

- received by Phillip, 103.

Artificers

- to form part of the marines, 18.
- employed by Ross, 182.
- to be sent in Guardian, 230.
- detained at the Cape, 352.
- want of, 352, 548.

Arthur's Vale

- Norfolk Island, 579.

Assienment

- instructions regarding, 258.
- inconveniences of, 300.
- arrangement concerning, left to Phillip, 585.

Assistant Surgeon

- commission of, 23.

Astrolabe

- voyage of, 123.

Atkins, Richard

- appointment of, by Phillip, as Registrar of Vice-Admiralty Court, *vice* Miller, deceased, 600.

Atlantic

- tonnage of, 422.
- arrival of, at Sydney, 532, 550.
- engagement of, at Sydney, 533.
- sent to Calcutta *via* Norfolk Island, for supplies, 533, 550.
- departure of, for Norfolk Island and Calcutta, 554.
- return of, to Sydney, 643.
- departure of, for Norfolk Island, 643.

Auxiliary Company

- raising of, by Phillip, 662.
- Johnston recommended by Phillip for the command, 662.
- strength of company, 663.

Ball, Lieutenant

- commander of Supply, 36, 60, 125.
- groundless charge against, 61.
- member of court for trial of pirates, 81.
- member of the Vice-Admiralty Court, 98.
- sent to Norfolk Island, 125, 194.
- discovers Lord Howe Island, 126.
- sent to Lord Howe Island, 146, 167.
- arrival of, at Norfolk Island, 379.

Ball, Lieutenant

- offers help to the *Sirius*, 380.
- return of, to Port Jackson, 382.
- takes the *Supply* to Batavia for provisions, 372, 382, 383.
- arrival of, at Batavia, 372.
- discovers *Sirius Island*, 383.
- discovers a dangerous shoal, 385.
- application of, for leave of absence, 479.
- arrival of, at Plymouth, 615.
- application of, for fresh employment, 674.
- letters from, to Stephens, 479, 615, 674.
- letter to, from Stephens, 473.

Ball Bay

- situation of, 430.

Balmain, William

- assistant surgeon, 28.

Banks, Sir Joseph

- part taken by, in the foundation of New South Wales, xv.
- approval by, of Matra's proposal, 3.
- communication with Captain Bligh, *re* the *Bounty*, 109, 117, 120.
- plants and seeds for, 116, 128, 212, 220.
- samples of clay sent to, 190.
- declines office in English Ministry, 229.
- asks that plants may be sent home, 229.
- opinion of, concerning essence of malt as a cure for scurvy, 232.
- proposal of, to send useful plants and trees to Sydney by the *Guardian*, 247, 248.
- proposal approved of by Government, 248, 249.
- proposal of, to send out settlers, 424.
- memoranda of, *re* instructions to Lieutenant Menzies, 424-426.
- suggestion by, to send second bread-fruit expedition, 473 and note.
- attitude of Vancouver to, 521.
- expenditure by, for Providence and *Guardian*, 551.
- notes by, on Chatham and *Discovery*, 635-636.
- Letters from—
 - to Grenville, 247, 456.
 - to Nepean, 229, 501, 502, 550.
 - to Menzies, 520.
 - to Richards, 522, 552, 580, 630.
- Letters to—
 - from Bligh, 109, 117, 120, 267, 268.
 - from Considen, 220.
 - from Lord Chatham, 473.
 - from Menzies, 476, 480, 489, 502, 521, 638.
 - from Captain Harvey, 280, 427.
 - from Richards, 508, 524, 552, 580, 625, 627, 630, 633, 642.

Banks Papers

- purchase of, from Lord Brabourne, xv.
- list of, 117, 120, 220, 221, 229, 232, 267-278, 280, 283, 332, 397, 424, 426, 427, 451, 456, 473, 476, 480, 485, 489, 490, 501, 502, 508, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 550, 552, 580, 625, 627, 630, 633, 635, 636, 638, 642.

Barracks

- site of, 143.
- erection of, at Sydney, 195-201; at Rose Hill 470.
- slow progress with, 218.

Barrington

- becomes a religious convert and performs service, 505.

Barter with Natives

- articles taken for, 33, 43, 53, 54.

Batavia

- arrival of Bligh at, 278 (note), 703.
- departure of Bligh from, 278 (note), 704.
- arrival of *Supply* at, 372.
- fever at, 385, 480, 617.
- unwholesome spirits, 385.
- description of, by Lieutenant Fowell, 385-386.
- buildings, 386.
- vessel purchased at, 386.

Bengal

- supply of provisions from, 477, 478, 479, 679.
- See also "*Caleutta*" and "*India*".

Bennilong

- capture of, 300, 309, 378.
- domesticated by Phillip, 300, 309.

Berteret, J.

- letter to, from J. Johnstone, 523.

Biddulph, R.

- proposal of, to send provisions from India, 593.
- letter from, to Phillip, 593.

Birds

- N. S. Wales, 222.
- Norfolk Island, 398, 429.

Births

- in New South Wales, 301.
- on board *Lady Juliana*, 323.
- at Norfolk Island, 440.

Blackburn, David

- good conduct of, as master of the *Supply*, 553.

Blacklead

- found at Sydney, 212 and note.

Blanca, Count Florida

- letter of, *re* surrender of territory by Spain at Nootka, sent by Dundas to the Admiralty, 499.

Blankett, Captain

- arrival of, at the Cape, with the *Leopard* and the *Thames*, 408.
- Letters to—
 - from Stephens, 408.
 - from Nepean, 409.

Bligh, Captain

- appointed to command of the *Bounty*, through Banks, 109.
- on board the *Bounty* at Spithead, 117.
- preparation for voyage in the *Bounty*, 117.

Bligh, Captain

- weatherbound at Spithead, 120.
- departure of, from Spithead, in the *Bounty*, 269, 687.
- failure of, to round Cape Horn, 269, 687.
- arrival of, at the Cape of Good Hope, 269, 687, 693.
- arrival of, at Otaheite, 270, 693.
- departure of, from Otaheite, 270, 693.
- arrival of, at the Friendly Islands, 270, 690, 694.
- seizure of, by mutineers, 271-272, 689-690.
- voyage of, in the *Bounty's* launch, from the Friendly Islands to Timor, 271-278, 690-691, 695-701.
- reports by, on Mutiny of the *Bounty*, 267-278, 689-706.
- departure of, from Timor, 702.
- arrival of, at Batavia, 703.
- departure of, from Batavia, 704.
- voyage of, to England, *via* the Cape, 267 (note), 278 (note).
- court-martial on, 407.
- arrival of, at the Cape, in command of the *Providence*, 617.
- assistance given to the *Waaksamheid* by, 617.
- Letters from—
 - to Banks, 109, 117, 120, 267, 268.
 - to Stephens, 687, 688, 689, 693.
- Letters to—
 - from Stephens, 354, 407.

Blue Mountains

- unsuccessful attempt to penetrate, 306.

Board (History)

- appointment of, ix.
- members of, ix.
- recommendation made by, ix-x.
- adoption of recommendation by the Colonial Treasurer, x.

Boats

- building of, at Norfolk Island, 437.
- theft of, by absconders, 534.

Boddingtons

- engagement of, as transport, 678.
- appointment of Kent as surgeon of, 678.

Booby Shoal

- named by Lieut. Ball, 383.

Borrowdale

- storeship, 55.
- clearance of, 166, 182.
- return of, to England, 182, 193.
- disabled, 226.

Botanical Specimens

- sent to England, 116, 128, 212, 220, 222, 230 (note).

Botany Bay

- transportation to, decided upon, 14.
- site of settlement, 55, 83, 86, 87, 121.
- intercourse with foreigners prohibited, 91.
- an unfavourable spot, 121, 122, 170, 221.
- abandoned, 122, 170, 221, 225.

Botany Bay

- La Perouse at, 123, 170.
- marshy ground at, 297.
- Phillip's unfavourable opinion confirmed, 304.
- path from, to Sydney Cove, 382.

Bounty

- Bligh commander of, 109
- Phillip's proposal that she should take out stores, 111.
- a good seaboat, 117.
- preparations for voyage, 117; weatherbound at Spithead, 120.
- complement of vessel, 268-269.
- object of voyage, 269.
- departure of, from Spithead, 269, 687.
- failure to round Cape Horn, 269, 687.
- arrival at Teneriffe, 687.
- arrival at the Cape of Good Hope, 269, 687, 693.
- repairs made at the Cape, 688.
- arrival at Otaheite, 270, 693; departure from, 270, 693.
- arrival at Adventure Bay (Tasmania), 683; at the Friendly Islands, 270, 690, 694.
- Captain Bligh seized and forced into the launch, 271-272, 689-690, 694-695.
- voyage of launch from the Friendly Islands to Timor, 271-278, 690-691, 695-701.
- Bligh's report of mutiny to Banks, 267-278; to the Admiralty, 689-706.
- list of mutineers and non-mutineers, 274, 691-692
- mutineers to be apprehended, 314.
- description of mutineers, 704-706.

Boussole

- voyage of, 123.

Bowen, Lieut.

- discovery of Jervis Bay by, 548, 553.
- naval agent on board *Atlantic*, 553-554.
- departure of, from Sydney for Norfolk Island, 554.

Bowen, J.

- letter from, to Nepean, 673.

Bowes, A.

- surgeon of *Lady Penrhyn*, 120.

Bradley, Lieut.

- first lieutenant of *Sirius*, 81, 96.
- member of court for trial of pirates, 81.
- member of Vice-Admiralty Court, 98.
- survey by, of Norfolk Island, 476, 616.
- letter from, to Nepean, 616.

Bray, Lieut.

- recommended to the Government, 23.

Brazil

- See "Rio de Janeiro."

Bread-fruit

- Bounty* sent to the Society Islands for, 109, 117, 269.
- Departure of *Bounty* with plants from Otaheite, 270, 693.
- second expedition, in the *Providence*, 473 (and note), 485.

Brewer, Henry

acts as Provost-Marshall, 105, 111, 154, 190.
 appointed to direct carpenters and surveyors,
 197.
 nomination of, as Provost-Marshall, 471.
 appointment of, 663-664.

Bricklayers

want of, 146.

Brickmaking

at Norfolk Island, 435, 574.

Brisbane Water

examined by Phillip, 125.

Britannia

tonnage of, &c., 422.
 arrival of, at Sydney, 532.
 return of, from whaling trip, 555, 558.
 whales killed by crew of, 555.
 hiring of, by officers, 651, 652.

Broken Bay

exploration of, by Phillip, 125, 304-306.
 natives of, 131.

Bryan

non-commissioned officer of the *Sirius*, 398.

Buckingham, Marquis of

letter to, from Lieutenant-Governor King, 528.

Building

commenced at Sydney by convicts, 145.
 restrictions, 147.
 progress of, at Sydney, 189, 195, 223, 297, 469,
 470; at Rose Hill, 362; at Sydney and Rose
 Hill, 463, 470; at Norfolk Island, 572, 573, 574,
 575.
 want of lime for, 190.

Bulmore, Thomas

private, killed in a fight, 217.

Burton, D.

report of, on soil, 599.
 death of, 599 (note).

Bush

Private Rogers lost in the, 217.
 marines and convicts lost in the, 298.
 mate of the *Sirius* lost in the, 300.
 Francis Hill, midshipman of *Sirius*, lost in the,
 378.

Butter

rancid state of, 590.
 substitutes for, 650.

Calcutta

supplies from, 493, 459, 584.
 proposed purchase of supplies, by Bowen, 600.
 proposal of Lambert, Ross, and Biddulph to
 send supplies from, 586, 604-609.
 samples of clothing received from, 628.
 live stock from, death of on passage, 645.

Call, John

application by, for grant of Norfolk Island, 141.

Calvert, A.

return of transports made, to Nepean, 422.
 letter from, to Nepean, 422.

Camden, Calvert, and King

transports provided by, 463.

Campbell, Duncan

superintendent of convicts on Thames, 42, 44.
 letter from, to Nepean, 47.

Campbell, Captain

commended by Ross, 84, 195, 198, 213.
 captain of the detachment of marines, 106,
 110, 145.
 reports result of Court of Inquiry, 216.
 remarks by Grenville concerning conduct of,
 460.
 conduct of, towards Phillip, 570.
 Letters from—
 to Ross, 204, 242.
 to Collins, 241.

Canterbury, Archbishop of

letter from, to Wilberforce, 635.

Cape of Good Hope

First Fleet to call at, 21, 86.
 arrival of First Fleet at, 118.
 departure of First Fleet from, 121, 165.
Sirius returns to, for grain, 182, 183, 194, 207,
 224.
 arrival of *Guardian* at, 283, 310.
 arrival of *Lady Juliana* at, 323.
 departure of *Lady Juliana* from, 338.
 arrival of Second Fleet at, 334, 338, 366.
 departure of Second Fleet from, 367.
 Dutch in possession of, 366; their character,
 366.
 arrival of *Leopard* and *Thames* at, 408.
 high price of supplies at, 409.
 Riou's difficulties at, 409.
 monopoly at, 410.
 live stock, purchase of at, 493, 505, 506.
 arrival of *Active*, *Lady Juliana*, and *Neptune*
 at, 493.
 heavy charges at, 494.
 storehouses hired at, 494.
 Governor of, ordered to Europe, 495.
 arrival of *Gorgon* at, 502.
 arrival of *Discovery* and *Chatham* at, 502, 504,
 523.
 Masson, F.—work of, as botanist at, 506.
 purchase of stores at, 507.
 as a field for botanists, 521.
 departure of *Gorgon* from, 529.
 shipwrecked crew of *Sandwich* rescued at, 618.
 assistance to, given by Hunter, 618, 619.
 detention of British seamen at, 619.
 measures for release of, taken by Hunter, 619,
 620.
 departure of *Royal Admiral* from, 665.

Caravances

description of, 416 (note).

Carmarthen Hills

named by Phillip, 133 (and note).

Carpenters

want of, 146, 183.

wages of, 185.

Carteret, Captain

track of between New Britain and New Ireland, 182, 193.

Cascade

town of, 442.

Cascade Bay

landing at, 379, 430.

landing-place made at, 660.

Castor-nut

growth of, at Norfolk Island, 438.

Cattle

See "Live Stock."

Chaplain

Rev. Richard Johnson, appointment of, under commission, 27.

salary of, 33.

temporary employment of, at Norfolk Island, 564.

appointment of Rev. S. Marsden as Second Chaplain, 634 (note)

Chapman, W. Neale

appointment of, as storekeeper at Phillipsburgh, 575.

as secretary to Governor King, 575 (note).

Charlotte

transport-ship, 34, 55, 86, 126, 136.

convicts on board of, 34, 42, 79.

marines on board of, 79.

a bad sailer, 105.

health of convicts and marines on board of, 107, 111.

discharge of, 126, 136, 146.

Charlottetown

town of, 442.

military post at, 444.

Charlotte Sound

proposal of Phillip to visit, 55.

Chatham

selection of, for Vancouver's expedition, 451.

arrival of, at Teneriffe, 489, 523; at Simon's Bay, 502, 504; at False Bay, 523; at Nootka, 638; at Dusky Bay, 639; at Mattavai Bay, 640; at Owhyhee, 640; at New Albion, 668; at Monterey, 680.

attack upon crew of, by Spanish soldiers, 490, 523.

notes on voyage of, by Banks, 635.

account of voyage of, by Menzies, 639-642.

Chatham, Lord

letter from, to Banks, 473

Chatham Island

discovery of, by Vancouver, 660.

Chimney Hill

situation of, at Norfolk Island, 579.

China

emigrants from, 3, 12.

trade with, 3.

transports to return by way of, 87.

search for, by convicts, 556.

Churches

See "Public Worship."

Clarke, Lieutenant

second lieutenant of marines, 106, 145.

desire of, to be relieved, 105.

promotion of, 229.

appointment of, as quartermaster-general at Norfolk Island, 321.

Clarke, Zachary

appointment of, as deputy commissary of stores and provisions, 415, 647.

Clayton

letter to, from J. W. Harris, 340.

Climate

of N. S. Wales, nature of, 1, 11, 125.

Phillip's opinion of, 150, 154, 168, 190, 298.

heavy rains, 151, 169, 190.

an officer's opinion of, 222.

Captain Hill's opinion of, 368.

of Norfolk Island—King's opinion of, 430.

Clothing

of convicts and others, 20, 53, 59, 80, 104, 105, 107, 111, 112, 143, 154, 180, 183, 184.

for the natives, 143.

want of, at Norfolk Island, 436, 443.

want of, at Sydney, 596.

samples of, received at Sydney from Calcutta, 628.

unsuitable and damaged—sent to Sydney, 643.

Coast

of Norfolk Island, 430.

of New South Wales, chart of, 434.

exploration of, proposed by Vancouver, 519, 520.

Cochineal

brought by Phillip from Rio, 113.

Cochrane, Hon. John

proposal by, to send supplies from India, 649

Coffee

plants brought by Phillip from Rio, 113.

Coleby

capture and escape of, 300, 378.

Collins, David

- judge-advocate, 26, 43, 106, 110, 145.
- commission of, 26.
- salary of, 33.
- warrant of, as judge-advocate, 43.
- to administer oaths, 75.
- Ross offers him a captaincy, 228.
- application of, for leave of absence, 674.
- granting of application deferred, 674 (note).
- loss of income by, 675.
- Letters from—
 - to Ross, 202.
 - to Nepean, 209.
 - to Phillip, 240, 263, 674.
 - to Campbell, 241.
 - to Dundas, 674.
- Letter to—
 - from Campbell, 241.

Collins, William

- second lieutenant of marines, 106, 110.
- return of, to England, through ill-health, 144, 145, 166, 180.

Commissary

- Miller goes on board Sirius, 77.
- assistant, appointed, 139.
- member of court for trial of pirates, 81.
- member of Vice-Admiralty Court, 98.
- resignation of Miller, 328.
- recommendation of Miller by Phillip, 328.
- death of Miller, from fever, 428.
- appointment of Palmer, 475.

Commission

- Phillip's, 24, 61, 92.
- Ross's, 26.
- Collins's, 26.
- Johnson's, 27.
- White's, 27.
- Balmain's, 28.
- establishing court of civil jurisdiction, 70-76, 92.
- for trial of pirates, 80.
- King's, as Commandant of Norfolk Island, 136 ; as Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Island, 287.
- Grose's, as Lieutenant-Governor of New South Wales, 282.

Commissioners of the Navy

- Letters to—
 - from Lieutenant Shapcote, 334.
 - from Phillip, 549.

Considen, D.

- animals and botanical specimens sent by, to Sir Joseph Banks, 229.
- leave of absence granted to, 632.
- letter from, to Sir Joseph Banks, 220.

Contraband Cargo

- carried by transports, 506, 547, 549, 550, 555, 564.

Convicts

- transportation of, 6, 7, 12, 14, 17, 20, 23, 30, 147, 153.
- reformation of, 7.
- clothing of, 16, 20, 53, 59, 80, 104, 105, 107, 111, 112.
- number in each ship, 34, 42.
- male and female separate, 35.
- provisions for, 40, 41, 50, 54, 56, 57, 59, 77, 80, 82, 91, 102, 103, 108, 110, 112.
- overcrowding of, 46, 77, 665.
- transportation of, 1769 to 1775, 47.
- marriage amongst, 52, 181.
- isolation of, 53.
- good behaviour of, 57, 103.
- allowance of bread to, 59.
- further shipment of, 88, 284, 286.
- emancipation of, 90, 535.
- number in First Fleet, 110.
- product of labour of, 127.
- mutiny of, on Scarborough, 106 ; on Albemarle, 487, 488, 489, 559.
- sickness amongst, 107, 111, 538, 595, 596, 665.
- many nearly naked, 112.
- treatment of, during voyage, 113, 367, 388, 588, 590.
- deaths of, in the First Fleet, 113, 115, 146, 150, 169, 193 ; in the Second Fleet, 334, 354, 362 ; after arrival of Second Fleet, 362 ; on board the Pitt, 525, 526, 528, 595 ; in the Third Fleet, 538 ; at Sydney, 596 ; on board the Royal Admiral, 665.
- thefts by, 126, 147.
- labour of, 127, 145, 150, 170, 349, 418.
- superintendents of, wanted, 138, 184, 207, 347, 471, 533, 663.
- building of huts by, 145.
- indolence of, 146.
- attacked by natives, 146, 148, 167, 171, 208.
- missing, lost or killed, 146.
- no more wanted for some time, 147, 153.
- treatment of, on expiration of sentences, 154, 184.
- should bring two years' provisions, 146, 147, 168.
- families of, provided with passages, 254.
- assignment of, 258, 300, 535, 585, 654.
- a detachment to be sent to Norfolk Island, 285.
- plot of, at Norfolk Island, 294.
- execution of six at Sydney, 298.
- two lost in the bush, 298.
- one killed by natives, and ten wounded, 298.
- a number sent to Norfolk Island in the Sirius, 325.
- term of sentences of, unknown, 320 (and note), 354.
- how employed at Sydney and Rose Hill, 363, 364.
- many of them diseased and useless, 361.
- gardens given to them, 362.
- ill-treatment of, in Second Fleet, 388, 588 ; on board the Surprise, 367 ; on board the Neptune, 388 ; inquiry concerning, 588, 590.
- their treatment of each other, 388.
- pardoned for services on the Guardian, 414.
- to be supplied with tools and provisions, 415.

Convicts

sentences of, expired, 433, 449, 460, 565.
 industrious, at Norfolk Island, 440.
 two batches to be sent *per annum*, 453, 532.
 return of expirees to England, 460.
 concessions to expirees, 460.
 return concerning, 463.
 distribution of, 470.
 expirees, claim of, to freedom, 443, 449, 472.
 return of emancipated convicts, to England, 472.
 proposals for conveyance of, 508, 515-519, 522, 524, 525, 552, 580, 626, 637, 642, 670-671.
 proposals for maintenance of, 509-515, 625.
 absconding of, at Rio, 528; at Sydney, 565.
 reward of well-behaved, 535.
 arrival of 1,863 at Sydney (Third Fleet), 538.
 traffic in stores by, 556.
 attempt to reach China by, 556.
 Orders-in-Council relating to, 591.
 debilitated state of, 596.
 mortality amongst, 596.
 stealing of Indian corn by, 645.
 death of, from eating crude maize, 645.
 allowance of spirits to, 648.
 employment of, as servants to officers, 653.
 escape of one at the Cape, 665.

Cornwallis, Lord

Letters to—
 from Grenville, 403, 666.
 from Phillip, 600.
 from Dundas, 679.

Corps

Lieut.-Colonel Stirling's offer to raise, 38.
 See also "New South Wales Corps."

Cotton-plant

brought by Phillip from Rio, 113.

Court-martial

Phillip receives warrant for appointing, 103.
 proceedings at, 139 *et seq.*, 195.
 arrest of officers constituting, 139 *et seq.*, 157 *et seq.*
 on Privates Strong and Knight, 199.
 on Quarter-master Furzer, 202.
 officers refuse to sit, 203, 216.
 Collins's opinion on legality of, 209.
 impossibility of holding, 291.
 asked for by Major Grose on Ensign Duberly, 404.
 request withdrawn, 405.
 on Captain Bligh and officers of the Bounty, 407.
 constitution of, at Norfolk Island, 322.
 powers of, at Norfolk Island, 392.
 general, at Norfolk Island, 439; number of officers insufficient for, 484.
 on Captain Hunter and crew of Sirius, 618; acquittal, 618 (note).

Courts of Law

Letters Patent constituting, 70, 155.
 Civil Court—
 constitution, 71.
 jurisdiction, 71.
 procedure, 71.
 appeal from, 72.
 Criminal Court, 69, 73
 constitution, 69, 74.
 jurisdiction, 69, 74.
 procedure, 69, 74.
 execution, 70, 75.
 first assembled, 126.
 officers object to sit, 139, 236, 239, 240, 247.
 officers bound to act as members of, 461.
 opinion of law officers, 462-463; publication of, 537.
 want of Court, at Norfolk Island, 499, 531, 563, 655.
 See also "Court-martial," and "Vice-Admiralty Court."

Creswell, Lieut.

first lieutenant of marines, 106, 110, 145.
 desire of, to be relieved, 165.
 despatch of, to England, with the Supply, 554, 572.
 commendation of, by Phillip, 554, 555.
 departure of, for England, with despatches, 572.

Crime

Phillip's method of treating, 52, 55, 126.
 Phillip given power to punish, 65.
 thefts by convicts, 126, 147.
 murders by natives, 146, 148, 167, 171, 208.
 murders of natives, 150.
 robbery of the provision stores at Sydney, 375.
 robberies at Norfolk Island, 655, 657, 658, 659.
 See also "Execution."

Crops

at Rose Hill, 299.
 proposal for re-sowing, 234.
 at Norfolk Island, 398, 399, 417, 430, 529, 562, 563, 639.
 at Port Jackson, 529, 611, 645.
 injury to from drought, 470, 529.
 destruction of, at Norfolk Island, 435, 469.
 failure of, from drought, at Port Jackson, 533.
 injury to, at Port Jackson, by grubs, 646.
 at Norfolk Island, not up to expectation, 656.
 See also "Harvest."

Crowther, Rev. John

appointment of, as assistant chaplain, 260.
 escape of, from the Guardian, and return to England, 260 (note).

Cultivation

to be commenced at once, 87.
 clearing the ground for, 123.
 the first sowing, 126.
 suitable land for, 134.

Cultivation

- at Sydney, 152.
- at Rose Hill, 189, 198, 296, 299, 470, 471.
- Phillip's views upon, 134, 177.
- Ross's views upon, 173, 176.
- by marines, 189.
- slow progress of, 207.
- at Norfolk Island, 186, 299, 398, 399, 417, 430, 431, 438, 442, 529, 562, 563, 658, 659.
- at the Settlements, 529.
- at Parramatta, 539, 556.
- at Parramatta and Toongabbe, 645.

Cumberland

- county of, named, 155.

Dædalus

- despatch of, to N.W. coast of America, 497.
- command of, 499.
- instructions regarding, 499, 500, 501.
- massacre of officers of, 638-639.
- despatch of, by Vancouver, to Port Jackson, 667.
- sending of live stock by, from Monterey, 680.

Davey, Lieut.

- first lieutenant of marines, 106, 110, 145.
- member of court-martial, under arrest, 139, 161.
- desires to be relieved, 165.

Davidson, A.

- Letter from, to Dundas, 620.
- Letter to, from G. Matcham, 590.

Dawes, Lieut.

- on shore at Rio Janeiro, 115.
- takes Lieut. Collins's place, 144, 145, 166, 172.
- period of service of, 201.
- exploring excursion with Captain Hill and Captain Tench, 371.
- recommended for employment in Colony, 415.
- charges against, 543-546.
- Letter from, to Phillip, 544.

Deaths

- on board the First Fleet, 113, 115, 146, 150, 169, 193.
- of Private Bulmore, killed in a fight, 217.
- at Port Jackson, 298, 301.
- at Norfolk Island, 301.
- on board the Lady Juliana, 323.
- of Captain Shea, 324.
- on board the Neptune, Surprise, and Scarborough, 334.
- on board the Second Fleet, 334, 354, 362.
- after arrival of Second Fleet, 362.
- of Fairclough, surgeon's mate, 339.
- of Ferguson, John, in boat accident, 365.
- from accident, 365, 401, 402.
- of Commissary Miller, 428.
- at Norfolk Island, 440.
- of Lieut. Fowell, 475.
- on board transports, 508.

Deaths

- from fever, on board the Pitt, 525, 526, 527, 528, 595.
- of convicts, at Sydney, 596.
- of convicts at Sydney, from eating crude maize, 645.
- on board the Royal Admiral, 665.

De Courcey, Captain

- escorts the First Fleet down the Channel, 105.

De Fuca's Straits

See "Juan de Fuca."

Delagoa Bay

- shipwrecked crew of Sandwich rescued at, 618.

De Lancey

- and the American loyalists, 8.
- letter from, to Matra, 9.

Dempsey, William

- assaulted by Hunt, 140.

De Wit

- merchant at the Cape, 492, 493, 494, 495.

Dilkes, John

- application of, for Governorship, 636.
- application not entertained, 636 (note).
- letter from, to Nepean, 636.

Discovery

- selection of, for Vancouver's expedition, 451.
- arrival of, at Teneriffe, 489, 523; at Simon's Bay, 502, 504; at False Bay, 523; at Nootka, 638; at Dusky Bay, 639; at King George's Sound, 639, 668; at Mattavai Bay, 640; at Owhyhee, 640; at New Albion, 668; at Monterey, 680.
- attack upon crew by Spanish soldiers, 490, 523.
- notes on voyage of, by Banks, 635.
- account of voyage of, by Menzies, 639-642.

Dodd, Henry Edward

- death of, 296 (note), 470.

Doidge, Superintendent

- reprimand and resignation of, 575.

Donovan, Stephen

- instructed to superintend landing of cargoes at Norfolk Island, 553.
- praise of, by Phillip, 553.
- appointment of, as lieutenant, 663.

Drought

- at Norfolk Island, 430.
- at Rose Hill, 470.
- at Port Jackson, 529.
- failure of crops from, 533.

Duberly, Ensign

- court-martial asked for by Major Grose, 404.
- request withdrawn, 405.

Dundas

appointment of, to Home Office, 496 (note).

Letters from —

to Phillip, 496, 585, 592, 622, 631.

to Lords of the Admiralty, 499.

to Richards, 638.

to Governor-General of India, 679.

Letters to—

from Phillip, 595, 600, 613, 614, 643, 651, 653, 660, 662, 663, 665.

from Lambert, Ross, and Co., 604.

from Davidson, A., 620.

from Wilberforce, 633.

from Thomson, John, 674.

from Collins, 674.

Dutch

in possession of the Cape of Good Hope, 366.

character of, 366.

Earthquake

at Trinidad, 114.

at Sydney, 150, 154.

East India Company

and transport-ships, 48.

transports to bring back cargoes for, 87.

ships of, employed, 623.

Edgar, Lieutenant Thomas

recommendation of, by the Admiralty, as superintendent on board the Lady Juliana, 236.

return of, to England, 475.

Edge, Fane

appointment of, as provost-marshal at Norfolk Island, 600.

Emancipation

Phillip asks for power to grant, 55.

of convicts, 535.

warrants of, 566.

Emigration

policy of, 5.

Sutton's proposals for, 580-585.

fifteen Quaker families to be sent from England, 589.

arrangement not carried out, 648 (note).

Emu

eaten for dinner, 371.

Enderby, Samuel, jun.

letter to Under Secretary Nepean, *re* whaling, 407.

Execution

of six marines at Sydney for robbing the stores, 297, 375.

of six convicts at Sydney, 298.

of a woman at Norfolk Island, 301.

of two of the Albemarle's convicts for mutiny, 559.

Exile

as a punishment, 52, 55.

Expedition

by Vancouver to North America, 312-314, 451, 497.

instructions to Phillip concerning, 312-14; to Menzies, 424 (and note).

memoranda by Sir Joseph Banks, 426-427.

Discovery and Chatham to be got ready, 451.

objects of expedition, 451-454.

by Bligh in the Bounty, 109, 117, 269; in the Providence, 473, 485, 617.

arrival of Vancouver at Teneriffe, 489.

despatch of Dædalus, 497.

instructions to Vancouver from the Government, 500, 501.

arrival of Discovery and Chatham at Teneriffe, 489, 523; at Simon's Bay, 502, 504; at King George's Sound, 639; at Dusky Bay, 639; at Mattavai Bay, 640; at Owwhyhee, 640; at Straits of Juan de Fuca, 640, 668; at Nootka, 641; at New Albion, 668; at Monterey, 680.

voyage of Discovery and Chatham, 639-642.

Expenditure

estimates of, 3, 12, 32, 33.

on the colony, 369.

of the civil and military establishments, up to 10th October, 1792, 664.

Expirees

claim of, to freedom, 433, 449, 472.

return of, to England, 460.

concessions to, 460.

liberation of, 535.

departure of, from Sydney, 565.

See also "Convicts."

Exploration

of the coast, 89.

of the country, 133, 134, 155.

by Phillip, of Broken Bay and the Hawkesbury, 125, 304-306.

Blue Mountains, unsuccessful attempt to penetrate, 306.

Captain Hill's views upon, 368; his excursion with Tench and Dawes, 371.

Faddy, William

second lieutenant of marines, 106, 110, 145.

Fairclough

surgeon's mate of Guardian, death of, 339.

False Bay

arrival of the Second Fleet at, 334, 338.

departure of Second Fleet from, 338.

arrival of Gorgon at, 492.

departure of Gorgon from, 503, 506.

arrival of Discovery and Chatham at, 523.

Farmers

wanted as settlers, 153, 177, 191, 207.

See also "Free Settlers" and "Settlers."

Farming

See "Cultivation."

Farr

remains as settler, 201.

Fawkener, W.

letter from, to Under Secretary King, 591.

Fees

on land grants, 259-260.

Ferguson, John

drowned in boat accident, 365.

Ferguson, W.application of, as settler, 436.
letter from, to Lord Sydney, 486.**Fever**at Batavia, 385, 480, 617.
on board the *Snelheid*, 428.
death of Commissary Miller from, 428.
death of Lieut. Fowell from, 475.
on board the *Supply*, 480.
on board the *Pitt*, 525, 526, 527.**First Fleet**equipment, &c., 14, 20, 82, 83, 86, 92, 103.
to call at Cape of Good Hope, 21, 86.
number of marines and convicts, 34, 42, 79, 109.
distribution of convicts amongst transports, 34, 42, 79.

Phillip's views upon the conduct of the expedition, 50.

Phillip to take charge of, 55.

to call at Teneriffe, 86.

to call at Rio de Janeiro, 86.

waiting at the Motherbank, 103.

getting under sail, 104.

clearing the English Channel, 104.

dispute with the seamen, 104.

delay in starting, 104

arrival of, at Santa Cruz (Teneriffe), 106, 107, 108;
at Rio de Janeiro, 109, 112 *et seq.*; at Cape of
Good Hope, 118, 121.mutiny on the *Scarborough*, 106, 108.

ammunition forgotten, 107, 108, 111.

number of convicts, 110.

ships of, separate, 121.

Australian coast sighted, 121.

arrival of, at Botany Bay, 121, 170.

removal of, to Sydney, 122, 170.

Fish

distribution of, does not save salt provisions, 190, 362.

scarce and dear, 369.

served in lieu of salt provisions at Norfolk Island, 390, 430.

Fishing

at Port Jackson and Botany Bay, 382.

at Norfolk Island, 393, 430.

appliances for, 433.

Fishburn

storeship, 55.

receives three men from *Hyæna*, 105.

return of, delayed, 154, 166, 185, 209.

ready for sea, 214.

Flax

to be cultivated, 2, 11, 89, 143.

its commercial value, 19, 708.

native flax found at Port Jackson, 143, 707; its strength, 708.

Norfolk Island, 211, 218, 219, 401, 429, 434, 707.

fishing-lines made from, at Norfolk Island, 296.

natural growth of, at Norfolk Island, 401, 429.

flax-dressers wanted at Norfolk Island, 211, 296, 429.

flax-dresser arrives at Norfolk Island, 403.

manufacture of, at Norfolk Island, 434, 437, 442, 529; at Cascade (Norfolk Island), 441.

cloth sent to Sydney from Norfolk Island, 434.

machinery asked for, by Hume, 434.

seeds of, sent to Sydney, 434, 437.

cloth made from, sent to England from Norfolk Island, 471.

seeds of, sent to England, 471.

machinery for manufacture of, required, 471.

capture of New Zealand natives to teach manufacture of, at Norfolk Island, 429 (note), 683, 709.

description of flax-plants of New South Wales and Norfolk Island, 707-709.

Flora

Captain Hill's description of, 371.

Food

See "Provisions."

Foreign Ports

communication with, prohibited, 91.

Fortifications

at Norfolk Island, 295.

Fowell, Lieutenant

a promising officer, 116.

description by, of wreck of the *Sirius*, 372, 380-382.departure of, with the *Supply* to Batavia for provisions, 372.

arrival of, at Batavia, 372.

appointment of, as second lieutenant of the *Supply*, 372.account by, of the voyage of the *Sirius* from the Cape to Port Jackson, 373-375; of events at Sydney, 375-378; of events at Norfolk Island, 379-382; of the *Supply's* voyage to Batavia, 383-386.

loss by, of sketches and collections, 386.

death of, from fever, 475.

Letters from—

to Under Secretary Nepean, 372.

to his father, 373.

Free Settlers

- officers and men as, 23, 82, 198, 347, 450, 453.
- encouragement of, 91, 191, 361.
- want of, 153, 177, 191, 207, 347, 470, 534, 537, 557, 597.
- proposal to send out families, 424, 590-591.
- marines as settlers, 450.
- Ferguson, W., application of, 436.
- marines as settlers at Norfolk Island, 531.
- proposal to send out, by Sutton, 580-585, 586; proposal not carried out, 648 (note).
- proposal by Matcham, 590.
- eleven sent by the Bellona, 631 and note.

Freeman, Thomas

- application of, for employment, 331.
- allowance to, 588.
- letter from, to Nepean, 331.

French

- at Botany Bay, 123, 170.

Friendly Islands

- voyage of the Bounty to, 269, 270.
- arrival of the Bounty at, 270, 690, 694.

Friendship

- transport-ship, 55, 86, 121.
- convicts on board of, 34, 42, 79.
- hospital ship, 59.
- marines on board of, 79.
- health of convicts and marines on board of, 107, 111.
- return of, to England, 182, 193.
- scuttled at sea, 226.

Fruit

- production of, at Norfolk Island, 420.

Fruit-trees

- brought by Phillip from Rio, 54, 113.

Fuca

See "Juan de Fuca."

Furzer, James

- quartermaster (first lieutenant of marines), 106, 110, 145.
- court-martialled, 202, 203, 215, 216.

Gaols

- a Sydney Bay (Norfolk Island), 573.
- at Queensborough (Norfolk Island), 573.

Gardens

- given to marines, 189; to convicts, 362.
- to sailors, at Norfolk Island, 418.

Gardeners

- loss of, 352.
- of Providence, instructions concerning, 502, 503.

Garrison

- Phillip's view as to strength required, 310.

George III.

- address of officers on recovery of, 344, 589.
- kangaroo sent to, by Phillip, 559, 566.

Golden Grove

- storeship, 55, 218.
- return of, delayed, 154, 166.
- sent to Norfolk Island, 185, 194, 214.
- return of, to Sydney, 210.
- discovers a dangerous reef, 215.

Goosh

- astronomer of Dædalus, murder of, by natives, at Woahoo, 638.

Good Hope, Cape of

See "Cape of Good Hope."

Gorgon

- reception ship for convicts, 56.
- appointment of Captain Harvey to command of, 280
- superseded by Captain Parker, 427.
- detention of ship in England, 465.
- arrival of, at False Bay, 492; at Simon's Bay, 502.
- departure of, from False Bay, 503, 506; from Simon's Bay, 504.
- arrival of, at Table Bay, 504, 506.
- loss of live stock on, 529, 530.
- departure of, from Table Bay, 529.
- arrival of, at Sydney, 529, 537, 553.
- specimens of timber put on board of, 556, 572.
- departure of, for England, with Major Ross and marines, 596.

Governor

- appointment of, 62.
- powers of, 63-67.
- succession in case of vacancy, 67.
- See also "Phillip."

Governor-General of India

See "Cornwallis."

Grain

- proposal of Phillip for payment of, as rent, 363.
- almost enough raised at Port Jackson for consumption, 646.

Grants

See "Land Grants."

Gregory, T.

- tender of, for transportation of convicts, 20.
- letter from, to Nepean, 20.

Grenville

- appointment of, to Home Office, vice Lord Sydney, 247 (note), 288 (note).
- approval by, of Phillip's conduct, 252.
- opinion of, that Norfolk Island should have been made the principal settlement, 253.
- created baron (note), 422.
- suggestion of, to obtain supplies from Calcutta, 459.
- remarks of, on conduct of Ross and Campbell, 460.

Grenville

Letters from—

- to the Admiralty, 248, 266, 451, 485.
- to Phillip, 252, 254, 256, 260, 284, 312, 410, 413, 414, 457, 463.
- to the Secretary at War, 278, 287, 474.
- to Lieut. Shapcote, 284.
- to Lieut.-Governor King, 285.
- to Lord Cornwallis, 403, 666.
- to Sir George Yonge, 491.

Letters to—

- from Banks, 247, 456.
- from Phillip, 343, 351, 353, 354, 356, 358, 465, 469, 472, 473, 483, 484, 532, 542, 543, 546, 551, 559, 564, 566, 569.
- from Ross, 402.
- from Lieut.-Governor King, 455.
- from Attorney-General and Solicitor-General, 462.

Grenville Valley

(Norfolk Island), 579.

Grimes, Charles

- appointment of, as deputy surveyor of roads at Norfolk Island, 415.
- departure of, from Sydney for Norfolk Island, 543.
- statement by, as to condition of Norfolk Island, 671-672.

Grose

- appointment of, to the command of the New South Wales Corps, 249.
- proposals of, as to raising of corps, 250, 251, 266.
- appointment of, as Lieut.-Governor, by commission, 282.
- liberation by, of a soldier, and reprimand of, 342; explanation by, 343.
- New South Wales Corps raised by, (note) 356.
- application by, that two marines may be turned over to the navy, 373.
- application by, for court-martial on Ensign Duberly, 404.
- withdrawal of request, 405.
- complaint of, as to accommodation on board the Gorgon, 416.
- returns of New South Wales Corps sent by, 432, 526.
- arrival of, at Rio de Janeiro, 525.
- arrival of, at Sydney, 595, 613.
- favourable opinion of, regarding the country, 613.
- seeds sent by, to Nepean, 614.
- complaints of, as to treatment of New South Wales Corps, 652, 672, 673.
- Letters from—
 - to Under Secretary Nepean, 266, 432, 525, 613.
 - to Sir George Yonge, 343, 373, 404, 480, 485, 491.
 - to Under Secretary Lewis, 353, 405, 420, 672.
 - to Phillip, 652.
- Letters to—
 - from Sir George Yonge, 249, 251, 342, 464, 491.
 - from Under Secretary Lewis, 278, 279, 351, 405, 487.

Guardian

- sent out with provisions, &c., 230 (note).
- Sir Joseph Banks's proposal to send out useful plants and trees by, 247-248.
- approval of proposal by Government, 248-249.
- farmer superintendents to be sent out by, 261; list of, 262.
- arrival of, at Table Bay, 283, 406.
- striking of, on an iceberg, 287, 310, 405.
- return of, to Table Bay, 310.
- serious state of, 311, 317.
- survivors of, 318 and note.
- repair of, impossible, 336 and note.
- beached at Table Bay, 337.
- her convicts sent to Sydney from the Cape, 338.
- Riou proposes that they should be rewarded, 338.
- Riou's conduct approved of by the Admiralty, 406.
- instructions from the Admiralty, 406.
- payment to the Dutch East India Company for services, 408.
- provisions of, saved, 408.
- storehouses for stores of, hired at the Cape, 494.
- stores of, ordered to be sold, 507.
- convicts of, pardoned, 414, 542.
- purchase of plants for, by Banks, 551.
- observations of Dundas concerning loss of, 585.

Gulf of Juan de Fuca

survey of, 501.

Hammond, Sir A. S.

- recommendation of a draftsman by, 23.
- recommendation of Surgeon White by, 25.
- letters from, to Under Secretary Nepean, 23, 25.
- letter to, from Surgeon White, 675.

Hanson, Lieut.

- sent by Vancouver to Port Jackson, in charge of *Dædalus*, 667.
- Vancouver's instructions to, 681-683.

Harris, J. W.

- letter from, to Clayton, S. W., 340

Harvest

- at Rose Hill, 299.
- at Norfolk Island, 529, 572, 672.
- at Port Jackson, 611, 645.
- See also "Crops."

Harvey, Captain

- appointment of, to the Gorgon, 280.
- report of mutiny on the Gorgon, 420; denial of report by Grose, 420.
- superseded by Captain Parker, 427.
- letters from, to Banks, 280, 627.

Hawkesbury

- exploration and description of, by Phillip, 125, 305, 306.
- navigable for ships, 305.
- character of its banks, 305, 711.
- connection of, with the Nepean, 306.
- settlement of, deferred, 350.

Hawkesbury, Lord

President of Trade and Plantations, 305 (note).
name of, given to river by Phillip, 305.

Health

of marines and convicts, 40, 48, 51, 55, 78, 79,
107, 109-111, 119, 126.

See also "Illness," "Sickness," "Medicines," and
"Hospitals."

Hemming, Private

services of, 201.

Hergest, Lieutenant

in command of *Dædalus*, 499.
instructions to, 500.
murder of, by natives at Woahoo, 638-639.

Hill, Francis

lost in the bush, 378.

Hill, Captain

account by, of voyage of the *Surprise*, 366-368.
ship unseaworthy, 367.
convicts illtreated, 367.
views on exploration, 368.
account of Sydney, 368-369.
kangaroo-shooting, 369.
privations, 369-370.
high charges for provisions, 370.
no land granted to marines, 370.
accuses Phillip of meanness in government, 370.
describes plants and birds, 371.
the emu as food, 371.
letter to Wathen (and note), 366.

History Board

appointment of, ix.
members of, ix.
recommendation made by, ix-x.
adoption of recommendation by the Colonial
Treasurer, x.

Home Department

direction by, of Colonial affairs, xiii.
letter from, to Under Secretary Lewis, 282.

Hood, Viscount

one of the Lords of Admiralty, 118.

Hospitals

Phillip foresees need of, 51.
building of, at Sydney, 148; at Norfolk Island,
441.
necessaries for use in, 46, 82, 92, 103, 142, 155,
183, 188.

See also "Medicines."

Hospital Ship

necessity for, 59, 82.

House, William

discharged from *Discovery* owing to illness, 681.

Howe, Lord

disapproval by, of Matra's proposal, 10.
opinion of, regarding Phillip, 22.
promise by, to marines of allowance of spirits,
101.
attitude of, to Captain Bligh, 117.
island named after him, 126.
letters from, to Lord Sydney, 10, 22.

Hume, Andrew

manufacture of flax by, 434, 441, 442.
seeds and samples of flax manufactured sent to
Sydney by, 434.
machinery for flax-dressing asked for by, 434.
permission to become a settler granted to, 663.
letter from, to Phillip, 434.

Hunt, Joseph

court-martialled, 140.

Hunter

second captain of the *Sirius*, 37, 88, 96.
to succeed in case of Phillip's death, 94.
member of court for trial of pirates, 81.
member of Vice-Admiralty Court, 98.
sent to the Cape for grain, 188, 224.
arrival of, at the Cape, 224; departure of, for
Sydney, 372; arrival of, at Sydney, 375.
departure of, in command of *Sirius* for Norfolk
Island, 395.
arrival of, at Norfolk Island, 395.
reports wreck of the *Sirius*, 326, 395-396.
return of, from Norfolk Island to Sydney, 465.
arrival of, at Portsmouth in the *Waaksamheyd*,
616.
account by, of voyage of *Waaksamheyd*, 616-618.
assistance to, given by Bligh at the Cape, 617.
report by, of fever among crew of *Waaksamheyd*,
617.
court-martial on, 618.
acquittal of, by court-martial, 618 (note).
report by, of wreck of *Sandwich*, 618.
assistance given to crew of *Sandwich* by, 618, 619.
report by, of detention of British seamen at the
Cape, 619.
measures for their release taken by, 619, 620.
approval of conduct by Admiralty, 621.
surveys of, in New South Wales, 626.
letters from, to Stephens (Admiralty), 224, 225,
227, 395, 616, 618.
letters to, from Stephens, 601, 616, 618, 620, 626.

Hyæna

to accompany the fleet down the channel, 94.
transfer of three men from, to the *Fishburn*, 105.
return of, to Plymouth, with despatches, 105.

Illness

prevention of, 46, 48, 82, 92, 142.
extent of, 48, 51, 55, 58, 78, 79, 107, 109, 111, 119,
142, 155, 172.
officers return ill to England, 144, 145.
illness of Capt.-lieut. Meredith, 216; of Lieuten-
ant Johnstone, 448, 449; of P. G. King, 454,
455; of Phillip, xxi (note); 433, 559, 613.

Implements

See "Tools."

India

supply of provisions from, 423, 459, 477, 478, 679, 686, 679.

proposal of Biddulph to send provisions from, 593.

proposed purchase of supplies at Calcutta, 600.

proposal of Lambert, Ross, & Biddulph to send supplies from, 586, 604-609.

of Cochrane, 649.

samples of clothing received from, 628.

recommended by Dundas for supply of live stock, 631.

inferiority of provisions from, 644.

live stock from, death of on passage, 645.

Governor-General of, requested by Grenville to send supplies to New South Wales, 666, 679.

See also "Bengal" and "Calcutta."

Indian Corn

See "Maize."

Indigo

plants procured by Phillip, 113.

cultivation of, at Norfolk Island, 438.

Instructions

to Phillip, 84-91.

to King as Commandant of Norfolk Island, 137-138.

additional instructions to Phillip, 256-260.

instructions to Ross as Commandant of Norfolk Island, 314-316.

to marine surveyors, 456, 457.

Iron-ore

discovery of, 222.

Islands

live stock to be obtained from, 88.

women to be obtained from, 90.

proposal to obtain women from islands not carried out, 90 (note).

voyage of the Bounty to Society and Friendly Islands, 269-270.

arrival of Bounty at Society Islands, 270, 693.

arrival of Bounty at Friendly Islands, 270, 690, 694.

Lord Howe, discovery of by Ball, 126; no anchorage at, 296, 301.

turtle-catching at Lord Howe Island disappointing, 146, 301.

Middleton's, 295 (note).

Mewstone, 340 (note).

Sirius named by Ball, 383.

Swilly, discovered by Furneaux, 374 (note).

Tench's, situation of, 334.

Chatham, discovery of, by Vancouver, 669.

Vancouver, circumnavigation of, 453 (note).

See also "Norfolk Island."

Isolation

danger of, to settlers, 537.

Jamison, Thomas

assistant surgeon, 219.

confirmation of commission as assistant surgeon at Norfolk Island requested by Phillip, 473.

appointment of, 475.

Japan

trade with, 4.

Jervis Bay

discovery of, by Lieutenant Bowen, 548, 553.

report on, by master of Matilda, 556, 558.

Johnson, Colonel

letter to, from Sir George Yonge, 255.

Johnson, Rev. Richard

commission of, 27.

chaplain, 27, 42.

salary of, 33.

description by, of condition of convicts in Second Fleet, 386-389.

convicts ill-treated, 388.

their treatment of each other, 388.

temporary employment of, at Norfolk Island, 564.

complaint of, regarding neglect of public worship, 594.

injury to health from exposure, 594, 602.

complaint of, regarding want of places of worship, 602, 603.

Letters from—

to Nepean, 181.

to Thornton, 386.

to Phillip, 594, 601.

Johnston, Geo.

first lieutenant of marines, 106, 145.

period of service, 201.

promotion of, 228, 229.

Johnstone, John

first lieutenant of marines, 106, 110, 145.

period of service of, 201.

appointed adjutant-general of Norfolk Island, 321.

illness of, 448, 449.

Johnstone, J.

letter from, to Berteret, 523.

Juan de Fuca

straits of, to be examined, 453.

gulf of, 501.

visit of the Chatham and Discovery to, 640.

examination of, by Vancouver, 668.

Judge-Advocate

Collins, 26, 43, 106, 110, 145.

salary of, 33.

warrant of, 43.

to administer oaths, 75.

offered a captaincy, 228.

application of Collins for leave of absence, 674, 675; leave postponed, 674 (note).

Justices of the Peace

Governor, Lieutenant-Governor, and Judge-Advocate to be justices, 75.
powers of justices, 76.

Justinian

arrival of, at Sydney, 354, 390.
departure of, for Norfolk Island and China, 393.
escape of, from shipwreck, 612.
return of, to Sydney, 612.

Karkolang Island

seen from the Supply, 334.

Kangaroo

Phillip sends one home to Lord Sydney, 180.
two sorts of, 192.
and other animals, 222, 223.
Phillip sends one to the King, 559, 566.
kangaroo-shooting, 369.

Kellow, Robert

first lieutenant of marines, 106, 145.
member of court-martial, under arrest, 139, 160.
desires to be relieved, 165.
suspension of, 449.

Keltia, J.

master of Sirius, 115.

Kent

appointment of, as surgeon of the Boddingtons, 678.
instructions given to, 678.
letter to, from Stephens, 678.

Kent, Lieut.

letter to, from Stephens, 335.

Kerstan

offer by, to supply provisions at the Cape, 492, 495.

King, John

appointment of, as Under Secretary at Home Office in Nepean's absence, 589.
succeeds Nepean, 683 (note).

Letters from—

to Phillip, 589, 621, 683.
to Under Secretary Lewis, 621.

Letters to—

from Commissary Palmer, 559.
from Sutton, 581, 582, 583.
from W. Fawkener, 591.
from Phillip, 650, 665.

King, P. G.

papers of, lent to New South Wales Government, xi, xv-xvi.
member of court for trial of pirates, 81.
member of Vice-Admiralty Court, 98.
despatched to Norfolk Island, 124, 172.
appointment of, as Commandant of Norfolk Island, 136.
commission of, as Commandant, 136; as Lieutenant-Governor, 287.

King, P. G.

instructions from Phillip, 137.
Phillip's high opinion of, 124, 179, 301, 327, 328.
recommendation of, for promotion, by Phillip, 179, 301, 327, 328.
appointment of, as Lieut.-Governor of Norfolk Island, 286, 461, 587.
annual allowance for, 288.
recall (as Commandant) of, from Norfolk Island, by Phillip, and return of as Lieut.-Governor, 326.
departure of, for England, 383.
arrival of, at Batavia in the Supply, 428.
departure of, from Batavia in the Snelheid, 428.
putrid fever on board, 428.
arrival of, at Mauritius, 428.
arrival of, at the Cape, 428.
arrival of, in London, 428.
description of Norfolk Island by, 428-431.
letter-book of, 433 and note.
illness of, in London, 454, 455.
request by, for passage in the Gorgon, 456 and note.
services of, recognised, 461.
promotion of, to rank of commander, (note) 474.
arrival of, at Teneriffe, 486.
suggestion by, *re* flax manufacture, 486.
arrival of, at Port Praya, 488.
arrival of, at the Cape, 492.
purchase by, of live stock at the Cape, 493, 495, 505.
departure of, from the Cape, 529.
arrival of, at Sydney, 529.
departure of, for Norfolk Island, 554.
arrival of, at Norfolk Island, 562.
Letters from—
to Nepean, 427, 432, 454, 455, 486, 488, 492, 495, 497, 503, 504, 506, 529, 530, 562.
to Grenville, 455.
to Buckingham, 528.
to Phillip, 572, 656 (extract).
Letters to—
from Grenville, 288.
from Stephens, 433, 434.

King George's Sound

visit of Discovery and Chatham to, 639, 668.
discovery of, by Vancouver, 639.

Kitty

remittance to be sent by, 588, 589.
stores and convicts to be sent by, 589.

Knight

private, court-martialled, 199.

Koepang

See "Timor."

Labour

convict, 349.
want of, at Norfolk Island, 574.
scarcity of, at Sydney, 602, 654.
hours of, at Port Jackson, 610.

Lady Juliana

transport-ship, 231.
 arrival of, at Table Bay, 323, 493.
 births and deaths on board of, 323.
 departure of, from Table Bay, 338.
 arrival of, at Sydney, 345.
 sent to Norfolk Island, 350.
 and to China, 389.
 memorandum of contract, 423.
 escape of, from shipwreck, 612.
 return of, to Sydney, 612.

Lady Penrhyn

transport-ship, 55, 86, 126, 136.
 convicts on board of, 34, 42, 79.
 for female convicts, 43.
 overcrowding on board of, 46, 77.
 health of her marines and convicts, 59, 107, 111.
 marines on board of, 79.
 a bad sailer, 105.
 surgeon of, superseded, 120.
 discharge of, 126, 136, 146.

Lake Narrabeen

explored by Phillip, 133.

Lambert, Ross, and Biddulph

proposal of, to send supplies from Calcutta, 586, 604-609, 679.
 Letters from—
 to Dundas, 604.
 to Phillip, 603.

Land

fit for cultivation near settlement, 131.
 Phillip's reports on, 134, 177.
 under cultivation, 152.
 Ross's reports on, 172, 173, 176.
 at Rose Hill, 189, 198.
 special reservations on, 258.
 reservation of, for church and school purposes, 259.
 good quality of, between Rose Hill and the Nepean, 306.
 payment of rent in grain suggested by Phillip, 363.
 complaint of Captain Hill that none is given to the marines, 370.
 grant of, to Ruse, 349 (note), 536 and note, 592.
 grant of, to settlers at Parramatta and Norfolk Island, 540-541.
 grant of, to settlers at Norfolk Island, 562.
 area of, available for cultivation at Norfolk Island, 562.
 boundaries of, at Norfolk Island, 574.
 reservation of, at Norfolk Island, for church and school purposes, and for the Crown, 656.
 grant of, at Norfolk Island, to Lieut.-Governor King, 656.
 desire of convict settlers at Norfolk Island to sell, 656, 657.
 restrictions imposed by Lieut.-Governor King, 656, 657.

Land Grants

to convicts, 7.
 to emancipated convicts, 90.
 to seamen and marines, 53, 256.
 to settlers, 256.
 Phillip's power to make, 55, 66.
 conditions of, 177, 256, 258.
 to officers, 223.
 fees, 259, 260.
 registrar of, wanted, 557.
 issue of first, to Ruse, 592.
 Phillip's action respecting, approved by Dundas, 632.

Landmark

at South Head, 394, 590.

Lansdowne Hills

named by Phillip, 133.

La Perouse

at Botany Bay, 123, 170.
 letters and despatches of, taken from Sydney for the French Ambassador, 178.

Law, Martial

See "Martial Law."

Law Officers

opinion of, *re* officers and criminal court, 462-463, 537.

Lemon-trees

at Norfolk Island, 438.

Leopard

arrival of, at the Cape, in command of Captain Blankett, 408.

Lewis, Under Secretary

Letters from—
 to Grose, 278, 279, 351, 405, 487.
 Letters to—
 from Nepean, 279.
 from Home Department, 282.
 from Grose, 353, 405, 420, 672.
 from King (Under Secretary), 621.

Lieutenant-Governor

Ross's commission as, 26.
 salary of, 33.
 appointment of Grose as, 356 (note).
 appointment of King to Norfolk Island, 286, 287, 461, 587.

Lime

manufacture of, at Norfolk Island, 574.

Limestone

want of, 547.

Live Stock

live stock and seeds to be taken to settlement, 18.
 to be procured on voyage, 3, 12, 15, 86.
 to be obtained from islands, 15, 88, 127, 168.
 preservation of live stock, 53, 88.

Live Stock

- all well at Rio, 116.
- cattle and seed taken on board at the Cape, 119.
- loss of, 126, 135, 149, 152, 167, 173, 192, 208.
- sheep not thriving, 143.
- account of stock, 151, 549.
- live stock thrive on Norfolk Island, 187, 400.
- loss of, at Norfolk Island, 443.
- black cattle, want of, 471.
- purchase of live stock, at the Cape, by King, 493, 495, 505.
- proposed purchase of, by Vancouver, for the Sandwich Islands, 520.
- loss of, on Gorgon, 529, 530; number bought and number saved, 531-532.
- want of, 569, 596, 597.
- despatch of *Dædalus* to India for, recommended by Dundas, 631
- death of, on passage from Calcutta, 645.
- a vessel to be freighted with, in India, 679.
- despatch of, from Monterey, by the *Dædalus*, 680.
- Phillip's opinion as to procuring supplies of, 646.
- Vancouver's intention to send cattle and sheep from New Albion, 667.

Long, John

- adjutant, second lieutenant of marines, 106, 110, 145.

Lord Howe Island

- discovery of, by Lieutenant Ball, 126.
- no anchorage at, 296, 301.
- turtle-catching at, disappointing, 146, 301.

Lunatics

- custody of, 64.

Macarthur, Lieutenant

- difference of, with Captain Nepean, 629.

Macaulay, Alderman

- letter to, from Captain Manning, 527.

Macaulay, T.

- tenders for transportation of convicts, 20.
- letter from, to Nepean, 20.

Maize

- at Norfolk Island, 431, 438, 658.
- harvest of, at Norfolk Island, 572.
- at Port Jackson, 611.
- good yield of, at Port Jackson, 645.
- theft of, by convicts, 645.
- death caused by eating of, in crude state, 645.
- destruction of, by grubs, 658.

Manly Cove

- named by Phillip, 129.
- capture of Aranbanoo at, 298.
- wounding of Phillip by native at, 441 (note).

Manning, Captain

- account by, of fever on board the Pitt, 526-528.
- letter from, to Alderman Macaulay, 526.

Manning, Private

- continues as soldier, 201.

Manuscripts

- non-preservation of, x, xxxiii.
- probable destruction of, xi-xii.
- papers of Governor King lent to Government, xi, xv-xvi.
- transcription of, in London, xii-xiv.
- purchase of Banks Papers from Lord Brabourne, xv.

Marines

- formation of corps of, 14, 21, 22, 23.
- term of service, 22, 23, 201.
- settlement of, after service, 22, 23, 198, 201.
- provisions, victualling, equipment, &c., 29, 30, 32, 40, 41, 48, 49, 50, 54, 56, 101, 102, 174.
- wives of, 29, 40, 42, 48, 78, 195.
- health of, 40, 48, 55, 78, 79, 107, 109, 111, 172.
- returns relating to, 79, 106, 201, 526, 567, 667.
- promises of zeal, 93.
- Phillip able to discharge, 95.
- anticipate perils before starting, 101.
- under canvas, 171.
- spirits allowed, 174.
- clothing for, 175, 199.
- gardens of, 189.
- officers and men who desire to remain in colony, 201.
- officers object to form court-martial, 205-206, 216.
- grievances of, 212.
- quarters of, 143, 196, 218.
- Phillip's troubles with, 138, 153, 169, 172, 173, 176, 195, 212, 229, 289-291.
- detachment to be relieved, 232, 254.
- grants of land to, 256, 257.
- six hanged at Sydney for robbing the stores, 297.
- one transported to Norfolk Island, 298.
- two lost in the bush, 298.
- loss of officers' effects at Norfolk Island, 320.
- two companies of, sent to Norfolk Island in the *Sirius*, 325.
- complaints of, 466.
- petition of officers of, 482.
- settlers at Norfolk Island, 531, 554, 571; at Parramatta, 571.
- detention of, at Sydney, 542, 554.
- embarkation of, on Gorgon for England, 569, 571.

Marine Officers

- letters from, to Phillip, 243.

Marine Surveyors

- instructions for, 456-457.

Marriage

- to be encouraged, 52.
- with native women, 52.
- with women from islands, 53.
- Phillip commended for promotion of, 252.

Marsden, Rev. S.

- appointment of, as assistant chaplain, 634 (note).

Marshall, Captain

letters to, from Stephens 56, 60, 61.

Marshall, Lieutenant S. E.

recommended by the Admiralty as superintendent on board the *Lady Juliana*, 232.

appointment declined by, 235.

Martial Law

Phillip given power to proclaim, 64, 65.

proclamation of, at Norfolk Island, 319, 320, 327, 381.

discontinuance of, at Norfolk Island, 439.

Martin, Henry

Comptroller of the Navy, 427.

Mary Ann

tonnage, &c., 422.

arrival of, at Sydney, 532.

return of, from sealing, 556, 558.

Maskelyne, Dr.

desire of, to send almanacs and transit instrument to Sydney Observatory, 431.

Masson, Francis

work of, as botanist at the Cape, 506 and note.

accompanies Lieutenant Menzies on excursions at the Cape, 522.

Matcham, G.

proposal of, to send out settlers, 590-591; and to purchase land, 615.

Letters from—

to Alex. Davidson, 590.

to Maurice Nelson, 615.

Matilda

tonnage, &c., 422.

report by master on Jervis Bay, 556.

return of, from sealing, 556, 558.

loss of, on a shoal, and arrival of crew at Otaheite, 682 and note.

instructions to Lieutenant Hanson by Vancouver to take the crew on board the *Dædalus*, 682.

Matra

probable origin of, xxiv-xxvi.

proposal of, for settlement of New South Wales laid before English Government (Fox and North's), xxvi; before Lord Sydney, xxvi.

text of proposal, 1-8.

Lord Howe's opinion of proposal, 10.

letter from, to Nepean, 8.

letter to, from De Lancey, 9.

Maxwell, G. W.

lieutenant of Sirius, member of court for trial of pirates, 81.

member of the Vice-Admiralty Court, 98.

return of, to England through ill-health, 144, 145, 166, 475.

death of, 617.

Maxwell, James

first lieutenant of marines, 106.

captain-lieutenant, 110.

illness of, and return to England, 166.

Medicines

for convicts and marines, 16, 48, 113, 175.

want of, by New South Wales Corps, 565.

Men-of-war

See "Ships."

Menzies, Lieut.

instructions for, 424-426.

memoranda concerning, by Sir J. Banks, 426, 427, dispute with Captain Vancouver, 476, 477.

complaints of, 480, 481.

arrival of, at Teneriffe, 489.

account by, of attack on Chatham's people, 496

arrival of, at Simon's Bay, 502.

accompanied by Masson on excursions at the Cape, 522.

account by, of *Dædalus* massacre, 638-639.

account by, of voyage of *Discovery* and Chatham, 639, 642.

appointment of, as surgeon of *Discovery*, 642.

seeds for the King's gardens sent by, 642.

letters from, to Banks, 476, 490, 489, 502, 521, 638.

Meredith

captain-lieutenant of marines, 106, 110, 145.

illness of, 216.

succeeds Captain Shea, 229.

suspension of, by Major Ross, 324.

Mewstone Island

situation of, 340 (note); 374 (note).

Middleton, Sir Charles

Comptroller of the Navy, 33 (note).

letter from, to Nepean, 35, 42, 91.

letter to, from Nepean, 32, 34.

Middleton Reef and Shoals

seen from the Supply, 215 and note, 365.

report concerning, by Lieutenant Shortland, 296;

description of, 295 (note).

Military

proposal to form a corps to take the place of marines, 33.

See also "Marines."

Miller, Andrew

commissary, 77, 81, 96.

member of court for trial of pirates, 81.

member of Vice-Admiralty Court, 98.

resignation of, 328.

recommendation of, by Phillip, 328.

death of, from fever, 428.

Miller, Master

agreement with, 621-622.

Miller and Millwright

want of, 365.

Mills

iron-mills undesirable, 364.

windmills asked for, 364.

want of, 557, 566, 597.

Millstones

- at Teneriffe, 488.
- want of, at Norfolk Island, 531.

Minerals

- existence of, suspected, 190, 222.

Money

- absence of, 557.
- sent by the Kitty, 588, 589.

Monopoly

- at the Cape, 410.

Monterey

- arrival of Discovery and Chatham at, 680.

Monte Video

- expedition against, 114.

Moorsom, Lieutenant

- in charge of the Ariel, 117.

Morley, Roger

- services of, as storekeeper and deputy commissary at Norfolk Island, 481.
- retirement of, 647.

Morton, M.

- master of the Sirius, disabled at Santa Cruz, 115.

Mount Pitt

- birds killed for food at, 398.
- deep soil at, 429.

Mudge, Lieutenant

- despatches from Vancouver taken by, 642.

Mutiny

- Phillip's powers in case of, 65.
- on board the Scarborough, 106, 108.
- of New South Wales Corps on the Gorgon, reported by Captain Harvey, 420.
- denied by Major Grose, 420; his explanation 420-421.
- on board Albemarle, 487-488, 489.

Nanbarry

- recovers from small-pox, 376.

Natives

- barter with, 43, 53, 54.
- protection against, 52, 87, 170.
- conciliation of, 52, 89, 177, 180.
- intermarriage with, 52.
- slavery not to be permitted, 53.
- Phillip instructed to report upon, 89-90.
- Phillip's observations on, 128 *et seq.*
- habits and customs of, 129 *et seq.* 134, 191, 192, 222, 309, 310.
- number of, estimated, 133, 153, 177, 191-192.
- clothing for, 143.
- murders by, 146, 148, 167, 171, 208, 298.
- Phillip's treatment of, 149, 177.
- inland, 149.
- murder of, 150.

Natives

- starving, 150, 178.
- food of, 192.
- relations with settlers, 214.
- capture of Aranbanoo at Manly, 298, 376; his death from small-pox, 298, 308; capture of two natives (Coleby and Bennilong), one of whom escapes, 300, 309, 378.
- burning of country by, 300, 307, 554.
- friendliness of, 398.
- deaths from small-pox, 308, 376; a boy and girl recover from small-pox (Nanbarry and Aboren), 376.
- tribes and tribal customs, 309, 310.
- boy and girl at the settlement, 370.
- of New Zealand, capture of, 429 (note), 683 and note; employment of, in flax manufacture at Norfolk Island, 709; return of, to New Zealand, 709.

Navy Board

- Letters to—
- from Stephens, 36, 44, 46, 55, 58, 60.

Nelson

- botanist on board of Bounty, 117 (note).
- death of, at Koepang, 278, 702.

Nelson, Maurice

- letters to, from G. Matcham, 615.

Nepean

- connection of, with the Hawkesbury, 306.
- trees on the, 710.

Nepean, Captain Nicholas

- dispute with Lieutenant Macarthur, 629 and note.

Nepean, Evan

- Under Secretary for the Home Department, 3.
- departure of, for West Indies, 589.
- seeds sent to, by Grose, 614.
- succeeded by John King, 683 (note).
- Letters from—
- to Sir C. Middleton (Navy), 32, 34.
- to Thomas, 41.
- to Shelton, 42.
- to Phillip, 102, 253.
- to Kent (surgeon), 678.
- Letters to—
- from Macaulay and Gregory, 20.
- from Sir A. S. Hammond, 23 25.
- from Phillip, 30, 45, 46, 54, 58, 77, 101, 102, 105, 106, 107, 108, 111, 114 116, 120, 142, 151, 178, 180, 182, 218, 219, 223, 301, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 345, 346, 354, 364, 389, 393, 394, 481, 484, 555, 565, 566, 610, 628, 669.
- from Captain Teer, 33.
- from Sir Charles Middleton (Navy), 35, 42, 91.
- from Lieutenant-Colonel Stirling, 37.
- from Stephens (Admiralty), 47.
- from Duncan Campbell, 47.
- from Surgeon White, 49.
- from Ross, 57, 83, 92, 176, 212.
- from Rev. R. Johnson, 181.

Nepean, Evan

Letters to—

- from Collins, 209.
- from Sir Joseph Banks, 229.
- from "W. Raleigh," 233.
- from Grose, 266, 432, 525, 613.
- from Surgeon Alley, 323.
- from Thos. Freeman, 331.
- from Fowell, 372.
- from S. Enderby, 407.
- from Lord Sydney, 422.
- from A. Calvert, 422.
- from P. G. King, 427, 432, 454, 455, 486, 488, 492, 495, 497, 503, 504, 506, 529, 530, 562.
- from Banks, 501, 502, 550.
- from Vancouver, 504.
- from Bradley, 616.
- from Dilkes, 636.
- from Richards, 670.
- from J. Bowen, 673.

Neptune

- arrival of, at False Bay, 334, 338.
- departure from False Bay, 338.
- arrival of, at Sydney, 353.
- deaths on board, 334, 355.
- convicts ill-treated, 388, 590; inquiry concerning, 588, 590, 623.
- arrival of, at Table Bay, 493.
- prosecution of officers for ill-treatment of convicts, 590, 650.

New Albion

- arrival of Vancouver at, 668.

New South Wales

- suitable for colonisation, 1.
- J. M. Matra's proposal for establishing a settlement in, 1.
- Cook's account of, 1.
- climate of, 1, 11, 125, 150, 154, 168, 190, 222, 298, 368.
- proposals for settlement of, 1-20.
- as a naval station, 5.
- proposed as a site for a penal settlement, 6, 7, 14, 17.
- geographical position of, 11.
- prospective advantage of, to England, 11, 19, 103, 151, 155, 179.
- territorial limits of, 24, 62, 85.
- transportation to, orders for, 30, 68, 591.
- coast of, sighted, 121, 166.
- good country near Sydney, 134.
- Ross's opinion of, 172, 176.
- Considen's opinion of, 223.
- Hill's opinion of, 368, 369, 370.

New South Wales Corps

- formation of, decided on, 232, 254.
- estimate of charges, 233.
- Grose appointed to the command, 249.
- Grose's proposals as to raising of, 250, 251.
- rank of, 255.

New South Wales Corps

- inspection of, 265, 266.
- augmentation of, proposed, 266.
- orders and instructions, 279, 280.
- completion, 285.
- a detachment put on board transports, 285.
- extra (auxiliary) company of, to be raised in New South Wales, 286; raised by Phillip, 614, 650, 662, 663; command of, given to Johnston, 614, 650, 662; enlistment of men, 647, 650.
- returns relating to, 311, 432, 526, 568, 603-604.
- detachment sent to Norfolk Island, 341, 379, 395.
- mutiny on the Gorgon, reported by Captain Harvey, 420; denied by Major Grose, 420; his explanation, 421.
- strength of, increased, 462, 464, 474, 484.
- payment of, 464.
- number of officers of, insufficient for general court-martial, 484.
- allowance, warrant for, 492.
- deaths on board the Pitt, 527.
- want of necessaries and medicines for, 565.
- rations to, allowed without deduction from pay, 588.
- Grose's detachment of, arrival at Sydney, 595.
- complaints by Grose, as to treatment of corps, 652, 672, 673.
- desire for land by officers of, 654.
- convict labour allowed to officers, 654.
- occupation of land by officers, on sufferance, 664, 655.

New Zealand

- flax, 2, 11, 19, 707-709.
- timber, 4.
- canoes and idols found at Norfolk Island, 296.
- natives of, captured, 429 (note), 683 and note; employment of in flax manufacture at Norfolk Island, 709; return of, to New Zealand, 709.

Night-watch

- appointment and duties of, 288.
- regulations for, 292, 293.
- regulations for, at Norfolk Island, 578-580.

Nootka Sound

- Discovery and Chatham to be sent to, 451 and note.
- Count Blanca—letter of, *re* surrender of territory by Spain, 499.
- arrival of Discovery and Chatham at, 638.

Norfolk Island

- to be settled, 89, 137, 285.
- King despatched to, as Commandant, 124.
- his report to Phillip, 126, 185; his description of, 428-431.
- Lieutenant Ball despatched to, 125, 194.
- King's commission as Commandant, 136; as Lieut.-Governor, 287.
- King's instructions, 137.
- proposed trading settlement at, 141.
- Golden Grove despatched to, 185, 194, 209, 210, 214.

Norfolk Island

fine timber at, 126, 420.
 progress of settlement at, 211, 214, 215.
 flax of, 211, 218, 219, 401, 429, 434, 708, 709 ;
 manufacture of, 434, 437, 441, 442, 559.
 fertility of, 215.
 opinion of Grenville that it should have been
 made the principal settlement, 253.
 a detachment of convicts to be sent to, 285.
 appointment of King as Lieut.-Governor, 286,
 461, 587.
 convict plot at, 294.
 hurricane at, 294.
 pines, 219, 295, 400, 403, 429, 437 ; pines for spars,
 219, 403, 437.
 fortifications at, 295.
 fishing-lines made from flax, 296.
 New Zealand canoes and idols found at, 296.
 six months' supply of grain at, 300.
 execution of a woman at, 301.
 births and deaths at, 301, 440.
 Ross's appointment as Commandant of, 314, 326
 Ross's instructions, 314-316.
 wreck of *Sirius* at, with marines and convicts on
 board, 319, 326, 341, 342, 372, 380, 396.
 martial law proclaimed at, 319, 320, 327, 331 ;
 discontinuance of, 439.
 council of officers at, 319, 320, 321, 322.
 half-allowance at, 320.
 good conduct of *Sirius* convicts, 321.
 Lieut. J. Johnstone appointed adjutant-general,
 321.
 Lieut. Ralph Clarke appointed quartermaster-
 general, 321.
 court-martial, constitution of, 322 ; powers of,
 392 ; general court-martial held, 439.
 robbery of stores declared a capital crime, 323.
 population of, 325, 423, 449, 450, 560, 561, 563,
 658, 676, 677.
 reduced ration at, 335, 390, 397, 417, 443, 466,
 574, 660.
 landing-places at, 341, 379, 463, 660.
 want of harbour at, 348, 357, 587.
 issue of salt provisions suspended at, 364.
 convicts landed from *Sirius* and Supply at, 379.
 fish in lieu of salt provisions at, 390.
 absconders outlawed, 391, 657.
 harbouring, and its penalty, 392.
 crops, 398, 417, 418, 430, 529, 562, 563, 572, 639,
 656 ; destruction of, 435, 469.
 fishing, 398, 430.
 gardening, 398, 399.
 quality of the soil, 399, 416, 458, 469.
 native products, 399, 429.
 insect pests, 399, 400, 417, 430, 434, 435.
 paroquets, 399, 400.
 water supply, 399.
 destructive gale, 400.
 live stock, 400 ; loss of, 443.
 birds, 401, 429.
 rats, 401, 430.
 Mr. Cunningham and three men drowned, 401.
 a boat swept on the rocks, and eight lives lost, 402

Norfolk Island

Major Ross's plan, 403, 419, 445, 447, 468, 658 ;
 abolition of, by King, 562.
 flax-dresser arrives, 403.
 Major Ross's remarks and observations on, 416-
 420 ; his reports on, 434-444.
 vegetables, 416, 431.
 grain, 416, 430, 438.
 early sowing, 417, 438.
 land cleared, 418, 438.
 potatoes, 418, 431, 435.
 sailors' gardens, 418.
 convict labour, 418.
 vines, 419, 431, 438.
 sugar-cane, 420, 431.
 fruit, 420.
 flax-dressers wanted, 429.
 coast of, 430.
 climate of, 430.
 prevailing winds, 430.
 drought, 430.
 barley, 430.
 maize, 431, 438 ; planting of, 658 ; destruction
 of, by grubs, 658.
 cultivation at, 186, 299, 398, 399, 417, 430, 431,
 438, 442, 529, 562, 563, 659.
 want of tools, 435.
 bricks made, 435, 574.
 hardships, 435, 436.
 want of clothing, 436, 443.
 discontent, 436.
 no spirits, 436.
 cooking-utensils, want of, 436.
 boats built, 437.
 wheat grown, 438.
 bananas grown, 438.
 orange and lemon trees, 438.
 robberies at, 438, 655, 657, 658, 659.
 insufficient power to punish at, 438, 498, 655.
 indigo, 438.
 castor-nut, 438.
 absconder, death of, 440.
 industrious convict at, 440.
 hospital, building of, 441.
 timber sent to Sydney, 441.
 Cascade, town of, 442.
 Charlottetown, town of, 442 ; military post of,
 444.
 good order in the settlement, 443.
 salvage from the *Sirius*, 444, 466, 573.
 extensive valley at, 444.
 appointment of Ross by Phillip approved, 461.
 loss of Guardian felt at, 466.
 birds as food, 466.
 marines, complaint of, 466.
 stores and spirits, distribution of, 467.
 resources of, 468.
 settlers, concessions to, 468, 563.
 arable land, area of, 469, 562.
 confirmation of assistant-surgeon Jamison's com-
 mission asked for by Phillip, 473.

Norfolk Island

survey of, by Lieut. Bradley, 476, 616.
 quarrelling at, 496, 562.
 courts of justice required at, 499, 531, 563, 655.
 harvest at, 529, 572.
 marines as settlers at, 531, 554, 562.
 two transports sent to, 533.
 objections of masters of transports to land cargo at, 547.
 appointment of Donovan to superintend landing of cargoes at, 553.
 arrival of Lieut.-Governor King at, 562.
 sailors as settlers at, 562.
 temporary employment of chaplain at, 564.
 building at, 572, 573, 574, 575.
 gaols at, 573.
 want of labour at, 574.
 lime, manufacture of, at, 574.
 Superintendent Doidge is reprimanded, and resigns, 575.
 Wentworth, D'Arcy, appointment of, as superintendent, 575.
 Chapman, W. N., appointment of, as store-keeper, 575.
 wheelwright, want of, at, 576.
 regulations, 576-580.
 regulations for night-watch, 578-580.
 Sydney, township of, 578.
 Chimney Hill, 579.
 Turtle Bay, 579.
 Arthur's Vale, 579.
 supplies sent to, 598.
 relief of R. Morley, and appointment of Z. Clarke as deputy-commissary, 647.
 offenders at, to be sent to Sydney, 655.
 reservation of land for church and school purposes, and for the Crown, 656.
 land at, granted to Lieut.-Governor King, 656.
 desire of convict settlers to dispose of their land and leave the island, 656, 657; restrictions imposed by Lieut.-Governor King, 657.
 occupations of people at, 658.
 thief shot at, 659.
 seamen and marines of Sirius doing well as settlers, 659.
 statement of Grimes as to condition of, 671-672.

North America

expedition to, 451.

Norton

quartermaster of Bounty, killed by natives at Tofoa, 696.

Oakeley, Sir Charles

meets Lieut. Riou at the Cape, 408.

Observatory

erection of, at Dawes Point, 147.
 almanacs and transit instrument to be sent, 431.

Officers

appointments of, in cases of vacancy, 54, 83.
 refusal of, to act as superintendents, 133, 153, 208.
 objections by, to sit on criminal court, 139, 236-239, 240-247.

Officers

placed under arrest by Ross, 139 *et seq.*, 157 *et seq.*, 204.
 Ross's troubles with, 195, 202.
 refusal of, to sit as members of court-martial, 203, 204, 205 *et seq.*, 210.

Oil

supply of, in lieu of butter, 590.

Opinion

of law officers *re* Criminal Court, 462-463.
 publication of opinion, 537.

Oranges

at Norfolk Island, 431; orange-trees, 433.

Order-in-Council

appointing New South Wales as a place for reception of convicts, 30.

Overseers

See "Superintendents."

Outlawry

of absconders at Norfolk Island, 391-392, 657.

Palmer, John

appointed Commissary of New South Wales, 475.
 letter from, to Under Secretary King, 559.

Paper

scarcity of, 521-522.

Pardon

power of, given to Phillip, 63.
 letters patent to Phillip, 410-413; instructions, 413-414; received by Phillip, 532.
 pardon of convicts of Guardian, 414, 542.

Parker, Capt.

supercedes Capt. Harvey, as commander of the Gorgon, 427.
 letter from, to Stephens, 464.
 letter to, from Stephens, 431.

Paroquets

at Norfolk Island, 399, 400.

Parramatta

first township, 349.
 named by Phillip, 539, 549, 556.
 cultivation at, 539, 556, 645.
 settlers at, 540, 541.
 boundaries of, 549, 556.
 population of, 676, 677.

See also "Rose Hill."

Paterson

appointments of (note), 542.

Paymaster-General

letters to, from Sir George Yonge, 251, 255.

Penal Settlement

N. S. Wales proposed as a site for, 6, 7, 14, 17.
 order for transportation to New South Wales, 30.

Peruvian Bark

its usefulness in hot climates, 30.

Phillip

appointment of, as Governor of New South Wales, xxi, 22, 24; as captain of the *Sirius*, 24, 37.

resignation of, and reasons therefor, xxi (note), 559, 613, 625, 666 and note; cause of resignation lamented by Dundas, 625.

salary of, 19, 33, 83.

Lord Howe's opinion of, 22.

subordinate to the Home Office, 22.

commission of, 24, 61.

directions from Admiralty, 48, 49.

views of, on conduct of expedition, 50-54.

asks for special powers, 54.

foresight of, 56, 59.

duties and powers, 61 *et seq.*

term of office of, 67.

member of court for trial of pirates, 81; of Vice-Admiralty Court, 98.

instructions of, 84-91; additional instructions, 256-260.

urged to use economy, 87.

his last letter to Nepean before sailing, 102-103.

receives warrant for appointing court-martial, 103; and articles of war, 103.

foresees advantages to mother country, 103, 151, 155, 179.

dispute with his seamen, 104.

arrival of, at Rio, 109, 111 *et seq.*

may discharge crew of *Sirius* and Supply, and marines, 95.

expenses incurred by, 116.

tranships from *Sirius* to Supply, 121, 165.

sights the Australian coast, 121.

arrives at Botany Bay, 121; at Sydney Cove, 122.

Port Jackson examined, 122.

abandons Botany Bay, for Port Jackson, 122.

explores Broken Bay, 124, 125.

observations of, on the natives, 128 *et seq.*, 148, 191, 192, 309, 310.

explores the country inland, 133 *et seq.*

living under canvas, 136.

instructions of, to P. G. King, 136.

relations with the military, 138 *et seq.*, 153, 169, 172, 173, 176, 195 *et seq.*, 202, 208, 212, 228, 229, 262-265, 289-291.

his treatment of the natives, 149, 177.

difficulties encountered by, 179, 569.

relations with Major Ross, 169, 172, 173, 176, 212, 228.

approval of conduct by the King, 252; by Admiralty, 553; by Dundas, 585.

dispute with Ross, 262-265.

obstacles to Government complained of by, 288.

difficulties with Ross from arrest of marines by night-watch, 289-291.

opinion of, as to situation of the people at Sydney Cove, 297.

opinion of, as to the climate, 298.

request by, that settlers might be sent out, 299, 347.

Phillip

reply of, to Ross's complaints, 301-304.

unfavourable opinion of Botany Bay confirmed, 304.

exploration of Broken Bay and the Hawkesbury by, 304-306.

views of, on settlement of the land, 306, 307.

suggestion by, that convicts should be sent by China vessels, 307.

suggestion by, that convicts whose return to England is not desired should be sent to Norfolk Island, 307.

opinion of, as to garrison required, 310.

instructions of, to Ross as Commandant of Norfolk Island, 314-316.

reasons of, for sending the *Sirius* and Supply to Norfolk Island, 325.

application by, for leave of absence, 329, 330, 422, 483; postponement of leave, 463, 464.

report by, as to supply of provisions at Sydney, 331.

acknowledgment by, of approval of conduct, 343, 643, 666, 669.

reasons of, for choosing Sydney Cove, 348.

views of, on the colony and its management, 359.

accused by Capt. Hill of meanness in government, 370.

spearred by native at Manly (note), 441.

illness of, xxi (note), 483, 559, 613.

notebook of, 484.

charges of, against Lieutenant Dawes, 543-546.

remarks of, on conduct of Ross and Campbell, 570.

raising of auxiliary company of N. S. W. Corps by, 614.

want of supplies pointed out by, 646.

opinion of, as to procuring live stock, 646, 647.

appointment of storekeepers by, 647.

reasons of, for wanting men-of-war employed on the station, 648.

anxiety of, to return to England, 666, 669.

departure of, for England, 666 (note).

Letters from—

to Stephens (Admiralty), 28, 35, 40, 60, 94, 103, 105, 114, 118, 165, 193, 214, 324, 475, 476, 482, 553, 558, 571, 650.

to Nepean, 30, 45, 46, 54, 58, 77, 101, 102, 105, 106, 107, 108, 111, 114, 116, 120, 142, 151, 178, 180, 182, 218, 219, 228, 301, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 345, 346, 354, 364, 389, 393, 394, 481, 484, 555, 565, 566, 610, 628, 669.

to Lord Sydney, 50, 56, 106, 109, 121, 138, 139, 145, 177, 179, 182, 185, 207, 210, 236, 288, 293, 304, 324, 328, 329.

to Major Ross, 161, 264.

to Grenville, 343, 351, 353, 354, 356, 358, 465, 469, 472, 473, 483, 484, 532, 542, 543, 546, 551, 559, 564, 566, 569.

to Lieutenant Dawes, 543.

to Commissioners of the Navy, 549.

to Dundas, 595, 600, 613, 614, 643, 651, 653, 660, 662, 663, 665.

to Lord Cornwallis, 600.

to Lambert, Ross, and Biddulph, 601, 608.

to Under Secretary King, 650, 665.

Phillip

Letters to—

- from Surgeon Worgan, 30.
- from Ross, 39, 161, 162, 181, 202, 244, 262, 319, 434, 442, 448.
- from Surgeon White, 48, 142.
- from Stephens (Admiralty), 48, 629.
- from Lord Sydney, 82, 92, 93, 94, 95.
- from Nepean, 102, 253.
- from Collins, 240, 263, 674.
- from marine officers, 243, 482.
- from Grenville, 252, 254, 256, 260, 284, 312, 410, 413, 414, 457, 463.
- from Hume, 434.
- from Dundas, 496, 585, 592, 622, 631.
- from Dawes, 544.
- from Alt, 552.
- from P. G. King, 572, 656.
- from Under Secretary King, 589, 621, 683.
- from R. Biddulph, 593.
- from Rev. R. Johnson, 594, 601.
- from Lambert, Ross, and Biddulph, 601; from Lambert, Ross, and Co., 608.
- from Sir Geo. Yonge, 629.
- from Hon. John Cochrane, 649.
- from Grose, 652.
- from Surgeon Arndell, 661.
- from Vancouver, 667 680.

Pines

- At Norfolk Island, supposed to be useful for masts, 219, 403.
- great size of, at Norfolk Island, 400, 429.
- unfit for masts, 400, 429.
- useful for building purposes, 400, 429.
- spars cut by Major Ross, 403.
- used for boat-building, 429.

Pirates

- commission for trial of, 80-81.

Pitt

- engagement of, 496.
- fever on board, 525, 526, 527.
- scurvy on board, 527.
- arrival of, at Sydney, with Grose, 595.
- illness on board of, 595.
- sickness of convicts landed from, 595.

Pitt, Mount

- birds killed for food at, 398.
- deep soil at, 429.

Pitt, Right Hon. William

- asks for estimate of cost of provisions, &c, 32.

Pittwater

- examined and named by Phillip, 125.

Plan

- Sir George Young's, 10.
- heads of a, 17.
- Major Ross's, to make Norfolk Island independent, 403, 419, 445-447; abolition of, by King, 562.

Point Sutherland

Botany Bay, 122.

Population

- of Port Jackson, 423, 560-561.
- of Norfolk Island, 325, 423, 449, 450, 560-561, 563, 658, 676, 677.
- of the settlements, 423, 560-561, 611, 676, 677.
- occupations of, at Norfolk Island, 658.
- estimate of population of New South Wales and Norfolk Island, 680.

Port Jackson

- examined, 122.
- occupied, 122.
- an excellent harbour, 122, 127, 221.

Port Praya

- fleet passes, 112, 114.
- arrival of P. G. King at, 488.

Potatoes

- at Norfolk Island, 418, 431, 435.

Pouliden

- first lieutenant of marines, 106, 110, 145.
- member of court-martial, under arrest, 139, 161.
- desires to be relieved, 165.

Power to Pardon

- given to Phillip, 63.
- letters patent to Phillip, 410-413; instructions, 413, 414; received by Phillip, 532.

Prince of Wales

- transport-ship, 55, 86.
- health of convicts and marines on board of, 107, 111.
- marines and convicts on board of, 79.
- arrival of, at Botany Bay, 121; at Sydney Cove, 122.
- clearance of, 166, 182.
- return to England, 182, 193, 226.
- disabled, 226.

Prince William Henry's Island

- Passed by the Supply, 334.

Providence

- selection of, for second bread-fruit expedition, 473 (note).
- gardeners of, instructions for, 502, 503.
- expenditure for, incurred by Banks, 551.
- arrival of, at the Cape, 617.

Provisions

- for two years, 15.
- contract for, 20.
- for marines, 29, 30, 40, 41, 48, 49, 50, 54, 56, 82, 92, 102, 108, 110, 112, 142.
- for children of marines, 78, 184.
- for convicts, 40, 41, 50, 54, 56, 57, 59, 77, 80, 82, 102, 104, 107, 108, 110, 112, 184.
- for children of convicts, 80, 184.
- wines and spirits, 30, 40, 43, 54, 86, 94, 108, 112, 142, 183, 188.

Provisions

- estimated cost of provisions, 32.
- for emancipated convicts, 91.
- ration for marines and convicts, 143, 173, 183, 223.
- insufficient, 40, 50, 56, 57, 59, 77, 80, 92, 127, 146, 184, 209, 223, 320, 326, 327, 335, 471, 533, 644, 649.
- purchased at Cape of Good Hope, 113.
- damaged *in transitu*, 113, 299.
- landing of, 145.
- regular supplies of, from England wanted for some years, 146, 147, 163, 183, 209, 230, 651.
- difficulty of procuring, 152.
- from the islands, 167.
- bad spirits, 173.
- Sirius sent to Cape for, 132, 183, 207.
- dependent for, upon England, 209.
- sent by the Guardian, 230 and note.
- destruction of, by rats, 297.
- loss of, at Sydney, 324.
- the Supply ordered to Batavia for, 327, 330.
- report by Phillip on, 331.
- issue of salt provisions suspended at Norfolk Island, 364.
- high price of provisions, 370, 602.
- stock of, at Sydney and Norfolk Island, 466.
- distribution of, 467.
- supply of, from Bengal, 477, 478, 479.
- reduced allowance of flour at Sydney, 569.
- stock of, at Sydney, 643.
- from India, inferiority of, 644.

Provost-Marshal

- salary of, 33.
- duties of, 70.
- left behind, 105, 139.
- new one appointed, 105, 111, 139, 154.
- Henry Brewer, nomination of, at Sydney, by Phillip, 471.
- appointment of, by Phillip, 663.
- confirmation of appointment asked for, 664.
- Fane Edge, appointment of, at Norfolk Island, by Phillip, 660.

Public Worship

- Rev. R. Johnson first chaplain, 27, 33, 42.
- observance of, 90.
- offer of Roman Catholic priests to go to Sydney, 119-120.
- land to be granted for church purposes, 259.
- Rev. John Crowther appointed as assistant-chaplain, 260.
- escape of Mr. Crowther from the Guardian, and return of to England, 260 (note).
- appointment of Rev. S. Marsden, 260 (note).
- services held by Barrington, 505.
- neglect of public worship, 594.
- want of buildings for, 594, 602, 603.
- importance of, urged by Wilberforce, 634.
- reservation of land for church purposes at Norfolk Island, 656.

Punishment

- insufficient power at Norfolk Island, 438, 498, 573, 655.

Quakers

See "Sutton" and "Emigration."

Quarrelling

- at Norfolk Island, 496, 562.

Queen

- tonnage of, &c., 422.
- arrival of, at Sydney, 532.
- departure of, for Norfolk Island, 538.
- charges against master and mate of, 538, 623.

Rains

- at Sydney, 151, 169, 190.

"Raleigh," W.

- suggestions of, regarding colonisation, 233-235.
- letter from, to Nepean, 233.

Ration

- reduced, at Port Jackson, 173, 223, 299, 326, 327, 377, 382, 557, 570, 596, 598, 644, 654; at Norfolk Island, 320, 335, 390, 397, 417, 443, 466, 566, 574, 660.
- increase of, at Sydney, 352.
- not to be sold or exchanged, 450.
- allowed to N. S. W. Corps without deduction of pay, 588.

Rats

- destruction of provisions by, 297.
- found at Norfolk Island, 401, 430.

Razors

- supply of, insufficient, 45.

Records

- preservation and publication of, in England, vii, viii; in Canada, viii; in New South Wales, viii-xviii.
- transcription of, in London, xii-xiv.
- papers of Governor King lent to Government, xi, xv, xvi.
- papers of Sir Joseph Banks purchased from Lord Brabourne, xv.

Recruit

- warrant to, 464.

Regulations

- for night-watch at Sydney, 292, 293
- at Norfolk Island, 576-580.

Religion

See "Public Worship."

Reprive

- Phillip's power to, 63.

Richards, W.

- contractor for transportation, 44.
- proposals of, for conveyance of convicts, 503, 515-519, 522, 524, 525, 552, 580, 626, 637, 642, 670-671.

Richards, W.

- proposals for maintenance of, 509-515, 625.
- proposal to open a store at Port Jackson, 626.
- proposals of, to supply the settlement, 626, 627, 637, 636-638.
- difficulty of, to obtain transports, 673.
- Letters from—
 - to Banks, 508, 524, 552, 580, 625, 630, 633, 642.
 - to Dundas, 636.
 - to Nepean, 670.
- Letters to—
 - from Banks, 522, 552, 580, 630.
 - from Dundas, 633.

Richmond Hill

- named by Phillip, 133.
- soil of, described by Phillip, 305.

Rio de Janeiro

- First Fleet to call at, 86.
- no letter to Viceroy, 102, 103, 105.
- spirits to be purchased at, 103, 108; purchased at, 112.
- arrival of First Fleet at, 109, 111 *et seq.*
- rum purchased at, 112, 115.
- fresh provisions, plentiful and cheap, 112.
- ammunition purchased at, 112.
- Phillip and the Viceroy, 112, 114, 115, 116.
- fleet delayed at, 116.
- departure of the fleet from, 118.
- arrival of Major Grose at, 525.
- arrival of the Pitt at, 525.
- absconding of convicts at, 528.

Riou, Lieut.

- on the Salisbury, 60.
- commander of the Guardian, 230 (note).
- arrival of, at Table Bay, 283, 406.
- report by, of accident to Guardian, 287, 310.
- return of, to Table Bay, 310.
- report by, as to state of Guardian, 310-311, 317, 336.
- sufferings of, 317, 409.
- arrival of, at Table Bay in Guardian, 406.
- Guardian beached by, 337.
- sends her convicts to Sydney, 338.
- recommends that they should be rewarded, 338.
- recommendation adopted, 414, 542.
- his conduct approved of by the Admiralty, 406.
- writes to Secretary Stephens *re* the Guardian, 408.
- meets Sir Charles Oakeley at the Cape, 408.
- difficulties of, at the Cape, 409.
- Letters from—
 - to Stephens, 283, 310, 311, 317, 318, 336, 408.
 - to Admiralty, 286.
- Letters to—
 - from Stephens, 405.

Roddam, Vice-Admiral

- order to assemble a court-martial on Hunter, sent to, 618.

Rogers (Board of Ordnance)

- to furnish account of value of stores, &c., 32.

Rogers, Private

- lost in the bush, 217.

Rose, George

- name of given to Rosehill, 189 (note).
- letter from, to Stephens (Admiralty), 25.

Rose Hill

- named by Phillip, 189 (note).
- settlement at, 198, 209, 211, 213, 217, 223; success of, 305, 376, 585.
- cultivation at, 213, 296, 299, 376.
- harvest at, 299.
- advantages of, 349, 585.
- public farm at, 360.
- quality of land at, 211, 223, 349, 360, 369, 370, 376, 585.
- building at, 362, 469, 470.
- opinion of Dundas as to site for first settlement, 585.

Ross, Major

- commanding the detachment of marines, 24, 106, 110, 145.
- commission of, as Lieutenant-Governor, 26.
- salary of, 33.
- reports on convicts from Portsmouth, 57.
- member of court for trial of pirates, 81.
- member of Vice-Admiralty Court, 83, 98.
- recommends Capt. Campbell, 84, 195, 198, 213.
- provision for his family in case of death, 93.
- his confidence in the corps of marines, 93, 104.
- reports to Admiralty on departure of fleet, 104.
- tranships from Sirius to Scarborough, 121.
- places members of court-martial under arrest, 139 *et seq.*, 157 *et seq.*
- solicits appointment for his son, 145.
- trouble with his officers, 157 *et seq.*, 195 *et seq.*, 202, 215.
- relations with Phillip, 169, 172, 173, 176, 212, 228.
- gloomy predictions of, 172, 173, 176, 199, 212.
- Phillip does not consult him, 173.
- complaints of, 174, 176, 199, 218, 466.
- relations with Captain Shea, 195.
- relations with Captain Tench, 197.
- not anxious to remain in colony, 199.
- relations with Quartermaster Furzer, 202, 203, 215.
- dispute with Phillip, 262-265.
- dispute with Phillip concerning arrest of marines by night-watch, 289-291.
- want of harmony with officers, 291.
- complaints of, replied to by Phillip, 301-304.
- appointment of, as Commandant of Norfolk Island, 314, 326.
- instructions of, 314-316.
- report by, of wreck of Sirius, 319.
- martial law proclaimed by, at Norfolk Island, 319, 320.
- council of officers summoned by, 319, 320, 321.
- proclamations by, at Norfolk Island, 321, 323, 335.

Ross, Major

- suspension of Captain Meredith by, 324.
- sails with marines and convicts for Norfolk Island, 341, 379, 395.
- is wrecked with the Sirius, 341, 380, 396.
- loses his effects, 399.
- plan of, to make Norfolk Island independent, 403, 419, 445, 447, 468; dissatisfaction with, 556; abolition of, by King, 562.
- remarks and observations of, on Norfolk Island, 416-420.
- reports of, on Norfolk Island, 434-444.
- remarks by Grenville concerning conduct of, 460.
- appointment of, to Norfolk Island by Phillip approved, 461.
- complaint of, *re* stores to marines, 466.
- reply of Phillip thereto, 467.
- return of, to Sydney, 569.
- departure of, for England, 569, 571.
- conduct of, towards Phillip, 570.
- Letters from—
 - to Phillip, 39, 161, 162, 181, 202, 244, 262, 319, 434, 442, 448.
 - to Nepean, 57, 83, 92, 176, 212.
 - to Stephens, 78, 104, 144, 156, 165, 169, 194, 215, 219.
 - to Grenville, 402.
- Letters to—
 - from officers forming court-martial, 160.
 - from Phillip, 161, 264.
 - from Collins, 202.
 - from Captain Campbell, 204, 242.

Ross, John

- son of Major Ross, nominated for a lieutenancy, 145, 229.

Royal Admiral

- departure of, from the Cape, 665.
- arrival of, at Sydney, 665.
- mortality and sickness on board of, 665.
- overcrowding of, 665.

Rum

- purchased at Rio, 112, 115.
- quality of, 173.

See also "Provisions."

Ruse, James

- takes up land, 349.
- grant issued to, as first settler, 349 (note), 536 and note, 540, 592.

Rushcutters

- murder of, 148, 167, 171.

Salamander

- tonnage of, &c., 422.
- arrival of, at Sydney, 532.

Salaries

- of the Governor and staff, 19, 33, 83.

Salt Provisions

- issue of, suspended at Norfolk Island, 364.

Salvage

- from Sirius, 444, 466, 573.

Sandwich

- wreck of, reported by Hunter, 618.
- crew of, assisted by Hunter, 618, 619.

Santa Cruz

- First Fleet at, 106, 107, 108.
- arrival of Discovery and Chatham at, 490.
- attack upon the Chatham's people, 490.
- arrival of Lieutenant-Governor King at, 486.
- millstones at, 488.
- plants and seeds from, 488.

See also "Teneriffe."

Savoy

- military prison, 373 (note).

Scarborough

- transport-ship, 34, 42, 55, 86, 121, 126, 136.
- convicts on board of, 34, 42, 79.
- marines on board of, 79.
- memorial from the marines on board, 100.
- mutiny on board, 106, 108.
- sickness of convicts and marines on board of, 107, 111.
- arrival of, at Botany Bay, 121; at Sydney Cove, 122.
- discharge of, 126, 136, 146.
- arrival of, at False Bay (Cape of Good Hope), 334, 338.
- departure of, from False Bay, 338.
- deaths on board of, 234, 355, 356, 387.
- arrival of, at Sydney (second voyage), 353.
- ill-treatment of convicts on board, 388.
- inquiry concerning treatment of convicts, 538, 623.

Schools

- reservation of land for, 259.
- reservation of land for, at Norfolk Island, 656.

Scurvy

- attacks men after landing, 124.
- crew of the Sirius suffer from, 224.
- opinion of Sir Joseph Banks regarding essence of malt as a remedy for, 232.
- on board the Second Fleet, 334.
- on board the Pitt, 527.

Scythes

- supply insufficient, 45.

Seal

- to be delivered to Phillip, 63.
- design for, referred to the Council of Trade and Plantations, 340.
- draft approved by King in Council, 389.
- seal approved, 431.
- warrant to be prepared, 431.
- warrant for using, received by Phillip, 532.

Sealing

- return of Matilda and Mary Ann from, 558.

Seamen

discharged on account of sickness, 60.
 punishment of offences by, 66.
 to be allowed to settle, 82.
 wages of, held back, 104.
 dispute with, 104.
 English, in foreign ships, 227.
 as settlers at Norfolk Island, 562, 571, 659; at
 Parramatta, 571.
 detention of, at the Cape, reported by Hunter,
 619.
 measures for release of, taken by Hunter, 619.

Second Fleet

arrival of, at False Bay (Cape of Good Hope), 334,
 338, 366.
 scurvy on board, 331.
 departure of, from False Bay, 338, 367.
 deaths on board, 334, 354, 362, 367, 387.
 causes of mortality, 354, 355, 367, 387.
 arrival of, at Sydney, 353, 367.
 return relating to, 355.
 ill-treatment of convicts on board, 388.
 deaths after arrival, 362, 367, 387.
 the sick landed from, 354, 362, 367, 387.
 Rev. R. Johnson's statement as to treatment of
 convicts, 386-389.
 inquiry concerning treatment of convicts, 588,
 623.

Secretary-at-War

Letters to
 from Grenville, 278, 287.

Seed grain

to be procured on voyage, 15, 86.
 Sirius to bring from Cape, 183, 188, 207.
 loss of, 183, 207.

Sentences

term of, unknown, 329 and note, 354.
 information concerning, sent to Phillip, 460.

Settlement

proposals for establishing settlement in New
 South Wales, 1, 6, 7, 14, 17.
 Phillip's views on settlement, 306, 307.
 population of settlements, 325, 423, 449, 450, 500,
 550, 560-561, 563, 611, 658, 676, 677.
 general state of settlements, as reported by
 Phillip, considered satisfactory by Dundas,
 624.

Settlers

officers and men as, 23, 82, 193, 347, 450, 531, 654.
 to be encouraged, 91, 191, 361.
 want of, 153, 177, 191, 207, 299, 347, 470, 534, 537,
 557, 597.
 encouragement to, 257, 361, 468-469, 539, 563.
 Phillip asks for useful men, 347.
 first settler, 349, 536, 540, 592.
 concessions to, at Norfolk Island, 468-469, 563.
 marines going as, to Norfolk Island, 531; land
 taken up by, 562.
 number of, at Port Jackson, 536, 571.

Settlers

prosperity of, 536.
 modification of instructions regarding, 536, 537.
 danger of isolation of, 536, 537.
 superior class, want of, 587.
 land granted to, 540, 541, 562, 592.
 numbers of, at Norfolk Island, 562, 571, 661.
 numbers of, at Parramatta, 571, 661.
 misconduct of, at Norfolk Island, 573.
 want of labour by, at Norfolk Island, 574.
 proposal to send out by Sutton, 580-585; pro-
 posal not carried out, 648 (note).
 proposal by Matcham, 690.
 supplies allowed to, 586.
 eleven sent by the Bellona, 631 and note.
 superintendents as, 647.
 selfishness of, 654.
 reduced ration of, 654.
 wish of superintendents to become, 655.
 Superintendent Doidge becomes a settler at
 Norfolk Island, 659.
 marines and seamen of Sirius at Norfolk Island,
 659.
 Assistant-Surgeon Arndell becomes a settler,
 660, 661.

See also "Free Settlers."

Shairp, J. M.

first lieutenant of marines, 106, 110, 145.
 period of service of, 201.

Shapcote, Lieutenant

arrival of, at the Cape, with the Second Fleet,
 334.
 departure of, for Sydney, 338.
 arrival of, at Sydney, 353.
 letter from, to Commissioners of the Navy,
 334.
 letter to, from Grenville, 234.

Shea, Captain

of marines, 106, 110, 145.
 relations with Ross, 195.
 death of, 228, 324.

Shebander

functions of, 372.

Sheep

not thriving, 143.
 See also "Live Stock."

Shelton, Mr.

letter to, from Nepean, 42.

Ships

want of, at Sydney, 393, 433, 472, 534, 554, 596.
 vessel in frame, landed at Sydney, 595.
 East India Company's vessels employed, 623.
 Phillip's reasons for wanting man-of-war, 643.
 See also "Transports."

Ship-building

prohibition of, 91.

Shipping

regulations concerning, 53.

Shoal

Middleton, report concerning, by Lieut. Shortland, 295.

description of, 295 (note).

observed by Lieut. Ball, 385.

Shortland, Lieut.

appointments of, 45 (note).

employed on board the *Alexander*, 46.

return of to England, *via* Batavia and the Cape, 178, 182, 193, 225, 227.

shoals and islands seen by, 295.

wrecked in *Sirius*, 398-399.

Shot

supply of, insufficient, 45.

Sickness

See "Illness."

Sinclair, Duncan

contractor for transportation, 44.

Sirius

Phillip, captain, 24, 37, 86.

equipment of, 24 and note, 82.

armament of, 28.

departure of, from Deptford, 35.

Hunter, second captain, 37, 121.

supplies for, 40.

marines on board of, 79.

Phillip to command, 86.

to explore the coast, 89.

wages of crew, 103, 104.

repairs to, at Rio Janeiro, 114.

master of, disabled, 115.

Phillip tranships from, to Supply, 121, 165.

arrival of, at Botany Bay, 121; at Sydney Cove, 122.

to be sent for live stock, 127.

sent to Cape of Good Hope for supplies, 182, 188, 194, 207, 214, 224-227.

springs a leak, 225.

voyage of, from Sydney to the Cape, 295.

supplies received by, from the Cape, 295.

mate of, lost in the bush, 300.

voyage of, from the Cape to Sydney, 374-375.

injury to, near South Cape and Tasman's Head, 375.

arrival of, at Sydney, 341, 375.

leaky condition of, 377.

repair of, 377.

sent by Phillip, with the Supply, to Norfolk Island, 325.

departure of, for Norfolk Island, 341, 379, 395.

arrival of, at Norfolk Island, 341, 379, 395.

wreck of, at Norfolk Island, 319, 326, 332, 342, 341, 372, 380, 396; reported by Ross, 319; by Hunter, 326; by Harris, 342; Fowell's account of, 380-382.

live stock saved from, 381.

drunken convicts on wreck, 381.

Sirius

wreck set on fire by convicts, 382.

marines and convicts of, landed, 395.

stores and provisions of, saved, 380, 396, 397.

services of Arscot, carpenter of, 439.

salvage from, 444, 466, 573.

court-martial on loss of, 618 and note.

seamen and marines of, settlers at Norfolk Island, 659.

Sirius Island

named by Lieut. Ball, 383.

Skill

letter to, from Chief-Surgeon White, 332.

Slavery

not to be allowed, 53.

Small-pox

death of natives from, 299, 308.

death of a seaman from, 299.

Snelheid

arrival of, at Mauritius, with King, 428.

fever on board of, 428.

departure of, from Mauritius, 428.

Soil

quality of, at Rose Hill, 211, 223, 349, 360, 369, 370, 376, 585.

richness of, at Norfolk Island, 399, 429.

at Mount Pitt, 429.

report on quality of, at Parramatta, Prospect Hill, and Field of Mars, 599.

South Cape

Sirius damaged at, 375.

South Head

landmark at, 394, 590.

Specie

See "Money."

Sphynx

sent to the Cape to bring back the commander and crew of the *Guardian*, 406.

Spice

cultivation of, 5.

Spice Islands

the Supply among them, 384.

Spirits

allowance of, to the marines promised by Lord Howe, 101.

Phillip receives orders to purchase three years' supply, 103.

bad spirits from Rio, 173.

want of, at Norfolk Island, 436.

distribution of, 467.

duty on, proposed by Phillip, 557.

want of, by marines, 590.

allowance of, to deserving convicts, 648.

Phillip's opinion as to consequences of introduction of, 665.

See also "Provisions," and "Supplies."

Stationery

want of, 210, 218, 557.

Stephens (Admiralty)

Letters from—

- to Navy Board, 33, 44, 46, 47, 55, 58, 60, 61.
- to Nepean, 47.
- to Phillip, 48, 629.
- to Captain Marshall, 56, 60, 61.
- to Under Secretary of the Treasury, 231, 235.
- to Lieut. Kent, 335.
- to Bligh, 354, 407.
- to Riou, 405.
- to Parker, 431.
- to P. G. King, 433, 434.
- to Ball, 473.
- to Hunter, 601, 616, 618, 620, 626.

Letters to—

- from Phillip, 28, 35, 40, 60, 94, 103, 105, 114, 118, 165, 193, 214, 324, 475, 476, 482, 553, 558, 571, 650.
- from Ross, 78, 104, 144, 156, 165, 169, 194, 215, 219.
- from Hunter, 224, 225, 227, 395, 616, 618.
- from Riou, 283, 310, 311, 317, 318, 336, 408.
- from Parker, 464.
- from Ball, 479, 615, 674.

Stirling, Lieut.-Colonel

proposal of for raising special corps, 38, 39, and note.

Letters from—

- to Nepean, 37.
- to Lord Sydney, 38.

St. Jago

fever on board the Pitt, contracted at, 527.

St. Matthew Island

seen by Lieutenant Ball in the Supply, 334.

Stockdale

his account of New South Wales quoted, 399.

Store

proposal by Richards to open one at Port Jackson, 626.

Storehouse

at Sydney, 148 ; at the Cape, 404.
at Norfolk Island, 574.

Storekeepers

appointment of, at Sydney and Norfolk Island, 647.

Storeship

required for Port Jackson, 214.

Stores

See "Provisions" and "Supplies."

Straits of Juan de Fuca

See "Juan de Fuca."

Strong, Private

court-martialled, 199.

Sugar-cane

cultivation of, at Norfolk Island, 420, 431.
transport, engagement of, 679.

Superintendents

how to be paid, 45.
more wanted, 138, 184, 207, 347, 471, 533, 603.
sent by Guardian, 231, 261, 262.
qualifications of, 351, 352, 353.
skilled men required, 352, 353.
only one, a farmer, 360.
unqualified men sent, 588.
discharge of two on becoming settlers, and one as useless, 647.
wish of, to become settlers, 655, 659.
application of John Thomson for employment, 674.

Supplies

received from the Cape by the Sirius, 295 ; from Calcutta, 403, 459, 586, 600, 604-609.
deficiency of, 365.
high prices of, at the Cape, 409.
to settlers, 586.
sending of, to Norfolk Island, 598, 643.
stock of, at Sydney, 643.
want of severely felt, 646.
proposal of Cochrane to send from India, 649.
Governor-General of India requested to send shipments of, to New South Wales, 666.
See also "Provisions."

Supply

tender to the Sirius, 32, 83, 86, 121.
cost of equipment, 32.
guns too heavy, 36.
commander of, 36.
alterations to, 60, 61.
to explore the coast, 89.
her men not to be paid until eve of starting, 103.
repairs to, at Rio Janeiro, 115.
Phillip precedes the fleet in, 121, 165.
arrival of, at Botany Bay, 121 ; at Sydney Cove, 122.
despatched to Norfolk Island, 124, 172, 187.
despatched to Lord Howe Island, 136.
at Sydney, 209.
voyage of, to Norfolk Island and back, 300.
departure of, for Norfolk Island, 301.
why sent by Phillip to Norfolk Island, 325.
ordered to Batavia for provisions, 327, 330.
departure of, for Norfolk Island, with the Sirius, 341.
arrival of, at Norfolk Island, 341.
escape from wreck, at Norfolk Island, 382.
return of, to Port Jackson, 342, 382.
departure of, for Batavia, 342, 372, 382.
arrival of, at Batavia, 372, 428.
return of, to Sydney, from Batavia, 465.
departure of, for Norfolk Island, and return to Sydney, 465.
deaths on board of, 475.

Supply

- repair of, cannot be done in colony, 479, 548, 550, 553.
- ordered home by Phillip, 548, 550, 553.
- good conduct of master of, 553.
- departure of, for England, 572.
- arrival of, at Plymouth, from Sydney, 616.

Surgeons

- Altree, return of, to England, 475.
- Balmain, assistant surgeon, 28.
- Bowes, surgeon of Lady Penrhyn, 120.
- Considen, D., leave of absence granted to, 632.
- Jamison, Thomas, confirmation of commission of, requested by Phillip, 473; appointment of, 475.
- Kent, appointed as surgeon of the Boddingtons, 678; instructions given to, 678.
- Wentworth, D'Arcy, employment of, at Norfolk Island, 575.
- White, John, offers his services, 25; commission of, 27; salary of, 33; application by, for leave of absence, 675.
- Worgan, surgeon of the Sirius, 30.

Surprise

- arrival of, at False Bay, 334, 333, 366.
- departure of, from False Bay, 333.
- deaths on board, 334, 355, 356, 367, 387.
- arrival of, at Sydney, 353.
- Captain Hill's account of voyage of, 366-368.
- unseaworthiness of, 367.
- illtreatment of convicts on board of, 367, 387, 388.
- departure of, for Norfolk Island and China, 390, 393.
- inquiry concerning treatment of convicts, 588, 623.

Surveys

- of Norfolk Island, by Bradley, 476, 616.
- of New South Wales, by Hunter, 626.

Surveyor of Lands

- salary of, 33.

Suspension

- of Captain Meredith, 324.
- of Lieut. Kellow, 449.

Sutton, John

- emigration proposals of, 580-585.
- fifteen Quaker families to be sent by, 589.
- arrangement with, for sending out Quaker families not carried out, 648 (note).
- Letters from—
 - to Dundas, 580.
 - to Under Secretary King, 581, 582, 583.

Swilly

- island of, discovered by Furneaux, 374 (note).

Sydney

- named by Phillip, 122.
- clearing the ground, 123.
- good land adjacent to, 134.

Sydney

- huts built, 145.
- plan of, 147.
- Ross's opinion of, 172, 173, 176.
- buildings, 145, 147, 189, 190, 195, 223, 297, 469, 470.
- huts and barracks erected at, 297.
- Phillip's opinion as to the situation of the people, 297.
- why it was chosen, 348.
- township of, at Norfolk Island, 578.

Sydney Bay

- site of Norfolk Island settlement, 430.
- gaol at, 573.
- landing-place made at, 600.

Sydney, Lord

- appointment of as Home Secretary, xxvi.

Letters from—

- to Phillip, 82, 92, 93, 94, 95.
- to Admiralty, 20, 94, 230.
- to Treasury, 14.
- to Nepean, 422.

Letters to—

- from Phillip, 50, 56, 106, 109, 121, 138, 139, 145, 177, 179, 182, 185, 207, 210, 236, 288, 293, 304, 324, 328, 329.
- from Lord Howe, 22.
- from the Admiralty, 23, 29.
- from W. Ferguson, 486.
- from Lieutenant-Colonel Stirling, 38.
- from Surgeon White, 175.
- from Rev. Thomas Walshe, 119.

Table Bay

- arrival of Lady Juliana at, 323.
- Guardian beached at, 337.
- departure of Sirius and Supply from, 349.
- arrival of Active, Lady Juliana, and Neptune at, 493.
- arrival of Gorgon at, 504.

Tasman's Head

- Sirius at, 375.

Teer, Captain

- waits on Nepean, 36.
- letter from, to Nepean, 33.

Tench, Watkin

- captain-lieutenant of marines, 106, 111, 145.
- president of court-martial, 140, 159.
- placed under arrest by Ross, 139.
- Ross requests recall of, 197.
- witness at court-martial, 200.
- desirous of serving three more years, 201.
- exploring excursion with Captain Hill and Lieutenant Dawes, 371.

Tench's Island

- situation of, 384.

Teneriffe

- First Fleet to call at, 86.
- arrival of First Fleet at, 106, 107, 108.
- expenses at, 111.
- arrival of Lieutenant-Governor King at, 486.
- millstones at, 488.
- plants and seeds from, 488.
- arrival of the Discovery and Chatham at, 490.
- attack upon the Chatham's people, 490.

Thames

- arrival of, at the Cape, in command of Captain Blankett, 408.

Third Fleet

- arrival of, at Sydney, 532, 538.
- deaths of 199 convicts on board, 538.
- illness of convicts on board, 538.

Thomas, Mr.

- letter to, from Nepean, 41.

Thomson, John

- offer of, to act as superintendent, 674.
- letter from, to Dundas, 674.

Thornton, Mr.

- letter to, from Rev. R. Johnson, 336.

Timber

- of Norfolk Island, 126, 187, 429.
- of New South Wales, Phillip's description, 127-128; Ross's opinion of, 172-173; an officer's opinion of, 222.
- sent to Sydney from Norfolk Island, 441.
- specimens put on board Gorgon, 554, 556, 572.
- destruction of, by natives, 554.
- trees on the Nepean, Phillip's description of, 306, 710.

See also "Pines."

Timins, Thomas

- first lieutenant of marines, 106, 110, 145.
- member of court-martial, under arrest, 139, 160.
- desires to be relieved, 165.

Timor

- arrival of Bligh at, 278, 691, 701.
- departure of Bligh from, 702.

Tonyon, General

- letter to, from Yonge, 265.

Tools

- required, lists of, 13, 16, 155.
- distribution of, 87.
- want of, at Sydney, 155, 230, 556, 566, 596, 643.
- want of, at Norfolk Island, 435.

Toongabbe

- settlement formed at, 645.
- cultivation at, 645.

Towns

- building of, ordered, 259.

Townshend, Thomas

- charged with care of convicts, 56.
- Phillip sends message to, 106.

Traders

- American, 498.

Trading

- private trade at Sydney, 649.
- hiring of Britannia by officers—objections by Phillip, 651, 652.

Transports

- to proceed to China, 25, 87.
- number of convicts in each, 34, 42.
- owners of, to give security, 34, 35.
- list of, 86 (note).
- return of, 126, 136, 146, 150, 166, 163, 225.
- arrival of, at False Bay, 334.
- departure of, from False Bay, 333, 367.
- arrival of, at Sydney, 353, 367.
- deaths on board of, 354, 362, 367, 387, 508.
- contraband cargo on board of, 506, 547, 549, 550, 555, 564, 623.
- arrival of, at Sydney, 532.
- two sent to Norfolk Island, 538.
- objection of masters to land cargo at Norfolk Island, 547.
- Phillip's reasons for release of, 665.

Transportation

- to Africa, 6.
- proposals for, 6, 12, 14.
- tenders for, 20.
- preparations for, 20.
- order for, 30, 85.
- number of convicts on each ship, 34, 42.
- warrant for, 44.
- contractors for, 44.
- Act authorising, 68 *et seq.*
- warrant for, 280, 281.
- term of sentences unknown, 329 and note, 354.
- information containing sentences sent to Philip 460.

Treasury

- Letter from—
- to Stephens, 25.
- Letters to—
- from Stephens, 231, 235.
- from Yonge, 232.

Trees

See "Timber."

Trinidad

- earthquake at, 114.

Turtle Bay

- Norfolk Island, 579.

Vancouver

- circumnavigation of Vancouver Island by, 453 (note).
- dispute of, with Lieut. Menzies, 476-477.

Vancouver

arrival of, at Teneriffe, 489; at Simon's Bay, 502, 504; at Nootka, 638; at Dusky Bay, 639; at Mattavai Bay, 640; at Owhyhee, 640; at Straits of Juan de Fuca, 640; at New Albion, 668; at Monterey, 680.

proposal of, to examine shores of Australia and Van Diemen's Land, to determine question of passage between, 519, 520.

purport of instructions to, 451-454, 499-501.

attitude of, to Banks, 521.

proposal of, to send live stock from New Albion, 567.

examination of Juan de Fuca's Straits by, 668.

discovery of King George's Sound by, 668; of the Snares and Chatham Island, 669.

despatch of live stock from Monterey by the *Dædalus*, 680.

instructions of, to Lieut. Hanson, in charge of *Dædalus*, 681-683.

Letters from—
to Grenville, 519.
to Phillip, 667, 680.

Vancouver's Expedition

instructions to Phillip concerning, 312-314.

instructions to Menzies, 424 and note.

memoranda by Sir Joseph Banks, 426-427.

Discovery and Chatham to be despatched, 451.

objects of expedition, 451-454.

Dædalus, despatch of, to America, 497.

instructions to Vancouver and Hergest, 499, 501.

voyage of Discovery and Chatham, 639-642.

arrival of, Teneriffe, 489, 523; at Simon's Bay 502, 504; at King George's Sound, 639, 668; at Nootka, 638; at Dusky Bay, 639; at Mattavai Bay, 640; at Owhyhee, 640; at Straits of Juan de Fuca, 640; at New Albion, 668; at Monterey, 680.

Vancouver Island

circumnavigation of, by Captain Vancouver, 453 (note).

Van Diemen's Land

proposal of Vancouver to examine, with a view to discovery of passage, 519-520.

Van Este, Governor of Timor

kindness of, to Bligh, 701.

Varconcellos

assistance given to Phillip by, at Rio, 110.

Vessels

See "Ships."

Vice-Admiralty Court

Letters Patent constituting, 95-100.

jurisdiction and powers of, 96-100.

appointment of, recommended by Privy Council, 76.

difficulties of, 555.

appointment of Atkins as Registrar, *vice* Miller deceased, 600.

See also "Courts."

Viceroy

at Rio de Janeiro, 102, 103, 105, 112, 114, 115.

Victualling

See "Supplies."

Vines

at Norfolk Island, 419, 431, 438.

Waaksamheyd

hired at Batavia to take supplies to Sydney, 372.

hiring of, to take the crew of the *Sirius* to England, 466, 475.

arrival of, at Portsmouth, 616.

account of voyage, by Hunter, 616-618.

assistance to, given by Bligh at the Cape, 617.

fever on board of, 617.

Walshe, Rev. Thomas

a volunteer clergyman, 120.

Wanjon

acting Governor of Timor—kindness of, to Bligh, 701, 702.

Warrants

Collins's, 43.

for transportation, 44, 280-281.

for seal, 431.

to recruit, 464.

of emancipation, 566.

Watch

night, regulations for, 578-580.

Waterhouse

appointed third lieutenant of the *Sirius*, 379.

Wathen

letter to, from Captain Hill, 366.

Waugh, Andrew

proposal of, to supply provisions, 477-479.

letter from, to Home Office, 477.

Wedgwood

medallion from clay of New South Wales, made by, 190 (note).

report of, on specimen of blacklead from New South Wales, 212.

Wentworth, D'Arcy

assistant surgeon at Norfolk Island, 575.

appointment of, as superintendent of convicts, 575.

Whale

boat upset by, 365.

Whaling

on the Australian coast, 529, 553, 555, 558.

whales seen on the coast, 532, 553, 558.

search for whales, 553.

whales killed by crews of *Britannia* and *Mary Ann*, 555.

observations on whale-fishing, by Phillip, 612, 613.

opinion of Phillip that the coast had not received a fair trial, 665.

Wheat

- growing of, at Norfolk Island, 433.
- issue of, at Port Jackson, 611.

Wheelwright

- want of, at Norfolk Island, 576.

White, Surgeon

- offers his services, 25.
- commission of, 27.
- salary of, 33.
- report of, on sickness in the fleet, 111.
- account by, of loss of Sirius, 332.
- account by, of affairs at Sydney, 332-334.
- application by, for leave of absence, 675.
- Letters from—
 - to Phillip, 48, 142.
 - to Nepean, 49.
 - to Lord Sydney, 175.
 - to Skill, 332.
 - to Sir A. S. Hammond, 675.

Wilberforce

- recommendation by, of second chaplain, 634.
- observations on importance of religious instructions, 634.
- on society in New South Wales, 634.
- on insufficiency of ministers, 634.
- on want of teachers, 634.
- letter from, to Dundas, 633.
- letter to, from Archbishop of Canterbury, 635.

William and Ann

- tonnage of, &c., 422.
- arrival of, at Sydney, 532.
- whales killed by crew of, 555.

Windmills

- Phillip asks that some may be sent out, 364.

Winds

- prevailing, at Norfolk Island, 430.

Wine

See "Provisions."

Wine-making

- at Norfolk Island, proposed by Major Ross, 419.

Women

- to be obtained from islands, 15, 55, 90, 127, 190.
- clothing of, 20, 104, 105, 107, 111.
- wives of marines, 29, 40, 42, 48, 77, 79.
- transportation of, 31, 34, 35, 51, 79.
- distribution of, amongst transports, 34.
- convicts, on same ship, but separated from the males, 35.
- convicts, on Lady Penrhyn, 43, 46, 59, 77.
- marriage, 52, 53.
- further shipment of, asked for, 127.
- native, 130.

Worgan, Surgeon

- letter from, to Phillip, 30.

Wrecks

- of the Guardian, 287, 310, 337, 405.
- of the Sandwich, 618.
- of the Sirius, 319, 326, 341, 342, 372, 380, 396.
- See also "Guardian," "Sandwich," and "Sirius"

Wrotten, Midshipman

- return of, to England, 116.

Yonge, Sir George

- Letters from—
 - to the Treasury, 232.
 - to Grose, 249, 251, 342, 464, 491.
 - to the Paymaster-General, 251, 255.
 - to Colonel Johnson, 255.
 - to General Tonyn, 265.
 - to Nepean, 266.
 - to Lewis, 353.
 - to Phillip, 629.

Letters to—

- from Grose, 343, 373, 404, 480, 485, 491.
- from Grenville, 491.

Young, Lieut. R. P.

- suppression by, of mutiny on the Albemarle
- 488, 489, 559.

Young, Sir George

- plan of colonisation proposed by, 10.
- asks for grant of Norfolk Island, 142.

Sydney : CHARLES POTTER, Government Printer,—1892.





DU
150
H56
v.1
pt.2

Historical records of New
South Wales

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY
